



The Chroni:

cle of Kabyan, whiche be
hym selfe nameth the con-
cordaunce of histories,
nowe newlye printe-
ted, & in many
places cor-
rected,
as to
the
dyligent
reader it may
apere.

1542.

*Cum privilegio ad impres-
sandum solum.*

Printed by William Bon-
ham dwelling at the signe
of the kyng his armes
in Paules chur-
cheparde.

THE NEW YORK

LIBRARY
ASTOR LENOX TILDEN FOUNDATION
1155 MANHATTAN AVENUE
NEW YORK 17, N. Y.

THE NEW YORK
LIBRARY
ASTOR LENOX TILDEN FOUNDATION
1155 MANHATTAN AVENUE
NEW YORK 17, N. Y.

W

24 The of þ firste bo-
lume of Fabianes
cronicle.

2. viii. 3 ruled peres .v. ca. xli. pa. 16.



Alþyon, and why this yle of
olde tyme so was called, it a-
pereth in the fourth lese the
firste chapiter. pagt. 7.

Cunedagius þ Merganus his
newerwes, soonnes of the twos sisters
of Cordeilla, begane their dominion
ouer Britaine, in the pere of þ worlde
iiii. 9. iii. C. and thye 3 continued
peres twos ca. xlii. pagt. 16.

Brute þ soonne of Siluius, and
of his oygynall and firste commyng
into this lande. ca. ii. pagt. 1.

This Cunedagius sozenamed, af-
ter þ he in battail had slaine Mar-
ganus, beganne his senoury ouer þ
Britons, in þ pere of þ worlde .iiii. 9.
iii. C. v. 3 ruled after moſte wyters
peres thyrty 3 thye ca. xliii. pagt. 17.

Brute of his firste landyng. ca. ix.
pagt. 9.

This Brute þ soonne of Siluius
Posthumus, descended of the noble
bloodde of Trojans, entred first the
yle of Albion whiche he after named
Brytain, 3 now is called Englande
in the pere of the worlde foure thou-
sande sixty and thye, 3 before the in-
carnacion of Chyſt, as in the begyn-
nyng of this worke it is more openly
shewed, and reigned peres twenty 3
two. Troynouant oꝝ Londõ of this
kpng was first founded. ca. iiii. pa. 10.

Erancus oꝝ Erank þ soonne of
Mempice, beganne to rule the Bry-
tons in the pere of the worlde .iiii. 9.
C. cxxv. 3 reigned peres .xii.
This kpng made the citee of York,
the towne of Acreynce 3 the castelles
of Dunbarre and Eddynbough in
Scotlande ca. ix. pagt. 13.

Brute brett scutum oꝝ Brute Gre-
nellhelde, soonne of Eranke, was
made ruler of þ Brytons, in the pere
of the worlde foure thousande twoo
C. xlii. 3 reigned peres .xii. ca. x. pa. 13.

Ferret with his brother Doret,
soonnes of Corbodug, beganne toin-
ſly to rule the Brytons, in the pere af-
ter Ida. iii. 9. vii. C. x. and ruled
peres five. Here endeth the lyne oꝝ of
ſpyng of Brute. ca. xlv. pagt. 19.

Baldud þ soonne of Lud, begane
his dominion ouer the Brytaines,
in the pere of the worlde foure thou-
sande thye hundred 3 cxxv. and
reigned peres twenty. This kpng
founded the towne of Bathe, and the
Bathes within the ſame after ſome
wyters. ca. xlii. pagt. 14.

The ſtoys agre, þ after the death
of the ſoꝝſaid bytherne, the Brytons,
because there remained no heire of
thein, were in great diſcorde a long
ſeaſon, 3 were ſubdued vnder diuers
knges. But by cauſe þ ſoꝝſaid auc-
tours doo not certifie the terme of
this diſcorde, 3 alſo doo wyte diuer-
ſly of þ reignes of þ ſoꝝſaid knges
ſo þ ſome do aſſigne very ſewe oꝝ no
certain peres, 3 ſome other many pe-
res, ſo þ in thacchoptng of the peres
3 of tymes there apereth a great alte-
racio. Therefore it is to bee noted, as
aſſureth Ranulph moke of Cheſter

Cordeilla the pongſt doughter of
þ afternamed Leuer, begane to rule
the Brytons, in the pere of the worlde
foure thousande thye hundred nienty

Cunedage, **Caltepe** & other, & **Cunedage** only began to reigne in þe pere of the worlde. **iiii. M. iii. C. v. b.** And he reigned. **xxiii. yeris.** Which maketh the yeare of the worlde. **iiii. M. iii. C. and. cxxviii.** And furthermore the foresayd autours with other affirme, þe two byethren **Belinus** & **Byennus**, dyd enter **Italpe** with a greate nouþe of me, in the. **xi. pere** of **Artarases** the. **xi. kynge** of **Perse**. Whiche was the pere of the worlde. **iiii. M. viii. C. and. xv.** and the. **viii. pere** of the regne of the foresayd byethren, as sayeth **Martynus super Cronicas**. Wherby it playnly appereth, that fro the laste pere of **Cunedage**, vntyll the eght pere of þe foresayd byethren, there passed. **iii. c. lxxviii. yeris.** And furthermore all wyters affirme, þe sayd **Belinus** & **Byennus** dyd succede their father **Dumuallo**, & that the sayd **Dumuallo** reigned. **xi. yeris.** The first pere of whose regne was the pere of the worlde. **iiii. M. vii. c. xlviii.** So that from þe laste pere of **Cunedage**, vntyll the fyrste pere of the sayd **Dumuallo**, ther passed. **iii. c. xxix. yeris.** Of the which yeris, there passed fro the fyrste pere of **Aluallus** oʒ **Renaldus** vntill þe laste pere of **Bozrex**. **cc. and. lxxviii. yeris.** By which accompt it appereth, that the **Bytōs**, after the deth of the foresayd byethren, were in dyscorde by the space of. **li. yeris.** And so the laste pere of the foresayd dyscorde was the pere of the worlde. **iiii. thousande vii. hundredeth. lxxv.**

Swendoloena oʒ **Swendoleyn**, þe wyfe of **Loctrine**, began to regne as queene ouer the **Bytōs** oʒ countrey of **Logiers**, in the pere of the worlde. **iiii. thousand. C. vii. and. regned yeris. xv. ca. vi.** pagi. 12.

Gurgustius **Gurgusto** oʒ **Gozbodā**, þe sonne of **Aluallus**, was made ruler of the **Bytōs**, in the pere of the worlde. **iiii. M. iii. C. lxxviii.** and ruled yeris. **xxviii. ca. xv.** pagi. 12.

Gozbodug who **Gestrey** of **Wymouth** nameth **Gozbodugo**, sonne vnto **Aluallus**, began his dominion ouer þe **Bytōs**, in the pere of þe worlde. **iiii. M. vi. c. lxx. and. ruled yeris. lxxv.** About the. **xxvi. pere** of this kynges regne was **Holifertine** slayne of **Judith** the wydowe, in the chambere of **Bapilion**. As hath **Jacobus Philip pus. ca. xxviii.** pagi. 13.

Jago oʒ **Lago** the newelwe of **Gurgustius**, was made ruler of **Bytain** in the pere of the worlde. **iiii. M. v. c. lxx. and. regned yeris. xlv.** pagi. 12.

Aluallus the brother of **Jago**, and after some wyters the sonne of **Aluallus**, began his seignorie ouer the **Bytōs**, in the pere of the worlde. **iiii. thousand. v. C. xlv. & ruled yeris. lxxv.** In the. **xviii. pere** of this kyng ended the. **iiii. age**, & the **Jewes** were captued by the **Babylōs**. Also **Josus** oʒ **Jospe** the sefner of fables, in the latter days of this **Aluallus** in the countrey of **Grece**, floppeth & sayned his fables. **ca. xlviii.** pagi. 12.

Loctrine oʒ **Loctyne**, the eldste sonne of **Byute**, beganne his regne ouer **Bytain** in the countrey called **Leogria** oʒ **Logiers**, that after was named **myddell Englade**, in the pere of the worlde. **iiii. M. lxxviii. and. regned yeris. xx. ca. v.** pagi. 12.

Lepus oʒ **Lep**, the sonne of the forenamed **Byute**, beganne his rule ouer **Bytain**, in the pere of þe worlde. **iiii.**

The table for the ii. parte.

iiii. M. C. lxxiii. and ruled yeres. xxi.
Thys kynge founded the towne of
Carleill. ca. xi. pagl. 13.

Lud Burdibras o: Rudibras the
sone of Lepi, begā his dominio ouer
þ Bytōs, in the yere of þ worlde. iiii.
M. C. lxxix. and ruled yeres. xxxix.
Thys kynge made Wynchester, Can-
terbury & Weptō now named Whar-
fysbury. ca. xli. pagl. 14.

Lepi o: Leper the soonne of Bal-
dud was made ruler ouer the By-
tōs, in the yere of the worlde. iiii. M.
iii. C. and. xxxviii. and ruled yeres. lx.
Thys kynge made the towne of Lep-
cestre. ca. xliii. pagl. 14.

Madan the sonne of Locrine and
of the sayd Gwendolpne, began hys
reygne ouer the Bytōs, in the yere
of the worlde. iiii. thousande. C. and
xxii. and reygned after the agrement
of many wyters and moſte, yeres. ci.
ca. vii. pagl. 12.

In the second yere of this kynges
reygne ended the thyrde age of the
worlde. And Dauid began to reygne
ouer Israel.

Mempricus o: Mempricius the
sonne of Madan, beganne hys rule
ouer the Bytōs, in the yere of the
worlde. iiii. M. c. lxxi. & the yere befoze
Chyſtes incarnacion, and reyg-
ned yeres. xx. ca. viii. pagl. 12.

Reynaldus o: Rialnus the sonne
of Cunedagius, beganne to rule the
Bytōs, in the yere of the worlde. iiii.
thousande. iiii. C. and. xxxviii. & reyg-
ned yeres. cli. The. xxxii. yere of
this kynge was Rome bulded, of the
two byethzen Remus and Romulus
whiche was the yere of the worlde
ca. xli. pagl. 17.

Stellius o: Stulus the byother
o: sonne of Gurgulius, beganne his
domynion ouer the Bytōs, in the
yere of the worlde. iiii. thousande
b. C. and. xxi. and ruled yeres. cli.
ca. xli. pagl. 13.

Thus endeth the firste parte of
thys worke that conteyneth
viii. C. and. iiii. yeres.

The table of the ii. parte.

Archigallo the second sonne
of Mozinus, began his do-
myon ouer the Bytōs, in
the yere of the worlde. iiii. M. ix. C. l.
& reygned yeres. v. ca. xxxix. pag. 29.

Archigallo befozenamed, was by
the compassio of his byethzen agayn
restored to his former dignite, in the
yere of the worlde. iiii. thousande. ix.
hundredeth. xx. and reygned after ye-
res. l. ca. xli. pagl. 30.

Belnus and Biennus the twoo
sonnes of the fozenamed Danuallo,
beganne to reygne ioyntly ouer By-
tayne, in the yere of the worlde. iiii.
thousande. epght hundredeth. and. viii.
and ruled yeres ioyntly, and Bely-
nus alone. xxi. Thys Belynus
made the towne of Carleill. Also in
London he caused to bee made the
hauen of Byllpnysgate, and ended
the. iiii. wayes begōne of his father.
Thys also made a tēple in Londo, &
named it the Temple of Concozde,
whiche after some wyters opinions
shulde be the Temple batte. now the
parishe churche of the temple as ap-
pereth. ca. xli. pagl. 21.

In the tyme in whiche these two
byethzen reygned, autours some

At what

The table for the .ii. parte.

What discorde. For Polieronicon sayeth that Belinus with Brennus did inuade Italy and besiege Roome in the .CC. i. yere after the transmigracion of Italy. And also that the same tyme Furius Camillus was dictatour of Rome. Wherby it appeareth that Rome was spoiled of them about the yere of the worlde. .iiii. .M. .viii. .C. and .x. But Iacobus Philippus with other sayth that for sayde Furius Camillus was dictatour of Rome about the yere of þ world. .iiii. .M. .viii. hundredeth. lvi. Wherby ther appereth a difference of. xli. yeres. But Radulphus monke of the order of Cisterciens erreth very farre, that affirmeth in hys cronycle that þ said brethren began to reygne ouer þ Byttons in the yere of þ world. .iiii. .M. .v. .C. and. .iiii. whiche dyffereth from other aboue. ii. hundredeth and .l. yeres. And where it is noted of some, that þ sayd Belinus reygned. x. yeres, that is supposed for the tymes of hys reygne after his retorne from Italy. The victorie of the sayde brethren is shewed in the storie folowynge.

Castibelan the brother of Lud, was ordeyned kynge of Bytayne, in the yere of the worlde. v. .M. .C. xlii. and reygned ere he were made tributary to the Romaynes yeres full and and more. .viii. ca. xlviii. pagi. 33.

The begynnynge of this tribute as hath Peter Pyctaulensis, Polieronicon and other autours, was in the yere of the worlde. v. thousande .C. li. & the. xlviii. yere before Christes comynge. And Eutropius sayeth in his cronicle, that Caius Julius dyd conquere bytayne by. ii. yeres before he was create emperour, and he reygned as emperour. ii. yeres. And fur-

thermore the sayde Eutropius affirmeth, that Octavian Augustus successor of the sayd Julius, began to reygne in the yere of the worlde. v. thousande. Clviii. and that he reygned full. xli. yeres before Christ was borne. Which sayng Iacobus Philippus and other autours affirme. Wherby it foloweth, that Julius Cesar subdued Bytayne. xlviii. yeres before the comynge of Christ, and the yere of the worlde as before is sayde v. thousand. .C. li. And so it appereth that Christ was incarnate in þ yere of the worlde after þ accoumpt of the lxx. interpreters. v. .M. .C. xlix.

Clanius the soonne of brother of Kymetus, beganne his reygne ouer Bytayne, in the yere of the worlde four thousand eyght hundredeth and lxxxix. and reygned yeres. ix. pagi. 23.

Elidurus the thyrde sonne of Morindus, beganne his dominion ouer the Byttons, in the yere of the worlde. iiii. thousande. ix. .C. xv. and ruled yeres. v. ca. xl. pagi. 30.

Elidurus before named, was a gayne of the Byttons made kynge, in the yere of the worlde. iiii. thousand ix. hundredeth. xxx. and reygned yeres two. ca. xlii. pagi. 30.

Elidurus before named, was the thyrde tyme restored to the crowne, in the yere of the worlde. iiii. thousand ix. hundredeth. xli. and reygned the thyrde tyme yeres. iiii. Galfride sayeth that during the lyfe of the foresayde brethren, this was inclosed in the towre of London, whiche yf it be true, then is it not true that the flour of byttons affirmeth, which sayeth that the towre

The table for the ii. parte.
Cotwpe of L. 500 was buylded of Cal-
libelan. ca. xliiii. pag. 31.

Gurguintus o: Gurguyn & sonne
of Belyn, was made kynge of By-
tayne, in the yere of the worlde. iiii.
thoulande. viii. C. and. xxxiii. & rep-
gned. xix. yeres. ca. xxxii. pag. 26.

Guthelinus o: Guitellius called
in the Englishe cronycle Gwentolphi
the sone of Gurguintus, was made
kynge of Bytayne, in the yere of the
worlde. iiii. M. viii. C. and. liii. & rep-
gned yeres. xxi. Alexander the great
began to regne aboute the. xxi. yere
of this kynge. ca. xxxiii. pag. 27.

Gorbomannus o: after the En-
glyshe cronycle Gnanboduan sonne
vnto Moridus, was ordeyned kynge
of Bytayne, in the yere of the worlde
iiii. M. viii. C. xxviii. & regned ye-
res. xi. ca. xxxviii. pag. 29.

Gorbomanus o: Gorbomannus
the sone of Elidure, was made kynge
of Bytayne, in the yere of the worlde
iiii. M. ix. C. xlv. And after hym rep-
gned. xxxii. kynges, as in the booke is
after declared, the which with & sayd
Gorbomanus by the reason that fo-
loweth occupped yeres. lxxxvi. And
in this tyme duke Haniball of Car-
tage about the yere of the worlde
began to warre against the Romay-
nes. And Scipio Affrica vāquished
Haniball about the yere of & worlde
v. M. and. ix. And aboute this tyme
Judas Machabeus duke of Israel
bega to be their capitain, & is to save
in the yere of the worlde. v. M. xlv. o:
there about. ca. xlv. pag. 32.

Kimerus o: Kimer the sonne of
Sillitus, beganne his rule ouer the

Byttons, in the yere of the worlde. iiii.
M. viii. C. lxxviii. & ruled yeres. iii.
ca. xxxv. pag. 29.

Lud the sonne of Help last kynge
of the forsayd. xxxiii. was stablyshed
kynge of Bytayne, in the yere of the
worlde. v. M. C. xxi. & regned yeres
ix. This kynge made Ludgate the
westgate of London, and walled a
parte of the same, and named the cy-
tie Caerlud. ca. xlv. pag. 32.

To make the stoyses to agre, and
to kepe the order of the yeres begon,
first it is to be noted that as sheweth
Ranulph with dyuers other, Julius
Cesar made Bytayne tributary to
Rome in the. xlviii. yere before the in-
carnacion of Chyiste, o: in the yere
of the worlde fyue thousande. C. li.
Which was in & ix. yere of Cassib-
elan. fro whiche takyng from & tyme
of Cassibelā before & tribute payde
ix. yeres, & for the tyme of the regne
of Lud. xi. yeres, it foloweth congru-
ently that kynge Lud beganne to
regne in the yere of the worlde fyue
thousande. C. xxi. And so from the
last yere of Elidure, vntyl the begyn-
nyng of the regne of Lud, o: in the
tyme of the. xxxiii. kynges, there pas-
sed. C. lxxxvi. yeres.

Mulmutius dumuallo, the whi-
che of some wyrters is named Do-
nabant and sonne of Cloton duke o:
kynge of Cornwal, was made kynge
of Bytayne, in the yere of the worlde
iiii. thousande. vii. hundred. lxxviii.
and regned yeres. xi. This was the
first that bare crowne in Bytayne.
Thys also founded & towne of Wal-
mesbury and of Wyres. Thys also
began the. iiii. principall hye wayes.
ca. xlviii. pag. 30.
Moridus

The table for the .iii. parte.

Maximianus o: Marcomph the ba-
starde sonne of Clanius was made
kyng of Bytayne, in the yere of the
worlde .iiii. thousande .viii. hundredeth,
xci. and reygned yeres .viii.
ca. xxxvii. pagi. 28

Maximilianus o: Cecilius the sonne of
Guthelinus began his regne ouer
the Byttons, in the yere of the worlde
iii. thousand .viii. C. lxxix. & reygned
yeres .vii. ca. xxxiiii. pagi. 28

Maximianus o: Maximianus with De-
ridurus hys brother whiche in the
Englyshe cronycle are named Hyga-
nus and Detitur, brethren of Clidu-
rus, depoled by strength theyr sayde
brother, and began theyr regne in
yere of the worlde .iiii. thousande .ix.
hundredeth .xxii. and reygned ioyntly
and alone yeres .ix. This Deridur
o: Detitur made the towne of Wyke
kyng after the oppnyon of dyuers
wyrters. ca. llii. pagi. 31

Thus endeth the seconde
parte that conteyneth .iii.
C. lxxiii. yeres.

The table of the .iii. parte.

Maximianus o: Maximianus brother of Gai-
derius began to regne ouer
the Byttons, in the yere of
our Lordes incarnation .liiii. and
reygned yeres .xxx. In this tyme
Gloucer was buylded of Claudius.
And in the .xxvi. yere of this kynges
regne, whiche was the .lxx. yere of
incarnation of our Lord began the
first persecucion of Christen men vn-
der Nero. ca. lb. pagi. 31

Calpurnian, as before is sayd, was
made tributarie to the Romayns, in

the yere of the worlde .M. c. li. & reyg-
ned after yeres .vii. ca. l. pagi. 37

Collus the sonne of Marius, was
made kyng of Bytayne, in the yere
of our lord .C. and .xxvi. and the yere
from the spryke Adam, and
reygned yeres .liii. And about .p. lxx.
yere of thys Collus, was the fourth
persecucion, vnder Marcus Antoni-
us Amelius. ca. lbiii. pagi. 40

Gaius the sonne of Kymba-
lyn, was made kyng of Bytayne,
in the yere of our lordes incarnation
xvi. & in the yere of the worlde .v. M.
ii. C. xlii. and reygned yeres .xxviii.
ca. lxxii. pagi. 37

Kymbelinus the sonne of Thensi-
cius, was made kyng of the Byttons
in the yere of the worlde .v. M. c. lxx.
and reygned yeres .xxxv. Al wyrters
agre that reygnyng this kyng, our
saupoure Iesus Christe was incar-
nate, And then beganne the .vi. age.
ca. lxxii. pagi. 37

Of the tyme of thys kyng Kym-
belius regne, dyuers autours trete
very darkly, for fewe of them do not
accoupt any yeres, for p tyme of his
regne, excepte Peter pictauiensis, &
the autours of the Englyshe booke
whiche affirme hym to regne .xi. ye-
res. But Galfredo of Monmouth
sayeth, that whan he had reygned,
yeres he begate two sonnes.
But the flour of hystories wytnes-
seth him to regne .xxxv. yeres, and
Iesus Christ was borne in .xii. yere
of hys regne, which with other cro-
nycles o: tymes dothe somewhat bet-
ter agre.

Lucius the sonne of Collus, bega
hys regne ouer the Byttons, in the
yere of

pere of our Lozde an. C. lxxx. & of the
worlde and reigned peres. xii.
Thys was the fyrst chrysten kyng in
Bytayne. ca. lix. pag. 41.

Of thys Lucius autours do dout
fully treate. For Galfride sayth that
Lucius dyed in the pere of our Lozde
C. lvi. And Guido de Colupna sayth
that Lucius was chrystened in þe foze
sayde pere. And Peter pictauiensis
sayth that Lucius began to reygne
in the pere of our lozde. c. lxxx. & that
he receyued the sayth in the. viii. pere
of his reyn. And the flour of histo-
ries sayth that he reigned. xii. peres
after the sayth by him receyued. Fur-
thermoze, it is shewed in a certayne
table hangyng on the north parte of
the quye of Doulles in Londō, that
the said Lucius was crowned kyng
of Bytayne in the pere of grace. C.
xxiii. and that he reigned. lxxvii. pe-
res. And the Englyshe cronycle a-
greeth therewith of his coronacion,
but it sayth that he reyneth but on-
ly. xii. peres. And so there appereth a
great dyscord betwene these wyters
But al agreeen that the sayd Lucius
was converted to þe sayth in the time
Eleutherius the B. of Rome, which
after the cōcordaunce of many Roys-
es was made B. of Rome, about the
pere of our Lozde. c. lxxviii. wherfoze
Galfrides saynge is to be denyed,
that sayth he dyed in þe pere of grace
C. lvi. and also the sayng of Guido
for receyuyng of the sayth. And ra-
ther we ought to geue credence to þe
fozesayd table or to Peter pictauiens-
is þe affirmeth þe said Lucius to re-
ygne. xii. pere. But some wyters that
wrote the actes & the regnes of kyn-
ges, haue ouerskrypt as it semeth the
tyme whiche Lucius reigned before
he receyued the sayth. And if he re-
-

igned before he receyued the sayth
xx. peares, and that he receyued the
sayth in his. xx. peare, and reigned
after. xv. peres, they haue accom-
ted the. xv. peres whiche he reigned
as chrysten kyng, and haue let passe
the other. xx. peres. And so it is to be
thought that the fozesayde autoure
Peter pictauiensis dyd. Which reaso-
bernge allowed, the sayd table maye
agre with the sayde Peter wythoute
any greate dyfference whych testy-
fyeth þe said Lucius to reygne. lxxvii.
pere as kyng. After whose deth in so
much that he dyed without any law-
full heyre, a great contenciō sprange
amonge the Byttons, that endured
by. xv. peres, as shall apere by the se-
quel. Trough it is after all histories
that Seuerus a Romayne succeeded
Lucius in Bytayne. But because þe
tyme is not certaynly sette when the
sayd Seuerus subdued the Byttons,
therfoze it is to be noted, that whē it
was shewed to the Romaynes of the
sedicion and discorde of the Byttons,
& of the slepyng of the Romayns then
beyng in Bytayne, the senate sente
thither the foze said Seuerus with. ii.
legions of men. Which bare the self
so manfully, that in shorte whyle he
compelled the Byttons to obey to þe
senate. Whiche Pollicronicon affir-
meth to be about the pere of our lozde
C. xcv. In which pere as hath Jaco-
bus Philippus, the sayde Seuerus
began to reygne ouer the Romayns
But that disagreeth from other cro-
nycles. For Eutropius, Mathewius
& the fozesayde Jacobus Philippus
sayth, that when the sayde Seuerus
had subdued the Arabys, Parthys
and Gallys, after many batayles he
came into bytayne. Wher he beyng
troubled wyth dyuers chaunces, at
last dyed in þe towne of Pozhe. Wher
by

The Table for the .iiii. parte.

by it is to be supposed that in the ende of his reigne he cam hether, & about the .xii. yeare of his reigne ouer the Romainys which was the .v. yere of our Lozde .cc. vii. and that after he reigned ouer the Byttons .v. yeres. Wherfore it euidently apereth, that the foresayd dyscord durid .xv. yeres, whiche tyme Bytain was without a kyng.

Marius, which the Englishe cronycle nameth Westmere, sonne of Arutragus, was made kyng of Bytaine, in the yere of our Lozde .lxxiii. and in the yere of the world, and reigned yeres .ii. Chester towne of this kyng was founded. Westmerlande also of this kyng tooke his name. And about the .xii. yere of this kynges reigne was the second persecution, vnder Domitianus. And also the thirde persecution aboute the .xxxv. yere of this kyng vnder Traianus .ca. lvi. pagi. 40.

Temacius or Tenancius brother to Cassibelan, was of the Byttons ordeined kyng, in the .v. yere of the world .v. thousande .c. and .lvii. and reigned yeres .xxiii. ca. lli. pagi. 36.

Thus endeth the thirde parte which cōteyneth .cc. lvi. yeres.

The table of the .iiii. parte.

Alectus a duke or senatour of Rome, began his dominion ouer the Byttons, in the yere of our Lozde .cc. xxvi. and of the world and reigned yeres .vi. ca. lxxiii. pagi. 47.

Asclepeodotus, or after the Englishe booke Asclepades, began his reigne ouer the Byttons, in the yere of our Lozde God .cc. xxxii. And the yere of the world, & reigned yeres .xx. The fyrte persecution of chryste men

was about the yere of our Lozde .cc. xxxviii. vnder Maximian. The .vii. persecution was in the yere of our Lozde .cc. lv. vnder Decius. In the which Fabian then B. of Rome was martyred. The .viii. persecucion was in the yere of our Lozde .cc. lx. vnder Valerian which was the .xviii. yere of this Asclepiodotus .ca. lxx. pag. 47.

Bassianus the sonne of Seuerus began his reigne ouer the Byttons in the yere of our Lozde .cc. xli. & the yere of the world, and reigned yeres .vi. ca. lxxii. pagi. 45.

Caracallus a ponge and lusty Bytaine of vnknowe blode, by meanes as in his storye sheweth, began his domynion ouer the Byttons, in the yere of our Lozde .cc. and .xlii. and yere of the world, & ruled yeres .viii. ca. lxxiii. pagi. 45.

Here againe autours forget the .v. yeres of the kynges folowynge. Of whiche I not greatly maruaile. For in this tyme muche discencion was among the Romaine prynces, & also among the Byttons cruell warre ceassed not. For they were so dyspyred with discencion and warre, that none could occupie the kyngedome any determinate tyme. For which cause & such like, autours could not asygne any certayn tyme to the prynces as me semeth. But if we may come to some knowlage, Polihronicus sheweth that Constantius that was father to Constantyne the great, was sent by the senate into Bytaine, about the yere of our Lozde .cc. lxxix. & in the seidde yere of Probysus emperour, that he shuld subdue to the Romainys Coelus then there kyng. Fro the whiche tyme of the comynge of the sayde Constantius vntill the last yere of Bassianus accountynge bakeward, there passed .lxi. yeres. In the

The Table of the .iiii. parte.

the tyme of whiche yeares there reyg-
ned in this Iſleland theſe .iiii. kyn-
ges. & is to ſaye: Carallius, Alectus,
Aſclepiodotus and Coelus.

Coelus oꝝ Copl erle of Colcheſter
by certyng of the Bytōs was made
kpng of Byrtayne, in the yere of our
Lorde. cc. llii. & reygned. xxvii. yeres
This kpng after moſt wyters made
the towne of Colcheſter in Eſſex.
cap. xlii. pagi. 42.

Conſtācius a ſenatoure of Rome
by reaſon of maryage knyt with E-
lepn daughter of Coelus, begāne to
reygne as kpng of Byrtayne, in the
yere of our lorde. cc. lxxix. and of the
worlde and reygned yeres. xxx
The. ii. perfecucion of the chryſtē mē
was vnder Iurelianus. Saint Al-
bon prothomarty; in þ tyme of this
Conſtācius as ſome haue, in the. i.
perfecucion whiche was vnder Dio-
cleſian and Maximian, was marty-
red. ca. lxxvii. pagi. 49.

Conſtācius ſurnamed the great,
ſonne of Coſtācius and of the holy
Helepe, began his reygne ouer Byr-
tāyn, in the yere of our lord. iiii. c. xix.
and of the worlde and reygned
as kpng yeres. x. ca. lxxvii. pagi. 50.

Gracianus an offycer oꝝ feede
knyght of Maximus, began to op-
preſſe the Bytōs, in the yere of our
lorde. iiii. c. cc. and tyrannyſed yeares
iiii. ca. lxxviii. pagi. 57.

The ſtoꝝes agree, that after that
Gracian was ſlayne, Byrtayne was
bered a longe whyle with ofte dyſſe-
cions & cruell warre. But howe lōge
this diſcoꝝd dyd laſt, autours treate
diuerſly, ſoꝝ ſome ſay it laſted. i. yere,
and ſome. xl. & ſome. xxx. Therfoꝝe to

knowe þ certepnty it is requiſite that
we diligently ſecche, howe many ye-
res paſſed fro the laſt yere of Gracia
vntyll the begynnyng of the reygne
of Conſtāntyne, oꝝ the certayn tyme
when Conſtantine was made kpng.
who as witneſſeth Guido was crow-
ned at Ciceſter in þ yere of our Lorde
iiii. c. xxxv. The ſoure of hystoꝝes
ſayeth alſo that in the thyrde yere of
Theodocius the yonger Emperour
Conſtāntyne began to rule the Byr-
tōs. Wherby Theodocius began to
reygne in the yere of our Lorde. iiii. c.
xxxi. Wherby it apereth, that fro the
laſt yere of Gracia vntyll the begyn-
nyng of Conſtantine, there paſſed a-
bout. xl. yeres. But þ very trewe rule
is, þ in the yere of grace. iiii. c. li. the
Barons fyrſt perced Byrtayne, and
in the thyrde yere of Uoſtigern. fro
whiche takynge away ſoꝝ the reygne
of Uoſtigern. ii. yeres, & fro þ reygne
of Coſtācius. v. yere, & fro the reigne
of Conſtāntyne. x. yere, it foloweth þ
the ſayd diſſencion oꝝ myſerpe of the
Bytōs laſted. xxxix. yeres ful. And
here ended the tꝛybutē þ was payde
to the Romaynes, that had endured
aboue. iiii. c. yeres.

Maximus oꝝ Maximianus, the
ſōne of Leonine brother to Trahern
vnclē to Helepe, began his reygne
ouer Byrtāyn, in the yere of our lord
iii. c. lxx. and reygned yeares. ix.
ca. lxxii. pagi. 55.

Saynt Uirſula wyth her ſelowes in
thys kpnges tyme were martyꝛed of
Enanus and Helga.

Of this ſoꝝelāyd kpng called Ma-
ximus oꝝ after ſome Maximianus,
wyters dyuerſly ſpeake, ſo that ſome
ſay he reygned ſewe yeres. But in þ
concoꝝdaunce of cronycles, it playn-
ly apereth that the ſayde Maximus
began

The Table for the .v. parte.

began to regne ouer the Bytōs, in the yere of our Loꝝde.iii.c.lxxxii. and that he was slain of Theodosius the elder in the thꝛyꝛd yere of his regne, which began to regn in the yere of oure loꝝd.iii.c. lxxxviii. And so it appeareth playnlye that he reigned. ix. yeaꝛes.

Octanius duke of Iesses oꝝ Iewelles, and after named Westsaxōs by extoꝛte power began his regne ouer the Bytōs, in the yere of our loꝝde.iii.c. and. xxix. and of the world and reigned yeres. liiii. ca. lxxi. pagi. 54.

Seuerus emperour of Rome, as befoꝛe is shewed, in the. xii. yeaꝛe of his empyꝛe, and yere of our loꝝd. ii. c. and. vii. beganne his regne ouer þ Bytōs, and yere of the world and reigned as kyng yeres. v. The fyꝛst persecucion of the chꝛysten men, was vnder this Seuerus, about the yere of our loꝝde. ii. c. and. x. ca. lxi. pagi. 44.

Thus endeth the fourth parte that encludeth. CC. and. lxx. yeres.

The line of the kynges of Fraunce.

Pharaimundus þ sōne of Mercomitus, beganne his regne as fyꝛst kyng of Fraunce, in the yere of our loꝝd. liii. c. xx. and the myserye of the Bytōs the. xxvi. yere, & reigned yeres. xi. ca. lxxviii. pagi. 42.

Clodius oꝝ Clodio, oꝝ after some Crynitus and Capillatus the sonne of Pharamūde, was ordeyned the seconde kyng of Fraunce, in the yere of our loꝝd. liii. hundꝛeth and. xxi. &

the. xxxvii. yere of the myserye of the Bytōs, and reigned yeres. xix. ca. lxxix. pagi. 43.

The table of the. v. parte.

Aurelius Ambrosius the seconde sonne of Constantyne and brother to Constantius the monke slayne by reason of Alostiger, was made kyng of Bytayne, in the yere of oure Loꝝde. liii. c. lxxxi. and the. xi. yeaꝛe of Chyldeꝛꝛch then kyng of Fraunce, and reigned yeres. xix. In this kynges tyme about the yere of our loꝝde. liii. c. lxxxii. beganne the kyngdome of Southsaxones vnder Ella and his sonnes. And also in thys kynges tyme that is to saie in the yere of our loꝝde. cccc. xxii. began the kyngdome of Estangles vnder Aissa. But Guido sayeth it began in the yere of our loꝝde. v. hundꝛeth. lxx. as appereth. ca. xciii. pagi. 74.

Arthurus the sonne of Uiter begā his reigne ouer the Bytōs, in þ yere of our loꝝde. v. c. and. xvii. and the. iii. yeaꝛe of Lotharius then kyng of Fraunce, and reigned yeres. xxvi. In thys kynges tyme the kyngdom of Saxōs begā vnder Herdicus about the yere of our loꝝd. v. c. &. xxi. ca. c. liii. pagi. 86.

Aurelius Conanus the neweb of Constantine, began his regne ouer Bytayne, in the yere of our loꝝde. v. c. &. xli. and the. xxxii. yere of Lotharius and reigned yeaꝛes. ii. In thys kynges tyme the kyngdō of Aost-humbers began vnder Ida, aboute the yere of our loꝝde. v. and. xlvii. ca. c. lviii. pagi. 87.

Constantinus the brother of A. Djoenus

The table for the ii. parte.

Proemus kyng of litle Brittain, began his reigne ouer muche Brittain, Anno domini. llii. C. xxlii. and the yere of Clodio then kyng of Fraunce the thirde yere, and reigned yeres tenne. capi. lxxv. pagi. 64.

Constantinus the sonne of Constantine, befoze tyme a monke, was made kyng of muche Brittain in the yere of our lord. llii. C. xlii. & the xlii. yere of Clodio the kyng of Fraunce, & reigned yeres. v. capi. lxxvi. pa. 64.

Chyldericus or Hyldericus the sonne of Heroneus, was ordeined kyng of Fraunce, in the yere of oure lord foure hundred and sixty, and the twelke yere of Clostiger then kyng of Brittain, and reigned yeres twenty & foure. capi. lxxvi. pagi. 69.

Clodouens the sonne of Chyldericus or Hyldericus befoze named, was ordeined kyng of Fraunce, in the yere of our lord foure hundred & eighty & four, and the thirti yere of Aurelius the kyng of Brittain, & reigned yeres xxx. This was the firste christen kyng whiche receiued the faith of saint Remigius about the yere of oure lord foure hundred & ninety and nine. Where by it appeareth that the faith came into Brittain about thre hundred yere befoze it came into Fraunce. capi. xcvi. pagi. 77.

Clotharius or Lotharius the sonne of Clodouens, beganne his reigne ouer the Frenchemenne, in the yere of our lord foure hundred and fourty & the yere of Viter then kyng of Brittain, & reigned yeres. l. ca. c. l. pagi. 72.

Constantius the sonne of Cadoc beganne his reigne ouer the lande of

Brittain, in the yere of our lord foure hundred forty and thye, & the twenty & nynn yere of Lotharius then kyng of Fraunce, & reigned yeres thye. To this kyng of Ostrogathoris, about this tyme spoiled Rome and other citiees in Italy. capi. vii. pagi. 77.

Chilpericus the third sonne of Clotharius, beganne his reigne ouer the Frenchemenne, in the yere of our lord foure hundred sixty & four, & the fourth yere of Viter then kyng of Brittain & reigned yeres. xlii. capi. xii. pagi. 97.

Careticus a Byton of bncowthe birth beganne his tyranny ouer the Bytons, the yere of our lord foure hundred eighty & sixe, and. xlii. yere of Chilpericus then kyng of Fraunce, & tyrantised yeres. llii. capi. xviii. pagi. 104.

Here is to bee noted that after the said Careticus was expelled out of Brittain, the Bytons abode in Cambria, and these parties, & fought oft with the Saxons. Of whose capitalnes frome this Careticus vntill Cadwan, the story remembryeth none. Yet by the concordance of other cronicles & histories, it apereth the betwene the laste yere of Careticus & begynnyng of the reigne of Cadwan, there passed about. xlii. yeres as apereth by the sequell. Furthermoze in this tyme Ethelbert kyng of Kent receiued the faith about the yere of our lord. vi. C. x. &. vi. This Ethelbert buylded Doules church. And about the yere of our lord. vi. C. xlii. began the kyngdome of Elisapde vnder Hebertus.

Cadwanus duke of Northwallis, was of the Bytons chiefe kyng, and beganne to reigne ouer a parte of Bytons, in the yere of our lord foure hundred & eighty & the twenty & foure yere

The table foze the .v. parte.

of þe secōd Clothaire, & reigned peres
xxii. In this kyng his tyme the kyng
dome of Mercia boganne vnder þe
da. capl. c. xxviii. pagl. 123.

Cadwallus þe soonne of Cadwall
beganne his reigne ouer a parte of
Britaine, in the yere of our lord. vi.
hūdyed. xxv. & the fourth yere of the
firste Dagobert the kyng of fraunce
and reigned peres fourty and eyght
capl. c. xxxiii. pagl. 131.

Clodoueus the yonger soonne of
Dagobertus, beganne his reigne ouer
the frenchemen, in þe yere of our lord
vi. C. xlv. and the .x. yere of Cadwall
the kyng of Britaine, and reigned
peres. xvi. capl. xxxvi. pagl. 135.

Clotharius þe thirde of that name
and soonne of Clodoueus, was made
kyng of fraunce, in the yere of our
lord. vi. C. lxxi. & þe. xvi. yere of Cad-
wall then kyng of Britaine, and reig-
ned peres. lvi. capl. xxxvii. pagl. 137.

Chilpericus o; Hildericus þe thirde
soonne of Clodoueus, beganne his
reigne ouer þe frenchemenne, in the
yere of our lord. cccc. lxxi. & þe. xxiii.
of Cadwall yet kyng of Britaine, &
reigned peres. li. capl. c. xxxix. pa. 140.

Cadwaladrus, o; after Bede Ced-
walla, soonne of Cadwalla, beganne to
rule þe Britons, in þe yere of our lord
vi. c. lxxviii. & the. xii. yere of Theodo-
ricus then kyng of fraunce, & reig-
ned peres. lvi. capl. c. xl. pagl. 142.

Of þe tyme of þe raigne of this Cad-
walader, auctours wyte diuersly and
shew of hym as of .ii. seuerall perso-
nes. For Galfred & other saie þe when
he had reigned. xii. peres, he went to
Roome, and ther of bishop Sergius

was made a monke, and died in the
yere of our lord. vi. C. lxxix. which
sayng differeth farre fro other auc-
tours. For Gyrdo de calūna saietþ
in his worke þe he shortly gathered of
the kynges of Britain, þe when Cad-
wallader that also is name Cad-
walla soonne of Cadwallon had peas-
sably gouerned Britain thre peres,
he went to Roome & of bishop Ser-
gius was made monke, & ended his
life in þe yere of our lord. vi. C. lxxxix.
whiche sayng Policronicō in his .v.
boke & .xx. chapitre affirmeth, where
he nameth þe said Cadwalader kyng
of Britōs & westsaxons, and þe kyng
Jew o; Jue was his successour. And
so by these auctours and other whi-
che Policronicon alledgeth for hym,
as Bede & other, whiche name this
Cadwalader Cedwalla, it apereth þe
it was one persone & that this tyme
he reigned ouer the Britons & west-
saxones, whiche was last kyng of the
stocke of Britons. And because the
kynges of westsaxō in pres of tyme
subdued all other kynges, therefore
I will obserue the orde of theim vn-
till I haue broughte this Ilande to
one monarchy. Here endeth the lyne
of the kynges of Britain whiche con-
tinued frome the firste Brute by .v.
eyght hundred twoo & thirty peres.

Dagobertus þe first the name, and
sonne of the. ii. Clothaire, beganne his
dominis ouer þe frenche mēne, in the
yere of our lord. vi. C. lxxi. & the. viii.
yere of Cadwall the kyng of Britain
& reigned peres. xiii. capl. c. lxxi.
pagl. 123.

Lotharius o; Clotharius þe soonne
of Chilpericus, beganne his reigne
ouer þe frenchemenne, in the yere of
our lord. v. C. lxxviii. & the. ii. yere
of

The table for the II. parte.

of Caroticus then kyng of Britaine
reigned yeres. ciiii. ca. xxi. pa. no.

Meroneus nexte oʒ next of allie
vnto Clodio, was made kyng of the
Frischemenne, in the yere of our lord
iii. c. l. & the .ii. yere of Vortiger then
kyng of Britaine, and reigned yeres
tenne. capi. lxxv. pag. 51.

Malgo þ brother Vortiporius, be-
ganne his reigne ouer þ Britons, in
the yere of our lord. v. c. lii. & xxviii.
yere of Lothaire fornamed, & reig-
ned yeres after molle accorde of wy-
ters. xxi. capi. cxi. pag. 59.

Theodozicus þ brother of the for-
named Lothaire, beganne his reigne
ouer Fraunce, in þ yere of our lord. vi.
c. lvi. & þ. xxx. yere of þ forsaide Cad-
wall the kyng of Britaine, and reig-
ned yeres. iii. capi. c. xxviii. pag. 69.

Vortigerus oʒ Vortigernus duke
of Cornewall oʒ Consul of Jelles,
was by treason made kyng, in þ yere
of our lord. cccc. lxxviii, and the. xliii
yere of Clodio then kyng of Fraunce,
and reigned yeres. xlii. The Dares
oʒ Engliſhemenne, in the. iii. yere of
this kynges reigne firste entred this
Ilande. capi. lxxxi. pag. 67.

Vortimerus the soonne of Vorti-
ger, was made kyng of Britaine, in
the yere of our lord. cccc. lxxxiii, and
the. iiii. yere of Childerich the kyng
of Fraunce, and reigned yeres seven
capi. lxxxviii. pag. 70.

Vortigernus before named, was
againne restored to the kyngdome, in
the yere of our lord. cccc. lxxi. and the
xi. yere of Childerich the kyng of
Fraunce, and reigned yeres nein. In

this kyng his tyme aboute the yere
of our lord foure hundred seventy &
like the kyngdome of Kent the firste
kyngdome of the Saxons, beganne
vnder Hengist as appereth. folio.
xxvii. capi. lxxxix. pag. 71.

Uter surnamed Dendragon, the
youngest soonne of Constantine and
brother to Aurelius, was made kyng
of Britaine, in the yere of our lord
cccc. & the sixtein yere of Clodouens
then kyng of Fraunce, and reigned
yeres. xvi. capi. c. pag. 81.

Vortiporius þ soonne of Aurelius
Conanus, beganne to rule the Bri-
tons, in the yere of our lord. cccc. &
xliiii. and þ yere of Clothaire kyng
of Fraunce. xxxiii. and reigned yeres.
four. capi. c. x. pag. 91.

Thus endeth the first parte 20
whiche includeth. C. liii.

20 The table of the first parte.

A Deulphus oʒ Ethelwolph
the soonne of Egbertus, be-
ganne his reigne ouer þ west-
saxons & other, in the yere of our lord
viii. c. xxii. & the. xvi. yere of Lewis
the first then kyng of Fraunce & reig-
ned yeres. xxii. capi. c. lxii. /pag. 179.

Brighticus of þ fornamed blode
of Cerdicus, was made kyng of west
saxons, in the yere of our lord vii. c.
lxxvii, and the. i. yere of Charles the
kyng of Fraunce, and reigned yeres
xvii. Aboute the. ix. yere of this kyng
the Danes firste entred this Ile as
moze plainly apereth in the story fo-
lowyng. capi. c. lvi. pag. 102.

Clodouens the. iii. of þ name, and
U. soonne of þ. ii. Theodozicus, was
B. ii. made

The table for the .vi. parte.

made kyng of France, in the yere of
oure lordes sixe hundred and nenty,
and the thyrde yere of Jhesu then
kyng of Westsaxons, and reigned yeres
thre cap. xlii. pagi. 147.

Childebertus þ second soonne of
Theoryche, begane his reigne ouer
þ frenche menne, in þ yere of our lordes
sixe hundred foure score and thirten
and the sixe yere of Jhesu þet kyng of
westsaxons, and reigned yeres .xvii.
cap. xliii. pagi. 148.

Cuthbertus þ newewe of Ethelard
beganne to reigne ouer þ westsaxons,
in þ yere of our lordes .vii. c. xxix, and
the thyrde yere of the seconde Theo-
doricus, and reigned yeres sixtein.
cap. xlviii. pagi. 153.

Carolomanus with Charles suc-
named the greatesoonnes of Pepin
beganne to reigne ouer France,
in the yere of our lordes siue hundred
sixty and eyght, and the twenty yere
of Kenulphus, & reigned yeres toyn-
tly and Charles alone fourty and
seuen. This Charles was the firste
Emperoure of the Romaines of the
Roche of the Frenchemen and reig-
ned fourteyn yeres. cap. hundred
fifty and foure. pagi. 161.

Charles the second of that name,
& youngest soonne of the first Lewes
surnamed Balded, beganne to reigne
ouer the west parte of France, in the
yere of our lordes eyght hundred and
fourty and one, and the ninth yere
of Ideulpus, & reigned yeres thirty
and eyght. The countres of Flaun-
ders in this Charles dayes beganne
firste to bete name, as after in the
ende of his story is shewed. cap. C.
and. lxi. pagi. 166.

Charles surnamed the Simple,
and soonne of the fourth Lewes, be-
ganne his reigne ouer the realme of
France, in the yere of our lordes .x. c.
and four & the third yere of Edward
the kyng of Englande, and reigned
yeres. xliiii. cap. c. lxxix. pagi. 188.

Dagobertus the seconde of that
name and soonne of Childebert,
was avowed kyng of the frenche
menne, in the yere of our lordes seuen
hundred and tenne, and the twenty &
thre yere of Jhesu þet kyng of west-
saxons, and reigned yeres a leuen.
cap. xliiii. pagi. 148.

Danell þ was named Chilperthe
& clerke, was made kyng of frenche
menne, in the yere of our lordes .vii. c.
and .xxi, and the .xliiii. yere of Jhesu
þet kyng of westsaxons and reigned
yeres siue. cap. c. xlv. pagi. 149.

Ethelardus the newewe of Jhesu,
beganne his reigne ouer the West-
saxons, in the yere of our lordes seuen
hundred twenty and foure, and the
thyrde yere of Danell then kyng of
France, and reigned yeres siue. ca.
pi. c. xlv. pagi. 150.

Egbertus, or after the Englyshe
boke Cobryght, the soonne of Alu-
mundus, beganne his reigne ouer
the Westsaxons, in the yere of oure
lordes seuen hundred fourescore and
fyttein, and in the twenty and seuen
yere of Charles the kyng of France
and reigned yeres thyrty and eyght.
This kyng commaunded the swar-
ons to bee Anglis, and Britaine to
bee named Anglia, that in Englande.
cap. C. lvi. pagi. 166.

Ethel.

Ethelwaldus the eldest sonne of **Idculphus**, began his regne ouer the **West Saxons**, in the yere of oure **Lorde** eyght hundredth and .lv. and the .x. yere of **Charles** the **Balled** then kynge of **Fraunce**, and reigned but one yere. capl.c.lxxvi. pagl. 117.

Ethelbertus the seconde sonne of **Idculphus**, was anoynted kynge of **West Saxons**, in the yere of oure **Lorde** eyght hundredth and .lvi. and the cleuth yere of **Charles** the **Balled** yet kynge of **Fraunce**, and reigned syxe yeres. In the tyme of this kynges regne, the seventh **John** whiche was a woman was admytred to be byshoppe of **Rome**, about the yere of oure **Lorde** eyght hundredth and .lviii. as sayth **Jacobus** **Philippus**. ca.c.lxxviii. pagl. 122.

Ethelredus the thyrde sonne of **Idculphus**, was made kynge of **West Saxons** wyth other, in the yere of oure **Lorde** eyght hundredth and .lxi. and the .xviii. yere of **Charles** yet kynge of **Fraunce**, and reigned eyght yeres. In the tyme of this kynges regne, saynte **Edmounde** kyng of **Celt Angles** was martyred of the princes **Danus** & **Partynus**. capl.c.lxx. pagl. 121.

Eudo or **Obdo** the sonne of **Raberte** erle of **Ingelowe**, beganne his regne ouer the **Frenchemen**, in the yere of oure **Lorde** eyght hundredth foure thow and sytene, and the .xxii. yere of **Blutredus** yet kynge of **West Saxons**, and reigned nyne yeres. capl.c.lxxiii. pagl. 123.

Edwarde surnamed the elder, and sonne of **Blutred** or **Alphred**, be-

ganne his regne ouer the more parte of **Englande**, in the yere of oure **Lorde** nyne hundredth and one and the syxe yere of **Eudo** then kynge of **Fraunce**, and reigned twente and foure yeres. capl.c.lxxix. pagl. 124.

Ethelstanus the sonne of **Edwarde** the elder, beganne his regne ouer the more partie of **Englande**, in the yere of oure **Lorde** nyne hundredth and .xii. and the thyrde yere of **Raaffe** then kynge of **Fraunce**, and reigned sytene yeres. This kynge broughte **Britayne** or **Englande** to one monarchy. But yet after some wyters **Blutred** dyd it. capl.c.lxxxiii. pagl. 125.

Edmounde the brother of **Ethelstane** and sonne of **Edwarde** the elder, beganne his regne ouer **Englande**, in the yere of oure **Lorde** nyne hundredth and .xli. and the seventh yere of **Lewys** the fyfth then kynge of **Fraunce** and reigned yeres .vi. capl.c.lxxxviii. pagl. 122.

Edredus the brother of **Edmounde**, beganne his regne ouer **Englande**, in the yere of oure **Lorde** nyne hundredth and .xlvii. and the .xiii. yere of the soynamed **Lewys** yet kynge of **Fraunce**, and reigned nyne yeres. capl.c.lxxxix. pagl. 123.

Edwynus the eldest sonne **Edmounde** brother of **Ethelstane**, was anoynted kynge of **Englande**, in the yere of oure **Lorde** nyne hundredth and .lvi. and the seconde yere of **Lothayre** then kynge of **Fraunce**, and reigned thre yeres. capl.c.cii. pagl. 127.

The table for the vi. parte.

Edgarus the second sonne of **Edmond** & brother of **Edwyn**, began his regne ouer England, in the yere of grace. **ix. c. lx. & the v. yere of Lotharius** then kyng of Fraunce, & reigned yeres. **xxvi. ca. c. xlii.** pagi. 228.

Edward s^{on} sonne of **Edgare** surnamed the martyr, began his regne ouer England, in the yere of our Lord **ix. c. lxxvii.** and the **xxii. yere of Lothayre** yet kyng of Fraunce, & reigned yeres. **liii. ca. c. xvi.** pagi. 233.

Egclredus s^{on} sonne also of **Edgare** was made kyng of England, in s^{on} yere of grace. **ix. c. lxxxi.** & the **xxvi. yere of Lothayre** yet kyng of Fraunce & reigned yeres. **xxvi. ca. c. xvi.** pagi. 235.

Edmunde Ironsyde the sonne of **Egclredus**, with also **Canutus** sonne of **Swanus**, began to regne ouer Englande, in the yere of our Lord **ix. c. xlvii.** and the **xix. yere of Robertte** then kyng of Fraunce, and reigned one yere. **ca. cc. liii.** pagi. 247.

Edward the confessor, and sonne of **Egclredus** and of **Emma** his last wyfe, began his regne ouer Frealme of England, in the yere of our Lord **ix. c. xliii.** & the **liii. yere of Henry** the kyng of Fraunce, and reigned in vertue and holynesse yeres. **xxiii.** In this kynges tyme the chapel of Walsinghyn was first builded, in s^{on} yere of our Lord. **ix. c. xli. ca. cc. i.** pagi. 258.

Godfrey of **Bulys** & not **Beleyn**, in **Philippes** tyme gat by strength the cite of **Ierusalem**, & was crowned king of s^{on} same, in the yere of our Lord **ix. c. xli. ca. cc. xv.** pagi. 266.

Hyldericus or **Chyldericus** the seconde of s^{on} name, & sonne of **Theodo-**

ricus, was made kyng of Frenchme in the yere of our Lord. **vii. c. xl.** and the **xi. yere of Eutbert** then kyng of Westsaxons, and reigned yeres. **x.** Here endeth the lyne of **Adenonis**, and begynneth the lyne of **Deppn.** **ca. c. xlii.** pagi. 274.

Hugh Capet s^{on} sonne of **Robert** s^{on} trait, descended of **Hugh le grande** began to take vpon hym or v^{er}s^{er}se the crowne of Fraunce, in the yere of our Lord. **ix. c. ix.** & the **ix. yere of Egelred** and ruled yeres. **ix. ca. cc. ii.** pagi. 285.

Henry s^{on} sonne of **Robert** began his dominion ouer Fraunce, in the yere of our Lord. **ix. c. xxi.** & the **x. yere of Canut** the kyng of England, & reigned yeres. **xxi. ca. cc. vii.** pagi. 293.

Harolde surnamed **Hardestoote** the sonne of **Canutus** began to regne ouer England, in the yere of our Lord **ix. c. xxi.** & the **x. yere of Henry** then kyng of Fraunce, and ruled yeres. **iii. ca. cc. viii.** pagi. 295.

Hardekinitus or **Hardestmough**, sonne of **Canutus** & of **Emma**, was made kyng of England, in the yere of our Lord. **ix. c. xli.** & the **xli. yere of Henry** then kyng of Fraunce, & reigned yeres. **li.** In this kyng ended the line of the **Manes**, that had continued in this lade in great persecuci^{on} aboue **cc. i. yeres. ca. cc. ix.** pagi. 296.

Harolde the eldest sonne of the erle **Goodwyn**, began to regne ouer the Englishmen in the yere of our Lord **ix. c. xvi.** & the **liii. yere of Philip** the kyng of Fraunce, & reigned yeres. **ix. ca. cc. xvi.** pagi. 297.

Heue or **Jue** of the blode of **Manes**, or after some wyters **Juo**, beganne his regne ouer the **Westsaxons** to ceken after the departing of **Cadwa.**

The table for the .vi. parte.

Cadwalader, in the yere of our lord
vi.c.lxxxvii. and the .xvi. yere of the
seconde Theodoricus then kyng of
fraunce, and reygned yeres. xxxvii.
capl. c. xlii.

pagl. 145.

Kenulphus of the blode & lyne of
Cerdicus, begā his reygne ouer the
westsaxons, in the yere of our lord. vii.
c. xlviii. and .v. yere of Hylder-
cus then kyng of fraunce, and rep-
gued yeres. xxxi. ca. c. li.

pagl. 157.

Kanutus whiche in the Englyshe
boke is named Knought, begā after
þ death of Edmond to reygne alone
ouer England, in þ yere of grace. M.
xix. and the .xx. yere of Roberte then
kyng of fraunce, & reygued yeres. xix.
capl. cc. v.

pagl. 250.

Lotys Balbus, the secōd of that
name & sonne of Charles the balded,
began his reygne ouer the frenche-
men, in þ yere of grace. viii. c. lxxviii.
and the .vi. yere of Alreude the kyng
of westsaxons, & reygued yeres. ii.
ca. c. lxxviii.

pagl. 177.

Lotys & Charles the sonnes of
Lotys Balbus, beganne to reygne
togethr ouer þ frenchme, in the yere
of our lord. viii. c. lxxx. and the .viii.
yere of Alreude then kyng of west-
saxons, and reygued spue yeres.
ca. lxxb.

pagl. 178.

Lotys the. iiii. of þ name, & sonne
of Charles last remembred, began his
reign ouer fraunce, in þ yere of grace
viii. c. lxxxvi. & the. xlii. yere of Al-
reudus pet kyng of westsaxons, & rep-
gued yeres. viii. ca. lxxvii.

pagl. 203.

Lotys the. v. of þ name, & sonne of
Charles the Symple, begā his rep-
gne ouer fraunce, in the yere of our
lord. ix. c. xxxviii. & þ. ix. yere of Ethel-

stane the kyng of Englad, & reygued
yeres. xxi. ca. c. lxxvi.

pagl. 226.

Lothari þ eldest sone of þ. v. Le-
wys was anoynted kyng of fraunce
in the yere of our lord. ix. c. xl. and
the. viii. yere of Edward the kyng of
Englad, & reygued yeres after most
wynters. xxxix. ca. c. xc.

pagl. 224.

Leuys the. vi. of þ name, & sonne
of Lothari, began his reygne ouer
fraunce in the yere of our lord. ix. c.
lxxxvi. and the. v. yere of Egelbertus
the kyng of England, & reygued ye-
res. iiii. In this kyng endeth the line
of Deppn. ca. cc. i.

pagl. 249.

Dipinus the. ii. sonne of Charles
Martellus, was fyrst made kyng of
fraunce of þ blode, in the yere of our
lord. vii. c. i. & the. ii. yere of Kenul-
phus then kyng of westsaxons, & rep-
gued yeres. xlviii. ca. c. llii.

pagl. 159.

Philip þ first of þ name & sonne of
Henry, began to gouerne the french-
me, in þ yere of our lord. M. lxxviii. &
the. xvi. yere of Edward þ cōfessoure
then kyng of Englande, & reygued
yeres. xlviii. ca. cc. xv.

pagl. 266.

Radulphus the sonne of Richard
duke of Burgoyne, began his reygne
ouer fraunce, in the yere of our lord
ix. c. xxii. and the. xxi. yere of Edward
pet kyng of England, & reygued ye-
res. xlii. ca. lxxxi.

pagl. 221.

Robert the sonne of Hugh begā to
reygne ouer the frenchme, in the yere
of our lord. ix. c. lxxx. & the. xlviii. yere
of Egelredus then kyng of Englad
and reygued yeres. xxx.

capl. cc. iiii.

pagl. 246.

Eggeburtus the newwe of Cuts-
bert, begā his reygne ouer the West
saxons, in the yere of our lord. vii. c.
xlv.

pagl.

The table for the .viii. parte.

the .v. pere of Hydericus the se-
cond then kyng of Fraunce, and rep-
gned peres. ii. ca. c. l. pag. 157.

Theodoricus the secōd of the name
and sonne of the seconde Dagobert,
began his regne ouer the Frenchme,
in the pere of our lord. vii. c. xvi. and
the seconde pere of Ethelardus then
kyng of Westsaxons, and reigned pe-
res. xliii. ca. c. xlvii. pag. 150.

Thus endeth the .vi. parte that
conteyneth. ccc. lxxi. peres.

The table for the .viii. parte.

Henry surnamed Beaulerke
and thyrde sonne of William
Conquerour, beganne his
regne ouer England, in the pere of
our lord. M. C. and one, and in the
xliii. pere of the foresayde Philip the
kyng of Fraunce, and reigned peres
xxxv. ca. cc. xvi. pag. 190.

Henry the seconde of that name, a
sonne of Geffrey Plantaginet and of
Molde the emperesse, began his regne
in Englande, in the pere of our lord
M. C. lv. and the xix. pere of Lewis
the. viii. then kyng of Fraunce, and
reigned peres. xxxv. ca. cc. xvi. pag. 190.

Lewis surnamed the great and
sonne of the fyrste Philippe, was
nomynted kyng of Fraunce, in the pere
of our lord. M. c. vii. and the. vi. years
of the first Henry then kyng of Eng-
lande, and reigned peres. xxxix.
ca. cc. xix. pag. 199.

Lewis the. viii. of that name and
sonne of Lewis the great, began his
regne ouer Fraunce, in the years of

our lord. M. C. xxi. and the fyrst
pere of Stephan then kyng of En-
glande, and reigned peres. xliii.
ca. cc. xxi. pag. 200.

Philippe the seconde of that name
surnamed a bien doie, sonne of the
viii. Lewis, beganne his regne in
Fraunce, in the pere of our lord a
thousand. C. lxxix. and the. xliii. pere
of Henry then seconde the kyng of
Englande, and reigned peres. xliii.
ca. cc. xli. pag. 205.

Stephan erle of Boloyng a sone
vnto the erle of Bleins, a of the wy-
ues sister of Henry the fyrst, began his
regne ouer Englade, in the pere of
grace. M. C. xxi. and the laste pere
of Lewis the great, a reigned peres
xix. ca. cc. xxi. pag. 204.

William duke of Normandy the
bastarde sonne of Robert the. vi. duke
of the sayde prouince, beganne his
regne ouer the realme of England,
in the. xv. daie of Octobyr, and pere
of our lord. M. lxxii. and the. ix. pere
of the first Philip the kyng of Fraunce
a reigned peres. v. ca. xxi. In the. xx.
pere of this kyng, the church of saint
Doulce with a great parte of London
was burned. This kyng founded the
monasteries of Batell and Barin-
desty. ca. cc. xxi. pag. 204.

William surnamed the Rede and
sonne of William Conquerour, began
his regne ouer Englad, in the mo-
neth of July a pere of our lord. a. M.
lxxix. and the. xxi. pere of Philip the
named the kyng of Fraunce a reigned
peres. xli. ca. cc. xxi. pag. 206.

Thus endeth the table of
the fyrst volume.



Of that in the accompting of the peres of þ world, from the creatiō of Ada, vnto the incarnacyon of Chyist, bene many and sonderpe

opynions, as the Hebrzewes, whiche accompt for the sayd terme. iij. thousande. ix. hundred. xliij. peres, the seventy interpyetours reken. v. M. C. lxxx. and. xix. peares. Some there be that reken v. M. lxxx. and. xix. peares and some. v. thousande. CC. x. xliij. peares. In the thyrde boke and fyrst chapter of Polycronycon bene also shewed dyuers opinions, wherof the grettest nombze and most certayne, is v. thousande and. CC. peres. And in other places also, some reken mo, and some haue lesse, by reason wherof the tymes ben diuerly set and accompted, as the fyrst foundacyon of Rome, the subuersyon of the famous cite of Troie, the fyrst buyldynge of the cite of London, & dyuerse other old thinges. But for I se, þ the accōpt of the seventy interpyetours is of holy Bede, & many other holy wyters allowed and folowed: therfore I entēdyng to shew in this rude worke folowyn, what pere of þ world Wyte entered fyrst this yle, then called Albion, and now England, purpose to kepe the sayde accompte, wherof the particulers ensewe: that is to wytte, the fyrste from Adam to Noe was. xlij. hundred and. xliij. peares.

From Noe to Abraham was. ix. hundred and. xliij. peres.

From Abraham to Dauid was. ix. hundred and. xl. peres.

From Dauid to the captiuyte of the Jewes was. iij. hundred and. v. peares.

And from the captiuyte to the comynge of Chyist. v. hundred. lxxx. and tenne peares.

The whiche in all make. v. thousande, a hundred. lxxx. and. xix. peres.



After which accōpt, most according to the purpose of this worke, albeit that dyuerse opynions therof bene lesse in wytyng and of dyuerse autours: the famous cite of Troie was subuerted of the Grekes, as wytnesseth holy Eusebius & other, in the yere of the worlde. iij. M. and. xliij.

Also folowyn the sayd accompt, as wytnesseth the forsayde Euseby & dyuerse other, the cite of Rome was begon to be buylded in the. xi. yere of Ezechias then kynge of Juda, the whych yere maketh after the sayde autours, the yere of the worlde. iij. thousande, foure hundred. lxx. And þ sayde autours asserme, that the sayd cite of Rome was edifyed after the subuersyon of Troie. iij. hundred and. xliij. peres. By which reason it must folowe, that it was buylded in þ yere of the worlde, as is about sayde.

Peter Dictauiensis and other te stifye, that Wyte entered first the yle of Albion, now called Englande, in the. xliij. yere of the yreste & iudge of Israel named Hely. And as assermeth dyuers autours, the sayde Hely beganne to rule the Israelites, the yere of the thyrde age, that is from Abraham to Dauid. viij. hundred. xli. which maketh the peares of þ world foure thousande and. xli.

Wherunto yf there be forned the about sayd. xliij. peares: then muste it folow, that Wyte shuld entre this lande, in the yere of the worlde foure thousande. xliij. To this agreeth the a autour

The Prologue.

antour of Polycronicō, which sayth
that Bute entred Albion. xl. yeares
after the subuersiō of Troie, whiche
xl. yeares ioynded to þe former sayeng
of Eusebius, maketh the sayd nobye
of. iiii. thousande and. lxxij. yeares.

Also a wyter of hystories called
Iacobus Philippus, affermeth that
Troie was taken by the Grekes, in
the thyrde yere þe Abdon or Labdon,
iudged the Israelites. Which begā
his rule ouer the sayd Israelites, af-
ter the accorde of moſte wyters, in
the yere of the world. iiii. thousande
and. xx. wherunto yf there be ioynded
thre yeares for the thyrde yere of his
rule, in which yere Troie (as befoze
is sayde) was taken, and. xl. yeares
that passed or Bute perced Albion:

it muste folowe, þe Bute entred fyrst
this yle of Albion (as befoze is said)
in the yere of the world. iiii. thou-
sande and. lxxij.

Then by these foresayde reasons
Bute toke possession of this yle of
Albion, in the yere of the world, as
befoze is sayd, befoze þe buyldyng of
the cytie of Rome, as by the foresayd
reasons may be also proued. iiii. hun-
dred and. vii. yeares: & befoze the in-
carnacion of our blessed saupour, fo-
lowsing the same accompte, a thou-
sande an hundred and. xxxvi. yeares.

Thus endeth the accomptyng of
the yeares of the world, fro the crea-
cion of Adam vnto the incarnacion
of Christe.

The Prologue.



Wan I aduertise in my remembraunce
The manyfolde stoyes, in order duely sette
Of kynges and princes, that whylom had gouernaunce
Of Rome and Italye, and other further sette
As of Jewes and Grekes, the whiche haue no let
But that men maye se, in order serposly
Howe longe they reigned, and howe successuely.

Of fraunce and other, I myght lykewyse reporte
To their great honour, as of them doth appeare,
But to Englande, yf I shall resorte
Ryght myſty stoyes, doubtfull and vndeare
Of names, of tymes, and of the durant yere
That kynges or princes ruled, that famous yle
Almoste vncertayne, howe I shuld gupde my stile.

And for of cunnyng, I am full destitute
To byng to frame, so great a mystery:
I nyll presume without other refute
To ioyne suche a worke, or it to rectifye
To me it semeth so farre sette alype
In tyme of yeares, to other dyscordaunt
That to my dull wytte, it is not attaynaunt.

To byng in order, a thyng of suche myght
And cause it to agre, with other olde stoyes,

The Prologue.

But it to remytte, to them that ben slepyght
And sharpe in Lecture, and haue kepte their studie,
And sought the booke of many olde hystories
And haue in cronicles full experience
To frame suche a worke, by their great prudence.

And I lyke the prentyse, þe heweth the rough stone
And byngeth it to square, with hard strokes & many,
That the mapster, after maye it ouergone
And prynciple therein, his figures and his stoipe
And so to worke it, after his propozynary
That it maye appeare, to all that shall it se
A thyng right perfecte, and well in eche degre.

So haue I nowe sette out this rude worke
As rough as the stone, not comen to the square
That the lerned, and the studyed clerke
Maye it ouer polyshe, and cleane do it pare
Flowyshe it with eloquence, wherof it is bare
And frame it in order, that yet is out of ioynt
That it with old autours, may agrey in every poynt.

Besecheinge hym that wyl so take the payne
Or any other, that lyke on this to loke
Wher any errour, in this by hym is sayne
It to correcte, and mende this rude boke
For by hym that neuer yet any order toke
Or gre of scole, or sought for great cunnynge
This worke is gabered, with small vnderstandynge.

Not for any pompe, nor yet for great mede
This worke haue I taken on hande to complee
But onely, because that I would spede
The famousse honour of this fertile ylle
That hath contynued, by many a longe whyle
In excellent honour, with many a royall guyde
Of whom the dedes haue sprong, to the world wyde.

But of those dedes, me lyke not here to shewe
For in the sequele, they shall well appere
And in shorte processe, and in as wordes fewe
As I goodly maye, I shall lyke in fere
The stoipes of Englande, and Fraunce so dery
That to the reader, it maye well be sayne
What kynges together ruled these landes twayne.

And in the princypyll of the regne of every kyng

The Prologue.

As well of one and other, more and lesse
 What peare of the worlde, he toke his begynnyng
 To gyde his realme: and farther busynesse
 I wyl eke take, to shewe and expresse
 What terme of yeares, euery prince dyd raygne,
 And in what honour he dyd his tyme maynteyne.

The tyme also, how longe the Byrons ruled,
 And how by Saxons, they lastely were put out:
 Then of Danes, which both landes despoiled
 By their outrage, and of their fury stoute:
 Of whom both nacyns stode longe in great doute,
 Tyll fraunce with them allyed by marpage
 And Englande lastely voyded that lynage.

Then how the Normayns, by Wyllyam conquerour
 Entred this lande, and helde the seignorye
 A certayn of tyme, tyll the hygh gouernour
 Restored the bloude of Saxons enterly
 And of the Scottes, that neuer coude apply
 To kepe their allegeaunce, but many a tyme rebelled
 And to be true, were full often compelled.

The fatall warre, that hath dured so longe
 Twene fraunce and Englande, to both their damage
 And of the peace, that hath bene vnderfonge
 Both by great othes, and eke by marpage.
 Of Wales geryshenelle, and of theyr lyght dotage
 How they were scourged for their vnstedfastnesse,
 Wouth dyuers other, which I shall after expresse.

And for that London, that aunycnt cytie
 Hath euer perseuered in vertuous noblesse
 To the great honour, as maye consydered be,
 Of all this lande, in welth and great largesse
 Therfore I thynke somewhat to expresse
 Of their good order, and tynple polycy
 That they so longe haue ruled their cytie by.

And of theyr rulers, as they are perely chosen
 To rule the commonte, by theyr dyscretion,
 I shall you shewe, and to you dysclozen
 The names of mayres and shyffes of that towne
 And all such actes, as by reuolucion
 In their dayes fyll, so that there shall appere
 The prynces actes, which chaunged peare by peare.

The Prologue.

Of Fraunce also the Cronycle shall enshewe
In his betwe order, so that ye maye knowe,
When they beganne their princes to renewe
And from the seruage, when they were kepte lowe
Of the Romaynes whom they did ouerthrowe
And of their names, that they whylom dyd chaunge
Of their first baptylme, and of their names straunge.

Thus in this booke maye you here and se
Of bothe landes, the cronycles entyere,
With other maters, which registred be
Of olde wyrters, suche as wrote full clere
Actes of prynces, done both farre and nere,
And them engrosed wth great dyligence:
Wherby to their folowers might growe experience.

Into .vii. partes, I haue this boke deuyled
So that the redeer maye chose where he wyl.
The first conteyneth, howe the Brytons guyded
This lande from Brite, Voluuncius vntyll.
And from Voluuncius, I haue sette for skyll
To the nynthe yere of kynge Cassibelan
The seconde parte, for that the Romaynes than

Conquered Brytayne. And thens to Seuerpne.
The thyrde parte I haue also assigned.
The fourth endeth, then at Constantpne.
The fyfte at Cadwaladar, I haue also dyffined.
At the conquest I haue eke determyned
The .vi. parte. And of the seuenth or laste
At our redoubted prynce, I haue the ende caste.

Henry the .viij. whom God preserve and saue,
And hym defende, from all aduersyte,
Besechyng them that wyl the labour haue
This boke to rede, or any parte to se,
That where defaulte is, it maye corrected be
Without dysdayne, and they wyl supporte
And ayde this worke with all their comfote.

And for this boke, includeth storges sele,
And toucheth thynges done in sondry place,
So that one tyme must wth another dele
To kepe the yeares, the tyme, and the space
Therefore this name shall it nowe purchase
(Concordaunce of storges) by me prouyded
The autour, sans nome finally deuyled.

The Prologe.

And for this worke maye haue the better speede
 To prayer me thynketh it is ryght necessarie
 That I shulde fall, consydering my neede
 That I must haue, for lacke of due studie,
 Where through that comyng and perfyte memoory
 Of thynges taken, when I was yong and bynde
 Ben farre sette of, and putte from my mynde.

By this is ignoraunce now, comen in place
 And oblyuon, hath sette in his fote
 So that knowledge, from me they done race,
 Wherby in olde auctours, I might fynde some boote
 In latyn and frenche, that in theyr dytees swoote
 These olde wyters, haue so compendiously
 Sette the olde stoyses in order dysgently.

But in this prayer, I thynke nought to be bled
 As dydden these poetys, in theyr olde dayes,
 Whych made theyr prayers, to goddes abused
 As Jupiter and Mars, that in theyr olde lawes,
 Were named goddes, and fayned in theyr lawes
 That they were goddes, of battayl and rycheesse
 And had in them great vertue and prowesse.

For what maye helpe, these fayned goddes all
 As Saturne or Mercury, or yet bygyht Apollo,
 Bacchus, or Neptune, or Pluto the thyall,
 Colus, Morpnos, or blynde Cupido,
 Or yet that goddesse, the fayre Juno,
 Diana, or Pallas, or Ceres the fre,
 Or yet the Iulys, that ben thyres thre

Wherto shulde I call vnto Caliope
 Mother of Orpheus, wyth swete armony
 That of eloquence hath the soucrapnte,
 Or to Carmentis, whiche by her firste studie
 The latyne letters founde out perfyty
 Syngs all these were mynysters of God immortall
 And had in them no power dyuynall

Wherfore to the Lorde, that is celestyall
 I wyll now crye, that of his influence
 Of grace and mercy, he wyll a droppe lette fall,
 And sharpe my wytte with suche experyence,
 That this may synysch, with his assystence,
 To the gloyre of his name, which in heauen is
 Where the angels incessantly syng, gloria in excelsis.

Albpon, why it was so called.
The fyrst parte.

The first Chapter.



yns that I haue shewed vnto you what season and tyme of þe yeaeres of þe world, Bute entred fyrst this yle of Albpon: me semyth, it is conuenient, that I also shewe howe and for what cause it firste was named Albpon. The whiche so toke fyrst name, as wptnesseth Strabo & other wyters, of whyt cluyes or rockes, that stande vpon the sees syde, and are farre seen in clere wether and bryght dayes. Wherof it was of olde wyters named Albpon, as it were the whyte land. Which sayeng affermeth also Kanulphe & Dpuerle other: so that it maye certapnly be knowen, that it toke not that firste name of Albyne, doughter of Dioclecyan kyng of Syre, as in the englyshe cronycle is affermed. For in all olde storpes or cronycles is not founde, that any suche kyng of that name reigned ouer the Brytens, or yet Albyens: nor yet any suche story, that his. xxx. daughters shuld slee they. xxx. husbands, as there surmysed, was put in wrytyng. Whiche, yf eny suche wonder hadde ben there wrought, shuld not haue ben burremembred of the wyters & auctours of that partyes: consydeyng that many lesse wonders are put in wrytyng by the sayde wyters. Wherfore it is moze apparant, that it toke that first name of Albpon, as aboue is sayde, then of Albyne daughter of the sayde Dioclecyan.

And as to the Seautes that Bute

founde in thys yle at his arryual, they might be brought into this lād by some meane of shyppes or other wise, rather then to be borne of those women, as there also is imagyned.

Of this yle, the auctours Alpherb and Beda tel many wonders, which in the first boke of Policronicon are sufficiently touched, wher it is sayde: that this yle is called another world. For as sayeth Solinus, the edge of the frenche cliffe shulde be the ende of the worlde, yf this yland ne were not. Many other thynges ben there specyfyed, the which I passe over.

This yle is closed in al sydes with the see, and stretcheth in length oute of the south into the north, hauynge in the southest syde fraunce, in the south, the lande of Spayne, in the north, the countre of Norway, and in the weste the countre of Ireland. And hath in length fro Cornesse to Catenelles. xlv. myles beyonde Wythell Stowe in Cornetwyle, vpon. viij. hundred myles. And to reken the byede, from saynte Dauids lande in Wales called Menema to Douer cliffes: it cōteyneth after mooste wyters. iij. hundred myles. And yf it be rekened fro the said place in Wales vnto Parimouth in Norfolk, not so much, but lesse by. lx. myles, after some wyters. And Beda saith it cōteyneth ouer. CC. myles. And this yle was firste, as aboue is sayde, named Albpon: and secundarily Britayne after Bute: and thyrdeyng Anglia of Anglis by commaundement of Egberte kyng of Angles, and of Westsaxons: albeist that after some wyters it, was called Anglia, after the name of the quene of this lande named Anglia: albeist that therof is found by tell auctoptye.

This yle was firste conquered by the

the Romaynes, and so cōtynued vnto the as tributary, and vnder theyr rule, as after in the ende of the story of Gracianus shall appere, ouer .iij. hundred yeares, secondely by þe Saxon: thyrde by þe Danys: & fourthly by the Roymans: & was deuyded fyrste by Brute in thre partes, as in the storie shall appeare folowynge.

The .ij. Chapter.

Brute of the auncent & noble blode of þe Trojans, descended of Eneas, a Trojan, & of the daughter of Pryame, kynge of þe Trojans: which Eneas receyued of his sayde wife a sonne, named Ascanius, the whyche was kynge of the countre of Italse, nexte after his father Eneas.

For so it was, that after the sayd cytie of Troy was, as befoze is sayd, by the Grekes subuerted: Eneas, whiche entended to haue saued fro death the sayde Polixena, daughter of kynge Pryame, was for that dede by Agamemnon, duke of chefe leader of the Grekes, exyled fro Troy the which accompayned with a greate nombre of Trojans, within .iij. yeares after his departynge fro Troie, landed in the countre of Italse. And there after dyuerse conlyctes and bataylles had with Latinus, then kynge of Italse: he maryed by the agreement of the sayde Latinus, his daughter named Lauina. Upon the which he gatte a sonne, & named him Syluius Posthumus: of the which after some wyters, descended Brutus, fyrst kynge of Albion. But for a moze concoꝛdaunce of this worke, & conuenience of yeares, as testifyeth Polixenica, Cupido de Columna,

wyter of storyes, and other: Ascanius the fyrste sonne of Eneas, gotten vpon his fyrste wyfe, hadde a sonne named Siluius Eneas: this Siluius Eneas was father to Brute. Of this is dyuers opinyons, whereof some are manifestly shewed in the xxviij. chapter of the seconde booke of Polyconyon.

Then it foloweth in the story: this Brute beyng of the age of .xv. yeres, slewe his father, in shotynge at a wild beast. And as some autours haue, he slewe also his moder in tyme of his byrth. But for the laste dede, by agreement of all wyters, he was banysshed the countre: and after by fortune landed with his compaigne in a prouince of Grece, wher at that tyme reygned a kynge, named Pandrasus or after some wyters Pandarus: the whiche kynge, as assermeth Gestepe of Donmouth, was lynnally descended of the bloode of Achylles.

In this prouince, Brute founde many Trojans, as captiues & thral to the Grekes, with the which he conspyed and fought with the Grekes sondry tymes: and lastely for a fynal concoꝛde toke to wife the daughter of þe sayd Pandrasus, named Ignogen. After which maryage solemnized: the sayd Brute, by coulsayle of þe Trojans, with a certayne of shypes well bytapped, departed oute of Grece and soughte his aduenture. Which after many daungers of the see passed, he landed with his compaigny, in a part of yle of Affrica, named (as saith Cupido & other) Lergesia. Within whiche yle, at those dayes stode an old temple dedycate in þe honoure of Diua or Diana, a goddesse of mysbeleued people. The whyche temple, when Brute had aperceaued anon he poded into it, where knelyng befoze

The fyrst parte.

before the aulter, with great deuor-
on, sayd these verses folowynge.

*Dixi potens memorum terror syluestribus apris,
Cui licet am fractus ire per aetheros,
Infernasq; domos, et restra in aresolue,
Et dic quas terras nos habitare uelis.
Dixi certam sedem quate uenerabor in eum,
Qua tibi uirginis templa dicat chorus.*

The whiche verses are to be vnder-
standen in our moder tonge, as after
is expounded.

*Te praye all goddesse, that weldest ferych & woode
The wyld beote & testes, & ferych by thy myght
Sunder of thyppen, passyng the ragious flode
The infernall houses, for and the erth of right,
Beholde and serche, a heire wher I shall light.
Tell the certayne place, wher euerlastyngly
A temple of uirgins, to the I shall wyppre.*

After which prayer & obseruaunces
after the pagan rite, with greate de-
uocion done, and exercysed aboute the
aulter of þe sayd goddesse oꝝ ydoll, in
those dayes vled: Brute fel in a slepe.
In tyme of which slepe appeared to
hym the sayde goddesse, and sayde to
hym in maner & forme as foloweth:

*Brute, sub occasum solis trans Gallica regna
Insula in oceano est unde q; clausa mari:
Insula in oceano est habitata gigantibus olim,
Nunc deserta quidem, genibus apta tuis.
Hic de prole tua reges nascentur, & ipse
Totius terræ subditus orbis erit.
Hæc prete, namq; tibi sedes erit in illa perhennis,
Hic fiet natus altera Troia tuis.*

The whiche verses maye be englysh-
ed as here after foloweth:

Brute, farr by weste, ouer þe lande of fraunce
An ylle in ocean there is, al closed woth the see.
This ylle is gyaften, whilom inhabite by chaice
Now beyng deserte, as apte for thy people & the.
In this of thy body hynges borne shalbe,
And of this ylle, thou shalt be Lorde and kynge
Serche this, for here a perpetuall see to the
And here to thy child: a new Troy shal spring.

The.iiij. Chapter.



Then Brute awoke and
remembred him of this
vision: anon he called
to him, such as he most
trusted, and shewed to
them what he had seen and harde.
Wherof they all beyng greatly re-
topled: caused great fares to be made
in the which they cast wyne, mylke,
and other lycours, with dyuerse aro-
mate and spyttes of moste sweetest o-
dour, as in the old pagan lawes and
rytes were vled.

Whiche obseruaunce with otheꝝ
done: with greate ioye & mythe they
entred into theyꝝ shyppes, and pul-
led by theyꝝ sayles, and toke theyꝝ
course westwarde. And so sayled by
the space of .xxx. dayes, passynge by
many adentures and daungers, as
of philenes, the lake called Lacus
salinarum, oꝝ salte lake, oꝝ the place
where salte is made, the ryuer called
Mælea, & Hercules pylers, & came
lastly to the see Cyrrhen oꝝ Turon,
wher he encoûtred with a small na-
uy of shyppes, of the which a Troia
and neuw to Brute, called Corine-
us was captayne. When eyther of
them had saluted other, and reioysed
of theyꝝ metyng: they together made
towarde land, and landed in the pro-
uynce of Gallia, now called Guyan:
of whiche prouynce at that daye, a
prince named Gzoffartus was ruler.
The which haupng knowlege of the
landynge of these straungers: wth
his power made towarde the, and to
the gaue batayll. But the Troians
were victours, and ouercame Gzof-
fartus with all his knyghtes.

In this batayll was slayne a noble
Troiane & neuw to Brute, named
Turonus, and there buried. Wher-
foze in remembraunce of the sayde
Turonus

Turonus, Bzute buylded there a cite, and named it Turon as some autours testyfy. But it shuld seme by the sapenge of Polycronyca, that thylke cite Turon was buylded afore: albeit that the auctour of Cronica cronycay. affirmeth it to be buylded by Bzute in remembraunce of his sayd colyn Turonus, which cite at this daye, is yet of greate fame with in the realme of Fraunce.

This done, the sayde Bzute & Coroneus wyth their Trojans toke agayne shypinge, the whyche after iij. dayes or fewe dayes saylyng, landed at an haven or porte in Cornewapll, named at this daye Totnesse: & froin thens poble serchynge the land and coultre, the yere as befoze is said iiii. thousande. lxiij. befoze the buyldyng of Rome, folowynge the foze sayde accompte. iiii. hundred and. xx. befoze the incarnation of Christe. xi. hundred, &. xxxvi. and befoze Alexander the great conquered the worlde, eyght hundred and. xi. also befoze any kyng reygned ouer the frenshe men, or that they were clere quyte of their trewage agayne þ Romaynes, xv. hundred and. lvi.

¶ The. iiii. Chapter.



Retourne we then to Bzute, which after his landyng in this yle of Albion: circued & serched the lande ouer al, and founde it ful fertile and plenteous of wode and of grasse, and garnished with many fayre ryuers and streames. And in his traualyng the lande, he was encountred with many great and mighty Gyautes, the which he destroyed. Among þ which, as reherceth the Englyshe cronicle:

was one of passyng strength named Gogmagog, the which he caused to wrelle with Corineus or Corine his newwe belyde Douer: in which wye slaying that gyaunt brake a rybbe in þ lyde of Corineus. Wher thorough Corineus beyng soze amoued, with great strength suppressed that gyaunt and cast him downe the rocke of Douer. By reason wherof, as affirmeth the saide englyshe cronicle, the place was named, the fall of Gogmagog.

But after that, þ name was chaunged & called the fal of Douer, which to this daye endureth. For this dede and other, Bzute gaue vnto his saide newwe Corineus or Coryn, the hole countre of Cornewapll.

And whē Bzute had thus destroyed the gyautes, & serched the sayde yle of Albion thoroughly: he comyng by þ ryuer of Chamis, for pleasure þ he had in that ryuer, with also þ comodities therunto adioynynge, began there to buylde a cite in the remembraunce of the cite of Trope lately subuerted, & named it Trope nouant, which is as muche to saye as newwe Trope: which name endured tyll the comynge of Lud, after kyng of Byrtayne, vpo the tyme of a thousande and. lxxviij. yere. But þ sayd kyng comaunded it to be called Luddis towne, which by shortnesse of speche is now called London.

Then whē Bzute had thus buylded his cite, & saw þ he was stablished in his realme quietly: he then by chaduise of his lordes, commaunded the sayd yle and countre to be called Byrtayne, and his people Byrtons, and so contynued his reygne prosperously. In the which tyme he stablished and ordred his people to lyue in tyllynge of their lande and otherwyse.

This

This Brute had receaued of his wyfe thre sonnes, whereof the firste was named Locrynus oꝛ Locryne, & seconde Cambrius oꝛ Cambre, and the thirde Albanactus oꝛ Albanakt. To the first & eldest, he beset this yle of Brytane, the which after was named myddell Englande, which is to meane Troynouant, with all þe countres there about lpenge, conteynnyng East, West & South. And for this cause, and for it shuld sound toward the name of the sayde Locryne: this parte of Brytayne was longe after called Loegria oꝛ Logiers.

To the seconde sonne Cambre, he beset oꝛ appoynted to him, the countre of Wales, the whiche was fyrste named after hym Cambria. This in the East side was somtyme departed from Englande, by the ryuer of Seruierne: But now in the northsyde, the ryuer named Dee at Chester, departed England and Wales: and in the South þe ryuer that is called Uaga at the castel of Strynghing parteth England and Wales.

To the thyrde sonne Albanakt, he beset the north parte of this yle, and named it Albyon, oꝛ moze verely the sayd countre toke after the name of the sayd thirde sonne, and was called Albania. This countre was after named Scotlande, and is deuyded fro Loegria oꝛ Logieris, as sayeth holy Bede by two armes of the see, but they mete not. The east arme of these two, begynneth aboute .ii. myles fro the mynster of Eburacurpge, in the weste syde of Denulston. The weste arme of those twaþne hath in þe right syde (oꝛ somtyme had,) a stronge cete named Iclud, whiche in þe Bryetyshe toung was called Clynston, & standeth vpo the ryuer called Clyn.

Thus whē Brute had deuyded his

yle of Brytayne, as before is shewed in thre partes, & had holden the principate therof, nobly by the terme of xliiij. yeaes after moſte cōcordaunce of wyters: he dyed, & was entered oꝛ buryed at Troynouat oꝛ Londō.

The. v. Chapter.

Locrinus oꝛ Locrine, þe firste oꝛ eldest sonne of Brute, was made kyng of Brytayne, of the countre of Logiers, the pere of the world. liii. thousande & lxxviij. The whiche helde to his parte, as sayth Policronicon, and also Gynode Columna, the countre that stretcheth fro the southe see vnto þe ryuer of Humber, as before is expresse.

Whyle this Locrinus thus reigned in Logiers: his brother Albanactus beyng ruler, as before is sayd of Albania oꝛ Scotlande, was warpyed by a Duke, whom the cronicle of Englad nameth Humber, & which slewe Albanakt in playne batayll.

Ye shal vnderstande þe this Humber at the dape of his cominge in to Albania was not named Humber but after olde wyters, he was called kyng of Hainys oꝛ kyng of Suthia without other addicion. This kyng as before is sayde, after he thus subdued Albanactus, helde the lande of Albania, tyll after þe Locrinus with his brother Cābre, gathered a great power of men of armes, and rode agaynst the sayde kyng of Hainys, and by strenght of their Britons chased and subdued the said Hainys so tharpely, that many of the with there kyng wet drownded in a ryuer, which departeth England and Scotland. And for so muche as to the wyter of the stoye of Britons, his name was declared to be Humber: therfore the sayd

sayd autour affermeth, that the sayd
Dumber þe ryuer toke the fyrst name
of hym, whyche yet contynueth to
this daye.

Furthermoze testifyeth the sayd
autour, that after this victoie thus
obteyned by these two forsayde bro-
therne: this Loccius enamowred
hym self vpon a saye wenche named
Estyde, and doughter of the fore-
named Dumber, and kept her vnde-
fully by a certayne of tyme. Where
with his wife, named Guendoloeua
beynge soze dyscontente, excyted her
father & frendes to make warre v-
pon the sayde Loccius her husband.
In the whyche warre lastely he was
slayne, when he had reigned oꝛ ru-
led Loegria oꝛ Logiers, after the co-
coꝛdaunce of mozte wyters. xx. yeres
and was buryed by his father in the
cētie of Troynouant, leuyng after
hym a yonge sonne gotten vpon his
wyfe named Hadan.

¶ The. vii. Chapter.



Guendoloeua oꝛ Guen-
dolepne þe wyfe of Lo-
ccius, and doughter
of Corineus Duke of
Cornewaple, for so
much as Hadan her sonne was
yonge to gouerne the landerwas by
commune assent of all the Byttons
made ruler of the yle of Bytayne,
the yere of the world. iiii. thousand,
hundred & vii. And so hauyng pos-
session of the sayd yle, with dyscret-
ly she ruled it, to the comforte of her
subiectes, tyll þe tyme her sonne Ha-
dan came vnto hym lawfull age. At
the whyche season she gaue ouer the
rule and domynion to hym, after she
had ruled (as before is sayde) thys
yle. x. yeres.

¶ The. vii. Chapter.



Hadan the sonne of Lo-
ccius and of Guendo-
leone before named: was
made ruler of Bytayne
in the yere of þe worlde
iiii. thousande. C. and. xxi. Of this
is lytell oꝛ no memoꝛy made by any
wyters, excepte that some wyte of
hym, that he vsed greate tyranny a-
mong his Byttons. Neuertheles, al
oꝛ the moze parte of wyters agree, that
he ruled this yle of Bytayne
by the terme of. xl. yeres. At the ende
of which terme, he beynge at his di-
sposte oꝛ huntynge, was of wyld be-
estes oꝛ wolues slayne oꝛ deuoured: &
left after hym two sonnes, as sayeth
Politronica, named Menpeticus
and Manlius.

¶ The. viii. Chapter.



Menpeticus the eldeste
sonne of Hadan, was
made ruler of By-
tayne, in the yere of
the worlde. iiii. thou-
sand. C. lxi. But he reigned not long
in peace. For his yonger brother Ma-
lius, of a malycious and coueteous
mynde, entending to be kynge, and
to expell oꝛ subdue his brother: excy-
ted the Byttons in suche wyse to re-
bell agayne Menpeticus, that great
and dedly warre contynued longe a-
monge the. Howe be it lastely by me-
diacions of frendes, a daye of com-
munycacion in lounge maner at-
twene these two brythren was ap-
pointed. At the which daye of assem-
ble, Menpeticus by treason slew
his brother Manlius, after whose
death he lyued in moze tranquylite
and rest. Wherthroughe he fell into
slouth, and by meanes of slouth, into
vnclefull lyfynge and lechery, and by
that vnce into hatred of his subiec-
tes by

res by takynge of theyre wyues and chyldre: and synally became so unhappy, þe he forsoke hys lefull wyfe and concubynes, & fyl into the synne of Sodomye. Thus from one vice he grewe into another, so that he became odyle to God and man: and lastely goyng on huntynge, and lost of his people, was dystroyed of wyld bestes, when he had reygned. xx. yeares: leuyng after hym a goodly ponyngge begoten of his lefull wyfe named Ebranke.

The. ix. Chapter.

Ebranke þe sonne of Meprecius was made ruler of this land of Brytayne in the yere of þe worlde foure thousande a hundred, & lxxxij. and had, as testyfyeth Policronica, Gaufryste, & other wyrters. xxi. wyues: of the whiche he receyued. xx. sonnes and. xxx. doughters, wherof the sayest was named Gwales, or after some Gualea. He sent these doughters to Albia Siluius, which was the. xi. kynge of Italye, or the. vii. kynge of Latynes, to the ende to haue them maryed to the bloud of Troyans. This Ebranke was also a man of sayre stature, & of great strengthe, & by his power and might he enlarged his domynion, in so muche that he wanne and occupied a great parte of Germania by the ayde and helpe of the Latynes, & retourned thens with great praye & riches. After which retourne, he builded the cytie of Caerbzank now called Poike: which shuld be as sayeth the autour named Flos historiarii or the Flour of hystories wyten in frenche, in the. xxiiij. yere of þe reygne of the sayde Ebranke. Whiche account to folowe, it shulde seme that Troynouant or London was buyl

ded before the sayde cytie of Poike, aboute an hundred and. xi. yeares: supposynge the cytie of London to be begonne in the seconde yere of Byutes reygne.

Also he builded i Albanya or Scot land the castel of Maydens, þe which is called Edynborgh. After whiche edyfices ended and made, he with a great armye sayled into Gallia, now Fraunce, and subdued the Gallis, & retourned with great triumphe and riches. And when he had gubed this lande of Brytayne nobly by the terme of. lx. yeares, after moste concordance of wyrters, he dyed, and was buryed at Caerbzank or Poike leuyng after hym for hys heye his eldest sonne (as sayth Gaufryste) named Brute Greneshelde.

The. x. Chapter.

Brute Greneshelde, þe sonne of Ebranke, was made gouernoure of this lande of Brytayne, the yere of the worlde. iiii. thousande two hundred and. xlii. Of this Brute is no memozy made touchynge any fame, excepte that Gaufryste sayth that he ruled this lande of Brytayne (his father leuyng) a certayne tyme, and after his father by the terme of. xii. yeares. The whiche yeares expyed or ended: he dyed, and lyeth buryed at Caerbzank or Poike, leuyng after hym a sonne named Leyll.

The. xi. Chapter.

Leyll or Leys sonne of Brute Greneshelde, was made ruler of Brytayne in the yere of the worlde foure thousande. ii. hundred and. liiiij. This was a iuste man and a louer of peace & equitye, and in

Of Lud, Baldub and Ley?

his tyme made the town of Caerle? o? Carlisle, and ruled this lande wel and honourably by the terme of .xxv. yeares, as testifeth the forenamed Gaufride: and after dyed, and was buried at Caerle? he foresayde.

But of this Ley? spebeth some dele the aboue named autoure flour of histories sayeng, þ in the ende of his regne he fell to slouth and vnlesfull lykyng of his body: by meane wher- of cyuile stryfe began to growe with in this realme, þ which was not paci- fyed by some termes after his dayes the whiche sayenge is not denyed by the foresayd autour Gaufride. This Leyll lefte after hym a sonne named Lud, o? after some wyters, he was named Lud Hurdibras.

The .xij. Chapter.

Lud o? Lud Hurdibras the sonne of Leyll, was made ruler of the lande of Byrtayne, in the yere of the worlde .iiii. thou- sande .ii. hundred and .lxxix. This also of Gaufride is called Hurdibras: the whiche after he was stablyshed in his regne, appeased and dreyue to accorde of the discorde & barpaunce that had spronge in his fathers ly- ues tyme. The whiche discretely ap- peased & ended he buylded the towne of Kaerbyn, now called Caunter- bury: the towne also of Kaerguen, now called Wynto o? Wyndchester: and also a towne called Mount Pa- ladoure, now named Septon o? Shaftesburpe. In the tyme of buyl- dyng, of which towne of Septon, as affermeth myne autoure Gaufride, an eagle there spake certayne wordes the whiche he sayeth he wyl not de- clare o? wyte for any certapntie. Thus whē this sayd Lud had ruled this lande nobly by þ terme of .xxxix.

yeares, he dyed, and lefte after hym a sonne named Baldub.

The .xiiij. Chapter.

Baldub the sonne of Lud Hurdibras, was made gouernoure of Byrtayn in the yere of the worlde .iiii. thousande .iii. hundred and .xliii. * This as testifed Gau- fride, Polycronica, and other, was well and sufficiently instructe in the compnynges o? sciences of astronomy and nigromancye. By them he made the hote bathes within the towne of Caerbadon, now named Bath: the whiche towne o? cytie he also buylded. But to that repugneth Wylliam de Walmesbury, sayenge that the fore- sayde hote bathes were made by the industrie, o? of the industrie of Ju- lius Cesar fyrst emperour of Rome. This Baldub as affermeth the fore- sayd autour Gaufride: taught this loze of nigromancye thorough hys realme: and fynallye toke in it suche pryde and presumption, that he toke vpon hym to sle in the aper. But he fell vpon the temple of his god Apo- lyn, & thereon was all to tozne, when he had ruled Byrtayne by the space of .xx. yeares, leuyng after hym a sonne named Ley?

The .xv. Chapter.

Ley? the sonne of Baldub was made ruler ouer the Byrtong, the yere of the worlde .iiii. M. ccc. & .xxxviij. This Ley? was noble of condicions, & guded his land & subiectes in great welth. He made þ towne of Caerle? now called Lynceter o? Lyncester. And albeit that this man helde long the pryncypate of Byrtayne: yet of hym is nothyng left worthy memo- ry, excepte that Gaufride sayth, þ he receyued of hys wyfe, .iii. daughters onely

* Nota, that
the hote ba-
thes of bath
were made
by Nigro-
mancye.

onely without any sonne, which wer named Gonorilla, Ragan, and Cordeilla, the which he much loued, but moſte ſpecially he loued the yongest Cordeilla by name.

When this Lery or Leryth after ſome wyters, was fallen in cōpotent age, to knowe the mynde of his thre daughters, he firſt asked Gonorilla the eldeſte, howe well ſhe loued hym: the which calling her goddes to recorde, ſayd: ſhe loued hym more then her owne ſoule. With this anſwere the father beyng well contented demaunded of Ragan the ſecōd daughter, howe well ſhe loued hym. To whom ſhe anſwered, & affermyng w great othes, ſayde that ſhe could not with her tong expreſſe the great loue that ſhe bare to hym: affermyng furthermoze, that ſhe loued hym aboue all creatures. After theſe pleaſaunte anſweres had of thoſe two daughters, he called before hym Cordeilla the yongest. The which vnderſtaſting the diſſimulacion of her two ſiſters, entredyng to proue her father ſayd: moſt reuerent father where my two ſyſters haue diſſimuled with the with theiſe pleaſant wordes ſcuteles, I knowyng the great loue & fatherly zeale, & towarde me euer before this tyme thou haſt borne (for & whych I may not ſpeke to the other wyſe then my conſcience ledeſh me) therfore I ſaye to the father, I haue loued the euer as my father, & ſhall continually whyle I lyue, loue the as my naturall father. And yf I wylte further be inquiſyſtife of the loue & I to the bere: I aſcertayne the, & aſmuch as thou art worthy to be beloued, euen ſo much I loue the and nomoze.

The father with this anſwere beyng diſcōtent: maryed his two elder daughters, that one vnto the duke

of Cornewall, & that other vnto the duke of Albania or Scotlande & deuyded wyth the two in maryage his lande of Britayne after his death & the one halfe in hand, durynge his naturale lyfe. And for the thyrde Cordeilla reſerued nothyng.

It ſo fortunēd after, that Aganippus, whych the cronycle of England named Agamp and kyng of Fraunce herde of the beautie & womanhode of Cordeilla, and ſent vnto her father & asked her in mariage. To whome it was anſwered, that the kyng would gladlye geue to him his daughter, but for dowar he would not departe wyth: for he had all promyſed vnto his other two daughters.

Aganippus thus by his meſſagers enſourmed: remembred the vertues of & forenamed Cordeilla, and without promeſſe of dowar maryed the ſayde Cordeilla.

But here is to be noted, & where this Aganippus or Agamp is called in diuerſe cronicles kyng of Fraunce: it can not agree with other hyſtozies nor wyth the cronycle of Fraunce. For it is teſtified by Polycronica, by Peter Dictauiſſe, by maſter Robert Gogwyne, by byſhop Antonyne and many other cronicles: that lōge after this dape was no kyng in Fraunce, nor longe after it was called Fraunce: but at this dape the inhabytauntes therof were called Galli, and were trybutaryes vnto Rome withoute kyng, tyll the tyme of Valentinianus Emperour of Rome, as hereafter in this worke ſhalbe manifeſtly ſhewed.

The ſtoze of Britons ſayth, that in the time that Lery reygned in Britayne: the lande of Fraunce was vnder the domynyon of .xii. kynges, of the which Aganippus ſhuld be one.

The which sayeng is full vnyke to be trewe, which might be proued by many reasons, that I passe ouer for length of tyme.

The xiiij. Chapter.

When it foloweth in þe storye, after this Ley was fallen in age, these fore sayde two dukes, thynnyng long of the lordshipp of Brytayne, was falle to their handes: arose agayne they father (as testifyeth Gauspde) and becraft hym the gouernaunce of the lande vpon certayne condicions to be continued for terme of lyfe: the which in processe of tyme, more & more were minished, as well by Maglanus, as by Heninus, husbandes of the forenamed Gonord & Ragan. But moste dyspleased Ley the vnkynndenesse of hys two doughters, consyderynge they wordes to him befoze spoken & sworne, and nowe founde & proued them all contraty.

For the whiche he beyng of necessitye constrayned: fled his lande, and sayled into Gallia, for to be comforted of his doughter Cordeilla. Wherof she hauynge knowlege, of naturall kynndnesse comforted hym: and after shewynge all þe mater to her husbande, by his agreement receaued hym & his to her lordes courte, where he was cherished after her best maner.

Longe it were to shew vnto you, þe circumstance of the bitterans of the vnkynndnesse of his two doughters, and of the wordes of comfort geuen to him by Aganippus and Cordeilla, of the counsaile & purpuepaunce made by the sayde Aganippus & his lordes for restorynge of Ley agayn to his domynio. But fynally he was by the helpe of the sayd Aganippus

restored agayne to his lordshipp, and so possessed, lyued as ruler & gouernour therof by the space of .iii. yeres, after. In which season dyed Aganippus. And when this Ley had ruled this lande by the terme of .xl. yeres, as aftermeth byuerse cronycles, he dyed and was buryed at his towne of Caerleir or Lepcestre: leuynge after hym for to inheryte the lande, his doughter Cordeilla.

The xvi. Chapter.

Cordeilla the yongeste doughter of Ley, was by assente of the Brytons made lady of Brytayne, in the peare of the worlde .iiii. thousande .iii. hundred & lxxxviii. the which guyded the land full wylfely by the tyme or space of .v. yeres complete. The whiche tyme expyred and conne her .ii. newewes called Margan and Cunedagius, sonnes of her .ii. sisters came vpon her lande, and made therein greates waste an destruccions, and at the laste toke her and caste her into a stronge prison, where she beyng dyspyred of the recouery of her estate (as testifyeth Gauspde) slewe her selfe, when she had reygned, as befoze is declared, by the terme of fyue yeres.

The xvii. Chapter.

Cunedagius & Marganus newewes as befoze is sayde, of Cordeilla, departed this lande of Brytayne betwene them, in þe peare of the worlde .iiii. thousand .iiii. hundred and .iii. That is to wyt, the cōstrey ouer and beyonde Humber, fell to Margan toward Catenessey: and the other parte of the lande toward weste, as reherseth Gauspde, fell to Cunedagius.

After

After two yeres were conne & ended, some euell disposed came vnto Hargan, and sayde, that to him it was great reproche and dishonour, (consideryng that he was comen of Sonozilla the elder suster, & of Harglaunus her husbände, & Cunedag was descended of Hagan the ponger and Henmius her husbände) that he had not þ rule of all þ land, to which sedicious persons Hargan geuyng credence, was suppressed with pryde and couetous, & anon by their counsaile assembled a great hoste & made warre vpon his sayde brother, byenryng and destropeng his lāde with out mercy. Wherof Cunedag beyng ware, in al hast gathered his people: & after certayne messlage sent to hym of the reconcylacion, seyng there was no peace to be made, but by the iudgement of batayll, he mette with his brother in playne felde: wher the goddes were to hym so fauourable, that he slewe muche of the people of his brother, and cōpelled him to flee. After whiche byctoype thus had, he pursued Hargan frō coūtre to coūtre, tyll he cam within the countre of prouynce of Cambria or Wales: in the whiche countre the sayde Hargan gaue another batayll vnto his brother Cunedag: but so; he was farr the weaker, he there was overcome and slayne in the felde. Whiche felde or coūtre, wher the sayd Hargan fought & was slayne, is to this daye called Glaumargan, whiche is to meane in our vulgare tung, Hargan lande. And thus was Hargan slayne, whā he had reygned with his brother two yeres.

The. xliij. Chapter.

Cunedagius before named þ sonne of Henmius and Hagan pōger doughter or mid

dell doughter of Ley, was made ruler and lord of all Brytayne, in the yere of the worlde. iiii. M. iiii. hundred & v. Of the whiche is nothyng worthy memozy left, in wyrtynge: but that he guded þ lande after þ death of his brother well and honorably by the terme of. xxxiii. yeaeres. After which terme ended, he dyed and was buryed at Tropnouant or London: leuyng for his heye a sonne (as testifyeth Gausfryde) named Riuallo or Rinallo, or after some wyrters Keyngnolde.

The. xliij. Chapter.

Riuallo the sonne of Cunedagius, was made gouernoure of the Brytons in the yere of the worlde iiii. thousande. iiii. hundred & xxxviii. the whiche of wyrters is called: fortunat and restfull. This Riuallo ruled the Brytons with great sobrenes and kepte the lande in great welthe and prosperite, Albeit that of hym is lefte no specyal memozy of acte done in his tyme: except myne autour sayeth, that in the tyme of his reygne it reyned bloud, by the space of. iij. dayes continually within the lande of Brytayne. After the whiche reyne ensued so greate excedyng number & multitude of dyes, the whiche were to the people so nopous and cōtagious that they slewe much people. And after that (as sayeth an olde autoure, whose name is vnkowen) ensued great syknesse and mortalytie, to þ great desolacion of this sayd lande. Then it foloweth in the story, whē this Riuallo hadde reygned, after moste cōcordaunce of wyrters, by the terme of. xliij. yeaeres: he dyed, & was buryed, as testifyeth the sayde olde autour, at Caerbranke or Porke, le-
b iij upnge

yrnge after hym a sonne (as wytnes-
seth Gaufride) named Gurgustius.

In the tyme of the reygne of thys
kyng, after mooste concolde of wy-
ters: þe famous cytie of Rome shulde
be buylded, as is shewed moze playn-
ly in the treatyse, in the begynnynge
of this worke.

The. xx. Chapter.

Gurgustius the sonne of
the forenamed Riualus
was made ruler of Bry-
tayne, in the yere of the
worlde. iiii. M. lxxiii. hun-
dred. lxxiii. This in the cronicle of
Englode is named Gorbodiu, sonne
of Keygnold. Of the which is lytell
memoz made, other of his reigne or
of his dedes, by any autours or wy-
ters of þe history of Britayne, except þe
the aboue named olde autour, and þe
autour called, the flour of histories
wytneseth, that he reygned. xxxviii.
yeres: leuynge after hym none heyre
of his body begotte, and lastely dyed
and was buryed by his father at
Caerbantok or Porke.

Rome as aboue is touched, was
fyyste buylded & edyfied in the tyme
of Riualus, and after mooste wyters
in the yere of the worlde. iiii. thou-
sande. iiii. hundred. lxx. after the buyl-
dyng of Troynouat or London. iiii.
hundred. vii. yeres: with folowynge
that accompte, shulde be in the xxxiii.
yere of the foresayd Riualus.

The. xxi. Chapter.

Sililius & after some
wyters, Sililius þe bro-
ther of Gurgustius, as
affirmeth þe foresayd olde
cronicle, was made chiefe
ruler of Britayne, in the yere of the
worlde. iiii. M. v. hundred. and. xxi.

This in þe englyshe booke is named
Sepyll. Of the which is no mentio

ynge in þe

made, nother of his reigne nor dedes
excepte that Gelfrey of Donmouth
wyter of the histories of Brytons,
sayeth: that he reygned two yeres.
Which saying is not accordaunt w
other wyters. But moze to the con-
ueniency of tyme, and agremente of
other cronicles, accordynge to the
saying of the forenamed olde autour:
he reygned by the tyme of. xlv. yeres
and after dyed & was buryed at Ca-
erbadon or Bathe, and left after him
none heyre of his body begotten.

The. xxii. Chapter.

Iago or Lago, þe colyne
of Gurgustius, as wit-
neseth Gaufride, as
nexte inherytour, was
made gouernour of
Britayne, in the yere of the worlde
iiii. M. v. C. and. lxx. This also is by
mynded of wyters: other for restful-
nesse of tyme, or els for rudenesse of
his dedes, þe clerkes lyfte not to sped
any tyme in wytyng of suche dedes.
Of hym is nothyng speccyfyed, sa-
uyng the forenamed olde autour
togeth to his tyme of reygne. xlv.
yeres: and also he sayth he dyed with
out yllhe, and was buryed by his co-
lyn at Caerbantok or Porke.

The. xxiii. Chapter.

Rinimacus þe sonne of
Sililius: as some wyters
haue, but moze veritable
as sayth the olde cronicle,
the brother of Lago, was made ruler
of Britayne, in the yere of the worlde
iiii. M. v. C. and. lxx. the which (as his
brother before hym) passed his tyme
without any notable actes or dedes:
so þe of him is no moze memoze made
then of his brother. For þe moze par-
ty they that wrote the saytes & dedes
of Brytons, make but a shorte reher-
sal of these. v. kynges, that is to saye
from

from Ryuallo to Gorbodug, sayeng that after Ryuallo succeeded Gurgu-
sius, after hyn succeeded Lago, to
Lago succeeded Kynimacus, & after
Kynimacus succeeded Gorbodug. Of
these .v. kynges of rulers is made ly-
tell other mencion. Then it foloweth
in the sayd olde cronicle, & when this
Kynimacus had reigned .liiii. yeares
he dyed and was buryed by his bro-
ther at Caerbyrk of Powke: leuyng
after him a sonne, as testifyeth flos
hystoriarum, whiche sonne was na-
med Gorbodug.

The .xxiii. Chapter.

Gorbodug the sonne of Ki-
nimacus, was made ruler
of Brytaine, in the yere of
the worlde, folowynge the
foresayd accompt. .liiii. .v. .C. .xlii.
Which also passed his tyme like vnto
the foresayd dukes of kynges,
without any specyall memory of ho-
nour noted by wyters, this by mooste
lykelyhode to bynge histories to ac-
corde: shulde reygne ouer the Bry-
tons the terme of .liiii. yeres. Which
terme ended, he dyed and lyeth bu-
ried at new Troy of Wobon, leuyng
after him two sonnes named Ferrer
and Porrex, of after some wyters
Fertous and Porreus.

The .xxiiii. Chapter.

Ferrer with Porrex his
brother, sonnes of Gor-
bodug: bet forntly made
gouernours & dukes of
Brytaine, in the yere of
the worlde .v. .vii. .C. .xlii. and
continued in that a litle tyme.
After which tyme expired, as wy-
teth Polidorian & also Geoffrey
profer byng comtelle of lordship
gathered his people, and byng
the byng byng to deliuer
him, wherof he byng warned, so

lacke of space to assemble his people
for sauegarde of his persone, fled so-
deynly into Gallia or Fraunce, and
asked ayde of a Duke of Gallia, na-
med by Sauspde: Gunhardus or
Suardus, & which duke ayded him
and sent him agayne into Brytaine
with his host of Gallis. After whose
ladyng his brother Porrex with his
Brytons him mete, & gaue to him ba-
taye in the which batayl Ferrer was
slayne with the moze part of his peo-
ple. But here discoordeth myn autour
with some other wyters, and wryth
the cronicle of England: for they te-
stifye, that Porrex was slayne, and
Ferrer suruiued. But whether of the
was lyuyng, the mother of these two
brethren named Widen, settinge a
parte al motherly ppye: with helpe
of her wome, entred the chambere (of
hyn so lyuyng) by nyght, and hyn
ther slepyng slewe cruelly, and cut
into small peces. And thus dyed the
two foresayd bretheren, after they
had thus ruled Brytaine, in warre
and peace, to the agrement of mooste
wyters. .v. yeares.

The .xxv. Chapter.

Ere now endeth the lyne
of offsprynge of Bryte, af-
ter the affirmance of
mooste wyters. For Sai-
spde sayth, after & death
of these foresayd bretheren, greate
discoorde arose amonge the Brytons
the which longe tyme amonge them
continued by means wherof the peo-
ple and countre was sore beryed and
ruyned vnder .v. kynges. And further
sayth Eudo de Columna, that the
Brytons whoored & lyngage of Gor-
bodug, so much as first, that one
brother wode that other, and moze
for the unnatural wydosycion of the
mother, & to cruelly & slawe her owne
chylde

childe. The cronycle of Englande sayth, that after the death of the two fornamed byethzen, no rightfull inheritor was left on liue. Wherefore the people were brought into greete discorde, in so much that þe land was deuided in foure partes. So that in Albania was one ruler, in Loegria o; Logieris another ruler, in Cambria, the thyrde duke o; ruler, and in Cornwale, the fourth duke o; ruler. But of these .iiii. dukes the Englysh cronycle alloweth Clotof, duke of Cornwale for moſte rightfull heye.

Policronica sayth, þe after þe death of the forſayd two byethze, great discorde was in þe land, whiche greued the people ſoze, vnder v. kinges. But he nother reherſeth the names, no; þe tymes of their regnes, except he addeth to, that the ſayd discorde continued tpyll the tyme of Hulmutius Dumuallo. So þe here appeareth no tyme certayn, how log this variuſce and discorde amog the Byttons continued. But who ſo lyſt to loke vpo a draught, made by me in englyſh in the begynnyng of this boke: he ſhall ſe there yf he pleaſe to caſt ouer þe tymes & yeares there expreſſed. þe this forſayd discorde cotinued nere to the terme of .li. yeres. In which draught o; conceyt, yf any ma here fynd erroure of his goodnes let him amend & correct it, & al other places wher he ſhal by good profe fynd place of correctio.

The .xxvij. Chapter.

Thus here endeth þe fiſt parte of this worke, coternyng o; diuided in .vii. partes, as befoze is ſhewed. And this fiſt parte is to be accepted the fiſt pere of Bytze, vnto þe laſt pere of þe forſayd discorde, o; vnto the fiſt pere of Hulmutius: which includeth .viij. C. and foure yeares.

Thus endeth the fiſt parte.

The ſeconde parte.

The .xxvij. Chapter.



Hulmutius Dumuallo, o; as ſome haue Dunuallo Hulmutius, the ſone of Clotof as teſtifyeth the englyſhe boke, & al-

ſo Gaufride: was venqueſſour of þe other Dukes o; rulers, & began hys regne ouer the whole monarchy of Bytayne, in the peare of the worlde .iiii. M. viij. C. and .xlviii. This is named in the englyſhe cronycle Donebant: the whiche was a noble man, & cauſed to be made within the cytie of Troynouant a temple, and named it the temple of peace. The whiche after ſome opynions, is that place o; ſeld, where the market of wollen cloth is holden called o; named Blakwelhal. He alſo made many good lawes the whiche were long after vſed & called Hulmutius lawes. Theſe lawes holy Gyldeſ wrote with great dyligence out of the byettishe ſpeche into latin. And longe tyme here after that Aluredus kyng of Englad turned thoſe lawes oute of latyne into englyſhe. He alſo gaue priuilege to temples, to ploughes & cities, and to the wayes ledyng to theſame. And as ſome autours witneſſe, he begane þe foure hys wapes of Bytayne, the whiche were ſyniſhed and perfected of Belinus his ſonne, as after at length ſhall be declared. The olde cronicle teſtifyeth that this Hulmutius, whiche he in his boke nameth Melle, made the two townes of Hulmeſbury & Wytes. And all other writers affirme that this Hulmutius, after he had ſtablyſhed his lande, and ſette hys Byttons in good and conueniente order: by the adurce of his lordes, he ordeyned

ordained hym a crowne or maderna of golde, and caused hym selfe to be crowned with great solempnite. after the blance of þe pagane lawe then vided. And for this cause, after the opinion of some wyters, he is named the first kynge of Britayne. And all the other befoze reherched are named rulers, dukes, or gouernours.

Then it foloweth in þe storie, wher Sulmutius had gubned the lande wel and honozablye, by the terme of xl. yeres: he dyed and was buryed in the foresayde temple of peace within Tropnouant or London, leuynge after him two sonnes, named Belinus and Brennus.

The .xxix. Chapter.

Belinus and Brennus the two sonnes of Sulmutius: began to raygne ioyntly as kynges of Britayne, in þe yere of the world. .iiii. thousande. viiiij. C. and. viiiij. so that Belinus held to him Logria or Logres, Wales and Cornewall, & Brennus helde to his parte all the lade ouer & beyonde Humber. With which partyen epyther of them was conteted and pleased, as testifeth Polycronica, by the terme of .v. yeres. After the which terme ended & expired, Brennus entenyng to haue moze lande or all: arose agaynst his brother Belinus, & made vpo him mortal warre. In the whiche warre, Brennus was ouerfette, and was compelled to fflye the lande, and sayle vnto Armozica now named ytell Britayne, or as sayth Gaufreyde, into a countree called Alledog: as after shalbe moze playnly declared, and there allyed hym after the foresayde terme (as befoze is sayd) of .v. yeres was expyred as affermeth Polycronica. For Gaufreyde

sayth in his booke, made of þe hystorie of Brytons, that after the terme of v. yeres aforesayde were expyred and runne, Brennus by steryng of yong and euell counsell, entenyng as befoze is sayde: sayled vntwetyng his brother into Norway, and there married the doughter of Elfunge or Elfyng, then ruler or duke of Norway. When this was shewed vnto Belyn, consyderynge the sodayne departing in al haste he sealed Albania & all the other lande apperteynyng to Brenne into his owne hand, & strenghted the cities and other strong places with his owne souldyers. Wher of when Brenne was warned: he in all possible haste assembled a greates people of the Norwages, and toke his shippynge to sayle into Britayn. And as he was kepyng his course vpo the see: he was encountred with Guithdacus kynge of Denmarke, the whiche hadde lyen in a wayte for him, for loue of þe wenche þe Brennus had maryed: for befoze tyme he had requyred her of Elfunge her father. When these two flotes were met: stronge shotte and fyght was vpon both parties. But synally þe Danes ouercame the Norwages or Norwages, and toke the shippe by strength which the wenche was in, the which anon was brought vnto the shippe of Guithdake: and Brenne wyth a fewe of his shippes lefte, was fayne to sauegarde hym selfe by flyght.

When Guithdake had thus obteyned the vyctorye, entenyng to haue sayled towarde Denmarke: in shorte whyle after, þe tempestes came so hydous vpon the see, that his nauye was deuyded and scatered that one from the other, in such wise that he was in fere to haue ben drowned. And at the ende of fyue dayes not wetynge

wetynge where he was with fewe
shippes landed in the countree of
Northumberlande, where at þe tyme
was Belyn prouydyng defence a-
gayne his brothers comyng. Wher-
of when word was broughte vnto
Belyn of the landyng of the forsayd
Danys pryncer, with a small cōpany
he reioysed it, and commaunded hym
with his shippes and company to be
put in sure holde and keepyng.

It was not long after but Brenne
had reculed and gathered together
the more parte of his nauye befoze
(as ye haue harde) chased. And when
he had them newly rygged and by-
tayled, he herynge of the aruayll of
Gulthdacus in Northumberlande
with his wife, set wordes of manace
vnto his brother Belyn, wyllynge
him to send vnto him his wife wōg
fully rauyned by Gulthdacus, and
also to restore vnto him his lande &
patrymony, or els he would shortly
inuaide his lande, it for to waste, and
his enemye to destroye. The whiche
desyre or request of Belynus was
playnly & shortly denyed. Whiche
knowlege had: Brennus shortly af-
ter landed in a parte of Albania, and
made towarde his brother, and hys
brother towarde him: so þe they ho-
stes met nere vnto a wood, named, at
that daye Calater or Calaterium,
where betwene them was a mortall
battayll, in so much that muche peo-
ple fell vpon both parties. But last-
ly the Brytons wanne the felde, and
chased the Norwanes or Norwanes
vnto theyr shippes, chasyng and de-
uynge them without pitie. And as af-
fermeth myne autour, the fight was
so cruell and sharpe: that there was
slayne to the number of. xl. M. men.

After this dyscumfytur, Brenne
was constrained to flee, and wyth

fewe in number recovered the lande
of Gallia.

Belinus, haupng thus victorie of
his enemyes, after thakes and obla-
tions made vnto his goddes, after þe
pagane lawe: he then assembled hys
lordes at Caerbyrke or York, to
haue theyr aduysse what he shulde do
with the pryncer of Denmarke. In þe
whiche counsaile it was concluded, þe
foresayde Gulthdacus shoulde
holde and do homage to the kynge
of Britayn, for þe land of Denmarke
and yearly beare to hym a certayne
tribute. Whiche done with suertye &
hostages taken: the sayde Gulthda-
cus with his loue was sette at lyber-
tye & leue, to retourne into his owne
countre: which yearly tribute, as he
stipeth the englyshe cronycle, was a
thousande pounde.

The .xiiij. Chapter.

When it foloweth in the
hystorie, when Belyne
had thus victorie of
his enemyes, and was
alone possessor of this
realme of Britayn: the lawes befoze
made by his father he confirmed, &
ordained iustice to be ministred tho-
rough the lande. And for so much as
the foure wayes begon by his father
were not petyghted and ended: he
therfoze caused workme to be called,
and set them to paue with stone the
sayd wayes, that they myght suffi-
ciently be knowen of all waygoers or
trauellers of the countreys, as here-
after ensueth.

The fyrr of these .iiii. wayes was
named Fosse, the which stretched out
of the southe into the north, & begyn-
neth, or at that daye beganne, at þe
corner of Cotnesse in Cornewale, &
passed forth by deupnshyre, somer-
setshyre

The seconde parte.

23.

sethrye, & so forth by Cuthbury vpon Cottelwolde, besyde Couentre vnto Lyncestre, and from thens by wyld playnes towarde Awerke, and endeth at the cite of Lyncoln.

The secod waye was named Wat lynchstrete, the which stretcheth ouer twarte þ wapes of Fosse out of the southest into the northest. This beganne at Douer, and passeth by the myddell of Kente, ouer Thames besyde London by weste of Westmynster, and so forth by saynte Albanes, in the weste syde of Dunstable, of Stratford, of Couceter, and of Wedon, by south Kyllingburne of Kylesbourn, by Athirston, vnto Sylbertes hyl, þ nowe is named Wrekyn, and so forth by Seuarth passyng besyde Worcester, & forth vnto Stratton to the myddell of Wales vnto a place called Cardigan, at þ Jephse.

The thyrde waye was named Ermyngstrete. The whiche stretcheth out of the weste northweste vnto the east southeast, & becommeth at Menema, the whiche is in saynt Dauies lande in weste Wales, and so stretcheth forth vnto south Hampton.

The fourth and last waye is called o; was called Kykeneldis strete. The which stretcheth forth by Worcester, by Wycombe, by Birmyngham, by Lychefeld, by Derby, by Chesterfeld by Poike. And so forth vnto Tymmouth: the whiche was sufficiently made. He graunted & confermed them all suche priuileges as befoze were graunted by Diuallio his father. The which priuileges with other lawes by hym made, who þ is desirous to knowe: let hym rede ouer þ traslaciō that holy Gildas made of Mulinutius lawes out of Brytish speche in to latyne, and there he shall se the circumstance of euery thyng.

In this whyle that Belyn was thus occupped, aboute the nedes of his land, his brother Brenne beyng, as befoze is sayde, in a prouynce of Gallia, takyng soze to mynde his expulsion from his naturall countre, not haupnge any comfote howe he myght attayn to his former dignite, lastely resorted (wyth. xii. persones onely accompaned) vnto the duke o; ruler of that prouynce o; countre.

For ye shall vnderstande that at those dayes (as testifieth Eutropius and other wyters) the Gallis occupped dyuers countrees. And therfoze Titus Liuius, whiche wrote þ actes and dedes of þ Romayns, made distinction of the Gallis, and nameth them that Brenne ladde, when he be-seiged the cite of Rome and after þ capitol, Cenonenses Galli, whiche is to name the Gallis of that countre where the cite of Cene than stode and yet doth (as testifieth þ autoure of cronica cronicarū, and other) in a countre of Italy named at this day Etruria. The whiche cite, as affermen the sayde autours, was fyrste buylded of the foresayde Gallis, in þ tyme of Brenne beyng theyr duke o; leder, befoze the commynge o; incarnation of Christ. iij. hundred. lxxx. and vi. yeres: whych maketh the yere of the worlde, folowynge the accompte of this worke. iiii. thousand. viii. hundred and. xiii. yeres.

Then it foloweth in þ stoye, when Brenne was comen to the presence of the duke named by myne autoure Graufride Segin^r duke of Alebrog the whiche is to be vnderstode, duke of Armozica, now named lytel Brytayne, as by Policronica and the englyshe cronycle is sufficiently declared, and shewed vnto him his aduerlyte & trouble: þ sayd duke receaued hym

him into his court. And for he was personable & well manered, hauing great experyence in hawkyng and huntynge, and other properties apperteynyng to a gentylman: he had hym in shorte whyle in especyall fauoure befoze any noble man of hys court. By meane wherof, he lastely maryed his doughter, vpon condycyon that yf he dyed without Issue male, that he then shuld be ruler of þe countre. And yf it happened hym to haue an heyre male: that then it not withstādyng, to ayde and helpe hym to recouer his lande befoze losse.

The whiche condicions well and suerly vpon the dukes partie, by the assent of þe nobles of his lād assured: the said duke within cōpas of þe same yere dyed. After whose deth when by a conuenient terme, it was knowen that the duchesse hys wyfe was not wyth chyld: all the lordes to Byenne dyd homage, & became his men. To the whych lordes the moze to wyne theyr loues, he departed much of his tresour: and shortly after with theyr assente gathered a great armye, and so in all hast sayled into Bytayne to make newe warre vpon his brother Belyne, & after a certayn tyme there landed. Of whose landyng when Belyne was enfourmed: he in all haste gathered his Bytons in great nomber, & made towarde hym as to hys mortall enemye. But the mother of the two bryethzen named Cōnuēna, or after the englysh boke Cornewe, consyderyng the mortall hatreded at twene her two chyldre, and in partye of their both persones: of a motherly and natural pytie, went attwene her two sonnes, and bled her in such discrete maner and motherly cōpassyon as shewyng her brestes and other demanures, that at lengthe she accor-

ded them. After whych accorde both bryethzen with theyr lordes and frenedes sped them vnto Tropnouant or London, and there after many thynges ordered and made for the weale of þe land: they cōdescended & agreed to lede theyr both hostes into Gallia for to subdue to them the sayd countre. And in as goodly haste as they myght prepare for the iourney, they toke shyppyng, and so sayled into a parte of Gallia, byennynge and wasyng the countre without pitie. And as witnesseth myne autoure Gausfryde, in a short whyle they subdued a greate parte of Gallia Italy and Germania.

But here I entend to leue the farther processe of myne autoure Gausfryde, for so muche as he varyeth fro other wryters of autorite, as Eutropius, Titus Liuius and other, that dyd great dysgience in wrytyng of þe dedes and actes of the Romayns, & of other people dwellyng at those dayes in Italia, Gallia & Germania for where the sayd Gausfryde sayth, that at such time Belyne and Byenne made warre in Italye, Gabius and Posena were at that daye consules of Rome: that sayeng is farre dyscordant vnto the other foresayde autours. For as they asserme at þe time when Byenne beseged Rome, Claudius Emilius, and Lucius Lucretius were consules & Furcius Camillus was at þe time dictatour of Rome and none lyke vnto the other were consules many yeres befoze nor after.

But truth it is that the sayde two bryethzen dyd many greate actes in þe foresayd countres, but not all accordyng with the sayeng of the sayd Gausfryde. For where he referreth al those dedes to both bryethzen: the foresayd Titus Liuius speketh but of Byenne

Bienne onely, as it shal some dele be touched hereafter. Wherefore to folow the mosse wyters, when Belyn had dwelled a certayne of tyme with his brother Bienne in those partes by agreement of them both, Belyn returned into Brytayne and Bienne remayned there.

The xxxi. Chapter.

When Belinus or Belyn was returned into Brytayne: he repayed olde cyties, and buylded vpon the ryuer of Uske a cytie, and called it Caerulhe nere vnto the ryuer of Seuerne. This cite was after named the cytie of Legions, for so much as the legions of Romaynes were lodged within the same cytie, and now it is called Caerleon or Carleon. Also he buylded a haven with a gate thereouer wpythin Tropnouant, in the summet of pyracie wheron was set a vessel of brasse, in the which was closed the ashes of his bent body, wher he was dead. This gate was longe after called Belyns or Belinus gate, but at this daye it is called Belyngesgate.

In this whyle that Belinus was thus occupied in Brytayne, his brother Bienne desierous to wyne fame and honours buylded in Italy and other partes of Gallia these cyties and townes folowynge:

Mediolana or Myllyn in Libardy
Pappa or Papp.
Burgamum or.
Sena or.
Comum or.
Bicia or.
Verona or.
Vincentia or.
Cremona or.
Mantua.

The which cyties and townes wer

buylded of the Gallis, or at the lesse newe repayed, in the tyme that Bienne was theyr leder or duke, albeit that some wyters would meane that Comum and Cremona were buylded after Bienne was dead. Polytronicus witnesseth, that the Senons, whiche he meaneth by the Gallis dwelling about the cytie of Sena, by leading of Biennus ouercame the Romaynes. xi. myle from Rome, at the ryuer Albia, and chased the to Rome and toke the cytie vnto the Capitoll, and after leyd syege to the same Capitoll. And vpo a night while the wardens of the Capitoll slepte: the frenshe men or Gallis by a waye vnder the earth came into the Capitoll and wer lykely to haue wonne it. But a noble Romayne named Mallius or Mallius Torquatus, awoke by the cryeng or noyse of a gander or ganders. The which Mallius awakynge the other Romaynes, putte of the Gallis. For which cause the Romayns longe tyme after helde a feast of ganders, the first daye of June.

Neuertheles afterwarde they called it Jnos feast, for so much as they thought that Juno goddess had by her influence geuen that grace vnto the ganders, that they shuld by their noyse awake the Romayns. But yet the Gallis or frenchmen held the Romayns so short, that they were compelled to geue vnto Bienne their duke a thousand pounde weyght of gold, as thereof is witnesseth Titus Livius. And furthermore sayth he sayd Livius, that the Gallis slewe of the senatours many in number, the which fyrste they supposed hadde bene goddes because of theyr ryche apparell, whiche they sat in. But shortly after this the forenamed furus Camillus, whiche was called agayne fro the cytie of Ardea,

where

* The buylding of Belyngesgate.

where he was outlawed before, & by the comontye of Rome in this neede made agayne dictatour.

The which persued Brenne & his people, & to them gaue batayll, slaying of them a great multitude, and wanne from them all the golde and iewels that before tyme the Gallis had wonne of the Romaynes. The which dede was done, as wytnesseth the foresayd Titus Liuius, the yere after the buyldyng of Rome. iiii. hundred. lxxv. which was the yere of the world, folowynge the accompt of this worke. iiii. M. viii. hundred and. xxxv. and before Christes incarnation keepynge the same accompt. iiii. hundred and. lxxv.

Then it foloweth in the storie of Brenne, when he was thus dyscomfited of the Romaynes: he tourned his people towarde the Macedones or Grekes, and deuoyded his people in two hostes. Wherof he receyved one with hym, and that other he sent into a countre called then Gallacia, and after Gallogreci, and lastly Galates. Then Brenne ouercame the Macedons with theyr duke Sostene and after spoyled the goddes & their temples, & sayde in his game, yche goddes muste geue to men some dele of theyr rychesse. Also he spoyled the temple of the God Apolynne Delphicus standynge in the hyl of the mount Parnalus. Wherfore as testifieth the wyter Policarpus: the people of that countre, prayed to God for helpe and sodaynly the earth beganne to quake, and a greete parte of the hyl fell vpon the hoste of Gallis, & slewe them. And after that ensued and fell to grounde hyle stones of such great nesse, & it slewe another greete parte of the sayd hoste, and duke Brenne was soze wounded: wherby he fell in

such dyspayre, that he slewe himselfe with his owne swerde.

Then lynes I haue here shewed vnto you the fyne or ende of Brennus, I shall nowe retourne my stile vnto hys brother Belynus, the whiche, as before is touched, endeuored hym aboute the weale of his lande of Brytayne and his people, durynge tyme of his reygne, in executynge of many notable dedes, the which for lengthe of tyme I ouerpasse: so that lastly he dyed and was buryed, as before is sayd, at Beling or Belinus gate, within Troynouant or London, when he had reygned with his brother and alone, after the most concordance of wyters. xxvi. yeres leuyng after hym a sonne called Sarguintus, Sarguint Baderuc, or after some wyters Sarguint Barberous, which is to meane Sarguint with the red berde.

The. xxxij. Chapter.



Sarguintus or Sarguint the sonne of Belyne, was made kynge of the lande of Brytayne in the yere of the world. iiii. M. viii. hundred and. xxxiii. This in the englyshe cronycle is named Cozimbatus or Cozimbatus. The whiche for so muche as the tribute before graunted by Gylthdak kynge of Denmark, vnto the kynges of Brytayne for a perpetuall, was denyed: he arrayed his armie and nauye, and sayled into Denmarke, and there wasted and harmed the countre with yron and fyre: in such wyse, that at length the kyng of Denmarke, with the assent of hys Baronage, graunted to paye and contynue the foresayde tribute yearly of a thousand pounde. After whiche byctore thus had of the

Brennus

the Danes: he with great triumphe returned toward Britayne. And in keeping of his course, he encountered with a nauye of .xxx. sayle belyde the yle of Orchades ful of men and women, of which sorte, the chiefe captayne was called after mooste wyters Bartholomew. The which when he was brought vnto the kynges presence, shewed that he with his people were putte out of the countre of Spayne, and were named Balenses and had sayled longe tyme vpon the see, to the ende to fynde some pynte, that would geue to the a dwellinge place, and they to become his subiectes and holde theyr lande of hym, he sechynge the kyng to haue compassion of them, & to graunt to the some place to enhabite them in, and that they shulde no longer dwell in theyr shippes, consydering theyr vytayle was spent, by reason of theyr long lyenge vpon the see. After whych request thus made by theyr captayne, the kyng with the aduyse of hys barons, graunted vnto them a boorde & waste countre, which was and is the farthest yle of all the yles, toward the weste, the which yle as sayth the Englysh cronycle was then named Ire lande, after the name of theyr captayne called in the Englyshe cronycle Irlamal. But whoso wyll knowe the first cause of the nampng of this yle Ireland: let hym reade the .xxii. and .xxiii. Chapters of the fyrste boke of Policronica, and there he shall fynde the moze certaynly of the fyrst nampng thereof, with many other thinges touching the said yle, the which I ouer passe for length of the mater. For there he shal be sufficiently enfourmed of that, and also of other thinges.

Then it foloweth in the stoye, after this Gurgintus was returned

into his lande of Britayne: he ordeyned to be stablyshed & kepte the lawes made by his forefathers, and exercised iustyce to his subiectes, and guyded his lande well and nobly, by the terme, after mooste wyters, of .xix. yeares, and then dyed, and was buried at newe Trope or London, or at Caerleon, leuyng after hym a sonne, named after myne autoure Gynthelmus, but after some he is named Gynntellius.

The .xxiiij. Chapter.



Gynthelmus or Gynntellius the sonne of Gurgintus, was made kyng of Britayne, in the .iiii. yeare of the world. .iiii. .M. viij. C. and. liij. This is named in the englysh cronycle Gwentolpne the which guyded his lande & Britons with greete mekenesse and sobernesse. He hadde also a noble wyfe called Marcia, instructe and lerned in many sciences, the which amonge other noble dedes by her done, studied and brought forth a certayne good and conuenient lawe amonge the Britons, & the whiche was named longe after the Marcan lawe. This lawe for that it was thought both good and necessary, Aluredus, whiche longe after was kyng of Englande, translated oute of Bretyn into Saxon speche, and then was it called after that translatyon in the Saxon tonge Marthehage, which is to meane the lawe of Marcia. To this woman for her wysdome was committed all the gouernaunce of the lande, in so muche, as wytneseth myne autoure Gausfred and other. He reigned as quene of Britayne a certayne tyme after her husbande was deade. But the yeares of

The Marcan lawe.

her regne be accounted with the
peares of her husbände, or wyth the
peares of her sone Sililius, so that
no tyme ascerteyned is to her depu-
ted or sette.

Then it foloweth, whē this Guin-
helinus hadde reigned well and me-
kely by the terme of .xxvi. yeres, he
died and was buried at newe Troy
or Londō, leuyng after hym a sonne
named Sililius or Cecilius.

The. xxxiii. Chapter.

Sililius or Cecilius the
sonne of Guynthelinus,
was made kynge of By-
tayne, in the yere of the
world. iiii. M. viii. C. and lxxix. This
in the Englyshe cronycle is named
Seyyl. Of whiche no mencion nor
worthy memoꝝy is made. Albeit that
Gaufryde meaneth, þ this Sililius
was but. vii. yeres of age when his
father died. Wherfore the charge of
the realme was comitted vnto Mar-
cia his mother the whiche guyded it
wel & sufficiently tyll her sayd sonne
came to his lawfull age, and then re-
signed to him all the rule: whiche so
continued, but howe longe he re-
igned. Gaufryde expresseth not. Wher-
fore I now folowe the sayeng of the
fozenamed autoire called the floure
of hystories, which affermeth hym to
reigne onely. vii. yeres, albeit the
the Englyshe boke sayeth he reigned
xv. yeres, which agreeth not so well
wyth the concoꝝdaunce of other hy-
stories and tymes.

This Sililius, as Gaufryde wit-
nesseth, left after him a sonne named
Kymarus, whomin the englyshe boke
nameth Kymoz.

The. xxxv. Chapter.

Kymarus the sonne of Sililius
was made kynge of Bytayne
in the yere of the world. iiii. thou-

sande. viii. hundred. lxxvi. This in
the englyshe boke is called Kymoz,
of the whiche is made no mencyon
nother of his tyme of regne, nor of
his dedes.

For the more partie of wyrters re-
herse in moste breuest & shortest ma-
ner, that after Kymarus reigned E-
lanus. After Elanus Morindus.
But the olde cronicle, which I haue
befoꝝetyme spokē of, sayth that thys
Kymarus, which he nameth Kymar-
chus Elanus, was a wyld yonge
man, and lyued after his pleasure.
Wherfore as he was in his dispoꝝte
of huntynge, he was by his euyl wy-
llers slayne, when he had ruled sharp-
ly thre yeres.

The. xxxvi. Chapter.

Elanus the sonne of Ky-
marus as witnesseth the
fozenayd floure of cronyc-
les, but the brother of
Kymarus as sayth Gau-
fryde, was made kynge of Bytayne
in the yere of the world. iiii. M.
viij. C. lxxix. the which in þ englyshe
boke is named Howan. Of this also
is no mencyon made nor memoꝝy no-
ther of acte nor of regne, but as the
fozenamed olde cronycle sayth, that
Kymarus & Elanus was one per-
sone, and reigned as befoꝝe is sayd:
but the abouesayde wyrtter called
floure of hystories sayth, he reigned
fully two yeres.

The. xxxvii. Chapter.

Morindus the bastarde sonne
of Elanus, as saith Gaufryde
and other, was made kynge of By-
tayne, in þ yere of the world. iiii. M.
viij. C. & xx. the which in the englyshe
cronicle is called Morwith. This as
witnesseth Gaufryde was gotte by
the concubine of Elanus named Ca-
guetela, and was a man of worthy
fame

came in dedes of chynalrpe, but he was so ouercome with wrath & cruellesse, & lyghtly he slewe all men that hym tened or angred. He was also beauteouse of persone and lyberal of gyftes, & with that he was of a meruelous strength, in so much that he had not his pere within his realme of any man of noble byrthe.

In his time came into Bytayne a prynce out of a countre called Mauritanie, the whyche countre at those dayes is assigned by Strabo & wyter, to be betwene the kyngdomes of Hungary, and of Beame, the whych prynce with his cruell and fyers people wasted the land of Bytayne with prion and fyre without pittie. Wherof Moxindus beyng warned, in all haste gathered his people, and hym mette, and fought in such wise, that he chased the sayde prynce agayne to the see, and toke many of his souldiers as prisioners, the whyche in satisfaction of his cruellesse and tyranny, he caused to be put to deth in his syght by dyuerse maners of tormentes, as by headyng, slepyng, brennyng and other cruell execucions. Lastely as testifyeth Eupdo de Columna and other, this Moxindus walkyng or rydyng vpon & see stronde espyed a wonderfull monstre, the whiche of his corage & knyghthod he thought to see. And by a manly corage and force assailed this monstre or beste, fyghtyng with it a certayne of tyme. But in conclusion he was deuoured and swallowed of the sayde monstre: after he hadde reygned, after mooste wyters, by the terme of. viii. yeres, leuyng after him, as witnesseth Gausfryde, fyue sonnes, wherof the fyfte was named Gozdomannus, the secunde Archigallo, the thyrde Elidurus, the fourth Uigenus or Rige-

nus, and the fyfte or yongest, Peredurus.

The. xxi. Chapter.

Gozdomannus the fyfte sonne of Moxindus, was made kyng of Bytayne in the yere of the worlde iii. M. viii. hundred and. xcvi. This in the englyshe cronycle is named Granbodryan, the whiche as testifyeth Gausfryde, was a iuste & ryghteous man, to the goddes and to his people, and yelded to eyther partie, & was his, that is to saye to his goddes he yelded due reuerence and sacrifice, and to the people iustyce and equitye. And he renewed and repayred all olde temples thoroughe hys realme, and buylded some newe. And in his tyme was more wealth and plenty in his realme, much more then was in any of his predecesours dayes. But fynally to the great sorowe of all his Bytonges, he was taken with syknesse, & dyed withoute issue of his bodye, when he had reygned after mooste wyters by the terme of xi. yeres.

The. xxi. Chapter.

Archigallo the secod sonne of Moxindus, & brother vnto Gozdomannus, was made kyng of Bytayne in the yere of the worlde, foure thousande. ix. hundred and. i. This in the englyshe booke is named Artogayll the whiche folowed nothyng the wykes of his brother, but gaue hym selfe all to discencion and strife and ymagined causes agaynst his nobles to putte them from theyre goodes and dygnities, and in theyr places to sette and ordeyne vnnoble and of rude byrth and maner, and from the ryche by synestre and wrongfull meanes he plucked theyr

ryches and goodes. By whiche indy-
dinate meanes, he enryched himselfe
and impouerished his subiectes. For
whiche condicions his lordes & sub-
iectes murmured agaynste him, and
lastly, of one assent toke him, or more
berely, depyued him of all honoure
and kyngly dignite, whē he had re-
igned after mooste conoordance of
wynters, fyue yeares.

¶ The.xl. Chapter.

Elidurus the thyrde sonne
of Morindus, & the bro-
ther of Archigallo, was
by one assent of the Byr-
tons made kyng of Byrtayne, in the
peare of the worlde. iii. M. ix. hun-
dred and. xv. This in the englyshe
cronycle is named Hysider or Elodir.
The which became so mylde and be-
nygne to the Byrtōs, that they gaue
to him a surname, & called him Eli-
dure the meke. For he amonge other
dedes of mekenes, as he was vpon a
dape in his dyspozte of huntynge, in
a woode, nere vnto Caerbzanke or
Porke called Calater, or after some
wynters Caltras: he fande his elder
brother Archigallo late kyng, mas-
kelyng or wandryng in the thykest
of the woode, whom lounghly & cha-
ritably he in secrete maner conueyed
vnto his owne mancion, into the cy-
tie then named Aldub or Aclut. And
as affirmeth myne autour Gaufride
to the intent to byng his brother to
his former dignitie, as after folow-
eth: the sayde Elidurus fapned hym
selfe sycke, & in al haste lent his mes-
sagers about his realme to gather &
assemble the Barons of his lande.
And when the dape of assemble was
commyn, and his lordes accorbyng
to his comaundement were presente
he called them one by one, as they
wer of honour, into his secrete cub-
-

cle or chamber, & there by his wyse &
discrete wordes as well in benygne
and loungh maner, as other wordes
and countenaunce apperteynyng to
his royall power & dygnitie, he gat
graunt of his sayd lordes, that they
shuld ayde and strength him to their
powers, to byng his brother Archi-
gallo to his former honour and re-
gally. After which graunt by the lor-
des made: he assembled a counsayll
of his Byrtōs at Caerbzanke or
Porke, and there caused suche mea-
nes to be made to the comons, that
in conclusion when the sayde Elidu-
rus had ruled the lande. v. yeares as
kyng, he there resgnyed his crowne
and all kyngly power vnto his sayd
brother Archigallo.

¶ The.xli. Chapter.

When Archigallo wasthus
restored to his kynglye
dignitie, he remembred
well the euyl life that be-
fore tyme he had led, & the punishe-
ment whiche he had suffred for the
same. Wherefore in the eschewyng of
lyke daunger: He chaunged all hys
olde condicions, and became a good
and ryghteous man, mynsteryng to
the people equyte and iustyce, & bare
hym so nobly agayne his lordes and
rulers vnder him of his landes, that
he was beloued and dyadde of al his
subiectes, and so contynued durynge
the terme of his natural lyfe. But fy-
nally he payde the dette of nature,
when he had reigned now lastly af-
ter mooste wynters. x. yeares, and was
buried, as sayeth the sayde olde cro-
nycle at Caerbzanke or Porke.

¶ The.xlii. Chapter.

Elidurus before named, was
agayne by one assent of the
Byrtōs made kyng, in the
peare

The seconde parte.

21

peare of the worlde. **liij.** **A.** **ix.** **C.** and **xxx.** But his two yonger bryethen **Algenius** and **Peredurus**, haupnge of hym indignaciō, that he was for his vertue & good gouernaunce so well fauoured with the **Byttons**: of mallice conspyred agayne hym, and gathered an armie of souldiers, & made a feld with him. And in the feld toke hym, and commaunded hym vnto the towne of **Tropnouant** as sayth **Gaufryde**, there as a prysoner to be saulely kepte. After and when he had reygned nowe laste by the space, as witnesseth the olde cronycle, two yeaeres.

The. xliij. Chapter.

Algenius and **Peredurus** the yongest sonnes of **Modindus** and bryethen of **Elidurus** before sayd, were ioyntly made kynges of **Bytayne**, in the yeaere of **h** worlde **liij.** **A.** **ix.** **C.** and **xxxii.** These two bryethen are named in the englyshe cronycle **Viganius** and **Petytur**, the which as testifieth **Gaufryde** departed the land betwene them, so that all the land from the water of **Humber** westwarde, fel to **Algenius** or **Algenius**: and the other parte of the land with also **Albania** or **Scotlande**, fel vnto **Peredurus**. But after the sayeng of **Gyudo de Columna**, **Algenius** or **Algenius** was not kyng, but alonely **Peredurus**, the which, as he sayeth, held his brother **Elidurus** in prysen by his owne assent, for so much as **Elidurus** was not willing to be kyng. And as affermeth **h** sayd **Gyudo**, this **Peredurus** was cruell and tyrannous to the **Bytayns**, and slew and entreated **h** lordes in moste cruel maner. wherfore he became so odious to them, that they rebelled agaynst him, and slewe hym.

This sayeng contraryeth and enpugneth myne autoure **Gaufryde**,

sayeng that **Algenius** dyed after he had reygned. **liij.** yeaeres. After whose death **Peredurus** sealed all the land into his owne rule, and ruled it with great sobernesse, in such wyse that he excelled or was praysed aboue al his bryethen, so **h** **Elidurus** was clene forgotten of **h** **Byttons**. The englysh cronicle also sayth: that this **Peredurus** founded the towne of **Bykerpyng**. But fynally, he was taken with so dayne sykenesse, whereof he dyed, when he had reygned with his brother and alone, after the accorde of moste wyrters. **ix.** yeaeres, leuyng after hym no chyldre to be his heyr.

The. xliiij. Chapter.

Elidurus before named, so soone as **Peredurus** was dead, for as much as he was nexte heyr to the crowne, was taken forth of prysen and made the thyrde tyme kyng of **Bytayne**, in the yeaere of the worlde. **liij.** **A.** **ix.** **C.** and **xli.** The which as before tyme he hadde vled hym selfe, so he continued styll in mynistryng to all persones ryght & iustyce all the dayes of his lyfe. And lastely beyng of good age he dyed, whē he had now reygned after moste concordance of wyrters. **liij.** yeaeres leuyng after him a sone named **Gorbomanus** or **Gorbomanus**. And as wytneseth the olde cronycle, and the englyshe cronycle, the forenamed **Elidurus** was buryed at **Caerlepyll** or **Karlele**.

The. xlv. Chapter.

Mal vnderstande that to the death of the foresayde **Elidure**, **h** wyrters of the stoye of **Byttons** wyten dyuersly, so that the one varyeth greatly from the other, both in the names, and also in the tyme of theyr regnes, the which would

would aske a long tyme to reherse in oþre the dyuersitie of that one from the other, and also to some readers the mater therof shulde be but small pleasure. Wherefore to suche as bene desyrous to knowe of þ tyme & season that passed betwene þ laste yeare of Elidurus, and the fyrste yeare of Lud, in which passetyme reigned in Brytayne. xxxi. oꝛ after some wyrters. xxxiii. kynges: let hym loke in a table befoze the begynnyng of this worke. And there he shall se my concept for the declaracion of the yeares passed oꝛ spent betwene the foresayde two kynges Elidurus & Lud, prayenge hym oꝛ them that so shall loke in the sayd draught, that yf I haue in any poynte erred, þ of their goodnes they wolde with good delyberacion correcte and amende it. But for it semeth to me, þ of all such autours as I haue redde oꝛ seen, Guydo de Columna reherseth most breuely the passetyme of þ sayd kynges: therfore I purpose here to reherse his sayeng as he hath left it to vs in latin.

The xlii. Chapter.

Goibonitanus oꝛ Goibonitanus, the sonne of Regny sonne of Elidure, was made kyng of Brytayne, in the yeare of the worlde. iiii. M. ix. C. and. xlv. After whō succeeded Hargan. After Hargan Emerianus brother to the sayd Hargan, the whiche Emerianus was depyued for his cruelnes. And after hym reigned. ix. kynges successively the one after the other, of the whiche, as sayeth myne autour Guydo, is no mencyon made, cyther for theyꝛ rudenesse, oꝛ elles for cruelte oꝛ dyscoꝛdaunte meanes oꝛ maners vled in þ tyme of theyꝛ regnes, the whiche inþoꝛder clerkys disdayned

to wyte oꝛ put in memoꝛy. And next the laste of these foresayd. ix. kynges succeeded Blegabydus a conynge muspryan: the whiche for his excellence in that faculte, was called of the Brytons god of glemen.

After Blegabydus was thus kyng and dyed, succeeded. ix. kynges of whoin for the forner cōsideraciō is nother name noꝛ tyme of regne put in memoꝛy. The laste of whiche ix. kynges was by the agrement of al wyrters named Hely, which Hely after some wyrters reigned. xl. yeares, & after some but bare. vii. monethes. In the whiche. xxxiii. kynges tymes, passed oꝛ flowed (that is to saye from the last yere of Elidure vnto the last yeare of the foresayd Hely, as by the forenamed table appereth) a hundred and. lxxvi. yeares. Which sayde Hely left after hym. iii. sonnes, named Lud, Cassibellanus and Neurius.

The xliii. Chapter.

Lud the eldeste sonne of Hely, was made kyng of Brytayne, in the yeare of the worlde. v. M. a hundred and. xxi. This man was honorable in all his dedes, for he edyfied newe temples, & repayred the old. He also repayred old cyties & townes, and specially in the cytie of Troynouant he caused many buyldynges to be made, and gyꝛde the sayde cytie about with a strong wall of lyme and stone. * And in the weste parte of the sayde wall he accerred a fayre and stronge gate, & commaunded it to be called Luddys gate, which at this dape is cleped Luddegate. And for he loued much this cytie: he vled muche and moste to lye there. * By reason wherof it was called Caerlud oꝛ Luddys towne, and after by corruption oꝛ shortynge of the

* The buyldyng of Ludgate.

* Howe London was first so named.

the speche, it was named London, which name at this daye remaineth and abydeth.

This Lud also, as witnesseth Gaufryde, was stronge and mighty in armes in subduynge his enemyes. He was also lyberall of gyftes and plentiful in his householde, so þ he was much loued and dread of his Bytōs. But whē he had continued his reigne with great honour by the terme of xi. yeres: he dyed and was buryed in his gate called Dorlud or Ludgate, leuynge after hym, as wytnesseth Gaufryde, two sonnes, Androgeus, and Temancius or Tenancius.

The .xliiij. Chapter.

Cassibellā the brother of Lud, was made kynge of Byrtayn, in the yere of the worlde. v. M. a hundred and .xliij. for so much as the .ii. sonnes before named of Lud were to yonge or insufficent for to take on hāde so great a charge. But as wytnesseth the olde cronycle and also the autoure of the flour of histoyres: this Cassibellan was not made kynge, but ruler or protectour of the lande, for the tyme of the nonage of the foresayde byethren: albeif myne autour Gaufryde sayeth, that after Cassibellan was set in autorite he became so noble and lyberal, that his name sprange farre, & by his exercising of iustyce, þ Bytōs ought to hym moze fauoure, then to ether of his nyeches. Howbeit he cherished them, and brought them forth accordyng to their byrth. And whē they came vnto yeres of dyscrecyon, he gaue to Androgeus the cytie of London, with the dukedome of the erledome of Kent, and to Temancius the dukedome of Cornewayll.

In this season was Catus Julius

the which is moste commonly called Julius Cesar, sente by the senate of Rome, as felowe & consull with Lucius Brubulus into Gallia, now called Fraunce, for to subdue them vnto the empyre of Rome. The whiche Julius beyng vpo the see syde, after he had ouercome the Gallis, and beholding the whyte clyues or rockes of Byrtayne: enquired of the countre, and what people dwelled therein. And when he was sufficiently enformed of all the commodities therof: he had greute wyl to byng the sayde countre vnder the poeke of the Romanes, for so much as at those dayes a great parte of the worlde was tributarye to Rome. But as sayeth myne autoure, firste he exhorted the Bytōs by wytyng and messangers to geue trybute vnto Rome. Wherfore Cassibellan hauyng indignacion, wrote vnto him sharpe & shorte answers, shewyng that he and every noble man was bounde, specially to kepe his countre from seruage, and to kepe his subiectes, that they myght enioy lybertie & frāchise. The which to obserue, he would do þ uttermoste of his power and myght. Worth the whiche answer Julius beyng nothing contented, in all hast made redy his nauy and people, and sayled towarde Byrtayne. And whē the Romanes were comen nere the land of Byrtayne, and shuld haue landed: þ Bytōs pyghte sharpe stakes and long wode the bankes, whiche caused them to wynn the land with greute daunger. And not longe after they landyng, Cassibellan with a stronge hoste of Bytōs encountred the Romanes, geuyng or yeldyng to them such fyght & batayll that they were fayne to resorte to theyr shippes for theyr suertie. Notwithstandyng that

as

as witnesseth Gausfride and other, Julius after he hadde reuewed his knyghtes, & also rygged his nauy: he came agayne the seconde tyme, entending to subdue the land to the empyre of Rome. But as befoze tyme he was by the manhode of the kynge and his Byttons manfully & knyghtly wythstanden and chastyd: ~~so this seconde tyme he was in lyke wise overcome, and compelled to flee without honoure.~~ For whiche bytton thus twyes obteyned by the Byttons, Cassibellan entendinge to gyue thanke vnto his goddes, and rewarde to hys knyghtes: in goodly haste caused an assemble to be made of his lordes and knyghtes at the cytye of Caerlud or London, where after deu obseruaunces done to theyr goddes, after the vse of theyr pagan lawes, a great and solemne fest was holden by the kyng to all that wolde come, wyth moste lyberaltie and plentye in all that was necessarye to such a fest. And the moze to increase the kynges honoure, and to þ moze coumforte and dilectacion of his lordes and other ther beyng present: there was all maner kynd of games that at those dayes were exercysed and vsed. Contynewynge whiche feste, twoo noble and ponge knyghtes amonge other hapened to alleysyther other in wastlyng, were of þ one was neuw to kyng Cassibellan named Hircelida, and that other named Euelinus, was allyed vnto Androgeus erle or duke of London. By meane of this wastelyng dyspyson or dyspityng wordes fell betwene the two ponge knyghtes, & after wordes ensued strokes, by meane wherof partyes were take on eyther syde, whiche ranne togyther in great ire and malyce, so þ on eyther parte

many and diuers were hurte & wounded. Among whome Hircelida neuw to the kyng was slayne, which caused great dysturbance in the courte and amonge the lordes.

When the knowlege of the deth of Hircelida was brought vnto þ kyng: he was therwyth greatly amoued, & entendinge deu iustice to be hadde & mynystred by thadurce of his Barons, caused the fornamed cosyn of Androgeus Euelinus to be sommoned for to appere befoze hym & hys counsayll, and there to acquyte hym of suche cryme as to hym was layde for the deth of Hircelida befoze slayne. But Euelinus by counsayll of Androgeus wythstode that commanndement, and shortly after the sayd Androgeus and Euelyne departed the courte wythoute takynge leue of the kyng.

The kyng dysdaynyng this demeanure of Androgeus, after diuers monycions to hym gyuen, gathered his knyghtes and made warre vpo Androgeus. Wherfor he cōsidering after many ways & meanes thought þ he was not of power to withstand the kynges great indignacyon, sent his letters vnto Caius Julius Cesar shewynge to hym the circumstance of the mater, and aduorcyng hym of al gyft, besought and prayed hym in moste humble wyse, that he wolde shortly retourne wyth his army into Brytayne, & be with his hole power shuld be redy to ayde and helpe him agayne the Byttons.

Of this message was Julius very glad, and in all haste made towarde Brytayne wyth a great power. To whom þ wynde was so fauourable, þ in short tyme after this message he dyctw nere þ land. But as aftermeth myne authour Gausfride, or be wold lande

The seconde parte.

35.

How the lorde
of Bytayne,
nowe called
Englande be-
came tributary
to the Ro-
maynes.

lande, ferryng the treason of Andro-
geus, he receyved fed him in hostage
his sonne named Saccus, with. cxx.
other of the mooste noble of hys lord-
shippe, and that done he labed with
the helpe and ayde of Androgeus.
Wherof when Cassibellan had war-
nyng, in all haste he made towarde
the Romaynes, and in a valey nere
vnto Dorobernia now named Can-
terbury, there he founde the hoste of
the sayd Julius lodged, & with hym
Androgeus with all his power. Af-
ter which knowlege had eyther of o-
ther, with theyr habylmentes of
warre eyther greued other, tyll at
length both hostes mette hande for
hande & fought vygerously, in suche
wyse that many fell on eyther partie.

But when the Byttons, as sayeth
Gaufreyde, had longe foughten and
knyghtly defended the Romaynes:
Androgeus with his people came by
a wyng of the Byttons, and the so
sharply assailed, that they were con-
streynd to forsake the feld and place
that they befoze hadde kepte. The
whiche syght dyscomforted so the o-
ther, that fynally all fledde and gaue
place to the Romaynes, the whyche
pursued and slewe them without p-
tie. So þe Cassibellan with his By-
tons that were left, were fayne to
gette them to a place of suerty, there
to rest tyl they might newly prouyde
to withstande theyr enemyes.

But fynally as all wytes agre,
Julius held the kyng so shorte, that
for an bytpe and concord he was
fayne to become tributary to the Ro-
maynes, and to paye to them yearly
a certayne trybute, which Gaufreyde
assermethe to be. iij. thousande poude.
And when the sayde trybute was set
in a suertie, so that the sayd Romay-
nes were with it contented, and Ju-

lius had accomplished his wyll and
pleasure in thynges to him thought
necessary: he with Androgeus depar-
ted the lande and so spedde hym to-
warde Rome, where soone after he
was agayne, by the wyll of the mooste
of the senatours made Emperoure.
And this trybute thus was graun-
ted, when Cassibellan hadde reigned
as kyng of Bytayne fully. viij. yea-
res and more.

The .xliij. Chapter.



His beginnyng of this
trybute payde by Cas-
sibellan vnto the Ro-
maynes, shuld seme by
mooste concordance of
wyters to be. clxij. yeres befoze Chri-
stes incarnaciō, or after some. l. But
for proue of the fyrst sayenge, I haue
shewed my concepte in the tabell be-
foze named, the whiche I remytte to
the correccyon of such as haue per-
fecte vnderstandynge in calculynge
of histories and tymes.

And here I make an ende of the
seconde parte of thys worke. And
this seconde parte to be accom-
pted from the laste yere of
the Byttons, to þe ende
of the. ix. yere of
Cassibellan, in-
cludeth of
yeres
iij. hundred. lxxx.
and. iij.

The ende of the se- conde parte.

The thyrde parte.

The .x. Chapter.



Thus maye we vnderstand, that by the apoyntment befoze made, Cassibellan continued styl as kyng & gouernour of this land of Brytayne which by mooste concordance of wyters had reigned befoze, or he were made trybutary vpon .ix. yeres, which sayd .ix. yeres made the yere of the world folowynge the accompte befoze expessed. v. M. a hundred & .l. And after he reigned by the agreement of al wyters as kyng of this land, fully .vij. yeres. So that in al befoze the graunt of the tribute, and after, he reigned vpon .xvi. yeres.

The .li. Chapter.



Owe then haue I shewed to you how that Julius Cesar by ayde and helpe of Androgeus erle of Kent, made this lande of Brytayne trybutary to the Romaynes, when Cassibellan had ben kyng of the sayde lande vpon .ix. yeres, which .ix. yeres I haue sette for the ende of the second parte of this worke. So that the .x. yere of Cassibellan is the fyrst yere of the thyrde parte of the sayde worke. Then as al wyters testifie, Cassibellan continued after the departynge of Julius, as kyng by the terme or space of .vij. yeres, as befoze is declared. In the tyme of the which .vij. yeres is none noble acte not dede of hym put in memozy or wytyng.

But for some woulde thynke that after Caius Julius Cesar, had thorough helpe of Androgeus erle of Kent, and eldest sonne of Lud, thus as befoze is sayde, subdued Cassibellan: that the sayd Julius wold haue restored the sayde Androgeus to the crowne of Brytayne, as his rightfull inheritaunce, and clerely to haue expelled and put out the sayd Cassibellan from all kyngly dignitie. To this answereth the olde cronicle and sayeth, that Cassibellan was not the sonne of Hely, but that he was the eldest sonne of Lud, by reason wherof he was stylle made kyng, and so as rightfull heyre continued duringe his lyfe, kyng of Brytayne. The which when he had reigned. ix. yeres or he were trybutary, & .vij. yeres after as aftermeth the sayd olde cronicle in all .xvi. yeres, he then dyed withoute issue, and was buried at Carebanke or Porke.

The .liij. Chapter.



Tenuancus or Tenuancius the yongest sonne of Lud, as aftermeth Geoffrey, was made kyng of the Brytons, in the yere of the world. v. M. a hundred & .l. This is named in the englyshe cronicle Cormace, and not kyng, as the sayd boke aftermeth. But his elder brother, which in the sayd boke is named Androgen, was after the assyrmance of the sayd englyshe cronicle made kyng. But the foresayd Geoffrey and other testifien, that for so muche as Androgeus ferred to be euer hated of the Brytons, for his treason wrought agaynst the kyng and the lande: he therfore chose to go with Caius Julius to Rome, rather then to be kyng of suche as he thought woulde neuer haue hym in the

they loue and fauoure.

Then it foloweth in the story, this Tenuacius ruled þe land wþ great dyligence and iustyce, and defended the lande well and knyghtly agayne all alpacites and straigers, & payde his trybute to the Romayns, þe Cassi bellan had graunted, and lastly dyed when he had reigned after most wyters. xliii. yeres, and was buryed at Caerlud oꝝ London, leuynge after hym a sonne, the whyche was called Kymbeline.

The. liii. Chapter.



Kymbelinus oꝝ Kymbeline the sonne of Tenuacius, was of þe Brytons made kynge, in þe yere of the worlde b. 3. a hundred & lxx.

This mā as witnesseth Gydo was brought by at Rome amonge þe Romaynes, and there made a knyght, & had of the such fauoure, that he was at lybertie to paye the trybute oꝝ not. Of hym is lytell memoꝝpe made, excepte all wyters agreeen, þe in the season that he was kynge, our sauour Christ Iesus was incarnate of that moost blessed virgyn our lady saynt Mary. Which shuld be to accord his storyes, in the xii. yere of his regne.

Of the regne of this Kymbelyn autours wyte dyuersly, so that some shewe no yeres, and some but fewe, which can not accorde with the tyme of other cronycles. But the autoure of the hy story called floure of hystories witnesseth, þe he reigned. xxb. yeres. The which sayng who lyfte to se þe table before reherled: he shall thete haue knowlege, that this sayd autoure accordeth beste with other storyes and cronycles.

And when that this Kymbeline had reigned gloriously ouer þe Bry-

tons by all the season before expressed, he dyed & was buryed at Caerlud oꝝ London, leuynge after hym two sonnes named Gyderius and Aciragus.



Whe before haue I shewed vnto you in the laster chapter þe Christ was incarnate, in the xii. yere of Kymbeline, whyche maketh the yere of the worlde, that is to saye from the fyrste creatyon of Adam to the incarnation, b. thousand a hundred and. xcii. the, which account is approued by holy Iudo, Bede, and other.

Then Christ was incarnate the yere of the worlde, as before is expressed. From Noes floode, oꝝ after two thousand. ix. hundred and. lviij. After Abraham. ii. thousand & c. lviij. After Dauid kynge of Israel, a thousand and. lxxv. From oꝝ after the trasmygracyon of the Jewes to Babylon, b. hundred. xc.

After Bute entred Britayne. xi. hundred and. xxxvi.

After Alexander the great, nere b. pon. iij. hundred and. xlv.

After the buyldyng of Rome. vii. hundred and. xxi.

And in the begynnyng of þe. xlii. yere of Octauius Augustus, then emperour of Rome.

The. liiii. Chapter.



Gyderius the fyrste sonne of Kymbeline, beganne his regne ouer the Brytons, the yere of þe worlde b. thousand. cc. and. xvi. And the yere after Christes incarnation the xviij. yere. This man was welthy & trusted much in his strength. And for

he

Note, þe Britayne, nowe called englande was inhabited. xi. c. and. xxxvi. yeres before the incarnation of Christ. And þe London was buylded before Rome. liii. c. &. vii. yeres.

In the tyme of Gydo, the whyche was of the story of the cronycle, in the tyme of the

he thought the Romayns hadde the
fozenamed trybute wth wronger: he
therfore of a knyghtlye courage de-
nyed to the Romayns the sayde try-
bute. Wherefore Claudius, whiche
was vncle vnto Calus Caligula the
fourth emperour of Rome: cam into
Bytayne with a great armie of Ro-
mayns, & as witnesseth Policronica
conquered & wanne agayne the sayde
trybute withoute greete fyght. And
that done, he also subdued the yles
of Brychades oꝝ Dykeys, which stād
beyond Scotland within the great
Oceane, and after tourned agayne
to Rome the .vi. moneth after that he
came thens.

The cronycle of Englande, and al-
so Gausfryde saye, that in the hoste of
the Romaynes was a captayne na-
med Hamo oꝝ Haino, the whiche en-
tendynge hurte and destruccion of þe
Byttons, chaunged his shelde oꝝ ar-
mure, and byd vpo hym the armure
of a Bytayne. And by that meane as
a Byton myslad, he entred into the
thickest of the hoste, and lastely vn-
to the place where as kynge Gupde-
rius fought, & shortly after slewe the
kynge. But Arutragus seynge thys
sodayne myschypse, to the ende þe
Byttons shulde not geue backe: he
hastely caused hym selfe to be armed
wth the cognysaunce of the kynge.
And so for kynge contynued the fyght
wth such manhode, that the Romay-
nes were put to flyght.

Thus by accorde of wyters Gup-
derius was slayne of the fozenamed
Hamo, when he hadde reigned ouer
the Byttons by the concordance of
other hystories. .xxviij. yeres, leuyng
after hym none heyre of his body to
gubde the lande after his death.

¶ The .lv. Chapter.



Arutragus the pōgeſt
ſonne of Armbelyne,
and brother to Gupde-
rius before ſlayne, was
ordēned king of By-
tons, in the yere of
our lord. .ciiiij. This in the englyſhe
boke is named Armager, the whych
as there is ſhewed, wel and knyghtly
mainteyned the warre agayne the
Romayns, and after ſlewe the foze-
named Hamo nere vnto an haven oꝝ
porte of the ſee. And hym ſo ſlayne,
thetwe gobet meale into þe ſame ſee.
And for thys ſkyl, was this haven
longe tyme after called Hamons ha-
uen, whiche at thys daye is called
Southampton.

Then it ſoloweth in the .viij. chap-
ter of the .iiii. boke of Policronicon,
that Claudius after dyuers happes
of batayll, toke Arutragus to hys
grace, & brought his doughter Gen-
niſſa by name from Rome, and ma-
ried her vnto Arutragus. And for he
wolde make the place of þe maryage
more ſolemne, he therfore called the
towne of mariage Claudioceſtria af-
ter his name, the whiche before was
called in byetſhe tunge Caerleon, &
after Glouernia after a duke of De-
mecia that hyght Glozio, but now
this town is named Glouceſter.

All other wyſe telleth the englyſhe
cronycle, & ſapth that Armager diſco-
ueryed Claudius, and compelled hym
to geue his doughter Geniſſa oꝝ Ge-
nen to the ſayde Armager to wyfe,
with condicpon that the Romaynes
shulde neuer after that daye clayme
any trybute of Bytayne, excepte all
onely feaſte, whiche ſayenge appe-
reth doubtefull for dyuerſe cauſes.
Wherof one is, þe ſayd Armager
shoulde not conſtrayne Claudius to
geue hys doughter to hym, for ſo
much

much as the sayd Armager had neuer seen the sayde Genen before tyme, nor knewe not of her couerfaction. Then meruayle it wer, þ he shuld force her father to geue him a wyfe, that he had cast no loue vnto before tyme. One other reason is, þ the sayd crompte testifeth, þ after he had maryed the sayd Gennen, he was at London crowned kyng of England. For I wold thynke yf he had ouercomen Claudius, as there is surmysed, he would fyrst haue crowned hym selfe kyng, & then haue married his daughter. But by the same reason it certifeth moze stronger the foriner sayeng of Policronica. For by al lykelyhode Claudius wold not suffer hym to be crowned kyng, tyll he had full persourmed his promyse in maryage of his daughter.

And albeit þ myne autoure Gausfryde varyeth not much from the englyshe cronicle: I thynke in þ doyng he toke example of Homerus þ wrote the dedes and actes of the Grekes, þ which shewed and put in memozy al the noble actes by the done, & specialy in the recuyl of boke made by him of the lyege of Trope. But the other dedes concernyng theyr dyshonoure he hpd it as much as he myghte. And in lyke maner do many other wyters, which I passe ouer. And so Gausfryde, for þ he was a Bryton, he shewed the beste for Brytons.

Then it foloweth, after the solemnyfacion of this maryage, whiche was with al honoure synghed: Claudius sent certayne legions of his knyghtes into Ireland, to rule þ countre, & retourned hymselfe to Rome.

The lb. Chapter.

IT was not lōge after the departing of Claudius: but þ Arutragus rode aboute hys

realme, and with great diligence repayred cities & towne before decayed & broken with the strength of the Romaynes, & entreated his subiectes with such iustyce and good order that they loued and dread hym moze then any of his progenitours. This in tracte of tyme made hym welthy. And by meane of this welthyng ensued pryde, so þ hym thought greate shame to be vnder the rule of gubyrnge of þ Romayns, wherfore lastly he denyed the tribute before granted. Wherof wht knowlege came vnto the senate of Rome: in al hast was sent a duke of Rome called Vespasian, with a certayne of legions to subdue Arutragus.

Ye shall vnderstand, that a legion of knyghtes, is. vi. thousande. vi. hundred and. lxi.

3 legions of knyghtes is vi. thousand. vi. hundred. and. lxi.

When Vespasian was landed in Brytayne, as testifeth Polycronica, he sped him so, þ in shorte whyle he subdued Arutragus to þ empyre, and caused him to graunt paymente of the foresayd tribute. Which was done, as sayth Gausfryde, by entreatie of the quene Gennilla, and of no constrainnt nor coaction.

When Vespasian had thus recovered the tribute, he then also made subiecte to the empyre, an yle in the see lyenge vpon the southsyde of Brytayne, now called þ yle of Weyght, and after retourned to Rome.

When Arutragus was thus secondely brought vnder the yoke of þ Romaynes: he became moze myldetowarde them, so that whyle he lyued after he payed his tribute with lesse grudge, and continued hym in theyr fauours, in suche wyse that he was of theym well beloued. And so lastly dyed when he hadde ruled the Brytons well and nobly by the teryne

of .xxx. yeres, & was buryed at Caer-
gloſſ, Caerleoff, Claudioceſtria, oꝝ
Glouceter, leuyng after him a ſonne
named Marius.

The .lviij. Chapter.

Marius ſonne of Aruira-
gus was ordeyned king
of Brytons, in the peare
of our Lord .lxxiij. This
in the cronycle of Eng-
lande is named Weſtmer. Whiche
Marius, as wytnelleth Gauſtryde,
was an excellent wyſe man, and guy-
ded his Brytons moſte honourably
and in great proſperyte and welthe.
In the tyme of the regne of this
Marius a duke oꝝ kynge of a natiō
called Pyctes, whiche as wytnelleth
Virgilius, are deſcended of a people
called of olde tymes Scythes. They
also are named Gothis oꝝ Hunys.
This foꝛſayd leder of Pyctes is na-
med of Gauſtryde Londricus, the
whiche landed with a great nauy, in
the prouynce of Albania nowe cal-
led Scotlande, & it beganne to waſt
wyth yron & wyth fyre. Wherof whē
Marius was warned, he in all haſte
aſſembled his knyghtes, and made
toward his enemyes, and gaue vnto
them ſtronge batayll. In the whiche
Londricus, oꝝ after ſome Rodic⁹ was
ſlayne, and a great parte of his peo-
ple were ſlayne. In remembraunce
of whiche vyctorye, kynge Marius
lette arere a great ſtone, and in this
he commaunded to be grauen Ma-
rii victoria, whiche is to meane the
victorye of Marius.

Wylliam of Malmeſbury ſayeth
that this ſtone was arered in mynde
of Marius the conſull of Rome.

The englyſhe cronycle ſayth, that
this batayll was foughtē in a place,
the whiche nowe is called Stanſ-
moꝛe. But where ſo this ſtone is ſet,

the countre there aboute was longe
after called Weſtmaria, and nowe
Weſtmerlande.

Then it ſoloweth in the ſtory, that
when the reſidue of the people of Lo-
dricus, whiche were fledde from the
felde, vnderſtoode that they had and
captayne was ſlayne: they made hu-
ble request vnto ſonne, & he woulde
accepte the vnto his grace, and that
he woulde graunt to them ſome land
and couēte to dwell in. Whiche graū-
ted vnto the a place in the ſette ende
of Scotlande, whiche is named of
myne antoure Catheneſia, wherethe
ſayd Scortis oꝝ Pyctes fyrſte inha-
bited them. And foꝛ ſo muche as the
Brytons dyſdained to geue vnto
them theyꝝ daughters in maryage:
therfoꝛe they acquēnted them wyth
the Iſyſhe men, and married theyꝝ
daughters, and grew in proces into
a great people. And foꝛ this allyaunce
attwene the Iſyſhe and them: theyꝝ
countre, as wytnelleth Policronicon
the .xxxviij. chapter of his fyrſte boke,
was called Irelande, and after Pic-
taua, and laſtely Scotlande.

And when Marius had thus ſub-
dued his enemyes, he attended and
ſette his mynd to the common weale
of this lande and ſubiectes, and con-
tynued ſonne reſidue of his lyfe in great
tranquillite and reſte. And ſo laſtely
payde his natural tribute, & was bu-
ryed at Caerleyl, leuyng after him a
ſonne named Collus oꝝ Copll, whē
he had reigned after moſte wynters
lii. yeres.

The .lviii. Chapter.

Copllus the ſonne of Ma-
rius was after the deth of
his father made kynge of
Brytons, in ſonne peare of oure
Lordes incarnaciō a hūdyed & .xxvi.

This

The map of
the Pyctes.

This was fro his infancy nourished and brought vpp amonge the Romaynes in Italia o: Rome, by reaso wherof he was to the loupng & kynd and they vnto hym. And he for so much as he knewe the power of the Romayns, greate in auoydynge of warre & other daunger, payde vnto the the foresayd tribute, duryng hys lyfe. This Collus also, as wytnes- seth Gauspde, was a liberal man of gyftes, by reaso wherof he obteyned great loue of his nobles, & also of his comons. And as some autours haue This Ceyll made the towne of Colchester whych at this daye is a fayre town in the shyre of Essex. But other ascribte it to Coell o: Coill, that was kyng nexte after Alepeodotus.

But when this Collus had reyg- ned in soueraygne peace by 8 terme of .liiij. yeares, he dyed and was bu- ried at Caerbyrke o: Yorke, & lefte after hym a sonne, the whiche was named Lucius o: Lucy.

The lix. Chapter.

Lucius o: Lucy 8 sonne of Collus, was made kyng of Brytons in the yeare of oure Lorde a hundred and .lxx. The whiche in all actes & dedes of good- nes folowed his foresathers, in such wyse that he of all men was beloued & dread. Of this is lytel o: none acte notable put in memoire excepte that all wyters agree, that this Lucius sent to Eleutherius then byshop of Rome certayne ppyties o: letters, prayeng hym that he & his Brytons myght be receyued to the faythe of Christes church. Wherof Eleuthe- rius beyng very iopous and glabbe sente into Brytayne two noble cler- kes named Faganus & Duntanus: o: after some, Fugacius & Dinita-

nus. These two good and vertuous clerkes were honourably receyued of Lucius, the which by theyr good doctryne and vertuous examples ge- uyng, conuerted the kyng and a great parte of 8 Brytons.

But for so much as antours & wy- ters wyte dyuersly of 8 tyme of this receyvinge of the faythe by Lucius, so that the one varyeth greatly from the other: therfore I haue shewed in the forenamed table, that it shall vn- der correccio appeare, that the faythe was receyued by Lucius, as assey- meth Petrus Dictauiens. the .viii. yeare of 8 reygne of the said Lucius And 8 pere after Christes incarnacio a hundred & .lxxviii. The which Lu- cy after the faythe thus by him recey- ued, by the aduyce of the foresayde clerkes, & with the instruccions sent to them by the foresayd Eleutherius: instituted and ordeyned, that all o: 8 more partye of Archelampnys and slampnys, which is to meane arche- byshoppes and byshoppes of the pa- gan lawe, which at that day were in nomber, as wytnesleth Gauspde & other .iiij. of the archelampnys, and xxviii. of the slampnys, were made and ordeyned archebyshoppes and byshoppes of the church of Christe, as after foloweth.

Archelampnys byshop-
pes constytuted.

The lx. Chapter.



He fyrste of the arche- slampnys see, rule, o: iuryspccion, was as wytnesleth Gauspde and Polycronica, at London, the seconde at Yorke, and the thyrde at Caerueste o: Kacer- glone o: Glouceter. To the thye d iii arche

The faythe of
Christe, was
receyued in
England, the
C. lxxviii.
yeare after
Christes in-
carnacion.

The arche-
byshoppes in
Englande.

archbyschoppes were subiect the foze sayd. xxviij. flampnys o: byschoppes. To the archebyschoppes see of London, was subiecte Cornewayl and al myddel England vnto Humber. To the archbyschoppes see of Poze was subiecte all Northumberlande, from the bowe of Humber, with all Scotlande. And to the thyrde archebyschoppes see, whiche was at Gloucestre, was subiecte all Wales. In whiche prouynce of Wales were. viij. byschoppes, where as now ben but. iij. And at that daye Seuarin departed Bytayne and Cambria o: Wales. But in the tyme of þe Saxons, after they had the rule of the land of Bytayne as testifeth Wylhelmus de Pontific albeit that saynt Gregoipe hadde graunted vnto London priuilege of that archbyschoppes see: neuerthelesse saynt Austyn, the which with other was sent into Englande by the foze sayde Gregoipe, touned the archebyschoppes see of London into Caunterbury, after the death of saynt Gregoipe, by meanes of prayer of Kyng Egbert o: Ethelbert, a other cytezens a burgeis of Caunterbury, where it hath contynued to this day, except that for the tyme of Offa kyng of Mercia o: Mercherpe, for displeasure that he had to the cytezens of Caunterbury bynammie and toke from them that dygnitie, a wo: shopped Adulphe byshop of Lychel felde wth the pall of Caunterbury by the assent of Adrian the fyrste of that name then bishop of Rome. Neuertheles in the tyme of Kenulphus which not longe after was kyng of the sayde Mercia o: Mercherpe, it was agayn restored to Caunterbury.

The worship of þe see of Poze hath endured there alwaye and yet doeth, though Scotland be withdrawn fro

his subieccion. The archbyschoppes see of Caerghlofi o: Gloucestre, was touned fro this to Denenia, which is in the west syde of Demetia vpon the Irlshe see, which now is called saynt Dauids lande. In this prouynce from the dayes of saynte Dauid, vnto the dayes of Sampson byshop, sat. xxiij. byschoppes. But in the sayde Sampsons dayes then archebyschop, fyl such mortalitie thowoe Wales of the pelowe euill called the Jaundyes, that muche people therof dyed. Wherfoze the sayde Sampson toke wth him the pall, a sayled into Armozica o: Irtell Bytayne, and was there byshoppe of Dolence o: Dolences. And fro that tyme vnto the fyrste Henrys tyme kyng of Englande, hadde litten at Denenia o: saynte Dauids. xxi. byschoppes, and all wthout pall. But whether it were for lacke of conynge, o: els for pouerty, it is not ascerteyned. Neuerthelesse alwaye fro the tyme of the sayde Sampson vnto the foze sayde Henry the fyrste tyme, all the byschoppes of Wales were sacred of the byshoppe of Denenia o: saynt Dauids. And þe archbyschop of Denenia was at all tymes sacred of þe byschoppes of Wales, as of his suffragans, and made no profession nor obieccion to any o: ther church. But after these dayes other byschoppes that sat there were compelled to be sacred at Caunterbury. In token of whiche subieccion Boniface archebyschoppe of Caunterbury, and legate of the crosse sang in euery cathedrall church of Wales a solempne masse, whiche was done by the sayde Boniface, in the tyme of Henry the seconde beyng kyng of Englande.

But now ye shal vnderstande there bene

bene but two pꝛimates oꝝ archebꝛ-
shoppes in al England and Wales.
That one is at Caunterburꝛe, and
that other is at Poꝛke. To the pꝛi-
mate of Caunterburꝛe bene subiecte
xiii. byshoppes in England, and.iiii.
in Wales. And þe pꝛimate of Poꝛke
hath but two suffragans in Englaḁ
which be the byshoppes of Caerleꝝl
and Durham.

And who so wyl be further in-
structe of the oꝛder and chaunges of
byshoppes see of Englande, let hym
read ouer the.lij.lii.lij. and.lij.
chapters of the fyrste booke of Do-
lyctonꝛcon, oꝝ a parte of holy Bedes
woꝛke, which he cōpyled of the same
mater, called hystoꝛia Anglicana: &
there he shall haue euery thyng sette
out clerely and truely.

And foꝛ to contynue my pꝛocesse
of Lucius as wꝛtneſſeth myne au-
toure Gaufꝛyde, when he hadde, as
befoꝛe is sayde stablyſſed and orde-
red the foꝛesayde archeshampys and
shampys, and that they were also con-
fermed of the byshoppe of Rome: he
then endowed them wꝛth ſuche lan-
des and poſſeſſyons, as befoꝛe tyme
were occupped oꝝ geuen to the mayn
teꝛnyng and vpholdyng of the pa-
gan rytes & laue vſed befoꝛe tyme.
And the temples of ydols thozough
hys lande, he cauſed to be dedycate
to Ieſu Chꝛiſte and his ſayntes, and
honoured them wꝛth myche greate
and large gyftes. And when he had
done, after mooste accoꝛde of wy-
ters by the terme of. xli. yeaꝛes: he
dyed and was buryed in the cytie of
Claudioceſtre oꝝ Glouceſter withouſt
heꝛe of hys bodye, the whiche after
grewe to greate damage of the By-
tons, as after ſhalbe ſhewed.

Of this Lucius it is ſhewed in a
table hangyng vpon the wal of the

north ſyde of the yle, in the backe of
the quere of ſaynte Baulea churche
in London, that the ſayde Lucius
reꝛigned ouer the Bytons lxvii. ye-
res. And ouer that the autour of cro-
nica cronicarum teſtifyeth, that af-
ter Lucius had receyued the ſaythe,
he aſſembled a great hooste of By-
tons and ſayled ouer into Gallia oꝝ
fraunce, and thens into other coun-
trees paſſyng by Betia and the cytie
called Auguſta, & there ſubdued ma-
ny of the enemyes of Chꝛiſtes ſayth,
where after many vertuouſe dedes
he reſted in good peace. And hys ſu-
ſter called Emerica, as ſayth þe ſayde
autour, was alſo martyꝛed foꝛ Chꝛi-
ſtes ſake. But of this ſayenge and
other the doubt is aſſoyled in the
foꝛesayde table in the begynnyng of
this woꝛke, wher it ſhall apere, that
he reꝛigned but twelue yeaꝛes, as a-
boue is ſhewed.

And foꝛ ſo muche as in this Lu-
cius enbeth foꝛ a tyme þe lyne of By-
tons, and the lande after thys dave
was ruled ſome dele by the Romay-
nes: therfoꝛe I wyl here ende þe thyrde
parte of this woꝛke. And this thyrde
parte to be accounted from the ende
of the.ii. yeaꝛe of Caſſibellan, to the
laſte yeaꝛe of Lucius, includeth of
yeaꝛes two hundred and. xli.

Thuth it is, as aſſymed al wꝛi-
ters, that after the deaith of þe
foꝛenamed Lucius, foꝛ ſo
much as of hys body remayned none
heꝛe: the Bytons among the ſelfes
ſpꝛall at great dyſtaunce & warre. The
which warre and trouble endured to
the great dyſtourbaunce of the land.
But howe longe, the certayne is not
ſet oute by any wyter that I haue
ſeen, excepte the Englyſhe cronycle
ſayeth that it endured. i. yeaꝛes. The
whych

whych sayeng vnder correccion can not stande with the concordance of other wyrters, as it is moze playnly declared in the foresayd table. Wher also it shall appeare, that the sayde disorde amonge the Britons continued but onely .xv. yeares.

After whiche teryne of .xv. yeares expyred, as after moze clerely shalbe shewed: Seuerus beyng then Emperour of Rome, beganne his dominion ouer this land of Brytayne. So that ye shall nowe vnderstande that the laste yeare of this disorde was the yeare of our Lorde two hundred & viij. By reason whereof it foloweth, that the sayd .xv. yeares toynd vnto the foresayde thyrde parte: that the thyrde part cōteyneth and includeth of yeares ii. hundred and .lvi.

The ende of the
thyrde parte.

The fourth parte.

The .lxi. Chapter.



Seuerus a Romanynat this day emperour of Rome, beganne to rule this land of Brytayne, in the yeare of our lordes incarnation ii. hundred and .viij. The whiche as wyrtneſſeth Caſtore, was befoze tyme sent from the senate of Rome wth two legions of knyghtes into Brytayne, to appease the warre & stryfe amonge them, & also for to withſtand the Pictes & other enemyes, whiche

dayly inuaded the land. For dyuers wyrters agree, that this Seuerus was made Emperoure, the yeare of Chyſtes incarnation .C. and .xv. & ruled the sayd empyre after the most wyrters .xvi. yeares. By whych rule it shuld appere that he shuld be take for gouernour of this realme of Brytayne, the .xij. yeare of his empyre.

It is sayde of this man, that after he had subdued the Parthis and the Arabis, he was named Particus, & was sent, as befoze is sayd, of the senate of Rome into Brytayne, where he caused to be made at the coste of the commonthe, a wall of turues & greete stakes, of the lengthe as wyrtneſſeth Policronica of a hundred and .xxii. myles, as in the .xviii. chapter of his iiii. boke appeareth. This wall after the expolition of the sayde Policronica, beganne at the ryuer of Tyne, and endured to the Scottyshe see, or fro the ende of the lordship of Deira vnto the sayd Scottyshe see, or after some wyrters from Durham to the see befozesayde.

Then it foloweth, the Pictes with theyr leder Fulgenius, issued fro Albany or Scotlande into the lande of Brytayne, and destroyed muche of the countre beyonde Durha. Wherfore this Seuerus with an hoste of Britons and of Romanes, mette wth the sayd fulgenius, in a place nere vnto York, where after soze fyght the sayd Seuerus was slayne, when he had ruled this lande after moſte concordance of wyrters by the teryne of .xv. yeares, and was after buryed at York, leuynge behynde hym two sonnes, that one named Geta, & that other Bassianus.

The .lxij. Chapter.

Bassianus

Bassianus þ sonne of Seuerus and of þ mothers syde a Bypton, beganne to rule this lande of Bytayne in the pere of Christiſtes incarnaciō. CC. and xii. Of this mā ſpeaketh nothyng the Engliſhe cronycle. But trueth it is, as wytnelleth Gauſeyde and other, that after the death of Seuerus, ſtryfe aroſe betwene the Byptons & the Romaynes, then beyng within the lande of Bytayne. For the commons helde for theyr kyng Baſſian⁹, for ſo much as he was boꝛne of a Bypton womā. And vpon that other partie in lyke maner þ Romayns allowed Geta for theyr kyng, becauſe he was deſcended of a Romayne. And as farther aſſymeth the fozenamed Gauſeyde, for this diſcenciō a batayll was had betwene the ſayde two byethren, in the which Geta was ſlayn & Baſſianus remayned for kyng of all the lande.

But fro this ſayeng varyeth greatly Eutropius, and other that wyte of the cronycles of Rome. For by the it is wytnelleſed, that Geta was ſlayn at a cytie named Edella, when he fought agayne the Parthiens, and Baſſianus ſucceeded his father in the dignyte of emperoure, which as in þ ſayde cronycle of Rome is teſtified, was alſo called Marcus Aurelius Antoninus and Caracalla, a man of righ euill condycion, and vnrreaſonable of lechery, ſo that he lay by his ſtepdame named Iuliana and wedded her, and dyd other many cruell dedes, and laſtely he was ſlayne at þ fozenamed cytie of Edella, when he had ben emperour vpon. vij. yeaꝛes.

In the tyme that Baſſianus was thus kyng of Bytayne, one named Carallius a Bypton of lowe byrthe, but valyant and hardy in marcyall

dedes: purchaced of þ ſenat of Rome the keepnge of þ coſtes of Bytayne and to withſtāde the malice of ſtraingers, as Pictes & other. By meane of this, Carallius dyue vnto hym many knyghtes, and ſpecially of the Byptons, promyſynge to them, that if they woulde make hym kyng he woulde clerely deliuer them from all ſcriptude of the Romaynes. Where thorough þ Byptons (as wyneſſeth Gauſeyde) rebelled agayne Baſſianus, and with theyr duke and leder Carallius, accreted agayn him deadly warre. By meane wherof Baſſianus was ſlayne, when he hadde ruled this land by moſte concoꝛdaunce vi. yeaꝛes.

The lxxij. Chapter.

Carallius a Bytyn of vnknoꝛnen byrthe was of the Byptons made ruler, in þ yeaꝛe of oure Loꝛde. ii. hundred and xliij. the which as befoꝛe is touched was by the ſenate of Rome deputed for a ſubſtytute oꝛ a ruler vnder the Romaynes, as it is ſhewed in theyr cronycles, in the abſence, oꝛ whyle Baſſianus then emperour of Rome and kyng of Bytayne, was occupied aboute the nedes of the empyꝛe. This Carallius for that he was not of power to withſtāde the Pictes, oꝛ for the fauoure that he bare toward the for aydynge him agayne the Romayns: he gaue to the the countre of Albania, þ now is called Scotland.

But ye ſhall vnderſtāde, that here is not ment all Scotlande. For as wytnelleth Polycronica, thys parte that was geuen thus to the Pictes, was the ſouth parte of Albania, and beganne at Twede, and endured to the Scottiſhe ſee. Of the kynde of thoſe Pictes is ſomwhat ſhewed befoꝛe

foze in þe storie of Marius, but moze after Chalbe Metwed of them in couenient place, bothe of theyr offsprynge and maners.

Then it foloweth in the story, whē the Romaynes had knowlege of the death of Bassianus, anon they sent a Duke frō Rome named Alectus with iii. legyons of knyghtes, for to seeke Carassius, and to subdue the Byttons to the empyre. To the whyche Alectus fortune was so fauourable, that he chased Carassius, and lastely slewe hym, when he hadde ruled the Byttons, by most accorde of wyters viii. yeares.

But Iacobus Philippus autour of a boke named Supplementū cronicarum sayth, that in the tyme that Martinianus oꝝ Maximian, surnamed Hercules, & Diocletyan Dalmatheus were emperours of Rome: they harde that this Carassius had taken vpon him to were the purple that onelye was reserued to emperours, & also that he ruled the realme of Bytayne as to his synghuler vse, and furthermoze were credyblly enfourmed, þe Histories another substatute had oꝝ accuyped the castlandes wpyth cruell battayll, and other prynces, the great countre of Affrica and many other, also by the instygacion and leuyng of one named Achilleus hadde subdued the countre of Grece. For which sayd nouellys and tydynges, these two Emperours, to the ende to resourme all the sayd rebellions, chose vnto them two noble men, of the whych that one was named Galerius, and that other Constantius, as cesars oꝝ folowes to rule the empyre. And þe done, the sayd two cesars were sent with great powers, þe one into Affrica, & that other into Egypte. This fozenamed Maximian

an came with great power of people into Bytayne, and ouercaine þe sayd Carassius, moze by gyle then by strength, when the sayde Carassius had ruled the Byttons, as sayeth the fozenamed autour Iacobus Philippus, by the terme of .x. yeares.

In the whyche sayeng appeareth errour, for dyuersitie of tyme & yerres. For after moste accorde of wyters, and also by the assymacion of the said Iacobus Philippus, þe sayd emperours Dioclesian and Maximian, ruled the empyre of Rome about the yeare of Christes incarnation two hundred and .xx. And this Carassius was ruler in Bytayne lōg befoze, as in the tyme of Bassianus emperoure of Rome, that reigned about the yeare of our lord two hundred and .xiiij. as testifyeth Polidronicon and other.

Also a boke in freche called la Merre de hystories, whiche maye be englyshed þe Mether of hystories, sayth that this Carassius was fyrst a tresourer oꝝ such a hygh offycer amōge the Romayns. By reason wherof he sought great abundaunce of ryches and fyl by reason therof in fauoure of the senatours of Rome, so that synally he was made senatour, and became a man of greates auctorite, in so much that Bassianus then emperoure made hym protectour of the cytie and countre of Alexandrie. But then he was supplied with suche pryde, that he exercysed tyranny and other vnlesfull meanes, in so excedyng maner, that the countre waxed wery of hym, & conspyred his death. Wherfoze after punysshment done vpon some of his enemyes, he fleyng the sequell and reuengemente of the same: lefte that countre and retourned vnto Rome, where after he had a season

a season rested, he was by the senate of Rome assigned for his sternesse vnto the rule of Bytayne, with the ayde of .iij. legions of knyghtes. And so beyng garnished with all abillmentes of warre, entred this yle of Bytayne, and with greate trauayle subdued them to the empyre, and so contynued the lyues tyme of the emperour Bassianus.

But so sone as he was ascerteyned that þe Emperoure was slayne at E-dessa, as befoze in the stoye of Bassianus is shewed, thynkynge that among the Romaynes shulde growe strepe & dissencion for the eleccio of a new Emperour, by reason of whiche strife he myght þe rather lyue so farre fro the without any correccion: considered with the Scottes and certayne other of the Byttons, and slew many of the Romaynes, suche of the as he thought wolde not consente to his treason, and by that meane finally was made kyng of Bytayne. And so contynued, as assermeth the sayde autoure to accompte from his first haupng rule vnder the Romaynes, vnto þe tyme that he was slayne of Allectus. viij. yeaeres, not withoute exercysynge of his olde accustomed tyrannyes and other vnlytynge condicions.

The .lxiij. Chapter.



Allectus a duke or consell of Rome, sent as befoze is sayd from the senate, began to rule the Byttons, in the yeaere of our lord. cc. and. xxi. This in the englishe cronicle is named Allectus. Which when he had restored the lande to the subiection of Rome, he then persued certain of þe Byttons þe had fauoured Caracallus, agayn the Romaynes. And in þe doyng vnto

exercysed many tyrannyes and exactions, by reason whereof he fell in greate grudge of the Byttons. Wherfore they entending to oppresse and subdue the power of the Romaynes purchased and crypted a noble man of the Byttons called Asclepiodotus and duke of Cornuayle. The which gathered a great hoste of the Byttons and made warre vpon the Romaynes, and chased them fro countre to countre, and from towne to towne, & lastly Allectus with his Romaynes dreyue him to London, and ther kept him for his mooste suertie. Wherof beyng warned Asclepiodotus: he wth his byttons came nere vnto the sayd cytie, where by meanes of prouocation on eyther partie vnto, lastly the Romaynes yllured oute of the cytie & gaue batayll to the Byttons. In the which fyght many fell on eyther partie, but þe moze on the partie of þe Romaynes, among the which was also slayne Allectus. Wherfore a captayn of the Romaynes called Liuius Gallus, aduertysynge this myschiefe, and the great dainger that the Romaynes were in: dreyue backe into the cytie with the Romaynes that were left on lyue, & defended it with their powers.

Thus then appereth, that Allectus was slayne of þe Byttons, which was by mooste accorde of wyters when he had ruled this lande vnder the Romaynes by the terme of. vi. yeaeres.

The .lxi. Chapter.



Asclepiodotus duke of Cornuayle, as sayeth Gauspde (but after the sayenge of Eutropius & Beda, he was president of the Pryetore of Rome) began his dominion ouer the Byttons, in the yeaere of our lord. cc. and. xxii. The which as befoze is sayde, with his Byttons

Byttons gyfte the cytie of London with a stronge fege, and kepte the fozenapde Liwins Gallus and his Romayns in strepte hold, and finallye, as affermeth myne autoure Saukyde, with knyghtlye foze and violence entred the sayd cytie, & slew the fozenamed Linus Gallus nere vnto a broke there at, that daye rennyng, and hym threwe into the sayd broke. By reason wherof, long after it was called Gallus o; Wallus broke. And at this daye þe strete wher sometyne ranne the sayde broke, is now called Walbroke. And after he had thus benquyshed the Romayns he helde this lande a certayn of tyme in peaslye wyse, and ruled the Byttons with good iustyce, in rewardyng and exaltinge the good men, and punysshinge of the euill.

The strete of Walbroke in London, why it is so named.

In this whyle by spyng of dyfclauderous & druplyshe perlonas, a grudge was arced attwene the kyng, and a duke of his land called Coill o; Coillus, the whyche was duke o; erle of Kaercolim o; Colchester, whereof the cause is not appaunt. But how it was, great people were assembled on both parties, and finallye mette in the feld, where was foughte a great and stronge batayl. In the whyche Alepiodotus was slayne, when he had reigned to the concordance of other histories, and after the affermaunce of the olde cronycle by the space of .xxx. yeares.

The .lxxi. Chapter.

Coelus erle of Colchester began his dominio ouer the Byttons, in þe yeare of the incarnacio of Christ. CC. and .lxxi. Thys in the englyshe boke is called Coill, the which gupded the lande to

the pleasure of the Byttons a certayne tyme. But as witnesseth Saukyde, when the senate of Rome had vnderstandyng of the death of Alepiodotus, they were ioyous of the death of him, for so muche as he had euer ben an enemy to þe empyre. But for so much as at þe dayes was great dissencion amonge the selves, as witnesseth the cronycle of Rome: they could not conueniently send any armye of knyghtes for to warre vpon this Coelus. Wherfore he cotynued the longer in reste and good peace. After the cronycle registered wythin the monastery of saynte Alboon, the sayd holy marty; suffered his deathe in the yeare of our Lord. ii. hundred and .lxxi. which shuld be the .xxiii. yeare of this present kyng. But thys dyscordeth from such wyrters, as affermen the holy man to be martyred in the .x. persecucion vnder Dioclesian and Maximian emperours.

Afterthelesse at length was sent from þe senate a noble wyse man called Constancius, the which as affermeth the fozenamed autoure, had befoze tyme subdued to the empyre a great part of the countre of Spayne. But that sayenge dysagreeth to the wyrtynge of Eutropius. For the countre of Spayne was not subdued by him tyl after that he was emperour.

Then it foloweth, whan this Constancius was arriued in Bytayne with his army, anone Coelus assembled his Byttons. But for he dyed the strength and same of thys Constancius, he sent to him an embassad, assymyng vnto hym condicions of peace, wyth graunt of paymentes of the tribute, which befoze was denyed o; els as meaneth Polycronica. with in a moneth after the landyng of this Constancius, Coelus was dead.

Wher-

wherefore the Byttons to haue the moze peace, wyllyd this knyghte to take to wyfe Heleyn the daughter of Coelus, with the possession of the lande of Bytayne, whiche by hym was graunted. Then as befoze is saide, Coelus dyed, when he had ruled the Byttons after most accorde of wyrters. xxvii. yeres.

The lxxvii. Chapter.

Constantius a senatoure of Rome, as sayth Polycronica, beganne to rule the Byttons in the yere of our lord two hundred lxxx. & ix. This as befoze is shewed marped Heleyn & daughter of Coelus last kynge of Bytayne. But yshal vnderstande, & this Constantius was fyrste marped vnto Theodoza the stepdaughter of Hercules Maximianus, & had by her xij. sonnes. So & this Heleyn was his seconde wyfe, whiche was sayest of al maydens, and therewith lerned, and sufficiently litted. She is also noted of many wyrters to be a captiue or a prysoner to the Romaynes.

Of this Constantius lyttel memoie is lefte in the brytyshe or englyshe cronycles, excepte that he receyued of the forsayde Heleyn a sonne named Constantinus, the whiche after for his knyghtly & marcyall dedes, was called Constantyne the greate.

But for the noble dedes of so byctorous a duke shuld not be hydde as was this Constantius: therfore I shall now folowe the story of Rome, whych sayth, that for so muche as in the tyme of Dioclesianus and Maximianus beyng Emperours, many countres rebellyd agayne the empyre: therfore the sayde Emperours admytted this Constantius, and one Galerius as cesars, which was a di-

gynpte next of authorite to the Emperours. And so & empyre was at those dayes guyded by two Emperours, & by two cesars. This Constantius, as wytnessyth Polycronica made subiecte to the empyre the Almaynes, & fletwe of theym in one daye. lx. thousande. And after other many byctorous dedes, when the sayde. ii. Emperours had of theyr free wylls resigned and gyuen ouer all imperial dygnyte: thys sayde Constantius with his sozenamed felowe Galerius, were made Emperours, & is to wytte Galerius was Emperour of all Illyricum, which now is named Grecia or Grece with all the east lades, and Constantius hadde to hym all & west landes. But he helde hym contente with Gallia or Fraunce, & Spayne with Britayn, & graunted Italia vnto Galerius afoze said. Then he subdued the countree of Spayne, as befoze is touched in the story of Coelus, and a parte of Gallia, and after solourned and abode in this lande of Bytayne in guydng & rulyng the same with greate sobernesse, and ordeyned his sonne gotten vpon Heleyn to rule Gallia and Spayne.

But for to make this story moze apperant & open to & readers, and also to & herres: it is here to be noted, that Dioclesianus or Dioclesian beganne his empyre ouer the Romaynes after mooste wyrters, in the yere of oure lord two hundred. lxxvii. and he was Emperour. xx. yeres. And this Constantius was sent into Bytayne, from the senate as befoze is sayde in the seconde yere of the sayde Dioclesian, or the yere of oure lord two hundred. lxxviii.

Whiche Constantius after he had in due maner spedde the nedes of the empyre, as in subduynge this land

of Bytayne, as befoze is sayd: he retourned again to Rome, wher he was shortly after made Cesar, & so cōynued his lfe, as befoze is touchyd.

And in þe tyme of his being thus cesar and ruler of Bytayne vnder þe Emperour, the blessyd and holy prophetomartyr of Bytayne saint Alboon at Nerolan was martyred, in the .i. persecucion of the chyrche, as wytnessyth Polycronicon. Which persecucion began, as testifyth Eusebius & Beda, the .xliij. yere of the forenamed Emperours Dioclesia & Maximian, and endured .i. yeres, that is to say in þe tyme vnder Dioclesian, and in the weste vnder Maximian. The whyche was so sharpe and feruent, that wythin þe space of one moneth, in dyuers places of the worlde were .xliij. thousande holpe men and women martyred for Christes sayth. And when the said Emperours left o: resgnyed theyr imperyll dygnite, and ladde a pryuate lfe: this sayde Constantius with hys felowe Galerius, departed the empyre betwene them, as befoze is touched, so that he reygned as ruler of Bytayne by the terme of .xliij. yeres and moze o: he were Emperoure. And after as Emperour of the weste partie of the empyre, and kynge of Bytayne. xliij. yeres and moze. And so in all þe sayde Constantius reygned ouer Bytayne .xxx. yeres. And lastely dyed and was buried at porke, leuyng after hym þe forelaid sonne called Constantinus whout mo that any mēcyon is made of.

¶ The .lxxiii. Chapter.



Constantinus the sonne of Constantius, and of Helepe daughter of kynge Coelus, in þe yere of our lord .iii. hundred and .xix. was made kynge of By-

tayne. Antoninus archbishop of Florence, and wyter of histories, sheweth in the .xv. chappter of the .ii. title of his worke called De An- tonini, that this Constantine was made Emperour, o: beganne to rule the Empire, in the yere of our lordes incarnacion .iii. hundred & .ix. which sayeng also affermeth Vincen by- stoppall and other authours, where of the cause is, the sayde authours accōpt not the yeres of the reygne of Constantius, but folow the accōpte of Galerius felowe of Constantius, which reigned as Emperour but .iii. yeres. After the which rule yt muste nedes folowe, that this Constantyne began his empyre, as the said Antoninus wytnessyth, and folowynge þe other accompt yt shulde varpe.

Then to pursue o: continue þe storye of this Constantyn, yt foloweth that at þe tyme of the decease of Constantius his father, he was occupied in warres in Gallia & those parties. After whose deth he by a certayne terme ruled Bytayne, and the other landes, the whiche his father befoze helde in due manner. And al be it that at that daye he was a myfcreant and pagan: yet he vled no tyrantnes, no: cōpelled not þe Byttons to refuse the lawe, & to worshippe ydolles, as o: ther tyrānes at those dayes vled. In this whyle that Constantyne ruled thus the weste parte of this empyre, one Maxentius whiche was þe sonne of Herculeus Maximian, somtyme felowe in the empyre with Dioclesian as befoze is shewed, was of the knyghtes of þe petyre declared Emperour. This Maxentius was there worste of all men. And as testifyth Eusebius & other, he fyrst began me help, to wyne thereby loue & fauour. But when he was stablisshe in au-
thorite

And while that Constantyne was thus occupied in Rome: hys mother Helene then beyng ferre from hym, and heyringe that he was become a Chyristen man: sent vnto hym letters of recommendacyon, that he had for taken the worshippinge of idollis. But she dyspleysed hym in that, that he worshipped a man that was nayled vpon a crosse. But after receypte of these letters, he wrote answere to his mother, that he shuld sufficiently proue, that he beleued and worshipped hym, that was fyrste creatour and maker of the worlde. And not onely a man but also god & man, with diuers other poyntes touching the fayth, whiche I ouerpasse.

A disputatō
of the chrystian
faythe.

For resonynge and proue of thys, was after assigned. vii. scoze iewes, and Siluester with a certayne number of chyriste clerkes, to dyspute the articles of Chyristes fayth. And after diuers myracles shewed, & good profit made by holy scripture: the sayde iewes were confounded, and the sayde Helene was conuerted vnto the fayth of Chyristes chyrche, and traualled soon after to Hierusalem, where she by herte indurynge and labour founde out the hole crosse, with the .iiij. naples that ouer lorde was nayled with to þe same crosse. And wher of she lefte there a parte, and the other dele was brought vnto Bizantium now called Constantynoble. Whycher cōtrye the sayd Constantyne greatly augmented with excellent buildynge, and therein also caused to be atryd a chyrch of maruailous beautye and named yt Sophia. Then this Constantyne removed the emperall see vnto his cōtrye of Constantyne the noble, and there for the more partye kepte his emperyal honoure, and other Emperours

in lyk wyse after hym. By reason wherof the Emperours were lōg after called Emperours of Constantine noble. This mā was so myghty & mercyall in his seates and all hys debes, that for his more honoure he had an addycion putte to his name, and was called for his great myght and power, Constantyne the great. He was also þe fyrst Chyristen Emperour, and dyd many notable actes for the weale of Chyristes faythe. Amonge the whiche seven are noted by the forenamed Antonius, in the .x. title of þe second part of his worke before named: wherof the fyrste was that Chyrist shuld be worshipped as God thorough the cōtry of Rome.

The seconde was, that who so of Iesu Chyriste spake any blasphemie, he shulde be greuously punished.

The thyrde was, what persone that dyd any inturpe or wronge to a Chyristen man, he shuld be depriued or put to the losse of halfe his goodes. The fourthe, * that lyke as the Emperoure of Rome is hede of all temporal princes: so the byshoppe of Rome is hede of all byshoppes. The fyfte, that what persone fledde to the chyrche for his sauegarde or suerty, that ther he shulde be defended from all perill and daunger. The syxte, that no man shuld presume to buyld any temple or chyrche within any cōtrye or towne, without the sprecial licence of his byshoppe. The seuenth, that euery pryncce shulde grue the .x. parte of hys possessyons to the buyldynge and mentyng of churches. The whiche lawe he fyrste executed, and after with a pykar or mattoke with his owne hande, brake the ground wher as now standeth saint Peters chyrche, and .xij. coppyes of treys ful of erth he bare away vpon hys

Constantyne
the first
emperor
of Rome.

The bene-
made by
Constantyne
for setting
up of Chyrist
fayth.

* Note the
prompte
bydres & by-
hednes & au-
dicion of the
B. of Rome
that he will
exceute the
cōtrye at þe
of Constant-
yne whi he
knowe a my-
racle in the
sayd fayth,
leues þe
lyche & com-
ple of the
cōtrye church.
But such
they name
þe of an
augmented
pyde & em-
cō it must
be receiued
as to hol-
dome &
drine of
the church
But if a
pryncce do
chynge
their pyde,
must be
at, & call
heretich,
infydel &
empe of
church
though
by the
of god
lye mo-
ghe.

his Shulders, as wptnesseth the soze-
sayd Antoninus and other.

But after those manyfolde good
dedes, he fell into the heresye called
Ariannes heresye. By meane wherof
he was so blynded, & he then became
an enemye to Christes church, & per-
secuted christen me, and cryed Sil-
uester, o; as some meane, & sayd Sil-
uester fled the cytie for feare.

For this as wptnesseth Iacobus
Philippus and other wyters, thys
Constantyne was smytē with the e-
uill of lepy. For curyng wherof. iiii.
thousande chyldzen were brought to
thēperours paleys to be slayne, that
he in the bloud of them might be ba-
thed, and so clenfed of his lepy. But
when he saw the chyldzen and the mo-
thers sozowynge for them, he was mo-
ued with pytie, and sayde: the dygni-
tie of thempyze cometh of mylonesse.
For it is demed, that he shulde dye &
fleeth a chyld in battayl. Then what
crueltie were this to sle so many in-
nocentes wylfully, yet better it were
to vs to dye and saue those chylderēs
lyues, then to gette a cruell lyfe by
death of so many innocentes.

Thus haue I shewed to you a part
of the dedes of Constantyne, whiche
yf I shulde cōtinue the hole processe
of hys reygne, that endured as em-
peroure by the space of. xxx. yeres: I
shulde therof make a large volume.
But it concerneth nothing of then-
tent of this worke, as touchynge the
lande of Brytayne: therfore I wyl
retourne my stile to Octavius from
whom I haue made a lōg disgressiō.

The lxx. Chapter.

In thys passetyme whyle
Cōstantyne occupped him
in nedes of thempyze, as
aboue is shewed: Octau-

us beyng liuetenant in the lande of
Brytayne vnder Constantyne, ruled
the lande to the pleasure of the Bry-
tons a certayne of tyme. But when
he perceaued that he was in fauoure
of them, and that Constantyne was
farre from hym, castynge also in hys
mynde, that the sayde Constantyne
beyng then emperour, wold o; might
not lyghtly retourne into Brytayne:
he therfore with helpe of his affinitie
and frendes withstode the Romayns
leste in Brytayne of Constantyne, &
vsurped the rule and domynyon of
the lande. Wherof when certayntie
came to the knowlege of Cōstantine
he in all haste sente into Brytayne a
duke named Craherri, & whych was
vnclē vnto Helepyne mother of Con-
stantyne. When this Craherri was
arriued in Brytayne with. iij. legi-
ons of knyghtes: anone Octavius
made towarde hym wth his Bry-
tons, and wth hym mette nere the
cytie, then called Kaerperis, now cal-
led Doyte chestre, o; Dozchestre, but
moze herely in a felde nere vnto the
cytie of Kaerguent, that now is cal-
led Wynchester, which felde then was
named Maesurian. The two hostes
mette with great pye, and foughten
longe whyle. But in the ende Craherri
was compelled to forsake the felde
and after dyetwe wth hys Romay-
nes towarde Albania o; Scotlande.
Wherof Octavius beyng warned,
folowed him, & in the colitre of West
merlāde gaue vnto hym the seconde
bataill, where then Octavius was
chased & Craherri was byctoure, the
whych pursued Octavius so egerly,
that he cōpelled him to forsake the lāde
of Brytayne, & to sayle into the coun-
tre of Norway for his sauegarde.

But it was not longe after, that
the sayd Octavius gathered a newe
e iii people

people of Bytong and Roiswages, was redy to retourne again into Bytayne. In whych tyme, as testifyeth myne autoure Saustryde, an Erie of Bytayne that entyrelly loued Octavius, by treason slewe the sayd Craherst a lytell befoze the landynge of the sayde Octavius. Whych shortly subdued the Romaynes and þe lande to his owne vse. This shuld be after mooste concordance of wyrters, whē Constantyne wpyth also the apde of Craherst, had ruled this land of Bytayne by the terme of .x. yeares.

The.lxxi. Chapter.

Octavius duke of the Ictis, otherwyle westsaxans began his reygne ouer þe Bytongs, in the yeaere of our Lorde.ccc.and. xxix. This in the englyshe boke is called Octavia. the which as testifyeth Saustryde, gathered in shortly whyle after. so great plenty of treasoure and rychesse. that he fered no man, and ruled this land in peasyble wyse. So that of him or of his actes is left lytel memory, except that when he was fallen into age, by the counsaill of Bytans he sent vnto Rome, for a noble yonge man of þe aliy of Helepyne, mother vnto Constantyne called Maximianus, as after moze playnly shalbe shewed: Albeit that some aduysed hym to make one Conan Meryadok his cosyne, kyng after hym. But by the instant labour of Caradok then duke of Cornewall Octavius lastly sente vnto Rome Mawrce the sonne of the fornamed Caradok, to byngge or conuey þe sayd Maximianus into Bytayne, for to mary the onely doughter of Octavius, and by reason therof, to enioy the realme of Bytayne. This Maximianus is of some autour named Maximus, þe which as witnesseth Sau-

stryde, was þe sonne of Leonyne, brother to Helepyne, and vncle vnto Constantyne the great. Which saying affirmeth also Iacobus Philippus autour of a booke called Supplementū cronicarum, wherein he nameth the sayde Maximianus a knyght of the Bytton bloude.

Then it foloweth, whē the fornamed Mawrice had spedde his nedes, so þe he came to the presence of Maximianus, and shewed the effecte of hys message: the sayde Maximianus to him graunted, & in all hast prepared for his voyage into Bytayne, and shortly after with couenient company landed at Southampton. Whereof beyng warned Conan Meryadok: he with a certayn of knyghtes of his affinitie, was purposed to haue stryded with the sayd Maximianus, & to haue distressed hym, for so muche as he wel knewe, that by him he shulde be put from the rule of the land. But thys purpose was let by the commaundement of the kyng or otherwyle, so that the sayd Maximianus was conueyed safely to the kynges presence, shortly after wpyth consent of the moze partie of his lordes, gaue his doughter vnto the sayd Maximianus with possession of thys Ile of Bytayne. The which mariage solemnised and ended, the sayd Octavius dyed shortly after. But howe long he reigned, none of the foresayd autours testifye excepte dyuers of them agre, that he continued his reygne tyl the tyme þe Gratian and Valentinian ruled the empyre, the whiche began to reygne the yeaere of our Lorde.ccc.and.lxxix. By whiche reason it muste folowe, that the sayde Octavius reigned at the least. liiij. yeaes.

The.lxxij. Chapter.

Maximianus



Maximianus oꝛ Maximianus the sonne of Leonine and colyn Germanyn of Constantyne the greate was made kyng of Bytton, in the yere of our Lord. cc. and lxxij. This in þe englysh boke is named Maximian, the which as testifyeth Gautryde and other, was stalworth and myghty of his handes.

But for he was cruell and persued some dele the chryste: he therfore of al wyrters is called Maximianus the tyrant. Attwene this and Conan before named, was styfe & debate, and dyuers conspyctes attwene the was foughten, in the whiche cyther of the spedde dyuersly, albeit that lastelye they were made frendes. So þe Maximianus reigned a season in quiete and gathered rycheesse, and treasoure not all withoute grudge. Lastelye he was moued and excited to warre vpon the Galles, tho:ow which counceyl he with a great hoste of Byttons sayled into Brytania that now is called Iytell Brytayne, & bare hym so knyghtly, that he subdued that countre vnto his lordshyp, and after gaue the sayd countre to Conan Maryadok, to hold of hym and of the kynges of greate Brytayne for euer. And then commaunded the sayde lande to be called Iytell Brytayne.

For this vyctory his knyghtes proclaimed hym Emperour. Where thorow he beinge the more exalted in pryde, passed farther in the landes of the empyre, & vyctoriouslye subdued a great parte of Gallia oꝛ Fraunce, and all Germania. For this dede, dyuerse autoures accompt hym false & perjured. Wherefore it shulde seme þe before his departing from Rome, he was sware vnto Gracian and Valentiniane emperours, that he shuld

neuer after claime any part of þe empyre. And also for the breakynge of this othe, he was after chalenged oꝛ blamed of saynt Martyn byshop of Turon. To whom he answered that he was compelled of his knyghtes to take vpon hym as emperoure, oꝛ els he shuld of the haue bene slayne. Neuerthelesse þe sayd byshop shewed vnto hym, þe for his vnturth he shuld not longe prospere oꝛ reygne.

After that worde was brought vnto the emperours, that Maximianus had wyth harde bataylles thus subdued Gallia and Germania: Gracianus with a great host came down to resyste hym. But when he harde of the marciall dedes of Maximianus, he was a drazd and fled backe to the cytie of Lugdun oꝛ Lyons in Fraunce. Where after the sayd Gracianus was slayne, and his brother Valentinian was compelled to flee to Constantyne þe noble. Then Maximianus to haue the more strength to withstand his enemyes: made his sonne named Victour felowe of the emperour. In this whyle that Maximianus warred thus in Italy: Conan Maryadoke, to who, as before is sayde, Maximianus had geue the lande of Iytell Brytayne, for so much as he and his knyghtes had no wyll to mary the daughters of frenchemen but rather to haue wyues of theyre owne bloude: therfore this Conan sent messagers vnto Dionotus then duke of Cornewayll, & chiefe ruler of Brytayne, wyllynge hym to send his daughter Ursula with a certayne number of virgyns, to be coupled to hym & to his knyghtes in maryage. The which soone after prepared accordyng to þe request of Conan, þe fore sayd Ursula accompanied wyth. xi. thousande virgyns, and were sente
bp

The xi. pp. virgins, how they began.

by her sayd father towarde lytel Bytayne, as witnesseth þe englyshe cronicle, Gausfryde and also Policronica.

But it shuld appeare by þe sayeng of Antoninus, Iacobus Philippus, and other wyters, that this Ursula with her company shuld not be sente forth of much Bytayne, nor marped aboute this tyme, but in the tyme of Marcianus beyng emperoure, the which began his empyre after mooste accorde of wyters, in the yere of our Lo:de. cccc. x. li. Of the martyrdome of these maydens dyuers autours wyte dyuersly. Wherfore I remytte them that wyll haue farther vnderstandynge in this mater; vnto the legende of saynts, redde pearely in the church, wher they may be sufficiently taught and enformed.

The lxxiiij. Chapter.

As as before is shewed Marimianus beyng occupied in warres in Italy: two dukes named Gwanus and Melga, the which as Gausfryde testyfeth and other, were sent from Gracian and Valentinian emperours, to punyssh and subdue the Byttons that fauoured the partie of Marimianus, warred sore vpon the costes of great Bytayne, and occupied a great part of Albania. Wherof whē Marimianus had knowlege he sent into great Bytayne a knight and captayne named Gracianus or Gracyan. The which with two legions of knyghtes bare him so knightly, that in shote p:ocesse he chased the sayd. ii. dukes into Irelande, & helde the lande of Bytayne in good peace to the behalfe of Marimianus.

In this whyle Marimianus cōtynuyng his warre agayn the empyre, & entending to be emperour: Theodocius named the elder then empe-

rouer of the east parte of þe world, hearing of the death of Gracyan, & charynge of Valentinian, with a great power spedde hym toward the sayde Marimianus. And shortly after at a cytie in Italy named Aquila, tooke the sayd Marimianus, and hym beheaded. When knowlege of þe death of Marimianus was comē to Gracyan, that then had the rule of much Bytayne: he ceased the lande & made hym selfe by strength kynge of Bytayne, when or after that Marimianus had gouerned thesame, by moost accorde of wyters by the space of viij. yeres.

The lxxv. Chapter.

Gracianus the whiche of Gausfryde is called Municeps, that may be take for an hyed or waged knyght, or for the keeper of gyftes, or beyng the chiefe rule of a cytie: began to rule the Byttons, in the yere of oure Lo:de. cccc. and. cc. The which exerceysed al tyranny and exaction vpon his subiectes, for the which he was had in wonderfull hated amonge the Byttons, and amonge them caste and sought many wayes and meanes for his destruction, but he by dyuers meanes escaped the daungers, and punysshed greuously all such fauours. Wherfore lastely as sayeth Gausfryde they fell vpon hym of an hole assent and kyllled him, when he had reygned or more verely vsurped by the tyme of foure yeres.

The lxxvi. Chapter.

After that Gracian was thus slayne of the Byttons, the forsayde Gwanus and Melga knowynge the Byttons to be withoute head

Englād was
called greāt
Bytayne.

head oꝝ ruler: assembled also people and retourned into much Bytayne, wastynge and brennyng on euery syde, and destroyed greete plentye of Byttons, as wptnesleth Gaultyde and other.

But Policronica sayth that whan the Romayns knewe of the death of Gracyan, they sent a knyghte called Constantyne to haue the rule of Bytayne and other countrees there aboute. But he was after demed an enemye to the empyre, foꝝ harme and scathes by hym done in fraunce. Wherfoꝝ by comaundement of Honorius then Emperour, a knyght oꝝ Ecle called Constancius was sente agayne the fozenamed Constantine, and slewe hym at a place oꝝ towne called Trelet. After this the Byttons were agayne hered by the Dictes & other straunge nacyons. By reason wherof they were constrained to sende agayne to Rome: requyringe them of ayde, vpon condycion that they shuld alway be subiecte vnto Rome. The whiche request & promesse thus herde of the senate: Honorius aforenamed was sent into Bytayne with a legyon of knyghtes, whiche is. vi. thousande. vi. hundred. lxxi. The which legyon with helpe of the Byttons, chased the foresayd Dictes and other enemyes, and taught the Byttons to make a walle ouerthwart the land from see to see, that is to meane from the water of Humber to the Scottyshe see, and ordeyned the wardynes and keepers of the wall, and after retourned to Rome. This wall as testifyeth Policronica, was made of turues, and stretched from Denilston oꝝ Denulston, vnto the cytie of Aclint oꝝ Aclind. But foꝝ this wal was of smal strength: the enemyes before named, destroyed certayne partys

of this sayde wall, and ouertode the countre, and toke great prayes dayly, and dyd as muche harme as they had done before tyme. Wherfoꝝ the Byttons were constrained to seke foꝝ newe socoure to the Romaynes. Then dyd Soloaphes sende another legion, the which agayne chased the sayd Dictes and other enemyes, and made than a wal of stone of þe thynesse of. viij. fote, and in heygthe. xij. fote, in the selfe place, where before Seuerus had made a dyke and wal of turues. And that done the Romaynes comforted and exhorted the Byttons to be manly and corageous to withstande theyꝝ enemyes. Shewyng to them sothter that they shuld trust to theyꝝ owne strengthe, foꝝ so muche as the Romaynes being so ferre fro them myght not lyghtlye come from so ferre with an armye of knyghtes, and also not without great coste and trauayle. After which monycion and exhortacion thus geuen to the Byttons, by þe mouth of the archebyschop of London, with other instruccyons apperteynyng to the fertes of warre the sayde Romayns toke leue of the Byttons, as though they shulde after that tyme retourne nomoꝝe into Bytayne.

But it was not longe after that þe Romayns were thus departed, that the Dictes and Scottes beganne to bryake out of theyꝝ dennes & caues. These two nacyons after some ayctours, shuld seme to be one. But by þe declaracio of Ranulphe in his. lviij. chapter of his first boke, they shuld appeare to be two maner of peoples oꝝ at least dwelled in two sondꝝe countrees. As the Dictes in the northsyde of Scotlande, oꝝ after Beda in the southsyde, whiche conteyneth Galeway and Rodeway. And þe Scottes by

legyon of
vnto.

scottish
partes

by ledyng of theyr duke Reda, shuld possesse Ireland: albeit after an arme of the north parte of the see passyng by Deyra, shuld departe the Pictes. But in the tyme that the Saxons ruled the lande, the Scottes by maner of treason slewe the myghtie men & rules of the Pictes, and so after kept that countre for theyr owne. These two nacions dilcorde in maners, but not in clothyng and in fayth, and in couetyse of the shedyge of mannes bloode, they be one.

Then as befoze is sayd, these Pictes and Scottes entred the lande, and brake the wall befoze made, and slewe the wardeyns therof, and after spoyled and robbed the countres, and chased so cruellie the commons and other, that they were comfortlesse. By meane whereof the Brytons were brought in such daunger and myserye, that eyther of them robbed and slewe other. And ouer this ground was bntylled and bntowen, wherof ensued great scarcyte and hunger: & after hunger ensued death.

Thus after one myschefe came another, as death vpon death, & sorowe vpon sorowe, which fell vpon the bystryfe medled with the great hunger. The which myserye in this wyse cōtynuyng, the chiefe of them tooke aduysle among them selves, and synally concluded that for remedye of this myschefe, they wolde sende vnto Aecius then beynge kynge in fraunce, which Aecius was mayster of the chyualery of Honorius then Emperour, and occupied in warres in a parte of Gallia. To this Aecius was set wytyng, wherof the effecte was this. To thy manhode Aecius be it vnderstanded the myserye of the Brytons, the whiche straunge nacions chase vnto the see, and the see dyrueth vs a-

gayne to strunge nacions. Of the which ensue two maner of carayng, & one by violēce of & enemyes sword and that other by wilful drownyng. But all theyr wytyng was but in vayne, so that from the sayd Aecius, nor yet from the Romaynes, hadde they no refuge nor comfort. In this whyle the hunger encreased, and the people were so ouerset with their enemyes, that many of the were as pol-den & toke partie agayne their owne neyghbours. And & other that were of moze power, and dwelled farther wythin the lande, defended them in theyr beste maner. Lastely the noble and wysest of them, and specially the archbishop of London wyth other of the lande, kepte a counsayll at London. By the which it was concluded that an embassade shuld be made vnto the kynge of lytell Brytayne, to impetere and aske of hym ayde & comforte in theyr greate necessyte. Of whiche ambassade the sayde archbishop was appoynted for the chiefe and princypall, the whiche is named of Gautryde Guethelinus, and of the englyshe cronicle Gosseleyn. Which sayde bishoppe wyth the other vnto him assygned, so spedde them, that in shorte and cōuenient time they came vnto the presence of Aldroenus then kynge of lytel Brytayne, and to him declared the effecte of theyr message. The which hauyng compassion of the lamentable requeste made vnto him by the sayd ambassade, after aduysle taken of his lordes, he graunted vnto the bishop, vpon condicion & yf God sent to them victoie of their enemyes, that they shuld crowne his brother kynge of great Brytayne, the whiche he entended to sende thider with a conueniente arme. Whiche condicion the sayde bishoppe wyth the

the other gladly accepted and ferme-
ly graunted.

So that thus it is apparant unto
you, that this lande was longe with
oute heade or gouernoure, whiche
length of tyme is of some autoures
determined to be longe, and of some
but shorte, so that lytle certentie is
therof left.

Wherefore I haue shewed and dy-
uen certayne reasons after myne o-
ppnyon and dull mynde, in the table
before expressed, wherein it shall ap-
pere vnder correccyon, that the saide
season and tyme of this land beyng
wthoute kynge, to rekyne from the
last yeare of Gracian vnto the fyfthe
yeare of Costantyne nowe nexte en-
suyng, was fully .xxxix. yeare.

Finit tributum.



I shal also furthermore
vnderstande, that here en-
deth fynally the trybute
and domynion of þe Ro-
maynes. For after this

dave they hadde no trybute to them
payed, nor no Romayne prince after
this daves ruled this lande of By-
taine. The which trybute and domy-
nyon endured from the .ix. yeare of
Cassibellan, vnto the tyme of Seue-
rus by the terme of two hundred and
lv. yeares. And from the tyme of Se-
uerus vnto the fyfthe yeare of Gra-
cian a hundred and .lxxiiij. yeares.
And from the fyfthe yeare of Gracian
vnto the last yeare of this mysterpe
ciii. yeares. So that from the yeare
that Julius Cesar made firste this
Ile of Britayne tributarye vnto þe
empire, vnto the last yeare or ende of
this foyleayde mysterpe, flowed .iiii. hun-
dred and .xxi. yeares. But Polydro-
nyca sayeth that the Romaynes ru-
led and had trybute of this lande a-
bout .iiij. hundred .lxx. yeares. Which

sayng is full lyke to be true, yf the
ende of theyr domynion be determi-
ned at the laste departyng of the Ro-
maynes out of this lande.



And thus here an ende
of the .iiii. parte of this
woke, for so muche as the
fornamed Gracian was
the laste of Romayne kynges & resy-
gned in muche Britayne, or that no
trybute was after this dave payed
vnto the Romaynes. And this .iiii.
parte to be accompted from the fyfth
yeare of Seuerus, vnto the laste
ende or yeare of this mysterpe, inclu-
deth of yeares. CC. and .xxvi.

Thus endeth the
fourth parte.

The fyfte parte.

The .lxxvi. Chapter.



Here accordyng
to the promple
made by me in þe
begynnyng of
this woke: I
shall byngne in
and shewe vnto
you the begyn-
nyng of the regne of the kynges of
fraunce, and let them in suche a dy-
recte order, that it shalbe apparante
to the reader, and certaynly known,
what kyng reigned in fraunce, whā
such a kyng reigned in Englande.
And also I shall sondele touche the
actes and dedes of the sayd kynges
of fraunce, so that the cronycles of
both realmes shal in this woke ap-
peare, and the names of the prynces
which at ones reigned in Englande
and in fraunce.

Then

Then for the persoutmaunce of þe same, fyrst it is to be noted, that after the subuercyon of Troie by the Grekes (as in þe beginning of this worke is shewed) dyuers Troians beyng vnder the rule of nobles of the same lygnage, as Helenus sonne of Pryamus, Eneas, Antenor, & other, serched þe worlde & landed in dyuers countrees. As Helenus in Grece or Grecia, Eneas in Italia or Italy, & so of other amonge. The whiche nobles one named Turchus, & another named Franco colyn Germainys, as Turchus the sonne of Troilus, and Franco or Francio þe sonne of Ector, which said two colyns serchynge their aduenture: after many and dyuerse daungers & iopardyes passed by þe see, lastly landed in a countre called Tracia or Tracia in Grece, and ther with theyr company enhabited them nere vnto a ryuer called Dion. And after they hadde contynued there a season of tyme: Turchus departed with a certayne of Troians fro his sayd colyn Francio, and sayled after into a countre called Falso the lesse. Where he with his people dwelled longe tyme. Which Falso shoulde be in the countre of Suthia. Of this Turchus descended as sayeth the Frenche cronycle. iiii. maner of people. That is to saye, Austrogothis, Spogothis, Wandalis, & Romans. And Francio or Fraco remoued after with his companye into a countree named Pannoma, whiche countree now shuld seme to be a parte of Hungary or ioyngne nere to it. There nere vnto a ryuer called Thanaïs they buylde them a cytie, and named it Sicambria. by reason wherof they were longe after called Sicambrians. They were also named Franci, as sayth the Frenche cronycle, after

this man Francio. Turpinus that wrote the gestes of the greates Charles, sayth: that whan Charles hadde made the countree of Spayne subiecte and was retourned into France he made all the bondeimenne dwellynge aboute or nere vnto Paris or in all Gallia free, in the worshyppe of saynte Denys and of saynte James of Salis, vpon condycyon that they shulde yearely offre foure pence to the worke of saynt Denys church. By reason wherof, they were named Franci, as menne treed that to fore were bonde. Polycronyca sayth they were named Franci of Valentynian the emperour, as it were for freyness. But how so euer they came by þe name they were called Franci as Frenschemenne.

This sayd people were also named long tyme Galli, and were trybutaries to Rome and vnder theyr rule, tyll þe tyme of Valentynian emperour, aboute the yere of Christ. iiii. hundred & xlii. This Valentynian haupnge the rule of the west parte of þe worlde made warre vpon a people called Aleynes, that dwelled nere vnto the forenamed Gallis. These Aleynes were egre of fyghte, and ouer þe they were so closed wyth fennes and maris, that the Romaynes myghte not wyne to them by force, wherof they often rebelled agayne the empyre. Wherfore in the ende Valentynian consyderynge the freyness of þe Gallis, with theyr nere dwellynge vnto the sayd Aleynes, couenaunted with them if they wolde subdue the sayde people, they shulde haue releace of x. yeares tribute. Which couenaunt wel and susteynently confirmed to þe Gallis, they in thort whyle after by theyr knyghthode and polycye, subdued or vterlye chased the sayde aleynes.

The fyfte parte.

67.

For the whiche dede they contynued the fortye daye tenne peres without payenge of any tribute. Whiche ten peres ranne and expyed, the Romaynes agayne claymed the former accustomed tribute. To whome it was answered that they had redeemed þe sayd tribute with the pryce of theyr blode, and oughte not any moze to be charged with any suche tribute.

With whiche answer the Romaynes beyng soze dyscontentyd, made newe warre vpon þe sayde Sicambrys. Of whiche warre the Sicambrys of Gallis had the worse, and were chased from theyr cytie of Sicambria. Then as witnesseþ Policronica and other, they dize we nere vnto the water of Rhyne, and grewe in mozte processe to suche a myltitude & of suche strengthe, that they in mozte whyle after by leadyng of theyr. iii. dukes named Marcomitus, Somomus of Symon, and Genebaur, warred vpon the landes of the empyre, & suche as were subiecte vnto the same. wher of Theodosius surnamed the ponger then Emperoure beyng warned: he anon sente two of his dukes with a greate hoste, for to subdue the sayde Gallis of Sicambrys. But they defended them so knyghtly, that þe sayd Dukes were chased, and as wytnesseþ the mayster Roberte Sagwyne, a great number of the Romaynes were slayne.

The. lxxvii. Chapter.



fter this victorie thus obtained by the Sicambrys they waxed so strong that they wan from þe Almaynes bynners townes & stronge holdes within Germania. And after þe, they opteyned þe famous cite named Treueris, which as wytnesseþ þe auctour of Cronica cronica, was fyrst found

ded in the tyme of þe patrparche Abraham, befoze the incarnation of Christ a thousande. ix. hundred. lxx. peres. And so dayly wan vpon the nacions adioyninge to theym, tyll they came to the ryuer of Seyn, where they rested theym, and buylded the countre all there about. In so much that they than named theym selues franci, as men freed and oute of all daunger of the empyre of Rome, and theyr lande after theym they named france, whiche syngs that tyme is greatlye encreased. So that at this daye it is a countre of great welth and honour and conteyneth many prouynces and lordshippes, as after the assymatis of Policronica is touched in þe. xxvii. chapyter of his fyfte boke, where it is shewed that Gallia which now is france, hadde that name Gallia of whynesse of people. This Gallia of france hath in the North syde, Germania, in the East, the ryuer of Rhyne, in the Southest, the Alpis or the hyghe mountaynes, and in the weste, the see Ocean, whiche is called both Britannicum and Gallicum whych is to meane, Englyshe see and frenche see. For it departeth Englande and france, in the southe see of myddell erth, that washeth about by the prouynce of Narbon.

In the tyme of Julius Cesar, Gallia was departed in thre, but for dyuers happes that befell after in that lande the countre and lande that stretcheth from the Rhyne to Seyn, is now called Gallia Belgica, whiche is now france. And that countre that stretcheth from Seyn to the ryuer of Leir is called Gallia Lugdunensis, wher of the ouer parte hyght or is named Burgundia that is Burgoyne, and the nether parte is Belgia or flomandye.

wher and by whome the name of france came in.

Gallia

Gallia Belgica

And the countre that stretcheth fro the ryuer of Ley to the ryuer of Gerounde, is called Gallia Aquitania, whiche is Guyan, and stretcheth out of the east from the ryuer of Roosi, vnto the west Ocean. Wherof the ouer parte thereof byght Celtica, whiche is to meane Heauenly, because that byghthe mountaynes be therein. From the water of Gerounde, to the see of myddell earthe, & to the mountaynes called montes Pirent or greates hyls of Spayne, is clepyd Gallia Narbonensis. And now a parte thereof is called Gothia, and some Gasconia, whiche is to meane Gascoyne.

And so Gallia is closed aboute with thre noble waters, with the ryuer of Rhyne in the North syde, with the ryuer of Roone in the East, and with the Bytayne ocean in the west. In Gallia or Fraunce ben many noble cityes, wherof Paris is heade and pryncypall, whiche in the fyrste foundacyon was clepyd Parides, after Parides a Troyane, that departed frome Troy with Eneas and other, as wytnesseeth Carinus & other wyriters of hystories. But the frenche cronycle sayeth it was fyrste founded by the Sycambrys, & named by them Lutecia, before the incarnacion of Christ, thre hundred. lxx. and x. yeres. And in the whyle that the forenamed Harcompus was as there chiefe hedde and gouernoure, for the more beautye of the name, and also in mynde of Paris sonne of Pyrame kynge of Troie, of the which he was lyncally descended, he therfore chaunged the name, and commaunded it to be called Paris.

In Gallia also be these prouynces and lordshippes folowynge, Babylon, Flaundres, Normandy, Piccardye, Bytayne the lesse, Poictoue,

Gascoyne, Guyan, Colowse, Burgoyne, Angeo, and Mayne, Normance, Champayne, and Bluerne.

All whiche lyncountres and lordshippes belonged or apperteyned vnto the crowne of Fraunce, all be it that dyuers of them hath bene geuen oute by marriage or otherwyle. So that the kynge of Fraunce clappeth to be chiefe lord of them, and at this daye hath the possession of them, excepte Burgoyne, Flaundres, Babylon, & Normandy, for the which he is tributary vnto the kynge of Englande.

Then it foloweth, when the sayde Gallis or Frenchemen had thus conquered these foresayde countrees, or the more parte of them, or at leaste made them vnto the sayde Gallis tributary: then the forenamed Harcompus as they chiefe hedde or gouernoure: closed cityes with stronge walles, and buylded stronge holdes and castelles, and after dyed, leuyng after hym a sonne: garnyshe wyth all knyghtely vertue, named Pharamundus or Pharamonde.

Francia.

The. lxxviii. Chapter.

Pharamundus the son of Harcompus before named, was after the death of his sayde father made or ordeyned the fyrste kynge of Frenchemen, by the agreement of hystories, & also as aftermeth mayster Robert Sagwine and other, in the yere of oure lordes incarnacion. iiii. hundred and. xx. And of the world, or after the creatyon of the fyrst Adam folowynge the accompte of this world as before is shewed, fyue thousande bi hundred and. xix. After whiche ganne his dominyon in this yle of Bytayne, a thousande fyue hundred, and. lvi. And the yere of myscete of the

Paris and
wherof, the
city of Paris
was named.

Paris was
fyrst founded
in the. iii. lxxv. yere be
fore the incarnacion of
Christ.

The first
founder
of France
made in
the. iii. lxxv. yere be
fore the incarnacion of
Christ, is
the. iii. lxxv. yere be
fore the
world.

the Byttons. cxi.

Of this Pharamundus is lytell thyng lefte in memoire, excepte that myne authoure Sagwyne testifyeth, that he made certayne lawes whiche longe tyme endured after. But for the names of the lawes & vse of them be deshe to englyshe vnderstandyng therfore I ouerpasse them, and folow the story, which affermeth, that when the sayde Pharamonde hadde ruled the Frenchmen wel and nobly by the space of a. xi. yeres, he dyed, and lefte after hym a sonne named Clodeo Crinitus, or Capellatus.

The. lxxix. Chapter.

Clodeo the sonne of Pharamonde was made kyng of Fraunce, in the yere of our Lorde. iiii. hundred and. lxxi. And the. cxxvii. yere of the sayde mystry of Byttons. The which as before is sayd was surnamed Crinitus & Capellatus, by reason wherof the kynges of frenchemen longe tyme after were called Criniti. This to augmente hys lordshyppe, made warre vpon a people called Turpnyges, and by great & soze fyght made them at length subiecte to him, which countre as sayth the frenche cronycle is a parte of Almayne. And at this day or tyme of this Clodeo his reigne the Romaynes hadde no moze of the lande of Gallia or Fraunce in theyr rule, then that whiche lyeth from the ryuer of Ley: vnto the riuer of Rynne whiche is called *Gallia Lugdunensis*.

And when he hadde thus subdued the Turpnyges, he then sente hys espyes ouer the Rynne, to se what strengthe they were of, that inhabited that countre. And after repozte to hym broughte of the sayde espyes: that the countre was fertile and ryche, and the people thereof but of

small defence: he with his army ouerspied the countre, and after shortly, beseged the Cyties of Cambrey, and Turney and them wanne. But in the cytye of Turney was a certayn number of Romaynes, whiche manfully defended the towne longe tyme.

And when they perceyued that they myght no longer holde the towne, they then manfully issued oute, & gaue to the Frenchmen harde batayle. But fortune was to them froward, so that they were dystressed. After whiche countrees and townes thus gotten by Clodeo, with other victorions dedes by hym done: he lastely died, when he had ruled the frenchemen. xix. yeres without issue of his bodye.

Anglia.

Now then let vs retourne vnto the Archbysshoppe of London, and the other Byttons beyng in Bytayne the lesse, the whiche vpon the promyse before ceherised, receyued of Alboenus kyng of Iptell Bytayne, hys brother named Constantyne, the whiche with a certayne number of knyghtes shortly after landed at Cotnesse in muche Bytayne, and gathered to them the floure of the Byttons which before theyr landing were hydde in dyuers places of the lande. By whose power and marcial knyghthode, the enemyes of the land were shendefully chased and bitterly confounded. Whiche victorie thus by the Byttons obteyned: they of one mynde, conueyed theyr chiefe captayn Constantyne vnto the towne of Caerregent now called Cere, and there crowned hym (accordyng to the promyse made vnto his brother), kyng of this yle of the moze Bytayne.

f. ii. The



Constantinus þ brother of Aldroenus, kyng of Iptel Britayn, was crowned kyng of much Britayne, in the yere of our Lorde foure hundred and. xxxiii. and the thyrde yere of Clodio then kyng of Fraunce. The whiche guyded the lande with suche manhode and pollyce, that he kepte it from daunger of enemyes, and for tyme of his lyfe held it in good quyetesse & rest. Of this Constantyne is Iptell mynde made oʒ left in wytyng, excepte that he receyued of his wyfe thre sonnes, the which he named Constant, Aurely, oʒ constantius, Aurelius, Ambrosius, and Aliter which was surnamed Dendragon.

But for he sawe and perceyued, that his eldest sonne named Constāt, was dull and insolent of wyte: he therfore made hym a monke in the monasterye of saynte Amphrabyll of Wyntchester, which monastery at this daye is called saynte Swythynes abbey. And to the other two brethren, he betoke vnto Guethelinus archbysshop, to noyrthe and byrnyge forth.

In the courte of thys Constantyne as wytnesseth Gaufryc, was a Dyct that was much loued and greatly fauoured of constantyne, so þ he might at all tymes come to the kynges presence. The whiche beyng an errant traytoure, and serchyng conuenient tyme to execute his detestable treasō, by a secreete meane slewe the kyng in his chamber, when he had bene kyng after mooste wynters ten yeres.

Constantius sonne of constantyne, by meane of Cloztigernus was made kyng of Britayne,

in the yere of our Lorde foure hundred and. xlii. This as befoze is touched, for so muche as hys father thought he was not very apte to take so greute a charge as to gouerne the lande after hym, became a religyous man in the monasterye befoze named D; as some wynters meane, the sayde Constante of pure deuocyon that he hadde to God and saynt Amphrabyll made hym selfe a monke, vntwerynge the kyngs hys father, and other hys frendes.

But how oʒ in what maner so euer he became a monke, trouth it is that Cloztigerus oʒ Cloztigernus after the death of Constantyne, founde suche meanes that he was taken out of the abbey, and crowned kyng of Britayne. By meane wherof the sayde Cloztiger had all the rule of the lande so that Constante hadde but only the name. This Cloztiger then consyderynge the innocencye and mylkenesse of the kyng, caste in his mynde howe he myght be kyng hym selfe. And amonge other meanes, founde to haue aboute the kynges person an hundred Dyctes, oʒ after some Scottes, the which he oʒdeyned for a gard for the kynges persone, whiche done, he bare hym in such wyse agayne the Dyctes by meanes of great gyftes & otherwyse, that they at length hadde Cloztiger in suche fauoure, that they feared not to saye openly that Cloztiger was moze worthy to be kyng the Constant. In this whyle Cloztiger gatte into hys possessyon the kynges treasure, and what was of hym commaunded, was done, thowhe other therat murmured and grudged. And euer in ryghte and wronge he fauoured the foresayde Dyctes oʒ Scottes. The whiche at lengthe perceyvinge hys corrupte mynde, when they sawe tha

that they had conueniente tyme, fyl
vpon the kynge, and hym slewe o:
murdered.

After whiche cruell dede by them
done, they presented the hed of Con-
stante vnto Moryger, then beinge at
London. Wherof when he was ware
to the ende that the Byrons shoulde
thynke that dede to be done agayne
his mynde and wyl: wepte and made
semblaunce of all sorowe and heu-
nesse, and caused the sayde hundred
knyghtes to be taken in all haste af-
ter, and them by dome and lawe of þ
lande to be hedded, by reason where-
of he was taken not culpable, o: inno-
cent of the kynges death. When the
kynges deathe was knowen to suche
personnes as had the keepnge of the
two ponger byethern, Aurelius and
Uter: they in all haste: for the moze
sauegarde of theym, fled into lytell
Bytapne, and there kepte them tyl it
pleased God otherwile to puruey for
theym. And thus as ye haue hearde
was kynge Constante slayne, when
he had reigned after moſte wyters,
fyue yere.

The. lxxii. Chapter.



Vytigern⁹ duke of þ Jew-
elles, o: Morytigerus erle of
Jewelles, after called west
saxons, was made kynge of
Bytapne, in the yere of our lord. iiii.
hundred and. xlviii. & the. xlviii. yere
of Clodeo king of Fraunce, which af-
ter the deth of Constant by strength &
otherwyle, was made kynge, and ru-
led the lande not all without trouble.
For it was not longe o: the Byetes,
which hauing knowledge of þ deth &
iudgement of theyr knyghtes & kyn-
men, that they inuaded the north par-
tes of the lande, doyng therein greate
harne and damage. And ouer that
many and dyuerſe of the great of the

Byrons, perceyvinge that the kynge
Constant was not murdered all with-
out consent of the sayde Moryger: re-
belled agayne hym, and dayly sente &
saped ouer into lytell Bytapne, to þ
ayde and assyſtence of the forsayde
chyl dren of Constante, whiche putte
the sayde Moryger to greate vntreſ-
fulnesse, and the moze for that, that
he wylste not no: knewe not in whom
he myght putte hys truste and confy-
dence.

With these perturbaunces was
medled plenty of coyne & frute, that þ
lyke therof had not ben sene many ye-
res passed, wherewith was toynd le-
chery & pestilence, with many other in-
conueniences, so þ vice was accopted
for smal o: none offence. The whiche
reigned not onely in the tempozalty,
but also in the spirytualty & hedes of
the same. So þ euery man turned the
poynte of his speare agaynst þ trewe
and innocēt man, & the comons gaue
them all to dyonkenes and vdelnes,
where thozoughe ensued fyrhtyng,
stryfe, and much enuy. Of which fore-
sayde myscheues ensued muche moze-
talyte and deathe of men, that the ly-
uynge scantly suffysed in some coun-
tries to bury the dead. And ouer this
the king was so hard beset w the fore-
named enemies, þ he was constrained
as affermyth Politronica, to send for
paynenis, as the sparons, to helpe to
withstande his enemyes and defende
his land, and also he dayly feared the
landyng of Aurely and Uter.

Moryger thus beyng beset with
many aduersytyes in vilytynge hys
lande, and then beyng for dyuerſe
causes hym mouyng, at Dozobernia
o: Caunterburge: tydynges came to
hym of the arpyuyng of thye longe
shyppes ful of armed men at the yle
of Tenet. Wherof fyrst he made coun-
f.iii. naunce

tenaunce as though he had bene in doute whether it had ben the two brethren of Constant or no. But when the same was blowen aboute, & they were none enemyes: anone he caused the leaders of them to be brought vnto hys presence, freynge of theym the cause of theyr landynge & of their nacpon and countre. The whiche answered vnto the king and sayde, they were of the countre of germanye, and put out of theyr countre by a maner softe or lot at sondry tymes vsed with in the sayde lande, the whiche was vsed for so muche as the people therein encreased so faste, that wythoute suche prouysyon had, & countre shuld not suffice for the people, the whiche was suche as foloweth.

At sondry tymes when the sayde countre was replenished of people, & Dynces and rulers therof wolde assemble at a certayne place, & call before them the lustye yonge folkes.

Of the whiche they wolde chose out a certayne number, and appoynte to them certayne dukes or leaders, wyth all thyng necessary to the warre. And them so garnished, wolde commaunde to serche theyr aduenture, & to wyne some lande by theyr knyghthode, where they myght inhabyte the selfe. By whiche vse & custome thus longe vsed, nowe was fallen to theyr lotte, to do as theyr forefathers had done before them.

Wherfore sines fortune had brought them to this lande, they besought the kyng, that he wolde take them to his seruyce, & they wolde be redy to fyght for the defence of hym & his countre. And when the kyng hadde enquired further: he founde that they had two leaders named Hengist & Horsa, and they and theyr people were called Saxons.

The king thus being ascerteyned of the maner of these straungers, and that they were of the gentyle of Dagan lawe: sayde he was very heuy & softe, that they were myscreantes. But he was sorowful & glad of theyr comynge, for so muche as he hadde neede of suche sowdours to defende hym and his lande, agayne his enemyes. And so receyued the to his wages and seruyce, as is wytnessed of Caustye and other mo wyters.

The lxxxiii. Chapter.

Beda the holy man sayth, that Hystorye sent for & Saxons, stronge men of armes, & had no lande to dwell in. The which came in thyr longe shippes called Obylas and receyued a place of hym to dwell in, in the East syde of Brytayne called the yle of Tenet besyde Kent.

Guilelmus de regibus, a wyter of hystories sayeth, that the Saxons came oute of Germanye by wyll to wyne worshyppe and laude, and not by lot or compulsion.

And also that they worshipped at that dayes: a God named woden, and a goddesse named frea. In the worshyppe of the whiche god, the thyrde feryall daye in the weeke they named wodnesdaye, whiche at this daye we call wednesdaye. And in worshyppe of the sayde goddes, they called the fyfthe daye frys daye, the whiche we call nowe frydaye.

Of these foresayd people came thre maner of people, or thre maner of names, that is to say Saxons, Angles, and Jewetes. Of the Saxons came the east Saxons, west Saxons, and the south Saxons. Of the Angles came the east Angles, the myddle Angles, or Mercys, whiche helde myddell Englande, that stretcheth westwarde toward the ryuer of Dee besyde Chester,

ste, and to Seuerth besyde Shrop-
bury, and so forth to Bytstowe, and
estwarde towards the see, and southe
warde to Champs, and so forth to
London, and notheward to Hum-
ber, and turned downeward a welle
warde to the ryuer Mersea, and so
forth to the west see.

3. And of the Kenetres come the Ken-
etymen, & men of the yle of weyght.
Of the fyrst comyng of these Sarons
into great Britayn, authours in pat-
tye varye. Wherefoze in the table be-
foze named, it shall appere vnder co-
rectyon, that the fozenamed Hengys-
tus and Hoxsus wyth theyr compa-
nye fyrste landed in the foresayde yle
of great Britayn in the yere of our
Lorde. iiii. hundred and. l. and the. iii.
yeare of Wostiger.

Then it foloweth, these Sarons
wyth the kynges power beate downe
the enemyes before sayde, and defen-
ded the land in moost knyghtly wyse
so that the kyng hadde the Sarons
in great loue and fauour, whych fa-
uour Hengystus well apperceauyng
bypon a season when he sawe conue-
nient tyme, he asked of the kyng so
muche grounde as the hyde of a bull
or other beste wolde compace, whych
the kyng to hym graunted. After
whych graunte, the sayde Hengyste
to the ende to wyne a large grounde
caused the sayde bestes shyn to be cut
into a small and slender thonge.

And wyth the same mette our a large
and grent cyrcuyte of grounde, vpon
the whych he shortly after buylded
and sette a large and stronge castell.
By reason of whych thonge the sayd
castell was lög after named Thonge
castell, whych was sette by the agre-
mente of all wynters in the countrey
of Lyndeseye. After thys tpynges
sprange into Germanye, of the plen-

tye and fatnes of the lande of Byt-
tayn, wyth other commodyties per-
tayninge to the same. By mencyber
of the Sarons daylepe byems to the
sayde lande, and couenaunted wyth
the Bytons, that the Bytons shulde
entende theyr wordlynelle and other
necessaries, and þ Sarons as theyr
sowdyours, shulde defende the lande
from incurson of all enemyes. For
the whych the Bytons shulde geue
to them competent meat and wages.

Then by the sonde of Hengyste,
came wyth. xvi. sayles Ronowen the
daughter of the sayd Hengist, whych
was a mayden of excellent bewty. Af-
ter whose comyng, Hengist vpon
a dape besought the kyng þ he wolde
se hys castell, whych he had newlye
edyfyed. To whose request the kyng
was agreable, & at the dape assygned
came to þ sayde castell, where he was
topouly receaued. And there among
other pastymes the sayde Ronowen
wyth a cuppe of golde full of wyne
presented the kyng, salutynge and
sayynge wassayle. The kyng whych
before that tyme had herd no lyke sa-
lutacyon, nor yet vnderstod what the
mente, askedde of her father what the
mente by that worde wassayle. To
whom yt was answered by Hengyste
that it was a salutacion of good and
gladnes, and that the kyng shulde
drynke after her, topyng there vñ
to thys answer, drynke haply, where
foze the kyng as he was in fowmed
toke the cuppe of the maydens hand
& drank, & after he behelde the wēch
in suche maner, that he was wound-
ded wyth the derte of the blynde god
Cuppyde, that neuer after he coulde
withdraye hys loue frome þ wenche
but lastelye by instygacyon of the de-
uell, asked her in matryage of her fa-
ther. And by force therof, as wytnes-

seth Polycronyca, he put frome hym
hys lawefull wyfe, of the whiche he
hadde befoze tyme receaued. iii. noble
sonnes called Uoxtimerus, Catagry-
nus, and Pascencius. Then the king
gaue vnto Hengystus the Lordshipp
of Kente, though Saragonus then
erle therof therat grudged wth ma-
ny of hys Byttons.

For this, and for that, that þe king
had maryed a woman of vncoughte
belefe: well nere all the Byttons for-
sooke hym and hys woꝝkes. Fewer-
thelesse, some there were as well no-
bles and other þe comforted the kinge
in hys euell doyng. By whiche mene
and other vnlesfull dedes, then dayly
blyd, the fayth of Chryst began soze
to appalle. And ouer that an herespe
called Aryans herespe, began then to
sprynge in Bytayne. For the whiche
two holy Byshoppes named Germa-
nus and Lupus, as of Gauctyde is
wytnesse, came into Bytayne to
resourme the people that erred from
the waye of truth.

Then, to furnyshe oꝝ perfoꝝme the
stoꝝ of Uoxtiger, nedful it is to shew
that for soo muche as the Byttons
wythdꝛewe them frome Uoxtiger, he
was therfore constrainyd to holde
wyth hym the Saxons. By whose co-
unsayle he after sente for Oeta the
sonne of Hengyst the whiche brought
wyth him another compaigne of Sax-
ons.

When the lordes of Bytayne saw
and considered the greates multitu-
de of Saxons, and theye daylye re-
paye into thys lande, they assembled
them together, and shewede to the
kyng the inconuenyence and leopar-
dye that myght ensue to hym and his
lande, by reason of the greates power
of these straungeres, and aduertysed
hym in aduopdyng of greater daun-

ger, to expelle and put them oute of
hys realme oꝝ the moze parte of them

But all was in vayne, for Uoxti-
ger bare suche a mynde to the Sax-
ons, by reason of hys wyfe, that he pre-
ferred the loue of them befoꝝ the loue
of hys owne natural kynnesmen and
frendes. Whe refoꝝe the Byttons of
one wyl and mynd crowned for they
kyng Uoxtimerus the eldeste sonne
of Uoxtiger, and depꝛyued hym of al
kyngly dygnyte, when he hadde repꝛe-
ned after most concoꝝde of hystoꝝres
schyl. peates.

The. lxxv. Chapter.

Meroneus nexte of all vn-
to Clodeo, laste kyng of
Fraunce, for so muche as
of clodeo remayned none
issue, was made kyng of
Fraunce in the yere of oure Lorde
iii. hundred and fyfye, and in the
seconde yere of Uoxtiger than kyng
of Bytayne. The whiche was strong
and marcyall in all hys deades, and
thereunto ryghte pꝛofytable for the
realme.

And amonge other notable dedes
by hym done, he shewe in one daye of
Hunes (the whiche by the commaun-
dement of Atyla invaded and de-
stroyed dyuers countreys, as Italy,
Germany, and other) an hundred and
lxxx. thousande, as is wytnesse of
mayster Roberte Sagwyne compiler
and gatherer of the actes and deades
of frenshmen. Thys foze named A-
tyla was kyng of Hunes, and led in
one host. ii. hundred thousande men
of warre, as testyfeth Polycronyca
And after dyuers battayles by hym
wonne, he came into the feldes called
Catulyntes, the whiche contayned
an hundred leges in lengthe and. lxx.
in byede, whereof euerye lege contey-
neth thye Englyshe myles. In the
whiche

The begyn-
ninge of Ary-
ans herespe.

Howe Uox-
iger was depꝛy-
ued.

The lengthe
of the felde
called Catul-
yntes.

whych the felde of playnes he was encountered wth the power of the Romaynes, in whose ayde was the king of Fraunce Heroneus, the kynge of duke of burgoyne, and other, where after a longe fyghte was slayne on bothe sydes the foresayde hundred and lxxx. thousande. Of the whych nomber the sayde kynge of duke of Burgoyne was one, as is moze plainly shewe in the. ccciii. Chapter in the fourth booke of the sayde Polycronicon, wth other wonders whych I ouerpasse.

Of thys Heroneus dyscended all the kynges of frenschmenne, tyll the tyme of Depyn the which was father vnto Charles the greates of Emperoure. And synallye dyed thys Heroneus when he hadde reigned after mooste wynters. x. peares, leuyng after hym a sonne named Chylderich of Hyldyche.

The. lxxvi. Chapter.

Chylderich of Hylderich the sonne of Heroneus, was ordayned kynge of Fraunce, in the yere of our Lorde God. iiii. C. and. lx. & the. xii. yere of Noztiger than kyng of Brytayne. The whych ensued no thyng the warres of hys father, but allyed hym wth all wyse and cruellesse, in suche extreame wyse that he became obdurable vnto hys subiectes. Wherfore the sayd Chylderich, perceauyng the murmur & grudge amonge the people, and fearyng his sodayne destruccyon, counceled wth a frende and lorde of hys, named Gynnomadus of Gynnemeus, by whose counsaile in auoydyinge greater peryll, he auoyded secretelye hys lande, and went vnto the kynge of Churpynges named Besygne, of whome he was to poussye receaued. But at the depart

tyng of the kynge from þ sayd Gynnemeus, he tooke a pece of golde and brake it in two peces, wherof the one pece he deliuered vnto the kyng, and that other pece he kepte to hym selfe, sayinge to the kyng, that whan soeuer that he receaued frome hym that pece of golde, that he shulde be sure to be restoyred agayne to hys regalle dygnite.

After the kynge was departed his lande, the frenschmenne of one assent chose for theyr gouernour and hedde a Romayne named Gyll, whych at that daye hadde a parte of Gallia of Fraunce in hys rule to the behofe of the Romaynes, whych part was named of now is named Soissons.

Whan this Gyll was stablished in his authoryte, the forenamed Gynnemeus behaued hym in suche wyse towards the sayd Gyll, that he hadde hym in spectyall fauoure aboue al the nobles of Fraunce, and wolde execute no thyng of charge wythoute hys consente & counsell, wherof the sayd Gynnemeus beyng ware, and remembryng howe he myghte restoyre Chylderich to hys former dygnite, aduised the sayd Gyll to sette more greuous taskes vpon the frenschmen enfourmyng hym further: that yf a anye grudged thereat that he shulde punyssh some of the myghtiest of the by reason whereof he shuld feare the other.

Whych thus done accordyng to the foresayde counsaile, shortlye after to byng hys purpose the better aboute, the sayd Gynnemeus accused certayne rulers of Fraunce suche as he well knewe were greute enemies vnto Chylderich, the whych he caused to be taken and sente vnto Gyll, & Gyll vpon them dyd sharpe execucion. In the whych he so perseuered that

that the frenchemen for remedy com-
playned theym to Guynemeus. To
whom it was by hym answered, that
he greatly meruayled of theyr vnsta-
blenesse that they hadde chosen to the
a kyng, and now so sodanly wolde
haue hym deposed, shewing further
moze that other they must call agayn
Chylderyche that exercysed hys lyfe
in voluptuousnes of luyng, or elles
they must dwell vnder the kyng,
whyche is cruell and full of bloude-
sheddyng, wyth dyuerse other exhor-
tacions concernyng the agayne cal-
lyng of Chylderyche to hys four-
mer dygnite, whyche for lengthe I om-
mytte and passe ouer

By meane of whych exhortacion,
Chylderyche was secretly sente for,
and receyued from hys trusty friend
the foresayde pece of golde, and spede
hym hastely into fraunce. Agayne,
whom, the foresayde Guynemeus in
lykewyse sped hym: so that they met
at a castell in the countrey of Cham-
pyon, where they wyth other to them
allyed, gathered a greate hoste, and
made towarde the foresayde Syll of
Gyllon. The whych haupng know-
lege of the sayde consperacye, ordai-
ned an army of knyghtes, and wente
agayne hys enemyes. But he was o-
uerlet and copelled for hys sauegard
to fle into the country of Doisons be-
fozenamed, where he after ended hys
naturall lyfe, and Chylderych was a-
gayn restored and made kyng.

Chylderych then thus restored vnto
hys regalyte, subdued soone after a
Saxon prynce named Onager, and
beseged the city of Oyleaunce, and ye
receaued vnto hys subieccion and af-
ter passed the ryuer of Ley, and sub-
dued to hys spgnoze the countrey of
Ange and Mayne.

When the fame of Chylderych was

broughte vnto Basyna the wyfe of
Besynge kyng of Turynge: she a-
none forsoke her owne lord, and sped
her into fraunce, and so to the plea-
sance of Chylderych, whome he recea-
ued wyth all gladnesse. And when he
hadde of her scayned the cause of her
comynge: she answered, for that
that she knewe and vnderstode to be
in hym moze vertue and honour, the
in any other man at þat day luyng. She
was therfore come vnto hym to con-
tinue the remnaunt of her lyfe in his
companye, addyng also thereunto
that yf in anye contrey she knewe his
better, she wolde then seache see and
lande to haue hym to her lord or hus-
bande. But for she was assured, that
he had no pere, she besought hym to
accept her into hys companye

The. lxxxvii. Chapter.

Then Chylderych putyng a-
parte and forgettyng kynde-
nesse to hym befoze shewed by
her husbände Besynge, maryed the
sayde Basyna yet beyng a pagan.
And whan thys Chylderych had ouer-
come some battayles in Almayn, and
them subdued to hys Emperre: he last
lye dyed when he had raygned, wyth
the. viii. yeres allowed to hys regne
for the tyme that he was exiled, and
wyth the resydue that he raygned be-
foze and after in all. xxiij. yeres, le-
uyng after hym a sonne begotten by
pon the fozenamed Basyna called e
Clodeo or after mooste wyrters Clo-
doueus.

Anglia

The. lxxxviii. Chapter.

Vytmerus the eldeste sonne
of Vortiger, was by assent of
the Bytys made king of By-
tayne, in the yere of oure lord. lxxi.
lxxii. & in the iiii. yere of Chyldericus
than kyng of fraunce. The whyche
in al

In al haste pursued the Saxons, and gaue vnto them a greate battayle vpon the ryuer of Darwent, where he hadde of them victorie. And secundarily he fought wth them vpon the foord called Eppfoord or Aglysthoor. In the whiche fyght Categnus the brother of Vortimer, & Hozius brother to Hengyst or cosyn, after longe fyght betwene them two, ether of the flew other, in whiche fyght also the Brytons were victors.

The thyrde battel he fought wth them, nere vnto the see syde, where also the Brytons chased the Saxons, and compelled them to take the yle of wyghte for theyr suretye.

The fourth battayle was nere vnto Dooze called Cole Dooze. The whiche was longe and fore foughte by the Saxons, by reason that the sayde Dooze closed aparte of theyr hoste so stronglye, that the Brytons mighte not winne vnto them for daunger of theyr shot. All be yt that synally they were chased, and many of the of constrainte, drowned and swallowed in the sayde Dooze.

And ouer and besyde these foure pryncypall battayles: Vortimerus had wth the Saxons dyuers other conflictes, as in Kent, at Thetford in Northfolke, and in Essex nere vnto Colchester, and lefte not tyl he had byraste from them the moze parte of such possessyons as befoze tyme they had wonne, and kepte them onelye to the yle Tenet, the whiche Vortimer was often greaued by suche nauy as he then had.

When that Bowen daughter of Hengyst perceivede the greate myschefe, that her father and the Saxons were in, by the marcpall knyghtehood of Vortimer: he soughte suche meanes, that shortly after, as testyfyeth

Gaustryde and other, Vortimer was porsoned, when he had ruled the Brytons after moost consojoe of wynters seuen yeares.

The.lxxxix. Chapter.



Vortimerus father of Vortimerus laste deade, was agayn restored to the kingdome of myche Brytains in the peate of our Lordes incarnacy on four hundred.lxxi. and the eleuenth peate of Chylderycus then kynge of Fraunce, the whiche all the tyme of the regne of hys sonne Vortimer, had rested him in the countre of Cambrya or Wales, where in thys passe tyme after some wynters, he buylded a stronge castell in a place called Generosi or Swapneten, in the weste syde of Wales, nere vnto the ryuer of Gwana, in an hyll or vpon an hyll called Cloarycus. But the olde cronicle be fore spoken of, sayth that thys Vortimer was kept somewhat vnder rule of certayne tutours to hym assigned in the towne of Caerleggon or Chester, & demeaned hym so well towarde hys sonne in apdynge of hym wth hys counsaile & other wyle, that the Brytons for it cast vnto hym such a fauour, that they after the death of Vortimer made hym agayne kynge.

It was not longe after that Vortimer was thus set in anethowre, but that Hengystus persed this lād wth a greate multitude of Saxons, wher of herynge Vortimer, in all haste assembled hys Brytons, and made towarde them. And when Hengystus had experyence of the greate host of Brytons: he then ordayned meanes of treate and peace, where lastelye yt was concluded that a certayne noubre of Brytons, and as manye of Saxons shulde vpon a daye daye assemble vpon the playne of Ambry, nowe called

called Saleisbury, whiche daye certaynely p̄fessed, Hengystus b̄ynge a newe maner of treason, charged all hys Barons by hym appointed, that eche of them shulde putte secretlye a longe knife in theyr hose, and at such season as he gaue to them this watch o; by worde, Remynth pour serys, that euerye one of them shulde drawe hys knyfe and slea a Byrtō, not sparynge anye one, excepte Mordgert the kyng. And at þ̄ day befoze appointed the kyng wth a certayne of Byrtōs not ware of thys purposed treason, came in peaseable wyse to the place befoze assygned, where he founde readye Hengystus wth his Barons.

The whiche after due obeysaunce made vnto the kyng, receaued hym wth a couēnace of all lone, where after a tyme of comurpacion hadde Hengyste beynge mynded to execute hys fourtner purposed treason, shewed hys watch worde. By reason wher of anone the Byrtōs were slayne as theye amonge woulues, haupnge no maner of wepen to defend them selves excepte þ̄ anye of them mighte by his manhode and strength get the knyfe of hys enemy. Amonge the nōumber of these Byrtōs was an Erle called Edolf o; Edolfe Erle of Caerleggon o; Cheetre, that whych seynge hys felowes and frendes thus murthered, as affermeth mine authour Gaufrid and other: he by his manhode wanne a stake in the hedge o; elles wheate, wth the whiche he knyghtlye saued hys owne lyfe, and slewe of the Barons. cxlii. and fled to the cty o; towne of Ambry nowē named Salysburye After whych treason thus executed, þ̄ kyng remayned wth Hengistus as prysoner.

Of the takynge of Mordgert and sleynge of the Lordes of Byrtayne,

an authoure called Guplelmus de regibus sayeth, that Hengystus agreed wth Mordgert and hys Byrtōs that he shulde intoepe the Castell by hym befoze made, wth a certayne of lande thereunto at loynynge for him and hys Barons to dwell vppon.

And when the sayde agreement was surelye stablyshed, thys Hengyst entēdyng treason, despyed the kyng wth a certayne nōumber of his lordes to come to hym to dynet wthyn hys sayde castell. The whych of the kyng was graunted. And at the daye assygned the kyng wth hys Lordes came to the sayde Thongecastell to dynet, where he wth hys was well and honourablye receaued and also depntely serued.

But when the kyng & hys lordes were in theyr moost myght, thys Hengyste had commaunded befoze, that hys owne knyghtes shulde fall at variance amonge them selves, whiche so done the reminaunt of hys Barons as it were in parting of trapes, shuld fall vppon the Byrtōs & slea them al out take onely the kyng. The whych was done like as ye haue hard befoze deuysed, and the kyng was holden as prysoner.

¶ The .xx. Chapter.

Hengistus then haupnge the kyng as prysoner, & a great part of the rulers of Byrtain thus as befoze is sayd inbouded; was some deale exalted in pryde, and compelled the kyng to geue vnto hym, as wytnesseth Polpctonpca, thre prouynces in the East parte of Byrtayne, whych thre prouynces shalde be hēte Southsaxon o; Sussex, and East Angles, whych is to meane Roelst, and Sulst, as a spymeth the authoure of the flour of byrtoppes. But Gwydo de colluma sayeth, that the foo; sayde thre

the prouinces was Kent, Eastsaxon, of Essex, and Eastanglys, whiche is Hoxst. and Suff. Of the whiche sayde prouinces when Hengist was possessed, he suffered the kyng to go at his libertie. And then Hengist began his lordshyp ouer þe prouince of Kent and sent other of hys Saxons to bewelde the other two prouinces, that is to saye Eastanglys and Eastsaxons, till he had sente for other of hys kynsmen, that he entended to geue the sayde prouinces vnto.

The kyngdome of Kent, here begynneth.



Thus Hengistus beyng in the possession of this prouince of Kent, commaunded his Saxons to call it Hengistus lande, wherof

as some authours meane, whole lade of Britayn toke his first name of Englande. But þe saying shal appere contrary, as shalbe shewed here after in the story of Eghert kyng of westsaxons. The which after he had subdued the more parte of the kyngdomes of Saxons, and made of all but one monarchy, he then commaunded this land to be called Anglia, and his Saxons Anglis, which after by corrupcyon of speche was called Englande, and the people Englyshemen.

This lordshyppe of kyngdome of Kent had his begynnynge under Hengist, in þe yere of our lord after mooste concordance of wynters, & by reason of the tyme, iii. hundred. lxxvi. And þe fyfte yere of Alstygers laste regne.

But Denis and other, that accopt this kyngdome to begynne in þe yere of oure Lord, foure hundred and. li. allowe the begynnynge thereof to be when Hengistus had first gyste of þe lande, by reason that Alstyger ma-

ried his daughter.

This lordshyppe conteyned the countree that stretcheth from east Ocean vnto the ryuer of Champs, and had vpon the southeast Southerye, and vpon the west London: vpon the northeaste, the Champs also; sayde, and Eastsaxon nowe Essex. And this lordshyppe: conteyned also the yle of Thanet.

Which lordshyppe of kyngdome endured after mooste wynters, frome the tyme of þe fyfte yere of the regne of Hengist, till the. xxb. yere of Egherte before named, by the tearme of thre hundred and. xlii. yeres solowynge that accompte. At whiche season the sayde Egherte then kyng of westsaxons, subdued Baldredus the kyng of Kent, and ioyned it to hys owne kyngdome.

Albe it that the authoure of Policronyca, affermeth it to endure by the space of thre hundred and. lxviii. vnder. xv. kynges, wherof Baldredus was the laste, whiche soloweth nere vnto the accompte of Denis before named. The fyfte chrysten kyng of this lordshyppe was Ethelbartus, or Ethelberte, the whiche receyued the fapth of Chyrt by that holy man saynte Austayne or Augustayn, nere aboute the yere of our lordes incarnacyon foure hundred. lxx. and. xvi.

The whiche Ethelberte caused soone after to be chyfde the monasterye of saynte Peter and Paule, in the eastsyde of ende of the cite of Dorobornia nowe Caunterbury. He gaue vnto this Austayne and his successors byshoppes of Caunterbury, a place for the Byshoppes see: at Chyrtres church within the sayde cite, & endowid it with many ryche possessions.

This Hengist and all the other Saxons whiche ruled the vii. yere

g. l. cypates

Handwritten notes:
Ethelbertus
496

Handwritten notes:
77

cyppates of Byrtayne, as after. Shall be shewed, are called of moſte wyrters reguli, whyche is to meane in oure vulgare ſpeche, as ſmall oꝝ lytell kynges. So that this Hengist is accompted a lytell kyng. The whiche when he hadde thus rule of þe foꝛesayde theꝝ pꝛouynces, he ſent foꝛ mo Sarons, and gathered them that were ſperkled abꝛode, ſo that in theſe pꝛouynces the ſapthe of Chꝛiſte was all quenched and in ſlepe.

Then Hengist with Octa his ſone gathered a great ſtregh of Sarons and foughte wꝛth the Byrtons, and ouercame the Byrtons, and chaſed theꝝ in ſuche wyſe, that Hengyſte kepte hys lordſchyppe in peace and warre by the ſpace of. xlii. yeres, as moſte wyrters teſtiſye.

The. xlii. Chapter.

Nowe then lete vs retourne a gayne to Woꝛtger, the whiche when he ſawe the Sarons in ſuche wyſe encrease theꝝ ſtrength, & the Byrtons dayly dyſcreaſe, foꝛ as wyrteth myne authoure Gauſtyde, þe Sarons had þe rule of London, yorke, Lyncolne, oꝝ Lindercoln, and Baer-guēt, that is Wyꝛcheſter, with otheꝝ good towꝛnes, wherfoꝛe as aftermeth the ſayd Gauſtyde, the king foꝛ ſente of the Sarons, & alſo foꝛ that that he was ſome deale warned of þe comyng of the two bꝛethꝛen, Aurely and Aiter ſonnes of Conſtantyne: he therfoꝛe conſydeꝛyng theſe many and greaꝛe daungers, fledde into Cambꝛia oꝝ Wales, and there helde hym foꝛ the moꝛe ſuretye, where as witneſſeth the ſayde Gauſtyde, he then buylded the caſtel befoꝛe myꝛnded. Of the whiche buyldinge and impedymēt therof, & alſo of the gettyng oꝝ byꝛth of Aiterlyne, and of his prophecies he made a longe woꝛke, the whiche I paſſe ouer

foꝛ dyuerſe conſydeꝛacyons, and re-tourne agayne to Woꝛtger.

Trouthe it is, that whyle Woꝛtger was thus beſeged in Wales the foꝛenamed bꝛethꝛen Aurely, and Aiter pꝛepared theꝝ naup: and men of armes, and paſſed the ſer, and landed at Cotneſſe, as ſapth the englyſh cronycle. Wherof when the Byrtons were ware that were dyſparklyd and ſeuered in many countres, they dꝛew to them in all haſty wyſe. The whiche ſayde bꝛethꝛen, when they ſawe that they had a cōpetent number of knyghtes, they made towarde Wales to deſtreſſe Woꝛtger.

Wherof he beyng warned, foꝛ ſo muche as he well knewe, þe he myghte not make ſuſſyꝛient defence by ſtreghth of knyghtes, he therfoꝛe gacnyſhed his caſtell with ſtreghthe of men, and vitayle, entendyng to ſauegarde hym ſelfe by that meane, but all in vayne. Foꝛ the ſayde two bꝛethꝛen with theꝝ armye, beſeged the ſayde caſtell, and ſynallye after many aſſautes, wꝛth wyld ſyꝛe conſumed the ſayde caſtell with Woꝛtger, & all that was therin.

Of hym it is redde, that he ſhoulde lye by hys owne daughter, in truſte that kynges ſhoulde come of his blood. And laſtly ended hys lyfe as befoꝛe is expreſſed, when he hadde rayꝛned nowe laſte. ix. yeres.

The. xliii. Chapter.

Aurelius Ambroſius, the ſeconde ſone of Conſtantyne and bꝛother to Conſtancius ſlayne by the treaſon of Woꝛtger, kyꝛg was made of the Byrtons in the yere of our loꝛde. ii. hundred. lxxx. yone, and þe. xxi. yere of Childeꝛtus then king of Fraunce. Of this it is ſaide, that when he heard of the diuſyon that was in the lande of Byrtayne betwene Woꝛtger and þe Sarons

ons, and in what maner the Saxons hadde subdued the Brytons, he in all goodly haste, wth ayde of the kynge of Iytell Brytayne, spedde hym into this lande. Where after the abovesayde victorie hadde of Moryger, he spedde hym towarde po^rke, as aftermeth Gaultpde, and there chasyd the Saxons, that held the cite with Octa o^r Olca sone of Hengist, and toke the sayde Octa, & kepte hym as a prysoner a certen ceason.

But howe so it was by treason of his keeper o^r otherwyse he brake pryson. And he with his father gathered after a greate hoste, and mette Aurelius & hys Brytons at a place called Cerekynfo^rde, where was foughten a stronge & myghty batayle, to the losse of both parties, but the more losse fyl vnto the Saxons. For of them was slayn foure dukes, and .iiii. thousand of other men, and that other dele chased to they^r great daunger. Yet this notwithstanding, Hengist continued his lordshipp in Kente, and Aurelius Ambrose, whiche the englyshe cronycle nameth Iurilambrose, kepte the countre called Loggers o^r middel Englande wth Wales, and chased the Saxons that dwelled in the two foze sayde prouinces of East Saxon, and East Anglys, out of those countres.

The seconde kyngdome.

The .xciii. Chapter.

In this passe tyme a Saxon named Ella, wth hys thye sonnes called Simen o^r Symon, Plettynger, & Cissa, came wth thye shippes called Obilas, and landed in the south part of Brytayne, & slewe many Brytons, at a place that then was named Cuneueshoze, and chased many vnto a woode then called Andesleger, and after occupied that countre, and inha-

bited hym and hys Saxons wthin the sayde prouince, making hym self kyng & lord thereof. By reason wherof, by his myght and power the sayde prouince o^r countre was after named the kyngdome o^r lordshipp of South saxons. The whiche after mo^rte concoide of wyrters shulde haue hys beginning the .xxii. yere after the fyrst conuynge of Hengist. Whiche folowynge that accompte shulde be in the yere of our lord. iiii. hundred. lxxii. and in the seconde yere of Aurely the kyng of Brytayne.

This kyngdome o^r lordshipp had in the eastside, Kente, in the south, the see and the yle of wyght, in the west, Hampshyre, and in the north, the Southerey, and conteyned as wytnesseth Gynbo, Southampton, Somersetshyre, Deuenshyre, and Cornewaple. Of which sayde kyngdome Ethelwaldus o^r Ethelwaldus was .i. king and the fyrste chrysten kyng. This kyngdome endured thowest ceason of all the other kyngdomes, and passed sonest into the other. For it endured not aboue an hundred and .xii. yeres, vnder .v. o^r .vi. kynges at mo^rte.

The .xcv. Chapter.

He to retourne where we lefte, Aurely, whiche as before ye haue harde, helde and occupied the myddell parte of Brytayne: with Cambria o^r wales, dyd his diligence to repayre ruynous places, as wel temples as other, & caused the seruyce of god to be sayde & done, which by meane of the Saxons was greatly decayd thorough al Brytayne. And after this, Aurelius beleged .i. Saxons in the hyll of Badon o^r Badowe where he slewe many of theym. But daylye the Saxons entreated & landed in manche Brytayne, as after Wal

g.ii. appere

Wherof the
hauen of Doy
eylmouth
was so called

appere. For shortly after a Saxon
named Dorch, landed wth hys two
sonnes at an hauen in Southse. Af-
ter whome as some authours meane
that hauen was after called Dorchs-
mouth, whiche kepeth þ name at this
daye. And in lykwys they came to
lande in dyuers places of Brytayne,
so that Aurelius had wth the many
conflyctes and batayles, in the which
he sped dyuersly, for he was sometime
byctour, and some season ouerset.

Wherof.

It is wyrtten of hym in the englysh
cronycle and other, that he by þ helpe
of Werlyn shulde fetch the greates-
tes now standing vpon the playne
of Salsburie, and called the Stone
henge, oute of Irelande, and caused
theym to be sette there, as they nowe
stande, in remembraunce of the Bry-
tons that there were slayne and bu-
ryed in the tyme of the communica-
cyon had wth Hengist and his Sax-
ons, as befoze in the stoye of Wo-
tyger is touched. But Policronica al-
ledgeth the honoure vnto Uter Pen-
dragon his brother. In the tyme of
this Aurelius, as wytnesseth also the
sayde Policronica, dyed Hengist in
his bed, when he had reigned ouer þ
Kentyshe Saxons. xliii. yeres. After
whose death Octa oꝝ Osa his sonne
ruled þ sayde kyngdome other. xliii.
peres. All be it, that the Brytysh bo-
kes, and also the Cronycle of Eng-
lande sheweth, that after that Aure-
lius had in batayle slayne Hengiste,
he toke vnto his grace Octa his sone
and gaue vnto hym a dwelling place
in the countre of Galetre, for hym &
his Saxons then leste on lyue which
seemeth not to be true, for mater, that
shal after ensue, and also for that that
befoze is touched of the Dyctes and
Scottes, in the tyme of the myserye
of the Brytons. Then it foloweth,

this Octa, noether augmented noꝝ mi-
nyshed his lordshyppe, but helde him
therewith contented as his father had
to hym leste it.

Lastely & in the ende of the reigne
of Aurely, Pascencius the yongeste
sonne of Woxtiger, whiche after the
deathe of hys father was fledde into
Irelande for feare of Aurely, purcha-
sed ayde of Guilamoure Kyng of
Irelande. And with a greates army
inuaded thys lande of Brytayne, by
the countre of Wales, in takyng the
Cytte of Denenia, and in wastynge
the sayde countre with yron and fyre.
In the whiche season and tyme Au-
relius laye sycke in his cytte of Ract-
guent oꝝ Wynchester.

For whiche cause he despyed hys
brother Uter to gather an hoste of
Brytons, and to appease the malice
of Pascencius and hys adherentes.
The whiche accordynge prepared
his hoste, and at length ouercame the
hoste of Pascencius, and slewe hym,
and the fozenamed Guilamour in the
same fyghte.

In this whyle & season that Uter
was thus gone agayne Pascencius,
a Saxon oꝝ other straunger sepyng
hym a Bryton, & a conynge man in
Dylyke, by the incyement of Pasce-
cius came vnto Aurely, where he laye
sycke, & by his subtyll & false meanes
purchased suche fauour wth those þ
were nyghe vnto the Prynce, that he
was put in truste to mynyster medy-
cynes vnto the kyng. This is named
of wyrters Copa oꝝ of some Coppa.

The whiche when he had espyed
his tyme conueryt to bynge aboute
his false purpose, he gaue to Aurely
a poccon enpoysoned, by vyolence:
whereof he shortly after was deade,
when he hadde reigned after mooste
wyrters vpon. xli. yeres.

The

The thyrde of fyfte.

The.xcvi. Chapter.

In the tyme of þe reigne of this Aurelius as wytnelleth þe author of Pollicronica & other, the kyngdome of East Anglis began vnder a Saxon named Issa, aboute the yere of our lord. iiii. hundred. lxx. and. xii. and the. xi. yere of Aurelius. The which kyngdome conteyned Roß and Suff. now called. Thy hadde in this east and north sydes, the see, in the northweste, Cambruge shyre, and in the weste, Saynte Edmundes dyche, and Hertfordshyre, and in the the south, Essex. This lordshipp was called fyfte Tassynis lordshyppe, and the kynges therof were named Tassyns, or after some auctoures the people. But fynally they were named east Anglys.

The fyft chyrche kyng of this pryncypate, was Redwaldus the thyrde kyng, but he was not so stedfast as belonged to his religion. Hys sonne named Corþwaldus was more stedfast, whiche after was slayne of a myssopleuyng man, and for Chyrstes saythe as some wyte. But Guydo sayeth that Sebertus was fyfte chyrche kyng of thys lordshyppe, & that he made saynt Poules church of London. This vnder twelue kynges endured, tyll the martyrdom of blessed Saynte Edmund laste kyng therof, the whiche was martyzed nere about the yere of our Lord. viii. hundred & lxx. By the whiche reason it shoulde folowe, that thys kyngdome shoulde endure by the tyme of. iii. C. lxxvii. yeres. And of this lordshyppe, at that dayes was Elnan or Thetford the chiefe towne. But after Guydo, this lordshyppe shulde begynne the yere of Grace spue hundred and. lxx. and then shulde it endure but. ii. hundred.

fourte scoze and. xli. yeres.

France.

The.xcvii. Chapter.

France.

Clodoueus þe sonne of chylbericus or Hildericus before named, was after the deith of his father ordeined kyng of France, in the yere of oure lord. iiii. hundred. lxx. and. iiii. and the thyrde yere of Aurelius the kyng of Bytayne. This of some wyters is named Clodoueus Lowys. The whiche shortly after that he of thys realme was authorized for kyng, hearing repoyte of the beaute and great vertue of Clotildis newewe to Cundebalde kyng or ruler of Burgoyne sente vnto hym a knyght named Aurelius to treat a marriage betwene þe kyng and Clotild or Crotild. The whiche Cundebald more for feare the for loue assentyd.

The cause wherof as myn author sayth was, for that this Crotild was enherytoure vnto the sayde lande of Burgoyne, and that she by reason of that marriage shuld recouer her right and putte hym from the rule therof. This Crotild had before that day receyued the sayth of Chyrste, & so contynuyng her religion was maryed to Clodoueus then a Paynym, and so endured a certayne of tyme. But yet she leste not to endure and tourne her lord to the saythe, in all that she myghte.

And after a certayne of tyme she was deliuered of a sonne: the whiche by meanes of Remigius, Bysshoppe of Baynes, and of the Quene Crotild, was chrystened and named Clodomerus, the whiche dyed within shortlye processe after. For that happe the kyng sayde, that his goddes were dyscontented wth hym, that he had suffred his chylde to be chrystened, and

G.iii. for

for wraethe therof had taken fro hym his chyld. The quene takynge the kynges sapenge in pacence, conceived the secende sonne, whiche also by the kynges agremente, was baptised.

This also after a certayne of tyme was vexed with a greuous sickenesse, in suche wyse: that it was lykely to haue dyed. Wherfore the kyng was then moze impacient, and blamed the religion of hys wyfe in mozte impacient maner. The whiche sapenges the quene toke paciently, and put al her confydence in god, to whom both she and Remigeus prayed so affectuously, that hys chyld was restored vnto perfecte helth.

Thus Clodoueus perseuerynge in hys erronious lawe, made warre vpon the Almaynes. In whiche warre beyng one daye occupied in fyghte agayn his enemyes, he wth hys people was putte to the wyse. Wherof when Clodoueus was ware, haupng greate dyede of hym selfe, called to mynde, the often exhortacion of hys wyfe, and of the greate vertue of her goddes lawe, and sodaynly lyfte hys eyes towarde heauen and sayde, god the whiche Clodoues my wyfe doeth honoure, now helpe me. And yf thys daye I maye passe thys daunger and obteyne victorie, I shall ener after worshippe the with true fayth. The whiche prayer shantly synysed, the frenchemen by dyuine power were so vnyed and knytte togyther, and so knyghtly wythstode they enemyes, that in shorte whyle after, they obteyned victorie. Whiche victorie had, hys kyng with greate tryumphe retourned into fraunce. Wherof when Clodoues was warned, she anon receyued hym with all ioye and gladnesse, thankynge her lord god of hys great

victory, but moze for that that he had forsaken hys idolatrye, and was become seruaunt of the only god souerayner of all the worlde.

The xxviii. Chapter.

IT was not longe after hys Remigeus was sente for. The whiche courtyned the kyng sufficiently in the fayth of Chyste, & vpon an Ester day folowing, with great solempnite baptised the kyng. After this solempnite done, the kyng hadde certayne wordes to the people, in exhortynge them to leaue theyr ydolatry, and to beleue in Chyste and hys saythe, by whose myghte and power onely he hadde vanquysed hys enemyes. By the whiche exhortacion and other meanes of Remigeus, much people were sone after conuerted and baptised.

Then the kyng buylded certayne newe monasteries, and dedycate the olde temples of ydolles in honoure of Chystes sayntes. Among hys which one was nere vnto the Cytie of Paris in the honoure of the 3 apostles Peter and Paule. It is wytnessed of mayster Roberte Sagwyne, that before these dayes all frenche kynges bled to bere in theyr armes. iii. tobyes. But after thys Clodoues hadde receyued Chystes religion, thys floure delyse were sente vnto hym, sette in a wynde of assure, the whiche syngs that tyme hath bene boyme of all frenche kynges.

Then it foloweth in the story, when Clodoues hadde sette his realme in due order: Clodoues callynge to mynde the treason done vnto her father, and also the wrongfull wythholdynge of her ryghtfull inherytaunce by her vncle Cundebald, exhorted her lord Clodoues to sende an Embassade, and to requyre restitution of her saide

The firste
ii. the
the firste
the firste

The firste
the firste

The firste
the firste

ryght, & whych was sone after done
And when the kynge had receaued an
answere, that the sayde Cundebalde
wolde not restore the sayde ryghte of
hys wyfe, he in all goodlye wyse pre-
pared an armie, and made warre by-
pon the sayde Cundebalde. And after
greate waste and destruction of the
countrie: Clodoueus synallye beseged
hym in a cite, & after tooke the sayde
cite by strength, and the sayde Cun-
debalde wythin the same as a prys-
oner. But by medycation of frendes &
greate gyftes, wyth also a yearly tri-
bute to be payed to Clodoueus, the
sayde Cundebalde was released and
set at libertie.

The .xcix. Chapter.

Thys voyage thus spede
and orderd, the kynge
left behynde hym an ar-
mye of .v. M. knyghtes,
vnder the gyding of Gu-
desyll brother of the foresayde Cun-
debalde, and after retournedde into
Fraunce. But sone after the kynge
departynge, Cundebalde contrary to
the promysse befoze made, gathered a
powere of knyghtes, and made warre
bypon hys sayde brother, and lastely
beseged hym in the cite of Wyenne,
wherupon of ether part was by shy-
mysshes and assautes greate people
slayne. All be it in the ende Cunde-
balde wanne the cite, and hys bro-
ther therein beynge, he afterwarde be-
headed. Aboute thys tyme greate dys-
cencion grewe betwene Clodoueus
and the kynge of Gothys called Ale-
xycus, whych variaunce by agrement
of both parties was put to the iudge-
mente of Theodoxyus than kynge
of Longobardes or of Italyas. The
whych after the sayde causes were
well and suffyciently argued and de-
bated befoze hym and hys counsaile

he synallye gaue sentence & a knyghte
of Clodoueus shulde stande bypon an
hille holdynge a speare byryghte in
hys hande, and that the kynge of Go-
thys shulde thowme or laye so muche
syluer as shulde in processe couer the
point of the sayde speare, whych sen-
tence as testifyeth mayster Robertte
Bagwyne, the Gothys dyspyled say-
ing, that they had not suffyciente syl-
uer wythin theyr lande to persourne
the sayde sentence. And for dyspente of
the same, certayne Gothys espyenge
a pryncce of Fraunce named Daterne
beynge assocate wyth some dyuers
frenshemen in a losse or Chamber
the whych Daterne had bene solycy-
toure for the frensh kynge in the for-
sayde matter: the sayde Gothys by
craftye and false meanes caused the
floorthe of the sayde chamber to falle
by whych meane the sayde Daterne
was greuously hurte, and manye of
the other in lykewyse, and som slayne.

Wherof whan Clodoueus had wy-
tyng, he beynge therewyth greatlye
amoued, and also because & Gothys
dyslovede the foresayde awarde: he
gathered shortlye after a great host.
And passynge the ryuer of Wyen: he
lastlye came to the syghte of hys ene-
myes. Then Clodoueus lodged hys
host nere vnto the monastery of saynt
Hyllary, wherein the nyght befoze &
battayle, he receaued tokens of vyc-
torye, the whych I passe ouer.

And bypon the moyn he set hys
people in aray, and made towarde
hys enemyes, and mette wyth theym
in a felde called Hogleodres, nere vnto
the ryuer of Cleue or Clyue, where
after sooye and longe syghte, he slewe
the aboue sayde Alexycus kynge of
Gothys (as sayth myne autho) wyth
hys owne hande.

But here shuld seme some discorde
of tyme

of tyme wyth other wyrters. For Cronyca cronicarum, Iacobus Phylippus, and other testyfy, that thys Alaricus was dead manye yeres before. For he shulde be kynge of Gothys by theyr sayng in the tyme that Honoryus brothe r vnto Archadys was Emperoure whych was aboute the yere of oure Loyde. lxxx. C. and. ix. that he began hys Emppye, wherfore master Roberte Sagwynne meanethe some other kynge of Gothys than Alaricus. For the sayde authours also assyrmien, that thys Alaricus dyed of sodayne syknes at a cytye named Cefancta: whan he had reygned after most wyrters. xl. yere.

Then it foloweth in the stoye, whā Clodoueus had thus obtayned victory of the Gothys, and set the country of Gupan in order, he sped hym a gayne into Fraunce.

And whan he was come into the country of Turoi, he was encountred wyth embasabours of h Emperours Anastasyus, and presented from the sayd Emperour, wyth gyftes & great pryce and honoure, and also admytted for a counsell of Rome, whiche at that dayes was a dygnyte of mooste honour, which done, he remytted the sayde Embassade wyth great gyftes. This sayng is assyrmied of the other wyrters, the whiche shewe thys honoure to hym to be done, for as much as he hadde overcome the Gothys, enemyes of Chyristes fapth. But they name not the kynges name that then reygned ouer the Gothys.

Thus thys noble and fyrst Chyristen prynce contynued hys lyfe in noble and marcyall dedes, in augmentynge hys kyngedome by knyghthe battayles and other wordlye prouysions, and lastlye dyed of Goddes bysytyng wyth al steadfastnes of fapth

whan he hadde reygned. xxx. yeres, leuyng after hym. lxxx. sonnes of Clodoueus hys wyfe, that is to saye Clodoueyus, Chyldebertus, Theodorycus and Clotharyus, or after some Latharyus, & was buryed in the monastery that he before neare vnto Darys had buylded, wyth suche epytaphy or superscriptyon vpon hys tymbre as after shalbe shewed.

But or I procede to the declaring of the foresayd epytaphy, for so much as I haue harde dyuers hold an oppynion, that the fapth of Chyriste was receaued in Fraunce or it was receaued in thys lande of Brytayne: therefore I shall note heare the tyme that thys Clodoueus fyrst toke Baptym whych was as Ranulphe monke and other testyfy, in the. xv. yere of hys reygne, or neare aboute, whiche was the yere of oure Loyde. lxxi. hundred lxxx. and. ix.

Wherby it apereth, consyderynge the tyme of Lucys fyrst Chyristen Prynce that euer was of Brytayne as before is shewed, that Chyristes fapth was by along tyme honoured in Brytayne, or it was honoured in Fraunce excepte that such as hold the foresayd oppynyō, accompte the fyrst comming of Chyristes fapth into Brytayne at the fyrst conuersacyon of the Sarōs when it was preached by saynte Augustyne and hys felowes, whiche is not to the purpose. Than to the foresayd epytaphy or superscriptyon as foloweth.

*Q Dives opum, uirtute potens, clarusq; triumpho
Condidit hanc sedem, rex Clodoueus idem,
Patricius magno, sublimis fuit honore,
Plenus amore dei, contempsit credere nullo,
Lumina qui uariis horrent potentia figuris,
Mox purgatus aquis, et Christi fonte renatus
Fragrantem gessit, infuso crismate crinem.*

Exemplūq. dedit, sequitur quod plurima turba
Gentilis populi spretoq. errore suorum
Doctore cultura deum, uerumq. parentem
Huius felix meritis, superauit gesta priorum
Semper concilio, castris bellisq. tremendus
Hortatu dux ipse bonus, ac pectore fortis
Constructas acies formauit in agmine primus

The whyche verses maye be thus
expounded in our mother tungue as
here after foloweth.

Kyng of goodes, stronge in vertue, in triumph
byrnyng,
Kyng Clodouens, thys temple buylt of stoon
fether of comen profete, cladde wpyth hys hono
ure excellyng,
Replenyshe wpyth gods loue, dyspyssed hys olde
faine,
And hys pagan fawe, wpyth the stronge figures
echoone,
Purged wpyth holpe water, by Chrystes founte
borne newe,
And holy cypse enoynted, floure wpyth vertue
dewe
Exemple geuyng, hym folowe many a manne
for sayng they: errou, and they: false gods al
And by hys teachyng, honour but one god thā,
Thus by his merytes, he excelled hys parentall
And through hys counsaile, made cpye and ca
stell thall,
He was a noble Duke, and therewpyth of greate
myghte,
And in frounce of battayle, was euer the fyrste
myghte.

Anglia

The .c. Chapter.



Ver the last of pon
gest sonne Consta
tine, and brother of
Aurelius, was ma
de kyng of Bytayne
in þeare of our
Lorde, fyue hun
dred euen, and the. xvi. yeare of Clo
douens than kyng of Fraunce.
Thys as before is touched, was sur
named Wendrago. The cause therof
was as wytnesse the Englysh Cro
nycle, for so muche as Werlyn lye

ned hym into a Wyago vnder a sterre
apperinge in the firmament, wherof
there is made a longe processe, as by
Gaufride in hys Bytayne boke also
affirmed, the whyche to me semeth of
lytle credence. But truth it is, that af
ter Uter was (as before is sayd) made
kyng, he was enamored vpon the
dukes wyfe of Cornewale named Ig
warne or Igoz, and for to obayne
hys vnlesfull lust, sought manye and
druers meanes. So that lastely he
made warre vpo her husband named
Carolus or Gozleis, & at lenth slew þe
sayde duke at hys castell called Tyn
tagel, standyng in Cornewale, and
after maryed hys wyfe, and receaued
of her the noble knyghte Arthur, and
a daughter named Amy, as sayth the
Englyshe cronycle.

Arthur the son
of Uter.

More is not leste of any wyter of
aucthorite in remembraunce of thys
Uter, all be it, that some tellpye, that
he by the healde of Werlyn shulde
fette Coria gigantum otherwys cal
led the stoon henge, oute of Ireland
as before I haue shewed in the storye
of Aurelius. And of Gaufrid is shew
ed, that Uter also shulde wyne the
foresayde Ladye by the euchaunte
ment of Werlyn, whych is not come
lye to anye chrysten telyggon to geue
to any such fantasie call illusyon &
ny mynde of credence, wherfore I
passe ouer, leuyng all the other mat
ter, whych also is there rehearsed of
the warre betwene Uter and Osa,
sonne of hengyst, for somuche as it is
dyscredante vnto other wyters, and
synallye conclude that this Uter þe
dragon dyed by force of venyme, whē
he had ruled thys yle of Bytayne by
the full terme of. xvi. yeares, and af
ter was buryed by hys brother Aure
lye in Coria gigantum or ston henge
leuyng after hym the fornamed sonne
the

the puyssaunt Arthur.

Francia.

The. ci. Chapter.

Lotharius or Clotharius the yongest sonne of Clodoueus, was made kinge of a part fraunce called Sopsons, in the yere of our Lord. v. C. and. xiii. and the. xliii. yere of Aler then kynge of muche Bytayne.

Ye shal vnderstande that after the deathe of Clodoueus laste kynge of fraunce, the lande by hym was deuyded to hys four sonnes. That is to saye to the eldest sonne Clodomys was appoynted the Loydeshippe of Dyleaunce, to Theodorus the seconde sonne Austracye, to Chyldebertus the thyrde sonne middel fraunce or the countrey lyinge aboute Parys and to this Lothary, the aboue sayde loydeshippe of Sopsons. Of whiche sayd loydeshippes eyther of them possessed, they were of theyre subiectes called kynges, and so continued in good reule a certayne of tyme. In the whiche season Clotild theyr mother bearynge in mynde the vnnaturall death of her parentes: willed her sonnes to venge theyr death, whych deth as testyfeth Vincent hystorial, and also Antonius, was in thys fourme folowynge. Guendenchus the graud father of Clotildys had. iiii. sonnes, that is to saye Cundebaldus, Gondygyllus, Helypericus, and Godomar: To these. iiii. sonnes Guendenchus besette the lande of Burgoyne. Gondygyllus and Godomar dyed, wherfore the lande of Burgoyne fell to Cundebaldus and Helypericus. Then Cundebaldus for couetyse of the hole loydeship, slewe hys brother Helypericus, and fastened a greute stone to the necke of hys wyfe, and caste

her into a deape water. And of hys two daughteres, wherof the eldeste byghte Crona, he exiled in pooze we-de or clothyng. And the yonger he kepte in seruage wythin hys owne court.

The whych after as befoze is mented was maryed agayne hys wil vnto Clodoueus father to thys Lothary. Then it folowethe, thys Lothary sonne of Clotild made sharpe warre vppon Spgylinonde sonne of Cundebaldus, which then was deade. In the whych warre the eldest sonne Clodomys was slayne, leuynge after him thre sonnes named Theobaldus Guntherus or Guntharte, and Clodoaldus, whiche two sonnes toke to her tucion and gudyng. But the other brother mayntayned the warre agayne the Burgonions, in such wyse that fynally they obtayned the ryght porcyon of theyr mother Clotild.

After thys warre was fynished in Burgoyne: Chyldebertus the thyrde sonne hearinge that Almarcus kyng of Spayne mysse entreated hys suster, made warre vpon hym, and lastly hym subdued and set hys suster in her former estate.

But whyle the sayde Chyldeberte was thus in Spayn occupied: Theodorus hys brother toke from hym a cytie to hym belonging called Mout clesse, and slewe the knyghtes whiche Chyldebertus had leftte there to kepe the sayde cytre. For this mescheuous dede arose great debate between these two brethren, but by medycapon of frendes, they were at length accorde. Then Theodorus sought newe meanes of dyspleasure agaynst hys sayd brother, as wel treason as other wyse the whych Chyldebert by hys polycy and wysedome and wpth good fortune escaped.

Chyldebert

the kynges at
once, raygned
in fraunce.

Chyldebertus than casting in his mynde howe he myghte wynn to hym the patrymonye of the lordeship that latelpe belonged vnto hys eldest brother Clodomysus, toke counsell of hys brother Clotharius. In suche wyse þey together of one assent, sent vnto theyr mother Clotilde for theyr newnes chyldren of theyr brother. And she nothyng mistrustynge them, set the sayde chyldren vnto the sayd two brethren. But wythin shorte tyme of theyr commynge vnto theyr sayde vncles, as testifythe mayster Roberte Bagwine, and also the French cronycle, Clotharius tyrannously whyth his sworde slewe two of the sayd chyldren. And then the thyrde fledde for hys safegarde vnto suche as him fauoured. He was after agayne taken and compelled to make solempne othe: that he shulde become a relygious man, and neuer clayme anye parte of hys right or enheritaunce. By whych vnclefull meane the two brethren obtayned the hole Lordeshyppe of Orleans, and parted the reuenues therof betwene them, but that endured but a whyle. And here I passe ouer the sorow that Clotilde made for the chyldren of her sonne Clodomysus, and also the ordering of the yongest sonne called Cloaldus, whiche escapedde the daunger of his vncles, as befoze is shewed the whiche wolde aske a longe season.

The. cii. Chapter.

IT was not longe after, but that the seconde brother kynge of Duke of Austracy, dyed of Gods bysytacion, leuynge after hym a sonne named Theodebertus. The whiche of hys two forsayde vncles was greuouslye warred by longe tracte of tyme, the whiche he defended throughe hys maynynal knyght

hode. And when he by dyuerse meanes had sought peace and myght not purchase it he then founde such meanes by each gyfte and otherwise, that he wanne the fauour of hys vncle Chyldebert, & cherisshed him as hys frend. Then fell vnkynndnes betwene Chyldebert and Clotharius, in so muche that ether of them assembled a great host to subdue that one the other.

But the fornamed Theodebertus made al the power he myght, to ayde and assyste Chyldebert. So that bypon bothe parties, was a great multitude of knyghtes armed, ready to fyghte.

And sodaynly fell suche a tempeste of wynde and hapll wyth thunder and lyghtenynge, that bothe hostes were so greuouslye beaten wyth the sayde tempeste and wetherynge, that ether of them had mooste mynde howe they myght defende them selves from daunger of the sayd wetherynge. And ouer that, as testifieth the aboue named authoure, ether of the hostes thoughte in theyr myndes, that they were chased of there enemyes, in such wyse that ether of them fledde frome other by a longe space.

After this, ether of them sent meanes of treatyse ether to other, and at lengthe conspyrmede a peate betwene them. The whiche peace surelye on bothe parties assured, Chyldeberte excepted hys brother to warre vpon a people of country called Terra Conens in the prouynce of Spayn, and beleaged the cite of Saragoance otherwise called Augusta, and fynally kepte the ctytysns so shorte, that they to appace theyr enemyes sought meanes.

But yet that not wythstandynge, though the serge were wythdrawen and the cite sparred: yet the country there

there aboute they pylled and wasted wythout ppyte. And after wyth great richesse of pray, returned into Fraunce where at Paris by Chyldeberte sone after was builded a monastary which at this daye is called saynte Germainus de Paris.

In this whyle, I cannot save by what happe, these two brethren newlye maligned agayne theyre newe Theodobert & sonne of theyr brother Theodorych. And intended by theyr malice to byrue hym of the Loyde-shippe of Austrace. And to that intent, gathered theyr people to warre upon the sayde Theodobert, wherof when he sayd Theodobert was ware consyderinge he coude not so shortlye assemble his people to withstand the malice of his sayde uncles: he in lowlye and good maner rode agayne them a peatyle wyse. And to them he haued hym so well in woide and dede that they alonlye forgaue not his trespassse: but also sente hym agayn with greate rycheesse of gyftes. Soone after this tyme dyed Clotilde the wyfe of Clodouus, the whych wyth grate pompe of her two sonnes was buryed by her sayde husbände.

And shortlye after dyed Theodobert fornamed, leuynge after hym a sonne named Theobalde. In this passe tyme Lotharius of his wyfe receaued. vii. sonnes & two daughters. Of the whiche Crampys the eldest sonne he sente vnto Gupan, to haue the rule therof vnder his father. But he contrarie to his fathers mynde, oppressed the inhabytauntes thereof wyth greuous exaccions and trybute, wherefoze his father beyng dyscontente, called hym thence. Crampys wyth this thyng sooze moued, in great anger departed his fathers courte, and wente vnto Chyldeberte

his vncle, excciting hi to make warre bypon his father, pmagynng false occasiōs to bynge the two brethren at distaunce, and made a solempne othe to his vncle, that duringe his lyfe he shuld strength his party agaynst his owne father, whych assuraunce thus made, Chyldeberte prepared his host to warre agaynst his brother Lotharius. But the sayd Lotharius of this beyng warned, for suche let as he then had, sent agaynst his enemyes two sonnes of his, named Guntharnus and Irbertus, and whyle these two sonnes made toward Chyldebert, he in that whyle made greate wast in the countrey of Champayne and takynge great pyples, returned into his owne countrey of mpyddle fraunce, wherof hearynge the fornamed Githmanus and his brother, and also that Gupan was moued warre by Crampys, spedde theym thither wyth all theyr people. But they dyd nothyng woorthy memoire or laude.

In this seson, dyed the fornamed Chyldeberte brother of Lotharius wythout heire, when he hadoe ruled mpyddle Fraunce. clvii. yeres, as sayth the french cronycle, and was entered in the monastary of saynte Vincent otherwyse called saynt Germaine de Paris.

The. xiii. Chapter.

After the death of Chyldebert, for so much as he dyed wythout heire, Lotharius fornamed frased all mpyddle Fraunce into his possession. And after he had some tyme set it in order, not forgettynge the vnnaturall rebellyon of his sonne Crampys, chose vnto hym a pure compaignie of knyghtes and of competent number, and in all hast made toward Gupan: where he sayd Crampys was then

then abdyng. But when he harde of the comynge of his father agayne hym with his chosen armye: he wyth dyrtwe hym to the bittermoste parties of fraunce, & requited aide of a king or duke to that partye abdynginge named Gonobalde, the whyche to hym promysed ayde to his power.

Lotharius of this assynste beynge warned, pursued the sayde Gonobalde so sharply, that he constrained hym at length to take the church of Saynte Martyne, and to holde it for his sauegarde. But when Lotharius had assayed by dyuerse meanes as well by saye promys as wordes of manasses, and myghte not get the sayde Gonobalde oute of the sanctuarie: he sette the churche on fyre, and bent the duke in the same, the which shortly after he reedysed and made in moze better maner then it befoze hadde bene.

Whē Cramiris was thus disapointed of the aide of Gonobalde: he then fledde into lytell Brytaine, and requited ayde of the erle therof, named Cenabutus, where by comforte of the sayde erle, he assembled a greate hoste to withstande his father. Wherof the father beynge ascerteyned, dyrtwe toward hym. And when bothe hostes were nere, they sente messangers to hys father to entreate a peace. But Lotharius included so many harde condicions within the sayde peace, or as some wyrters meane, Cramiris despyed suche vnlefull despyes of hys father, that the sayde treaty might take none effecte. And for truste, that he had in the Brytons and his strength he was utterly bent to trye hys cause by dynt of swerde.

Lotharius hauynge experieñce that fortune of batayle is in victorie doubtful and vncertayn: he therfore made

his prayer to god, beseechynge hym of ayde agayne the innaturall and obdinate rebellyon of his sonne.

After which prayer ended, he commaunded in the name of god to sette vpon his enenies, which mette with so greate pye, that shortly, the grene felde was dyed into a perpyght redde and many knyghtes vpon both parties laye slayne, and grunting vpon the earthe. The father comfortynge and callynge vpon hys knyghtes vpon the one parte, and the sonne vpon his knyghtes vpon that other parte, eyther of them entendinge the death and bitter destruccyon of eche other, thus thys batayle hangynge in suspense to whether of them the victorye shoulde tourne: sodenly the Brytons gaue backe, and gaue place to the frenchemen. With the whiche the frenche party being comforted, enforced the Brytons with so sharpe fyght that they were compelled to forsake the felde, and toke theym to flyghte, whome the frenchemen chased and slewe without mercy.

In the whyche chase Cramiris wyth his wyfe and chylderne were taken and presented vnto Lotharius. The whyche shortly after, settinge a parte all fatherly loue, compassyon and pitye, caused a greate fyre to be made, into the whyche he commaunded to be caste the sayde Cramiris, with also his wyfe and chylderne. Or as wytnesseth the frenche cronycle, they were all enclosed in a house, and the house & they together consumed with fyre.

Thus the moste cruel father without pitye chastysed hys inobedient sone to the example and lernynge of other, to beare due obedience vnto theyr parentes. After this victorie and cruell chastysment executed by Lotharius
h.i. he pel-

he yelded thankes vnto almyghtye god, and so retourned into Fraunce. And after sped hym to Bolls, where he as kyng of all Fraunce, excepte þe lordshippe of Austracy, which Theobaldone of his brothers sones Theodorych then held. The father of this Theobald was Theodobert. Then Lotharius seinge his lande in rest & quietnesse, gaue hym to huntynge & chase of wyld beasts, a game of great vse among all French prynces.

In whiche disporte he being one daye greatly trauayled, caught some surfet, of the whiche ensued a mortal syknes, so that he dyed shortly after when he had reigned as before is specified ouer the lordshipp of Bopsons and other, by þe terme of .l. wynter ful. And was after buried at Bolls with great pompe, leuynge after hym foure sones, Guntzarus, Tribertus, Chilpericus, and Sigebertus.

It is testifed of mayster Robert Gaguene, that Radegunde boine of the countre of Churynge, of a Pagan father named Bernigartus, was wyfe to this Lothar. Whose vertuous lyfe Antoninus in hys boke called *Diff. Antonini*, in the .viii. chapter and .xii. tytle of the second parte of his worke, sheweth copendiously.

Anglia.

The .ciii. Chapter.

Arthur.



Arthurus the sone of Uter Pendragon, a strepelyng of .xv. yeres of age, beganne his regne as kinge of Brytayne, in the yere of our lord .b. c.

and .c. vii, and the thyrde yere of Lotharius, then kyng of Fraunce, or of a parte therof, as before is declared.

Of this Arthur is by Gausfryde re-
cited a longe storie, and allowed by

the englysh cronycle, the whych from other wyrters is greatly discordeant. But yet all Authours agreen that he was noble and victorouse in all his dedes.

Fayne I wolde declare the fame of this noble pryncce, to the comforte of other to folowe hys martyrall dedes, so that I myght somewhat iustifye my repute by some authoure of authoritie. But the more I am in doute, bycause of the sayinge of Ranulphe monke of Chestre, which vouchyth it vpon Wyllyam wyrtter of his stories of kynges, as is reherced at length in the fyfte Chappter of the fyfte booke of Policroicon, whiche is there open to euery man that is desirous to knowe the sayde repute or oppynion, the whiche for the lengthe therof I ouerpasse. And somewhat to the honoure of so greete a champpion as was this Arthur, I shal laye vnto the reder, that he maye with authoritye shewe vnto the hearers, and therewith gladd the welsheman, that he shulde descende of so noble a victour whiche so many dedes of honour executed in his dayes.

Then as testifeth Policroicon and other, Arthur foughte twelue notable bataylles agayne the Saxons, and of them all was victour.

Wherfore the fyrst was vpon the ryuer of Cleu, and .iiii. of the nexte were foughten vpon the ryuer Douglas, which runneth vnder the towne of Wygan, vpon ten myles from the ryuer of Wyke in Lancashyre.

The .vi. batayle was vpon the ryuer called Bassa.

The seventh besyde Lincolne in a wood called Celidon.

The .viii. and the .ix. were foughten about Poike.

The .x. was about Ayrcoll towne whiche

The fyfte parte.

274

whiche is named Wastwyche as after some wyters.

The. xi. was at Bathe, where he longe beleaged Cerdicus kyng of Wellfarens.

The. xii. and laste was at a place called Badon or Babow hel, in which he slewe many Saxons. But that notwithstandinge he myght not cleerly voyde them hys lande, but that they kept theyr countrees, which they were before possessed of, as Kent, Southetey, and Dorset. all be it that some authours testify that they helde these countrees as tributaries unto Arthure.

This noble warriour as wytneseth Gildas, slewe wyth hys owne hande in one daye by the helpe of god a hundred and. ii. Saxons, he bare the ymage of our Ladye paynted in hys helme, whiche helme he called Wyrdwen, his sword was called Calibour, & his speare was called Rone after the bytyche tunge or speche.

The. cv. Chapter.

ABoute the fyfte yere of this Arthure, after the agremente of mooste wyters beganne the lordshippe of Wellfarens, vnder the Saxon called Cerdicus, and Kenricus his sonne. For Denys and other wytnesse, that this lordshippe or kyngdome shoulde haue his begynnyng the. lxxi. yere after the fyfte commynge of Hengiste, or the yere of our lordes fyue hundred. xxi. whiche agreeth with the fyfte yere of Arthure aforesayde.

This lordshippe conteyned the weste countre of Englande, as wylshyre, Somersetshyre, Berkes, Dorset, and other, as Devonshyre, and Cornemayle, and hadde in the Easte syde Douthampton, in the flozhe,

Chanis & famous ryuer, in the south and weste the see Ocean.

This foresayde Cerdicus, which of some authours is named Childe-ricus, landed fyrst at Cerdishoze which now is called permouth, an haven towne in the countre of Dorset. And by helpe of other Saxons then inhabited in that countre then called east Angles: the sayde Cerdicus at length obtayned the foresayde countre, and named it wellfarens or wellfarenia, and reigned therein as lord or kyng a certeyne of yeres, and Kenricus his sonne after hym.

The fyfte chrysten kyng of this prouynce: was named kyngulfus, and conuerted by meanes of that blessed man Berinus byshoppe of Dorchester. To whome Quichelinus brother of the foresayd kyngulfus, gaue the sayde cite to make there hys see, after he also hadde receyued baptisme of the sayde Berinus. And as Gupdo witnesseth the sayde Quichelinus gaue after to the Byshoppe of Wynchester seven myles compasse of land to buyde there a Byshoppes see, the whiche was accomplished and fynished by Kenwalcus his sonne.

This kyngdome endured longest of alle the other, whiche were leuen in number, or fyve besyde this. Some wyters accompte the tyme of the duraunce of this kyngdome, frome Cerdicus to Egbert, and some to the laste yere of Aluredus. But Gupdo accompteth the enduraunce of this kyngdome, frome the fyfte yere of Cerdicus vnto the laste yere of Edward & confessor. By reason whereof it shulde endure fyue hundred and lxxi. yeres. But mooste accordyngelye it shoulde be rekened frome the fyfte yere of Cerdicus to the laste yere of Aluredus. For he made one monar-

h. ii. shye

East Angles

the Monar

12

chpe of all. vij. kyngdomes, in which tyme dyd flowe o; passe thye hundred lxxviij. yeris.

The. cxi. Chapter.

Arthur.



Now then I wyl recture vnto Arthur, the whiche by a longe tyme dwelled in warre and moztall batayle wth the Saxons, by meane of theye dayly repayre into thys lande. The whiche also alped them with Dyctes and other nations, and made they; partye the stronger by that meane. But per Arthur by his marcpal knyghthode brought them in luche frame, that he was accounted to; chfe lorde of Brytayne.

Finally, when he had by a longe tyme maynteyned hys warrs agayn the Saxons, and sprecially agayne Cerdicus o; Childricus kyng of west saxons: he fo; a synall concorde gaue vnto the sayde Cerdicus, as testifyeth Policronica in the lxxv. Chapter of his fyft boke, the two countres of Hamplshyre, and Somerset. And when he hadde let hys lande in some quyetnesse, he betoke the rule thereof vnto his neuwe Ho;dyed, and with a chosen armie sayled, as sayeth Gaufride and other, vnto Fraunce, wher by p; repo;te of Gaufride he wrought wonders.

But the wyrters of French cronicles touche nothyng of luche notable dedes, no; per the wyrters of Romaynes mynde, nothyng of luche actes done agayne they; consull o; emperoure called by Gaufride Lucius Hybertus. Therefore I wyl spare all that longe mater: remittyn; p; wellshemen, as touchynge that p;ocesse vnto the sayde Gaufride. And here I wyl folowe Policronicon, where he sayth, that fo; as much as the fo;ren med Ho;dyed was despyse to be

kyng, and feared some dele p; myght of Cerdicus kyng of westsaxons: he therfore dyde to hym the sayde Cerdicus by greute gyftes, as of towncs and castelles & other meanes, where tho;ough the sayde Cerdicus to hym ascended, so that Ho;dyed was at London crowned kyng of Brytayne, and Cerdicus after p; v;le of pagans was at Winchester then called Gaergrut, crowned kyng of westsaxons.

When relacon came to Arthur of all this treaso; wrought by his neuwe Ho;dyed: he in all the haste made towarde Brytayne, as it is redbbe in the englyshe cronycle, & landed at Sandwyche, where he was mette of Ho;dyed and his people, which gaue vnto him stronge batayle in tyme of his landynge, and losse there many of his knyghtes, as the samouise knyghte Gawpne and other. But per this notwithstanding Arthur at length won the lande, and chased hys enemyes, and after the enterprynge of his cosyn Gawpyn, and other of hys knyghtes there slayne, he sette forwarde hys hoste to pursue his enemyes. Ho;dyed thus beyng ouersetle of his vnicle at the see syde, wythdyde hym to Winchester. Where he being surp;sed of newe soudpours, gaue vnto Arthur, as sayth Gaufride, p; second syghte, wherein also Ho;dyed was put to the worse, and constrained to flee. Chydely and lastely the sayde Ho;dyed fought with his vnicle Arthur besydes Glasynbury, where after a longe and daungerouse syghte, Ho;dyed was slayn, & the victorious Arthur wounded vnto the death, and after buried in the vale of Avalon be syde Glasynbury befo;esayde.

Of thys laste ende and buryenge of Arthur in the Brytish boke is tolde many fables. But to opp;esse p; errors

The fyfte parte.

87.

errours of þe Byttons, þe thinke oþ by-
hwe þe Arthour pet lyueth: Policro-
n sheweth in hys fozenamed chapp-
ter of his. v. boke, þe in the seconde þe
ryes tyme, kynge of Englande, the
bones of the sayde Arthour and Gwaj-
nour his wyfe were founden, and tra-
nslated into the foysaide church of Gla-
synburpe, and there newe buried in
the pere of our lord. xl. hundred. lxxx.
And moze specially it is noted in the
xxiii. chappiter of the. vii. boke of Po-
licronicon aboue sayde.

Wherfoze to be at a conclusyon of
a fyne of this noble warriour, he was
as befoze is shewed, slayne oþ wound-
ed to death, when he hadde regned
ouer the Byttons by þe tennie of. xxi. vi.
yeres, wyllynge befoze his death that
Constantyne the sone of Cado: duke
of Cornewaple, fo: so much as of his
bodye remayned none heye, that he
shulde be hys heye and enheryte the
lande of much Britayn after his deeth

Anglia.

The. cxi. Chapter.

Constancius the sone of
Cado:, duke of Corne-
waple, by assente of the
Byttons was of theim
crowned kynge of much
Britayne, in the pere of Chyestes in-
carnation fyue hundred. xliii. and the
xii. pere of Lotharius then kynge of
fraunce. Thys was nere kynnes-
man vnto Arthure, and was by the
two sonnes of Mordred greuoulye
bered, fo: so muche as they claymed
the lande by the right oþ tytle of their
father. So that betwene hym and
them were foughten many and son-
dyge batayles. Whereof nether of
place no: of tyme is lefte any conue-
nient memoze, no: yet of the names
of the sayde two sonnes.

But as dyuers authours agree

after these foysesayde batayles thus
foughten, fynally the two sonnes of
Mordred were conscreyned of pure
foze to seche stronge holdes fo: their
refuge, wherfoze that one toke Lon-
don, and that other Winchester.

Wherof Constantyne being war-
ned, lefte not tyll he hadde slayne that
one within the monastyr of saynte
Amphibyll at Winchester, and that
other wythin a temple oþ church of
London, whiche temple is named of
Gaufryde an house of freeres. But þe
sayinge is douteful, fo: at that dayes
it is to be supposed, þe there was none
house of freeres wythin London, no:
by a longe tyme after.

When Constantyne had thus sub-
dued his enemyes, and thought hym
seife in a maner of suertye of hys re-
gion: then fortune as we hadde en-
uyed hys gloze, arreyd agayne hym
his owne kinneman named Aureli-
us Conanus, the which agayne hym
made mortall batayle, and fynally oþ
at the last slewe hym in the felde, whē
he hadde regned after mooste accorde
of wynters thye yeris, the whiche was
then buried at Stone lyenge by the
sepulture of Uter Pendragon, wyth
greate solemnite.

The. cxii. Chapter.

Aurelius Conanus þe cosyn
of Constantyne last named
was crowned kyng of Bry-
tayne, in þe pere of our lord.
v. c. and. xvi. & the. xxii. pere of Lo-
tharius befoze named, then kynge of
fraunce. This was noble & lyberall.
But he was a man þe cheryshed suche
as loued stryfe and dyscencion with-
in his lande, and gaue lyghte credēce
to theim that accused other, were it
ryghte oþ wronge. And as testify-
eth Gaufryde and other, he toke by
strength hys vnkle, whiche of ryghte
h. iii. shulde

Aurelius Conanus.

Aurelius Conanus.

Shulde have bene kyng, and caste him in a stronge pysson, & after slewe tyrannously the two sonnes of his said uncle. But he retoyred hys regne but thoste whyle. For as wytnesseth the sayde Saukyde, when he hadde reygned two yeres, he dyed, were it of the hande of god or otherwise, leuynge after him a sone named Moriporius as hath the anchoure of the boke named floure of histories.

Of this Moriporius speaketh no thyng the englyshe cronycle, but telleth of two kynges that shoulde regne nexte after Constantine both at ones wherof the one he nameth Adelbyght and that other Edyll. Whereunto, none othere wytter agreeth, excepte that he nameth them for some of the kynges of the Saxons. For aboue that tyme reygned in Kent or sone after, Ethelberte or Ethelbert, whiche myghte be taken of some for Adelbyght. And that other whiche he named Edyll, myghte be taken for Ella kyng of Southsaxons. But this Ella shoulde not by concoorde of wytters helyping at this tyme. It might wyth moze conueniency accorde, that it shoulde be a kyng of Deira, or of Northumberlande named Ella, the which reigned moze aboue this tyme and season.

Of these two kynges, the sayde englysh cronycle telleth a longe processe the whiche for I fynde none authour of authoryte that wytteth or speaketh of the same, I passe it ouer.

Ye shall also furthermoze vnderstande, that after this dawe, the Brytons dayly discreasid of lordshyppe and rule within Brytayne, and dyed them towarde Cambry or Wales, so that the countre aboute Cheshire was the cheefe of theyre lordshyp within Brytayne. For dayle the Saxons

landed with compaynes, and occupied the pynceypall parties of the same as shortly here after shall appere.

The fyfte kyngdome of the Saxons.

The six. Chapter.



At the tyme of the reigne of this foze named Aurelius Conan, as witneseth Polycronica, Gyrdo, and other: beganne the kyngdome of lordshyp of Brycenia vnder a Saxon named Ida, the pere of our lord. v. hundred and. xliii and the second or laste pere of the sayde Conanus. This lordshyp was in the north parte of Brytayne, and grewe in thoste whyle moze & moze, so that finally it was named the kyngdome of Northumberlande. But ye shall vnderstande, that this lordshyp was fyrste deuyded in two kyngdommes, wherof the fyrste, as aboue is sayde was called Brycenia, and that other Deira. The meris or markis of this kyngdome of Northumberland were by East and by weste the ocean see, by South the ryuer of Humber, and so downwarde towarde the weste, by the endes of the shires of Notyngham and Derby, vnto the ryuer of Werse or Werria, and by north the Scottyshe see, whiche is called forthe in Scottishe, & in Brytyshe the werde.

The southsyde of this lordshyppe was called Deira, whiche is now called the byshoppe of Durham, and the north syde was called Brycenia, whiche were then departed or seuered by the ryuer of Tyne. Deira conteyned the lande frome Humber to the ryuer of Tyne, and Brycenia included the countre frome Tyne to the Scottyshe see.

In Brycenia reigned fyrst as is aboue sayde Ida or Idas, & in Deira reigned

The 1.
book of
Saxons

number of
the

reigned fyrste Ella whych lordshyp-
pes began both wythin. iii. yeares.
But in p[ro]cess of tyme bothe in one
were named the kyngedome of No-
thumberlande, whych so continued
somwhyle vnder one kyng, and some
whyle vnder two, by the tyme of. iii.
hundred and. xxi. yeares, as sayth Ra-
nulphe monke of Chester. And after
further continued þe name vnder Sa-
ons and Danes, tyll the comynge
of Eðredus brother of Ethelstane &
sonne of Edward þe elder. The which
Eðredus in the. ix. or last yeare of his
reigne, ioyned this to his owne king-
dome. By whych reison it shulde seme
that this kyngdome endured vnder
that name vpon. iiii. hundred and. ix.
yeares.

The fyrst chrystyen p[ri]nce of this
kyngedome was named Edwynus,
that receaued the fapth of saynt Pau-
lyne, as testyfeth Guydo. In this
lordshyppe also were included these
Myres and countres now calledde
Pozke, Notynggham Myre or Snot-
bynggham Myre, Derby Myre, the by-
shopp[er]ke of Durham, Copelande,
and other.

Amonge the manye kynges that
reigned in this lordshyppe, whych
after some wyters were to the nom-
ber of. xxi. reigned one accompted
the. viii. kyng by Guydo, named E-
thelstredus and sonne of Ethelricus
whych Ethelstredus destroyed moo
Byttons than all the other kynges
of Saros. This was father to saynt
Oswolde and Oswy.

He slew also many of the Byttons
at a battaple that he had agaynst the
der of besyde Raecleggon or Chester, and
two thousand and a hundred of mon-
kes of the house of Bangor, as it is
testyfied of Polycronicon in the. x.
chapter of his fyfte boke, the whych

monkes were come thether to praye
for the good speede of the Byttons.
And ouer this foresayde number of
monkes. i. fled, wherby they wyth
they leader named Byrtuall were
saned. Of such a number of monkes
of one house, myghte be demed a wo-
der. But the sayde Polycronica, with
Guydo, and other wyters, assermyn
that in that house of Bangor were at
those dayes for the moze partye thre
tymes. vii. C. monkes, the whych ly-
ued by the trauayle of theyr handes
onelye.

The fozenamed Oswy, was after
Oswolde kyng of this p[ro]uynce,
whych gaue wyth his daughter El-
freda a nonne. xii. lordshyppes into þe
churche, to buylde wyth. xii. monast-
ryes, whereof. vi. of the sayde lord-
shyppes were in Bytenya, and. vi. in
Deyra, as sayth Guydo. And also Ra-
nulphe in his fyfte boke of Polycro-
nica and. xvi. Chapter assermeth the
same.

The. cx. Chapter.



Victorinus sonne of Au-
relus Conanus after the
oppyon befoze sayd, was
ordayned kyng of Bytaye
in the yeare of oure Lo[r]de. v. hun-
dred and. xlviii. and the. cxi. yeare
of Clotharius then kyng of Fraun-
ce. Of the whych is lytle memo[r]ye
left in any cronyclet or wyter, except
þe Guydo testyfeth hym to be a by-
torinus knyghte, Hewinge byfelye þe
he in sondry battaples dyscomfyted
the Sarons, and defended his land
and Byttons frome the daunger of
them, and other, that the Sarons a-
lyed them wyth.

Victorinus.

In the tyme of the raygne of this
kyng, a Saron named Ella the sone
of Jffus, began to reigne in þe south
syde of the kyngdome of Northum-
berlande

berlande called *Deysa*, as befoze is touched in the Chapter of the sayde kyngdome.

Then it foloweth when thys *Algotyposius* had ruled þe *Bytons* knightly by the terme of .iii. yeres he dyed and was put to hys father, leuyng none heyze of hys body.

For as much as all wyrters agree that the kynges of weste *Saxon* at length subdued all the other kyngdomes, and made of the hole lande of much *Byrtayne* but one kyngedome oꝝ monarchye, and all other as well of *Bytons* as of *Saxons* sayled oꝝ lefte of, that alonely excepted: therefoze I intende to byrnye in, the name of euerye kyng of weste *Saxon* frome the fyrst *Cerdicus* oꝝ *Chyldyrcus* and toyrne them wyth the kynges of *Bytons*, for so longe as hereafter the sayde *Bytons* contynued theyre regne wyth in any part of *Byrtayn*.

The .cxi. Chapter.

Walgo.



Malgo a duke of *Bytons* and newwe of *Aurelius* *Conans* as sayth the author of the *Floure of bystories*, began hys regne ouer the *Bytons* in the yere of our *Lorde*. v. C. lli. and the .xxxviii. yere of *Clotharius* then kyng of *Fraunce*, and also the .xv. yere of *Kenricus* the sonne of *Cerdicus* and seconde kyng of westsaxon aforesayd accomptyng .xv. yeres of the regne of hys father, as *Gyudo* allowethe. Thys *Malgo* after the accorde of al wyrters that make mencion, was the comlyest and moost personable man of al *Bytons* than lyuyng, and therwyth endowed with knyghtlye manhode. The which with stode the *Saxons* and kepte them of, that they damaged not the lande, the whiche he then had possession of. And as wyrt-

nesseth *Gautspede* & ether, he by hys manhode subdued þe *Isles* of *Iselad*, *Dixhades* oꝝ *Dixepes*, and *Roxyep* wyth other.

In the tyme of the regne of thys *Malgo*, reigned in the lordshyppe oꝝ kyngdome of *Kent* *Ethelbertus*, the whiche as wyrtnesseth *Policronycon*, assembled an host of hys knyghtes and gaue battayle vnto *Cearlwinus* sonne of *Kenricus* and then kyng of westsaxon, the cause whereof is not expessed. But thys batayle was the fyrste batayle that was foughte by twene the *Saxons*, after that they obtayned lande and dwellynge wythin *Byrtayne*, whiche was foughten in a place called *Wylbaldowne*. And in þe fyghte was slayne two dukes of *Ethelbertus*, and hym selfe wyth hys people chased.

Also it is wyrtessed of the sayde *Policronyca*, that the yere folowing *Cutwulfus* þe brother of *Cearlwinus* befoze named, foughte strongly agaynst the *Bytons* at *Bedford*, and berafte them .iii. cyties oꝝ towncs named *Liganbyoght*, *Egelsbyoght*, *Bebyngton*, and *Cupham*.

Then to retorne agayne to *Malgo* kyng of the *Bytons*, the authoure of the *floures of bystories* sayth, that not wythstandyng the manye vertues, the whiche God hadde endowed hym wyth, he lastlye forgaue God for sakynge all vertue, and gaue hym to sondry byces and synnes, wherof the odoble synnes of *Wodomy* was one wherfore fel to him great persecucyon of hys enemyes the *Saxons*, as befoze sodele is shewed a moze ensueth.

It was not longe after the fornamed battayle done at *Bedford*: but that the forsayde *Cutwulfus* dyed. But yet hys sayde brother *Cearlwinus* couetouse of woꝛshyppe mayntayned

ned hys warre agayne the Brytons,
so that after he made a newe borage
agayne them, and made of them an
other dyscomfyture, & toke from the
the famous wyves of Bathe, of Glou-
cester, and Worcester, whiche shoulde
be by the marryng of Kynulph about
the yere of the reygne of thys Wal-
go. xii.

Of all thys spekeyth nothyng the
cronicle of Englande, but he maketh
hys processe of a kynge named Car-
tyl. By the whiche as it shoulde seme
by the rebearfall folowynge, that he
maketh of Gurmunde, that Carthy-
cus ruled the Brytons nexte after the
deathe of thys Walgo, as when the
tyme cometh moze playnlye yt shal
appeare. Then it foloweth about the
xxxiii. yere of thys Walgo, Ceaw-
lmus beforesaid gathered hys war-
ons, and foughte wyth the Brytons
at a place called Fechanlega, wher af-
ter long fyght Ceawlmus chased the
Brytons and wanne of them byctory.
But hys brother called Cutha, was
slayne in the fight, for whom he made
great sorowe. Thus in his latter day-
es Walgo beyng oppressed and pur-
sued of hys enemyes lastly dyed, wher
he had raygned after moost concord
of stoppes. xxxv. yeres.

Francia.

The. cxii. Chapter.

Chyloperus the. iiii.
sonne of Locharius
or Clotharius be-
foze named, begane
hys reygne ouer the
part of Fraunce cal-
led Norsons, in the
yere of oure Lorde God, syue hun-
dred. lxxiii. & the. xiiii. yere of Walgo
then kynge of Brytayne. Thys not
beyng content with such as hys fa-
ther had him belet, so sone as the ob-

sequy and enterrement of hys father
was fynished, he sped hym vnto Pa-
rys and possessed hym of his fathers
treasure, whereof his. iiii. byethen be-
yng warned, purchased to them such
frendshyp of the nobles of Fraunce
that they vntowynge they sayde by-
ther had entred into Paris, and lyke-
lye to haue taken hym therein, yf he
had not the sone escaped.

For thys incontinence, great discre-
cyon was lykelye to haue growen by-
tween these. iiii. byethen, hadde not be-
ne the medycation of frendes vppon
bothe parties. The whiche by good
and politike wayes, at length pacified
all varyaunces amonge them, & con-
cluded for a fynal peace, that ether of
the sayde byethen shuld hold hym co-
tent with such porcion as was befoze
assigned to the by thei father. That
is to saye to the eldest brother named
Rybertus or after some wytters Che-
rebys, shulde fall the countrey that
is lyng aboute Paris called indy-
die Fraunce, to Gyttranus shuld fall
the prouynce of Normaunce, and to
thys Chyloperus, the prouynce of
Sopsons, and to Wygeberrus the
youngeste brother, shulde belonge the
countrey of Dees or of Austrarpe,
whiche lordshyp begynneth at Cha-
peyne as aftermeth the frenche cro-
nycle, and stretcheth to the lordshyppe
or prouence of Norwayne vppon one
parte, and to Almayne vpon that o-
ther parte. After whych concord and
agrement thus fynished, ether of the
sayde byethen departed vnto his pro-
per lordshyppe.

If I shulde here dyscrysbe the ma-
ners & condycions of these. iiii. pryn-
ces, or to expresse the vnlaful leche-
ry of the eldest brother Rybertus, in
refusynge hys laful wyfe Ingebry-
da or Ingebetta, or of the rauynment

of

of luyues & byrgens by him done, o; yet the vnstableness of luyng that was also in the seconde brother Guntranus, wth vertues & byces of the other: I shulde thereof make a long worke, wherfoze to byngge thys story to some conuenience, I thus begyn.

Truthe it is that thys Chylpericus o; after some Hilpericus, toke to wyfe the daughter of the kynge of Spayn called Athanahildus, whose name was Golsanda. The whiche had to her handemayden a mayde called Fredegunda, the whiche was of passyng betwix, and shap of body. But to her was toynd subtil wit and tuff condicions: contrary to her lady and mylkes, whiche was symple and of vertuous condycions.

To the yongest brother named Sygbert was coupled in maryage the yster of the sayde Golsanda named Brunchpildys, o; after the frenche cronycle Bruncheust, a womā of peruerse and wyked condicion as after shal apere. Then it foloweth, Chylperich wthyn shorte tyme that he was thus maryed vnto Golsanda, caste vnlawfull loue vnto her woman Fredegunda. By reason wherof fell such vnkindnes betwene them, that lastly she was founde in her chamber dead and strangled wth a corde, whiche was done by the hand of her husband as testyfeth the frenche boke.

Then secondly, he maryed another wyfe, named Judouera, a woman of great byrth: howe be it myne autho; no; yet the frenche cronycle declareth not her progeny, wth the whiche he continued and kepte her after her honour. But yet he wth dyetw not hys vnlawfull loue frome the sozenamed Fredegund.

In this passetyme, cause of warre was moued betwene Sygbert the

yonger brother, and men of the countrey of Sweuy, for the which the sayd Sygbert requyred ayde of hys brother Chylperich. At whose request he in all hast assembled hys people and sped hym toward his brother, leuing hys wyfe great with chylde, in the byngge of the sozenayde Fredegunde. Of the whiche wyfe as testyfeth the frenche boke, he had befoze receaued iii. sones named Theodobertus, Merconeus, and Clodoucus.

It was not longe after that Chylperich, as befoze is sayde, in ayde of hys brother was departed, but that hys wyfe was deliuered of a daughter. And when thys chylde shalbe beconfyrmid of the byshoppe, thys Fredegunde entenyng to make a deuoyce betwene Chylperich & his wyfe by her subtyll and false coniectoure counsayled the quene that she shulde for the moare honour confyrm her owne chylde. And the quene trusting her counsaile, supposyng her counsaile had bene for the best, confyrmid her owne chylde.

The. cxiij. Chapter.

In thys whyle the kynge wth hys brother occupied in warre agaynst the Switzers o; me of Sweuy, bare them so knyghtly, that they subdued theyr enemyes and after returned into theyr countreyes, wherof whē Fredegund was war she in secret maner met wth hys kynge and shewed to hym al the demanour of his wyfe, but nothing of her owne craftye workyng, wher wth hys kynge was greuoussly dyscontent in shewyng of hys outwarde countenance and sayd yf that were true, she shuld from hym be deuoyced: and that she shulde be quene in her steade.

After thys the kynge comyng to
his

hys paleys, the quene to the intent to be the moze accepted in hys p[re]sence, not knowynge of the malycious wo[r] kyng of Fredegund, brought in her armes the ponge baby, to the whiche she was mother both naturallie and sp[iritu]ally, and welcomed the kyng her lo[r]de in ryghte humble maner, saluting hym w[ith] wordes of al comfort. But the kyng beyng warned of her symple demeanour, & as some authours wyte, glad that he hadde occasion to fynde mater to her of dyspleasure, blamed her in greuous manner, and commaunded her out of his p[re]sence for that tyme, & after by counsaile of sp[iritu]all menne, caused her from hym to be deuoyced, & her w[ith] her ponge daughter to be put into an house of religyon, to the whiche he gaue possessyons for the fyndinge of her and of her pong daughter named Chyldeinda.

And when Chylpericus had thus synned thys fozenayde busyness, he shortly after toke to w[ife] the fozenamed Fredegund, not w[ith]out grudge of some of hys lo[r]des and other.

It was not longe after thys marriage, that stryfe and descencion fell betwene thys Chylpericus and Sygebert hys brother, the whiche grew for certayne lande that Chylpericus claymed to haue of hys brother asofor sayde. Then Chylpericus assembled hys knyghtes and made warre vpon the lande of hys brother Sygeberte, the whiche then was besyde in lyke warre agayne a people called Hunes by reason wherof Chylpericus hadde the moze fo[r]del, and wan by strength the cytye of Keynes.

But yt was not longe after o[r] Sygeberte was warned of hys brothers unkyndnes, wherfore he after hys enemyes were by hym somedeale sub-

dued, wente w[ith] hys armie into the countrey of Sopsons belonging to hys brother Chylpericus, and warred in lyke wyse in that lande as hys brother dyd in hys, and at length toke the cytye of Sopsons, and therein the eldeste sonne of Chylpericus, named Theodoberte, and helde hym as hys p[ri]soner. Then Chylpericus heyring of the dyscomfyture of hys people & takynge of hys sonne, was agaynste hys brother moze feruently amoued and cast in hys mynde alwayes and meanes howe he might reuenge hym vpon hys brother. But it was in vayne. For hys brother at that tyme had such awauntage of hym, that he well aperceaued that he had no better meane then a treatye of peace, by meanes wherof he shortly after obtayned his sonne oute of daunger, w[ith] other thynges concernynge hys p[ro]fyte, as suringe to hys sayd brother by soleme othe, that after that daye he shuld neuer were armes, nor yet war w[ith] hys brother.

Thys concoorde and brytle in due maner synned, and suffyciently by both counsailes stablyshed, yet Chylpericus beyng alwayes mynded to be reuenged vpon hys brother Sygeberte, sent hys pongest sonne named Clodoueus, and caused hym to warre vpon a cytie called Burdeaur: in the p[ro]uince of Aestria, now called Roymandy. But by the manhod of a capytaine of Sygeberte named Singulphus: the sayd Clodoueus was ouercomen and compelled to forgo the countrey, and fled to Paris.

For thys happe Chylpericus was fyled w[ith] al malice, and in all hast commaunded hys fozenamed sonne Theodobert w[ith] a greate armie to inuade the sayd countrey of Aestria o[r] Roymandy. The whiche accor-

dyng

dyng to hys fathers commaunde-
mente spedde hym thether, and there
by hys extort myght and power, toke
manye cytyes and strong holdes, not
sparynge churches, howles of relgy
on, as nunnes and other, and robbed
and spoyled the countrey in most cru-
ell wyse.

Lastly, this persecucion thus done
a cheuctayne oꝝ duke named Gundo-
aldus of the Erledome of poytowe,
assembled a greate power, and wyth-
stode Theodoberte, and fynally slew
hym in playne batayle, and a greate
parte of hys people: wherof hearyng
Chylperycus gathered a great hoste
and yode vnto the countrey of Cham-
payne, wasyng and destroying the
countrey wyth fyre and yron to the vt-
termost of hys power, and at lengthe
toke the cyty of Keynes, and spoyled
yt wythout mercy.

¶ The. cxiii. Chapter.

Sygebertus.



Sygebertus aduer-
tyng, and casting
in hys mynd the in-
naturall dysposi-
on of hys brother,
perceauynge wel
he intended hys be-
tter destruction, pro-
uyded in hys best maner foꝝ to wyth-
stande hys malpce. And foꝝ to byng
hys continued malpce to a fynal end
he gathered to hym a puyssaunte po-
wer, and after spedde hym towarde
hys sayde brother, whereof Chylpe-
rycus beyng aduertysed, by hys co-
tierte meanes, soughte wayes of in-
treatye and peace, in suche wyse that
oꝝ the hoostes met, a peace was con-
cluded.

Then these two brethren thus ac-
cordedde, condescended in short tyme
after to make warre bypon theyꝝ bro-
ther Guntharus then loꝝde of Dyle

aunce, the whyche sygnifye at that
daye belonged to the countrey oꝝ pro-
uince of Burgoyne. The cause of
this warre is not expyessed, excepte
they enuyed theyꝝ brother to haue so
greate loꝝdeshipp. But by medpatoꝝ
on both partes, after great aray pur-
tued on all sydes, a concoꝝde and pe-
ace was concluded in the Temple of
saynte Lowpe at the cytye of Troyes
in Vpncente.

When this sayd peace was fyn-
shed, the sayde thye brethren in syght
departed as frendes eyther of them
frome other. But as peace sometyme
conteteth not soundpys, and specially
such as delyte them in pillage & robe-
rye: tyght so among the knyghtes of
Sygeberte was sponge a great ru-
mour, sayinge that they were not co-
tented and rewarded foꝝ theyꝝ greate
laboure and trauayle accoꝝdyng to
theyꝝ deserte, and specially foꝝ þe fyrst
iourney of these two, had agayne his
brother Chylperycus, thynkyng the
peace wyth hym made was nothyng
honorable, consyderynge the greate
doubelnes and vnt ruth that in hym
was proued. Foꝝ the whyche they ex-
cepted Sygeberte in all that in theim
was, to breake those bondes of peace
and to make newe warre bypon hym.
And in lyke maner some euell dispo-
sed personnes were moze agreable to
warre then to peace: bypon the party
of Chylperycus, and murmured in ly-
ke wyse. And foꝝ they thought to haue
bene better rewarded of Sygeberte,
then they were of theyꝝ owne maister
they therfoꝝ lefte hym and yode to
the hooste of Sygeberte. By whose
incytynge and repooꝝte, Sygeberte
was moze kyndled to set bypon hys
brother.

Chylperycus hauynge notycon
of hys brothers purpose, wyth also þe
murmour

murmour and departynge of hys knyghtes, and haupnge in the other somme mystruſte he anone wyth hys wyfe and chyldern and chyefe of hys treaſoure, went vnto þe cyty of Cour- ney, entendinge to kepe that for they and hys ſauegarde. But when Sy- gebert knewe therof, he was nothing in the purſuyng of hym founde ſlow but foloweth ſtreghth after, and clo- ſed hym wythin the ſayde cytye wyth a ſtrong ſyge, where Chilpericus was in a maner diſpayred of the wel- fare of him and his fredegund. But ſhe that was replenſhed of all in- quyte, called to her two wycked per- ſones, and promiſed vnto them great gyftes, yf they wolde bpe venym: oꝝ otherwyſe ſee her brother Sigebert.

The whyche two ſclowes dyſcry- ued wyth the ſayde ſpeche and greate gyftes of the ſayde fredegunda, toke vpon theym that vnleful charge, and by theyre ſubtell and falſe pyngina- cyon, broughte theyr curſed purpoſe to an ende, but to theyre owne conſu- ſyon. For after they hadde wound- ded the kynge Sygeberte to deathe, and wolde then haue eſcaped, the kin- ges knyghtes eſpyenge theyre trea- ſon, ſell ſoone vpon theym, and all to hewed theym. And when the deathe of the kynge was knowen, a greate noyſe and crye was arred in the hoſte. By meane wherof, the kynges death was blowen into the cytye, and after vnto the eares of Chilpericus, wherof he was not a lytell ameruay- led, noꝝ wolde to it geue ſerme cre- dence, tyll he was enſourmed of hys wyfe fredegunde, of all her ſubtylle woꝝkyng.

It was not longe after oꝝ the kny- ghtes oꝝ ſome of the captaynes of the hoſte of Sygeberte preſented theym vnto Chilpericus, beſechynge hym

of hys grace and pardon, the whyche he gladlye accepted. And when he had ſet hys charges in order, he then commaunded prouiſyon to be made for the buryenge of his ſayde brother wythin the monaſterpe of ſaynt Me- darde of Moyſons.

And when all that buſynelle after a byngely maner was ſyniſhed and ended, he then cryed Byrnehel- dys, and Chyldeberte, the wyfe and ſonne of hys brother Sigeberte, vn- to the cytye of Roan, takynge frome them greate treaſoure that they were poſſeſſed of. But ſhortely after the ſonne of Sygebert by helpe of Gun- deholde oꝝ Gundealde duke of Boy- towe here befoze named, was deli- uered from the daunger of the ſayde Chilpericus, and ſent into hys owne lordſchyppe of Auſtracye, whiche his father Sigebert, was lord of.

In this paſſetyme he hadde ſente his ſonne Meroneus into a countrey called Buturyngeſ, to appeace cer- tayne rebellions there atryſed. But when he heard of the death of hys vn- cle Sygeberte, and of the buryng of his wyfe Byrneheld at the cytye of Roane, he ſette aſparte all the charge of his father, and ſped hym ſtreghth- thyther, keepynge compaigne with her. In whome he toke ſuche conſolacy- on and pleaſure, that laſtely he ma- rryed her, and kepte her as hys wyfe. And when his father was therof war- ned, he feared leaſte by the counſayle of his ſayde wyfe, he wolde atryſe a- gayne hym, wherfoze he in al haſte aſ- ſembled hys people, and ſpedde hym towarde Roane.

When tydyngeſ came to Mero- neus of the comynge of hys father wyth ſo greate aſape, and he as then vnpruicyed of ſtrength of knyghtes to reſyſte hys father, for hys moſte

suertye fledde with his vnlesfull wyfe to the temple or church of Saynte Martyne, takyng the pryuylege ther of for thei defence.

And when Chilpericus had tempted by many sondye meanes to haue them out of the sayde pryuylege, and myght not without breakyng of the same, he to byng aboute hys caute- louse purpose, made to them assured promyse, that yf they wylfully wolde reuounce the sayde place, and putte theym in hys grace, he wolde bitterly pardon they trespase, and suffer the from that tyme for to contynue they lyfe together, as man and wyfe.

Upon whiche promyse the sayde Heroneus with hys wyfe renounced the sayde pryuylege, and putte them hole in the kynges mercy, the which them receyued wth all countenaunce of loue and fauoure, and theym fested and cheryshed louyngly, by the space of two dayes onely. But the thyrde dape, the feast was spent, for then he sente hys sonne vnto Marys vnder sure gnydes, & there caused hym to be professed in a house of religyon. But by the meanes of his vnkle Gunthranus, he was after taken thens, and so restozed to his former knyght hobe. For the whiche his father hym newlye pursued and constreyned him to take for his sauegarde the church of saynt Martyne in Turo.

And when he was warned that hys fatherper force wolde take hym thence, he then fledde vnto a ctyte of Champayn, accompanied wth syre seruauntes onely, where he was in so greate feare to be taken, and in suche despayre to obteyne grace of hys father, that he caused one of the sayde syre persones to slee hym wth hys swerde, & the foresayde Brunehildis his wyfe put in sure keepnge.

The. cxv. Chapter.

Chilpericus then beyng ascerteyned of the deathe of his sone Heroneus, and the sure keepnge of Brunehildys, he thoughte hym selfe somdele assured, for the mystruste that he hadde in theym many tymes, inqwyeted hym. But yet he was not in quyet or reste. For shortly after the people of Turo rebelled agayne hym. Agayne whome he sent hys sonne Clodouus, and a noble man of hys couitte named Desiderius, the which he sente as a gnyde and a counsayloure of his sayde sonne. And vpon the partye of his enemyes was a captayne of the kyng Gunthranus, for so muche as the sayde Gunthranus, claymed parte of those landes aboute Turo. Thys captayne named Homelcus, hearng of the comyng of the foresayde hoite with a chose company made towarde theym, and gaue vnto Clodouus a greate sharpe fyght, and not without great losse of his men wanne of hym the felde, and compelled hym to forsake that countre.

Thus Chilperiche was wrapped in warre and troubles of the worlde, somtyme with right, and some whyle wth wronge, so that he some tyme wanne worshyppe, and other whyle he losse. Wherof to tell all the circumstance, I thynke it shoulde be tedye- ous bothe to the readers, and also to the hearers. Wherfore I passe ouer, in abydgynge and wytyng somdele of thys storye.

Then it foloweth within the story, after Chilpericus had by intyement of Fredegunde, wrongfully toyment- ed the Archebyschoppe of Roan named Petest, and hym after the suffer- aunce of many bylanities exiled (for which

whiche and other, god sent vnto hym
some correccion, in takynge awaye
by soden deathe the chylde that he
had by Fredegunde he then began to
knowe god, & toke greate repentance
in promysynge to god amendement of
his lyfe. And to the intent he might
haue the moze prayners of the comen
people to stande in state of grace: he
fyyste released a greuous trespasse of
imposicion that he had lately sette v-
pon all wyues thorough his regyon.
And that done he redified olde chur-
ches and some he made newe, and en-
dowed them wyth great possessyons.
And ouer this he releued greatly the
poore people, by enlargynge of his ly-
berall almes, and became very hum-
ble and meke, where befoze tyme he
was ryght sterne and cruel. But lyke
as often it happeneth that hote loue
is sone colde, so this sodayne deuotio
was sone aswaged. For lyke as hys
troubles began to aswage, & his pro-
spertye to encrease: ryght so hys olde
condicions began in hym to reuiue
and quychen, so that at length he re-
turned to his olde accustomed vices

In Italye
called 1090
his, for al
th as molt
only they
to weare
gobardes.

In this tyme a people called Lon-
gobardes, and nowe Italpans, war-
red soze vpon the landes of the Em-
pyre. Wherefoze Mauricius then be-
ynge Emperoure of Constantynople
for so muche as he then thought that
the frenche kynge myghte, wyth lesse
coste and payne subdue theym, then
he myght, beynge so farre from them
he therfoze sente to hym a great summe
of golde, with letters of recommenda-
cyon, exhortynge hym in the defence
of the church of Rome, to assemble
his people and to withstand the saide
Longobardes, and not to cease ther-
of tyll he had expelled them from the
landes of the empyre.

Whiche somme of golde he goodly

receyued, promysynge to the byngers
therof, he wyth all diligence shulde
execute the vitermoste of hys power
to accomplishe the request of the em-
peroure. And accordynge to a par-
cel of his sayde promise, he assembled
a greate people, and made towarde
the sayde Longobardes. Of whome
the sayde Longobardes fearinge the
great myght, made meane of entrea-
tye, offerynge to hym greate summes
of money. By reason wherof, he left
theym in rest, and so returned into
France.

When Mauricius hadde vnder-
standynge that the foresayde enemyes
remayned styl in the foresayd landes
and contynued in their malycie: he set
agayn to Chilpericus, requyring hym
other to perfourne his promysse, orel-
les to restore hys money, whiche he
had taken for the perfourmance of
the same. But all was in vayne, for
he wolde neyther execute that one nor
that other. But at lengthe as after-
meth myne authour, he was by god-
des ordynance, compelled for to re-
store the sayde money of a great part
therof, by mean of his sister with her
chylde he was as a prysoner to the sayd
Emperour, whiche sister was befoze
time married vnto the king of Spayne

The. cxvi. Chapter.

Chilpericus thus encreasynge
in vice and dishonour, last-
ly repugned agayne god,
so that he fel into that dete-
nable heresye of the Arpanes, and com-
maunded certayne artycles of the same
touchinge the diuysyon of the trinite
to be preached thorough his regyon.
But the holy bishop of Cowes with
stode that precept, & blamed hym gre-
uously for that dede, albeit the sayde
bishop named Gregoꝝ wyth greate
assystence of the other Bishoppes of
Lii. France

Arrianism

Of Chilperiche.

Fraunce, hadde greate laboure to remoue hym from the sayde opynion.

This with many other crimes passed by Chilpericus, Fredegūd, which euer increased in perversse and malycyouse purpose, soughte many vnelfull meanes howe he myght bynge to confusyon the thyrd sonne of her husbände, knowyng well that whyle he lyued, her chyldren shoulde neuer enheret the crowne of Fraunce. This purpose to bynge aboute many and dyuerse wayes she attempted, whych were longe to rehearse.

But finally she caused him toong fully to be accused, & by meane thereof to be caste in pryson. Where he so beyng, she byged a felon to slee hym, and after shewed to her husoand that the sayde Clodoucus hadde slayne hym selfe. In proof whereof, she had appoynted the foresayd murderer to leaue a swerde styckynge in hym, as thowghe he had wylfully slayne hym selfe vpon the same swerde. Whiche when the kynge sawe, he demed hym gyltye of suche offence as befoze was putte vpon hym.

We haue heard befoze of the sonne of Spgeberre: named Childebette, that was deliuered from the handes of Chilpericus hys vncle by the meanes of Gundold duke of erle of Bottowe, the whiche in thys tyme was growen to mannes stature, and ruled at this daye his enherytaunce of Austracye, not wythout great stryfe had betwene hym and hys sayde vncle, whiche were to longe to wypte the circumstaunce therof. Wherof at thys daye some dele was handysculled, albe it they at thys daye vsed epyther other as frendes.

About this tyme the other vncle of Childebette called Gunthyanus, soughte occasyon agayne hym, for cause of a

bishop named Theodorius, & bishop of Martyll or Martyle, & which was put from hys see by Gunthyanus, and receyued of Childebette, and by hym agayne restored to the sayde see of Martyle. For the which, Gunthyanus was sore amoued, and intended to make warre vpon hym. But by medytatours it was some deale appeased and set in quyet, vpon certayne condicions to be obserued and also persecuted vpon the party of Gunthyanus, the whiche after, were not vpon his syde kept nor persecuted. Wherfoze, after requeste to hym made for refozmacyon of all such poyntes, and answer agayne receyued of no refozmacyon: Childebette to haue his partye the stronger, and also for that that he well knewe, that hys vncle Chilpericus bare towarde the sayde Gunthyanus not very fraternal loue he therfoze sente vnto hym a noble man of hys court named Eyllon, requyryng hym of ayde agayne hys vncle, the whiche by many seasons hadde as well broken promysse agayne hym, as now he hadde agayne Childebette.

Of this Chilperiche beinge ryght sayne, assented to the desyre of Eyllon and after in al haste prepared their hostes, and by two sondrye companyes inuaded the countres of Dyleaunce, wherof Gunthyanus was kyng or ruler. But the inhabitauntes of the prouynce defended them in so strong manner, that they enemyes had of them lytel auantage. In which meane season, Gunthyanus assembled a myghty hoste, and spedde hym towarde his enemyes, at a place called Mediolan he supplyed a parte of his sayde enemyes, and after dyeme nere to the greate number of bothe hostes, where was made preparacyon on bothe sydes to

des to haue foughten. But as befoze tyme ye haue often heard, that by discrete & wyse men the fyghte was put by, and meanes of accorde was founden: so now at this tyme by labour of good and wise prelates and other, these kynnesmen were sette in byrte, and departed without great shedyng of chrysten blode.

In this passetyme, deth which sparreth no creature, beafte Chilpericus a sonne bozne of Fredegunde and named Theodorus, for the whiche the kynge and also the quene toke greate heuynesse. But as she was prompt and redy to all euil, cast in her minde that this chylde was slayne by poyson, or by some other purposed mallice. For the whiche lastely was accused a Baylyfe or lefe offycer, called Honuole, wth diuers wythes and sojceresses, that shulde ymagine this chylde's death. The which she payned and tormented in such wyse, that lastlye the sayde wythes confessed, that they hadde destroyed the chylde, and not wythoute consente of the sayde Honuole. Wherefoze she after caused the sayde sojceresses to dye by cruell death, as by fyre and other wyse, and the sayde Baylyfe to be so tourmented that he dyed sone after.

The frenche cronycle sayth, that by the meane of the takynge away of the lyfe of the kynges chylde, a chylde of the sayde Honuole was restored to helth, whiche befoze was in greate ieopardye, whiche is for soles to beleue. This sojowne and heuynesse of Chilpericus and Fredegunde his wyfe, was somedeale asswaged by the byrth of a sone. Shortly after bozne of the sayde Fredegunde, which he kyng lette call Lotharius, or Clotharius. For ioye wherof, the kyng lette open the prysoners, and suffered the pryso-

ners to go at theyre lyberty, and specially suche as concerned causes touching hym selfe for dette or other wyse, with other thynges concerning his honour.

But lyke as dame Fortune is accustomed to medle her ioyes of this worlde with some bytternesse: so dyd she now with Chilpericus. For where he was now in greate tranquyltye and reste, and thought to haue ledde the resydue of his lyfe in pleasure: so deynly worde was brought vnto him that his brother Guntharus, and his neuewe Childeberte, were allyed and firmly accorde to make warre vpon hym, for the whiche they hadde assembled a great army. Wherefoze he in all haste commaunded all his treasure and chiefe iewelles to be had to the cytye of Cambria, where he wth his wyfe and frendes intended to continue the resydue of his lyfe. And done, spedde hym thither in all haste, and fortifyed the sayde cytye in such wyse, that he feared lytle or nothinge his enemyes, where he so kepte hym wthin the sayde cytye a certayne of tyme. And when he saw, no hard not of the comynge of his sayde brother nor neuewe, he then walked moze at large, and sported hym in haukyng and chase of such wyld beasts, as wolues and other, whiche at those dayes was greatly bled of the kynges of Fraunce, and yet is continued.

Upon a daye as he was purposed towarde this dysporte, and all thyng ready prepared for the same, so that the Quene thought verely he had be gone oute of the palleyes, for what hadde I can not tell, the Quene yode into her chamber, and there rested her vpon her bedde. Where she so lpenge the kyng passed by, and wth a lytell wand, whiche he bare in his hande,

It is only
god that ap-
pears
at the tyme of
peace, whiche
manne can
not do.

in maner of game, strake the Quene with it vpon the backe. The Quene supposynge the kyng had bene gone to the felde, and not lokyng vp, sayde Laundye, why darest thou thus stryke me. Thys Laundye was a greate man in the kinges courte, and hadde bene peramoure to the Quene longe tyme. But the kyng hearynge these wordes, made semblaunt as he hadde not hearde them, and so passed on his waye.

The. cxvii. Chapter.

The deuyls
purpose of a
woman,

Rebegunda appertcyuing and after seynge it was the king, to whome she had thus sayde, soze was abashed, & in great feare & agony. And after she had by a long season coniected in her minde what remedy she myght fynde for this mishap: she lastly deuelyshly determyned to sle her sayde husband and lozde. And this to byyng aboute, she sent in all haste for þe sayde Laundye, and shewed to hym in order all the circumstaunce of the foresayde mater. Whereafter he was stryken with suche a feare, that his wytte and counsaile fayled him to deuise in such a case any remedy. Wherfoze þe quene as she that was fully determyned to execute her detestable and cursed purpose, sayde to hym boldly: Laundye, thou seest well þe thys case is brought to so strayte a poynte, that other thou muste thynke to destroy my lozde and husbände, or elles thou and I muste both be shamefully confounded. Of whiche thou well knowest oure owne is mooste to be regarded, therfoze dispose the to do after my counsaile.

Thou knowest wel that the kyng is accustomed to come late frome his dyspoynte. Wherfoze prouyde to the a certayne, that thou well trustest, and in the euenynge when he retourneth,

espye thy tyme, and fall vpon hym so deynly, and so rydde hym. And after make an out crye, and sende to search about as thou woldest take the homt cydes, & cause some of thynne owne companye to flee fro the, as though thou shuldest them pursue. Laundye hearynge this cursed counsaile, allowed it well and therunto ascended, and incontynently went about the perfourmaunce of þe same. And when he had putueyde hys accessaries, he toward nyght assembled them, geuing to the informacyon howe they in thys myschefe shulde behaue the in that thyng takyng of them assured othes, for keepyng of his counsaile. The king not misdempnyng any thyng of this conspyred treason, toke hys delectacyon and pleasur in folowing of his game so that he loste much of his company and towarde nyght as he befoze tyme was accustomed, with fewe accompanied dreyw homeward. Wherof Laundye being warned, met the kyng salutyng hym and saying that he was comen with his company to conduct him home, for so muche as he doutted how he was garnysshed of hys meynepall seruauntes or other.

What shulde I lenger make delay or farther rehersall in thys mater, or to tell the circumstaunce of this purposed treason. But fynally when the kyng was nere his palleyes, or as reherseth the frenche cronycle wythin the courte of his paleys, as he spghite from his hoyle he was sodenly wouded to the herte, that he strepghte fell to the earth deade.

After whiche murder thus committed: a greate crye was arered, the kyng is slayne, so that this Laundye made in greate haste to be called certayn persons to attende vpon the corps, whyle he wyth other, pursued such

The
kyngs
purpose

The fyfte parte.

103.

suche as were dempte gyltpe of thys offence. But lastelpe he returned, and sayde that this dede was done by the knyghtes of Chyldeberte, the whych by the darkenesse of the nyghte were escaped.

To shewe here the bayne and dys-symuled sorowe þe Fredegunde made for the kyng, it were but lettynge of tyme. For euery wyse man knoweth well, that all suche as be of that dys-polycyon, can sayne ryghte well in such semblable casys. But to my purpose, when the kyng was thus slayne, and at that time nother the quene nor yet Laundye suspected, prouysyon was made for entercyng of the corpe. The whych was hoystye after shyped at the next ryuer, and so conuayed vnto Saynte Germapnes de Brece before spoken of, and ther with greate solempnytie buried: when he had reygned, as before is sayde. trunpeares leuyng after hym a sonne before mynde callede Clotharpus or Lotharpus.

Thus as assymeth mine authout master Robert Sagwyn ended Chylperich miserably hys lyfe, whych in pryde and myscrepe before tyme it continued. And wherein hys lyfe he cherished no frend, at hys end he found few or no frendes. Thys gaue the patronyge of the church to lewde and symple clerkes, and fauoured moare such as hadde latelpe bene conuerted to the faythe, than he dyd them that had continued by holpe lyfe a longe season therein, and gaue vnto suche persons the rule of Chyestes church. Amonge the whych, one there was of perfecte luyng and Byschoppe of Darps, that garnished hys tombe with thys epytaphy as after in meter foloweth.

*Ecclesie speculum, patrie vigor, ara reorum
Et pater et medicus, pastor, amorq. gregis,
Germanus uirtuti, fide, corde, ore, beatus,
Carne tenet tumulum, mentis honore polum
Vir cui data nihil nocuerunt fata sepulchri,
Vixit enim, nam mors quam tulit ipsa timet,
Crenit ad huc potius, iustus post funera, nã qui
Fictile uas fuerat, gemma superba micat,
Huius opẽ ac meritũ mutis data uerba loqũtur,
Redditus et cæcis, prædicat ore dies,
Nunc uir apostolicus, rapiens decarne tropheũ,
Iure triumphali confidet arce throni,*

The which verses in oure mother tongue, maye thus be expounded in meters as foloweth.

Chyroure to the church, and of
the countrey the strength.
Compassyon of gyltpe, to them shew
inge mercye.
A father and a leche, an harde and lo
uer at lengthe,
Of hys people, cosyn to vertue and
of allpe.
In faythe and in herte, and eke in
mouthe holpe,
Of whome the fleshe nowe holdeth
thys sepulture,
But the spyrte is in heauen euer to
endure.

To thys nothyng noyed, nor faue
of sepulture,
He lyueth southlye, for death whych
he not drede,
Hath him hẽce tane, but yet he hoped
sure,
Thys ryght wyse man, though some
tyme he were ladde,
As a byttel vessel, whych with the
earth was cladde.
And some whyle fell, yet ofte he rose
anone,
Wherefore he nowe shyneth as doth
an Dwyente stone.

Chy

By helpe and meryte now he hath
the dume hys speche,
Of thys blyssed man, and to þe blynd
hys syghte.
Restored of God, as thys daye dothe
he teach.
And he of the flesh hath gotten now
the syghte.
And vpperhande wth a triumphat
myghte,
By vertue whereof he lyke a conque
rour.
Of the hyghe heuen, now setteth in
the tower.

Thus maye ye well apperceaue &
knowe, that as earthly men fauour,
so wyl they wyte, as is now shewed
by thys superscrypcyon. But to God
al thynges are manifested and kno-
wen, and nothyng to hym hyd, what
soeuer earthely man wyrteth, or de-
myth, to whome all the p[re]misses I
remytte.

Anglia.

The. cxviii. Chapter.

Cariticus of
Cariticus



Cariticus or Cariticus, after the wy-
tyng of Gupdo, of
whome nother the
p[ro]genye nor yet o-
ther addycion of ho-
noure is of wyrters
of hym remembred, began to rule
the Byttons, the yere of oure lord, v
C. lxxvi. as the sayde authour reco-
deth, and the. xxii. yere of Chilperich
than kynge of Fraunce, and also the
ix. yere of Ceawlmus then kynge of
westsaxons. Thys as wyrtelseth al
wyrters was a louer of cypule batell
and was worse of all men, so that he
was odible to god and hys subiectes
in such wyse that they excyted þe Sa-
rons to warre vpon hym: as testifieth
Gupdo, and chased hym frome cyrpe

to cyrpe and frome towne to towne,
till they had berafte hym the mooste
parte of suche lande as hys p[re]deces-
sour Walgo hadde holden before
hym.

But Polycronycon, Gausfyd, and
other, adde moze therunto, and sayen
þe for as much as the Saxons knewe
of the defencyon betwene Cariticus
and hys Byttons, they in al hast sent
into Irelande for the kynge called
Gurmundus Ascepcanus the whych
of some wyrters are named two per-
sons, as Gurmundus, & Ascepcanus
But by the rehersal that Ranulph
monke of Chester maketh in the. xxiij.
chapter of hys fyfthe boke of Poly-
cronycon, it shuld seme, that he shuld
be named Gurmundus, the whiche by
hys meynynge shulde warre in By-
tayne and Fraunce, while hys brother
Turgetus reigned as kynge in Ire-
lande, as in the sayd chapter is moze
at lengthe declared, whiche sayd Gur-
mundus wth the strength of þe Sa-
rons: warred so soze agayne the By-
ttons, that lastelye the sayde Cariti-
cus was fayne to take the towne of
Kastlegent now called Wycheester, &
therein besieged hym wth hys By-
ttons by a certayne of tyme, wher, by
daylye skymysshes and assautes he
lost muche of hys people.

When Cariticus had a season of
sayed and proued the strength of hys
enemyes: and sawe that they increa-
sed: and hys knyghtes lesse and im-
pyshed: he sodenlye lefte that towne
and wth a certayne of Byttons toke
ouer Seuerne water, and so into wa-
lys then called Cabypa: whiche shuld
be after mooste conioynde of wyrters
the thyrde yere of the raigne of this
Cariticus: whom the Englyshe cro-
nycle nameth Corryfe. Trueth it is,
that after he wth hys Byttons were
druen

that the
of chyrch
in ecclesiast
Englande:
C. yeres,
the com-
of Chyrch
Englande.

dyuen into Cambrya oꝝ Wales: yet he lefte not continuallye to make repes and assutes vppon the Saxons nexte to hym adiopnaunte.

In thys tyme oꝝ some after, ruled Ethelfrydus the north Saxons. For as wptneseth the foresayde authoure Gupdo, he began the reygne of Deira and Brynneca, in the yere of our lord. v. C. lxx. & xiii. Thys is Ethelfrydus sonne of Ethelricus, & pursued so soye the Bytōs, & slew so great a number of the monkes of the towne of Bangor, as is befoze reherced in the. C. and. ii. chapter of thys worke. The whyche dayly watted vpon the Bytōs, & the Bytōs vppon hym so þ he destroyed oꝝ subuerted muche of Chyestes sayth with the helpe of þ foresayde Gurmunde throughe Loegrpa oꝝ middle England, in so much that the byshoppes of London and Poꝝke wpth other mynsters of the churche, wpth such goodes and relikes as they mighte carpe, fledde into dyuerse countres, so that they church dozes were shutte after them, oꝝ elles occupped in woꝝhypppe of they fals goddes.

that the
of chyst
eremab
ngland:
yeares.
the com
of thist
daye.

Thus the sayth that had endured in Byrtayne frome the tyme of Lucus fyrst chystpen kyng in Byrtayn tyll thys daye, nere vppon the selson of. iiii. hundred yeres and odde, was well neare extyncte throughe all the lande.

And when the soynamed Gurmūd hadde fynished hys tyzanny wpthin the lande of Byrtayn, he then sayled into fraunce, wher he was after slayne, as wptneseth the Polycronicon. all be the frenche Cronycle speketh nothyng of anye suche manne durynghys persecucyon, as wptneseth the Gupdo.

The churche oꝝ monystarpe befoze

byploed in Hierolampe nowme called Saynte Albynes, was by the sayde myscreauntes beaten downe whiche there was byploed of the Bytōs in the honour of the holy prothomartyr saynt Albō, with dyuerse many other the whyche are lost oute of memoꝝre.

Durynge also thys trouble betwene the Saxons and Bytōs, the lordelhypppe oꝝ kingdome of est Saxon began to take place as after shalbe shewed.

The. cxi. Chapter.



In thys tyme also after þ accorde of most wyters as wptneseth Polocronica and other, Ethelbertus reygned in Kent, and by knyghtehode and greace myghte bare hym, and behaued hym so byetozpoulsly, that he enlarged hys kingdome to the boundes of Humber. In whiche tyme Gregoꝝ, whiche for his notable dedes was surnamed greace was made Byshoppe of Rome. The whiche as befoze is touched in the pcedynge chapter, hauynge compassyon on the countrey fro whence so sayre chyldezen came as he befoze had sent, shulde be inhabyte wpth Pagans oꝝ people of mysbelefe, sente into Byrtayne that holpe man Justayne with other of hys byethzen, to preache to the Angles the sayth of Chyste. But as wptneseth Antonynus in the. iii. chapter and. xii. tytle of hys foresayd worke, when Justen was thye dayes iourney gone and passed, suche a sodayne feare entred in hym and his felowshypppe, that they turned agayne. Then Gregoꝝ comforted the sayde companie, and sente them wpth letters to the byshope Irelatensis, wplynge hym to helpe and ayde Justyn in al that in hym neded. The tenoure of whiche letters and other sente to Ethelberte

Ethelberte kyng of Kent wyth theyr answeres, are wyrtten with other questyons in the regystr of Gregore, & in the boke of Beda and other.

Austaine thus comforted, sped his journey, and landed in the eastside of Kente in the isle of Thanet wyth xl. felowes, whereof some were interpreters of suche as coulde speke all languages. Here vnto the place before named where holpe Austayne landed stode at those dayes the manorye of palayes of the sayd kyng Ethelbert whereof at thys daye appere somme of the rupynous walles, & is called of the inhabytauntes of that isle Kythburgh. It is apparente betwene the isle & the towne of Sandwyche, vpon a myle & a halfe from the sayd towne eastwarde frome Caunterbury. Then when Austayne was landed, he sente the sayde interpreter vnto Ethelberte, sayinge that they were sent fro Rome for the heale and saluacion of the kyng and his realme. The kyng before tyme had herde of the fayth of Chyste, for he had to wyfe as saythe Polycronicon a frenche woman that was chystened, and had receaued her vpon condycion that he shuld suffer her to lyue after her lawe.

Then after a certayn tyme the kyng spoke wyth Austayne, but that was wythoute the house, after the maner of hys lawe. Austayne hys commynge he created a baner of the crucyfyxe and preachedde to hym the worde of God. Then the kyng sayde it is sayd that ye promyse. But for it is to me vncowth and new, I may not so sone assente to you. But for ye be comen so farre for my sake, ye shalbe sayde in treated, and haue all thyng that is to you necessary, and we graunt to you leaue to turne of our people whom ye maye. When they had receaued thys

comforte of the kyng, they wente to processyon to the cty of Dozobernia or Caunterbury, syngyng Alleluya, where they led theyr lyues as holpe fathers dyd in the begynnyng of the church, as in fastyng, prayyng, watchyng, and preachyng the worde of heilth, and sayng masses and chystened such as they conuerted in the eastside of the cty in the olde church of saynt Marcyne, vnto the tyme the kyng was conuerted. At lengthe when the kyng had wel consydered the conuersacion & holpe lyfe of Austayne & hys felowes, he harde them moze gladly, and lastly by theyr good exhortacions & ghostly loue, he was by them conuerted and chystened, in the yere of our lord after most conoord of wyrters. D. C. lxxx. xvi. & the. xxxvi. yere of hys reygne, as aspymeth Polycronicon.

Then he gaue to Austayne a place for his bishops see at Chyestes church in Dozobernia, and builded the abbey of saynt Peter and paule in the east syde of the sayde cty, where after Austayne and all the kynges of Kente were buryed, and that place is now called saynte Austayne.

In thys whyle Austayne sayled into Fraunce to the bishoppe Trelandensis, and was of hym sacred arche bishoppe.

When Gregore was certyfyed of the good expedycon of Austayne, he sent then to hym mo helpers as Melitus, Justus, and Paulynus: wyth booke & answers to saynte Austaynes questyons, that was: that all suche goodes as fell to the churche, shulde be deuyled in foure partes, that is to meane, the fyrst shulde go to the household of the bishoppes house and charge of the same: the seconde to the clergie: the thyrde to the amendement of churches, the fourth to the relefe of

of the pooze people and other dedes of mercede.

When Austayne hadde baptized a great part of the kyngdome of Kent, he after made two Archebyschoppes by the commaundement of Gregoꝝ as witnesseth Policroton: that one at London, and that other at Poꝝke, and by the helpe of Ethelberte, he assembled and gathered together the byshoppes and doctoures of Brytayne that were before dysparkeled. The place of assemble was called long after Austeyns oke, whyche is expounded to be Austeyns strengthe, and is in the marche of wykeres and of the westsaxons.

In this place, he charged þe sayd byschoppes, that they shuld with hym preache the worde of God to the Anglis, and also that they shuld among them selves amend certayne errours then vsed in the church, and speciallye for kepyng of theyꝝ Easter tyme. Wher agayne the byschoppes of Brytayne helde oppnyon, tþ Austayn by his pꝛapers shewed there a myracle by a blynde Angell oꝝ Saxon.

After the whyche myracle shewed the sayd byschoppes aplied them to þe wyll of Austayne in that cause. But for all this, there was of theym that sayde that they myghte not leaue the custome whyche they so longe hadde contynued, without assente of al such as hadde vsed the same. Then he gathered a synode, to the whyche came seuen byschoppes of Brytons, with þe wysest men of that famousse abbey of Bangoz. But fyrst they toke counsel of an holpe man wher they shulde be obedyente to Austayne oꝝ not.

And he sayde þe synd hym humble oꝝ meke, as to Chyſtes dysciple belongeth, that then they shulde assent to hym, whyche mekenes they shulde

perceauie in hym, yf he at theyꝝ commaing into the synode oꝝ counsell, arose agayne them. When the sayd byschoppes sentred the sayd synode: Austayn sat styl in the chayꝝ and remoued not wherfoꝝ they wet wyoth, and dysdayned hym, and wolde not obey to his requestes. Then he sayd to them syns ye woll not assente to my bestes generally, assente ye to me specially in .iii. thynges.

The first is, that ye kepe Ester day in due fourme and tyme as it is ordained.

The seconde, that ye geue chryſten dome to chyldeꝝ.

And the thyrde is, that ye preache vnto the Anglis the word of God as a fore tymes I haue exhorted you. And all the other deale I shall suffer you to amende and refourme wþin in your selves, but they wold not therof. Then Austayne sayde vnto them, and warned them by maner of inspyracyon, that synce they wold not receaue peace of theyꝝ brethꝛe, they shuld of othe receaue warre and wretche, the whyche was after put in exerpente by Ethelſtrydus kyng of Northumberlande.

Longe yt were to tell the cꝝcumſtaunce of the lyfe of this blessed man wherfoꝝ I passe it ouer. Lastly when he had in one daye chryſtened .x. thousande of Saxons oꝝ Angles, in the weste ryuer that is called Swale besyde Poꝝke, and knewe that he shuld shortly dye after, he ordained a successour named Laurence whyle he lyued, for the state of holpe churche in Brytayne was as yet but rude and boyssours.

This Augustyne made Mellitus byshop of London and Eastsaxons. whych after most wyrters were then newlye entred the land. The ryuer of Chamys

Champs departed them and Kent
after dyed and was buryed in þe mo-
nastyr befoze rehearsed, wythoute
the walles of Dozobernia oꝛ Caun-
terburye.

The.cxx. Chapter.

When and by
whome the fo-
undacyon of
Pauls chur-
che was bego-

Ethelbertus then confy-
med in the sayth, amonge
other coslye debes, began
the foundacion of Pauls
chyrche wythin the Cytye of London
and ordayned it foꝛ the Byschoppes
see of London. Foꝛ the Archebyschop-
pes see that befoze tyme was at Lon-
don, was by Augustyne and Ethel-
berte at the pꝛayer of the cytyzens of
Dozobernia translated to the sayde
cytye, as in the. lxx. chappter of thys
treatyse it is moze at length declared
But of the buyldyng of thys church
of saynt Paul, dyuerse oppynions be
foꝛ some wyrters testyfy, that it was
buylded oꝛ begonne to buyld, by Sy-
gebertus kyng of Eastangeles, but
moze betelye kyng of Eastarons oꝛ
Elsfer. Thys Ethelbert also founde
the churche of saynte Andzewe, in the
cytye of Dozubres in Kent now cal-
led Rochester, of the whiche Justus
was byshop ordayned befoze saynte
Alwayne.

Aboute the tyme oꝛ selson after the
fozenamed Ethelfrydus, whiche in
the Englyshe cronycle is named El-
fryde foughte wyth the Byscons at
the cytye of Legyscestre oꝛ Chester, &
slew of the Byscons a grent number
At whiche tyme and season a grete
number of the Monkes of Bangor
were also there assembled, foꝛ to pray
foꝛ the good speade of the Byscons,
wherof when Ethelfrydus was war-
ned, he fel also vpon them, and slew
of them at that tyme, as witneseth dy-
uerse authoures. cxxi. As it is befoze
shewed in the hundred &.ix. Chapter

þe hundred & xix

of thys booke.

This fozenamed Ethelbert excep-
ted a dweller oꝛ cytyzen of London,
to make a Churche oꝛ Chapell in the
woꝛshipp of saynte Peter, in the weste
ende of London then called Chorney
and now the towne of Westminster
the whiche at that tyme was foꝛgrow-
en wyth bushes and byeres exceedyn-
lye, where the sayde cytyzen beganne
and builded the fyrst church of West-
minster in the honoure of saynt Pe-
ter, whiche was after by saynte Ed-
ward þe confessor enlarged oꝛ newe
buylded. But of the thyrde Henry:
when he reigned as kyng of En-
glande, yt was newe edyfied & made
as it is now a betweteous monasta-
rye, and tychelye endowed both with
possessyon and telyches, and tych te-
nelles.

The byp-
try of the
andaryon
Westmyn-
ster church.

It is shewed in the Englyshe cro-
nycle of Englande, that thys Ethel-
berte shulde be slayne in a fyghte be-
twene hym and Ethelfryde kyng of
Northumberlande. But Polycrony-
con sayth, that he dyed and wente to
heaven, when he hadde reigned ouer
the lordeshipp of Kente. lvi. yeres and
the. xxi. yere after that he had receued
Chrysstendome.

**The kyngedome of
Eastarons.**

The.cxxi. Chapter.



Uppynge also þe foze
sayde persecucion
of the Byscons oꝛ
anye ruler of them
were specyallye na-
med, beganne the
reigne of Eastar-
ons as wytnesseth Polycronycon, vn-
der Hebertus the. fyrste kyng, ne
are aboute the yere of our lordes in
carnacyon. vi. hundred and. xiiii. All
be it that Supdo de Columna saythe
that

The byp-
try of the
andaryon
Westmyn-
ster church.

that yt beganne nere about the tyme and season, when the kyngdomme of Eastanglys beganne. But I folowe Polycronicon, for he leperth holy Beda for hys authoure in muche of hys worke. This kyngdome whiche is to meane Essex, hadde in the easte hyde the see, in the weste, Wyddelshire and London, in the southe, the ruer of Champs, and in the north, Suffolke and endured after mooste wynters by the tearme of two hundred and odde yeres. But by the sapenge of Polycronica it shuld not endure ouer two hundred yeres. Neuerthelesse, it shuld apere by the stoye of Edward the elder sonne of Aluredus, that it shulde continue vnder the Danis and other wyse, tyll the. viii. yere of hys regne. And by that reason it shoulde endure two hundred. lxx. and. xiii. yeres. The countynauce therof is moze doutful to be iustlyp determyned, for so much as wynters be of dyuerse opynions, of the begynnynge therof. Albeit that Polycronicon in the. ii. Chappter of his fyfte boke, sayth that it beganne vnder Sebertus, and vnder ten kynges, tyll Egbertus kyng of westsaxons subdued it, and ioyned it to hys owne kyngdome.

The fyfte chrysten kyng of thys lordeshyppe was the forenamed Sebertus, conuerted by meanes of Melitus byshoppe of London, as sayeth Gyrdo. But after his sapenge thys Sebertus shulde be the thyrde kyng of Essex. All wynters agreen that the kynges of thys lordeshyp were moze comenly named vnder kynges, and were moze subiecte to other kynges, and chesely vnto the kynges of Mercia or Derbyre.

Then to retourne agayne vnto þe Wytons, whyche by all thys season, occupied a parte of Cornewale and

the countrees of Cambria, as Menedocia, which now is called Northwales, & Demetrea which now is called Southwales, and there held them in makynge assautes vpon the Saxons as before is touched, somewhyle in one coste, and some whyle in þe other, vnder sondrye dukes, as wynterseth Gautryde and also the englysh cronicle. The whyche so continued after mooste accorde of tyme, and to accorde this history with other, by the tearme of. xliii. yeres, ouer & aboue thre yeres allowed for the regne of Careticus aforesayd. So that from the first yere of Careticus, to the laste of these xliii. yeres, expyrd or flowed. xlvii. yeres. At which tyme the Wytons of one assente chose for theyr hedde or ruler, the duke of Menedocia, or Southwales, named Cadwanus.

Francia.

The. cxlii. Chapter.



Clotharius or Clotharius the sonne of Chilpericus, and seconde of that name, was made kyng of a parte of Fraunce, in þe yere of our lord syue hundred. lxx. and. viii. and the seconde yere of Careticus ther kyng of the Wytons. This Clotharius by the reporte of mapster Roberte Gagrwyne, is noted to be descended of Clodouens Louis fyrst chrystened kyng of Fraunce, and not expressely to be þe sonne of Chilpericus.

Clotharius of Clotharius.

But for so muche as in þe cronicle of Chilperiche, I haue shewed to you somewhat of the dedes of Fredegunde wyfe of Chilperiche: therfore I entende in the declaringe of this stoye of Clothary, to expresse the remnant in as shorte wyse as I goodly maye.

Fredegunde wyfe of Chilperiche.

h.l. And

Of Fredegunde.

And firste ye shall vnderstande, that after thys Fredegunde hade as befoze is shewed, caused her lozde to be slayne, she fearynge that at length her vntrowth shoulde be dyscouered, wyth all her goodes in shorte tyme after yode vnto Paris, and there in the monasterie or house of our lady held her. And for she wolde be in moze surerte, and also her sonne þe sayde Clotharius shoulde be the stronger in hys dominyon a kyngdome, therfoze she sent messaungers vnto Gunthyanus kyng of Orleans a brother to her lozde Chylperiche, requirynge hym of fauoure and ayde, & that he wolde of his goodnesse be tutour & defendour of her yonge sonne Clotharius. The whiche not denyenge the requeste of Fredegunde, spedde towarde Paris in all haste, where, wyth the assente of other nobles of the Realme, he toke the gydyinge of the yonge kyng. By whose aduys and comaundemente, the sayde Clotharius was conueyd & shewed thowoughe many of the chiefe cyties of his lande. But in lyke wyse as Gunthyanus, wyth other busped them selfe to strengthe Lotharius in hys ryghte, euen so were other of the nobles of Fraunce (by the meanes of Brunehildis, wyfe somtyme of Sigebert, yongest sone of Lotharye the fyrst, the whiche Sigebert receyued of his sayde wyfe two sonnes named Chilperiche and Childeberte, of the which two, Chilperich suruyued the other) that dyd all they entent to promote Childebert to þe porcyon of hys father, that Chilpericus father of Lotharius occupied after the deathe of Sigebert fornamed.

Here discordeth the frenche cronicle fro myne authour Sagwynne. For there it is sayde, þe Brunehild wyth the other of her assent, wolde then by

theye meanes haue preferred a bastarde sonne of the fornamed Sigebert called Theodoricus, to the kyngdome of Fraunce. In other authour sayth that this Theodoriche was the sonne of Childericus also named, whiche was the sonne of Sigebert.

But to solowe mapster Sagwynne this Childebert whiche by þe former sayeng rehearsed in the .C. and. xxiij. chapter of this treatise, was deliuered from þe handes of Chilperich hys vncle, by meanes of þe erle of Poytow named Gundebald, this with a small company cam vnto Paris, wher, of þe cyteles he was kept out. For þe which sone after he sent a noble man of hys named Gillon with other, as ambassadours vnto Gunthyanus. And where amonge other thynges of hym requyred, they asked of hym Fredegunde to suffer deth, for she had by her subtilty caused to be murthred both Sigebert father to theye kyng, and also Chylpericus her owne husbunde: it was of him vterly denied. wherfoze this sayd Gillon sayd vnto Gunthyanus, for kyng, knowe thou for certayne, synnes thou haste refused this peace to the offered of thy newwe, that the deth of thy brother shal cleue to thy hedde. Wyth these wordes the kyng beyng greatlye amoued, commaunded the ambassadours to be putte oute of his courte, and when they were in the strete, all fylthe and ordoure to be caste vpon theym as enemyes.

And vntaunces thus kyndeling betwene these two kynges, Gunthyanus sone after sente Fredegunde into Austris or Roymanbye, & caused her there to be kepte not farre frome the cytie of Roan, whither to her cam many noble men of Fraunce in cofortynge her, and also mouynge her for
the

the trouble she was in, promysynge to her ayde to the uttermoste of theyr power. But when that fredegunde apperceyued the greate fauoure that Byruechpeldis stode in, of the nobles of Oyleaunce o; fraunce, she enuyenge her welthe and honoure, called to her an homycrpe and a felon called Holdercrpe, to whome she sayde fredegunde promysed greate treasure, yf he coude by benyng o; othertpse byng to death the sayde Byruechpeldis. By meane of whypche promyse he graunted to byng her entent aboute and shortly after byewe vnto þ court of the sayde Byruechpeldis. Where he fyl in suche famyllyarpte wyth byuerse of her courtte, that he came many seasons to the ptesence of þ quene. But by what hap I can not saye, lastly he was taken in suspencion, and so toymentyd and pynid, that he confessed the cause of his thypcher comyng, and by whome he was sent, with all þ other circumstaunce of the mater. After which confessyon so made, he was to beate and arayed in moste vyle manner, & so sent ageyne to fredegunde.

And when he was come to her ptesence, and shewed what tourment he had suffered for her cause: she incontynent in fulfylling of her malicious purpose, commaunded that hys handes and fete shulde be streken of and so lette go, to the ende that it shoulde be thoughte that she had nat despyed hym to that busynesse. Aboute thys tyme & season arose a pong man in a corner of fraunce, the whiche by hys subtile wytte named hym selfe to be the sonne of the fyrst Locharius, and byoother vnto Gunthyanus. The whiche by synystre meanes and crafte, gatte the fauoure of the lordes of Guyan, and by theyr assistance helde and occrpyed a greate parte therof.

And after somedeile of his counsailes to Gunthyanus by his espyes disclosed, this sayde pong man beyng named Gundoalbus, sent vnto Gunthyanus an Ambassade, and requyred hym to be restoyed to a porcion of his fathers goodes. And byng thereto that yf he denyed, the sayde Gundoalbus wolde with a stronge army repayre out of Guyan, and gette hys tpyght with strength, & that to byng about he shulde also haue great ayde of Chyldebert his neuwe aboue named. When byng Gunthyanus had at leysse heard the messagge: he in dysdappinge the same, comaunded them to be sette vpon horse backes, theyre faces towarde the rayle, and so wyth beatyng and byllanye to be bypuen thorough þ towne. It was not longe after that, a daye was appoynted betwene Gunthyanus and Chyldebert, at which daye both pynces met with great companies & lordes. And when they were sette in theyre counsaile, Gunthyanus comaunded þ foze saide messaungers of Gundoalbus to be brought to foze them, & there agayne to recyte theyr foze sayde messagge.

Which done, he shewed further moze that the sayde Gundoalde had befoze tyme dyspoyled the daughter of Chylpetyche named Rygonde of all suche tpychelle as she, wyth her conueyed, whē she went towarde Spayne to be marryed, of the which, some lordes of Chyldebert were of counsaile. Which vnto þ sayde. ii. pynces was thoughte trewe, for so muche as the sayde lordes then accused, were absent from þ greate counsaile.

The. ccciii. Chapter.

After many & great actes cōcludyd by this counsaile betwene these two foze sayde pynces: Gunthyanus, in open audyence ad-

The small by
syng of mase
singers.

h. ii. mytted

Of Gundoaldus and Gunthyanus.

mytted hys neuewe Chyldeberte for his heye, for so much as he had none heye of hys bodye, commyttinge the rule thereof to hym befoze all that were there. And after toke hym apart and shewed to hym whiche of his nobles he shulde take to counsaile, and whiche he shulde refuse. And specialle he warned hym to be well ware of his mother Bynnicheldis, for that he knewe in her so greate vntrouth and subtilty, and also of Gyllon the byshoppe, the whiche he also sayde he was not to be trusted. When he had thus aduertised his neuewe, they both retourned vnto the place of counsaile where by them and theye counsailes certayne thynges concernynge the comone wele were sette in an order.

And that doone, the sayde counsaile was synnished, and purueyaunce for theye dyner prouided, the Dynces, with they baronie went vnto dyner. In the tyme of which dyner the sayde Gunthyanus sayde vnto the greate number of lordes beyng present, yemyng lordes and nobles of Fraunce, the whiche to me haue euermore ben true and dere, here is myne neuewe, the whiche as myne heye I haue allowed and ordeyned, whome I praye you to honour, and with true saythe be vnto hym obedyente, as to your kynge. For of the greate worthynesse that of hym is to come, I am in great hope, whiche is allyed with myghte and vertue. And to the augmentation of these wordes, shortly after restored to hym all suche cytyes, as Chilpericus by his lyfe hadde withhelden from hym. And sone after cyther from other in most humble and louyng maner departed.

Of this peace betwene these two Dynces thus stablyshed, the same tyme wyde, wherfoze certayne lordes

bes beyng vpon the partye of Gundoaldus refused hym, and went vnto the partye of Gunthyanus.

Sone after with his people Gundoaldus resoyted vnto a Cytye ouer the ryuer of Secounde named Conuena, where, for the strength thereof, he thoughte to abyde hys fortune. Wherof whil Gunthyanus was warned, he in goodly speede made thither warde, and layde his people nere vnto the sayde cytye. But when he had espied the strength thereof, and knew well it was daungerous for to obteyn, he then vsed gyle, where strength myght not preuaile, and deuysed or forged certayne letters in the name of Bynnecheldis, wherein was sayned, that the sayde Bynnecheldis shulde desyre Gundoaldus in all haste wyse, to resoyte vnto the cytye of Burdeaur.

Of which fraude Gundoaldus no thyng suspectynge, commaunded hys treasure with other hys stuffe vnder saufe gidyng thitherward to be conueied. Wherof the knyghtes of Gunthyan hauinge knowlege, with a stronge company made ouer the sayde water of Secounde, and layde suche watche for theym, that they encountred the sayde people that caried the sayde treasure and stuffe, and perforce toke it from the knyghtes of Gundoaldus, and presented it vnto Gunthyanus.

Aske as befoze ye haue hard that certayne lordes of the Hoste of Gundoalde fledde vnto the hoste of Gunthyanus, so in this passe tyme foure captaynes or rulers of the Hoste of Gunthyanus fled vnto Gundoalde, the which mine authour nameth Deiberius, Dommolus, Bladastus, and Sagittarius. Which, after they commyng to Gundoalde stode in such

in such fauoure, that he was by theyr counsaile muche what aduysed and gyded. It was not longe after that þe knyghtes of Gunthyanus had thus wonne the foresayd treasure & kuffe that Gundoalde was so soze pursued that he was fayne to close hym within a stronge ctyte, the whiche Lyndegylsus mayster of the hoste of Gunthyanus assailed by dyuers feates of warre to wyne. But when he sawe his labour loste, then he cautiously fande þe meane to speke secretly wth one of the foresayde soure captaynes named Hommolus, and wth hym treated of the betrayenge of the ctyte. The whiche after many and longe exhortacions, wth the assaunce of theyr lyues and other, graunted vnto the sayde treason, wherof the maner shulde be thus. This sayd Hommolus wth the fozenamed Bladascus, and other of that assynite, shulde set a fyre an olde temple within the ctyte. And when the people of the ctyte wer busyed to quenche the fyre, the sayde Hommolus wth hys adherentes to open the gates, and so to let in Lyndegylsus and his knyghtes. But yet this treason sette a parte, Hommolus goeth to Gundoalde, and sheweth to hym the greate daunger that he standeth in of his enemyes.

Wherfore he counsayled hym that he, wth the other rulers aboute hym to go vnto the tentes of Gunthyanus and yeld them all vnto his grace and mercy. And also to the entent that he shulde there shewe and proue, that he was the indubytate sonne of the fyrst Clotharpe, the whiche to the kynge and all hys hoste was very doutfull, and the moze bycause he so fled from them. When Gundoalde had at leysoure harde the counsaile of Hommolus, geuyng to hym credence, for

so muche as by hys counsaile before tymes he hadde forthered hys causes and also by comfozte that he reported to haue by meanes of Lyndegylsus before named: he settynge aparte all feare, with certayne number in prayse able wyse issued the ctyte. And when he had a lytell space gone ii. earles of Gunthyanus hoste named Bole and Boson receyued hym, and deliuered hym to the power of Lyndegylsus, and Hommolus retourned wth the other of his confederes, vnto þe ctyte, and closed fast the gates betwene the ctyte and the pauplyons of Gunthyanus. Where was a lytell copped hyll to the heyghte whereof when Gundoalde was comen, þe sayde Boson hym sodenly threwe downe. And as he was rollynge downe the hyll, wth a greate stone he strake hym on the hed by violence wherof he was forthwith slayne or dead. And Hommolus, the whiche as before is touched was re-entred the ctyte, fyrste dyspoyled the goodes of the sayde Gundoalde, and after fell vpon the citsyns, and robbed and spoyled them in lyke maner, not sparinge prestes nor other, and after byente churches, temples, and houses wythoute pitye, whiche done he sped hym vnto the tentes of Lyndegylsus. But he not beyng sure of the sauegarde of the sayde Hommolus and his company from þe murmoure of hys knyghtes, or moze verely for he wolde not be acknowen of the prouyed deathe of them, commaunded the sayde Hommolus wth hys adherentes to tary without, & not to come in the ptease of hys knyghtes, tyll he had somedele pacified them. Which was done, but not all wythout strepe, for some there were that beganne to quatell wth hym and his. But when Lyndegylse sawe that this Hommolus

k.iii. and

The death of Gundoalde.

The last and
worthy re-
warde of 100
cours.

and his company were somdele wyth
drawen fro hys paulpon, he made a
token to his knyghtes, whereby they
knowynge his mynde, fell vpon hym
and slewe hym. Sagittarius one of
the foze sayd, iiii. of that company, the
whyche myne authoure reporteth to
be a Byshoppe, fledde to haue saue-
garded him selfe, but in his flyght he
was slayne. And when these enemies
were thus brought out of lyfe, Sun-
thyanus commaunded the goodes of
the sayde Rommole to be broughte
vnto hys tresourye, whyche were of
greate valure, and after were egallye
deuyded betwene hym and Chylde-
berte his neyue. It was not longe
after but certayne tokens & fygyres
appered in the firmament, the which
by astronomers were iuged the sygne
of some Dynce, whyche after a yere
shewed to be true. For the sayde Sun-
thyanus dyed vpon a yere folowynge
the sayde fygyres or sygnes, when he
hadde ben kyng of Oyleaunce by the
tyme of. xxxvii. yeres, and was bu-
ryed wyth greate pompe in the cytye
of Cablon wythin the prouince of
Burgoyne, in the monastery of saynt
Marke, whyche he befoze had buyl-
ded, and lefte for hys heyre of that
kyngdome his neyue the foze sayde
Chyldeberte.

The death of
Sunthyanus.

The xxxiii. Chapter.

Childeberte.



Childebertus then hauynge
the rule & possessyon of his
owne enheritaunce, that is
to say of Austracy, and al-
so of Oyleaunce, castynge in his mind
howe he might be reuenged of Frede-
gunde, the which as befoze is shewed
in the. C. and. xliii. chapter of this ly-
bel slewe his father Sygbert: called
vnto hym his olde frend and coun-
sellor Gundebalde erle of Doytow, and
then commaunded that he shuld w his

power invade þ countre of Sopsons
the whiche was in the rule of Clotha-
rius. Wherof Fredegunde being war-
ned, assembled to her the lordes of the
countrey, and exhorted them to with-
stande the malice of theye enemyes,
shewynge to them furthermoze that
that thyng they shuld of iustyce and
equyte do, consyderynge that theye
kyng Clotharius was yet tender of
age, and hadde as yet no knyghtely
prowesse to defende him selfe and his
lande. And after a longe exhortacy-
on to them made, she wyth her sonne
prepared to go agayne the sayde ene-
myes. And when all thyng to the
warre was prepared and ready, she
with a greate army made toward the
hoste of Gundebalde. And when she
knewe she was nere vnto the hoste,
she commaunded her captaynes to
reste and fortifye her people vpon all
partes for brykynge in of her enemyes
And agayne nyght she called to her
Laundye her olde paramoure wyth
other, willynge them that in the dead
of the nyght they wolde manfully set
vpon the other partye, for so muche
as she sayde to them that she was cer-
tainly enfourmed by her espyes, that
her sayde enemyes were sore weyred,
by reason of that dayes labour. Af-
ter whose counsaile the sayde Laun-
dye wyth other wroughte, and sur-
prysed theye enemyes so vntowelye,
that of them she slew a parte and cha-
sed the remnaunte. And that done
spedde them vnto Champayne nere
vnto Reynes, and spoyled and byent
a parte of that countre. Thys feat of
warre thus compassed by the subyle
wytt of Fredegunde was nere to a
place called Cruet.

Then Childebert entended after
certentye hadde of the outthrywe of
Gundebalde, for to haue made newe
warre

The fyfte parte

105

warre vpon Fredegund. But he was lette by meane of the Longoberdys, whych than made warre vpon hym. Of the whiche warre he had somdele hys intente, and moze shuld yf Marcyus Emperoure of Constantyne the noble, had kept al promesse with hym befoze made. After the whiche warre in party ended, he returned in to hys owne countrey, and shortly after he & also hys wyfe dyed, and not without suspencion of benygn: leauynge after hym two sonnes named Theodoberte and Theodoryche, gyuyng to the eldest the lordshyppe of Austracy, and to the yonger the pryncynce of Burgoyne.

About thys tyme the Hunes brake oute of theyr places, and warred vpon certayne partes of myddle Fraunce, & dyd therein great harme. But lastly by meanes of greates gyftes by them receaued, they lefte the countrey and dreyue toward Sopsons. Agayn whō Fredegunde gatherynge a greates power, sente Clotharyus hys sonne and kyng, to the intent to defend the sayd Hunes, that they shulde not inuade theyr countreys. And shortly after bothe hostes met in the felde, wher after long & sharpe fyght, the frenche menne were victours, and chased the Hunes in suche wyse, that the mooste parte of them were slayne and taken, for the whiche byctorye Fredegunde made excedyng tope to her sonne Clotharye, and receaued hym with greates pleasure and excedyng gyftes. After the whiche passed not long whyle, but that she fel sicke and dyed, and than buryed by her housebande Chylperych.

When the forenamed byethren had knowledge of the death of Fredegund they by the exhortacion and styrynge of Byrneheldys theyr graundmo-

ther, callynge to mynde the wronges to theyr auncesters doone by Fredegunde, and somdele by Clotharye: assembled a greates power, and met with Clotharye and hys powere at the ryuer of Arroune or Aruene. In þ which place was so soze fyght and so many slayne, that the courle of þ ryuer was let, by the multitude of the carayens or dead bodys that were therein cast. But the moze parte fell of the knyghtes of Clotharye, so that he was forced to forsake the felde, and thence to flee to the cytye of Melcon, and from thence to Paris, whome the sayd byethren folowed, and compelled hym to make peace after theyr pleasure.

The effecte of whiche peace was thys. Theodobert, the elder brother of these two, shuld enioye al the land lyynge betwene the ryuer of Seyn & Ley, vnto the Bytyshe Ocean, or the see of lytle Bytayne. And Theodobert the yonger brother, to haue al the lande from the sayd ryuer of Seyn vnto the ryuer of Maye to þ bynk of the see. And to Clotharye shulde remain. xii. prynces, whych the sayd two ryuers of Maye and Seyne flowen by or throughe.

Whiche peace thus confyrmed & graunted, Theodobert, to whom Neustreya or Normandy belonged, sente thither a cheuetayne of hys court called Berthalde, to defende the sayde countrey. But Clotharye of thys soze met accomde beynge nothyng contented, sente hys sonne Meroneus vnder the gudyng of Laundy prefect or ruler of hys paleys into Neustreya to warre in that country.

And so; so much as Berthalde saw well he lacked power to withstande so greates an host, he therfore toke the cytye of Dyleunce, tyl he had gathered moze companye. Then Laundy

seled

scalded that parte of the countre, and came to the walles of the city, and by diuerse wordes of reproche, excepted the sayde Berthalde to geue battayle to hym in the playne felde. The whych he refused because of the inequalite of number of knyghtes. But he offered to yssue out of the city: & to fyght wth Laundy hand to hand, wth þ he myght be assured agayne hys people, the whych offer Laundy refused.

A manly offer

It was not longe after oþ bothe knynges wth greate hostes dyede in to that countrey: and at the ryuer of Stampys met, where betwene them was foughten a strong battayll.

But by the polycy of Theodobert Lothary was put to a dysuantage. For whyle the sayde Lothary was conueying hys people ouer the ryuer at a narrow passage, Theodobert began so feartly and kepte the passage so streight, that the people of Clotharye came not two partes of them to the felde. Neuerthelesse the fyght continued by a longe season, in whyche tyme Berthalde encountered many tymes Laundy, and prouoked hym to battayle, but euer that other refused. Lastly he seyng and knowyng wel that he shulde wyne greate worship and also profyte, yf he myght see, or take thys Laundy, he therfore put hym self in the moze daunger of hys enemyes, and fynally of them was slayn. But Theodobert in pursuyng Lotharye and in comfortyng of hys knyghtes bare hym so well, that he caused hys enemyes to lese grounde and at length put them to flighte, the whych he folowed to the gates of Parys, to the greate damage of the people of Lothary. In this chace was taken Meroneus the sonne of Clotharye wth manye other, but Laundy was gotten wthyn the cytye. And

when Theodoberte had thus gotten the vyctorye of hys enemyes, he lyst no longer to tary about them at that season, but shortly after returned to hys countrey.

In the court of Theodoryche brother of this Theodobert, was at this tyme dwellyng an Italian named Prothadius, the whych as myne author sayth was parramoure vnto Brunehild beforesayde, the whych Brunehild by her meanes had exalted from poore estat vnto high authority, the whyche was of a subtyl and farte castyng wyl, and therwylth exceeding couetous, and in greate fauoure of the knyng, but to all hys lordes odious & hateful: for the whyche vnlefull meanes by hym to the nobles and comons of the lande vsed, & for the yll condycions and bad counsell that Brunehild and thys Prothadius vsed wthyn þ court of Theodobert, he banysshed them bothe as well of hys lande as of hys court, wherfore euer after they maligned agayne Theodoberte. And for the exculsion of theyr malycious purpose they tolde vnto Theodorych, that his enemy and not brother Theodobert, had wth drawen from him the cheefe of hys fathers treasure, alledgyng also, that he was not þ sonne of Chyloberte hys father, but gotten of a gardener, and willed hym therfore to sende vnto hym and to aske restitution of the sayde gooddes. By the whyche wyched counsaile Theodoryche was so ledde, that he sente vnto hys brother, and in suche wyse sobered and styed hym, that deadly malice was kyndled betwene them. In so muche that cyther of them assembled great hostes, and lastly met neare vnto a towne named Carisle, where the sayde hostes beyng redye

to haue comne togytheres, the lordes of Theodoberte so demeaned theym vnto hym, that by theyr wyse counsaile he agreed to send to his brother and to haue a communycarpon of pe ace. And when the embassied was comen to the pauplyon of Theodorych and there had shewed the vnkynednesse of this warre, wth the scopardye that myghte ensue of the same, anon the forsaide Borthadpus toke vpon hym the answer, and sayde: it is not requysite so lghly to graunt praece, but necessary it is to attempte the wpll of our enemye by battayle, whether he wpll be agreable to condescend to our desyrs.

The whiche wordes thus expressed of hym, anon the moze partye of the Lordes dysdayned it, and conspyred wthyn them selfe howe they myghte put hym to death. And forthwith arose amonge them such a murmour that the kynge apperceaued well that they intended some harme to Borthadpus, for the whych he called vnto hym a knyghte named Wisellpne, charging hym to go vnto the lordes commaundynge them that they in no wyse shulde do anye harme to Borthadpus. The whiche Wisellpne beyng of the mynde of the other sayde that the kynge wolde that they shulde do Borthadpys. After whych message done, they ranne in all haste and flew hym, as he sat playynge at dyce o; tables wth one Peter a Whyscyon, and that done al holly ranne vnto the kynges tente, besechynge hym to take no dyspleasure of the death of so euell a man, & as wel was knowe, was enemye to all frendshyp and peace. But for Theodoryche apperceaued well, that he coulde not reuenge his death wthout punyshement of a multitude, he therfore toke payence, and

suffered the offence to passe unpunished. After whiche manne thus murdered, bothe prynces wythoute notable acte departed eyther into his countrey.

The cxxv. Chapter.

In this day Theodorych had taken no wyse, all be it of his concubyne he receued two sonnes, he therfore by aduertysment of frendes, set his mynde to mary some noble woman, and soone after sente certayne embassadours vnto Berthicus then kynge of Spayne, to pyllynge to graunte vnto hym Demberge his daughter in mariage. The whiche vpon certayne condytyons was perfourmed, and with greatespyches to hym shoytelpe after sente and maryed, and by certayne tyme wel entertained and cherished. But that season comne and spent, Brunepeld so turned the kynges mynde frome the queene, that lastly he wth suche treasure and Jewels as he of her receaued sente her home agayne. The whiche iniury Berthicus her father toke at herte greuoussly, and shoytelpe after sent his messengers vnto Clothary, kynge of Wolsons, requyrynge hym of ayde to warre vpon Theodoryche whych had done vnto hym great dyspleasure, and the rather for the warre & the sayd Theodorych wth his brother lately made a gaynist hym: the whiche wth bothe they strenghtes they myghte then well reuenge. To whom Clotharius graunted. And to haue his partye the stronger, he sent vnto his neyue Theodoberte and brother to Theodorych, to styrt hym agayne his sayde brother.

Wherof when Berthicus had receaued knowledge of his sayde messengers he then sent vnto Igon king of

howe
for the
odorych
thys
of Spaine
the warre.

English and
the messenger

The wylly of
the kynge

The wylly of
the kynge

of Longoberdis, oꝝ moze verely Ido-
aldus the fyrst kyng after Alboynus
requyringe hym in lyke maner. And
he despyous of wyetch, made fast and
sure promysse to geue ayde to the ve-
termost of hys power.

The booke of
Theodoberte.
whych was e-
nemy and bry-
ther to Theo-
doziche.

When Theodoziche was warned
of the conspiracy of these .iiii. kynges
that intended to warre toyntly vpon
hym, he was therewith gretylly amoued
and prouyded greatlye for hys defen-
ce in hys best maner. Then Theodo-
berte trustyng the appoyntment be-
foze made, assembled a greate hooste
and made speede fyrst toward the pla-
ce betwene them appoynted, whych
was nere to the castel of Salas. But
oꝝ anye preparacyon was made tow-
arde battayle, a meane was founde
that the fozenamed .ii. brythzen shuld
mete ether wyth other, accompanied
wyth .i. .M. knyghtes.

Howe Theo-
doberte obtay-
ned hys pur-
pose.

But Theodobertus entending to
dysceane his sayde bryther, a to foze
hym to graunt to hys pleasure, brou-
ghte wyth hym sette aboue the nom-
ber. Wherefoze Theodozycus beyng
ouerlet wyth strengthe, graunted all
hys brythers wyll, whych was that
ouer certayne thynges and appoynt-
mentes concluded betwene Berthyp-
cus and him, Theodobert shulde hol-
de to him a hys heyyes two lordshippes
called Champayne a Turon, whych
conclusyon fynyshe, ether takynge
leue of other departed vnto theyꝝ co-
untryes, but not wythoute great vn-
restfulnes of the sayde Theodoziche
beyng in mynde the wryng doyng
of hys bryther.

Howe Theo-
dozich fought
to be cruell
vpon hys bry-
ther Theodo-
berte.

Wherefoze he shortlye after made
meanes to hys neuewe Clothayze, de-
spyring him that he woulde not assyst
hys bryther agayne hym, but to suf-
fer hys quarrell to be demed by dynte
of swerde betwene them two, Thys

requeste, Clothayze by the aduysse of
Columbarne monke of Ireland tha
beyng in those coastes graunted.

And the frenche cronycle sayeth,
that he was warned of thys fozeclapd
Monke and abbot, that he shuld not
medle betwene the sayde two brythze
foꝝ so muche as it was prouyded of
God, that he shulde be heyye to them
bothe.

When Theodoziche had receaued
thys answer, he gathered hys strenght
and spedde hym vpon his iourney to
the cytye of Langresle, and fromme
thence to Verdune oꝝ Verdoune.

Theodoberte hauinge knowledge of
hys malycious brythers purpose, ga-
thered in Austrya a greate hoost and
so sped hym tyll he came to the cytye
of Coull, where both hoostes shortlye
after met, and in the felde oꝝ play-
nes nere to the cytye fought a strong
battayle. In the whych was slayne
greate people vpon bothe sydes, but
the moze parte vpon the syde of The-
odoberte, wherfoze he synallye was
compelled to forsake the felde, and
fledde vnto Collepne, where he gathe-
ryng a newe power, foughte agayn
wyth hys bryther. In the which fight
he had like fortune, and was agayne
chased to hys greate shame and losse
whome Theodozycus as hys moztal
enemie folowed, spyng and wastynge
the countreyes as he went, in so much
that the inhabytauntes of the coun-
tryes felt before hym, besechyng hys
grace, that foꝝ the offence of one man
he wolde not destroye so many inno-
centes, assuryng hym furthermoze
that they wolde become hys lyegeme
and holde theyꝝ land of hym foꝝ euer
At whych requeste he sayde gladlye
he wolde to them graunte theyꝝ peti-
cyon, pꝛ that they wold present to him
the heade of hys bryther.

Howe
Theodoziche
deeth by
the
cronicle.

Theodo-
bertus
deeth
a grea-
t

Theodo-
bertus
deeth
a grea-
t

Theodo-
bertus
deeth
a grea-
t

Theodo-
bertus
deeth
a grea-
t

After

The fyfte parte.

119.

After the whiche answere by them of Theodorich receaued, they amonge them selfe appoynted oute a certayne of persons most apt to theyr purpose and wylled them to go vnto Theodoberte to execute theyr intent.

The whiche spedde theyr iourneie tyll they came to the presence of Theodoberte, and shewed vnto hym that if he wolde be agreable to departe wth suche stuffe and iewelles as he had of hys fathers. so that Theodorich myght be partner therof he shulde haue perfect ampte and reste wth hym. To the whych wordes he geueinge confydence and truste, called to hym the sayde persons, and broughte them into the howses, where the sayd stuffe and iewelles lay. And while he was busied to deuise out and appoynte the porcyon of hys, one of the sayde persons stawe hym sodaynlye, and after of one agreement strake of hys heade, and in secret wyse caused yt to be conuayed vnto hys brother. Whan Theodorich had receaued the heade of hys brother, he spedde hym to Coleyne where thys treason was wroughte, and receaued the cytie into hys possession, wth all the kyngdome of Austracye to hys brother belongynge. And when he had there oꝝ dyed his nedes after his mynde, with two sonnes and an exceabyng fayre daughter of Theodoberte, he spedde hym vnto Dees the chefe cytie of Austracy, where wth hym met hys graundmother Burcheld. The whych perceaueryng in all malpce and myschefe, caused the sayde two sonnes to be moxtlye slayne.

Theodorich then restored oꝝ deliuered vnto Clothayr, all suche landes as to hym he had befoze promysed.

Theodoriche thus endynge hys warre, the whiche by a longe season

spent hys tyme in keepynge of concubynes, was now rauyshed wth the betwye of his brothers daughter, the whiche he had broughte frome Colayne. But that doyng Burcheld wthstode with al her power, because the mayde was so nere of hys kynne. For the whych he being wth her soze dyscontente sayde: O thou moost wyked and false woman, dydst not thou make me to beleue, that Theodobert was not the sonne of my father, but that he was the sonne of a gardenere? For what cause hast thou caused me to persecute my brother, and lastly to sle hym? After whych wordes he wold haue slayne her, if he of hys Loꝝdes had not bene letted. Whych dede not forgotten of thys vngodlye woman, euer after ymagined how she myght byynge Theodorich out of lyfe. And lastely she hyed such as were about hym to consent to her iniquyte, so that vpon a season when he came oute of hys stowe oꝝ bayne, he asked bynke by the foꝝce wherof he was poysoned and dyed soone after, when had reygned. xviij. yeres. Howe be it Antonyus in the. vi. chapter, and xii. title of the seconde parte of hys worke, sayth that he was byente wth fyre by the deuynne power.

The. cxi. Chapter



Owe that I haue shewed vnto you the fyne and ende of these two byethen, by reason of whose deathe the boole pryncypate of fraunce fell vnto the aboue named Clothayr: I shal now expresse vnto you the deades by hym done after he had all the rule onelye.

So yt was that y foze named Burcheld malpned euer agayn Lothayr. And to the foꝝtheraunce of her malpce

Bynke
wold
odoyr
mayn
brother
shew.

The
Theodo
to Burch
eld.

The can
and nam
mynd of
nechpeld

The deat
Theodo

Clothayr
Lothayr
iii. brother
killed y
realme of f
raunce.

hym Theo
dort was de
mynd.

hym Theo
dort was de
mynd.

Theodobert
ereth Theo
dort was de
mynd.

The death of
Theodoberte

Theodobert
ereth Theo
dort was de
mynd.

Theodobert
ereth Theo
dort was de
mynd.

The malpce
and deat
mynd of
Burcheld.

Bynke
wold
odoyr
mayn
brother
shew.

of Longobardis, or moze verely so aboute the first kyng after Alboynus requyringe hym in lyke maner. And he despyous of wretch, made fast and sure promyse to geue ayde to the bettermost of hys power.

The booke of
Theodoberus,
whych was e-
nemy and by-
sther to Theo-
doryche.

When Theodoryche was warned of the conspiracy of these iii. kynges that intended to warre ioyntly vpon hym, he was therewith greatly amoued and prouyded greatly for hys defence in hys best maner. Then Theodoberus trustyng the appoyntment he fore made, assembled a greete hooste and made speede fyrst toward the place betwene them appoynted, whych was nere to the castel of Salas. But or anye preparacyon was made toward battayle, a meane was founde that the forenamed. ii. bryethen shuld mete ether wth other, accompanied wth. v. M. knyghtes.

Howe Theo-
doberus ob-
tayne hys pur-
pose.

But Theodoberus entending to dysceane his sayde brother, & to force hym to graunt to hys pleasure, broughe wth hym ferre aboue the nomber. Wherefore Theodorycus beyng ouerfett wth strengthe, graunted all hys brothers wyll, whych was that ouer certayne thynges and appoyntmentes concluded betwene Berthyrus and him, Theodoberus shulde holde to him & hys heires two lordships called Champayne & Turon, whych conclusyon synned, ether takynge leue of other departed vnto theyr countreys, but not wthoute great vnrestfulnes of the sayde Theodoryche beyng in mynde the wrong doyng of hys brother.

Howe Theo-
doryche fought
to be reuenged
vpon hys bro-
ther Theodo-
berus.

Wherefore he shortly after made meanes to hys newe Clothayre, despyng him that he woulde not assyst hys brother agayne hym, but to suffer hys quarrell to be demed by dynte of swerde betwene them two, Thys

requeste, Clothayre by the aduys of Columbarne monke of Ireland that beyng in those coastes graunted.

And the frenche cronycle sayeth, that he was warned of thys foresayd Monke and abbot, that he shuld not medle betwene the sayde two bryethen for so muche as it was prouyded of God, that he shulde be heyre to them bothe.

When Theodoryche had receaved thys answer, he gathered hys strength and spedde hym vpon his iourney to the cytye of Langresse, and from thence to Verdune or Verdoune.

Theodoberus hauinge knowledge of hys malycyous brothers purpose, gathered in Justyna a greete hoost and so sped hym tyll he came to the cytye of Coull, where both hoostes shortly after met, and in the felde or playnes nere to the cytye fought a strong battayle. In the whych was slayne greete people vpon bothe sydes, but the moze parte vpon the syde of Theodoberus, wherefore he synnallye was compelled to forsake the felde, and fledde vnto Collepne, where he gathered a newe power, foughte agayne wth hys brother. In the which fight he had like fortune, and was agayne chased to hys greete shame and losse whome Theodorycus as hys mortal enemye folowed, spyng and wastynge the countreys as he went, in so much that the inhabytauntes of the countreys fell before hym, besechyng hys grace, that for the offence of one man he wolde not destroye so many innocentes, assuryng hym furthermoze that they wolde become hys lyegemen and holde theyr land of hym for euer. At whych requeste he sayde gladly he wolde to them graunte theyr petition, yf that they wold present to him the heade of hys brother.

After

After the whiche answere by them of Theodorich receaued, they amonge them selfe appoynted out a certayne of persons most apt to theyr purpose and wylled them to go vnto Theodoberte to execute theyr intente.

The whiche spedde theyr iourneie tll they came to the p[re]sence of Theodoberte, and shewed vnto hym that yf he wolde be agreable to departe wth suche stuffe and iewelles as he had of hys fathers, so that Theodorich myght be partner therof he shulde haue perfect ampte and rest wth hym. To the whych wordes he geueinge confydence and truste, called yd hym the sayde persons, and broughte them into the howses, where the sayd stuffe and iewelles lay. And while he was busied to deuynge out and appoynte the porcyon of hys, one of the sayde persones strewed hym sodaynlye, and after of one agreement strake of hys heade, and in secret wyse caused yt to be conuayed vnto hys brother. Whan Theodorich had receaued the heade of hys brother, he spedde hym to Coleyne where thys treason was wrought, and receaued the cytpe into hys possession, wth all the kyngedome of Austracye to hys brother be longynge. And when he had there o[ver]dred his nedes after his mynde, with two sonnes and an exchebynge sayre daughter of Theodoberte, he spedde hym vnto Wees the chefe cytpe of Austracye, where with hym met hys graundmother B[ri]chteld. The whych perceauyng in all malice and mysche, caused the sayde two sonnes to be mortallye slayne.

Theodorich then restored o[ver] deliuered vnto Clothayre, all suche landes as to hym he had befoze promysed.

Theodoriche thus endynge hys warre, the whiche by a longe season

spent hys tyme in keepinge of concubynes, was nowe rauyshed wth the bewtye of his brothers daughter, the whiche he had broughte frome Colayne. But that doyng B[ri]chteld wthstode with al her power, because the mayde was so nere of hys kynne. For the whych he being with her soze dyscontente sayde: O thou moost wyked and false woman, dydst not thou make me to beleue, that Theodobert was not the sonne of my father, but that he was the sonne of a gardenere? For what cause hast thou caused me to persecute my brother, and lastly to sle hym? After whych wordes he wold haue slayne her, yf he of hys lordes had not bene letted. Whych dede not forgotten of thys vngodlye woman, euer after ymagined how she myght bypynge Theodorich out of lyfe. And lastely she hyed such as were about hym to consent to her iniquyte, so that vpon a season when he came oute of hys stowe o[ver] bayne, he asked bypynche by the force wherof he was poysoned and dyed soone after, when had reygned. xviij. yeaeres. Howe be it Antonyus in the. vi. chapter, and xii. title of the seconde parte of hys worke, sayth that he was byente wth fyre by the deuynge power.

The. cxxvi. Chapter



Dwe that I haue shewed vnto you the tyne and ende of these two byethzen, by reason of whose deathe the boole pryncypate of Fraunce fell vnto the aboue named Clothayr. I shal nowe expresse vnto you the deades by hym done after he had all the rule onelye.

So yt was that y[ou]r soze named B[ri]chteld maligned euer agayn Clothayr. And to the fortheraunce of her malpce

Howe Theo-
dort was de
myth.

Howe Theo-
dort was de
myth.

Theodobert
marryd Theo-
dort's wyf
a great hoole

The death of
Theodobert

Theodobert
like the byr
eye.

Theodobert
f. 10th. agayn
vpon Theo-
dort's, and
hys thum
was chaild
has great

The malpce
and deue
the mynd of
B[ri]chteld.

Howe Theo-
dort was de
myth.

The nauygher
a hartful mynd
of Brunehyde
side.

malpce, He be haued her in such wise
wth some of the rulers & lordes of
Austracy, that he caused them to ad-
mytte one named Sygeberte to be
ryghtefull enherytoure of that lande
But for that some of them had good
experyence of the yll dyspocypson of
thys woman, they therfore sent two
noble men of that lande named De-
pin and Arnolde vnto Clothayr, wyl-
lynge hym to sende hastelye into that
prouynce. After the whych meassage
by these two lordes reported, Clotha-
rys shortly after spedde hym into
Austracy, and at a castell called Ca-
thomat he lodged hym wth hys peo-
ple. Wherof hearynge Brunehyde
sente vnto hym, & gaue vnto him mo-
nycion that he shulde vopde the land
for so much as Sygeberte the eldest
sonne of Theodoryche was therof
ryghtefull enherytoure.

He haue hearde before that Theo-
doryche bled lemman, of the whych
he receaued. iiii. sonnes, that is to say
Sygeberte, Corbe, Chyldebert, and
Merone. Wherfore the forsayd Bru-
nehelde entyndyng to dysturbe Lo-
thayr and al the lande, forsped the
sayde Sygeberte to clayme the land
of Austracy. And when Clothayr
had receued knowledge of thys com-
maundemente frome Brunehelde
or Brunehust, he sent to her answer
that he wolde assemble the lordes of
Austracy, and be demed by them whe-
ther thys lande belonged to hym or
Sygeberte. And the fearynge that
sentence, excited the people of the pro-
uynce of Germany to strengthe her
partye, wth all the people that he
myghte make of the sayd countrie of
Austracy. And that to bynge about
he sente one Garnery another Albon
Of thys Garnery he hadde suspec-
cyon that he shulde fauoure the par-

tye of Lothayr, wherfore to Albone
hys felowe he sente letters, that he
shulde put the sayde Garnery awaye
When Albon had ouer red the letter,
he brake it in peces and thytwe them
frome hym. And afterwarde a frende
of Garnerys gathered the peces, and
so toynded them that he conueryed the
sentence of the letter and forthwyt
shewed it vnto Garnery. When Gar-
nery perceaued the malicious intent
of Brunehelde, he kepte it secreate
to hym selfe: all be it that he by hys
secreat meanes caused the Germany-
es that they shulde take no partye w
Brunehelde.

And that done he returned to Bur-
goyne, where wth her and her com-
pany he solicited so the lordes of Bur-
goyne, that some of them abhorred
her deylte of that woman. And when
Garnery had in this wyse compassed
hys matters, he sent vnto Lothayr,
and shewed yf he myghte haue hys
grace and safe condede: he wold come
to hym and shewe to hym thynge co-
cernynge hys aduantage. All the
whych was graunted.

Then Clothayr by counsaile of
the sayde Garnery assembled hys po-
wer, and shortly sente a strengthe of
them into Champayn and Cathalop-
ne, where it was shewed that Syge-
berte had gathered great strengthes
Then forsoke the party of Sigebert
many nobles of Austracy, amonge
the whiche myne authoure namethe
Rucro, Sygoldus, and Enulanus,
and yelded them to the mercy of Clo-
thayr. Then shortly after the hostes
of Clothayr and Sygeberte mette,
where Garnery, by tokens betwene
hym and dyuertise of the captaynes of
Sygeberte before assgnyed, the sayd
captaynes wth theyr people wth-
drew them, so that Sygeberte wth
hys

dyewe them, so that Sygeberte wryth
hys two byethzen Corbo and Hero-
neus gaue backe whyle they came to
the ryuer of Sygounne, where after
lycle respytence the forsayde two bye-
thzene were taken. But the frenche
cronicle sayth that all foure byethzen
were there take. Albeit mayster Sag-
wyn sayeth, that Sygeberte by the
strengthe of his horse escaped, so that
he was not after that daye sene.

And sone after this vyctory Bu-
necheldes, whiche also of the frenche
cronicle, is named Buneheuste, was
broughte as prysoner vnto the pre-
sence of Lotharye, wryth a sister of
Theodoriche, whiche Garnery or Ger-
ney hadde taken in the tentes of hys
enmyes. Then Lotharyus forth-
with commaunded Corbo to be be-
hedded, & pryserved Heroneus, for
so much as he was to hym godfather
and euer after cheryshed hym as hys
kynnesman.

Lotharius thus hauing þe victory
of his enmyes, made great ioye. And
after he hadde some deale sette that
countrey and other in quiete, he then
toke aduysse of hys Lozdes, howe he
shoulde be demeaned wryth Bune-
chelde, that hadde bene authoryce of
so many folde myscheyfes and crimi-
nous dedes. The whyche of one con-
sent and mynde condescended & agre-
ed, þe shulde be put to mooste payn-
full and vyle death. And fynally af-
ter soze beatynges she was sette vpon
a horse, and so conueyed thorough þe
hoste, that all men myghte beholde
and se her, and after brought agayne
to the kynges presence. Where then þe
kyng rehered vnto her a longe pro-
cesse of all her murderes, conspyra-
ces, and wycked dedes, affermyng
that she hadde bene the occasyon and
cause of the deathe of ten prynces, be-

syde other meane persones. And whē
he hadde sayde hys pleasure, he then
commaunded her to be bounden to a
wylde horse taylor, by the heare of her
hedde, and so to be dyaue whyle she
were deade.

And when this iudgemēt was exe-
cuted, she by the lycence of the kyng
was buryed in an house of religyon,
within the cytie of Holsdon or Olsdon
that she before tyme hadde buylded
of saynt Martyne, besyde other ma-
ny that she in her lyfe buylded in dy-
uerse other places, endowynge them
with great and ryche posselions.

The.cxxvii. Chapter.

Thus Dame Fortune fa-
uoured the partye of Lo-
tharius, that this kyng-
dome, which had from the
time of Clodoue Lewes
contynued vnder foure gouernours
or rulets for the more partye, now
was fallen to hym, so that he had all
vnder obeysaunce and rule, then a-
non this Lotharius made Garnery
prefecte and mayster of hys palleyes,
and released vnto the Longebardes,
or Lombardes a trybute of .xii. thou-
sande pounde perely payde to the kyng
ges of Fraunce, þe which was first set
vpon them by Guthranus his vncle.

And in this whyle to hys more en-
crease of worldly ioye, he receyued
of hys wyfe Bergeruda a sonne, the
whiche he named Dagobertus. The
whyche when he came to couenable
age, he betoke to the lozde of Arnolde
then Bysshoppe of Mees. And when
the first wyfe of Lotharius was ded,
he maryed a second, named Sychyld
of whome he receyued a chyld, & na-
med it Hapberte. When Dagobert þe
i. sone was come to a lawfull age, Clo-
tharye consyderyng þe stowardnes of
his growing, assigned hym a tutoure

l. i. or lear-

The fyfte
sonne of Lo-
tharius named
Dagobertus.

The pollicie
of Lotharius

oꝝ learner of worldely and knyghtely maners, whose name was Sadage- sple. And foꝝ hys sonne shoulde haue him in the moze awe & feare, the king gaue vnto the saide tutoure the duke dome of Supan. But so it was one daye that foꝝ a cause thys Sadage- sple wolde haue chastized this Dagobert, wherof he beyng ware, asso- ciated vnto hym certayne wanton per- sons, and beate his maister, and after in way of dyspyte caused the beard of hys tutoure to be shauen of. Foꝝ the whyche dede Lothayze was agayne hym greuously dyspleased, & in great ire and haste, sente foꝝ his sonne Da- goberte. But he fearynge punysh- ment, withdrew hym tyll suche tyme as he myghte attayne vnto the grace of his father.

After this reconcyliacon, Lotha- ryus ordeyned vnder hym hys sonne Dagobert to be ruler of the sygnory of Austracye. But whyther it were by the elacon of his owne mynde, oꝝ by hadde counsaile, he shortly after rebelled agayne his father, and wold haue retayned that prouynce to hys owne vse.

Foꝝ this were chosen twelue noble men of Fraunce, to arbitte and deme betwene hys father and the sonne. The whyche lordes after they had longe debated thys mater, by saye entrea- tise contented so the father, hys he gaue vnto the sonne the sayde lordeshyppe of Austracye.

Soone after thys accorde, Clo- thayze made warre vpon the Gothis oꝝ Saxons, and them at lengthe sub- dued. Foꝝ it is to be knowen, that lyke as the sayde Saxons, inuaded muche Bytayne oꝝ England, in lyke wyse warred they in Fraunce, and lastely subdued the prouynce of Aeu- ricia, and named it after theym Aoz-

wherof Aoz-
mandye toke
hys name.

mandy, as after in hys story of Charles the simple shal moze evidently apere.

Of this victoꝝy of the Saxons is made a longe rehersall, and howe lastely when Clothayze hadde slayne the kynge oꝝ ruler of theym, named Berthande, he after yode into the countrey of Germaine, and slew man and chyld that passed hys length of his swerde.

Of this and other dedes by thys Lothaire done, I might make a longe worke, but I passe ouer.

Then it foloweth, when Lothayze hadde set hys countrey in some rest, he assembled hys lordes at a cytye oꝝ towne called Traacas oꝝ Treas.

And after diuerse maters discussed and ended, he asked of theym perfyte allegaunce and fydelyte to hym and hys heyres to be kepte. The whyche by the sayde lordes fymely promysed and assured, he commaunded eueryche of theym to repayre to theyr owne countreys. And soone after he made an assemble of hys Bysshoppes and spirytual men, at the cytye oꝝ towne of Troy, by whose counsailes he ordeined thynges and maters: concernynge the wele of the churche.

And shortly after he was vexed wth greuous sickness, wherof he fynally dyed, when he hadde reigned after mooste wynters. xlii. yeres, leuynge foꝝ heyre the fozenamed Dagoberte, the whyche entred hys father wth great pompe at hys abbey of saynt Vin- cent wythoute the walles of Parys, the which abbey is at thys day called saynt Germaines.

The fozenamed peres accompted foꝝ the regne of Lothayze, he ac- compted from the fyrste daye that he was ordeined kynge of Saxons, vnto the day of hys deeth. Wherof he reigned after some wynters ouer a parte

The west
Lotharius

parte. xxviii. yeris, & ouer all fraunce
xvi. yeris. Whiche make the full of
ciii. yeris.

Anglia.

The. cxxviii. Chapter.



Cadwanus oꝝ Ca
dwan, & which of
Guido is named
Duke of Uene-
doice oꝝ of North
wales, was by
one assente of the
Byttons, lastely
made theyꝝ souerayne oꝝ gouernoure
in the yere of oure Loꝝde. vi. hundred
and. ciii. and the. xxv. yere of the se-
conde Clotharye kynge of fraunce,
and also & fyfte yere of Colwolphus
then kynge of Westsaxons, accomp-
tynge foꝝ the regne of Ceawlinus,
kynge of the sayde Westsaxons. xxi.
yeris. And foꝝ Coltrecus nexte succe-
dyng hpm. v. yeris.

Ye haue befoze hard what discorde
and trouble was amonge the By-
ttons, in the tyme of Careticus laste
kynge & longe after, by reason wher-
of the Saxons wanne the moze land
and as befoze is rehearsed in the. C.
and. ii. Chappter, howe Ethelfryde
kynge of Northumberland ouerset
the Byttons at the cytye of Chestre,
and forced the to take ouer Seuarne
and so into Wales, where they then
chase thys Cadwane to theyꝝ Duke
and leader. The whiche after he was
putte in authoryete, assembled hys
Byttons, and came agayne into By-
tayne, and gaue battayle vnto the
sayde Ethelfryde. In the which they
spedde dyuersly, so that some season
the Saxons wanne, and somwhyle
the Byttons. But the Byttons helde
Chestre & other good townes, whiche
they recovered at theyꝝ last comyng.

It shulde seme by the meanyng

of Policronyca, that thys Cadwan:
oꝝ Cedwall shulde at lengthe see the
sayde Ethelfryde and Oricus both
kynge of Byennicia and Derya
But Guido and also Gaufrpde wpt-
nesseth, that after thys Cadwan had
the better of Ethelfryde, by medya-
tours it was agreed that Ethelfryde
shulde enioye all the lande ouer and
beyond Humber vnto Scotlande,
and Cadwan shoulde haue the lande
from Humber towarde the Southe.
To the whiche sayenge agreeth the
Englyshe cronycle, aftermynge also
that he shulde be the sonne of Byrc-
uall kynge of Lynceter, the whiche of
other wyrters is not testified.

It is also there shewed that after &
sayde accorde betwene Ethelfryde &
Cadwan confyrmed, that they conty-
nued, durynge the lyfe of Cadwan,
as two especyall louers and frendes,
and durynge the regne of this Cad-
wan the two sonnes of Coltricus, Kin-
gylsus and Quichyllynus after the
deth of theyꝝ fathers brother Colwol-
phus, ruled iointely the pyncepare
of westsaxons. The whiche in theyꝝ
beginnyng, saught agayne the By-
ttons at Impton besyde Orenfoꝝde, &
wanne of them the towne & other hol-
des, whiche the Byttons in & countre
occupied. But by agreement of wy-
rters, this Cadwan was not at this co-
flicte, noꝝ yet medled hpm so far wth
in the lande. But as it shoulde seme
by Guido, these Byttons shoulde be
some company that wuld lyue vnder
tribute of the Saxons, the which foꝝ
the manhode & they had reported of
Cadwan, rebelled agayne & Saxons
Then it foloweth, whē this Cad-
wan thus contynued hys ampte wth
Ethelfryde, a chaunge fell, that this
Ethelfryde foꝝ hated oꝝ otherwys
put from hpm hys wyfe beynge great,
l. ii. wth

Of Edwyn and Ethelfryde.

with chylde, & toke to hym an other. wherfoze this woman being remedy-
 lesse, callinge to myne the great lout,
 that was betwene her husbände and
 Cadwan, she went vnto hym, and spe-
 cially besought hym to reconcytle her
 lozde and husbände, that she myghte
 be restozed to hys company. But for
 Cadwan after many meanes, and re-
 questes myght not bypnyng that about
 he therfoze tenderpnyge her necessyte,
 kepte her in hys owne court, tyll she
 were lpyghted. The whyche at tyme
 brought forth a man chylde, whome
 she lette call Edwyn. And soone af-
 ter was the wyfe of Cadwan deliue-
 red of a sonne, whome the father cal-
 led Cadwalyn. But the authoure of
 the floure of histoyres sayth þ these
 two chyliden were long bozne befoze
 this tyme. The which shulde seme to
 be true, for so muche as this Cadwa-
 lyn was of lawfull age to betwede his
 land when his father dyed, the which
 he coulde not do, if he hadde nowe be
 bozne. But as assermeth Policro-
 nic, it shulde seme lyke to a fable, all
 the reherfalle that Gaufryde maketh
 in þ ende of his boke, as well for Cad-
 walyn and Edwyn, as for the other
 cyrcumstaunce of the mater there re-
 hearsed. Whiche varyeth from other
 wyrters bothe for the tyme, and also
 for the mater, as somede is moze in
 the histoyre hereof befoze made men-
 cion, and also by the continuance of
 this stoyre. For as Giraldus Cam-
 bryens and other sayen, thys Edwyn
 was the sonne of Elle o; Ella kyng
 of Deyra, the whiche was persecuted
 of Ethelfridus befoze named then
 kyng of bothe þrouncies, that is to
 meane Bzennicia and Deyra, so soze
 that he was compelled to flee to Red-
 waldus then kyng of Eastanglys.
 The whyche for mede o; feare of the

sayde Ethelfryde, was lastely consen-
 tyng to haue betrayed Edwyn, of
 whyche daunger the sayde Edwyn
 was deliuered by warning of a frend
 of hys.

After this escape, as Edwyn satte
 bpon a tyme in a grete studye alone
 a straunger apere to hym sodeyn-
 ly, and sayde. I knowe well the cause
 of thy thought and heupnes. Ther-
 foze if thynne enemyes were slayne, &
 thou restozed vnto thy kingdom, and
 sette in better maner then any of thy
 foze-fathers: woldest thou not admyt
 suche one for thy frende, and assente
 and do by hys rede and counsaile?
 Yes trewly sayde Edwyn, and that I
 surely and fastly promysse the. Then
 this man layde hys hande bpon Ed-
 wynes hed and sayde to hym, Edwyn
 when thys token is broughte to the,
 then haue thou mynde of thys tyme
 of trybulacpon, and of thys promysse
 that þ haste made. And anon as thys
 was spoken, thys man vanyshed out
 of his syght sodeynly.

In a conuenient season after, Ed-
 wyn assembled hys hoste, and gaue
 batayle vnto Ethelfryde in the coun-
 trey of Mercia by east: the ryuer of
 Idle, and slewe hym in that fyghte,
 with a great number of his knyghtes
 and then seased in his possession both
 the foze-sayde þyncypates, and was
 kyng of Norththumberlande by the
 terme of .xviii. yeres.

Ye shall vnderstande that the foze
 named Ethelfryde had thye sonnes,
 whiche are mencponed besyde other.
 The fyrste & eldest was named Gau-
 fricus, the seconde Oswaldus, and
 the thyrde Oswe. The fyrste was of
 lawfull age, so that he myghte helpe
 and shyft for hym selfe. But Oswald
 was but .xii. yeres of age, and Oswe
 farre yonger. Wherfoze theyre war-
 deyns

The byrth of
 Edwyn the
 sonne of Ethel-
 fryde.

The byrth of
 Cadwalyn
 the sonne of
 Cadwan.

The
 Ethelfryde

being immediately after they; fathers
deathe, sente them into Armenia or
lytell Bytayne, there to be broughte
up, or moze verelpe into Albantia or
Scotlande.

The. ccc. Chapter.

ABout this tyme and season
as by the said Polycronica,
Gyldo & othes, began the
kyngdom of lordshyppe of
Mercia, under the stronge paynim &
Saron called Wenda. The whiche
Mercia or Mercherike continued by
tynghdonshyre, Dertforshyre, Glouces-
ter shyre, with dyvers other, and was
greatest and largest of all the other, &
was closed in the west syde with the
river of Dee, stretching to Chester and
Seuarne, and so to Shrouesburpe &
Bystowe, in the East it was closed
wth the see Ocean, in the South
with Champs unto London, and in
the north w the river of Humber, and
hadde his begynnyng under the foze-
named Wenda, as the accorde of dy-
verse authours witnesseth, in the pere
of our Lordes incarnation, xpc hun-
dred and. cxxvi. and after the fyfte co-
mynge of Hengyste, a hundred and.
lxxvi. yeres. Albeit, that of the fyfte
kyngdom dyverse opinions there bene,
whereof a cause maye be, for so much
as thys lordshyppe in the fyfte be-
gynnyng was departed in thre, that
is to saye the fyft was called east Mer-
cia, the. ii. was named myddell Mer-
cia, and the thyrde west Mercia. But
after it was broughte to one pynce-
pate & called Mercherike, or of some
wyter myddell Englande. Of thys
lordshyppe, the fyfte chrysten kyng
was called Wolpherus that was the
sonne of the fozenamed Wenda. But
of all the kynges of thys kyngdome
of Mercia, which were. c. vii. in nom-
ber as testyfyeth Polycronica, Ossa

was of moste myghte and powet, as
after shall moze playnly appere.

This Lordshyp endured to reke
moste certaynly, tyll the pere of oure
Lordes cyght hundred. lxxvi. In the
whiche pere Alured or Alhered then
kyng of Westsaron, toyned it unto
hys owne kyngdome, whiche by that
acompte shulde be two hundred & l.
yeres. Albeit that some accompte the
endurance thereof, to the laste pere of
Wardgedus: that was put out by the
Danes, by whiche reckenyng it shold
then endure. lxxvi. yeres lesse. And some
wyters accompte the tyme thereof
whyle the tyme of Edward called the
elder, whiche after the deathe of hys
father Alured putte out the Danes
from the sayde lordshyppe, and toyn-
ed it agayne to Westsaron, and by
acompte it shold laste two hundred
lxxvi. yeres and odde.

Ye shal also vnderstande, that in
thys kyngdome reygued dyverse ho-
lye kynges, whiche now be allowed
by the church for sayntes, as Ossa,
Kenelphus, Kenelmus, and other as
hereafter somedale shal appere.

I have sent an olde register withyn
the Church of Soules of London,
wherin is consigned many thynges,
concernyng the fyfte foundation of
that church, wth certayne olde cro-
nycles of thys lande. Amonge the
whiche it is there noted, that in the
tyme and season when Cadwan was
kyng or ruler of the Byltons, that in
the same moment and tyme reygued
in dyverse partes of this lande, these
seven kynges under wyten.

As fyrst Sibertus, that then was
kyng of Eastsaron now called Essex. Red-
waldus was then kyng of Eastan-
glys now called Norfolk. and Suth. Ethel-
bertus was then kyng of Kent. Ethel-
waldus was kyng of Southsex. Kin-
l.iii. gylfus

The number
of kynges that
reigned at
once in En-
glande.

1.
2.
3.
4.
5.

gylsus was kynge of Westsaxons.

6.
7.
Menda was kynge of Mercerie.
And Ethelfridus was then kynge of
the north countre of Norththumber.
All which regester, this worke accor-
deth with, yf the storyes of thys Cad-
wan, Caroticus, and Cadwal be due-
ly searched.

The cxx. Chapter.

Cadwan.

The ys then retourne to the
performaunce of the sto-
ry of Cadwan, & of suche
deedes as were done in his
dayes. Aboute the. xliii. yere of hys
reygne Quincellinus & was brother
unto kyngillus, and kyng with hym
as befoze in the. C. xlviii. chapter is
touched, ruled the westsaxons, sente
vpon an Ester day a swerdman to sle
Edwyn kyng of Northumberlande.
This swerdman came to a cypre be-
syde & water of Darwene in Darby-
shyre, and waited his tyme, and lastly
fande the kyng finally accompanied
and entreded to haue romys thorough
the kyng with a swerd enuenemed.

A swerdman.

A faithful
seruaunte.

But one Villa the kynges trusty
seruaunte, dysgarnished of shylde or
other weppyn to defende hys mayster,
starre betwene the kyng & the sworde
and was stryken thorough the body,
and dyed, and the kyng was wound-
den with the same stroke. And after
he wounded the thyrde, and was ta-
ken and confessed by whome he was
sent to make that treason. The other
knyght that was secondly wounded,
dyed, and the kyng lape after longe
sphe or he were healed. And the same
nyght folowynge: the quene was de-
liuered of a doughter, & which kyng
Edwyn caused to be chrystned of Pau-
linus the Byshoppe, in token that he
wold fulfyl all such promise as he be-
foze had made. And she was named
Enfleda, and halowed vnto God.

And after whysontyde the kyng
beyng scantely hole of the wounde,
assembled hys hoste, & made towarde
the kynges of westsaxon, and after a
greate and soze fyghte, venquished
them and therre hoste. But Edwyn
for all thys victoys and other thyn-
ges geuen to hym of God, as he that
was in helthe of the worlde, forgatte
his former promise, and hadde lptell
mynde thereof, excepte that he by the
preachynge of Paulinus forsoke his
mauneyns, and for his excuse sayde
that he myghte not clerely renpe hys
olde lawe that hys fozefathers hadde
kepte so longe, and soberyly be chry-
stened without authoyspe and good
adyspe of hys counsaile. He also re-
ceyued letters of exhortacion and con-
fyrte to take the baptyms, from the. b.
Boniface then byshop of Rome. The
whiche also sent to the quene lyke let-
ters, with a myrour garnished with
syluer and a combe of puerp, and for
the kyng, a shyrte wrought in sondry
places with letters of golde. But all
this prenyled nothyng.

It was not longe after, that the
kyng assembled hys counsaile, and
by theyr agreement he was of the said
Paulinus byshop of Poyske baptised
wythin the sayde cypre the. xi. yere of
hys reygne, and the yere of grace, as
testifyeth Supdo. vi. C. xlvii. He was
the fyrste chrysten kyng that reygned
in that countrey. And after hym ma-
ny of his loydes & subiectes were also
chrystened of the sayd Paulinus, and
the flamys or byshoppes of theyre
falle goddes, were turned to chrystes
fapthe. In token wherof they armed
them as knyghtes, and bestrode good
hoxes, where befoze by theyre lawe
they myghte vse none armoure, nor
tyde but onely on a mare.

From that tyme forthwardes by
the

the treme of .xl. yeres, duringe the lyfe of kynge Edwyn. Paulinus cry-
stened continually in bothe prouyn-
ces of Decca and in Brennacia in the
counties of Gloucestre & Saluall, whiche
he held for his fontes, and preached
in the shire of Lincolne, and builded
there a church of stone at Lyncolne.

In this tyme was so greute peace
in that kyngedome of Edwyne, that
a woman myghte haue gone frome
one towne to another without grefe
or nopaunce.

And for the refreshynge of way go-
ers, this Edwyn ordayned at cleare
welles cuppes or dysches of yron or
brasse to be fastened to postes stan-
dynge by the sayde welles sydes, and
no man was so hardy to take awaye
those cuppes, he kept so good iustyce
and wyth that he was knyghte of
his dedes.

He was the fyrst that manne this
ysle of Cuborna nowe called the ysle
of man. And by his meanes, Ope-
waldus or Coprwaldus, the sone of
Redwaldus kynge of Eastangles or
Norths, to whome as befoze is tou-
ched Edwyn hadde fledde for socour
was conuerted to the true fapth, and
a greute parte of his men wyth hym.
And for this Edwyn excelled þ other
kynge, they enuyed at hym, and spe-
cially Wenda kynge of Mercya, the
whych excyted Cadman kyng of Wy-
rtun agayne hym. So that they two
assembled a great hoost agayne Ed-
wyn, and lastlye met in a place called
Hatfelde, and after sharpe fyghte on
both sydes, there Edwyn was slayne
whan he had reygned ouer the floz-
thubys .xvii. yeres, in the yere of our
Lorde, as sayth Gwydo. xl. hundred,
& xxxiii. when these two kynge Cad-
man or Cedwalla and Wenda, hadde

thus ouercomen the kynge and hym
slayne and muche of his people, they
became so cruel to men of that coun-
try, that they destroyed therein muche
people, as men, women, and chyldeyn
as wel relygious as other. Wherefor
Paulynus the archebyschoppe behol-
dynge their cruelines, toke wyth hym
the quene & Enleba his daughter, &
fled by water into Kente. And for the
byschoppe of Rochester was than
dorde, by reason that Romanus last
byschoppe was decepte, Paulynus
was there ordayned and made bps-
hop of that see, and there dyed. And
also left there his paule, as assymeth
Polyctronycon and other, the Arche-
byschoppes see of Poike was dorde,
xxx. yeres after. But the quene which
was named Etherberga became a-
menchon, and sayled into Gallia or
Fraunce, wherein an abbaye called
Byrgence or Byrgence, she lyued
an holy life and dyed, and her daugh-
ter Enleba continued her profession
and was afterwarde abbelle of Stre-
shalte in the vale of whytby.

After the death of Edwin Ostricus
that was the sone of Elfricus which
was brother of Ethelfridus, toke by
pon hym to be kynge of Decca, and
Causticus the eldest sonne of Ethel-
frida, as befoze in the .C. and .xviii.
chapter is touched, was made kynge
of Brenneca, the whiche turned the
both fro Chyrtles fapth, and became
mytcreantes. For the whych goddes
wretch fell upon them in woxt whyle
after, for they were both slayne in the
yeare folowynge, of þ fornamed Cad-
man and Wenda.

And whan these sayde two kynge
were thus slayne, Oswalde the secod
sonne of Ethelfrid began his reygne
ouer the prouynce of Brenneca as
chefe of that kyngdome of Northum-
berlande

Paulynus by
shoppe of Ro-
chester.

berlande, and had the rule of Deyra
in lyke wise. Wherof whan Cadwan
o: Cadwalla was ware, he gathered
hys Bytones and thoughte to sle
Oswalde as he hadde befoze slayne
his brothe: Cauficus. But Oswald
whā he was warned of the great stre
gthe of thys Cadwan, he made hys
prayers to God, and besoughte hym
mehelpe of helpe to wythstande hys
enemye for the saluacyon of hys peo
ple. Than after Oswald had pray
ed for the saluacyon of hys people þ
two hostes mette in a feelde named
thā Denysboorne o: Denyslake, wher
was foughte a strong battayle. But
fynally Cadwan, whyche dolectour
ca nameth Cadwalla, was slayn and
hys people chased whiche were ferre
exteading the number of Oswaldous
hoste, whan the sayde Cadwan had
reigned ouer the Bytōs after most
accoorde of wyttenes and also of the
tyme, by the terme of. cxi. yeres, le
uyng after him a sonne, as a synneth
Cauficp, named Cadwallus o: Cad
walyn. Francia.

The. cxxxi. Chapter.



Dagobertus the fyrste
of that name, a sonne
of Clotho: befoze re
hered, beganne hys
reygne ouer the hool
monarchy of fraun
ce in the yere of oure Loyde. vi. hun
dyd. cxi. and the. cxiii. yere of Cad
wan than kynge of Bytons. The
whyche at þ tyme of his fathers death
was in the prouynce of Austracy, gy
uen to him by his father, as befoze is
shewed in the. C. xxvii. chapter p:ce
dyng. But anon as wo:de came to
hym of his fathers decease, he spedde
hym wel accompanied into fraunce
And when he was comen to the ctyte
of Reynes, thither came vnto hym:

many nobles, as wel out of Burgon
ny as out of othere parties of fraunce
and dyd vnto hym feauty & homage.

It is shewed in the. C. cxi. Chap
ter of thys worke, howe Clotho: had
by hys secunde wyfe a sonne na
med Heybert, the whych claymed hys
part of the kyngdome of fraunce,
and for the same began to make some
stryng. But by the good polycy and
meanes of one Brunulphe vncle to
the sayd Heybert, and brother to Sy
chyld hys mother, the matter was ap
peased, so that he had vnto hym ter
capne ctytes assigned, with landes
in Gupan. Wyth the whyche he was
contented, and ordained Tholouse
for the chiefe ctyte of hys pryncpate
And after that peace confirmed, Da
goberte was in quyet by the terme of
iii. yeres folowinge. But the fourth
yere the Gascons rebelled agaynst
hym, the whych by manhode he shoyt
ly subdued. And whan he had set hys
lande in a quyetnes, he than dyscre
d and cyrcued his lande in mynsteryng
iustyce to all persones, and ordained
suche meanes as bylles of suplicacy
on and othere, that þ causes and mat
ters of pooze men myght come to his
knowledge by meane whereof he gat
greate loue & fauour of hys comons
But among his manye notable de
des, one deade by hym was commyt
ted, the whych somedraile longe after
blemished his honour. And that was
that, he wythout iudgemente o: pro
cess of the lawes, caused to be slayne
the fornamed Brunulphe vncle vn
to Haybert hys brother, for malpce
that he bare to hym, for þ fauourtyng
of the sayd Heybertus party.

After thys the kynge was deuorced
fromme hys wyfe named Gertrude,
for that she was barapne & broughte
for the no scrupte, and was after ma
ryed

tyed to a fayre wenche named Rena-
trude of the whyche he he receauede
inconuenient tyme after, a sone that
was named Wygeberre.

Then it foloweth, this Dagoberte
all thys passe time was ruled by a no-
ble man of fraunce, oꝝ moze proper-
lye of the prouynce of Austracye, na-
med in the frenche booke Arnulphe
byshoppe of Mees, and by Pepyn,
whyche was ruler of the kynges pa-
leys. By whyche season, he and also
hys landwere in great honoure and
prosperite, till the deathe of the foze-
named Arnulphe, whych dyed about
the season that the kyng beganne to
alter and chaunge his condicions to
the hurt of hys comons & of hys lade

The. cxxii. Chapter.



Dagobertus that be
foze exercised hym
in all honoure and
vertue, began now
to exercise intus-
pice and tyrannye, in
pyllpge hys com-
mons by exaccyons and trybutes, in
such wyse, that those that dwelled in
the outwarde parties of hys realme,
and nere vnto the Turkes and other
straunge landes and nacyones, were
fayne to be vnder the rule of theym,
then of theyre owne naturall pynce.
And that done, he destroyed the coun-
trei of Doytters wth yron and fyre
and the walles of the cytye he made
playne wth the grounde. And foꝝ
the moare crueltie oꝝ terroure to the
people to be shewed, he eared the stre-
etes of the sayd cytye, and sowe them
with salte foꝝ a sygne and token that
he woulde haue all that cytye subuer-
ted foꝝ euer. The whyche tyme to
thys daie apperethe, foꝝ there where
the olde cytye stode, is nowe called þ
olde Doytters, and where that other

standethe nowe, is called the newe cy-
tye of Doytters. The cause of thys
destruccyon of the cytye and coun-
trei as sayth master Roberte Saghyne,
was, foꝝ that, that the etle of Doyt-
ters rebelled agayne the kyng.

Thus this man that whilome was
a lambe, was nowe turned to a tyger
And ouer hys crueltie, he was gy-
uen to all sensuall lust of hys bodie,
in so muche, that where so he rode he
hadde folowynge hym a compaignie
of strumpettes, besyde suche as he kept
in dyuerse places of hys realme, apa-
raled and fed lyke vnto queenes

foꝝ this rule and other bites vied
by the kyng, Pepyn then mayster of
the palces was put in great wryghte
and blame of dyuerse Loꝝdes of the
land thynkyng þ by hys counsaile &
sufferaunce, the kyng was so led and
guyded. This was the fyfste Pepyn.

The seconde was mayster of the
Daleys in that tyme of the seconde
reygn of the fyfste Theodoryus, and
was surnamed Metulus and Breuis
whyche is to meane olde and lytle.
And the thyrde Pepyn was sonne of
Carolus Marcellus. The fyfste Pe-
pyn was graundfather to the second
by the mothers syde, and the seconde
was graundson to the thyrde by the
mannes syde. Whych thyrde Pepyn
was by hole assente of frenchmen oꝝ
dayned kynges of fraunce as after
Malapere, & was the father vnto the
kyng named Charles the great and
Emperoure of Rome. All whych Pe-
pyns descended of the bloude of Au-
stracy and had great possessions much
in that prouynce. When the fozena-
med Pepyn vnderstode the grudge &
mutmoure of the loꝝdes, whych they
bare agayne hym foꝝ the kynges de-
manoure, he by theyr aduyces tooke
vnto hym another greute Loꝝde na-
med

Pepyn.

med Martayne, to be vnto hym assente, and over that he caused Aman dus to accompany the kyng by whose counsayl, the kyng somedeile refrayned hym from vyce, but not al, as the byshoppe him aduertysed.

The warre of
the Sclauons

In thys time Herbarthe the kinges halfe brother died and also his sonne Hoely after named Chylperych. By reason of whose deathes, the lordshipp and countrey of Tholonse fell to the possession of Dagoberte. It was not longe after that a people called Sclauons or Sclauons, made warre vpon the countrey of Austracy. These also are called Bulgarys, and toyne vpon a parte of Austracy. Of these trybnynges when Dagoberte was lerned, he spedde him into Austracy and there assembled a myghty hooste of knyghtes, and so sped hym til he came nere hys enemyes. But þe sayd Sclauons hauynge knowledge of the kinges greate hooste, agreed by oyratours to hym sente, to contynue the trybute that they befoze tyme payed, þe whych was yearly. v. C. Oren. Where thow the warre was apeased for that tyme, a newe alpaunce vpo both parties confirmed.

After the which peace thus stablyshed, the kyng made his sonne Sygbert as kyng & ruler of that lordshipp of Austracy, assygnynge to him þe byshop of Colapn named Cunbert and the erle Palatyn named Agasp le, to be hys tuteurs and rulers contynynge his yeres of pouth. And that doone the kyng returned into Fraunce, where soone after he receaued of hys wyfe a sonne named Clodouus the whych of many wyrters is called Lodouycus or Lowes. To thys Lowes the father at couenable tyme after gaue the countreyes of Burgoune and Aenustre or Roymaund.

Then the kyng graunted to the house of saynte Denys, a sayze to be kepte yearly in the moneth of June in a felde nere vnto the sayde monastary, & that no marchaunt of Paris nor good towne there aboute, shulde sell anye marchaundys but onelye in the sayze, wryth many other customes to the greate auaucement of that house.

And after the kyng had subdued the Gascoynes, and the Byrons of Armoynce or lytle Brytayne, he then called a greate counsaile of hys lordes spyrytuall and tempozall at hys cytye of Byguage: where he beyng set betwen hys two sonnes Sygbert and Clodouus, he made a longe pze posycon and oyratyn concernynge the allegaunce, whych he exhorted hys lordes to owe and beare to hym for the terme of hys lyfe, and after to hys two sonnes there beyng present. And then he exhorted his two sonnes charitably to loue & that they shulde in mooste fraternalle wyse contynue theyr lyues. The whych pze posycon synned, he there in that pze sent made hys testamente, that befoze he hadde caused to be wyrtyn in foure sondre shynnes endented, to be red, and the sealed wryth certayne of theyr scales, whereof that one he wylled to be kepte in the tresurye of saynt Denys, the second in the tresurie of the cytye of Lyons, the thyrde in the tresurye of Beers in Austracy, whych now is named Lozayne, and the. iiii. in the kynges tresurye. And when þe kyng had ordered hys matters somdeale to hys purpose, he dissolued thys counceill, and commaunded eueryche estate vnto hys owne countrey and after was somewhat besyde wryth the rebellion of the fornamed Byrons and Gascoynes and suche other matters

ters, & wherby I passe ouer for length of tyme.

Then the kynge lastlye was lyche of the fyre, and was brought by hys desyre vnto the monastyr of Saynte Denys.

Wher after he had comytted hys wyfe Rantylid, with her sonne

Clodouens vnto the gubdyng and turyon of a noble manne of Fraunce, and then master of hys paples named

Agarnus, he died when he hadde reigned. xiiii. yeres and was bu

ried wyth greute pompe in the fornamed monastyr.

Anglia.

The. Cxxiii. Chapter.



Cadwallus oꝛ Cadwalpne the sonne of Cadwan lastlye spoken of in the cronycle of much Bitytain as testyfyeth Gudo, Gaultryde, and

other, beganne hys reygne ouer the Bitytons in the yere of Chyestes incarnation. vi. hundred and fyue, and thyrtye, and the fyrst yere of the fyrste Dagoberte then kynge of Fraunce, and also the twelue yere of Kyngylus and Murchplynus then kynges of Westsaxon.

Thys Cadwallus was strong and myghtye, and warrayd strongelye vpon the Saxons nere vnto hym, and wanne frome them bothe castles and towne, and droue theym backe into the lande toward London. Wherof bearynge Penda kynge of Mercya,

he assembled his Saxons and made towarde Cadwall. But he was in the ende dystressed, and fayne to seche and purchase the fauour of Cadwal, and lyue vnder hys trespure.

Thys Penda after thys was in great fauoure wyth Cadwall, in so muche that he tooke parte wyth Cadwall agaynst hys other Saxon kynges, as after shall appeare. Aboute thys tyme Kyngylus one of the kynges of Westsaxons, was by the doctryne of the blyssed manne Berpnus conuerted to the ryghte belefe, and chrystened of hym at the cytye of Doytpe oꝛ Doychester. And Oswalde kynge of Northumberland was hys godfether, and wedded hys doughter afterwarde. And then that cytye was geuen to the byshoppe, to the ende that he shulde there ordayne hys see, wher the sayde Berpnus sat fortyene yeres after, and there was buryed, tyll Beda Byshoppe of Wynchester translated hys bodye to the cytye of Wynchester: al be it the chanonnes of Doychester saye, that the sayd bodye of holpe Berpnt was not taken thence but another in steade of hym. And yet in token thereof, a Beeres of a wonder woꝛke staddeth at thys day ouer that graue, wher thys holpe manne was fyrste buryedde. It shulde seme that thys cytye of Doychester is now called Doyset. This see was in the time of Wyllyam conqueroure chaunged to Lyncolne.

Aboute thys tyme Sigebertus oꝛ after some Segebertus kyng of Est Englande oꝛ Norfolk, whiche reygned there nexte hys brother Corpwaldus, ordayned letters to be lerned, and set scoles in diuerse places of his kyngdome, and ordayned ouer them scole maysters and Pedagoges, as he some tyme hadde sene in Fraunce

The

The whiche Sygeberte was converted to Chyristes sayeth by the doctrine of an holpe manne named Felpe, the whiche he was fyrste acquainted with in Fraunce or in Burgoyne. The whiche Felpe came soone after that acquaintaunce into Castanglia or Norfolk, where þe kyng made hym Byschoppe of Dunwiche now called Thetford. Lastlye the kyng betooke his kyngedome vnto his newe Egypys, and became a munke in an abbeye whiche he hym selfe builded.

Howe Sygeberte became a Monk.

But when Penda kyng of Mercya warred after in that country, the sayde Sygeberte was agaynste hym wyll pulled oute of the sayde monastary, and went in armes, or as some testyfy vnto hym whiche a whyle robde in hym hande mycel, and so was slayne, and well neare all hym hoolle of knyghtes that came with him to that felde.

Howe Sygeberte was slain

By this rehersall appereth here dyscord of wyrters of the begynnyng of this sayde kyngedome of Castanglia. For yf it were trewe that this beganne as wytnelleth Polycronicon in the fourth Chapter of hym first booke, in the yere of grace four hundred four score and twelue as before also I haue shewed in the four score and xvi. and twenty Chapter of this worke, then myghte it not agre with conuenyence of tyme, that this Sygeberte or Seberte shulde reygne as kyng at those dapes now wynded. Wherefore the sayinge of Guido is moze conuyniente, whiche sheweth this kyngedome to haue hym begynnyng in the yere of grace, fyue hundred and lxx. as in the end of the fore sayd Chapter it is there shewly touched.

Then it foloweth in the storye, af

ter the deathe of this Sygeberte, Anna was made kyng of Castanglia.

And durynge the regne of Sygebertus, befell the wonder that is told of that holpe manne Furcus, as is shewed at length in the xiii. Chapter of the fyfte booke of Polycronicon a foresayde, and in the xiii. title of the vi. chapter of the seconde parte of the famous worke called Summa In-

And aboute this season reigned or beganne to reygne the cursed secte of the despayle and false prophet Mahomette, the whiche synce that tyme hath so infected, that it hath corrupted two pynnyppal partes of the worlde, as Asia, and Aethyopia, and the moore parte of the thyrde named Europa, and daylye wyrmeth vpon the chrystien people greete landes and possessions. Aboute the vii. yere of this forenamed Cadwal kyng of Brytton reigned in Kente a Saxon kyng named Ercombertus, the whiche hadde that pynnyppate xx. yeres noblye.

And amonge other of hym famous dedes, he reuyued and quickened agayne the faythe of Chyriste, that in some places of hym kyngedome was soze appailed. For he destroyed þe temples of false gods throughe al that country, and ordayned by the aduice of his clergie, the tyme of let to be fasted. He wedded the daughter of Anna, kyng of Estanglia named Serburga of who he receaued a daughter & named her Eukendoga, þe whiche after was a menchon or Nunne in thabbepe of Byrdgenc in Fraunce before minded, where Ethelburga the wyfe som tyme of Cowyn kyng of Northuberlande serued God, as in the hundred and xxx. chapter pcededynge it is shewwed, and eyther of theym was a benefesse of the same place. And thoughte at those

at those dayes there were many ab-
beys in this yle of muche Bytayne,
yet many bothe of men and of women
saped into other landes, as Fraunce
and Burgoyne and other places, be-
cause the conuertycyon and lpyng
of those countreys were of moze fame
and perfeccion then was then vsed in
this yle of Bytayne.

About this tyme as it were about
the. lviij. yere of Cadwall, dyed kyn-
gillus kyng of Westsaxons, when he
had reygned wyth his brother and a-
lone. xxiij. yeres. And Kenwalcus his
sonne was kynge after hym, & whiche
in þe begynnynge of hys reygne wolde
not be chrystened, & forsoke hys wyfe
the doughter of Penda, & toke to hym
a nother. wherfore Penda in aduyn-
gynge hys doughter, gathered hys
hoste, and chased kynwalcus oute of
his kyngdome, & kept hym thens. iij.
yeres. By whiche season was Anna
kyng of Eastanglys, & ther conuer-
ted to the fayth of Christ, & chrystened
of felyc also named then bysshoppe
of Duntwyke or Chetford, and after
he recouered hys kyngdome, by the
ayde and assistance of the sayde An-
na. When Kenwalcus was restored
to hys lande, he made a Bysshoppes
see at Kaerwent or Winchester, and
ordeyned there a byshop named Agyl-
berte a frenche man of byrthe, but he
was called out of Ireland. The which
when he had sytten there a certayn of
tyme, he was put thens. For he wore for
what cause, and in this place was set
an other named Wyn. Of this Wyn
as sayeth Polycronycon, the towne
of Winchester toke þe name, as he de-
clareth in the. liii. chapitre of his first
boke, as it were wyynes cytie. But
he was also put thens, and then was
Leutharius bysshop, and after Leu-
tharius succeeded Ceoba. And after

Theodosius the archbysshop of Can-
terbury ordeyned two bysshoppes to
that prouynce of Westsaxon. That
one at Wynchester, and to that was
subiect two countreys Southey and
Southampton. And that other les
he ordeyned at Wyreborne, to the
whiche were subiecte fyve countreys,
that is to saye Berkshepe, Wyltshepe
Dorsetshpe, Dorsetshpe, Deuen-
shpe, and Cornewale. But in Wyl-
ham the conquerours tyme the see of
Wyreborne was turned to Salisbur-
y with the see of Ramesbury.

It was not longe after that Ken-
walcus was warred with the kyng
of Wytons, the whiche foughte with
hym at a place called Wight Goune-
borough, and was of him there ouer-
comen. Then Cadwall assembled a
newe hoste of Wytons, and mette w
Kenwalcus, at a place called the hyll
of Dent, where after longe fygth the
Wytons were putte vnto flyght.

The. cxxiii. Chapter.



I have harde befoze how
that blessed man Oswal-
the sonne of Ethelfryde
was ordeyned kyng of
Northumberland, & which
contynued his tye in iustyce and ver-
tue as kyng, by the tearyne of. ii. ye-
res. But Penda kyng of Mercya,
that to hym & to all chrysten men had
great dysdayne & enuy, about the. ii.
yere of Cadwall made warre vpon
Oswalde, and sette hym in a felde
called Mersfelde, where after hys
death god shewed for hym many mi-
racles. But after one yere of his deth
Oswy hys younger brother recouered
the kyngdome, and buryed his hedde
in the churchyard of Lindesfar, for
the bodie was conueyed by the Pa-
gans, and deuyded in sundry peces.
When Oswy had a season ruled

m. i. his

Of Oswal-
kyng of North-
umberland

The death of
Oswalde.

Of wine king
of Deyra.

his kyngdome, he sende vnto swyn, that was kyng
of Deyra. Thys swyn was the
sonne of Caufrycus eldest brother of
Oswalde, whiche swyn was good
of condycyon, and there wth bothe
meke and mylde. When this swyn
was slayne by the consente of his ne-
wewe swy, then swy toke to hym
as felowe of that kyngdome his bro-
thers sonne Othwalous the sonne
of Oswalde. Thys Oswalde gaue
vnto Ceda Byschoppe of Wynche-
ster before named a ground in a place
of the North countrey in the high hyl-
les called Lashyngare, for to buyde
vpon an abbaye, which he there buy-
ded, & after there taughte hys brother
Chymbyllus, howe he shoulde rule
that place. Wenda kyng of Mercia,
which forgate not the strengthinge &
sauouring that Anna kyng of East-
anglys had shewed to Kenwalchus
hys daughters husbande and his ene-
mye gathered a power of knyghtes,
and rode agayne the same Anna, and
slew hym in playne batayle. And the
same yere, one Borulphus buyded
an abbay besyde Lindcolne or Lyn-
colne, in a place that hight Icanne.

The death of
kyng Anna.

And as wytnesseth Beda in the
iiii. chapyter of his thyrde booke, thys
yere which shoulde be the .xli. yere of
reigne of Cadwall, Wenda that of
hys former byctorye was suppresed
with great pryde, came with his hoste
into the boundes of Norththumber-
lande entending to sle swyn, as be-
foze he hadde slayne his brother Os-
wald. Wherof whē swyn was aware
he assembled his knyghtes and made
toward hym. And for assoutte of mi-
rpage that was betwene theye chyl-
dren as after shall be shewed, & othe
causes, swyn offered vnto hym many
great offers, to thynente to haue had

him refused that batayle, and to haue
had peace wth hym.

When swyn perceyued the obsti-
nacy and pryde of Wenda, and sawe
by no reasonable offers he myghte of
hym wyne no peace, he sayde, sente
this paynym can not receyue out gyf-
tes and proffers that we haue offered
to hym, we shall offer them vnto hym
that can receyue them. And anon he
made his auowe vnto god, that yf he
myghte haue byctorye of his enemyes
he shoulde offer his daughter Elleda
to hym with sufficient possessions
for to buyde twelue abbayes, and af-
ter toged in batayle wth the sayde
Wenda in the countrey of Ledis, not
farre from Poike, whych was so sore
foughten, that yf lyke therof was not
sene many yeres before.

But finally Wenda was slayne,
and .xli. of hys chiefe captaynes wth
hym, and yet he had thyrce the people
that swyn had. And those yf escaped
the shot and the swerde, were for the
more part ydrowen in the ryuer of
Wynward, whiche was nere vnto the
place of that batayle. And amonge yf
prysoners yf were taken at this felde,
the wyfe of Wenda was one, and her
sonnes vnto named Egtryus was
an other. Then swyn relded hys
thanks vnto god, and accordyng
to his former promyse he offered hys
daughter Elleda or Ellreda of the
age of thyrce yeres vnto god, and toke
her to the lord of Hylton, Abbatte of
Wetherby or Wetherby plande. And after
that the sayde Hylton remoued to the
abbaye of Stremsalte, in the vale
of Wharfe, thyrce myle from Poike
where she was after abbess, & the sayd
Elleda also. And swyn as he hadde
promysed, gaue landes and tentes to
buyde .xii. abbayes. Wherof .vi. were
in the pounte of Wyntona, and .vi.
in the

in the prouynce of Deyra.

This fornamed Wenda had by-
nerse sonnes by accorde of wyrters,
that is to meane Wolferus, Weda,
and Egfridus, besyde other not min-
ded. To this second sonne Weda, Of
wyp had befoze tyme marped a dought-
ter of his by consent of Wenda his fa-
ther. The whyche Weda by helpe of
Ofwyp was made kyng of south Mer-
cia, the whych lordshipp is seuered fro
the North Mercia, by the ryuer of
Trent, and conteyned by recorde of
holy Beda fyue thousande houshol-
des. This Weda also promysed whē
he marped the sayde doughter of Of-
wyp, that he shulde become a chrysten
man, the whyche he perfourmed af-
ter the death of his father. But when
he hadde scantely reigned thye yeres
ouer the sayd Southmercs, he was
by the reason of his wyfe slayne. And
after that kyngdom fel to Wolferus
the other brother, the whiche had wed-
ded the doughter of Ercombert kyng
of Kente, named Emenilda. Thys
Wolferus was shortly after chryste-
ned oʒ befoze, so that he is accompted
foʒ the fyft chrystened kyng that rei-
gned in Mercia. Thys was father to
Benedicus, and that holy virgyne &
menchon Werreburga.

And foʒ it is longe that I spake
of Kenwalchus kyng of Westsaxon
it is to be noted that after he had o-
uercomen the Wyttons, as befoze is
shewed, and at that tyme hadde not
percepted the Byschoppes see of Raer-
guent oʒ Wynchester, he then busped
hym there about. And accoʒdyng to
the wyll of Kyngylfus hys father, he
gaue to the sustentacyon of the sayde
see all the lande whyche laye wythin
vii. myles of the sayde cytie, as after-
meth the Authoure of the Floʒure of
hysoryes, and spynished it somdeale

to hys purpose.

But let no man thynke that it was
buylded as it is now. foʒ nother that
noʒ none other bene at this dape stan-
dyng monastery, paleys, noʒ other,
but ꝑ they haue bene seng those daies
altered, and newe chaunged, & some
clerly thowme downe, & some newe buil-
ded, albeitt ꝑ many stande vpon they
fyfte foundacyon as this yt doeth.

Sone after that Kenwalchus had
ended thys worke, he made warre v-
pon Wolferus of Mercia. But in ꝑ
tourney fortune was not to hym fa-
uourable, foʒ he losse thereby, & wan
nothyng of hys entente.

It was not longe after ꝑ Ercom-
bert kyng of Kent dyed, and his sone
Egbert was kyng after hym. ix. yere
And soone thereafter fell great moʒ-
talyte and sekenesse in thys lande of
Byrtayne, the whiche contynued and
encreased moze and moze: durynge
the lyfe of Cadwal now kyng of Byr-
tons, and of Cadwaldr hys succes-
sor oʒ sonne, after some wyrters. In
the whyche season and begynnynge
of this moztalyte and sekenesse, dyed
many byschoppes in thys lande, in so
muche that Vitalcanus then beyng
bysshop of Rome ordeyned Theodo-
rus archebyschoppe of Caunterburpe
to haue the rule of ꝑ churches of Byr-
tayne. Somwhat befoze this tyme,
Benet that was in good fauour with
kyng Ofwyp, & descended of cych kyn,
forsoke seruice and houle, and all his
kinred, and became Chylles seruant.
This Benet was the fyrst ꝑ brought
the crafte of glasyng into this lande,
and toke to hys loze Beda, when he
was but leuen yeres of age, & taught
hym durynge his lyfe. Of the vertue
and pacience of this holy monke and
byschoppe Benette, I myghte make a
longe rehearsalle.

m.ii. But

The death of
Ercombert.

A great death

who brought
the crafte of
glasyng into
this lande.

But I wyl retourne agayne to Oswy. The whiche when he hadde longe reygued ouer the Northumbers, he made Cedda that was abbotte of Lastingay, archibyschoppe of York, moze by wyl then by skyl, and put out Wylfryda the archibyschoppe of that see. But it was not longe after that Cedda was depyved of that dignyte by the authoryte of the archebyschop Theodorus, as he depyved byuers other at þe tyme, whiche came to they; benefytes agayne the ordynance of the lawes of þe churche, and made hym by greate instance after this, byschoppe of westsaxons. And about the thyrtye yere of the regne of Cadwal Cissa that was father to Iue kyng of westsaxons, buylded the abbe of Abyndon.

The opinion
that in tymes
past menne
hath had in
monkes.

In these dayes the monkes and clergy of Brytayne, set all theyr myndes to serue God and not the worlde, the herse and not the wombe. Wherefore they were then had in greate reuerence & honoure, so that they were then receyued with all worschipp. And as they went by the stretes and wates men that sawe them, wolde runne to them and desyre they; blessinges. And well was hym that then myghte geue vnto them possessyons, and buylded to them houles & churches. But as they entreated in ryches of worldly treasoure, so they dyscreased in heavenly treasoure, as in þe dayes of Aluredus some dele beganne, and sythen that tyme hath spounge not all to the pleasure of God, where of, all is to be comytted to his pleasure. Then they plyed nothyng that was worldly, but gaue them to preaching and teaching of the worde of our saupoure and folowed the lyfe that they preached, by geuyng of good example. And ouer that they were so voyde of

The good lyf
myght of the
monkes at the
tyme.

couetouse, that they receyued no possessyons, but yf it were perforce.

The. cccc. Chapter.

Oswy kyng of Northumberland dyed, & Eadfridus his sonne was kyng after hym. iiii. yeres. Hys father had reygued with his felowes Oswynus & Othswalde. xxviii. yeres. Eadfridus o; Eadfridus had to wyfe that holy woman Ethelfryde, that before was þe wyfe of Conbertus byrce of the south Eyrwases, the which when Eadfridus hadde holden. xii. yeres as his wyfe, and might not in that while haue leue of her to deale with her carnally for prayer nor greate gyfte, he then gaue to her licence to be a menychon at Colud vnder Jeddab, & then was aunte vnto hym. And after she remeued to Ely, & there was abbess, and lyued in great penance and abstinence, and dyed there, after she had ben. vii. yere abbess.

And Kenwalcus kyng of westsaxon, dyed aboute the yere of the regne of Cadwal kyng of Brytons the. xxxi. When he had reigned ouer them. xxx. yeres. And hys sonne Kenelwynus succeeded hym, after that Serburga hys mother o; wyfe vnto his father, hadde ruled that prouince one yere.

Cedda the byschop of westsaxons dyed, and hys decon Wensrede was hys successoure. And when he was put downe, the abbot of Medabstede that now is called Peterborough, was there byschop after hym.

Sone after this tyme dyed Wyna byschop of London, after whom was byschop Ekenwalde, the whiche was brother to Ethelburga o; Albozough the Menchen, and after Abbess of Berkyng in Essex. This holy byschoppe Ekenwalde founded the monasteries

nasteries of Chertsey in Southerpe, and Berkyng aforesayde, whiche place hath bene preserved sens þe fyrt foundarpon. But that of Chertsey was thowen downe by the Danes, and reedified by Edgar kyng of Englande, as after foloweth.

After the deth of Wolpherus kyng of Mercia, reigned hys byother Etheldredus. And the wyfe of Wolpherus named Ementilda, was made a mencon at Ely, and Wcreburga his doughter was also made a nonne at Crikyngham, and dyed at Hamburgham. Thys Etheldredus kyng of Mercia had.iii. holy doughters, that is to saye Wylburga, Mildreda, and Milgudra, and a sonne of greate holynesse named Merclyn. But after some wynters all these foresayde chyl dren woulde be the chyl dren of Wolpherus, and not of Etheldrede. And Wolpherus also had.ii. holy systers, named Kynedda, and Kynelwyda, bothe nunnes, and buryed at Peterborough, where Ethelwolde buylded after an abbey of mapdens.

Ye haue heard befoze howe Wylfryde was put out of the see of Poike wherfoze he went to Rome, and complayned hym to Agathon the byshop of that see, and was well allowed in some thynges. But the kyng & Theodorius had there suche protectoures and frendes, that he retourned without spedynge of his cause. Wherfoze he retourned vnto the Southsaxons and buylded an abbey in Silesey, & preached to the Southsaxons. xv. yeres, and converted much people, and taught to them the crafte of fshyng.

Egfridus kyng of Northumberlande claymed the lande that Etheldrede kyng of Mercia helde, for the whiche byuerse assemblies of treatye bytwene them were had, but all were

dissolued without agreement. Wherfoze either party gathered his strenght and met vpon a playne nere vnto the ryuer of Trent, where was foughten betwene them a longe & sharpe fyghe In þ which amonge a great number on both parties, was slayn þ brother of Egfride named Elwinus, but Edfride o: Egfride had the better. The after thys battayle, meanes of peace were agayne treated, so that fynally Edfride had great sumes of money, in recōpencemēt of his byothers deth & so rested þ said.ii. kynges accorded.

And in this yere appered (Hella cometa) a blasynge starre, whiche betokeneth death o: mortalyte of þ people And in the yere folowyng dyed of the Epedempe syckenesse, the holy abbes of Ely Saynte Etheldrede, her syster Serburga that somtyme hadde bene wyfe to Erccobert kyng of Kent, was her successeure. And this yere also dyed Helda that holy abbesse of Whtby befoze spoken of, whiche was new to Edwine lately kyng of Northumberland. In this abbey were also byethrene vnder the rule of Wyloda, as at these dayes ben at Sion vnder the abbesse there. Wherfoze sondry of them were made byshoppes, as Belsa Wylfride and other. Amonge these byethren was one named Cedman, a man of greate perfectyon, the whiche vled to make diries & songes to moue men to deuocyon, wherin he passed al other at those dayes.

Some after this tyme Theodorius for byuerse causes, kepte a synode o: counceple of Byshoppes and other men of the churche at Hatfelde. By anthorpyte of whiche counceple, he deuoyded the prouynce of Mercia, that Serwolphus then ruled alone, into v. byshoppyches, that is one to Cheshire, the seconde to Worcester, þ thyrde m.iii. to Lyches

A blasynge
starre.

A synode
h: pte by
Theodorius.

Wylf
A. 100

to Lpchefelde, the fourth to Cedema
in Lpndelpe, and the fyfte to Doz-
chester.

About the .xlvi. yere of the reygne
of Cadwall, Keneuinus, kyng of
westsaxons hadde occasyon of warre
agayne the Byttons, so that they met
nere vnto the weste see, where after a
sharpe skymme the Byttons were
chased. And soone after Egfridus
kyng of Norththumberlande made
warre vpon the Byttons of Scottes,
bycause they fauoured greatly the
easte anglis agayne hym. But lastly
by colour of fleg backe, they brought
Egfridus into a strepte amonge Hy-
les and mountaynes, and slewe hym
there with a great parte of his people.
And after hys deathe a bastarde bro-
ther of hys, named Alfridus Notus
was kyng of Norththumberlande,
and reigned there .xviii. yeres, as wit-
nesseth Wyllyam wynter of Royces of
kynges.

Alfridus no-
tus was kyng
of Norththum-
berlande.

The death of
Cadwall kyng
of Bytapan.

And shortly after dyed Cadwall
of Cadwalyn kyng of Byttons, wher
he hadde reigned, as testifeth Gau-
fridus, Guntro, and other .xlvi. yeres.
But nother Policronica, nor none of
the other authours of authoryte,
whiche Policronica alleged, sheweth
any lyke actes of thys Cadwall as
Gaufryde doth, nor yet that he shulde
be buryed to the terroure and feare of
the Saxons, or an Image of brasse
sette of hym vpon an hoyle ouer the
west gate of London called Ludgate
or yet the churche of saynt Martyn
there nowe standynge shulde be buy-
ded the Byttons, to that ende to pray
for the sayde Cadwall and hys fren-
des, or of Cadwaladus, whiche of
Beda is named Cedwalla,
shulde be his sonne, as
of the sayde Gaufryde
is assermed.

The .cccvi. Chapter.

Clodoueus the yonger sonne of Dagobert, and of Haultyl-
da hys wyfe, beganne hys
reygne ouer the myddell parte of
france: and other partes thereof, in
the yere of oure Lorde. vi. hundred.
xlv. and the tenth yere of Cadwal the
kyng of Byttons. And hys elder
brother Sigeberte was made kyng
of Austracy or Lozayne, accordynge
to the wyll of Dagoberte the yre fa-
ther.

Thys as before is sayde of some
wynters is called Lowes, the whiche
was guyded by hys mother, and by
the counsaile of Agaynus then may-
ster of hys Paleys, to whome the fa-
ther had by his lyfe committed hym,
for he at this daye was yonge of age
and of discrecion. And shortly after
he was made kyng, all suche po-
wer as belonged to the ryghte of hys
brother Sigeberte, whiche was the
thyrd, of hys fathers treasoure and
trevelles, was to hym deliuered.
Whiche by distribucion made, he sped
hym to Orleans, and thither cal-
led to hym the lordes of Burgoyne,
and receyued of them feautye and ho-
mage, and ordeyned there for hys leu-
tenaunte or deputye, a noble Bur-
gonyon named Flantás, and gaue to
hym in maryage the newewe of hys
mother Haultylda, named Rancbert.
And after with a due charge to hym
geuen for guydng of the sayde coun-
trei, sent hym and the other lordes in
to Burgoyne.

But within a season of tyme after
Wilibaldus a greate man of byth &
myght, enuyed this Flantás, in suche
wyse: that he hadde hym in dysda-
nyng, and beganne to dysfourbe the
coun-

The fiftte parte.

country and þ kynges peace. Where of hearþnge Clodoueus, in all haste commaunded the sayd Wylebaldus to apeare befoze him. But whyle Wilebaldus sente an Erl and a byshop to the kynges courte to purchase him frendes aboute the kyng, he was in that whyle slayne by the gyle of hys enemye Flantans.

Aboute the .iiii. yere of the reygne of Clodoueus, dyed his mother Flautida, a woman of great wysedome & of vertuous condycyon, and was honourably buried by Dagoberte her husbnde in the churche of saynt Denys. Soone after ensued such scarcete of corne, that wheate & other graynes were at an excedyng prync. For after the rate of monye now curant, a quarter of wheate was woth the two markes & a halfe, by meane of whych scarcete much pooze people were famished and dyed for defaute. Wherefoze the kyng entendynge a remedy, for the nedye people, caused the house or churche of saynte Denys that hys father befoze tyme had covered with plates of syluer, to be rased of and covered with leade, and that syluer to be dystrubuted amonge the pooze commons, and to socoure them agayne þ great and huge famyn that then reigned, albeit that thys dede was somewhat withstanden by Agulfus Abbot of that place for that tyme.

Aboute the eyght yere of hys reygne, the fyrste Wypp that than ruled the house of Wygeberte kyng of Austracpe dyed.

And soone after dyed Agaynus master of the palays of Clodoueus. For whiche two Wyppes in epyther countres that they ruled, greete doler and sorowe was for theym made. After the death of whych sayde Wyppes, a noble man and cosen to Dago-

berte late kyng, was choasen mayster of the palays wth Clodoueus.

Thus kyng Clodoueus otherwysse called Lowes, continued hys rayne in great peace and prosperite, and lastlye dyed when he hadde reigned sycke and hole by tyme of .xvi. yeres not wythoute vyce, as glotony, lecherye, and excedyng avarycy. And was buried by hys parentes in the monastarpe sozenamed, leuyng after hym the sonnes named Clotharius Chyldepycus, & Theodorych. After whose death hys wyfe named Batilde, became a Nonne in the monastarpe of Corbey, that she befoze tyme had newlye renewed or recedpyed, and ended there her lyfe.

The .xxxvii. Chapter

Clotharius the eldest sonne of Clodoueus, was ordained kyng of Fraunce, in the yere of our Lordes incar-nacyon. vi. hundred. lxi. and the .xxvi. yere of Cadwall then kyng of Brytons. The whiche anone as he was somewhat stablyshed, he made the master of hys palays, a myghty man, and tyrannous of condycyon named Choppin, as shal apere by hys condycyon ensuyng whan the time conuenyente of the expressement of them shal come. But of thys Clotharius is left nothyng in wytyng of worthy memorie, excepte that the french cronycle sayth that he raygned .iiii. yeres, Theodorych

The .xxxviii. Chapter.

Theodorych the second sonne of Clodoueus, beganne hys reygne ouer the frenche men, in the yere of grace vi. hundred. lxi. and the .xxx. yere of Cadwal than kyng of Brytons. The whiche by the counsaile of hys Lordes sente his yonger brother Chyldepyche

Chylderyche into the lordshyppe of Austracye or Lozayne, to guyde that countrey: wyth the ayde and assystence of Wolphanus a noble manne of that countrey. For Sygebert last kynge of that prouynce, was befoze thys tyme deed wythout heire or hys bodye.

Thys Theodorych gaue him al to slowthe and rest, so that the gouernance of the realme was all in the power of the mayster of the Palayes, whych was still contynuyng, the fozenamed Eboyrne. The whych amonge other cruel dedes by hym done, he imprysoned the byshop of Asteton, called Leodegare. And lastly after many tormentes and vylaynes to hym done, he rased hys eyen oute of his head. Thys deade wyth many other to the kynges dyshonour, whych all were layde to the kynges charge, for so muche as the kyng kepte most what hys palayes. Excepte that one season of the peate in the mooneth of Maye, he shulde be broughte wyth greate pompe into a place where the people shulde be hold hym, and geue offer vnto hym gyftes, and retorne vnto þe palayes that he was brought fro, and there to rest all the peate folowynge. By meane whereof Eboyrne dyd what to hym was lykynge, and bered and troubled the people greuously. Wherefoze by one assent the lordes assembled them, and by authoritye depriued the kyng of all dygnitye, and closed hym in a monastyr there to contynue the resydue of hys lyfe, when he hadde borne the name of a kyng wythout execution of the acte thereunto belongynge. iii. peates and the cruell Eboyrn they cryed to Luron or Lurynburgh in the prouynce of Burgoyne, and not to departe thence vpon payne of hys lyfe.

The despoys-
on of Theodo-
rych,



Chyldericus or Chylderych was the thyrde sonne of Clodours, that was sette to rule the prouynce of Austracy, was ordained kynge of Fraunce in the yere of grace bi. C. lxx. and the. cccc. yere of Cadwall. Of the whych dede the sayde lordes shortly after repented them. For thys Chylderyche whych was poynted and of lyght maners: oppressed hys subiectes greuously, and vied the lawes of hys prouynce after hys pleasure and wylle, wold nothyng be aduertysed nor ruled by Wolphanus befozenamed, the whych was befoze tyme assygned to hym for hys counselloure and guyde. But in augmentynge hys malysce, he caused a noble man of hys realme named Bolyd, wythout gilt or trespass or greuous offence doyng, to be bounden to a stake, and there bearen tyl he pelded the spyrte. For the whych crueltie and other, the lordes whych comons murmured sore agayn hym, ferynge like punysynge wythoute deseruynge. Wherefoze they conspyred agaynst hym, and moost specyallye two noble men of byrth and of myght named Jugebert and Amabert.

Whych two wyth other awayted they tyme a season when they myght fynde tyme conuenient to byng the kyng out of lyfe. And vpon a daye when the kyng wyth hys wyfe and small company wyth theym, were in the woode in theyr despoys and game, the sayde two lordes accompanied purposelye fel vpon hym and slew hym there, and hys wyfe also greatelye wyth chylde, the whych ranne herin her lord and theym, to the intente to haue saued her lord and husbunde fromme the dynt of the sword. The whiche

3 cruel and
cruelous

3 conspy-
red agaynst
kyngs.

The be-
st chylde
and hus-
band was

whych dede was done when the sayd
Chylderich had reigned ouer þe
che men after most wyters two yeres

The. cxi. Chapter.



Euodorus befoze de-
posed, was by the lordes
of Fraunce agayne re-
stoyed to his former dig-
nyte, in the yere of our
lord. vi. C. lxx. xi. & the

xx. yere of Cadwal afoynamed. Ther
of whē Eboze was warned, he anone
vynt hūto the kynges ptesence. By
whose fauour and his owne strength
he was agayn restoyed to hys former
dygnitye and honour, so that he was
in lyke authoryte as he befoze tyme
had bene.

Then he gathered to hym greate
strength, and chasyd Lyndeysle then
mayster of the Palayes vnto a place
named Boccauple, and shortly af-
ter was possessed of the kynges trea-
soure. After the whych season, thys E-
boze saynyng loue and amptye vnto
the sayde Lyndeysle, rapterously
slew hym. And when Eboze hadde
thus deliuered Lioesyle, he thought
he myghte the better exerceyse hys old
tyrannye and wylfull actes. So that
then he exyled dyuerse prelates and
men of the churche, and sette in theyr
places suche as hym lyked. Wherof
the nobles of Fraunce beyng aduer-
tyse, and specially Martyne and
Deppn two of the most nobles of the
regyon: they called to them assistance
to wythstande the tyrannye of Ebo-
zne, the whiche yf he myghte be so
suffered, shulde destroye the common
wele of the lande. Then thys Deppn
(whych after the rehearsal befoze made
in the. C. lxxii. chapter, shulde he þe
seconde of that name, and surnamed
Uetulus & Byrups, also per by conue-
nency of the tyme to me it seemeth to

be one man þe ruled in the tyme of Da-
gobert & now, albeit þe French cron-
cle meneth two sodyr persons) wyth
the soynamed Martyne, assemblede
a greate hooste, and gaue battayl vnto
the sayde Eboze. But that was to
theyr harme, for they looste the felde
and were coacted to fle, the one to the
citty of Loon, and that other to Au-
stracye.

And Ebozne which amonge bled
hys accustomed treason, vnder dys-
muled loue slew the sayde Martyne
as he befoze had slayne Lyndeysle.

In thys tyme flourished Harnefred-
tus a nere kynsman of the bishop Leo-
degay, that Eboze befoze had marty-
red, as befoze is shewed. The whiche
Harnefredtus beyng in mynde þe
passion of his sayd kynsman, wayted
hys tyme, and slew the sayde Eboze.
After whose death dyscencyon grewe
among the French mē, for the admi-
syon of a master of the palayes, albe-
it that after the sayde dyscencyon one
Graccon was chosen and admyttede.
But it was longe after that Gylo-
matus hys sonne, put hys father fro
the rule therof. Thys, after he hadde
awhyle occupped he dyed of sodayne
death. After whom succeeded agayne
hys father Graccon, or Graccon the
whych also dyed shortly after.

Then begā newe questions among
the nobles in Fraunce for thys office
so that lastly they chace a man of low
byrth & vnmere to that come named
Bethayze or Bathayze. But Deppn
whych by al this tyme was in þe countrey
of Austracye, & hard of the contraver-
sies & dyuerse oppnyons of the French
men, assembled to hym a strong hooste
and spedde hym towarde the kyngde,
entendynge to haue the rule of hym,
rather then suche other that were of
lesse authoryte and honoure. Wherof
the

the kynge beyng warned, by the p^{ro}u-
uption of Bartholomew forsayd, he ga-
thered hys army and mette w^{yth} De-
pyn. And after a sharpe fyghte betwe-
ne both hostes had, Bartholomew was
slayne and the kynge chased and fy-
nallye was forced to admyt Depyn
for the Mayster and gouernoure of
hys palaces. But for as muche as
Depyn had then the rule of Austracy
and mighte not wel ouerse both char-
ges, he therfore purueyed vnder hym
a substitute named Rodobert whyle
he returned into Austracy o^r Lozayn.
And shortly after dyed the king, whē
he had boyme the name thereof by the
terme of .xix. yeres, leuyng after hym
two sonnes named Clodoucus and
Chyloebertus.

Anglia.

C The .xlii. Chapter



Cadwaladur that
of the reuerente
Beda is named
Cedwalla, begā
to arise and rule
the Britons and
also the Westsar-
ons, in the yere
of grace. vi. hun-

dyed. lxxx. and thye, and the .xii. yere
of Theodoricus then kynge of Fra-
unce, and also the laste yere of Kene-
wynus o^r Kentwynus then kynge of
Westsaron. Thys of Gausfred and
other authours with the Englysh cro-
nycle is called the sonne of Cedwall.

But Wyllyam that wrot the actes
and deedes of kynges sayeth, that he
was the sonne of Kenegyght, and de-
scended lynyally of the bloude of Ce-
dericus the fyfthe kynge of the West-
saron.

The whiche Cadwaladur o^r Ced-
walla made warre vpon Lotharyus
kynge of kente, and destroyed much

of that prouynce, and wanne the ysle
of Weyghe, & gaue the fourth parte
therof vnto Sarynt Wylfred, in the
whiche sayde fourth parte were accō-
ted. iii. hundred householdes.

The whyle that Cadwaladur was
belyed in one parte of kente, hys bro-
ther named Gulkyn w^{yth} a certayn
of knyghtes was beleeged, and laste-
ly byente in another parte therof. In
reuengemente wherof, Cadwaladur
of newe destroyed a moze parte of the
sayde prouynce.

Contynuyng the whiche warre,
Lotharyus fornamed was wounded
and dyed. After whom Edricus was
kynge, & whiche raygned but a short
season.

About thys tyme Cutbert was by
shoppe of Hogulstalde o^r Durham,
and after Byshoppe of Lyndesferne.
But lastelye he refused that, and be-
camme an ancre in the ysle of Farne,
and there dyed. This ysle now is cal-
led holye yslande.

Then Cadwaladur made warre vpon
Aethelwolde kynge of Southsar-
ons o^r Southsex, and slewe hym in
playn battel, and after made hys p^{ro}-
uynce thzall to hym.

But thys agreeth not w^{yth} the for-
mer sayinge reherced in the .lxxx. and
xlii. Chapter of thys worke p^{re}ced-
yng, where it is sayd that the king-
dome of Southsaron endured but
a hundred and twelue yeres. By the
whiche reason thys Aethelwolde o^r A-
ethelwolde shulde not at thys season
be kynge of the Southsaron.

For the terme of a hundred and .xii.
yeres was expyed moze then .lxxx.
and. viii. yeres before this day. But
ye shall vnderstand that this forsayd
tearme of a hundred and .xii. yeres.
is mente for the continuance of this
kyngedome, o^r they were subdued,
and

Cadwaladur

Cadwalla
850

and the kynges therof named vnder
kynges as thys Ethelwold was.

Then it foloweth when Cadwal-
ladr hadde ruled the Brytons and
also the Westsaxons, by the teryne of
thre yeaeres, as wptnesseth Ranulphe
munke of Chester, he then of pure de-
uocyon renounced the pompe & pyrd
of þ world, and yode in pilgremage
to Rome. Wherof the fyrst Sergius
then Bpshoppe of Rome, he was con-
fyrmed and after made a whyt munk
and contynued there hys lyfe tyme in
perfecte holynes.

Of thys Cadwalladr: or Cedwal-
la manye and dyuerse oppynions are
wytten of authours, both of hys reg-
ne and also of þ contynuaunce ther-
of, and ouer that, of the tyme when he
forsoke hys lande, wherein is greate
varpaunce, as I haue shewed in the
table at the begynnynge of thys syn-
ple worke. So that it shuld seme that
these two names shulde sounde to be
sondyr personnes, wherof the contra-
rye is acertayned by the forsayde Ra-
nulphe, where as he saith that Cad-
waladrus or Cedwalla was but one
person the which was laste kyng of
Brytons and Westsaxons. Also for
so much as they ioynd next vnto Ca-
bysa or Wales.

If I shuld here bring in the cause
of the aduorpyng of this lande by
Cadwaladr, as is rehered in Gau-
stryde, it wolde aske a longe tracte of
tyme, and also to me it appeareth the
more doubtfull, that it is not testyfy-
ed of the authoure of Polycronycon,
consyderynge the greate number of
authours, whiche he soughte and a-
ledged for hys authoryte, as it shew-
eth in the fyrste chapter of hys fyrste
booke. And specially syns that holy
Gulgas and Bede is among the sayd
authours accompyred, the which did

greate dyligence in searchoyng of the
deades and actes of the Brytons.

Wherfore to folowe the mooste
authoryte as before is sayde, when
thys Cadwaladr had reygned thre
yeares, he wente to Rome, and there
lastelye dyed, and was buryed in the
chyrche of Saynt Peter, wth thys
epythaphye or superscrypcyon vpon
hys tombe, as foloweth in metry:

*Culmē opus sobolē pollencia regna triumphos,
Eximias proceros moenia castra lares,
Quaeq; patrum uirtus et quae congesseerat ipse.
Cadwall armipotens, linquit amore dei.*

The whiche verses maye be Eng-
lyshed in maner as foloweth.

Worshippfull cythes, byndred, trium-
phes assured.

Plenteous wealth, wth clothes ry-
chly dyghte,

Houses, castels, and townes strongly
murd,

And other honoures whiche by hys
parentes myghte,

And hys owne thys marcyall vertu-
ous knyghte,

Cadwalde the stronge, descended of
knyghtes bloude.

For Chrystes loue renounced al hys
good.

And thus here endeth the lyfe and ru-
le of the Brytons now called Welch

men, whiche toke that name of theyr
duke or leder as sayth Gyrdo called

Wallo or Guallo, or elles of a quene
of Wales named Galaes or Walaes

But howe so that name came fyrst
to them nowe are they called Welsh

men, that somtyme were named Bry-
tons or Brytans, descended fyrste of

Atropas, and after of Brite, and last
lye of Dunwallo Golyuncrus, or

Golyunctus Dunwallo. Albeit they
and

The death of
Cadwaladr.

only called
Welsh men

Brython
Welsh men

wer greatly myngled oꝝ medled with
other nacpons, as Romans, Wytes,
and other as by the creabyng of the
premysses ye maye wel perceaue and
know. And now be they English that
in theyr begynning wer named Saxon
oꝝ Anglis. But yet for so muche
as Welchmen extol so hougely theyr
bloude and alpaunce, fetchyng it fro
Wyrtan but not frome Eneas, and re-
garded so lytle the progeny oꝝ lymal
dyccet of the Saxons oꝝ Anglis, thetfor
to pntent to kele sowhat their hyghe
coꝝage oꝝ to opꝛesse in part theyr byr-
tish blastes, I wyl byng in here þe say-
ing of Guydo & other, that auauunce þe
bloude oꝝ dyccente of the Saxons to
be farre aboue the Wyrtans, as they þe
are dyccended of gods & men immor-
tal, where the Wyrtans clayne the of-
spring to come of men they were mor-
tal, and not mooste to allowed in ho-
noure, yf they thynke byd Eneas vn-
truth and treason.

Then to folowe the foresayde au-
thour Guydo, that sayth, Woden, of
whom the Saxons take theyr oꝝgy-
nall, was the sonne of Frealoffe the
sonne of Fredewolfe, the sonne of Flin
the sonne of Flokwalde, the sonne of
Geta, that was the sonne of Wyrtan,
that is nexte in honour to Pluto god
of hell, and chefe iudge of hys infer-
nall iuryspocyon

Therfore ye Welchemen hereafter
nurture here.

And dyspyse not Saxons that be to
God so nere.

Thus then appeareth by the con-
uepaunce of this wyke, þe last oꝝ
thyrde yere of Cadwaladit was the
yere of grace. vi. hundred. lxx. & vi
whych maketh the yere of the world
h. M. viii. C. lxx. & v. By whych rea-
son yt aperteth, that the Wyrtans had
the rule of this land for the moꝝt part

yt, to reken from the fyrste commynge
of the duke oꝝ leder Wyrtan, by þe space
of a. M. viii. C. and. xxii. yeres

And thus here an ende of the fyfte
parte of this wyke, for the consyde-
racyon befoꝝe reherced, that Wyrtan
kynges after this day, reigned none
in this realme, and the Saxons oꝝ An-
glis beganne fully to haue domynon
therof.

This. v. parte to be accompted from
the laste yere of the myserye of Wyrtan,
oꝝ the fyrste yere of Constantyne
brother to kyng of Armoyne, vn-
to thyrde oꝝ laste yere of Cadwaladit
wyrtan, includeth of yeres. CC. liii.

Thus endeth the
fyfte parte.

The syxte part.



After þe Cadwaladit
wyrtan was thus de-
parted the londe,
as some authou-
res meane, this
lande of Wyrtain
was in great dys-
cencyon, by mene
of the Wyrtans & Saxons, by the ter-
me of a. xi. yeres. And ouer þe moꝝt
talite befoꝝe spoken of entred so hu-
gely, & therewith great hunger and fa-
myne ouer spred the land, þe by the oc-
casio of one & other the people of this
realme was wonderfully mynished &
lessed so ferforthly that as wyrtneseth
Gaufrid & also the Englysh cronicle
þe quene bodie suffred not to burye
þe dead But in so much as of this spe-
keth not þe munk of Chester noꝝ other
authours as befoꝝe is shewed in þe foꝝe
sayd table, þe which I temyt to the coꝝ-
rection

onely to englyshe reders as there is
furtherly declared: I therfore, as be-
fore is sayd folow the sayd Ranulph
mike of Chester, wher he sayth that
Iewe or Iue was kyng of westsax-
ons next after þe fozenamed Cadwa-
ladyr. The whiche I shall fyrst shew
the story of, and so of the successors
of hym in that kyngdome, for that
that they subdued lastly al the other
kyngdomes, and somedeale touche
of the other kyngdomes or lordshippes,
as tyme conuenient shall re-
quyre, in expyessynge of the stories
of the sayd Westsaxon kynges, tyll
the lande be brought agayne to one
monarchye.

And for the dyspysion of the sayde
kyngdomes stande somedeale farre a
sonder, so that to the readers it were
somewhat paynfull to searche for eue-
ryche of them: I therfore haue sette
them out in the compasse folowynge,
that it maye appere to the reader the
begynnynge of eueryche of theim, &
howe longe a season or tyme eþer
of the sayde kyngdomes contynued
or endured, the names also of euery
kyngdome, and in what part of this
land euery lordshipp was stablyshed
for the tyme, and sette.

The. cxli. Chapter.



IUe or Iewe dissen-
dynge of þe blode of
Saxons, was ru-
ler or kyng of west-
saxons, nexte after
that the fozenamed
Cadwaladyr hadde
renounced the pompe of the worlde.
The whiche to folowe the opynion of
Polycronicon, began his reygne the
yeare of grace. vi. hundred & lxxxviii.
and the. xvi. yeare of þe second Theo-
doricus then kyng of fraunce, and
ruled the westsaxons knyghtly, and

maynteyned such warre agayne the
hentyche Saxons, that the men of
Dorobernia or Caunterbury graun-
ted vnto hym to haue peace. And al-
so for a recompensement of the deth
of Wulkyng brother to Cadwala-
dyr before slayne, as is shewed in the
precedynge chapter by the sayde hen-
tyche Saxons, they gaue vnto hym
for the sayd consideraciōs thye thou-
sande pounde.

About the yere of þe reygne of Iue
the holy man Cutlake about þe. xxiij.
yere of his age, renounced the pope
and pryde of this worlde, & toke the
order of munkes in the abbey of Re-
pyndon. And the. iii. yere after he wēt
to Crowlande, and there led for the
whyle an Ankers lyfe, and there fy-
nally was buryed.

In which yle and place of his bu-
ryenge standeth now a fayre abbey
the whiche for the greate resort of ge-
stes that thither draweth, and for þe
good and frendlye chere that gestes
there receaue and take, the said place
hathe purchased a surname and is
named Crowlande the curteys, the
whiche is a place of good fame. And
there lyeth also the holy confessor,
Aetius, sountyme disciple of Erken-
walde byshoppe of London.

In the. xi. yeare of the reygne of
Iue, befell the wounder and mer-
uayle that is tolde of Bryghtwal-
dus, the whiche after that he hadde
bene a longe whyle dead, was resto-
red to lyfe agayne, and tolde many
thynges of greate wounder to many
men, wherby he caused great almes,
and many other dedes of charyte to
be executed.

And after the dysposicion of his
owne goodes, by the agrement of his
wiffe he went vnto þe abbay of Wapl-
roos, and there in great holynes co-

n tynded

tynued the resydue of his lyfe.

About the. xvi. yere of þe regne of Iue, Ethelredus befoze mynded in the. C. & xxx. chapter kyng of Mercia, forsoke this worldy honoure & became a munke at Bardeney, when he had longe tyme ruled the men of Mercia & myddel Engles. His brother Kenredus was kyng after hym the whych also after he had reigned fyue yeres, left his kyngdome vnto Colredus the sone of his vncle, and he with Offa the sonne of Iue now kyng of Westsaxons, and with Egwenus bishop of Wexces of Wike which see is now at Worcester, with this forsayd company, this Kenred yode vnto Rome in pilgrimage, and there ended his lyfe.

And about the. xviij. yere of the regne of Iue dyed the holy bishop Aldelme, whiche fyrste was munke and abbot of Malmesbury, and the laste bishoppe. Of hym it is wytten that when he was styed by his gostly enemy to the synne of the fleshe, he to do the moze tormente to hym selfe and of his body, wolde holde within his bedde by hym a fayre mayden, by so longe tyme as he myght say ouer the hole sauter, albeit that suche holynes is no artycle of saynte Benetis loze, no; yet for dyuerse incomuenience mooste allowed by holpe doctors. And amonge many of his vertuous & holy dedes, Ranulph make of Chester sheweth, that for the fame of hys holynes sprange wyde, Sergius the fyrste of that name, beyng B. of Rome, sente for hym to Rome. In which season of his there beyng, the sayde Sergius was accused & defamed of the gettyng of a chyld, the which the. ix. day of the said chylde's age, was brought to holy Aldelme to be chrystened. By vertue of

whose prayer, the sayd chyld answered vnto certayne questions, and cleered the B. of Rome of that crime & was befoze put vpon hym.

Nere about the. xxij. yere of Iue Colredus then kyng of Mercia, for cause of variannce betwene him and Iue vntremembred of myne autour, assembled his knyghtes, and began to warre vpon hym. Wherof þe other hauping knowledge, in lykewyse gathered his power, and lastely met, to both theyr harmes, at a place called Woodynsburgth. Where after longe fyght eyther of them sped so vnhappely, that it was not knowe whether hoste had mooste damage.

And nere about þe. xxv. yere of Iue, as wytnesseth holy Beda, saynt Iohan of Beuerlay that then was bishoppe of York, dyed, and was buryed in the porche of the mynster of Deywood & Beuerlay. The Ietwe & Iue callynge to mynde the counsayll of holy Aldelme, & befozetyme had counsayled hym to buylde an abbay at Glastenbury, began the sayd worke about þe. xxxij. yere of his regne, and founded there an abbaye, the whiche contynued prosperously tyll þe comyng of þe Danes, by whose cruelty it was then soze blemysched. But afterward by the helpe of saynt Dunstane, in the tymes of Edmond and Edgare, it was agayne sufficiently repayed, & so continued tyll the comyng of the Normans, after which season it was agayne besette with hard happes. But now at this daye it standeth, a place of great wealthe and honoure.

Then it foloweth, when Iue had ruled the Westsaxons nobly by the terme of. xxxvij. yeres, by the assidue laboure of hys wyfe Ethelburga, as she that longe had laboured

A worthy person of holyness.

Fyrst for holyness.

red hym to leue the world and could not bynge about her purpose, vpon a season when the kyng and she had rested them in a saye paleys ryche behanged and were vpon the moone thens departed, she by her commandment, caused the sayd paleys to be replenished wth all kynde of fyth and dunge, and hogges & byle bestes there in to be layde, as well in chambers as other houses of office. And when she knewe that thys paleys was thus defoyled, she besought the kyng to dyspote the sayde paleys. And when she had broughte hym therunto, she sayde to hym: I praye you my lord behold now this house. Where are now the ryche tappets and clothes of gold and of silke and other ryche apparel that we left here this other daye. And where be the delyces and pleasaunt seruytours and costly dysches, that you and I telye were serued wth. Be not all these passed and gone. Whyppe lord, in lyke maner shall we passe as sodenlye, as ye se these worldly thynges bene passed. And our bodies whych nowe ben delycately kepte, shall fall and turne into fyth of & erth. Wherfore haue in mynde my wordes that befoze this tyme to you I haue often shewed & told, and busye you to purchase that paleys & cure shall endure in tope without transmutacion.

By meane of these wordes & other, the quene turned so & kynges mynd, that shortly after he resigned the gouernance of hys kyngdome vnto Ethellardus his neuewe, & he for the loue of Christ toke vpon him the habyte of a poore manne, and settinge a parte all pompe and pryde of thys worlde, accompanied hym in the fellowship of poore men, and yode vnto Rome in pilgrymage with great de-

uocyon, when he had takenge of & westsaron, as befoze is sayd. xxiij. yeares. After whose departinge the foresayd Ethellardus by a wyfe went vnto barking: by wylls from London, wher in the abbey befoze of Ethenwalde founded, she contynued & ruled an holypyse, when she had ben abbesse of the same place a certayne of tyme. It is sayde and testified of woolliam wynter of kynges. & thys Jue was the fyrte kyng that graunted a pyn of a newe fyre houle thowse this realme to be payed to the court of Rome, whiche at this daye is called Rome state, or Peter pens, and yet is payed in many places of Englande. But why it was graunted the cause is not here shewed, howbeit, it shalbe shewed after.

Howe Jue graunted a pyn of a newe fyre houle thowse this realme to be payed to the court of Rome, whiche at this daye is called Rome state, or Peter pens, and yet is payed in many places of Englande.

France. The xliij. Chapter.

France.

Clodouens the thyrde of that name, and sonne of the second Theodoricus beganne his domynyon ouer & realme of France in the yere of grace. vi. hundred and xx. and the thyrde yere of Jue then kyng of westsaron. Of this Clodouens is of wynters leste no maner of memoire, soundryng to good or euell, but depyn befoze named contynued as master of the paleys by all the tyme of the raigne of the sayde Clodouens. The whyche after that he had borne the name by the space of .iiij. yeares, he dyed without yssue, and was buryed by his father. By reason of whose death the sayd kyngdome fell by succession vnto his brother Childeberte.

Clodouens.

The xliij. Chapter.

n ii Childebert.



Childebertus the second sonne to Theodowice, and brother of clodoveus fozeſayd, began his dampnyſſe ouer þe realme of Fraunce, in the yere of grace. vi. C. and. xcij. & the. vi. yere of Iue then kyng of Weſſarons. In tyme of whole regne alſo the ſayd ſayde Depyn continued as cheſe ruler of the kynges houſe, albeſt that he for ſuch other charge as he had of ouerſeyng of the realme, ſet in his place a ſubſtitute oꝝ deputie, as his ſonne Gynonart and other.

This Depyn contrary to the lawe of the church, helde beſide his lawfull wyfe called Plectrade, a woman named Alpayd. For the wyche the biſhop of Treut named Lamberte, blamyng and rebukynge the ſayde Depyn, of the brother of the fozenamed Alpayd, which is called Dodo oꝝ Dodoyn, was ſlayn and martyred in the yere of oure Loꝝe. vi. C. and. xc. ii. as teſtiſyeth Antoninus in the bi. chapiter of the. xiii. tytle of the ſeconde parte of his worke called Summa Antonini. And as affirmeth the ſayd Antoninus and alſo the freche cronycle, the ſayd Depyn receaued of the ſayd Alpayd a ſonne, whome he named Charles, which Charles was after ſurnamed Marcellus, & was ryghte profitable to the realme of Fraunce, as after ſhall appeare.

Of the fozeſayd kyng Childebert is nothyng left in wytyng worþy memoꝝ, excepte that he receyued of his wyfe a ſonne named Dagobert, and kept the name of a kyng by the terme of. xviij. yeres, as ſapeth the cronycle in Frenche, and than dyed, and was buryed in the abbeye of Caus, in the church oꝝ chapell of ſaynt Stephan.



Dagobertus the ſeconde of that name, and ſonne of Childebert befoze named, began his regne ouer þe Frenchem, in the yere of grace. viij. hundred and. x. and the. xliij. of Iue than kyng of Weſſarons. The which was under the rule of Plectrade the wyfe of Depyn than dead, and of Theodowalde than maſter of the paleys. This Plectrade as befoze is ſhewed was ſtepmother to Charles ſonne of Depyn and of Alpayd. Wherfoꝝe the betyng malice to the ſayde Charles, cauſed hym to be holden as pryſoner wythin Colayn. Wher he ſo as pryſoner remaynyng, the ſayd Theodowalde exceꝝſed ſuche tyꝛannes, and putte vpon the people ſuche exaccions, that diſcencion grewe betwene hym and the lordes of Fraunce, ſo that dyuers conſictes and ſkymmiſhes were had amonge the nobles of Fraunce, for parties were taken vpon eyther ſydes, whereby the kynges partye at length was weked. And fynallye the ſayd Theodowalde was depꝛyued of his coume, and one Rangastredus was made maſter of þe paleys. The wyche beyuge accompanied wyth conuenient ſtrength, toke with hym the kyng, and coueꝝed hym thowyn the foreſt of Charbonur, tyll he came vnto þe cytt of Denſe. In þe which paſſetyme the fozenamed Charles beyuge as aboue is ſayde pryſoned by fauoure of his keepers oꝝ other wyſe, brake pryſon and eſcaped. And ſhortlye after dyed the kyng, whan he had reygned oꝝ borne the name a kyng as other of his progenytours had done, by the terme of. xi. yeres, leuyng after hym nother chyld, as than

tha knowyng, no: nere of a lye, whiche was cause of myforder of þe tytyle of fraunce, as afterward shal apere.

The. cclv. Chapiter.

Danp.

DAnpel that of the frenchemē was after named Chilperiche, was by assente of them made kynge in the peare of grace. lvi. hundred and. cxi. and the. xxxiii. peare of Iue than kynge of Westsaxons.

Thys as testyfeth mayster Robert Sagwyne and also the frenche cronycle, was a preste of clerke, and for his wysedome was cheryshed before tyme in the kynges paleys, in þe whiche tyme and season he suffered hys crowne to be ouer growen. Whelles after Antoninus, this Danpelle after the death of Dagoberte, for so much as he left after hym none of þe royal blode, the frenchemen supposyng hym to be apte for the rule of þe lande, for suche experyence as before tyme in hym had be proued, kept him secreete a certeyne of time tyl his here was fullpe growen, and than declared hym to be the brother of Dagobert, and chaunged his name, and called hym Chilperiche, and so by one assente admytted hym for kynge of fraunce.

Charles before spoken of, sonne of Peppyn, beyng escaped the daunger of prelsonmente, sought and compassed by all maner of wayes, howe he myght obteyne the roune that somtyme his father occupied. And thys to byng to effecte, he purchased to hym a yonglynge of fayre and goodlye maners and stature named Clothayre, and sayd that he was descended of þe royal bloude of fraunce, by meane wherof in shorte tyme he gathered to hym greate strengthe. Wherof hea-

rynge Chilperich commanded Ranganastre to assemble his knyghtes to withstonde the purpose of Charles. And soone after bothe hostes mette, nere vnto the fozenamed ryuer of Rhense, where was fought a stronge and cruell batayle, of þe whiche Ranganastre was byctore, and compelled Charles to forsake the felde. But he shortly afterwarde assembled a gathered agayne together all suche as before were dysperkled, and foughte este wyth the sayde Ranganastre at a place called Ablane. Of the whiche batayle with great difficulte Charles was lastly byctoure, and chased Ranganastre, and his hooste greatly demynished and lassed. Than thrydly these two hostes met in a felde called the wyne felde, where also was present the sayd Danpell or Chilperich haunyng in hys ayde amonge other prynces the Duke of Gascoyne, and there fought a soze and cruell batayle. Wherof lastly was byctore the sayde Charles, and constrayned the kynge wyth the sayde duke to fle vnto Dyleaunce. Where they takynge wyth them suche treasoure as belonged to the kynge, fled from thens vnto the Dutche of Gascoyne.

Whan Charles conceyued that the kynge was escaped his daunger, and knewe that Ranganastre was in the cite of Hungries, he sped him thether in all haste: and compassed the cytie with so stronge a syege, that fynally he obteyned the cytie with all that was therein. But it was not longe after that Charles shewed vnto Ranganastre such beneuolence, that he was set at his lyberte and fredome.

The next yeare folowynge, þe duke of Gascoyn before mynded, haunyng perfecte informacyon by ambassade or other wyse, that Charles intended

to make sharpe & cruell warre vpon the Gasconnes, for that that they fauoured and kepte with them Danyell o: Chylperche, he in auoydng & sayd daunger of warre, in shorte tyme after sente vnto Charles, vnder certayne condicions betwene the agreed the sayd Chylperche, with all suche treasure and iewelles as to him o: & crowne of Fraunce belonged.

In thys passetyme & season dyed the fozenamed Clothayze, that Charles befoze had made king. Wherfoze to the moze restfulnesse of the realme he alowed & fozenamed Chylperche for kynge, and he as mayster of the kynges paleys, as other his predecessours, ruled the lande of Fraunce. Than Charles hauyng thus & rule and gouernaunce, ruled it well and substancially, & defended it from all enemyes, durynge the lyfe of & sayde Chylperche. And after the whiche Chylperche whan he had contynued as kynge by the terme of .v. yeres dyed, and was buryed, as sayeth the frenche cronycle in & cytie of Roen o: Roen, withoutt issue of his body.

Englande.

Anglia. c. l.

¶ The. cclvi. Chapter.

Ethelardus.



Ethelardus the neww of Iue. began his regne ouer & westsaxons, in the yere of grace. vii. hundred and. cxiij. and & thyrde yere

of Danyell otherwysse called Chylperche than kynge of Fraunce. This after some wyters is named Etheldredus.

In & tyme of his regne, Ofricus as kynge reigned in Northumberland, to whom holy Beda wrote the Booke, called historia Anglica, o:

more berelpe to his successoure Colwolphus. Of the whiche Beda & of his woorkes Kanulphe make of Chester, sheweth a cōpendyous processe, in the. cxiij. chapter of his. v. booke called Policronycon.

The foysayd Ofricus is named in the Englyshe cronycle Olypyght, of the whiche in the sayde cronycle is rehersed a lōge woike. But for I se no autour of autorite afferme the same, I therfoze in thys woike passe it ouer.

It shuld appeare also by the meynynge of Polycronycon, that about thys tyme dyed Etheldredus befoze touched kynge of Mercia, the whiche whan he had longe tyme ruled that countrey, he lastelpe renounced the pompe of thys worlde, & was shorne a munke at Bardony.

Of & foysayd Ethelarde kynge of westsaxon, is lefte no memozy of any actes o: dedes by hym done. But as agree many wyters, he dyed whan he had reigned. v. yeres, wythoute yssue of his body.

And in Northumberlande after & fozenamed Ofricus, reigned Colwolphus, after whome Egbertus, & after whom Oswolp, and after Oswolphe reigned Ethelwald o: Ethelwalde. Albeit that dyuers autoures of these names of kynges and cōynuaunce of theyr regnes so dyuersly and sundryly report and wyte.

Francia.

francia.

¶ The. cclvij. Chapter.



Theodoricus, the whiche of mayster Robert Sagwone is alowed to be the sonne of the second Dagoberte, began his regne ouer the frenchem, in & yere of grace. vii. hundred

the boye
was brought
in house
of France
as known.

died and .xxvi. and the seconde yere of Ethelardus than kynge of west-saxons. The whiche was from hys yonge and tender age fostered and nourished in a house of nonnes in womans clothing, and lastly espied, and by consent of Charles mayster of the paleys admytted for kynge.

After the which solempnyte synysshed, Charles herynge of the rebellyon of a people called the Sweys or Swetefers, assembled an hoste, & lastly them subdued. Whiche done, he turned him toward an other part of the Almaynes, and in lyke wyse ouercame them, and after retourned into fraunce with great tryumphe and ryches, that he hadde wonne at those two iourneyes.

It was not longe after, & Charles had thus subdued the foresayd people of Almayne, with also a great part of germany, but that tydnynges came to hym, that Endo duke of Gasconye rebelled agayn & kynge of fraunce. Wherfore he in al goodlye haste preparyd hys armye, and sped him into Gasconye, where he made so cruell warre, that he in short tyme damagyd greatly the countrey, and held the duke Endo so streyte, that he was compellyd to hyde him in secreete places of the countrey, where after greate serche he myghte not be founde. Wherfore he setting the countrey in some restfulnesse, retourned hym into fraunce.

Whan Endo was sure of the retourne of Charles into fraunce, for so much as he had prouyd the matcypall knyghthode of hym, and knew well he myght not hym selfe withstand hys knyghtly power, he therfore allyed hym with the kynge of Spayne than being a pagan or mylcreant and named Abyderamus,

and excepted and styred hym to make warre vpon the lande of fraunce, promysynge to hym not all onely byctory, but also that lande to hym and to his heyres for euer. Upon cōfyrte of whiche promysse, and also ayde of the saide Endo, this forenamed Abyderamus thysynge crysten mannes blode, and entendinge bitter desolacyon and destruccyon of the realme of fraunce, assembled an exceedynge hooke of people, and with theyr wyues chyldren and cataple entred the lande of fraunce. And what they wan, they enioyed it as theyr owne. And so in processe came vnto the cytye of Burdeaur, the whiche after a certayne tyme of the cytesens defendyd, the sayde mylcreauntes wan into their posselshon, and dystroyed the people therof with all theyr chyches and temples of the same. And from thens passynge the countrey in wastynge it with iron and with fyre, lastly came vnto Doptiers. Whiche cytye as before ye haue harde in the storye of the fyrste Dagoberte in the .C. and .xxii. chapter, was by hym subuerted, and at this daye newlye reedifyed.

This cytye also of them posselshyd, they in lyke maner as they had dealte with Burdeaur, so dyd they with this, not sparynge that holy place of saint Hyllary, but dyd vnto yt greate shame & vylany. And from thens they rode vnto Towres, wastynge and sleynge the people without mercy by all the waye that they passyd, and wasted that citie as they had done the other.

In the whiche passetyme Charles herynge of the cruelte of this Abyderamus, assembled hys power, and shortly met with hym nere vnto Towres. Where he bare hym so knygh-

The number
of heathen
slayn and de-
stroyed.

knyghtely, that he slewe of the Pa-
gayns to exceedynge a number to be
accoyntaunt with reason. But for I
se it testyfied of so many wyters, yt
boldethe me to expresse the number,
whych was .iij. hundred. liij. scoze
and. v. thousande and odde. And of
the frenchemen were slayne but. xij.
hundred onely.

For the whiche victorions acte,
the sayde Charles obteyned a sure
name, and was called after that day
Carolus Martellus, the whiche is
to meane Charles the hamer. For
lyke as the hamer maketh al metal-
lys plyable, so Charles made hys
foes oꝝ enemies pliable to his hestis
And as the hamer cutteth, bryketh,
oꝝ dysseuereth iron and other harde
metallys, so dyd this Charles dys-
member & cut oꝝ bryke the enemyes of
fraunce thorough his high prowesse.

It is shewyd in the booke called
Cronica cronicarum, Supplemen-
tum cronicarum, Policronica, and
other, that this victorie was obtey-
ned by Charles of ¶ Saralins, but
not as inhabitants oꝝ incolers of
Spayne, but that they were ysluyd
out of Africa, and then warred and
hadde wonne greate countreys in
Spayne. The whiche is moze ac-
coyntaunt with hystories. For in the
plegys oꝝ rehersalles of the names
of kynges of Spayne, I fynde no
kyng of that name. Then yt folow-
eth in the story, when Charles Mar-
tell hadde thus obteyned victorie, he
comaunded al ¶ pillage to be brought
to one place. That done, he deuoyd
it amonge his knyghtes. And shortly
after Endo knowledgyng hys of-
fence, and sekynge meanes of mercy,
was agayne restorid to the lande of
Gascogne.

¶ The cxiij. Chapter.

Charles Martell haupnge
the duke of Gascogne thus
reconquered, sent hym with a
certayne of knyghtes agayne the
reste of the sayde Sarayns, the
whiche by his mannehode he op-
pressed and subdued, and clerely
vowded the lande of them. Then
soone vpon this beganne the Sur-
gonyos to rebelle, and made Harpe
warre vpon the frenchemen nexte
adioynante to them, and dyd vnto
the countrey and inhabytauntes of
the same greate harme. The whiche
warre, the sayde Martell that therin
toke great payne, not without great
trouble, lastely yt appealyd & them
subduyd.

In tyme of the whiche warre so
contynuyng, Endo befoze rehersyd
duke of Gascogne dyed. Wherefoze
Charles to sette that prouynce in an
order and due obeyssaunce, yode the-
ther. Where he beyng busyd about
the nedes of the same, tydynges to
hym were brought that the wanda-
lys which ben of the kinde oꝝ lynage
of the Hunys befoze touched, had
entred the land with an houghe pow-
er, and in wastynge the countrey, ap-
proched ¶ citie of Senons oꝝ Sens,
and yt enuyroned oꝝ bedcyypped with
a stronge wege. But by the vertue
and strength of the archbysshop of ¶
cytpe named Ebe, Ebbe, oꝝ Obbo,
with the assystence of the citeyyns of
the same, the sayde cytpe was defen-
dyd and deliuered from the power
of the sayde wandalys, & the power
of them abbatyd and subduyd.

For these manyfolde incurcyons
and assautys of enemyes, and rebel-
lyon of the countreys that were sub-
iecte to the crowne of fraunce, the
treasour of fraunce, & specially of ¶
temporal people was soze mynyshed
and

and wallyd. Wherfore in defence of all the lande, Charles Martell made request to the spirituall men, & with great dyspculite hadde yt graunted, that he myght leue certayne bymyns to wage therewith souldyours, & paye other necessaryes for hys warre.

Then Charles moued his hoste toward the Burgonyons, that again were of newe styed and exhortyd by dyuerse persones to newe rebellyon. And after his comynge thither, dyd execution vpon suche persons as he founde culpable, and not without batayll, sette the countrey agayne in quete, and then retourned into France.

But he rested not longe there, for he harde worde that the Almaynes, whiche dwellyd ouer or beyonde the ryuer called the Rhyne, blyke ouer in to France. These people are named in h French booke Desuers, & whiche dyd greate domage vpon the countrees adioynynge to the saide ryuer. But it was not long after, or he had theym chastyd and subduyd, wth also an nother people called the Hunis or Gothys, that he before hadde also banyquished. The which after this seconde disconfiture, they associated vnto theim h kyng of Longobarde named Auptyandus. By whose assistance & power, the foresayd Gothys wan the cite of Aurgnon and other stronge holdes, to the great hurte of the French men.

And for at this season Charles was greued wth the syknesse, he therfore sent his brother named Chyldebert to withstande the sayde enmyes, & whiche bare hym so manfully, that he chastyd the sayde enmyes.

But this sapenge dyscordeth with other authours, whiche shewen that betwene this Charles & Auptyandus

was continuall amity & frendshyppe, in so muche that Auptyandus ayded & assysted the saide Charles to auoyde h Avarasine that were entred a countrey of France called the Gallia cisalpine.

In this tyme that France was thus wrapped in these harde happes and bataylls, dyed the kyng Theodoricus, whan he hadde occupied the name onely of a kyng. *xxxij. peres.*

The.cliij. Chapter.

Ethbertus the newbe of Ethelardus, beganne his regne ouer the westsaxons, in the yere of grace. vij. hundred and .xxij. and the thyrde yere of the seconde Theodoricus then kyng of France. In tyme of whose regne Colwolphus reigned in Northumberland, to whome as before in the story of Ethelarde is touched, holre Beda wrote the story called Histopia Anglica. About the .ii. yere of the regne of this Ethbert apperyd in the firmament .ii. blasynge starrs or .ii. starrs wth cresses, & asse as yt were byrennyng byondes toward the North.

And about the vij. yere of h regne of Ethbert dyed the foresayd holy Beda, the which in his tyme made & wrote .lxxviii. booke, ouer and beside his manyfold workes of vertue that he luyd by al his lyfe tyme. It ys tolde of hym, that in his later dayes whan he was blind, he was brought by h fraude of his leder vnto a great hepe of stones, the whiche his leder shewyd to hym was an assemble of men and women, that were thether comyn to here him preache the word of god. Then he thankynge hys re-
ports

The death of Theodoricus.

Charters.

Beda.

Blasynge starrs.

The death of Beda.

Bynd man stones.

porte to be true, anon with great be-
uoyon beganne there a collacpon.
And therof whē he came to the ende
the fountes by dypne power, in lyke-
nesse of a great multitude of people
said Amen, or after the sayeng of An-
toninus. Deo graciis.

He was so noble of leernynge & ex-
cellent in cōnyng, & the kyngste Ser-
gius B. of Rome sent for hym to as-
sople questpons there made in his
vniuersyte. Also his cōnyng is ap-
parent in the bokes whiche he wrote
super Genesim, super Chobiam, su-
per Esdriam, super Aecemiam, with
other, whiche wolde as ke a longe
tracte of tyme to reherse, with also
homelies made vpon the gospelles.
but I passe ouer. When he was ded,
he was buried at p abbay of Syrup,
all be yt the commonynge is that he
restyth now with saynte Cutbert of
Durham.

Soone after this tyme and season
Coltvolphus kyng of Northum-
berland when he had reigned . viij.
yeres, resigned his dominyon to his
colyn Egbertus, and was thome a
monke in the abbay of Seruy, or af-
ter some wynters in p abbay of Lyn-
desar or holy plande.

Thus for as much as litle is shew-
ed of the dedes of Cutbert kyng of
westsaxons, therfore I haue made
the moze rehersayll of other thynges
done in his tyme. For of hym is no-
thyng leste in wytyng worthy to
be remembred or mynded, saynge
that he often and many tymes made
warre vpon Ethelwalde kyng of
Mercia, and spedde therein diuersly,
& lastely dyed when he had reigned
after mozte wynters. . xvi. yeres.

The death of
Cutbert.

France.

France.

The . cclix. Chapter.



Hildericus or Chil-
dericus p seconde
of that name, and
sonne of Theodo-
ricus, beganne his
reigne ouer the
frenchemē in the
yere of oure lordes incarnacpon. . vij.
hundred and. . xi. and the. . xi. yere of
Cutbertus then kyng of westsaxons.
Of the whiche for his pulnesse and
his other enoumptes in hym excep-
sed, lytle or nothyng of his actes or
dedes are put in memoire.

Ye haue before in p story of Theo-
dowche, hardy of the pursuant and
stronge dedes of Charles Martell,
the whiche shill duryng his lyfe, cō-
tynued in great honour, to the great
suertye of the realme of Fraunce, and
to the great terrour and fere of their
enempes, wherof to reherse all the
cyrsumstaunce yt wolde occuppe a
longe tyme. Wherfore shortly to cō-
clude, lastely after his manyfolde
trauaplls susteyned for the weale
of the realme of Fraunce, he dyed,
leupnge after hym thye sonnes, that
is to wytte Charlemayne, Pepyn,
and Gyslon, to the whiche he be-
quethed his possessions and goodes.
But for the yongest named Gyslon
helde hym not contented with suche
bequest as hys father to hym gaue,
he therfore made warre vpon his o-
ther twoo brythren. The whiche be-
haued theym so wylsepe, that wth-
out notable batayll, they toke theyr
sayde brother, and putte hym in a
safe keppnge. And that done, the
sayde twoo brythren assembled theyr
knyghtes, and spedde theym agayn
Hannalbe duke of Gupan, then re-
bellnge again p crowne of Fraunce.
The which duke with the countrey,
they brought vnder theyr wyll obey-
saunce

The death
of Charlemayne.

The fyrte parte.

155.

saunce. After the whiche victorie of the sayde countrey obteyned, the sayd two brythzen spedde them to the cite of Doyters, where they by aduise of the nobles of the lande, consyderinge the vnablenesse of Hildebriche þe kyng, that he was vnusseynt to rule so greute a charge, bygyded the lande of Fraunce betwene them. So that eyther of them shuld vnder the kyng, rule and gouerne suche porcyon as then there was to them appoynted.

After the whiche porcyon Charlemayne hering of the dryuyn and stryfe amonge the Almaynes, as a thyng belonging to his charge, spedde hym thither in all haste. And after a parte of that countrey wasted and spoyled, and dyuerse of theyr stronge holdes caste plaine with the erthe, he brought theym to due subieccion.

And soone after he went agayne þe Bauares, þe whiche by his knyghtely strength, he appeased in lyke wyse. In all whiche tyme and season, Depyn his brother was occupied in defendyng of the other parties of Fraunce.

Then this foresayde Charlmayne sodenly renounced & gaue ouer al worldely prosperite & domynio, and with pure deuocion yode to Rome, wher of the B. of Rome then named zacharias, he with all honour & toy was receyued, and of hym shone a munke, and dwelled a season in an abbaye of hym selfe hyndred to the mounte Sarapte. But for he sawe that dayly drew to him many great lordes of Fraunce, by meane wherof he was lette from his dyuine seruyce and contemplacion: he therfore yode thens to the mounte Cassyne, & there ended his naturall lyfe.

After whose thus departyng of groupyng ouer of the sayde Charlemayne, Depyn as onely ruler, toke vpon hym the charge of the hole realme.

In this passe tyme Gryffon the yonger brother was enlarged from pryson, and by fauoure of his brythzen was assygned to suche possessions, as to hym was demed suffeycent to lede an honorable lyfe.

How be yt, when he sawe that his brother Depyn hadde all the rule and he nothyng: he dysdayned his sayde brother, and thoughte no lenger to cōtinue in that maner, but to be partener of the rule of the lande as Charlemayne his brother hadde ben. And this to byng to his purpose, he fledde vnto the Saxons, which as after shall appere were named Normans. And with the prynce of theym made aliaunce, so that with theyr ayde he mowd warre agayne his brother, and assembled a stronge hoste. Wherof Depyn beinge warned, gadered his people, and passyng thorow came to the ryuer of Sunaha, or after the latyne tonge Simulaha, and Gryffon sped hym tyll he came to a ryuer called Onacre.

Whē these .ii. hostes wer thus nere, meanes of treatye were soughte on both parties. Duryng whych communicacyon, Gryffon hauyng suspencion to the Saxons that were on his parte, lest they wold betraye hym and yelde hym into the handes of his brother, made for that tyme a slepyght agreement, and shortly after departed from the sayd Saxons, and fled to the Bauares or into Bayon. Where he allyenge him to dyuerse nobles and barons of Fraunce, vexed and distourbed soze þe duke and loyde

How Depyn ruled France.

How Depyn & his brother began to falle out.

Charles
was
a monk

How Deppn
took his bro
ther Gyslon
prisoner.

lorde of that countrey called Cassy-
lon, and lastly dysceased hym of that
lordshyppe. Wherof Deppn beyng
warned, spedde hym thither wiche
great strenght, and so bare hym that
he had the better of his brother, and
restored the sayd Cassylon vnto his
right, & after returned into Fraunce,
ledynge with him his brother Gys-
son as his prysoner.

But it was not long after, that by
medpatours the sayde Gysson was
reconcyled to his brother. And for he
shuld be content & haue no more cause
to vary w his brother, there was as-
signed to him, as wntnesseth p frech
cronicle and other. xii. erldomes with
in the realme of Fraunce. With the
whiche bounteous gyfte he not be-
yng contente, the selfe same pere fled
vnto p duke of Gulan named Gys-
fer, and with hym newly conspyred
agayne his sayde brother. But laste-
ly he was there slayne as after shall
appere.

The death of
Gyslon.

Deppn then consyderynge in his
minde in what daunger and trouble
his father befoze hym had ruled the
lande, & he now for his tyme in lyke
agony and trouble, and the kynge,
to whome belonged all the charge,
kepte his paleys, & folowed all his
deytes and pleasures, withoute ta-
kyng of any payne, wherfoze con-
syderynge the pzemysles, & for a re-
formacyon of the same: sent hys am-
ballade to the B. of Rome the beyng
zacharye befoze named, askynge his
aduyse, whether yt was more necessa-
ry or welful for p realme of Fraunce
that he shulde be admytted for kynge
that dyd nothyng but applye hys
mynde to all pleasure of hys bodye,
without cure or charge takynge v-
pon hym for the gubdynge of the
lande and the people of the same, or

he that toke vpon hym al the charge
and payne, in defence of the lande,
and keepynge of the people in due sub-
teccion. To this the B. of Rome an-
swered & wrote vnto Deppn, that he
was beste worthy & most profyttable
for the realme to be admytted for
kynge, that ruled well the commonal-
tye by iustyce and prudence, and the
enmyes therof defendeth and sub-
dueth by his polycy and manhode.
The whiche answer thus receyued
from the B. of Rome, & declared vnto
the lordes & barons of the realme
anone they of one assente and minde
proceeded and went to the depoynte
and puttyng downe of theyr kynge
and gouernour Sygbertus. And in
shorte space after closed him in a mo-
nastery or house of religion, when
he hadde ben occupper of a kynges
Rome by the name onely .x. yeres.
And that done, the frenche men ele-
cted and chace Deppn for theyr souer-
ayne and kynge.

In the whiche Sygbertus or Chil-
derich ended the lyfe or progenye of
Meroneus, of whome the frenche
kynges lynally descended by cōtyn-
nuance of tyme as foloweth.

Meroneus
Childericus
Clodoueus
Dagobertus
Clodoueus
Clotharius
Theodoricus
Childericus
Lotharius
Chilpericus
Lotharius
Clodoueus
Childericus
Dagobertus
Dagobertus

.x. yeres.
xliij. yeres.
xii. yeres.
xliij. yeres.
xli. yeres.
liij. yeres.
liij. yeres.
ii. yeres.
i. yeres.
xliij. yeres.
xliij. yeres.
liij. yeres.
xliij. yeres.
xli. yeres.
v. yeres.
Theo-

How by the
meanes of
pyn, Deppn
the kyng of
France was
put in a
monastery.

Page 156

The liues of
some of the
kynges of
France.

Theodoricus
Theodoricus
Hildericus

The fyrste parte.

xiii. yeares.
xii. yeares.
i. yeares.

Anglie.

The .c. l. Chapter.



Sygebert^o or Sygbertus the colyne of Cutberte laste kyng of the Westsaxons, began his regne ouer the sayde Saxons, in

8 yeare of the incarnation of Christe vij. C. and. xiiij. & the. v. yeare of Hildericus then kyng of Fraunce. He was cruel and tyrannous to his subiectes, and turned the lawes and customes of his forefathers after his owne wyl and pleasure. And for that one of the noble men of his dominie somedeile sharply aduertysed him to chaunge his maners, & to behaue him more prudently toward his people, he therfore malyciously caused hym to be put to cruell death.

About this tyme Egbertus, after the yger wyfscyde, was made archbyschoppe of Yorke. The whyche brought agayn thither the pall that his predecessours hadde forgone, syng the tyme that the fyrst Paulin^o had left that see and fled to Rochester in Kent, and there left the sayd pall. This Egbert was brother vnto Egbert kyng of Northumberland, by whose assystence and comforte, he dyd many thynges for the weale of the see, & made there a noble lychary.

Then it foloweth, forsomuche as the kyng Sygebert cōtynued in his malyce and cruell condycions, his subiectes conspired agayn hym, and putte him from al kyngly dygnite. So that he fell after to great desolacion and mysery, in suche wyse that he was founden after in a wood o; desolate

place wanderyng alone withoute comforte. Wher he deyng is founde by a swyneherd o; bylayne, some tyme belongyng to the erle Cobranus & he beforetyme wychedly had slayne, in auengement of his sayd lordes death slew hym in the sayd place. Which sain Sygebertus was thus depnyed of al honour, whē he after most wryters had repnyed o; tyrannysed. ii. yeares.

The .c. li. Chapter.



Kenulphus of the lyne o; blode of Cedricus fyrst kyng of Westsaxons, began his domynio ouer the sayd Westsaxons in the yeare of

grace. vij. C. &. xliij. & the. vii. yeare of Hildericus then kyng of Fraunce. The vertue of this man passed his fame. For after he hadde with the agrement of the Westsaxons depnyed Sygebert they kyng from his autorite and regally, he fyrste appealed dyuers murmurs and grudges that kyndeled amōg his subiectes, & sette his lordshyp in great quyetnes and rest touchyng theyr couple discorde.

About the. viij. yeare of the regne of this Kenulphus, Ossa sene a tyrant named Beoredus, & before had slayne Ethelwald kyng of Mercia. After whose death the sayd Ossa as newe to the sayd Ethelwald, regned as kyng of that prouince.

Of this Ossa is told many notable dedes, wherof somwhat I entnde to shew. He hadde warre with the Northumbries, & the for a tyme subdued. He also had warre with Etheldrede kyng of East angles, and with Egbert otherwys called Den kyng of Kent. Whome he toke prisoner, and led hym bounden with hym into Mercia.

Then after these byctores, Ossa buylded

buylded þ church of Wyche. In tyme of the which buyldyng, in presence of xiiij. byshoppes and many other great estates, kyng Offa enlarged the sayd Egbert of surrey. In token wherof the people beyng there present, made such an exclamation of ioye and gladnesse, that the church therof range.

This kyng Offa had suche displeasure vnto the cytyzens of Caunterbury, that he remoued the archebyshoppes see by the agreement of þ first Adrian then bishoppe of Rome vnto Lychefeld. He also chaſed the Byrons of Welshmen into Wales and made a fynneſse dyke, betwene Wales and þ better bondes of Mercia of myddle Englande, the whiche to this daye is named Offes dyke. And after he buylded there a church whiche longe tyme after was called Offes churche.

This Offa also maryed one of his daughters to Bygtricus that was kyng of Westsaxons. And for that in his tyme was varpaunce betwene him and the Frenchemen, that passage of marchauntes was forbyde, therfore he sente that famous doctoure Anselmus vnto Charles the great then kyng of Fraunce, to comen the meanes of peace. Whiche Charles hadde after this Anselmus in suche fauoure that he became his discyppe.

Then retourn we to Kenelphus, the which before tyme had had often warre with Offa, and with him many conſpyctes, and lastly agreed. About the xi. yeare of this Kenelphus, Egbert kyng of Northumbres renounced his kyngly dignite, and became a munke.

And lastly the sayd Offa, when he had reigned ouer Mercia. lxxij.

yeares, as sayth Gydo, he left the kyngdome to his sonne, also named Kenelphus, and yode to Rome.

And this Kenulphus kyng of Westsaxon, kepte strongly his lordshipp agaynſt the power of all his enemies, and hadde his subiectes in due order of obedience. Lastly, Kenulphus was supplused with the loue of a woman that he kept at Hertton and haunted her more secretly then stode with his honoure. Wherof hauyng knowledge a kynneſman of Wygeberte late kyng, entending to reuenge the depoynte of his kynneſman, abayped the tyme, and beset þ house where Kenulphus and his paramoure was smally accompanied. But so soone as Kenulphus had espied his enemies, he sette vpon them, which as sayth Policroicon, were lxx. in number, and fought with the a longe whyle. But in þ ende he was slayn of Clyto or Clyton his enemy.

It was not longe after of wyche sprang of þ kinges death. Wherfore Offricus then beyng master of the kynes knyghtes, tooke with him a certayn of the sayde chualtry, & pursued vpon the sayd murderers, & lastly encountred with them, and slewe the sayde Clyto they captayne with the more parte of hys compaigne. And that done, he retourned to Hertton, and there toke the corpes of Kenulphus, and with greute solemnite conueyed it vnto Wycheſter, wher it was with all reuerence entered, when he hadde ruled the Westsaxons (albeit that of him the englyshe cronycle maketh no mencyon) lxxi. yeares.

Francia.

The c. liij. Chapter.

Pipinus

Howe þ arch
bishops see
of Caunterbury
was remoued
to Lychefeld.

Howe
Kenulphus
haunted
a woman.



Pipinus the secōde sonne of Charles Martel, began his regne ouer the Frenchmen, in the peare of grace. vii. hundred and .l. and

the second peare of Kenulphus then kyng of Westsaxs. This as befoze we haue hard, was elected to that honoure, by assent of iachary bishop of Rome, & the consent of the nobles of Fraunce, & after he was consermed of the secōd Stephan, when he satte after as B. of Rome.

The fyrst peare of his regne, the Saxons otherwyle called Danyss or Roymannes, beganne to warre vppon him. The whiche he encountred at the ryuer of May, and them knyghtly ouercame, and chased and brought them fynall vnder his subiection. And in his returnyng into the countrey of Fraunce, worde was brought to him of þe death of his brother Gyslon, the which as befoze is sayde fledde vnto Gayferus duke of Gupan, and there held him to þe ende for to haue caused þe people of Gupan to haue rebelled, & to make warre agayne his brother Depyn. Wherof whē some of them consydered the malycious and vnstable condycions of him, in auoydynge moze daunger that to theyr costre by his meanes myght ensue, they fell sodenly vpon hym and slewe him.

Whē Depyn was retourned into Fraunce, he by the aduise of Remigius then bishoppe of Roan, amended the state of the churche, and caused goddes seruyce to be longe, that befoze tyme had ben with lytle deuotion and reuerence done and vttered. And other spirituall thynges that befoze were mysordered, he caused

them to be sette in a better forme. And shortly after Stephan about named, confirmed this Depyn and his heires saynkynges of Fraunce, and of him asked ayde & aduysēce to withstand the power of Aistulphus then kyng of Longobardes, the whiche then warred vppon certayne landes belongyng vnto the church of Rome. The whiche kyng Depyn to hym with good wyl graunted, & the begynnyng of the nexte peare solowynge with a great hoste entered the boundes of Italy, and in the same made sharpe and cruell warre. In defence wherof the sayde Aistulphus made his beste prouysyon, and defended þe straytes and moūtaynes, by þe which the Frenchmen shuld haue further entre into his lande, and there gaue vnto his enemyes a stronge fyghte. Albeit, he with hys people was forced to geue backe, and for his refuge toke the cite of Dapp. Wherof Depyn hauyng infozmacion, beclippyed the sayde cytie with a stronge syege. Whē Aistulphus had a season defended his cytie, & saw by experyēce dayly his enemyes encrease, & his power mynyshē and feble, in auoydynge of extreme daunger, he sought meanes of peace, and in such wyse pursued þe same, that he finallye hadde peace to hym graunted, vpon condycion that he by a daye lyMITTED, shulde restore to the B. of Rome all righte to hys church belongyng, that he or any for him helde or befoze tyme had witholden, with other thynges concernyng the sayde peace. And for the perfourmaunce of the sayde condycions, he deliuered immediatlye good hostages and pledgys. After which peace thus substanciallye confermed, Depyn with his hoste with great triumphe retourned into Fraunce.

How Depyn
warred a
gayns Italy.

Pepyn was
the B. of Ro-
me's watry-
guer.

But notwithstandinge this as-
sured peace, by the confirmacyon of
othe and other circumstance before
shewed, the next yere folowynge he
trusting bys better fortune of warre
denyed and renoked all hys former
grauntes, & refused to do as before
he had synply promysed. For this
unstablenes and vntruth to remedy
the bishoppe of Rome of newe made
requeste vnto Pepyn. The whyche
without longe taryenge resembled
hys knyghtes, and made good sped
towarde Italy, & not withoute dan-
ger passed the mountaynes, and sy-
nally beseged Aystulphus within þ
foresayde cytie of Dapp. By meane
wherof he lastly was constrained to
restore certayne cyties and other pos-
sessions that before tyme he had ta-
ken from the B. of Rome.

The death of
Aistulphus.

After the which agremente ended
and perfected, within a shorte tyme
the sayde Aistulphus beyng in his
disposyte of huntynge, fell frome his
hoyse or with his hoyse. By violence
whereof he was so brysed, þ he dyed
shortly after, whan he had ruled the
Longobardes, Lumbardes, or Ita-
lyans. liii. yeres.

After this vyctory thus obteyned
by Pepyn, the lordes and prynces
that dwelled aboute hym, fered and
dread hym, and sought to him for al-
lyaunce & ampte. Amonge the which
Casslon duke of Bapon before spo-
ken of, that newly hadde conspyred
agayne him, yelded him to the kyng,
and became his trewe lyege manne,
and swoze to him and to his two son-
nes feawte.

But the Barons, whiche in the
frenche boke are named Doysons,
coude neuer holde them content with
out dystorbyng of the frenchemen.
Wherfore kyng Pepyn assembled a

great hoste and made towarde them
and had with them dyuerse conspi-
tes and batayles. So that at length
they were dyuen to aske peace, bys
condicyn that yere after they shuld
yelde vnto the kyng of Fraunce. iii.
hundred good hoyles in waye of try-
bute.

And that done, he retourned into
Fraunce, and immediatly after ordey-
ned by the aduys of his counceyle a
courte or counceyl, the which at this
day is called þ parlyament of Fraunce
and is lyke vnto the courte of reque-
stes now at this day holden in Eng-
land. Howbeit, þ is of muche greater
resort of people, and therwith veray-
delayous, in so much that as I haue
herde credyble persons say, some one
mater hath hanged there in dysputa-
cion ouer. xx. yeres. The which par-
lyament at this daye is kepte at Pa-
rys, at Roan, and other two places
of the lande. And for iudges of this
counceyll or parlyament, is deputed
of þ kynges cost in euery place, wher
it is kepte an hundred persons, what
of one and what of an other.

Than it foloweth, Gaspar duke
of Supan before mynded, of wyll,
more than of reason, set a tribute or
imposycion vppon the spyrytuall
landes within hys lande withoute
agrement of the clergy. Wherfore þ
bischoppes for a redress and remedy
cōplayned them vnto kyng Pepyn.
Then Pepyn sent vnto him, mone-
nyng him in fayre and goodly ma-
ner, that he shuld excheu a forbear
such doyng. And for the duke wolde
not abstayne for the kynges cōma-
dement, he in shorte while assembled
his army, and entred the territory of
Supan, in wastynge and popyng
the countrey. And in so shorte while
after put the duke in such feare, that
he

Wolke þ
one becom
tributary

Howmany
are thys
þ parlyament
of Paris

Howe þ
Pepyn
had the
gyn.

The sixte parte.

he was fayne to aplee him to þe kynges mynde and pleasure, and bound hym to restoe to the clergie all that he had befoze taken by extort power. But whan the sayde duke was assured of þe kynges retourne into fraunce he gathered a strength of knyghtes, and sent theyn to the cite of Chalours in Burgoyne, and byd that he coulde o: myghte to the domage of that towne and countrey. In whych season the kyng was at the towne o: cite called Durv, whyther and to the whiche towne tydnynges were brought to hym of the vntrewe dealinge of thys foresayde duke. Wher wyth he beyng soze dyscontent, returned wyth hys people into Guyā and therein bete downe many stroge holdes & castelles, and toke o: wone at length Burbon, Cancaruple, and Cleremouit, and from thens wasting the countrey with pyon and fyre, rode tyll he came to Lymoges. And for þe wynter came on hande, the kyng for the ease and sauegard of his people, strengthened these foresayde cyties, townes and holdes, that he befoze had wone, and than rode to a place called Cause o: Caus, & there kepte his Christmasse & Easter. And whan the new season was come, not forgettyng his former purpose, reentered þe foresayde Duchy of Guyā, in wastinge the lande as he befoze hadde done, and after toke by strengthe the cyties of Burgies and Towres. In which season & time the duke wolde neuer appeare in playne felde, but kept him in strong holdes, & as one was wone, he fled into another.

This warre thus contynuyng, þe countreye and people were soze empoueryshed. Wherefoze they lastlye consyderynge the obstynacy of the duke, wyth also the greate daunger

which they stode in: murdered they sayde duke, and after yelded them þe countrey to the kynges obeyssaunce with all iuche treasure and iewelles as to the sayd duke belonged, where of Deppn offred a great parte of the vnto saynt Denys.

Thys warre thus ended, wyth many other notable workes wherof the rehersall in order woulde aske a longe tracte of tyme: thys byctoryous prynce Deppn was vered wyth greuous syckenesse. Wherfoze in all haste he sped hym vnto saynt Martynes, where he made certayne oblations & prayers, and thens (his syckenesse encreasyng) was conueyed vnto Darys, wher he shortly after dyed when he had reigned as kyng by þe terme of .xliij. yeres, leuyng after hym two sonnes, that is for to saye Charlmayne and Charles.

The .c. liij. Chapter.

Carolomanus, a Charles sones of Deppn, began they regne ioyntly ouer the frenchmen in þe yere of our Lord bit. C. and .xliij. and the .xx. yere of Kenulphe than kyng of Westsaxs, so that Charlemayne hadde to hys parte myddell fraunce, and Charles hadde Austracy. with the other deale of fraunce.

Of þe elder brother Charlemayne lytell is lesse in memory, for he dyed whā he had reigned lytel ouer .ij. yeres. Wherfoze to Charles fell þe hole realme of fraunce, the which of al þe nobles was ioyoulye admytted.

It was not longe after, Hunplidus whom Deppn by his life hadde ordeyned ruler of Guyā, rebelled agayne the kyng. Wherfoze Charles prepared anone hys armie, and sped hym thither, and in processe of o iii tyme

161.

Howe Guyā
the Duke of
Guyā was
murdered.

The death of
Deppn.

Charlmayne
and Charles.

Charlmayne
brynge dead,
hys brother
Charles had
þe whole rule
of fraunce.

time constrained þe sayd Hunplous
to forsake the countrey, and for his
scurion to flee vnto Lupus than
duke of Gasconne. Wherfore Char
les beyng aduertysed, sent his mes
sage to the sayde Lupus, wyllyng &
commaunding him, that he in speedy
maner, shulde sende to hym his re
bell Hunplous, or els he wolde with
his army invade & spoyle his peo
ple & countrey. Upon receypt of which
message Lupus by counsaill cōdes
cended to the kynges pleasure, so þe
he caused Hunplous to submyt hym
vnto the kynges grace and mercede.
Wherwith the kyng was so well
contented, that vpon assuraunce ta
ken of the sayde Hunplous, þe there
after he shulde be of good abeyng
toward the kyng, he clerely forgaue
vnto hym all his former offence.
And after he had set þe countrey in a
rule & order, he retourned into Frañ
ce. Where to hym soon after came
an embassade from the fyrst Rōman,
then B. of Rome, requyryng hym of
ayde agayne Desyderius then kyng
of Longobardes, þe whiche then had
taken fro the church of Rome many
cyties and other possessions.

Then Charles acceptyng the B. of
Romes requeste, or he beganne any
warre agayne the sayd Desyderius,
sente vnto hym an embassade, wyl
lyng & requyryng hym in all hono
rable wyse to restore vnto the churche
of Rome, all suche possessions as he
fro the same church before tyme had
taken and yet withhelde, and also to
refrayne hym from al suche warre as
he daylye made vpon the landes of
the sayd churche. But for he sawe no
frute ensue of the message, he made
prouysyon for all thyng nedefull to
suche a iourney. And shortly after
passed the mountaynes, not all with

oute battayle, and in processe con
strayned Desyderius to take the cy
tie of Vercelle. Where after he hadde
refreshed his Italyans, he gaue byn
to the frenchemen a sharpe and cru
ell batayle. But in the ende, Desyde
rius was compelled to forsake the
felde, and fled after to the forenamed
cytie of Papp, wher he kepte him as
after shall appeare a longe whyle.

And for to shewe you somewhat of
the foresayd batayle, ye shall vnder
stande that for the great occasyon of
men that there was slayne, the place
was called longe after Mortaria, þe
is to meane in oure vulgare or mo
ther toge the place of death. In this
fghte were slayne amonge other,
two knyghtes greatly famed, Amys
and Amylpon, of whom some fables
are reported, because they were so
lyke of semblaunt.

These two knyghtes as wytnes
seth the frenche storie and also An
toninus, were brought vppre in the
court of the foresayde Charles, and
with hym well cherished, and fy
nally here slayne and buried after
some wyters in the two chappelles,
whiche in the foresayde place were
buiold to praye for the greates mul
titude of the soules of these knygh
tes that there were slayne. But who
that is desyrous to knowe the hole
lyfe of those two foresayd knyghtes
let hym ouersee the thyrde chappter
of the.iiii. tytle of Antoninus, and
he shall there fynde a compendyous
and goodly storie, the whiche for
length I ouerpasse and retourne my
style agayne to Charles. The which
whan he was ware that Desyderius
had taken thys cytie of Papp, and
it greatly strengthened both with men
and bytell, in such wyse that he well
vnderstode þe it myght not be short
ly

þe charge
of the batayle

wher þe
storye
of, was
led the
place
of death.

ly wonne: he therfore layde about it a stronge spege with the ouersyght of sure and wyle capytayns, and after yode to Rome to bysyt the holy apostles Peter and Poule, & also to speke wth the B. of Rome for dyuers maters. Where he tarped a greate parte of the wynter folowynge, and after retorned vnto Papp, which as yet was not deliuered nor giue bp.

But it was not longe after his retorne that the cyrte was wonne, wherein was takyn as prysoner the sayde Desyderius wth his wyfe and chyldren. The whiche to make shorte processe, he at length forcade hym to restore vnto the B. of Rome al such possessyōs as he before tyme hadde taken from his chyrche, and added more there vnto, the two cyrtes of Spoletys & Beneuent. And fynally depriued hym of all kyngly honour, and ladde hym as prysoner into Fraunce, and as a prysoner of exyle from his naturall countreie kepte hym at the cyrte of Lyons, as wytnesseth Cronica cronicarum, Iacobus Philippus, and other. And after by agrement the B. of Rome gaue þe kyngdome vnto Pypnus his sonne, the which continued so in the Frenchmens rule & possessyon, ouer the terme of two hundred yeres.

For this vycorrouous dede thus obteyned by Charles, þe forenamed B. of Rome graunted vnto him many greate pryncples. Amonge the nomber wherof, one was that no B. of Rome durynge the lyfe of Charles, shulde be in no wyse elected or chosyn tyll there came fro hym a commaundement to go to that eleccion. And also he graunted vnto hym in ueluyture of benefices spirytuall. Which grauntes & pryncples wer cōfermed & anthorised in a Synode

of an hundred and lxx. byshoppes, kepte in Fraunce by comaundement of the foresayd Pappan.

Of this Charles longe and tedious it were to tell the hole of his actes and dedes. Wherfore I entende to toweche but a parte of thepm, and for the other deale I remitte to them þe haue further desyre of knowlege, vnto þe booke of Turpin and Curraunt chapman to the sayde Charles, or elles to the sayd byshop Turpin, whiche wrote a longe worke of hys vertuous dedes.

The .c. lb. Chapter.

This Charles marcell after hys retorne into Fraunce, without there lōg taryeng sped him agayne to the fore named people called Saxons or Barons, which newly rebelled, & warred sharpely vpon the, & fought wth them sondry batayles. Among the which two ben specially noted, wherof that one was foughten at a place called Dinacre, & þe other at the riuer of Elam or Delaye. By whiche two batayles the Saxons loste moch of theyr people, and were so sore feblisshed that they were fayne shortly after to put them in the mercy of Charles. By reason wherof he bonde them vnto certayne labes and ordynaunces, wherof specially one as pryncipall of them, was, that they fro that daye forth, shulde renounce and forsake theyr mayshyppynge of idoles and fals goddes, and beleue in the sayth of Christen churche wth many other. For the persomyng of the whiche couenauntes, the kyng toke of them good pledges & hostages. And more ouer to the ende to minishe & make lesse theyr strengthe, he chace oute of them

them .x. thousande of the moſte apte men for the warres, and conueyed them with hym into Fraunce. And after he hadde clothed them with þe mantell of baptiſme, takynge of the aſſured othe to be trewe to hym and to hys heires: he after inhabyted them in diuers places of his realme. Of the whiche people, as aſſermethe myne authoure, deſcended the Flemynghes and Brabanders. And thus ended the warre of the Saxons or Soppsons, that hadde contynued by the terme of many yeares paſſed.

And forthwith by aſſent and aduyle of hys counceyle, he prepared all abilymentes and ordinaunce of warre, to go agayne þe Hunys þe then had wonne great ground in Spayne. And for to byrnyng this war to þe moze effectually ende, he chaſe .xii. perys, which after ſome wyters are called dozerperys or kynghes. Of the whiche vi. were biſhoppes & .vi. tempoꝛall lordes. Of the whiche biſhoppes thre were named dukes, which were archbiſhops, & .iiij. erlys, which were biſhoppes. Of the tempoꝛall lordes thre were dukes and thre erlys, that is to ſaye the duke of Burgoyne, the duke of Aeuſtria or Normandy, and the duke of Guyan, & for .iiij. erlys, the erle of Palatynne, þe erle of Thoulouſ, and the erle of Champayn. Of þe whiche alſo ſome wyters aſſerme, that þe ſamouſe knyghtes Rowland and Olyuer were .ii. as Rowland erle of Palatynne, & Olyuer erle of Thoulouſ. Whe Charles had prepared al thynges neceſſary to this great tourney, he fyrſte made his pylgrymage vnto ſaynte Denys, and there offered ryght greate gyftes, and after proceeded towarde his tourney, and fyrſte beſieged the cite called Babilona, the which after .iiij. monethes he ſub-

dued to his obeyſaunce. This cytye ſtoode in the entre of Spayne in the montaynes called montes Pyrenay. After the obteynnyng of whiche cytye, as ſayeth Antoninus, Charles comanded al ſuch as to Chriſtes ſayth wolde be conuerted, ſould be ſaued, & the other to paſſe by ſentence of the ſwoorde. And after he hadde wonne þe fyrſte cytye, he wanne al the countrey adioynnyng to the ſame, by reaſon wherof he caſte greate fere vnto the miſcreantes, and wan by his ſtrength and by appoyntement (ſo that they became his tributaries) theſe countreys and prouynces hereafter enſuyng, that is to ſaye as wyneſſeth Wynſet hystoryall, Antoninus, and other, the land of Laudeuſſe, the lade of Paradis, the lande of Caſtell, the lande of Maureys, the prouynce of Auerne, the countrey of Doxtynghall, the lade of Byſcaye, & the lande of Palarge, and deſtroyed in them al idollis and buylded in them chyꝛches and monaſteries, and brought the moze partye of them to Chriſtes relygion. And moſte ſpecially the chyꝛche of ſaynt James he buylded in Copoſtella wth ſumptuous coſte, & gaue there vnto greate poſſeſſions, to the mayntenyng of the diuine ſeruyce of god and the mynys ters of þe ſame. And ouer that with þe treaſour that he gate in theſe forſayd countreys, he buylded many dyuerſe chyꝛches, as well in other places as there.

Longe yt were to tell all the cytyſtaunce of this vyage and victories of the ſame. Wherefore I paſſe ouer. And when Charles hadde ſped hys nedes, he had good wyll to retourne into Fraunce. In the which retourne Charles caſtinge no doubt nor paſtell, by the treaſon of Gaucelon a knyght or ruler of Calcopn, & which Gaucelon

Of whome þe Flemynghes & Brabanders deſcended.

The fyrſt chofyng of þe .xii. perys, or knyghtes in Fraunce.

The collyre is a pome that Charles wanne.

Gauclon hadde receyued of a pay-
nym kynge named Harfyll, great &
ryche gyftes for to betraye the hoſte
of Charles, was dyſceyued as after
ſheweth. This Gauclon the better
to compaſſe and byng to effecte his
purpoſe, aduiſed Charles with a cer-
taine of his people to paſſe the porte
of Ceſayre, and to leue behynde hym
in the reerwarde Rowland & Dyuier
with .xx. thouſande of the reſydue of
his hoſte. And when the kynge was
paſſed with his hoſte, he gaue war-
nyng vnto the forenamed Harfyll
and other, that they ſhulde cloſe the
ſayde Rowlande in the place called
Rounceuale. The which accordyng
to that falſe counſayll, with an hoſte
of .lx. thouſande or mo, beclipped
Rowlande and his people on euery
ſyde, and there fel vpon the Chriſten
men and ſlew them withoute mercy
or petye. In the whiche fight, not
withſtandynge the greates ſlaughter
that they made of the Sarayns, fy-
nally was there wayne the ſaid Row-
lande, Dyuier, and many of the no-
bles of Fraunce. But this Gauclon
ſcaped not withoute punyſhement.
For he was after taken, and with o-
ther to him cōdeſcendynge, were put
to moſte cruell deth at the cytye of
Aquilarany.

Of this great victorie of Charles
in ſubduinge of Spayn, are dyuers
opynions. For the frenche cronycle
and Antoninus agree, that it ſhuld
be after that Charles was enoynted
Emperour of Rome. But maſter
Robert Gaguyn and other ſay, that
yt was before he was Emperour.

Thus this victoripous prynce re-
tounynge into Fraunce, ſubdued
thā after diuerſe cōtreys, as Gallia
Narbonenſis, Campania, or Cham-
pagn, and Benquientana, and other,

which of one mynde hadde rebelled
agayne hym.

Aboute the .xxij. yere of his regne
as moſte wyters agre, certayne per-
ſons of Italy conſpyred agayne Leo
the .iiij. then Biſhop of Rome, & hym
vngoodly entreated. But he laſſely
eſcapynge theyr daunger, came vnto
Charles, and requyred hym of his
cōfort and ayde, wherof he was not
daungerous. But when he had well
ſearched, & vnderſtoode þ the B. of Ro-
me had ſuſteyned wrong, he with all
dyligence ſped hym thither. And af-
ter he had ſubdued þ byſhoppes en-
myes, he reſtozed the ſayd byſhop to
hys former dignite. For the whiche
debe & other that he had done for the
defence of þ chyrch of Rome, he was
by the ſayd Leo or Leon ſacred or en-
oynted Emperour of Rome.

How Charles
was Empe-
rour of Rome

The c.lvi. Chapter.

Charles then thus ſacred as
Emperour, in þ yere of our
lord .viii. hundred & one, whē
he had accompliſhed hys nedes for
the weale of þ chyrch & the B. of Ro-
me, he then with great gyftes retour-
ned into Fraunce.

In this time or ſoone after as wit-
neſſeth the frenche cronycle, landed
in Fraunce the famous clerkes Al-
cinnus or Albinus, Rabanus, & Jo-
hannes, and other of the diſciples of
Beda. The which Charles receyued
with great honour, and by theyr coſ-
ſayles inſtitued and ordeyned byſſe
the ſcole of Paris, & an other at Pa-
pia in Italye before minded. Where
ſoze yt ſhulde ſeme that the ſaide Al-
cinnus was not ſent for any entrea-
tyle of peace betwene the twoo real-
mes of Fraunce and great Britayn,
as in the ſtozy of Kenulphus before
is ſhewed.

After

Of Charles.

After this tyme and season many great and noble dedes were done by this saide Charles, & by his sonnes and captaynes vnder hym, and by his commaundement.

And for the personage of so noble a pynce shuld be had in mynde, therfore dyuerse authours testyfy he was tapre & wellfaryng of body, and berne of loke & of face. His body was viij. fote long, & his armes & legges well lengthed & strengthened after the proportion of the body. His face of a spāne bryde, & his berde very long. Of hys strength wonderes are tolde. He wolde at one meale eate an hole hare or two hennys, or a hole gosse, or like quatite of other meate, & drynke there to a litle wyne myngled with water.

Among his other notable dedes, he made a brydge ouer þe ryuer of Ryne of .v. hundred pace long, by the cite of Magaunce. And he builded as witnesseth Antoninus & other, as many abbayes or monasteries as ther ben letters in þe crosse row of the A. B. C.

And in the front of cyther of þe said abbayes, after the tyme of theyr foundacyō, he pight or set a letter of gold of the value of an hundred ponde turnois, whiche is nere to the value of englysh money now curraunt. xx. mark. For a poude turnois is much lyke .ij. s. viij. d. starlyng, and a poude Darysphen is nere vpon .xl. d. starlyng. But it standeth at no certaynte, for hyghtyng & lowyng of theyr copys.

He also buylded or new reedifyed the cytye of Aquisgrany, & endowd the chyrch of our lady there w many great gyses, which yet remayne ther to this day, in which cytye and nere a boute, he vled muche to abyde & lye. And for his greates dedes & victorie

es, he deserued to be named Charles þe great. And for all his great myght & honour yet that not withstanding he was meke and lowlye in herte, & mylde & gracys to the pooze, and mercysfull to wretches & nedys, & lette his sonnes to lerne, as wel letters as marcpal & knyghtly feates. And his doughter he set to spynnyng & woll worke. And he was expert in all speeches, so that he neded none interpreters to explane or expresse to him þe messlage of straunge ambassatours. And in þe tyme of hys dyner or meales, he vled to haue red before hym lessons and epytles, and specially of the workes of saynte Austayne de Citate dei. In him was nothyng to be dyscommended, but that he helde his doughter so long vnmarrid.

This noble man Charles. iij. yeris before his deth, he hadde peace with all countreys, as well suche as were obeysant vnto þe empyre, as such as longed to his dominion of Fraunce. In the tyme of reste amonge other goodly & vertuous dedes, he made his testament, & distributed his temporal mouable goodes in .iiij. partes. wherof twoo partes he gaue to the mayntenynge of byshoppes & other mynisters of the chyrch, & for the reparaciō of chyrches & necessities to the same, and to the mayntenyng of the dyuine seruice of god, with all so ayde and sedyng of pooze & nedys people, and the thyrde parte to his children and other of his allye.

Ye shal vnderstande, this Charles had in his tresorpe specially noted before his other iewelles. .iiij. tables or bozdes, wherof thre were of syluer and the fourth of gold. In one was graue the lphenes of the cytye of Constantyne the noble, the whiche he bequath to the chyrch of Rome. In an other

The descriptiō
of Charles
the first, sonne
of his
father

Howe Charles
made a
brydge ouer
the ryuer of
Ryne.

This Charles
was a
great buylder
of Abbeyes.

Howe Charles
the first
made a
brydge ouer
the ryuer of
Ryne.

A goodly
countrie
of an
abbey.

Howe Charles
the first
made a
brydge ouer
the ryuer of
Ryne.

Charles
the first
in his
treasure

other was grauen oꝝ wrought þe ly-
kenesse of the cꝛtye of Roine, & that
he gaue to þe bꝛyshop of Keynes and
to his chꝛych. And the thꝛyd table of
syluer, wherín was grauen the map
pa mundi, and the fourth of gold he
gaue to his sonnes.

Many thynges there were & cau-
ses of the exaltynge of þe talle of this
hꝛynce. But among other, one is spe-
cially remembꝛed of myne authorout
Sagwꝛne, that the kyng of Deuon
then rulyng a great parte of þe Wy-
lent, sent vnto Charles an ambassad
honorable with many ryche presen-
tes. Amonge the whiche was an ho-
tologe oꝝ a clocke of latyn of a won-
der artfycial makynge, that at eue-
ry oure of the day and nyghte whē
the sayd clocke shuld stryke, images
on horsse backe appered oute of son-
dyꝛ places, & after departed agayne
by meane of certayne wyces.

He sente to hym also tentes of ry-
che sylke and balme naturall, with
certayne Olyfauntes, requyrynge
him of ampty and frendshipp. And
in lyke wyse dyd þe Emperour of Co-
stantyne the noble, al he vt that he in
his mynde was not well contented,
that þe B. of Rome had in þe wyse dy-
uyned the empyre, and sette suche a
man of myghte in the Roine therof.

This Charles had diuers wyues.
But of the seconde named Eldegard
he receyued. iij. sonnes, that is to say
Aetwys, Depyn, & Charles, þe whiche
Depyn he made kyng of Longobat-
des oꝝ Italy, as before is shewed.

Of this great conqueroure what
shulde I holde lenger processe? For
lyke as I before shewed, of his nota-
ble dedes myght I make a great vo-
lume, yf shuld of them shewe the cle-
renesse, & the circumstance of every
cōquest that he in his tyme achened.

But deeth that is to al persones egal
lastly toke him in his bynne daunce,
when he had ben kyng of Fraunce
with his brother & alone. xlv. yeres.
Of the whiche he ruled the empyre
as before is shewed. xliij. yeres. In þe
yere of his age as layen the frenche
cronicles. lxxij. and was buryed at
Aquisgrany with greaſt pompe. In þe
yere of our lordes incarnation. viij.
hundred and. xv. with this superscrip-
tyon vpon his tounge.

*Caroli Magni, christianissimi imperatoris
Romanoru, corpus sub hoc sepulchro cōditū est.*
Which may be englyshed as foloweth.

Of Charles the great and Empe-
rour moste chꝛysten.

Of Rome, the bodye is hed this
tounge within.

Of the forenamed sonnes of Char-
les suryned þe eldest Aetwys by na-
me, and þe other two Depyn & Char-
les dyed, before theyꝛ father.

Anglia.

Englande.

The. c. lviij. Chapter.

Wylshyrus.

B

Rightwys of þe blood
of Cerdicus fyrst kyng
of Westsaxons descen-
ded, began his reygne
ouer þe said Saxons, in
þe yere of oure lord. viij.

hundred and. lxxviij. and the. x. yere
of Charles the greaſt then kyng of
Fraunce.

This before tyme hadde maryed
one of the doughters of Offa kyng
of Mercia, as before is touched, by
whose ayde and power he put out of
his rule Egbert the sonne of Alcu-
mundus, the whiche Egbert at that
daye was an vnder kyng oꝝ ruler in
the lordshipp of Westsax, whiche
Egbert was descended of þe blood of
the holy Genulphus, of whome som
parte of the storye ys declared in the
xxv.

xxv. chapter of the. b. booke of Pollicronica. And after he was thus of Bygthicus expelled, he sayled into Fraunce, and there exercised him selfe in feates of warre with the knyghtes of Charles court, duringe the lyfe of the sayde Bygthicus.

About the.ij. yeare of this Bygthicus, was sene in greate Bytayne a wonder syghte. For sodenly as me walked in the strete, croslys lyke vnto blood fell vpon theyr clothes, and blood fell from heuen like dropes of rayne.

This after some expositours, be-tokened the commynge of the Danes into this lande, the whiche entered shortly after. For as wytnes-seth Pollicronica, aboute the. ix. pere of Bygthicus the Danes fyrste entered this lande. In defence wherof, this sayde kynge sent forth his stewart of houtholde with a small company which shortly was slayne. But by the strength of Bygthicus and the other kynges of Saxons, they were compelled to vyde the land for that tyme and season.

Bygthicus thus well & knyghtly rulyng his land, his wyfe named Ethelburga not with him contented as she ought to be, soughte dyuerse wayes and meanes how she myghte byng her lord out of lyfe, so that fynally she poisoned hym with manny other of hys houtholde meyny. Wherfore she feryng punishment, fledde into Fraunce, and by suche fredshyppe as she there hadde, was well cheryshed in Charles court sur-named the greate.

Of her yt is told, that whan he had hadde some informacyon of the vn-stableness of this womans condycyons, he at that season beyng a wy-dowar, vpon a season in passynge

of the tyme with her, sayde, nowe I put to youre chose whither ye wyll haue me vnto your wedded lord, or elles my sonne stadyng here in your presence. And hym that you chose, hym shall you haue and enioye for your husbade. But she chose the sonne and lette the father. Then sayde the kynge, yt thou haddest chosen me, thou shuldest haue hadde my sonne. But for thou hast forsaken me thou shalt haue nother of vs. And after he closed her in an abbey, where in pro-cesse a leude man kept with her such company, that she was vorded that place, and after demeaned her so by-croulye, that in processe of tyme she fell in suche pouerte, that she dyed in great penurye and myserye. For the whiche mysdeemeanure of this wo-man, that she had innaturally slayne her lord and husbade, the kynge of Angles & specially of Westsaxons, wolde not suffer the wyues to be cal-led Queues, nor yet suffer them to sette by them in places of greate ho-nour or kynghely sette by a long time after. Thus as before is shewed by the impossounge of his owne wife, dyed the kynge Bygthicus, when he had ruled the Westsaxons after most concoorde of wyters by the terme of, xvij. yeares.

The. c. lviij. Chapter.

Ebertus the sonne of Alcu-mundus as before is shew-ed, beganne his regne ou-er the Westsaxons in the peare of grace. vij. hundred. lxx. and. xv. and the. xxvij. yeare of Charles the great then kynge of Fraunce. This as be-fore is sayde was dyuen out of the lande of Bytayne by the strength of Bygthicus. But he haupnge knowlege of his deth, spedde out of Fraunce, and in so knyghtly wyse,

Bygthicus
poisoned
his own
wife.

Ebertus

hym

Bytayne
strete.

hym demeaned, that he obtayned the regyment and gouernance of the a- boue sayde kyng.

Bernulphus kyng of Mercia had this Egbert in derpyon, and made thereof dyuerse scoffys and taping tymes, & which he susteyned for a tyme. But when he was some deale stablyshed, and hadde proued the myndes and hartes of his subiectes, he lastely assembled his knyghtes, and gaue to hym a battaple in a place called Clin dome, in the prouynce of Hampton. And all be it that in that fyghte was greute dyuersyte of nomber, as. vi. or viii. agayne one, yet Egbert had the victoipe. For his knyghtes were lene, megre, pale, and longe bryethed, so & they myghte endure to fyghte. But Bernulphus knyghtes were fatte, corpulent, and shortheathed, so that they were sone ouercome wpyth swet & shorthe labour.

Here is to be noted, that after the deth of Offa kyng of Mercia or myddell Englande (of whome somewhat is touched in the story of Kenulphus) reigned hys sonne Egbertus, and after Egbertus reigned Kenulphus, or Kenwolphus, the whych Kenwolphus was father to the holy martyr Kenelme, and to. ii. sayde byrgins Quindreda and Burgenulda or Ermenilda. And after Kenwolphus succeeded his sonne Egbert, and after Egbert succeeded Colwolphus, and after hym succeeded Bernulphus before named.

Then to retourne agayne to Egbert, the whych when he hadde as before is sayde ouercome Bernulphus he sealed that lordshyppe into hys hande, And that done, he made warre vpon the Kentyshe Saxons, and at length in lyke wyse of them obtayned victoipe. And as wpytnelleth Polycronica, he also subdued the Northum-

bres, and caused the kynges of these thre kyngdomes to lye vnder him as tributaries, or toynd them to hys kyngdome, as testifieth the authour of the flour of hystrytes.

This Egbert also wanne from the Byrons or Walshmen the towne of Chester, that they hadde kepte possession of, vntill that daye. For the whiche victoipes thus by hym obtayned, he shortly after called a counsaile of his lordes at Wynchester: and there by they aduises crowned hym kyng and chiefe lord of thys lande, that to fore thys daye is called Byrtayne, and sente then out into all coostes of thys lande hys commaundementes: and commissyons, chargynge straitly that from that daye forthward, the Saxons shuld be called Anglis, and the lande Anglia.

About the. xxiij. yere of the regne of Egbert, whiche shulde be the yere of our Lord as meaneth Polycronica. viii. hundred and. xix. Kenelmus before mynded his sonne of Kenwolphus was admytted for kyng of Mercia, beyng then a chyld of the age of. vii. yeres. The whiche by treason of his sister Quendreda was slayn in a thicke wood, by a titaunt called Hestertus.

In the. xxix. yere of the regne of Egbert, or after the Englyshe cronycle Eobryht, the Danes with a great hooste entered the seconde tyme thys lande, and spoyled the yle of Shep in Kente or nere to Kente. Whereof hearynge the kyng Egbert assembled his people, and met with them at a place called Carrum.

But he wanne of that fyght lytel woishyppe, for the Danes compelled hym and his knyghtes to forsake the felde. And by presumption of that victoipe: they drew westwarde, and made a confederate wpyth weste By-

When thys realm losse the name of Byrtayne.

Don't end

tong that liued in seruage, by whose power they assailed Egbertus landes, and dyd muche harme in many places of his dominyon & elles where so that after this dape, they were continuallye abidynge in one place of the realme of Englande or other, till the tyme of Hardeknypus laste kynge of the Danys bloode, so that many of them were marped to Englyshe women, and many that nowe bene or in tyme passed were called Englyshe men, are disceded of them. And albe it that they were many and sondrye tymes dyscuen oute of that lande, and chased from one countrey vnto another, as after ye shall heare, yet that notwithstanding they euer gathered newe strengthes and power, so that they abode still within the lande.

Of the kynge of these Danys, and of what people they be dyscended, byuerse opynions of wyrters theare be, which nowe I passe ouer, for so much as I intend to shewe somewhat of the in this worke folowynge.

The death of
Egbert.

Then it foloweth in the story, the tyme continuynge of the persecucion of these foresayde Paganys and Danes, Egbert or Edbryght dyed, when he hadde well and nobely ruled the westsaxons and other the moze parte of Englande, by the terme after most wyrters of. xxxvii. yeres, and was buryed at Wynchester as sayth Guydo and left after hym a sonne named Athenuolphus.

Francia.

The. clix. Chapter.

Lodouicus.



Lodouicus: the fyrste of that name, and sonne of Charlys the greate, beganne hys reygne ouer the realme of Fraunce, and also hys Emppye ouer the Ro-

maynes, in the yere of grace eyght hundred and syftene, and the twentye yere of Egbertus then kynge of Westsaxons. Thys for his mekenesse was called Lewys the mylde or meke.

In tyme of his fathers decease, he was occupped in Guyan, the whyche he befoze tyme hadde the rule and dominyon of, by commaundemente of his father. But when he was aduertised of his fathers deeth, he anon sped hym towarde Aquisgran, so that the xxx. dape after hys departynge out of Guyan he came vnto the foresayde cite, where he was met with all the nobles and barons of Fraunce.

And fyrste or he medled or toke vpon hym any cure or charge of hys owne busynesse: he with moste deuocyon caused great obseruaunces & muche diuine seruyce to be done about the pulture of his father. Whiche obseruaunce and prayers synysshed and ended, the sayde Lewys commaunded to come befoze hym byuerse Ambassadors, that frome byuerse princes were sente vnto his father Charlys, and to theym gaue aunsweres, concernynge theyr legacyons and messages, and then proceded vnto the nedes of this realme for the weale thereof and of hys people.

Where in he beyng busyed, worde was brought to hym of an ambassad royal, that was comen from Michael the emperoure of Constantyne the noble. Agayne the whiche he sente certayne of his lordes to receyue theym, and so with all honour to bring them vnto hys presence. Of whole commynge: the entente was, to presente hym with certayne ryche gyftes, and to desyre hym of his ampte and frendshyppe.

Also soone after came vnto hym messen-

messengers from the Veneuntayns offerynge vnto his magnificens obligacions and bondes to be hys true lyeges, and to paye to hym yerely in waie of trespoute fyre thousande ducates of golde. A ducate is of sondy valys, but the lest in value is. lxx. s. iiii. pens halfe peny, & the beste. lxx. s. vii. pence. Then the Swiscons of Swarss that were so diuerse of condicpon, began to murmoure and rebell agayne this Lewys. Wherfore of he wolde assemble any people agayne them, he sente thither certayne personnes to knowe the cause of theyr rebellpon.

And when he was enfourmed, that it was for the takynge away fro them of certayne landes and possessyons by hys father, he then restored agayne the sayde landes: and so reconcyled the countrey to hys subieccyon. For this dede som of his lordes grudged, and sayde, suche myldece was not to be vsed to people of suche obstynacy and sterneesse, but to haue forced them by dynte of swoorde to haue lyued in due obedpence.

In this passetyme died Stephan the fourth of that name byshoppe of Rome, after whose death was elected to that dignyte the firste Pascal, with out consente or knowlege of this Lewys, and somedeale to the discontentynge of hys mynd and pleasure. But in shortlye tyme after he receyued suche wordes and presentes from the sayde byshop of Rome that he was well satisfied and pleased. And for at those daies in Fraunce was bled of prestes and men of the church pzeppouse and shewynge besture, and golden & rich starynge girdelles, wyth rynges and other oynamentes of golde, the sayde Lewys purchased of the byshoppe of Rome a correccyon for all such as vsed suche discomynate apparell, and

caused them to bse and weare browne and sad coloures, accordynge to theyr honoures and sadnesse.

This Lewys hadde thye sonnes, that is to saye Lothayze, whome he made felowe of the Emppye, Depyn the seconde, whome he made duke of Gupan, and Lowys the thyrde, vnto whome he betoke the rule of Bayton. To thys pongeste sonne worde was broughte, that Bernarde a ruler in Italy had assembled a greate power, and with the aydes of two other capytaynes named Jylps and Kepner, the whiche Charlys the great by hys lyfe greatly fauoured, occupied the strengthes of the mountaynes, and intended to kepe the countrey of Italye from the subieccyon of hys father the emperoure. Wherof he geuyng his father knowlege, strong power was gathered, as well by the father as by Lothayze his sonne, and spedde them towarde the mountaynes. But when the sayde Bernarde was ware of the emperours commynge wyth so great a strengthe, and considered his lacke of power to mayntayne hys purpose, wyth also the great mercey and pytye that he knewe to be in the emperoure he submytted hym holye to his grace and mercy, and discouered vnto hym the authoures of that rebellpon, the which this Lewys caused vnder safe keepynge to be hadde vnto the Cytie of Aquisgran. The whiche rebellys were the byshop of Sylvan, & byshop of Cremoun, and & byshop of Dyleaunce. The kynge passed all the wynter folowing at the foresayd cytie, and lastely caused to be broughte befoze hym the foresayde transgressoures, & examyned the cpycumstaunce of the foresayde treason, and after remytted them to the tpgoure of Lewys, wher by pzoecesse, they were condemned to p.ii. dethe

Rebelles.

The tynge of the layes

death as many of them as were tem-
porall men.

Then the emperour haupng com-
passyon of the soynamed Bernarde,
for so muche as he was the sonne of
Deppri laste kyng of Italy, and hys
nere kynnesman, transmuted the sen-
tence of death vnto perpetuall of pri-
son and losynge of his syghte. But
for the sayde Bernarde, Repner, and
other, chace rather to dye then to lyue
in prison wth that defomytpe, they
passed by dynt of the sworde, and wer
beheaded wchyn or nere to the sayde
cytte of Aquisgran. And the sayde
Byschoppes were depriued of theyr
dygnities and put into pryuate hou-
ses of religyon.

The iudg-
ment of the
byschoppes.

And whyle thys Lewys was oc-
cupped in lytell Bytayne, in subdu-
ynge of that countrey, Lothayre the
eldest sonne of this Lewys was sente
to rule the landes of the empyre.
Wher he bare hym right nobly, and
executed diuers actes for the weale of
the empyre. But in this season two
frendes of hys father and hys, were
for certayne crimes to them put, most
cruelly condemned to vyle death w
in the cytie of Rome. Wherof heryng
Lothayre then beyng at the cytie of
Bap, sente word thereof to hys fa-
ther in all hasty wyse, the whiche was
like to haue turned þe bishop of Rome
to greate trouble, yf he by polypke &
wyle meanes hadde not shortly pacy-
fied the mater. That one of the fore-
sayde two personnes so condemned
was scrbe to the byshoppe of Rome
and that other was donat.

Ye shall vnderstande that this Le-
wys had two wyues, by the fyfthe he
had the soynamed thye sonnes, and
of the second he receiued a sonne, and
named hym Charlys, the whych whē
he came to mannes stature, was sur-

named Charlys the bolde. He loued
entperly this Charlys, and wolde of-
ten kysse hym in the ptesence of hys
bryethen. For the whiche they enuyed
theyr sayde bryother, and also dysdai-
ned theyr father, as here after shall
appere.

Thus in pcesse of tyme Lewys
gaue vnto this Charlis the countrey
of Acustria or Normandy, the whiche
caused greate dyscencion amonge
the bryethen, and also for thys and o-
ther causes, Lotharius toke party a-
gayne his father.

The. xii. Chapter.

This seconde wyfe of Le-
wys was named Indith,
the whych was accused to
the byshop of Rome to be
within such degre of ally-
aunce to her husband, that she might
not lawfully contynewe hys wyfe.
Wherfore contrary to the wyl of Le-
wis, by the labour of some byshoppes
and other lordes of Fraunce, she was
deuorced from him, & put into a house
of nunnes, & there stragghely kepte.

But Lewys for a tyme susceyned
this inturpe, to the ende þe he myghte
knowe whyther his sonnes fauoured
the cause or not. But in pcesse of
tyme, when he hadde experyence of
hys frendes, and of hys sonnes, he
then assembled to hym a stronge host
and reconquered his wyfe malgre to all
hys enemyes. For the whiche dede
Lothayre, wth dyuerse of the Ba-
rons of Fraunce, assembled theyr
people, and intended to depriue Le-
wys from all imperpall and kyngely
dignyte. Wherfore Lewys fearynge
his sonne and his assistance, and also
for the entente that he myghte assem-
ble the strengthe of þe empyre: he rode
vnto Magunze. And after he hadde
purueyed and garnysshed hys rety-
newe

newe, he retourned towarde fraunce and mette with some of his entymes, and theym subdued, and so kepte on hys iourney, tyll he came to Aquy-granp, where he rested hym and hys people.

Thus contynuyng thes dyscen-eyon, the sonnes sent wrytynge to the byshop of Rome then beyng named Gregoꝝ the fourth, requirynge hym of ayde and counceyle to deuise a concoorde and peace betwene their father and them. At whose requeste, and for to cause a naturall charyte to be quykened bytwene the father and his.iii. sonnes, he came in his proper persone into fraunce, and endeuoyd hym to the bittermoste of his wrytys to agree to the sayde parties. In the tyme of this entreaty made by the byshop of Rome, I can not saye for what cause many of the lordes, on þe partye of Letwys forsoke hym, and fled to the sonnes partye, so that the emperour was in great feare of hym selfe, and of hys persone. When Letwys had sene hys frendes thus in tyme of hys nede refuse and flee from hym, and left hym in great feare and daunger of straungers, he then thoughte better for hym to putte hym selfe vnder the rule and tutyon of hys owne chyldren, than to abide the doute of the sayde straungers. Wherefore he sent vnto his said sonnes, requirynge them to prouyde for his safegarde and assuring of his person, and that he were not there oppressed or murdred.

And within short space after this message sent to them without answer of them agayne receyued, he rode towarde them smally accompanied.

Wherof then Lothayze and hys brother haupnge warnynge in all horrible wyse encountered hym, and receyued hym vpon theyr knees, and so co-

ueyed hym with all reuerence vnto theyr paulson or tent. And after for a begynnyng of a peace to be stablished betwene hym and them, he to satisfye theyr myndes, refused the fornamed Indith, & closed her in a place of religyon called Coxton, as testifieth myne authoure mayster Roberte Sagwynne. But the frenche booke sayeth that this dede was done by ferde ryke byshoppe of Vtryke, wherfore he was after piteously slayne by such as fauoured the Quene, and not all without her cosent, as wytnesseth the sayde cronycle.

And when Letwys had in this and other thynges agreed vnto hys sonnes, and thoughte hym selfe to be in suretye of theyr ampte and fauoures sodenly he was conueyed vnto the monasterye of Saynt Medyrd: or as sayeth the frenche booke, he was conueyed to a towne called in frenche, Melanguye, with hys yonge sonne Charlys.

And that done, the sayde thre sonnes deuoyded theyr fathers possessions amonge theym thre. That is to saye, Lothayze the eldest, hadde to his porcyon: the landes of the Emppye, Depyn, the countrey of Guyan, and to Letwys the yongeste, fell the countrey of Bayon.

Whych mysery of the emperoure when the bishop of Rome had beholden and sene, he with great moornyng retourned into Italy & so vnto Rome In whych tyme of pylsonment of the emperour the sayde Letwys made dytties and pytelles of great sorow & lamentacio, to the ensample of all earthly pynces, and to the entent that hys sonnes shulde of hym haue the more compassyon and pytye. The whiche I ouer passe for lengthe of tyme, and rather for in tyme of imprisonment

pyng and de-
sence of his
sonnes.

How Letwys
the emperour
with his yong
sonne Char-
les was impry-
soned by his
owne sonnes.

How the pos-
sessions of þe
Emperour
was deuoyded
amonge his
thre sonnes.

How Letwys
the emperour
was impry-
soned by his
owne sonnes.

of Edward the seconde: called Carnaruan was by hym made a lyke complaynt, wherof when tyme and place cometh, I entende to expresse some parte therof.

How the sonnes of Lewys caused theyr father to be deposed.

When Lewys had thus a season remayned in pylon, for so muche as the comons shoulde not thynke that thys shulde be done by the authoptye of the thre sonnes onely: therfore they caused a counsaile to be called at the cytie of Compeyne, & there by theyr meanes and laboures caused theyr father by authoptye of spirytual and tempoꝛall Loꝛdes, to be dyscharged of all rule and dominyon, as well of the empire as of þe realme of fraunce by authoptye of the sayde counsaile oꝛ parlyament, and after caused hym to renounce all his tempoꝛal habyte, and to become a munke in the monastery of saynt Marke, where he was left of his sonne Lotharye, not without sure watche and keepyng.

How the emperour Lewys was compelled to be a munke.

But full often it is sene, that whē the earthlye power of man fayleth oꝛ weaketh, god of his greete mercy the repentaunte synner to grace calleth, and hym by his deuine power abyeth and strengtethe, & so he dyd thys Lewys. For after this mysery and tribulacion thus to hym fallen, the people in dyuerse places of this lande murmured and grudged very soꝛe agayn the innatural dealing of the sonnes agayne their father.

Howe one Guiliam and Egebard oꝛ Edgare, wote about the dyscharging agayne of the emperour.

In these dayes was a greete ruler in fraunce named Guiliam, and thwarde oꝛ constable of that lande, the which with one Egebard oꝛ Edgare a man of greete byrth and alpaunce, counsailed togyther for þe enlargyng of the emperour. And lastly with aide of theyr frendes, assembled a greete people. And then dyue vnto them, ii. noble men of Burgoyne: called Bar-

nard & Guetyn, the which sometyme had ben well cheryshed with þe emperour Lewys. At this season Lotharye had rested hym for þe moze parte at Aquysgrany. But whē he hard of þe assemblynge of these soꝛelapde loꝛdes, he spedde hym towarde Darps. And when he was thither comen, the soꝛelapde loꝛdes sent vnto him two noble men Rowlande and Gantelyne, the which made request vnto Lotharye, in the name of the other Loꝛdes, that it wolde like hym to restore his father vnto hys former dygnyte, with other thynge concernyng theyr legacyon. To the whiche two loꝛdes Lotharye gaue aunswere, that of his fathers restorynge to hys frysle oꝛ former dygnyte, no manne luyunge wolde be theret moze sayne then he wolde.

The manner that Lotharye made for the dyscharging of his father.

But the depoynting of hym was done by the hole authoptye of the lande. Wherfore yf he shulde be agayne restoyred, it muste be by the same authoptye, and not by hym onely. All be it that they myghte knowe of hys benyvolence and sauoure that he bare towarde hys father, he willed them to stande a parte, whyle he had some communicacyon of hys loꝛdes for þe same mater. By reason wherof were it for feare oꝛ for sauoure, þe emperour was shortly after put at hys lybertye, and restoyred to all hys firste honoure and dignite, and then with great honoure conueyed to a Cytye oꝛ towne called Ciricpake, where mette with hym his other two sonnes Depyn and Lewys and there rested hym certayne dayes in makyng all feast and ioye, and after rode vnto Aquysgrany, and there rested an other season.

The manner howyng of the emperour by his dayes.

In which tyme of his there beyng, was brought vnto hym from þe place where he had bene prysoner, his wife Andryth. But when Lotharye knew that

that

that hys father had her agayne rece-
ued contrarie to hys mynde and ple-
sure, he in wythe and dyspleasure en-
tered the countrey of Burgoyne, and
made in it sharpe and cruell warre,
and executed therein many spoilinges
and other inordinate deades. The
whych cruelly to withstande and let
hys father with hys sonne Depyn
with a great host sped hym thither-
warde. But anon as he had know-
ledge thereof, mistrustynge his strength
he yelded him vnto his fathers grace
and mercy, whom the meke father re-
ceaued and forgauo to hym hys tres-
passe.

And after that of hym and dyuerse
of hys Loydes he had taken assured
othes and other sureties, he than sent
the sayde Lothay into Italle with
a certayne number of knyghtes, to de-
fende the countrey frome daunger of
enemyes, a strengthynge of the stray-
tes and mountaynes.

And that with other thynges or-
dered and doone for the weale of hys
realme, Lewys than toke vpon hym
to ryde aboute hys lande, to the intent
that he myghte be somewhat enfor-
mede of the rule of hys officers, and
how the countreyes were ruled by the
rulers of them. And where he found
anye misgouernaunce, he punished
the executers thereof, as well the By-
shoppes as other, as farre as hys au-
thorite in that behalfe stretched.

Than Andwith considerynge the
Emperoure fell into greate age, and
her sonne and hys, Charles by name
had as yet no suffyciente landes nor
possellions to mayntayne any estate
with: he compassed manye wayes in
her mynde, howe she myghte achue
her intente, and to bynge it to good
purpose. Wher fynally by counsell
of her frendes, to the end to purchase

the loue and fauoure of Lothay, he
asked of her loyde and husband, that
the sayde Lothay myghte be tutout
and gyder of hys sounge sonne Char-
les. Of this request the Emperoure
was very glad, & graunted her, her pe-
tycon. And so it fell soone after, cer-
taine messengers came to the Empe-
roure frome Lothay his sonne. To
the whych when Lewys had geuen
answere to such maters as they were
sent for, and geuen vnto them other
instruccions, he sente them for the a-
gayne, and with them certayne other
to wyl hys sayde sonne to come vnto
hym in as goodly wyse as he myghte
But at that season he excused him by
sychenes, and whā he was recouered
he fayned another excuse.

In thys meane tyme, woide was
broughte to the Emperoure, that his
sonne Lothay had greued þ church
of Rome, and taken frome it certayn
possellions. Wherewith Lewis be-
ynge befoze amoued, sente vnto hys
sonne commaundyng hym in sharpe
wordes, that he shulde haue in mynd
the oth befoze by hym made, and that
he shulde in excheuyng hys dysplea-
sure, make restytucyon of al thynges
that he befoze hadde taken frome the
church, the whych commaundemente
Lothay promysed to obey in al wyse
And where Lewys was determyned
to haue goone to Rome, to haue sene
the sayde promesse fulfilled, and also
to haue spoken with the B. of Rome
for dyuerse maters nedefull for the
churche, he was let by the occasion of
Danis or Roymannes, that then had
newly invaded the lādes of Fraunce
the whych he shortly after expelled &
draue oute of hys landes.

And that done, the Emperour rode
vnto Aquysgrany, where by the stem-
des of Judith and other of the nobles
of

of Fraunce, the Emperoure gaue vn-
to hys yongest sonne Charles a por-
cion of the Emppire: which after shal
moze clerely apere. And sone after at
a counsaile holden at Cytysake, be-
fozenamed in the ptesence of his sone
Lewys, he gaue to hym the order of
knyghthod, and adourned hym with
kynges clothyng.

And ouer all thys in the ptesence
of many lordes of Fraunce, he gaue
to the sayde Charles the hole coun-
try of Newstrya that nowe is named
Rozmaundye. Of whych honoure
and gyftes though hys mother were
iourous and gladde, yet hys brother
Lewys was therewith nothyng con-
tented, whych of Indyth and of her
frendes was well apperceaued and
known.

Wherefore as she befoze tyme hadde
done, than of newe she made request
vnto hys lord and husbnde, that he
wolde of hys mooste especyall grace
graunte vnto her, þat Lothary myghte
haue the gouernaunce of her sonne
Charlys, the whych of hym was the
seconde tyme graunted. Upon which
graunte thus to her made, the Empe-
roure sent vnto his sonne Lotharye
pleasaunt letters, wyllyng hym in al
goodly hast to resorte vnto hys court.
The which obeyng his fathers com-
maundement, returned into Fraunce
shortly after þat recyte of the sayde let-
ters: & came vnto hys father to the cy-
ty of Aernayse, of whome he was ior-
ously receaued. And after he hadde
a season dwelled with the Emperour
he gaue vnto hym the country of Au-
strache, the whych countrey as shal
after be shewede in thys Lotharyus
story, was after his name named Lo-
tayne. But a parte of the sayde pro-
uynce or countrey that stretchede to-
warde Hungrye, the sayd Lewys ga-

ue vnto hys yongest sonne Charlys.
And immediately after thys gyfte
befoze many lordes conformed, the
Emperour in ptesence of the sayd lordes,
toke Charlys by the hande, and
deliuered hym vnto hys brother Lo-
tharye, willinge and straghtly char-
gyng hym that he shulde take hym
vnto hys cure, and be to hym as cur-
oule as he woulde be vnto hys owne
chylde, and to guyde hym and hys po-
tellyons, as the father shulde guyde
the chylde. And to Charles he com-
maunded that he shulde take & obeye
hym as hys father, and loue and wo-
rshipp hym as hys brother, the whych
byppon ether party was promysed to
be obserued. And shortly after the
sayd Lothary with hys brother Char-
les, toke lycense of father and mother
and returned agayne into Italie.

Aboute thys tyme dyed Depyn þe
seconde sonne of Lewis, and duke of
Gupan, the whych yf all shulde be
expresed, put his father to great tro-
ble and vexacion, wherefore for hym
was made the lesse mournyng. This
lefte after him a sonne named Depin
of whome the story somewhat speketh
after. But nowe I wyl retorne to Le-
wys the thyrde sonne of the Empe-
roure.

The clxxi. Chapter



Forthe yf it is that when
the yonger brother Le-
wys sawe the bounty of
hys father so largely ex-
tende towardes hys two
byethren, and to him no
thyng he was therewith in hys myn-
de greatly dyscontent, all be it that
for the tyme he kept it secreete to hym
selfe. But when he was departed
fromme hys father, and returned to
hys owne Lordshyppe, he gathered
then a myghty powere, and began to
make

make warre vpon the dwellers nere aboute the Rhyne. Wherfore the Emperour wyth a conueniente power approched vnto the cite of Rodange, and sente from thence vnto hys sayd sonne wordes of reconcylpacyon, by meane wherof the sayde Letwys put hym holy in the grace of hys father and was to hym reconcyled wythout sheddingge of mans bloude.

But while the Emperoure was besyde at the cite of Cleremounte in þe countrey of Auerne, to set a dyrection amonge the Gascones, for oppynions that were recyd amonge them for the sonne of Wyppen there lately kyng of duke dyscesed, whych sonne as aboue is sayde was also named Wyppen, and there aboute hadde taken greate payne and labour, thither to hym tydynge were newely brought that thys sayde sonne Letwys hadde wyth the Barons of Wyppons, and wth the Thorynges made allpauce, and was entred into Germany, and there in, made warre in moost cruell wyse wyth whych tydynge Letwys was so greuoussly passyoned, that to hys greate age was by meane of thys vnkynde anger, fyled a sykkenesse that lefte hym not while he lyued.

After yet thys not wythstandyng, he lyke a strong harted knyght shewed forth a good and comfortable countenance. And after he hadde in knyghtly wyse prepared all thyng necessarye to the warre, he spedde hym towarde Almayne, and contynued hys iourney tyll he came vnto Thorynge, where a season he rested hym and hys people tyll he myghte be better assured where hys sonne Letwys rested hym. But the sonne haupnge knowledge of the great power of hys father, and also beyng in dyspayre of purchasyng of mercy, consydeyrnge

hys manye offences: shedde by the countrey of Blauoupe, and so by that conuies returned into Bayon or Bawery and so escaped the daunger of hys father.

Then the Emperoure being surely enforemed of the scape of hys sonne, helde on hys iourney tyll he came to Bagoune. And after came vnto the cite of Vermayse, where he called a counsaile of hys Lordes spyrituall and tempozal, and ordayned there by uerse thynges for the state of the Emperre. And moare intended to haue done, but sykkenesse increased so soze in hym, that by the space of .xl. dayes he toke no tempozall sustenance. But in that tyme he vsed often to take the blessed sacramente, the whych as he often sayd, strengthened both the soule and the bodye.

Then he sent for Lothayze to come vnto hym, the whych wythoute taryng obayed hys commaundement and abode still wyth hym.

Of thys Letwys Polycronicon maketh a short reherfall, and sayth that by hys fyrste wyfe named Harmyngarde, he had .iii. sonnes, Lothayze, Wyppen and Letwys. The fyrst beyng felow wth hys father of the Emperre was crowned of Piscal B. of Rome vpon an Ester daye, and he was also kyng of Italy. And Wyppen he made duke of Gasconie and Guyan. And Letwys was made ruler of Bawery.

And by hys second wyfe named Indyth and daughter of þe duke of Bayon, he hadde Charls the Bald, to whome he gaue the countrey of Burgoyne as the sayde Polycronica sayth. And for thys Letwys was mylde, he was often troubled of his owne men and of other, tyll he delte wth them moze sharpe and wysely, and ruled the people moze straghtly.

Howe Letwys the Emperour hys sonne fled at the coming of hys father

Howe þe Emperoure called a counsell.

In exhortaci-
on by the
Emperour to
a poyse, by
shop.

The malice
of the Com-
mon.

It is there also shewed, that when
thys Lewys had promoted a poyse
man named Feederpke to the see of
Utyrke, and to hym hadde geuen
saydde and good exhortacion, that he
shulde folowe the stableness of his an-
tercessours, and that he shulde pur-
pose the sothe and truthe withoute
exceptyon of personnes, and punishe
mydoeres, as well the ryche as the
pooze: the sayde byshoppe shulde an-
swere to him and saye, I besyche thy
maiestye sy Emperour to take in pa-
cyence, that I may disclose to the that
thinge that hath long walowed and
turned in my mynde. Waxe thy plea-
sure sayde the Emperoure. I praye þ
sy Emperoure shewe me thy mynde
whither is moze accordaunce, to attai-
ne thys kyng here ptesente fyrste
at the heade or at the taylor. The Em-
peroure answered shortly and sayd
at the heade the fyrste shalbe fyrste
attained. So it is lorde Emperoure
sayde the byshop, that christen sayth
maye cause the to cease of thynne er-
roure, that thy subiectes be not bol-
ded to folowe thy mydoynge. Wher-
fore fyrste forsake thou thy unlawful
wedloke, that thou haste made with
Judyth thy nere kynnes woman.

In popysh
sense.

Howe the by-
shop was flay-
ed by the me-
nes of þ Em-
perours wyfe

By meane of those wordes þ kyng
was receyved, and left the company
of his wyfe, till he hadde purchasyd
a lyece of the byshoppe of Rome. And
the Emperoure forgave the sayde by-
shop al trespasses, but the woman by-
red two knyghtes that slewe hym in
hys venymentes, when he had ended
hys malice.

After this the Emperesse was false-
ly accusede of a wronge crime, and
made a menchon But the same yere
the Emperoure delivred her frome
that habyte, when he had suffycent-
ly proued the sayde crime to be false.

Then to retorne where I leftte,
whan thys Lewys had longe lyen in
thys agonious sicknes, and knewe
wel þ he intended nothyng, but fe-
blede moze and moze, he commaun-
ded hys irwelles to be broughte be-
fore hym. Wherof by hys owne hand
he gaue a parte vnto the churche of
Rome, and to Lotharyus hys sonne
there ptesente he gaue hys Crowne
and hys sworde, commaundyng him
strayghtlye vpon hys blyssyng that
he shulde haue in honour hys mo-
ther Judyth, and that to Charlis his
brother he shulde owe true loue and
ampte, and that he shulde him & hys
landes defende to the uttermost of
hys power.

Then the Lordes spyrтуall and
temporal, and specially the archby-
shoppe of Beawes, made a lamenta-
ble requeste to the Emperour for his
sonne Lewys, that he wolde accepte
hym to hys grace and mercy, and to
forgiue hym his insolent and wan-
ton wyldedades. Wherof when the
Emperoure harde, he fell in such we-
pyng, that he myghte not speake of
a good whyle after.

And when he had refrayned hym
thereto, he remembred to þ lordes the
many and great benyfites þ he hade
doone to hym, and the innaturall un-
kynndes that the sayde Lewys hadde
agayn shewed vnto hym, & how oft
 tymes he had pardoned his unkynde
sonnes trespasses. And specially al this
not withstanding, he was at þ hour
in perfect charyte with hym, and for-
gaue hym as he trusted to be forgiue
prayinge the lordes there ptesente,
and specially chargyng the sayd by-
shoppe, that he wolde shewe vnto his
sayde sonne that great daunger that
he was in agaynst god for the dysple-
sures done to him, and specially that
he

How the Em-
perours sonne
was flay-
ed.

he was a cause of the abjigement of
Wortynge of hys dapes.

Then to byngge thys story to effect
wherof if I wold declare the special-
tyes therof, wolde aske a longe tyme
(for ye shal vnderstande that these ii
stories of the grete Charlys and of
Leuys, occuppe in frenche of leuys
of grete scantlyn ouer. lxxiii. Where
foze I conclude that he dyed lyke a
good chrystyan wyse, when he had
bene Emperour of Rome & kynge of
Fraunce by the terme of. xxi. yeares
and was buryed wth grete solemp-
nyte at Hawes or at Mettys by his
mother Hyldegarte as sayth Map-
ster Rothe Sagwynne, in the peare of
hys age. lxxiii. leuynge after hym the
foresayde thre sonnes Lothayre, Le-
wis and Charlys the Ballyd.

Anglia.

The clxi. Chapter.



Deulphus or E-
thelwoulphus the
sonne of Egeber-
tus, beganne hys
ragnye ouer the
Westsaxons, or An-
gls in the year of

our lordes incarnation. viii. hundred
and. xxxii. and the. xvi. peare of Leu-
ys the mylde then kynge of Fraunce

Thys in his youth was wyllyng
to be a prest, and was entred the or-
der of subdeacon..

But thereafter by dyspensacon
of Pascall the fyrste of that name by
woppe of Roome, he was maried to
Osburga a womanne of lowe by the
By whome he hadde foure sonnes,
that is to meane Ethelwalde, Ethel-
berte, Ethelwode, and Alured, the
whych after theyre father taigned as
kynge of Englande th at one after
other, as after shal apere.

Thys Adeulphus after he hade a
certayne tyme bene kynge, wente to
Rome, and toke wth hym hys yon-
gest sonne Alured or Alphrede, and
tarped there by the space of a yeare.

In the whych season he repayred
the Baron scole, the whych befoze ty-
me was there founden by Ossa king
of Mercia, as Guido sayth and other
but moze betely of Iue king of West
saxons, as sayeth the authoure of the
Floure of hystories. And for that he
graunted of euery house of hys king-
dome a penye, as in hys storye is be-
foze shewed

But thys scole was soze decayed,
and the house thereof lately byente,
the whych thys Adeulphus newlye
repayred, and set in better order then
it befoze was vled.

Thys kynge also to refourme the
greuouse correccions that he sawe
there executed to Englyshe men for
spyytuall offences, as in wearyngs
of yrons and gupues: he graunted of
euery fyre house of hys lande. i. d. as
Iue foresayde had done.

By the whych sayinge yt shulde
seme, that by these two kynge shuld
be graunted vnto Rome. ii. d. of euery
fyre house throughe theyr lande.

But that maye not be soo vnder-
stande, for hys Rome Scot is gathe-
ryd of euery house a penye wthout
moze.

Wherefoze it must folowe, that it
is mysse taken of the wyrters, that al-
ledge thys dede to that one kinge for
that other. Howbeit, it maye stande
by reason, that Iue made the fyrste
graunte, and thys kynge after con-
firmed the same. But the authoure
of Cronyca cronicarum saythe, that
thys Adeulphus graunted to saynte
Peter these sayde Peter penye, & spe-
keth no word of Iue nor of non other

Thy Roome
scot, who gra-
unted it.

Thys Adeulphus had moche deuocyon the righte knowlege of god: the vnderstandynge.

It is also shewed of this kyng by Polycronyca, that he shuld for the acquytting of the chyrches of England of all maner of kynges trespase, paye yearlye to Rome thre hundred markes. That is to mene, to Saynt Peter's church a hundred markes, to the lychte of saynt Paull a hundred marke, and to the b. of Rome's treasury a hundred mark. And ouer al this of hys pure deuocyon, he offred to god and to saynt Peter the .x. parte of his moucable goodes.

Howe some suppose thys kyng to be the first founder of the vniuersite of Oxenford.

And also one cronycle sayeth, that thys kyng founded first the vniuersite of Oxenford, whiche was lykelye to be done by Offa kyng of Mercia, for so much as in hys dayes floured that famous clark Alcumus or Albinus, the whiche as sayeth the frenche cronycle, was firste founder of the scole of Darys and of Darya, as is befor shewed in the story of Charlys the grete, in the thyrde chapter of the sayde storye.

Howe Adeulphus married the daughter of Charles kyng of Fraunce.

When Adeulphus had thus sped hys bysynes at Rome, he returned by Fraunce, where at that tyme was kyng of that land Charles the Ballyd, of whom he was ioyously receaued. And after he hadde dysposed hym there a season, he spoused the daughter of the sayde Charles, in the .xx. yere of the regne of the sayde Adeulphus, as testyfeth Polycronyca in the .xxx. Chapter of hys .v. booke, whiche shuld be the yere of the regne of the sayd Charles the .xi. But of this maryage is nothyng touched in the frenche cronycle.

Why the lord of the land rebelled agaynst the kyng, and toke from hym agreat part of his domynion.

Then Adeulphus takynge leue of the kyng, toke wyppynge and landed in Englande with hys wyfe, Judith by name. And for that he (contrarye the law made in the tyme of Wyrkyngus,) set hys wyfe in the kynges

trone, a magnified her lyke a quene. Flozdes of hys land arose agayn hym and pulled from hym agreat parte of hys domynion, and made hys eldest sonne ruler therof, whiche al was done i reproch of Ethelburga, which slew her lord Wyrkyngus as befor is shewed. Lastly the matter was appeased, & he to hys kyngelike honour restored. And in the yere folowynge dyed the sayde Bertulphus kyng of Mercia. After whose death, Wurdzodus was made kyng of Mercia or myde Englande, the whiche befor tyme hadde spoused the daughter of kyng Adeulphus.

In the latter dayes of thys Adeulphus, the Danes dyd much harme in Lyndesey, and also in Kente, and fro thence came to London, and robbed and spoyled the cytye. Wherfore Adeulphus gathered his people, and lastly met with them in Southerpe bypon a downe called Oclea, and there dyscomfited them, not without the dyng of greate plentye of the Anglys bloude, and forsed them to take the see, so that after they landed in est Anglya as after Mall apere. Then lastly dyed thys good kyng Adeulphus or Ethelwolphus, when he had ruled hys subiectes nobly by accorde of most wyrters fully .xxii. yere, and was buried at Wyndchester, leuynge after hym foure sonnes afore sayde.

The .xliii. Chapter Francia.



Charles the yongeste sonne of Adeulphus the myde, beganne hys regne ouer the cheste parte of Fraunce, in the .x. yere of our lord. In the .xlii. & .xliii. yere of Adeulphus the king of Westsaxons, whiche as befor is sayd was surnamed Ballyd.

Anon

Anone as hys father was buterped
hys byother Lothayze, to whome the
father, as ye before haue heard, com-
mitted the guydynge of thys Char-
lys, by the entysynge of hys byother
Lewys maligned agayne this Char-
lys, and soughte many wayes to put
hym from suche landes as his father
had geuen hym. This sayde Lothayze
was after the death of hys father empe-
roure, and Lewys the yonger byother
was duke of knyght of Bayon. But
for Charlis was yonger, and had to
hys parte the pryncypall porcion of
Fraunce, whiche was called myddell
Fraunce, therfore his. ii. byethen and
specyally Lewys, maligned greuous-
ly agayne him. Wherof this Charlis
being somdeale informed, bare him
so wysely & so egally to his subiectes,
that he had theyr loues and fauours,
and trusted alway by their good aide
that he shoulde be of power to with-
stande theyr unkynde malyce.

And lyke as the bydde fyre in pro-
cesse, breaketh out and sheweth great
lyght and flaming blasse, even so dyd
this conerd malyce, at the laste byke
oute to greate ire, and open wyathe.
For after foure yeres was passed, the
sayde two byethenne withoute desy-
raunce of groundely cause of warre,
assyned of assembled a greate hoste,
suche lyke before this daye hadde not
bene sene, and entred the lymyttes of
hynge Charlys.

Then Charlys assembled in all the
haste hys Lozdes, and requyred theyr
aydes and counsaile to withstande
the malyce of hys byethenne. And
when he hadde knowledge of theyr
good myndes, anone theyr knyghtes
were gathered and all thyng was re-
dy to the fyghte.

Nowe in thys whyle the two bye-
then with theyr people were comen

to a place called Founthaynes of Fou-
tanet, whereto Charlys spedde hym.
And whē both hostes wer nere, eyther
partye made prouisyon to subdue his
enemye.

Then were the batayles on bothe
parties ordered and assyned to their
standarbes and captaynes, and the
wynnes set to the moste auantage.
What shuld I lenger processe of this
ordynauce make, synallye the shote
of arblasters beganne on bothe sydes
whiche ouerthrewe many an horse
and man, and specyallye the foze ry-
dars that putte theym selfe in pence
with theyr longe and sharpe laun-
ces, to wyne the fyrste byunte of the
felde.

Wype it was to beholde the good-
ly bryght armyd knyghtes, lying and
walowynge with theyr greate rebes
in the felde, with debly woundes ga-
ppynge agayne the son, & were slayne
at the fyrste encountre. But when the
shote was spente, and the speares to
waterned, then bothe hostes ranne to
gyther with Rowlandes longe, so
that in shorte whyle the grene felde
was dyed into a perfyte redde. For
there washedes, armes, legges, and
trunkes of deade mennes bodies ly-
enge as thicke as floures growe in
tyme of maye in the flooyshynge me-
dowys, myserable & piteouse it was
to beholde the persones halfe lyuyng
and halfe deade, with theyr gryfely
woundes piteouslye growynge and
crenge withoute comfozte. So that
there was shewed all rygoure with-
oute merce, and all cruelties with-
out compassyon.

Thus dured this mortall fyghte
by a longe season, that doubtfull it
was to knowe whiche partye had the
auantage of other. Howbeit Char-
lys was putte to an after deale by. ii.

q. i. meanes

The begin-
nyng of the
battaille.

The cruell
bloodyng.

Charlys was
put to an after
deale.

meanes. The fyrste was for so much as Charlys entended to haue forborne for the reuerence of the hyghe feast, as the daye of the Ascencion of oure lord, & that daye not to haue foughten. And the seconde was, that he was farre lesse in number. Whych the two causes of disauantage notwithstanding, yet in the conclusyon: he wanne the honoure of that iourney.

Charlys was
victor, and
had the honoure
of the battayl

But not withoute greate losse of hys people and many of the nobles of his lande, wherof the frenche boke reherceth the names. But for they be to vs vnknown, I passe them ouer.

And as yet is testifed of many writers, there was slayne that daye more frenchemen, then was slayne at any felde euer before that day. Wherof the number is not expessed, for it was so greate. Then Lotharye was forced to take Aquisgrany for his safegard and Lewys ellys where. But Charlys with a small company that to hym were left, folowed hys brethrenne, and constrained Lotharye to forsake the cite, & thens to go vnto Lion a cite that standeth at this day in the better most border of Fraunce, & after to Vienne. To the which cite of Vyen shortly after came vnto hym hys brother Lewys, where they two assembled a newe hooste.

How Lotharye
fledde.

How the ii.
brethren entred
into a peace with
Charlys.

In the which passetyme, as Charlys was cominge towarde his brethren, messengers mette with hym, sente frome his brethren to comon of a peace. So that finally he was accorded, that the Realme of Fraunce shoulde be deuyded in thre, as the father had before disposyd it. That is to meane, Lotharye shuld enioy ouer the landes belongynge to the empyre the countrey of Austray, the whiche in processe of tyme: was called Lotharye or Lotharingia, whiche is to

In what con-
ditiō.

meane Lozayne after his name. And to Lewys shoulde remayne the prouince of Germany, with the countrey of Buryan or Benery. And to Charlys shuld remayne the countrey called myddell or chese Fraunce, with the prouinces of Normandy & Burgoyne. Which sayde myddell Fraunce is reported to be in space from the Ocean of Bytayne: vnto the ryuer of Rhyne.

The which concord thus firmly stablished and synplyed, either of ocher toke theyr departynge, and resorted vnto theyr owne lordshippes. But Lotharye dyed shortly after, leuynge after hym thre sonnes, named Lewys, Lotharye, and Charlys. But this death of Lotharye is not taken for temporall death, for it is sayd that he forsoke the traualle of the world and became a munke at the abbaye of Prunp, and lyued there a solitary lyfe many yeres after.

The story
of Lewys
Cappell
the first
a monk.

The clxiij. Chapter.

Charlys the Bald thus beinge in peaceable possession of the chiefe parte of the realme of Fraunce, and guiding it with all sobernes & indifferent iustice was wel dyed and also beloued of his subiectes. In processe of tyme, as by the by, yeres after that Lotharye aboue sayd renounced the pompe of the world dyed first Charlys the yongest sonne of the thre of the foresayde Lotharye. And after dyed Lotharye the seconde sonne, so that the sayde Lewys onely suruived, whiche was after hys father enoynted Emperour.

When Charlys kynge of Fraunce knewe certainly of the death of these two foresayde brethren, and that with out issue, anon he assembled his power and entred the prouince of Austray or Lozayne, the whiche his brother Lotharye

Char-
les was crown-
ed kynge of
France.

Lotharye hadde geuen vnto Lotharye
hys sonne. And in shorte whyle af-
ter crowned hym kynge of that pro-
uince, wythin the church of Saynt
Stephane: of the cytye of Treuys,
chefe cytye of that lordshipp and kyng-
dome. With the whiche dede Lewys
his brother, and kynge of Germanye
and Bapon was discontented, chyn-
dyng hym selfe moze tpyghtful enhe-
rytoure then Charlys, for so muche as
he was the elder brother, and also bro-
ther to the fyrste Lotharye of father
and of mother, wher as Charlys was
but halfe brother, and by the fathers
syde onely.

For thys the sayde Lewys sent to
Charlys the Ballyd certayn messen-
gers geuyng to hym moncyon that
he shulde call to memoory þe couenaun-
tes betwene them befoze tyme stably-
shed, and that he shoulde not meddel
hym nor haue to do wythin the landes
of hys cosyn latelý beade, vnto suche
tyme as it were determyned by theyr
bothe counsailes, whpyther of theym
hadde the better tpyght, and this to be
obserued vpon payne of excommuni-
cacyon or cursyng.

Lotharye
was a
man of
great
valour
and
courage.

But for to Lewys was well sene,
that his brother Charlys nothing ad-
stepned hym from the occuppence of
the fozenamed countrey, he therfoze
gathered an army to warre vpon his
sayde brother.

In the whpyche passyme Charlys
toke to his seconde wyfe a woman na-
med Rycent or Rycent, the whpyche
he befoze tyme hadde vled as his con-
cubyne or paramoure.

And sone after the Danes or No-
mans invaded the landes of Char-
lys, the whpyche for that tyme he was
fayne to appease & please wyth tpyche
gyftes and other pleasures.

Then Charlys receyued from his

brother a seconde ambassade or mes-
sage, the whpyche shewyd vnto hym
excepte he wolde vopde his knyghtes
and strengthes, that he had sette and
putte in diuerse places of the lande of
Austracy, he shuld be sure to haue of
his sayde brother an enemy, and that
in all haste he wolde entre hys lande
with great force and warre. Where-
vpon was suche aunswere sente, that
by bothe theyr agrementes the mater
was hadde in suche communicacion,
that fynallye it was agreed that the
sayde landes shulde egally be depart-
ed bytwene them. Which conclusy-
on perspyted, Lewys wyth his people
retourned vnto Germany.

A peace con-
cluded.

But it was not longe after: that
Lewys repented hym of his agrement
so that newe legacyons were made v-
pon bothe partyes, and lastely wyth
muche payne newely agreed. After
whiche agreement and accord fynly-
shed, Lewys the emperour and sonne
of the fyrste Lotharye, sente an Am-
bassade vnto both the fozenamed bre-
thren, admoneshyng and warnyng
them that nother the one nor þe other,
shoulde interrupt wyth the fozesayde
landes, for so much as the tpyght ther
of oclonged to hym as nexte heyre to
his brother, and not to them that wer
a degre further. The answer of this
was defered by Charlys, howe be it
his brother Lewys as sayth myne au-
thour, gaue ouer his parte shortly af-
ter to Lewys the emperour.

In thys passetyme, Charlys the
sonne of Charlys the Ballyd by hys
fyrste wyfe, whome the father hadde
made ruler of a countrey called Bel-
ge, hadde ruled hym insolentely, and
done in that countrey dyuerse outra-
grouse dedes. For the whiche he be-
pyng complayned of, was brought
vnto hys father, and so by hym com-
q.ii. matinded

maunded to pyson. But shortly after he was deliuered at the request of some nobles of Fraunce, & kept after in his fathers courte, where he continued but a short while. For within a litle season after, his father being at Lyons, he departed from the sayde courte, and gathered to hym a wilde company of euell disposed persones, and went agayne into the sayde countrey of Belge, and dyd moze harme then he hadde done before season, and so continued a long while. But lastly he was taken and caste agayne in pyson, where after long punishment he was reued of his syghte, and then sente vnto the monestery of Corbenyke, there safely to be kepte. But at length by the enticement of his vncle Lewys kynge of Germanye, and the treason of two monkes of that place he escaped thence, and fledde vnto the sayde Lewys his vncle. In the which tyme Charlys his father was occupied in the defence of the Danes against the Romans, that then by strength had wonne the cite of Angers and doone therein much harme, whome the kynge closed within the sayde cite with a strong spege, and finally compelled them to seke meanes of peace at the kynges pleasure. After whiche peace concluded, and the sayd Danes auoyded, the kynge repossessed the sayde cite.

It was not longe after, that tydings were brought vnto Charlys of the death of Lewys the emperoure. After knowledge whereof, the kynge sente his other sonne named Lewys into Austracie, to haue the rule and government of the countrey. And after other thynges ordered for the weale of his realme, he with a strong company of men of armes passed the mountaynes, and so into Italye toward

Rome. But Lewys his brother and kynge of Germanye, beinge thereof warned, sente in all haste his sonne Lewys with a strong hoste to lette his passage. But how it was for feare or other meane, the sayde Lewys persuaded hym vnto his vncle Charlys the Ballyd. Wherewith the father beinge greuously displeased, sente his seconde sonne named Charlon, to withstande the passage of the sayde Charlys. But this for feare or other cause that he sawe that he myghte not preuaile agayne his vncle, returned hym agayne vnto his father. After whose retourne, he for so much as the sayde Lewys kynge of Germanye wel perceyued that his brother Charlys was past his daunger, he then with a moze number ioyned vnto his sonnes hoste, entred the lande of Fraunce, in domagynge it to the bittermoste of his power.

In whiche season, Charlys the Ballyd kepte on his tourney toward Rome, wherof herping the. viii. John then bishop of that see, sent agayne him certayne persones of honoure, & welcomed hym, as Augustus the Emperour. And after his comyng thither, the sayde bishop of Rome receyued hym with great reuerence, & crowned hym with the imperall dyademe, and denounced hym as emperour.

The. clxx. Chapter.

Charlys the Ballyd: thus beinge authorized for emperour exercysed him for a tyme for the nedes of the church of Rome, & after toke his leue of the bishop thereof & returned vnto Papy a cite of Italy. Where he calling a general councyll of the lordes of the empyre & other, he by thei aduises prouided & ordered byuers thynges for the weale of the sayde empyre. And ouer that by thei agreements

mentes, he ordeyned for hys Luche-
naunt or deputy of the sayde Emperre
in hys absence, a noble man: brother
to hys wyfe recente named Besonne,
or Beson, and assigned to hym suche
people as was thoughte necessarye &
conueniente.

When Charlys had sped hys ne-
des in Dap, he hied him into Fraunce
But or he came within the terrytoyre
therof, worde was brought vnto him
that hys brother Lewys was retou-
ned into hys owne countrey, wyth-
out great damage done to the realme
of Fraunce.

In processe the Emperoure came
to Dap, where he was receyued of
the cyrciens with mooste triumph and
ioye, and kepte hys Easter tyde at
Saynte Denys.

It was not longe after that Char-
lis was thus retourned into Fraunce
but that he receyued messengers from
hys brother kyng of Germanpe, the
whiche in his name claymed his part
of the Emperre as hys ryghte and en-
herytaunce. Which answered for that
tyme was deferred with pleasaunte
wordes, so that at the next worde that
he hadde from his sayde brother, was
that he was deade and buried in the
churche of saynte Razer in Franke-
bozught. Wherof whē Charlys was
ascerteyned, anone he rode vnto For-
tenays, and sente his messengers to
lozdes of the countrey, comaundynge
them that they shuld mete hym at the
citty of Mettes.

This forsayde Lewys lefte after
hym two sonnes named Lewys and
Charlon: as before is touched, the
whiche deuyded betwene them theyr
fathers patrymonye, so that Lewys
had Germanpe, and Charlon hadde
Bayon.

This Lewys fearynge his vnclē

Charlys, gathered to hym a stronge
power of Barons and of Choyr-
ges. And in the tyme of theyr assem-
ble, he sent an ambassade of certayne
Byschoppes & tempozal lozdes vnto
his vnclē Charlys, prayenge hym of
hys loue and fauoure, wyth other re-
questes to hym made, of the whyche
they myghte purchase no graunte.
Wherof when they wer retourned he
hauynge by them knowlege, & sayde
Lewys incontynently with hys hoste
drew nere vnto the Rhyne. But this
Lewys was not so couert in his work
and assemblynge of hys people, but
that his vnclē hadde therof wytting,
and purueyed hys people as faste v-
pon that other tyme, so that he with an
hooste was readye to fyghte wyth the
sayde Lewys.

When Lewys was ware of & great
power that the Emperoure hadde as-
sembled, he made no haste to passe the
water, but howed and caused his peo-
ple to falle vnto prayer. And Char-
lys also fearynge his neuewe, vnder
a colour sente a legacyon of entreaty.
Durynge the whyche entreaty, the
Emperoure contrary to his honoure
led his people by a secreete waye thyn-
kyng to haue fallen vpon his neuewe
sodeynly, and by that meane to haue
oppressed hym.

But Lewys beyng ware of hys
vncles treason, prouyded so for hys
people, and kepte them in suche aray
that they receyued theyr enemyes v-
pon theyr speares pointes, & to theyr
greate damage. For wher the greate
rayne and tedyoulnesse of the harde
and strapte wayes, whych they hadde
passed, hadde soze tyred and werped
theym: than the freshe fearcenesse of
theyr enemyes, whiche they thoughte
they shulde haue taken sleppynge and
vnpurueyed, abashed them in suche
q.iii. wyse

Howe Lewis &
sonne of the
last Lewis ga-
thered an host
agaynst his
vnclē Charlis
Emperoure.

The Empe-
rours pollicy
agaynst his
neuewe.

The discom-
fure of the em-
perours men.

The death of
Lewys & his
son of Char-
lis.

wyse, that they were soone ouercomen, and fled from the felde as shepe flee frome the wolfe. By meane of the whiche flighte greates slaughter of thein was made, and many nobles and greates estates of Fraunce bothe slayne and taken prysoners, and the emperour hym self scaped with great daunger. And of the prysoners that were taken they were so nere spoyled þat they were fayne to take byne leues to couer with, their secretes membyes.

The cause of
the warre be-
tweene the em-
perour & Le-
wys his ne-
uue.

Ye shal vnderstande that this warre betwene the emperoure Charlys the Ballyd and hys brothers sonne Lewys, was for the prouynce of Austrache or Lozayne, the whiche somtyme belonged to the Emperour Lothayre and halfe brother to Charlys. The which countrey after this batayle, was by medyatours set in an order.

Then the Emperoure with great trouauple came to a towne called Treguy. And Lewys kepte hys waye to Dandonpquyke, and from thence to Ayes the chapell.

In this whyle the Danes or Normans knowynge that Charlys was occupped in the warre agayne hys neuue, apparayled thein a stronge hooste, and entred ofte the landes of Fraunce. But for Charlys was at þat tyme letted wth chargeable busynesse, he therfore sente a noble man agayne thein called Comarde, vnto the cytye of Spayne, to withstande the sayde enemyes. And also to hym was geuen counsaile, to haue wth them comunicacyon to make a peace wth he myghte.

And to this trouble immediatly was ioyned an other. For in this tyme and season a Cytye belongynge to the churche of Rome rebelled. Wherfore to withstand they malyce the byshop of Rome then beyng John the. viii.

of that name, sent messengers to Charlys for the defence of the sayd landes and other. And soone after the byshop of Rome for to haste the sayde emperoure, or elles to quychen his deputy befoze named to assemble þat Italyans and other people there adiopnaunte, came downe to the cytye of Dapp, and tarped there the emperours comynge.

Charlys then beset with troubles assembled hys knyghtes & sped hym towarde Italye. And when he was passed the mountaynes, word was brought to hym of þat byshop of Rome being in Dapp, wherfore he sped hym thither with all dilgencce.

In this tyme & season Charlone the brother of Lewys, and sonne of Lewys kynge of Germanye, whiche Charlone as befoze is shewed, was duke of Bayon or Bayon, gathered a stronge hooste, and entred the boundes of Italy. Wherof hering the byshop of Rome and þat emperoure, thern (as befoze is sayde) beyng at Dappe, busped in a great counceyle, dissoluid the same. And the byshop of Rome in contynently toke Iesse of þat emperour and departed agayne to Rome. And Charlys with a greates power that he had gathered, as wel of Italyans as of his owne people, made toward his neuue. Wherof hering þat sayd Charlone, turned agayne by the waye that he had comē, till he came to his owne countrey, as sayeth myne authoure & also the french booke. But moze verely Charlone keppynge togyther his host and haupynge fauour of dyuers lordes of Italy, the emperoure Charlys removed to the cytye of Mantue, where he was grudged wth a feuer. For remedye wherof he toke a poccon of a physycyon Iewe named Sederchi as, whiche was intoricate, by meane of whiche venymous poccon he dyed shortly.

Downe
the
four
sides
of
the
city

Shortly after when he hadde reygned as kynge & Emperour after most accord of wyters, by þe space of. xxiij. yerres, whereof he reygned as Emperour. iii. peares, leuynge after hym a sonne named Lewis, whiche as before is shewed was ruler of the countrey of Austrace or Lozayne.

When thys Charlys was deade hys frendes entendynge to haue carryed the corpes into Fraunce, caused it to be seayd & enoynted wth ryche and precious balumes, & other oynementes & aromatikes. But al myght not stop the intolerable ayre of hys bodye, so that they were fayne to burye hym at Alercyle, wthin the monastary of saynte Euseby. Wher he lay ouer. vii. peares after, and then take hym and conueyed to saynte Denys in Fraunce, & there honourably buried.

The. clxvi. Chapter.

In the tyme of thys Charlys the Ballyd, as wythe steth manye wyters, beganne the Erldome of Flaunders, the whiche euert before these dates, the ruler ther of was called the foresser of the kyng of Fraunce. Whych Erldome hadde hys begynnynge by thys meane.

Re haue harde before in the story of Ioeulphus kyng of Westsaxons, howe in hys returnynge from Rome he maryed the daughter of Charlys þe Ballyd named Indyth. The which Indyth after the deathe of her sayde husbande returned by Flaunders to warde Fraunce, thynkyng to passe wythoute daunger, because the sayde conutrye was vnder the obedyence of her father. But at those dayes was ruler or foresser in that partyes a noble yonge amorous man called Bawdewyne, the whiche hearynge of the greate bewte of thys Indyth, gaue

attendaunce vpon her. And receaued her in best maner, makynge to her all the cheare that to hym was possible, and synallye caste to her suche loue, that when she supposed to departe & to haue gone into Fraunce, he delayed the matter in suche curtyes & wyse maner, that he wanne suche fauoure of her, that she made no greate haste to departe from him, albest that most authours agre that he kept her perforce.

When Charles hadde weatynge that Bawdewyne thus held hys daughter Indyth, he sent to hym straghtelye chargynge hym to sende home hys daughter, but that holpe not the matter. Than he purchased agayne hym the censours of holy church, and accursed the sayde Bawdewyne. But when the kyng conceaued that the yonge man had such loue to Indyth that he set not by that punishment and also was certaynelye enformed that her herte was geuen vnto hym: he in pcesse by the meane of somme byshoppes and frendes of the sayde Bawdewyne, agrede that he shulde take her to wyfe, and in the name of her dowar, he shulde holde and enioy the sayde countrey of Flaunders. And for he wold haue hys daughter to be more honoured, he created the sayde Bawdewyne an Erle and commaunded him to be called after that daye Erle of Flaunders

Anglia.

The. clxvii. Chapter



Ethelwoldus or Ethelwoldus the eldest sonne of Ioeulphus, beganne hys reygne ouer Weste Saxons or ouer the more part

Ethelwoldus

ty of England: in the yere of our lord

but

viii. hundred and. lb. and the. x. yere of Charlys the Ballyd than kyng of Fraunce. The whiche became soo unhappye that he maryed þ woman whiche hys father hadde some tyme kepte oꝝ holden foꝝ hys concubyne, as wytnesseth the authoure of þ Flo- rite of hystories. But Polycronyco sayth that he wedded hys stepmother whiche dyslacede the wth the say- inge of other wyters, whych testyfy hys stepmother to be maryed to Bad dewyn erle of Flaunders, as in þ sto- ry of Charlys laste before is shewed.

The death of
Ethelwaldus

This Ethelwolde thoughte it be not expessed by what hape, he dyed; whan he hadd reygned one yere, as sayth Polycronica. But a nother cro- nicle bearyth wytnesse, that he was slayn of Hunger and Hubba pynce of the Daynes.

The. clxviii. Chapter

Ethelbertus



Ethelbertus the seconde sonne of Adeulphus, be- gan hys reygne ouer the moze partie of England in the yere of oure lord viii. C. lvi. a þ xi. yere of Charles the Ballyd then kyng of Fraunce. In whose tyme the Danes wth moze strengthes entred the west part of this landes, & robbed and spoyled the cost- tye before them, tyl they came to Wol- chester, and toke the ctye by strength and dyd therein what they wold. But the kyng made such prouysyon, that by hym and his dukes they were foꝝ- ced to forsake the ctye. And as they rode towarde they; shippes, they wer fought wth, and a greate part of the slayne and taken.

The death of
Ethelbertus

Of this kyng is nothyng elles left in memoꝝe moze then before is shewed, but that he died when he had reygned after moost wyters. vi. yea- res, and was buryed at Sherborne,

leuyng after hym none yssue of hys body. Wherfoꝝe the rule of the lande fell to hys brother Etheldede.

The. clxix. Chapter



Etheldredus þ thyrð sonne of Adeulphus, begane his taryne ouer the West An- glis and the moze parte of England, in the yere of our lord. viii. hundred. lxi. and the. xviii. yere of Charlys the Ballyd then kyng of Fraunce.

In the begynnynge of this kynges reygne, the Danes landed in east En- gland oꝝ Noꝝth. and Suff. But they were compelled to forsake that coun- tye, and so toke agayne Shyppynge, and sayled noꝝthewarde, and landed in Noꝝthumberlande. Where they were mette wth of the kynges then there reygnyng called Osbyrte and Ella, whiche gaue to them a stronge fyghte. But that not wythstandynge the Daynes wth helpe of such as in habytet the countye, wanne the ctye of Poꝝke, and helde it a certayne of tyme.

Then the people of Noꝝthumber- lande varied within them selfe, & had moze leuer to ayde the Danys then to reygne vnder þ kyng of Westsaxons. Foꝝ here is to be noted that all suche kynges as reygned there after Eg- berte, whiche as before is sayde sub- dued that prouynce and other reyg- ned as trybutaries to the kyng of Westsaxons oꝝ Anglys.

Wherfoꝝe Etheldredus her yng of the auantage that the Daynes then had, assembled hys people and spede hym thitherwarde, and sent vnto the foꝝesayde two kynges, commasing them also to prepare they; people a gayne hys commynge. But howe yt was oꝝ the kyng came wth hys host the Daynes so prouoked the Noꝝth- thumbꝝes

Etheldredus

How the Danes entered into Shyppynge

How the Danes entered into Shyppynge

How the Danes entered into Shyppynge

thumbes to battaile, that they met in playne feld and foughte alonge battaile. But finally the Danes won the pyce, and slew bothe the forsayd kynges with a greete multitude of theyr people.

After which victorie they subdued muche of the sayde countrey, and destroyed the towne of Abilint o: Irlid the whiche as testyfyeth Beda, was sometyme one of the stronge townes of the Nothe.

When Etheldrede had prepared al thyng for the warre, and was put posed toward the Nothe, for conspiracyon also sayde, woide was broughte vnto the sayd kyng Etheldrede of the dyscomfytur of the Northumbres, and also of dyuerse of the sayde Danes with other that were comen to Mercya, and hadde wonne the towne of Snotynggham o: Notynggham: whiche typpnges letted hym of hys forth speede in that tourney. But this saying is dysagreeable vnto Holycrofton. For he sayeth that the Northumbres were wery of theyr kyng Oswy o: Ostryus after some auroours, and chose vnto them a tyraunte named Ella, by meane wherof greete dyscensyon grewe amonge them to the greete hurte of þ country. But when the Danes had passed the countrey, and wanne the cytye of York, that then was feble walled, then by constraynte and of feere, for the defence of theyr countrey, they were fayne to agree and to gather strength on all sydes, so that bothe the forsayd kynges wente agayne the forsayd Danes, and both were slayne. After whiche dyscomfytur the people so desolate, some fled the countrey, and somme made peace with the Danes, and lyued vnder theyr tuctyon. And so the Danes

kepte the posseltyon of that countrey in suche wyse that no Angles had rule therof, tyll the tyme of Idelsone o: Ethelsone, o: after some wyters tyll the tyme of Egedus so that they held the posseltyon thereof ouer the terme of .xl. yeares.

Then the Danes bringe thus possessed of the Nothe countrey, maned þ same, and fortifyed the strong holdes therof. And the other of them came downe into Mercya o: myddle Englande, and wanne a parte thereof with the forsayde towne of Nottingham, and dwelled there the moze parte of the yeare folowinge.

Wherfore kyng Etheldred with ayde of Burgedus then kyng of Mercya, layde sege vnto the towne. The whiche when the Danes perceivede shulde be wonne, they refused the towne, and tooke the tower o: castel, and defended it in so stronge manner, that they helde yt tyll a peare o: apoyntment was concluded between the two kynges and them.

Whiche was that they shulde go fre where they wolde, and carpe with them theyr horse and harnesse without any pillage. And when this peace was thus made, ether of the kynges departed to theyr owne, and the Danes returned vnto York, and dwelled there the yeare folowynge.

And the yeare folowynge that sayd yeare, apparte of the sayde Danes takinge shippynge in the Noth, entredynge to sayle toward Est Englande met in the see with a flete of Danes, wherof the captaynes o: leaders were named Hynguoar and Hubba. The whiche by exhortacyon of the other commynge oute of the Nothe, made all one course, and lastelye landed in Est Englande o: Norfolk, & in processe of tyme came vnto Chertford

How the Danes made posseltyon of the Nothe countrey

The landing of the Danes in Norfolk

Thereof

Therof hearynge Edmundus the kyng of that prouince, assembled an hoost, that gaue vnto them battayle. But Edmund and his host was forced to forsake the felde, and the kyng wyth a fewe personnes fled, vnto the castell of Framplinghā; framing hain, whom the Danes pursued. But he in woyle whyle after yelded hym selfe vnto the persecucion of the Danes. And for this blessed man Edmund wolde not renge; or denye Chyrist and his lawes, they therfore moost cruelly bonde hym vnto a tree, and caused hym to be whotte to death, and lastly caused hys heade to be smytten from the bodye, and cast amonge the thyeke of the bushes.

Then hys frendes wyth greute sorrowe carped the bodye and head vnto Eglydon; or Eglydon now called s. Edmundes Burgh, and there buried hym, aboute the yere of oure lord as witneseth Policronyca, Gyrdo, and other. viii. C. & lxx. as befoze is shewed in the chapter of thys woike foure scoze. and. xvi. for whome dayle god shewed there many myracles.

The clxx. Chapter



Man thys blessed Edmund was thus martyred for the loue that he bare towarde hys master Chyrist and his lawes, hys brother named Edmoldus settinge aparte the lykynge and pleasure of the worlde became an hermit at thabbe of Cerfi in þe countie of Dorset, albeit þe of right, the kyngdome belonged vnto hi.

Of this sayde abbay of Cerfi. Policronyca sayth that it was after these dayes xxiij. and xxviii. welthy. But þe gouernours therof mispente the patrimony therof in excelle glotonye & not amonge the seruantes of God.

So herfoze he sayth farther, that couetise and pryde had so chaunged all thinge in Engalnd in these dayes, that all thinges that befoze tyme were geuen to abbays, were the more wasted in glotonye and outrage of þe owners then in sustenance and ayde of nedy men and of gesses; or nedy waygoers. Albeit he sayth the sayde doers; or geuer lose not theyr reward. For theyr wyll & intent is ful henuenly payed in a baluunce, befoze hym that is the rewarder of al good. But though Trevisa þe was the translatoure of thys boke of Policronyca out of Ioven in to our vulgare tunge, repute this to be done, or this misorder to be fled in hys dayes, whiche lyued in the tyme of that honourable pynce Edmarke the thyrde. yf he nowe lyued, he wold not in no gouernours of makes blake; or yet whyle, save no luche outrage. For nowe at these dayes pryde and glotony is clerly banished frome theyr monasteries and celles, and in the tyme of pryde wyth hys frende dysobedience, haue they nowe lodged humylyte wyth hys frende obedience. And in the steade of glotony and vncleennes of lypynge, haue they nowe newlye professed theym vnto all chastete, temperaunce, abstinence and byngge all sloth and idelnes, and exerce them in godly study & preache the word of god wyth all diligence. So that nowe the holy rules & ordynaunces made by that holy father & abbot sainte Benet, which ignoraunce haue longe tyme slepte, nowe by grace of good gouernaunce are newlye receaued & quickened. And here an ende lest I be accused of discymulaciō.

Then to retorne vnto the Danes frome whome I haue made alonge dysgressyon, truthe it is that when they had as befoze is sayde, martyred the

How Edmund
kyng of england
yelded hym selfe
to the Danes

Therof hearynge
that þe Danes
put kyng Ed-
mund vnto.

How Edmund
was buried
in the church
of Eglydon.

Edmund.

How Edmund
was buried
in the church
of Eglydon.

the blessed man Edmund, and robbed and spoiled that countrey, they toke agayne they; shippes and landed in Southere, and conytynued they; iourney tyll they camme to the towne of Redynge, and wanne the towne wth the castel.

Dolcromyca sayth that the thyrday of they; thyrther commynge, Hinwar and Hubba as they went in purchasyng of prayes, were slayne at a place called Engelfelde. Which pynces of Danes thus slayne, the other dele of theym kepte hole togyther, in such wyse that þ Westsaxons myght take of them none aduantage. But yet wthyn fewe dayes after, the Danes were holden so shorte, that they were forsed to ysse oute of the castel, and to defende theym in playne battayle. In the whiche by comfote of kyng Etheldrede and of Alured his brother, the Danes were discomfited and manye of theym slayne. Wherof the other beinge ware, fled agayne to the castell, and kepte them within the same a certayne of tyme.

Then the kyng commaunded Etelwold then duke of Baroke or Barshyre, to attende wth hys people vpon that castel, and to se that the Danes byke not oute at large whyle he wente in other costes of that countrey to subdue other of the sayde Danes. But when the Danes knewe of the kynges departure, they byake oute so danlye anone out of they; holde, and toke the duke vnputrayed and slewe hym and much of hys people, & caused the other to wth byawe them farther frome that towne or castel.

Then these Danes byawe theym to other that wer they; lordes in that countrey, and enbatelled theym in suche wyse, that of theym was gathered a stronge hooste,

It was not long after duke Ethelwold was slayne, but the kyng was ascertayned thereof. The whiche renewed hys heauynes, and made hym full heuy, to consyder hys losse of his frende, and the increace and multiplyinge of hys enemyes. For the day befoze repoyte of these tydynge as affermeth an olde cronicle, word was broughte to hym of the landynge of a Dane named Olufke, whiche of Dolcromyca is named kyng of Denmarke. The whiche in shorte tyme after wth assystence of the other Danes had gathered a greate hoost, and were enbatelled vpon ashedowne.

To thys battayll Alured was forsed by great nede to come befoze hys brother the kyng, that then was beinge of a Masse wth greate deuocyon, not knowynge of that halfye speade of hys brother. Where the kyng thus beinge in hys medytacyons, þ hostes of Englys and Danes strake to gethers wth huge vyolence. And howe be it the Danes had wonne the byllande and the Chyrtseyen men wer in the valley, and yet by grace of god and manhode of them selues they at length wanne the byll of the Danes, and slewe they; duke or kyng called Olufke, or after the Englyshe cronicle Oluf, and fyue of they; dukes, & muche of they; people, and chased the other dele vnto Redynge towne.

Wherfoze the Danes assembled they; people, & gathered a newe hoost so that wthyn .xv. dayes they met at a towne called Balsynge Broke, and there gaue battayle vnto the kyng, and had the better.

Then the kyng gathered hys people, the whiche at that felde, were chapyd and dyspaybled, and wth fresh souldyeres to theym accompanied, met þ Danes wthyn two monethes after

Duke Ethelwold
king of Den
marke slain

Howe Oluf
ke the duke of
kyng of Den
marke was
slayne & was
w other.

Howe the Danes
gaue a battayle
to þ kyng
of Balsynge
Broke had the
better.

after at a towne called Hertou, and gaue vnto them a sharpe battayle, so that much people were slayne as wel of the Chyrlayen as of the Danes.

How the Danes wane the seconde felde of battayle.

But in the end the Danes hadde the honoure of the felde, and the kyng of Anglys was wounded and sayne to sauegarde hym selfe by polsey when myghte fayled.

The grete byttenyng of the Danes.

After these two felde thus won by the Danes, they obtayned greatespyte of grounde, and destroyed man and chyldre that to them were in obedient. And churches and temples they turned to the vse of stables, and other vyle occupacions. And to this sorowe was added another.

For where the kyng hoped wel to recouer his losses by ayde of his subiectes, as well of other partes of his land, as of his owne, of Westsaxon, when he had sent his commissarys in to Northumberland, into Mercya, & Est Angla: He had of them small or lytle comforte, so that the countrey of west Saxon was broughte in greatesolacyon. For the kyng was beset with enemyes vpon euery syde, and ouer that his knyghtes and souldyours wer tyred and palled with ouerwache and laboure. Whych maner folde aduersityes and troubles synce kyng in the kynges mynde, with byse of hurte ensuinge of his wounde befoze taken at the battel besyd Hertou shortened his dayes, so that he dyed when he had raygned in greatespyte of the Danes after most wynters, viii. yeris withoute yssue of his body. By reason wherof the rule of the lande fell vnto his brother Aluredus.

The death of Ethelredus.

It is wytnessed of some cronycles that not withstandinge the greates trouble and heracyon that this kyng Ethelredus hadde with the Danes,

he founded the house or colledge of chanons at Exeter, and was buryed at the abbey of Wymbourne or Wimbourn.

The. cxxi. Chapter.



Aluredus the. iiii. sonne of Adulfus, a brother to Ethelredus laste kyng, began his reygne ouer the Westsaxons and other prouynces of England, in the. x. yere of our lord. viii. C. lxxi. & the. xxi. yere of Charlys soze named, then kyng in Fraunce. This Alured was. xii. yeres of age or he wer set to scole. But for all that he sped so wel his tyme, that he passed his brother and other that were longe set forth befoze hym. And by the counsaile of Aeorus or Aoro he ordayned a first gramet scole at Oxforde, & other free scoles, and frauncharged that towne with many greatespences, & translated manie lawes, & Marcan lawe and other, out of Bretyshe spech into Saxon tynge. He was also a subtyll master in buyldynge and dreuyng therof, and excellent connyng in all huntynge. For he was of stature, and most beloued of his father of all his chyldren.

Longe tyme it wolde aske to reherse all his vertue. But for he was in his yowth disposed to the synne of fleshe and thereby letted frome manie vertuous purpose, he lastly after manie resistences by hym done to auoyde the temptacyon therof, besought god entely, that he wold sende to hym some contynuall sykenes in quenching of that vyce, and that he were not vnpofytable to worldly busines and serue God the better.

Then at gods ordynance he had the euell called Syrus, with the whiche sykenes

Aluredus

How the Danes wane the seconde felde of battayle.

sekenes he was greued many yeres,
and lastely cured of that holy virgin
saynt Modwenne then dwelling in
Irelande. But after this cure by her
done she came into Englande, for so
muche as her monastery or chyrch þe
she there dwelled in, was destroyed.
Wherfore Adulphus father to Alurede,
knowynge þe vertue & holynesse
of this maiden, gaue to her grounde
to buylde vpon .ii. abays of may-
dens. That is to say one in Arderne
at a place calleg Dolliswortham, an
other at Strenesalte in the North.
But this holpe mayden dyed in the
pland of Andrese beynde Burton, af-
ter many yeres of the buyldynge of
these said two abbays, & after .vii. ye-
res þe she had ben closed within stone
walles in the ysle befoze named.

When Alurede was cured of this
sekenes, to him fell an other, þe which
contynued with hym from the .xx. ye-
re of his age till the .xli. yere of his
sayde age. But þe not withstandynge
he wedded a noble woman named
Ethelwyda, of the which he receiued
two sonnes, Edwarde surnamed the
elder, & Egelwarde, & .iii. daughters
Elphleda þe after was ladye of Mer-
cia Ethelgota a mencho or nune, & þe
thyrde was named Elfrida. The why-
che he caused all as well daughters
as other, to studie the arte or science
of grammer, & to be noysshed with all
vertue. And when this Alurede was
admytted to be kyng, he wel consy-
dered the great daunger þe his lande
was in, wherfore he gathered to him
his lordes, & suche as he myghte not
win without strete, he wanne with
great iustyce and fayre hostes. So þe
he shortly assembled a strong hoste,
and in the seconde moneth þe he was
made kyng, he mette with the Da-
nes beynde wylton, & yelded to them

batayll, but not withoute great losse
of men on both partyes.

Then he remeued his people, and
in sondry places faught with þe Da-
nes in the fyrste yere .vi. tymes. By
meane wherof his people wer so soze
mynished and weked, that he was
foryed to take peace with his enemy-
es, vpon couenaunt that they shulde
auoyde the countres & prouynces þe
he had domynyon of.

Upon which agreement fermely con-
cluded, the Danes for a tyme voided
those countreys, & dyen towarde Lon-
don, & rested them about þe coste the
more parte of the yere folowynge, &
from thens to Lyndesey, in robbynge
and spolyng the towncs & villages
as they wente, & holdynge þe comon
people vnder theyr seruage, & so con-
tynued ouer the terme of two yeaeres.
But of the thyrde yere were ended
they rode vnto Reyndon, and there
put downe or slewe Burgedus then
kyng of Mercia, and betoke þe kyng
dome vnto a seruaunt of his, named
Colwolphus, vppon condycion that
he shuld kepe it to theyr behofe. And
then they beseged a towne therby cal-
led Hambourgh, & assauted it right
sharpe. Then the inhabytautes
of that towne of Hambourgh, fled
vnto Wenchester.

Then þe kyng made oft peace with
the Danys, in truste wherof he rode
with þe fewer people, wherof they be-
yng ware, layd bushemetes for hym
& set so nere hym, þe they slew a great
parte of his copany in a nyght as he
rode towarde Wynchester.

For this treason þe kyng was soze
amoued agayne the Danes, & in as
secrete maner as he myght he assem-
bled a chosen copany of knyghtes, &
as witnesseth Gyudo, fel vpon them
sodeynly, & distressed many of them,

Howe Aluredde
assaulted the
Danes.

and left them not tyll he had chased them to Chester, or after an other au-
thour to Cretour. And there kyng
Aluredde kept the Danes so short, &
he constrayned them to gyue to him
pledges to kepe the peace, & to dwell
no lenger there then they might pur-
uey shyppe at the next porte to
saye into Denmarke.

After which accorde thus synished
the kyng returned vnto Mercia or
myddell England. And so he harde
that Colwolpbus was ded, to whome
the Danes had taken that lordshyp
to kepe: he therfore sealed & kynged-
dome, and toynded it to his owne of
Westsarons. By whiche reason the
kyngedome of Mercia surleashed &
had continued froin the first kyng
named Wenda, as in the chapiter of
this worke. C. cxi. precedynge, is
more at length declared.

About the. v. yere of the reygne
of Aluredde, the Danes as assermeth
Policronica, sayled fro Warham to-
warde Cretour, in the whiche tour-
ney they losse. vi. score of the; small
shyppes by a tempeste in the see. But
some of them occupped the towne of
Cheppnham and the countrey ther-
unto adiopnyng, and chased the An-
gles, or made them as subiectes to the
Danes. And so fore the power of the
augmented, that the Angles losse
dayly and they encreased, and more
by reason of the landynge of a prync
of the Danes named Gutteron or
Gowtham, whiche is named kyng
of Denmarke.

The. c. lxxij. Chapiter.



Aluredde beyng thus our-
set in multitude of enmy-
es, as assermeth Policro-
nica and other, ladde an
vncertaine lyfe and vnclay with few
folkes aboute hym, in the wode

countrey of Somersetshyre, and had
ryght scante to lyue with, but suche
as he & his people myght purchase
by hunting and fshyng.

Notwithstandynge at lengthe he
was wel comforted, and shewed him
self more at large, so that dayly reso-
ted to him men of wylshyre, Somer-
setshyre, & Hamshyre, til that he was
strongly compayned. Then the kyng
put him in a great isoperdy, as saith
Wylliam de regibus. For he did on
hym the habite of a minstrel, & with
his instrument of musyke, he entred
the tentes and paupylons of the Da-
nes, and in shewynge there his en-
terlude & songes, he espyed all the; slouth
and idelnesse, and hard much
of the; counsayll, and after retour-
ned vnto his company, and tolde to
thepin all the maner of the Danes.

Then the kyng with a chosen co-
pany, fell vpon the Danes by nyght,
and distressed and slewe of the; a
great multitude, and chased the; from
that colte. And when the kyng
had thus chased the Danes, by coun-
sayll of his knyghtes, he buylded
there a toure & named it Edelynge,
whiche is to meane in oure speche a
toure of noble men. Oute of whiche
toure he and his soloyers made ma-
ny assautes vpon the; enmyes, &
dod to them much harme and scath,
and clerely boyded the countreye of
them betwene that and Selwoodes.

This Edelynge or Ethelngessey,
standeth in a greete mares or more,
so that men may not wyn to it with-
oute shyppe or bote, and conteyneth
no greete grounde, but yet therein is
benyson and other wylde bestes, and
fowle, and fysh the great plenty.

Thus kyng Aluredde daylye pur-
sued his enmyes by helpe of god &
his subiectes, whiche herpyng of hys
vnto:

The mar-
tion by the Da-
nes.

Howe Gut-
teron a prync
of the Danes
landed.

The teacher
of Athelstan
king of the
Danes.

victories and manfull dedes, dyue
to hym dayly oute of all sides. By
whose powers and assistens he helde
the Danes so shorte, that he wanne
from them winchester, & many other
good towncs, and forced them lastly
to seche for peace, the which was co-
cluded upon certayne couenautes.
Wherof one and principal was, that
they kyng named as before is said
Guttrum or Gothram, or after þe En-
glyshe cronycle Gurmunde, shuld be
christened, and a certayne of his du-
kes with hym. And for þe kyng wold
haue the Danes banysed out of the
west parties of England, he graun-
ted to hym ecst Anglia to abyde and
dwell in.

Then this prince of Danes accor-
dyng to the couenautes, was chris-
tened at wyndchester, and. xx. of the
greatest of hys dukes. And to this
sayde Danes prince Alured was
godfather at the funte stone, and na-
med hym Athelstane. And after he
hadde a season feasted the sayde Da-
nes, he accor dyng to hys promyse
gaue vnto they kyng the countrey
of ecst Anglia, whiche then contey-
ned Norfolk, and Suffolk, & parte
of Cambridshyre. And also as wyt-
nesseth Policronica he graunted to þe
Danes that were christened the coi-
trei of Northumberlande. And the
other that wold not be christened, de-
parted the land & sailed into fraunce,
where they rested theym with theyr
colyns and kynnesmen, that at those
dayes wasted the lande of fraunce,
as in the frenche storys is som what
apparent. Whe this Danes kyng
Athelstane hadde the possession of
these countreies, ye shall vnderstand
þe all suche Angles as dwelled there,
and within the pceptuete of theym,
were vnder his obedyence. And all

be it that he helde the said pproince
as in fee of þe kyng, and promysed to
dwell there as his lyege mā, yet that
promyse not withstandinge, he con-
tinued lyke a tyrante by the terme
of. xi. yeres full, and dyed in the. xij.

In the whiche tyme kyng Alu-
rede amended the cytye of Wynton
that nowe is called Whastelburpe,
and other towncs and stronge hol-
des þe by the Danes were sore aba-
ted and enpayed. And as wtnes-
seth Gydo and other, he buylded þe
house of nonnes at Whastelburp, or
was fyrste founder therof.

He also founded an house of rely-
gyon in the aboue named place of
Ethelwylsey, and a nother in wynd-
chester, that was named the new mo-
nastery. In the whiche he was after
buryed. And ouer this he endowed
the churche of saynte Euthberte in
Dorham, as before is touched.

About the. xij. yere of the reygne
of Alured, the Danes which before
as ye haue hard sayled into fraunce,
retorned into Englande and landed
in Kent, and so lastly came vnto Ro-
chester and beseged that cytye, and
lay there so long, that they buylded
a towre of tumber and not of stone,
agayne the gates of the cytye. But
by strength of þe cytelyns that towre
was destroyed, and the cytye defen-
ded tyll kyng Alured rescued the.
The whiche hadde made suche pur-
ueyaunce for the dystressyng of them
by water and lande, that they were
so nere trapped, that for fere they left
theyr horses behynde them and fled
to theyr shippes by night. But whā
the kyng was therof ware, he sent
after them & toke. xvi. of theyr shippes,
and slew many of the sayd Da-
nes. After this tourneye, the kyng
retorned to London, and repayed
c ij certayne

How the Da-
nes beseged
Rochester.

The flying of
the Danes.

certayne places therof, that before had ben hurte oꝝ febled with the Danes, and betoke the gubding therof vnto Ethelredus than eke oꝝ duke of Mercia, to whom as wylle he had gyuen his daughter Elfreda.

Aboute this tyme dyed Dunbertus than bishop of Wyntchester, and the kyng made Dunwolfus bishop after him. The whiche as sayth Polytroncon the kyngs sander in the wode kapping of beites, in the tyme whan he hym selfe kepte the wodes for feere of the Danes.

About the .xci. yere of the reygne of thys kyng Alured, the Danes landed in .iii. places of this lande, that is to wytte in þe Est England and the North, and in the west in .ii. places. But for þe kyng before they landynge had warnynge of the deth of Athelstan kyng of Danes of Est England, and of other complayntes of þe Danes, he therfore yode thider in whiche tyme of his there beynge these tydynge came vnto hym.

The .xcii. Chapter.

Whan kyng Alured was accertayned of these tydynge, for so muche as some of the sayde Danes were landed in that coste, and knewe well that þe ferther they dreyue vnto these partys, the more they shulde be ayded & strengthened: he therfore sent messengers in al haste vnto Ethelred eke oꝝ duke of Mercia, chargynge hym to assemble an hoste of the menne of Mercia and the boier there about, and to make resystens agayne the Danes, whiche landed in the west. And that done, the kyng spedde hym towarde his enemyes, and pursued them so sharpely, that in the ende he droue them out of Est Anglia. The which than landed in Kent, whither þe kyng

with his people spedde hym, and in lyke maner drave the Danes from thens. Now be it of any special sight oꝝ batayle authours therof leue no memory. After this agayne the Danes toke Shyppynge and sailed into North wales, and there robbed and spoyled the Bytōs, and from thens retorne by the see into the Est Anglia, & there rested them, for so much as the kyng then was gone westwarde.

In this while some of the foresaid Danes hadde wonne the towne of Chester. But for the countrees aduynant presed so sore vpon them, the sayde Danes were compelled to kepe them within the sayd towne oꝝ ctyte, and to defende theym by that maner. But that holdynge of þe town lasted so longe, that the Danes were compelled to eate theyr horses for hunger. But by apointment they lastely gaue ouer the towne, & wente thens into Northumberland. And in the while that the kyng with his hoste spedde him thyrderwarde, they leupnge the strong holdes and castels garnyshe with the men and bytyle, toke agayne Shyppynge & fet theyr counse in suche wyse that they landed in Sussex, and so came vnto the towne of Lewes, and from thens toward London, & buylded a towne oꝝ castell nere vnto the ryuer of Lewes. But the Londoners beynge of theyr dopnges, maied out a certayn number of men of armes, the whiche with assystens of the men of þe countree put the Danes from that towne & after bete it downe to the ground.

Soone after þe kyng came downe thyder, and for the thought that ryuer shulde be a meane to bynge enemyes este soones into that countree therfore he comaunded þe streame to be deuyded

How the Danes landed in .iii. places of this realme.

How the Danes landed in .iii. places of this realme.

How the Danes landed in .iii. places of this realme.

The.c.lxxiij. Chapter.



Letwys the seconde of that name, and sonne of Charles the Balled, beganne hys regyne ouer f French me, in f pere of our lord. viij. hundred. lxxviij. & the. vi. pere of Alured the kyng of the more parte of England. This was named Lodowicus Balbus, whiche is to meane Letwys the stamerer, for so muche as he had an impendement in his tunge.

Ye haue before in f story of Charles the Balled herbe, howe Charlton the newew of Charles forsayd, with his hoste had entred Italy, and entended towarde Rome. The whiche after the deth of his said vncle Charles, kepte on his waye, & lastly came vnto Rome. But the byshop therof then being Ihon the. viij. of f name, fauoured the aboue named Letwys Balbus, and entended to make him Emperoure: therfore he refrayned f enoynting of the sayd Charlton. For the whiche dede he fynally was compelled to auoyde the towne & countre, & fled into Fraunce. Where he being honourably of Letwys receyued, declared and admytted him for Emperoure, as sheweth the Cronicles of Rome. But after two yeres of hys regyne or short tyme of thys admyl-
 yon to that dignyte, thys Letwys died. Wherfore f sator. B. of Rome to enioye his byshopricke in rest, retorned to Rome, & anonpited the forzenamed Charlō, and crowmed hym with the imperypall dyademe, the which in f Romas cronicle is named Carolus tertius, f thyrde Emperour, that is to meane of that name.

But of all this speketh nothyng the frence Cronicle, excepte that it
 c iij is

deuyded into diuers streames, so f by reaso therof there a ship might sayle in tyme afoze passed, the a littell bote myghte scantly rowe. Then by presence of the kyng, the Danes were forsed to fle that countre, and from thens toke agayne waye toward wales, and kept a parte of the ryuer of Seuerne, & vpon the border therof buylded them a castel nere vnto wales, & so rested them there for a tyme. So that. iij. yeres after this lande was wored wiche thre maner of sorowes, with warre of the Danes, pe silence of men, & moeyne of bestes. Whiche troubles & diuersytes not withstandyng, the kyng knyghtlye and manfully ressted the malice of his enemyes, and thaked god alway what trouble so euer fyll to hym or to his realme, and susteyned it with greate humyltye and pacyence.

It is tolde of hym f he deuyded f daye and nyght in thre partys if he were not let by warre or other great besynes. Wherof. viij. houres he spent in study and lernyng of science, and other. viij. he spent in praye and almes dedes with other charytable dedes, & other. viij. houres he spent in his naturall reste, sustinauce of his body, & the nedes of the realme. The which order he kept duely by warden tapers kepte by certayne persons.

Thus this marcpall knyght contynuyng in all prowesse and vertue, lastly dyed, when he hadde reygned ouer the more parte of this lande by the terme of. xxviij. yeres full. And was fyrst buryed at wyltō, and after certayne yeres remoued and carped vnto wyndchester, leuyng after hym a sonne named Edward, surnamed Edward, the elder. For the other byother called Egellwarde dyed before his father.

Letwys f the cont.

The death of Letwys.

is ther testyfyed, þe he was of the said
B. of Rome admitted for Emperour.

Dolycronycon sheweth, that the
seconde Lewys kyng of Fraunce,
was accursed of þe B. of Rome Nico-
las þe first of þe name, for so much as
he refused his lawfull wyfe, & toke
to him his concubine named Waldra-
da. But that is vnderstande by Le-
wys the second Emperour of that na-
me, whiche was sonne of Lotharys,
whiche Lotharys was eldest sonne
of Lewys the myde, as in the story
of Charles the Balled appereth.
And for the genealogy of Charles the
conquerour, or of his offsprynge may
the cleriker appere, and also that þe
reder may haue the more certeyne of
the names, which were Emperours,
which kynges of Fraunce, & whiche
were kynges of Germany. I shal in
the story of Lewys the ii. (in whome
for a tyme surceased þe blood) make a
remembraunce of every Emperour,
& kynges of Fraunce & Germany, that
reigned fro þe sayd Charles þe great
or conquerour, till Hugh Capet, the
whiche Hugh, vsurped the crowne
of Fraunce, as after shal appere.

Chan it foloweth in the story, that
for partycion of the lande of Austracy
or Loaryn, grudge and variaunce
continued alwaye betwene the kynges
of Fraunce & Germany, whiche
bothe kynges at this daye were na-
med Lewys, albeit that the kyng of
Fraunce was surnamed Balbus, as
before is shewed. For the whiche va-
riaunce by laboure of frendes these
two kynges mette at þe cytye or place
called Gundeuple. Wher after lōge
cōmunicacion it was finally agreed,
that the sayde prouince of Austracye
shulde than be deuyled, as it som-
tyme had ben parted betwene Char-
les the Balled and Lewys kyng of

Germany they bothe fathers.

After which peace thus cōcluded,
eyther parted from other in frendly
wise. And Lewys Balbus yode vnto
Arderth, where he halowed the feste
of Christmas. And fro thens he yode
vnto Compeyne, where he herde of
the rebellyon of a marques of his
realme called Barnarde, or more be-
rely after the Romayn wyse a mar-
ques of Italye. For this Barnarde
with one Helberde had before tyme
taken from the chyche of Rome cer-
teyne possessyons, whiche by meane
of this Lewys & the sentence of the
chyche denounced agayne them by
the foresayd Ihon B. of Rome were
agayn restored, & the parties also re-
cōcyled. But now of newe, this Bar-
narde rebelled agayne. Wherfore þe
B. of Rome as to Lewys, for þe defen-
sour of the chyche of Rome sent for
hyde, for, as before I haue shewed
you this Lewys of the sayde Ihon
B. of Rome was authorysed for Em-
perour. But for he was not crowned
at Rome with the pimperall dra-
deme, he is not accompted amonge
the Emperours.

For this newe rebellyon of Bar-
narde, Lewys assembled his armye
at Copayne foresayd, and fro thens
rode to þe cytye of Troyes in Vyncet,
where he was taken with sodayne
malady, of þe whiche he dyed shortly
after, and not without suspencyon of
venym, whan he hadde ben kyng of
Fraunce fully two yeres, leuynge af-
ter hym two sonnes, that is to saye
Lewys and Charles, or after some
wyters Charlemayne.

The c. lxxv. Chapter.

Lewys and Charles, the son-
nes of Lewys Balbus or Le-
wys þe flamerer, began they
reigne

The death of
Lewys the
second.

Lewys and
Charles the
sonnes of Le-
wys þe flamerer.

reigne ouer the frenchemen, in the
pere of our lordes incarnaciō. but, C
lxxx and the. viij. yere of the reigne
of Alured the kyng of Englande.
The whiche for they were yonge of
age, were put under tynell and guy
dyng of Barnarde the erle of Ar
gill, to whome the father by hys lyfe
had them committed. wherfore the
sayd Barnarde with other of his as
synyte assembled shortly after at
Meaux in Lozayne, and thither cal
led vnto them the lordes of the land
to treat maters for the comon weale
of the same.

In those dayes was a man of great
myght in Fraunce named Gosselyn,
the whiche enuyed the foresayd erle
Barnarde & other, for certayne har
mes to him, by them done in tyme be
fore passed. In auengynge whereof
the sayd Gosselyn intended to putte
hym and other frome the rule of the
land, which he knewe wel they shuld
occuppe while the sayd two children
had rule of the same.

And this euell purpose to bynne
to effecte, he went vnto Conrade erle
of Barre, and shewed to him muche
of his will. And amonge other thynges
lette hym wytte, that if Lewis,
kyng of Germany myght with hys
helpe be made kyng of Fraunce, that
he shulde by hym be greatly auaun
ced. By which meanes he caused the
sayd Conrade to take hys parte, so
that he & other of his assynyte when
they came vnto the foresayde coun
saile at Meaux, sayde that Lewis
kyng of Germany, was more apte
to rule the lande of Fraunce than any
other was. And also after some wy
cers, these Lewis and Charles afore
sayd were not the legittymate son
nes of the foresayd Lewis Balbus,
but gotten in baste of a concubine of

the sayd Lewis.

This matter thus debated and
argued amonges the consaile, lastly
by mooste in nombre it was agreed, &
Lewis kyng of Germany shulde
be by ambassade requyred to come &
take vpon hym the rule of the lande
of myddell Fraunce. The which with
small requeste was agreeable, and in
shorte tyme after came vnto the sayd
citty of Meaux, and offer to Ber
dine. But as soone as the knowledge
was come to Barnarde and other of
hys assynyte, by counsell of Hugh &
Cerry two nobles of Fraunce, the
bysshop of Orlaynes with an erle &
other were sent to Berdine vnto the
sayd kyng of Germany with this
message. That if he were contente
to take vnto hym all suche parte of
the prouynce of Lozayne, as Char
les the Balled kepte from his father
Lewis, without more clayme of the
lande or realme of Fraunce, he shuld
gladly haue it. And if not, he shulde
abide the iudgement of Mars and
his batayle. Wyth which offer Le
wis was well contented, and being
of it in a suer tyme, departed agayne in
to Germany.

Thorough that doyng, the fore
named Gosselyn and Conrade with
other of theyr frendes, were wth it fore
dyscontented of the departure of Le
wis foresayd. But the sayd Bernard
with other of his side, in goodly hast
after conueyed the sayd two children
vnto the citty of Fetter, & there crow
ned and proclaymed thein for kyn
ges, as wytnesseth mayster Robertte
Bagwyne. But the foresayd Gosse
lyn and Conrade not leuyng to the
mater, sente messaungers vnto the
quene of Germany, complaynyng
theym vnto her of the instableness
and tymorousnesse of her lorde, wher
by

Of Lewys kynge of Germanye.

by he had not alonely losse the possession of the realme of Fraunce, but also he hadde put them and all they frendes in great feare and daunger. Wherof hearynge the quene, in her mynde was soze discontented wth her lord and husbnde, and as she durste shewed it to hym as hys reproche and dishonour. And fynally to satisfye the myndes of the sayde Gosselyn and Contrade, she sent into Guyan her brother named Bolo, by whoso aydes and assistance he was of that prouince proclaymed kynge.

Howe Bolo was proclaymed kynge of Fraunce.

Howe the Danys entred in to Fraunce.

The dyscomfyte of the Danys.

Endurynge whiche troubles, the Danys entred the lande, and came vnto the ryuer of Ayger, and robbed and spoyled the countreie wthoute mercy. Wherfore the kynges assembled they people, and gaue to them batayl nere vnto the ryuer of Upen. Where they dystressed the sayd Danys and slewe of them .ix. thousande and drowned of them ouer þ a great multitude in the sayde ryuer. After whiche victorie by the kynges obteyned, a newe beracion & trouble was to them ascertayned, þ Lewys kyng of Germany with a greete pynsaunce was comen vnto a place called Ducy, and to hym was gone the fozenamed Gosselyn and Contrade with all the power that they myght make, & by they ledynge was from thens comen vnto Rybermaunt. But howe so it was, for lacke of perfoymaunce of promysse made by the sayd two erles vnto þ kyng of Germany, & not obserued, he hearynge of the kynges of Fraunce drawynge towarde hym wth stronge hoste, concluded a peace and retourned into Germanye. And the two brethren roode together vnto the cite of Damens or Demeus, where they deuyded the lande of Fraunce betwene they. So þ Lewys

Howe the lde of Fraunce was deuyded.

held to him the costrey nere & about Barps, with þ prouince of Sicustria or Roymandy, and Charles had vnto his parte Burgoyne an Guyan, with promysse made and assured on eyther partye, that eyther of theym shulde ayde and assiste the other.

The c. lxxvi. Chapter.



After this partycon betwene the two brethren thus made, by the meanes of Lewys kyng of Germany, the fozenamed erles Gosselyn & Contrade were vnto the sayd brethren reconcyled and agreed. And for to them redy worde was brought, that Bolo before named kyng of Guyan had wonne the cite of Upen, & therein left his wyfe whyle that he occupied the hilles & mountaynes beyng there aboute: they secretly assembled they knyghtes, & sped them thither, & layd their seage aboute the cite. But durynge this spege the Danys often wasted þ lande of Fraunce. Wherfore Lewys the elder brother, departed fro that spege, leuyng there his brother Charles. But of the sayde Lewys myght comen to the sayde Danys, they as tyrauntes & cruell enemyes to Christes sayth, had spoyled and destroyed a greete nombze of people, wth many churches and temples, and also a monasterie of saynte Peter in Corby, and throwen it downe to the grounde. After which vyle and cruell dede by theym done, Lewys gaue vnto them batayl, and slewe of them a great number, and chased the remnant.

But after this victorie ensued a great wonder. For when the christen hadde as before is sayde chased the pagans or Danes, they retourned as confused and dysparckled, lyke as all

The death of
Kynge ryng
of fraunce.

Charles of
Champayne.

Charles of
Champayne.

all the hoste of Danes hadde them
purued, so that well was hym that
myghte come fastest, and hyde hym
selfe from the daunger of his enemy
for it was thought to them and ap-
parent to they; syght, that they; ene-
myes folowed at they; bakkes with
all kynde of weape, and yet folowed
the no man. The which fecht & syght
of frenchemen, as saynt myne au-
toure, was sent to theym by dyaune
puruaunce, so somerthe as they so
offt before tyme had done the pyce
of they; enemyes, and had not ther-
fore geue due thanks vnto God, but
referred it to they; owne strengthes
and vertue.

Then the Danes hearing of this
dysparlyng of the Chyffe hoste, re-
assembled they; power & prepayed
the to newe syght. Wherfore þe kynge
called together his knyghtes, so as
before is sayd dysparlyd, and mette
with them nere vnto the aboue na-
med cyuer of Lyger. But when both
hostes were within a dayes iourney,
the kynge was aduersed by some of
his counsail, þe he shulde not as then
syght with the. for the whiche cause
he rode vnto Compeyne, and there
kept the feast of Christmalle.

And while the kynge was lodged
in Compeyne, he deliuered his hoste
vnto a noble ma of his lande named
Theodowich, wyllynge hym to go a-
gayne the Danes. Of whose exploit
or spece myne autoure maketh no
mencion, but sayeth that soone after
the foresayd feast, the kynge spedde
him to Turoi, wher he sent to rayse
the Wyts of lytel Bistayne to with-
stande the foresayd enemyes.

In the whiche passetyme he was
there taken with a maladye, and fro
thens in a lytter carped vnto saynte
Denis, wher he dyed & was buried.

As saynt maister Bagwyn, he dy-
ed at Turoi, and was after coueped
vnto saynt Denys, and there buried.
But for all wyters ioyne the reygne
of these two brythren in one, therfore
I wyl nowe shewe vnto you þe syne
or conclusyon of the other brother
called Charles or Charlemayne, the
whiche al this whyle mayntened the
syege about Wyenne, wher his bro-
ther as before is touched lefte hym.
To whō the lordes of fraunce sente
in all haste, geupnge to hym knowe-
lege of the death of his brother, and
also of the great daunger þe lande
was in, by reason of the Danes.
Wherfore when the sayde Charles
had thus wytyng, he left a part of
his people at the sayde syege, & with
the other deale he sped hym towarde
Champayne, for so much as he was
enfourmed that þe Danes were dra-
wen towarde that coste. And as he
was in his iourney, worde was
brought vnto him that Wyenne was
deliuered vnto such persones as he
had there left to maynteyne þe syege.

And after this came another mes-
senger, whiche shewed to hym that
the Danes hadde destroyed dyuers
churches in Champayne and other
places, and howe the byshoppe of
Beawys that agayne them had lad
an host of people, was of the slayne,
and his people chased, & ouer thys
at the foresayd cyuer of Lyger ano-
ther hoste of Danes, with they; le-
der called Hastings was assembled.
The whiche in that partyes wasted
the countrey as the other in other
places dyd, which somdeale apalled
the herte of the kynge Charles. How-
beit by the comfote that he had day-
ly receaved fro the lordes of fraunce,
he kept on his iourney, and made to-
warde the next of his enemyes.

But

But when he dyed nere unto the were it for his owne cowardise, or of the counsaill of his lordes, he fell to a commynycacyon of peace. And finally concluded that Godfrey the pynce of Danes, to cōfesse the fayth of Christ and to be christened, shulde enioye the whole prouince of Frys, And within the same, he with his Danes to inhabyte them.

The whiche condycion of peace was the begynnyng of great sorowe and losse vnto fraunce, as after shal appere. For albeitt that the sayde Godfrey to decreaue the frenchemen shewed outward countenaunce to be a christen mā for a whyle, he shortly after with an hoste of .xl. thousand Danes, he entred Flā, wastynge the countreie tyl he came to Darps, and layde there his spege about the same cytie. But by the archbishop of Paris, then named Josseph, and the inhabitantes of the same, the cytie was manfully defended, so that he with his Danys was fayne to bryche his spege, and from thence yode to the cytie of Laon, whanne it by strength and after it spoyled and robbed, and after bryente. And fro thens to Monsions in pyllynge and destroyenge the countreie as they wente, in so cruell wyse, that the byshoppes and prestes fled from theyr churches, with reliques and adournementes or ornaments belongynge to the same, as the bodys of saynte Germaine, saynte Remigius, and byuers other.

In the tyme of this persecucion, lyke as the land of England was in great daunger, so also was the land of fraunce, by meane of these pagans or myscreauntes Danys. The which resorted from that one realme to that other, and releued them selfe in that one land, whē they were cha-

sed out of that other. But one mys-happe amōges other befel in fraunce at these dayes. For Charles theyr kynge was taken from them in such wyse, that no wyter leueth of hym any mencion howe he dyed, nor whē he dyed, nor so mencion is made in the frenche cronycle, nor of myne autours howe longe whyle he & his brother Lēys reigned. Al by the same sent hystoryall and Antonin, which grounded him vpon the sayde Wynsent, and Iacobus Philippus saie, that these two sayde brythren reigned together and alone, by the tyme of .v. yeares without more.

And the frenche cronycle and also myne autours saien, that Lēys dyed withoute heyre, and that Charles lefte after hym a sonne, whiche was named Lēys, and after for his simple dedes surnamed in laten Aihil faciens, or in frenche, Rēen frānt whiche is to meane in oure speche nought doynge.

But who that lysteth well to aduertise & remēber the order of this cronycle, he shall fynde in this latter sayenge some dyscorde. For where it is sayde that this Charles shulde leue a sonne after hym, to me it seemeth, that consyderynge his yowthe he shulde not be of any lawfull age to gette a chyld. For by all lykelyhode of conuenience of the stowe, yf all be verifed as it is before declared, he coude not passe the age of .viij. yeares at the moste.

Wherefore it must folow of a congruence, that other they reigned lenger tyme, or elles thys chyld or heyre Lēys aboue named, was the sonne of some other man. But to folowe myne autours I shall procede as foloweth.

¶ The .c. lxxv. Chapter.

Lēys

By peace betwene
Charles
and the pince
of Danes.

Howe the
Danes notwithstanding
bandynge the
peace, made
newe warre.

What warre
they.

Howe Charles
was taken
from them
in such
wyse, that
no wyter
leueth of
hym.

Howe Charles
was taken
from them.

Howe Charles
was taken
from them.



Letwys þe fourthe of that name, & sonne of Charles as befoze is sayde, began his reygne ouer the frenchemen, in the peate of our loyde. viij. C. and. lxxxvi and the. xiiij. peate of Aluredus then kyng of Englade. Of this Letwys it is testifed of dyuers wryters, that he shuld enamoure hym selfe vpon a menchon of the monastery of Chyrel, and her dyaue out by force, and marye her vnto his wyfe. For the which dede and other, he purchased the aboue said name, & was called Letwis nought doyng.

In this tyme the Danys, contrary to theyr pmyse befoze made, made new warre within the lād of Fraunce. Wherfoze the frenchemen haupng lytell hope in theyr kyng, sent vnto Charlon o: Charles the Emperour, sonne of Letwys kyng of Germany as befoze is shewed, requyrng hym in al humble wyse to bysite þe realme of Fraunce, and to defende it fro the persecution of the Danys.

In these dayes also was lyuyng in Fraunce the fozenamed Hugh, which as ye befoze haue herd, maynteyned the quarell of Letwys & Charles last kynges, agayn Letwys kyng of Germany. The whiche Hugh of some wryters is called Hue le graud, that is Hugh the greute. This man gathered an hoste of frenchemen, & gaue battayle vnto the Danys, and slewe of them a great nombre.

It shulde seme by the wryters of the frenche storie, that these noble men of Fraunce, as this Hugh and other, shulde haue the rule of the spyrytuall possessyons of abbayes and other houses of relygiō. For of mine autour mayster Sagwyne, they are in laten named abbates, and in the

frenche booke abbis, whiche is to meane abbottes.

And also it is testifed of the sayd wryters, that this Hugh and Robert erle of Darys, were the fyrst that left the distribucion of those spyrytuall goodes vnto theyr knyghtes, & gaue ouer that name of abbotte, þe whych in some other estates cōtynued tyll þe dayes of Robert kyng of Fraunce.

Then it foloweth, accordyng to the request made vnto the emperour as aboue is shewed, he gathered a stronge hoste of Italpans, and perced the lande of Fraunce, and bare hym so victoriously agayne the Danys, that he forced them to obeye to all theyr former promyse & condempnyons. But Eusebi⁹ and other þe wryte the actes of the emperours, sayen, þe this Charles whiche they name the thyrde of þe name, and also Grollus, that is great, subdued the Danys of Fraunce, & compelled theyr leder o: prynce named there Rodetrudus, to take the habyte of Christes relygion and receaued hym at the coulde water. In whych tyme o: sone after (wherof þe tyme is not duely ascertayned) dyed the fozenamed kyng Letwis surnamed nought doyng, when he hadde reygned after most wryters viij. yeres leuyng after hym a sonne named Charles, þe whiche after was surnamed Symple. But for he was to ponge to take vpon him such a charge, the lordes put hym vnder good & conuenient gyardyng, and chafe an other as foloweth, to guyde þe lande tyll he were come to his laufull age, which was named Eudo.

The. c. lxxviii. Chapter.



Eudo the sonne of Roberte erle of Angrewe, beganne his reygne ouer þe french men, in the peate of oure loyde

Dobte þe Emperour came into Fraunce and subdued the Danys.

The death of Letwys þe iiiij. surnamed, nought doyng.

Ende.

lozde. viij. hundred. xlv. and the xxiij. peare of Alured then kyng of Eng- lande.

Ye shall vnderstand that þe aboue named Robert erle of Angew was as tutor and guyder vnto the fozenamed kynges of Fraunce Lewes and Charles, and lastelye was slayne of the Danys. The whiche Robert left after hym. ii. sonnes, Eudo and Robert. Whych Eudo for þe great fame that he was of, and also for þe greute truthe that in hym was proued and knowen, þe lozdes of one assent chose hym to be kyng of the lande for the terme of his lyfe. And as affermeth the frenche boke & other, he was crowned of Walter then archbisshoppe of Sens.

Howbit this is somdele doubtful to be geuen credence vnto, for dyuers reasons that thereunto myghte be made. Maister Sagwyne sayth, that he hath sene some autours, that testyfy thes fozenamed Charles the symple, to be the lawfull sonne of Lewys Balbus, and the fozenayde Lewys & Charles late kynges of Fraunce, to be the bastarde sonnes of the sayd Lewys Balbus.

Then to folowe the mater, thys Eudo in cōsideracion that the sayde Charles the symple was insulphet to guyde the lande, he was putte vnder the guydyng of this sayd Eudo and he was made kyng in his steede. The whiche myghelp defended the lande from all daunger of enemyes. And ouer þe he caused the sayd Charles the symple to be noryshed and broughte by wyth moste dilygence, so that he was informed & exercysed wyth all vertues doctrine, and other thynges necessarye vnto a prynces sonne. And fynally when this noble and vertuous knyght Eudo knewe

that he shoulde dye, he called befoze hym the lozdes & nobles of Fraunce the whiche he charged by solcymne othe, that after his death, they immediatly shulde crowne Charles for they kyng, and dyed soone after, when he had reigned, as affermeth autours by the terme of. ix. peares.

Anglia.

Englun.

The c. lxxi. Chapter.



Edward surnamed the elder, and sonne of Aluredus, bega his regne ouer þe moze part of Eng- lande, in the peare of our Lozde. ix. C.

and one, and the. vii. peare of Eudo then kyng of Fraunce. This was lower then his father in letter & conynge, but he was hygher in honour and worthyppe. By his fyrst wyfe he had a sonne named Ethelstane, the which was kyng after him. By his secōde wyfe he had two sonnes Eddus and Edwynus, and. vii. doughters. And of the thyrde wyfe he receyued two sonnes, Edmund and Eddede, and two doughters Coburga and Cogina.

The fyrst of these. iii. wyfes beght Edwynus, the second beght Cogina and the thyrde was named Ethelstwyda. Of the fozenamed. vii. doughters, which he had by his secōd wyfe, one named Alunda or Almyda, was maryed to the fyrst Otto the Emperoure. And another named Algina, was maryed to Charles the symple kyng of Westfraunce. And the youngest of his doughters as sayth Polyconica, he wedded vnto Lewys kyng of Guyan. But therof speaketh nothyng the frenche cronicle. He set hys sonnes to scole, and hys dought-

Howe Eudo was chosen kyng of Fraunce some of his lyfe.

Charles the simple & some of Lewys nought do. page.

The name of the doughters of Eudo.

doughters he sette to well worke, tak-
 yng example of Charlis the conque-
 rour. By authorite of Forinosus the
 bishop of Rome, he made. vii. bishop-
 pes in Englande. Wherof he ordey-
 ned. v. in west Saron, one in southe
 Saron, & one in Hertia at Doyche-
 ster. He also for þe munkes of Wyn-
 chester layde that his father Alured
 walked, caused hym to be remoued
 to the newe abbay. About the. v. yere
 of hys reygne Cyto Ethelwaldus a
 nere kynsman of his, rebelled agayne
 hym, and occupied þe towne of Wy-
 borne besydes Bath, and toke thens
 by force a nunne, and went thens
 to the Danes dwellyng in Northum-
 berlande, and excyted them to ryse a-
 gayne kyng Edward. But the kyng
 pursued hym so sharply, that he was
 constrained to leue the countrey, and
 sayled into France, and lefte þe nun
 behynde hym, the which the kyng cau-
 sed to be restoyred agayne to the house
 that he was taken fro.

The next yere folowynge, the sayde
 Cyto with his company landed in east
 Englande, & gathered to hym the Da-
 nys of that countrey, and with theyr
 ayde destroyed and pylled þe countrey
 aboute Crikinfoorde & Criklaide. And
 then passed the ryuer of Thamys and
 spoiled the land to Bradenestoke, and
 so from thens returned into east In-
 glia, that is Northfolke & Suffolke.

The kyng folowed his enemies
 and spoiled of theyr landes, whiche
 they helde by compolycion froime the
 ryuer of Ouse, to the bordoure of
 saynte Edmundus lande, commaun-
 dyng hys knyghtes of hys hoolle,
 that none shoulde daggge or tarpe af-
 ter hys hoste, for feare that they were
 not be clipped of theyr enemyes. But
 the kentysh men, whiche trusted to
 muche in theyr owne strengthe, by so-

bered that commandement. Wher-
 fore the Danes awaytunge theyr
 praye, fyll vpon them by busshemen-
 tes, and slewe the moze parte of them
 wherewith the kyng was soze dys-
 contented.

Done after bothe hoolles mette,
 wher after longe fyghte Cyto with
 many of the Danes was slayne, and
 the remenaunte constrained to seche
 peace, the whiche was graunted v-
 pon certayne condycions, that they
 shulde holde theym within the boun-
 des to theym lymitted, and ouer that
 paye perely a certayne money in way
 of tribute.

After whiche peace with them sta-
 blyshed, he reparyed cyties, townes,
 and castelles, that by the sayde Da-
 nes were shatterd and broken.

And aboute the eyghte yere of his
 reygne, kyng Edward reparyed the
 wallys, and also the Cytie of Ract-
 loun, that now is called Chester. To
 the whiche were great helpers Ethel-
 dyedus duke of Mercia, and Elfreda
 his wyfe, daughter of Alured as be-
 fore is shewed, and suster of this kyng
 Edward. And that done the kyng
 buylded a stronge castell at Hereforde
 in the edge of Wales. And he enlar-
 ged so greatly the wallies of Chester,
 that the castel which before time was
 without the wal, is now within.

And the. ix. yere of his trigne, Ethel-
 dyedus duke of Mercia by counsaill of
 his wyfe translated þe bones of þe holy
 king Oswald, fro Bradon to Glou-
 cestre, & there buylded a fayre mona-
 stery in the worschipp of saynt Peter.

In the. xii. yere of kyng Edwardes
 reygne, the Danes repentynge theym
 of theyr couenauntes before made,
 myndynge & entendynge the brech of
 same, assembled an hoolle & met with
 kyng in Westsaxondom, at a place

called

The meetinge
 of the hoste of
 Danes & of
 the kyng.

A peace shew-
 ed betwene
 Danes & kyng
 Edward.

How the Da-
 nes agayne
 theyr promys
 assembled an
 hoolle

at Totten hal. called Totten halle, and soone after at wodnessefelde. At whiche two places the kynge slewe two knynges, two earles, and many thousandes of the Danes that then occupied the countrey of Northumberlande.

The greates
victory that
kynge had o-
uer the Danes.

And soone after dyed the noble man Ethelredus duke of erle of Mercia, of myddell Englande. After whose deathe, the kynge for so muche as he hadde often proued her wysedomme, he toke the rule of that countrey to his wyfe Elfreda, London alonely excepted, the which he toke vnder his owne rule.

Howe kynge
Edwarde com-
mited the erle
dome of Mercia
to the gou-
ernance of
Ethelredus
wyfe.

The clxxx. Chapter.

Elfreda the
wyfe of the late
Ethelredus
duke of Erle
of Mercia.



f this noble woman Elfreda, of the which we all the vertues, it shoulde aske a longe tyme & leysure. But amoges other of her noble dedes, she buylded & newly repaired many townes, cyties, & castelles, as Comworth beshpde Lychesfelde, Stafforde, Watwyke, Shrowesburge, Watrysburge, Eldysburge, in the forrest beshpde Chester, that now is ouerturned and destroyed. Also she buylded a cytie with a castell in the North ende of Mercia vpon the ryuer Merce, that in those dayes was named Ricofan, but now it is called Ricorn. And she also buylded a byrdge ouer the ryuer of Severn whiche is or was named Byrimysburge byrdge. This stronge byrdge for fauour of cytyens and feare of enemyes, helped much the kynge her brother, in geynyng of countaile & buyldyng of cyties. Of her it is tolde that when she had ones assayed, the wood and sojorne that women seie and suffer in bearyng of a chyld. She hated the enbrasyng of her husbände euer, and toke bypnelle of God and sayde, that it was not conuenient or semely to a knynges doughter to be such fles

The townes
and castelles
buylded by
Elfreda, king
Edwarde his
wyfe.

It foloweth
to be chon-
ced.

shely lphynge, wherof suche sorowes shulde ensue or folowe.

In the xiii. yere of the reygne of this Edwarde, a great many of Danys, whiche in tyme of Alured were druen into Fraunce, now returned agayn and sayled about the west countrey, and laded in dyuers places, and toke prayes, and wente to theyr shippes agayn. And at one tyme amoges other, they robbed and spoyled at a place called Archynsefelde, and toke a Bytthe byshoppe and carped him to theyr shippes, and synallye ransomed hym at xl. pound. But as sone as kynge Edwarde hadde knowlege of theyr beyng, he assembled his knyghtes, and sped hym westwarde by lande, and sente an other hoste by shippe to encounter the Danes vpon the see. Wherof bearyng the sayde Danes fledde into Irelande, and by that course voided the lande and handes of the kynge.

Howe the
new kynge
spoyled the
countrey with
a great many
of shippes.

The ryng
of the Danes
into Irelande.

Then the kynge for strengthnyng of the countrey, made a castell at the mouth of the water of Aune, and another castell at Bokyngham, and the thyrde faste thereby, that is to meane vpon euerie spde of the riuer of Ouse one. And after returned into Northampton shyre and Bedford shyre, and foughte there with the Danes of these countrees, & at lengthe subdued them with theyr leader, or Duke called Turketilug.

About the xvii. yere of this kynge reygned Elfreda ladys of Mercia before mynde, gathered her knyghtes. And where the Byttons or Wallhem men brake into the lande about Bykenoke, she with her people withstode them, and amonge other prysoners and prayes, toke there the Quene of Wallhem men.

Howe he
bush the
Danes in
the countrey.

The
of the
of Wall-
hem.

And the yere folowynge kynge Edwarde

warde buylded oꝝ newly redyfyed
the towne of Towsetour and Wog-
moꝛt, and destoyed the castell that þe
Danes hadde made at Cemestoyde.

And that yere the noble Elfreda
wanne the Towne of Derbye frome
the power of the Danes, where they
put her in such aduenture, that foure
knyghtes, whiche were called Gar-
deyns of her corps, were slayne faste
by her.

And þe xlviii. yere of his reygne dy-
ed that noble pynces Elfreda in the
moneth of June, and was buryed in
the monastery of saynt Peter, whiche
her Lorde and she before tyme hadde
buylded within the towne of Glouces-
toure as aboue is touched, which mo-
nasterie was after thyowen vnto the
grounde by the Danes. But Alde-
dus byllshopp bothe of Eozke and
of Worcester, made there an other,
whiche is nowe chese house oꝝ abbay
of that towne oꝝ cytye.

Whē Elfreda was deed, her dought-
ter named Elfwyna helde the lord-
shyppe of Mercia a season. But for
the kyng consydered it to be to great
a thyng for her to rule, he therfore
dysharged her thereof, and ioyned it
to his kyngdom, but not all wythout
strife. For dyuers towne he kepte
of the kyng for a tyme, as Notyn-
gham oꝝ Notyngham, Comwothe,
Derbye, and other, supposynge the
doughter wolde haue defended them
as the mother by her lpe had done.
But finally they came to the kynges
subiection.

Henry archbishopp of Huntyn-
don, that wrote muche of the cron-
icles of England, in prayse of this no-
ble woman Elfreda made dyuers dy-
gres, of the whiche some bene expre-
ssed as foloweth.

Cesars triumphes were not so much

to prayse.

As was of Elfreda, that helde so
ofte dyd raple.

Agayne her enemyes this noble ven-
quere.

Uirago and maide whose vertue can
I not expresse.



When Edward had recon-
cyled these foresayde tow-
nes, he the buylded a new
towne for agayne the olde
towne of Nottingham, on
the south syde of the ryuer of Trent,
and made a byrge ouer the sayde ry-
uer betwene the sayd. ii. towne. And
as witnesseth Policonica, þe yere so-
lowynge in the sayde towne oꝝ cytye of
Notingham. ii. bynges, that is to saye
of Scotlande & Wales yelde them
vnto kyng Edward. The cause why
noꝝ of warre betwene them to be con-
tinued, is not of hym expressed.

Howbeit dyuers booke of wyters
of chronicles of England, as of Ma-
rianus the Scot, Wyllyam of Mal-
mesbury, Henry of Huntingdon, and
other it is shewed that this Edward
subdued the kynges of Scotlande &
of Cūbris, aboute the. ix. yere of hys
reygne. And of the sayde authours
it is also testyfyed, that aboute the. ix.
yere of the reygne of the sayde Ed-
ward, these sayde kynges of Scots
tes and Cūbris, shoulde chole this
kyng Edward for they chefe lord
and patrone, whiche shoulde be about
this season before expressed.

Then this noble pynce Edward
after these chynges set by hym in an
ayr, he in the north ende of Mer-
cia by the ryuer of Peter, buylded a
cytye oꝝ towne, and named it Chyl-
wall, and strengthyd it with hurgh-
tes. And after repayed the cytye of
Wynchester, that soe was defaced
with war of the Danes. After which

f. ii. notable

How the kin-
ges of Scotland
and Wales
yelded the to
kyng Ed-
ward.

Thy
T. J.
H. J.
a. c. 1000

The death of
hysse sonne
warde.

notable dedes by þe pynsaunt þynce
synnished, wth the marpage of hys
chyliden and many other, whiche I
ompte and passe ouer for lengthe of
tyme: synallye thys noble man dyed,
when he hadde reigned wth greute
trauaple by the tyme of. xiiii. yeres
at faryngdon, and from thence con-
ueried to Wyndchester, and there ente-
red in the monastery of saynte Wy-
thpne, leuynge after hym dyuerse son-
nes as befoze is shewed, of the whiche
Ethelstane was eldest.

Francia.

Francia.

The clxxx. Chapter.

Charlys the
Emper.



Charlys surnamed þe
simple and sonne of
Leuys the fourthe
of Wyen faryande,
beganne his regne
ouer þe frenchemen
in the yere of our loz-
des incarnacion, as wtnesseth Iaco-
bus philippus and other, nyne hun-
dred and foure, and the thyrde yere of
Edwarde the elder then kynge of En-
glande. In tyme of whose regne the
Danyss whiche continually ouer the
terme of. l. winters, that is to saye fro
the. x. yere of Charlis the Balliue son
tyme kynge of Fraunce, vnto the sayd
dayes, hadde wasted and spoyled the
lande, notwithstanding the agreemen-
tes made betwene Charlys the Em-
perour and them, as befoze in þe booke
of the. l. Leuys is shewed: yet they
with great hostes arriued in the coun-
tre of Aenstria or Normandy, & rob-
bed and spoyled the countrey befoze
them, and slewe the people thereof
wthout ppye, and frome cytie to cy-
tie kepte on theyre iourney, till they
came vnto þe cytie of Roan. Wherof
the bishoppe beinge in greute drede,
of subuersion of the cytie and destruc-

cion of the chrystien people within the
same, deliuered the cytie by appoynt-
ment, that he with the people myghte
depart thence without bodely harme
whiche vnto the sayde Danyss was a
greute strengthe, and hurt vnto the
lande of Fraunce.

Of thys hoste of Danyss was ru-
ler and leader: a myscreaunt named
Rollo, the whiche was a man of lowe
byrthe, but he was of great strengthe.
The whiche when he had a season re-
sted hym and his hoste, and refreshed
them within the cytie of Roan, he the
set forth his wapercomandynge his
baunwarde to hepe theyr iourney to-
warde Paris. And for the moze speede
to be made, he shipped hys Danyss
ryghte there, and one parte he sent by
the ryuer of Sean, the seconde by the
ryuer of Ayger or Lepz, and the thurd
by the water Geronde.

Then the Danyss that passed by
the ryuer of Lepz came at lengthe to
the cytie of Auntes, and wan that
cytie by strengthe, and slewe therein
muche people. And the bishop of the
same named Guimere beinge at masse
they slewe at the altare. And when
they hadde spoyled that cytie and the
countrey there about, then yode they
to the cytie of Angiers, and byent and
robbed it most cruelly. And that done
they yode vnto Towres, and layde
siege to that cytie, and wanne it, and
byente the abbey befoze the towne: or
standyng without the towne, & spoy-
led and robbed the cytie & towne tho-
rough the countrey of Suran.

When the Danyss had thus sub-
dued the moze parte of Aenstria or
Normandy. They wth theyr duke
Rollo by the ryuer of Sean byent to
warde Paris. And sythe entred the
landes of Burgoine and Suene and
in effect to Senons. Wherof helyng
the mon-

Rollo the
of the Danyss

How the Da-
nyss in greute
hostes arriued
in Normandy.

How the Da-
nyss in greute
hostes arriued
in Normandy.

monkes of the monastyr of Flore they fledde. In tyme that the Danes thus persecuted þe countre of France, and the kynge was not of power them to relyfe, for so muche as Charlys knew well that þe byshop of Roan named Franke, was in good fauoure of Rollo: he therfore sente hym in Ambassade to the sayde Rollo, to requyre a trefwe or trefwe for thys monethes, the which was graunted. The whiche trefwe ended, the sayd Rollo beseged the cite of Chartres. During which spege, the duke of Burgoyne named Rycharde wyth hys retynne assailed the Danes. In tyme of whiche fight Ebalde earle of Boptowe was present, and dyane backe the Danes, and made vpon them a great discomfytur, so that by the prouyse of the foresayde two tempoall lordes, Rollo was compelled to fle & forsake hys spege, & not wythout huge slaughter.

Rollo then hauynge greate dysdayne and dyspleasure of thys ouerthrow and discomfytur of his Danes, reassembled theym that were abrode scatered, and commaunded them to ouer ryde the countrey, and to destroye it in all that they myght. After whiche commaundement thus to them geuen, thys cruell people slewe man, woman, & chyld, that were not apte to do to theym seruyce, and byente the churches and temples, and rauished virgyns as well reygrouse as other. So that myserable it was to beholde the greate abhominacyon of these tyrannous Danes, that byente, robbed and slewe that innocent people wythoute merce.

The lordes and comons thus beset with cruell furpe of theyr enemyes assembled them by lodyr companies and went vnto the kynge, shewynge vnto hym theyr myserie, and blamed

as they durste hys fearefulnesse and negligence, that he noy none for hym otherwyse wythstode the crueltye of the Danes, & had destroyed a greate pecte of his lande.

The clxxx. Chapter.

Charlys hearyng this exclamacyon of hys subiectes, & consyderynge his lacke of power to wythstande that malyce of his enemyes, was ryght pelyse and heuy in his hert, and casting in his mynde many sondry wayes, he lastly determined to sende agayne the aboue named Franke bishop of Roan vnto Rollo prync of Danes, shewynge hym that yf he wold renge his pagan lawe and become a chrysten man, he wold to hym geue in marriage Gylde his daughter, with the whole countre of Nentria for her dowar.

When Rollo had receyued this tynge from the kynge by the mouth of his frende Franke, he somewhat attempted hys furpe and crueltye, and condescended to a trefwe, by the counsaile of hys lordes for the trefwe of. iii. monethes, in the whiche tyme he myghte haue some communicacyon wyth the kynge, for further processe of this mater. So that after it was concluded by the counsaile of bothe prynces, that theyr metynge shoulde be vpon þe ryuer of fode named Ept. where shortly after the sayde prynces had comunicacyon the one wyth the other, theyr people standynge vpon eithur syde of the sayde riuier. Where it was concluded, that Rollo shoulde forsake hys pagan lawe, and take vpon hym the lyncy of Chrystes baptysm, and after to marie the foresaymed Gylde, and to receyue wyth her as is aboue shewed. Wherby the conclusyon thus taken eithur fro other departed, and shortly after at the cy-

l.iii. tye of

The marriage of Charlys & Rollo.

Howe Rollo
was christe-
ned and mar-
ied the daug-
ter of Char-
les kyng of
france.

tye of Roan, all the foresayde cou-
nauntes were executed and fulfilled
And when the sayde Rollo was chry-
stened, hys name was chaunged and
called Robert, after the earle of Pop-
towe, whiche receyued hym at þe font-
stone.

Of this Rol-
lo which was
Danes came
duke William
that conquere
d England.

Of this Rollo or Roberte, descen-
ded synally duke Wyllyam of Ro-
mandy, whiche conquered England,
as after shall be moze clerely shewed.
Then thys Roberte thus christened,
was sealed of the cositre of Acustria,
whome the kyng created duke, and
named hym duke of Acustria.

Howe þe name
of Acustria
was chaunged
into Normandy
etc.

But it was not longe after, þe this
name of Acustria was chaunged and
called Normandy, after the name
of Normans, oʒ men commyng out
of the North, oʒ of Roʒ, that is to
meane North, and men, whiche two
syllables together make Roʒman, oʒ
a man of the North.

The Danes
came of the
Gothes.

Whiche Normans oʒ Danes af-
ter the exposicion of mayster Sag-
wyne, shulde be descended of the na-
cyon called the Gothes. Whiche Go-
thes of the cytle, oʒ men of Sythica
bene dyscended. The whiche Gothes
in the dayes of þe great Constantyne,
foʒ theyr feartinesse and cruelty, were
dyscenyed frome theyr countrey then by
them inhabytred, nere vnto the cyter
called Champs, in the North parties
of Europe, and now bene inhabytred
in Dacia, whiche in our speche is cal-
led Denmarke. And where some men
holde an oppnyon, that Danes and
Saxons shulde be one maner of peo-
ple, it maye well so be. Foʒ Sax-
ons bene of the countrey of Germany,
and contayne the lande after the say-
enge of Strabo, in the weste parte of
Germania. From the flode called Wi-
ltergus oʒ Wiser, vnto the famous
cyter called the Ryne. And Dacia oʒ

Howe the Go-
thes byd inha-
byr Dacia,
nowe called
Denmarke.

Denmarke is in the North parties.

Then to retourne to thys Rollo
oʒ Robert, the story sayth þe he became
a good chrysten man. In token wher-
of as aftermeth the frenche boke, he
gaue vnto dyuers churches and mo-
nasteryes of France greate gyftes,
as well of possellyons as of mouable
goodes, & contynued hys peace wth
the kyng as he befoze had promysed.

After whiche peace thus stablyf-
shed betwene the kyng and the Da-
nes, Robert byother vnto Eudo laste
kyng of France, contrary his trowth
and allegyaunce, sealed certayne cy-
tyes and other holdes of the kynges
enheritaunce. Wherfoze the kyng
seyng that he coulde not resourne
hym of that erreure, by no meanes of
entreatye oʒ other lyke wayes, assem-
bled an hooſte and mette wth hym in
playne batayle, in the which the sayde
Roberte was slayne. Thys Roberte
hadde a suster, whiche was maried
vnto Hebert Earle of Wermondys,
whiche Earle hearing of the death of
his byother in lawe, by entremet of
hys wyfe, as the story demeth, mette
the kyng at the retourne of the feld
and requyred hym in moste humble
wyse, þe he wolde vouchesafe to lodge
wth hym in his manoure called the
castell of Perone.

The kyng callinge no parell,
thanked hym of his kynde requeste,
and graunted to go wth hym, where
he was receyued and festid wth all
honoure. But when this earle hadde
conueyed the kynges frendes and
strength from hym, he then kept hym
there as a prysoner oʒ murdered hym
so that he neuer came at large after.
whiche tydings certaynly known
Algina wyfe vnto the sayde Charlys
the simple mistrustinge the frenche
men, with fewe accompanied, toke se-
crete

Howe Rollo
became a ch-
ristian

Howe Rollo
the brother
Eudo laste
kyng of
France
sch. contr-
ary to king
Ch. I.

Howe Rollo
the brother
Eudo laste
kyng of
France

The on-
treymen
despyed
the prys-
oner of the
kyng
Robert
Eudo laste
kyng.

crete shyppe, and wth her ponge
sonne named Leysa sailed into En-
glande, there to be comforted of her
father Edward surnamed the elder.
And thus ended the raygne of thys
Charles the simple, when he had reyned
after the sayinge of Wyntent hys
to pall and other, by the terme of .xvi.
yere full, leupnge after hym the foze-
sayde chyld, named Leysa.

The cxxxiii. Chapter

Radulphus the sonne of
Ryche duke of Bur-
goyne, began hys rayg-
ne ouer the frenche men
in the yere of our lord
ir C. and. xxi. and .p. xxi
yere of Edward the elder than king
of Englande.

Here is to be noted, that forsomuch
as Algya wyfe unto Charlys p. sim-
ple, was thus secretely boorded that
lande of Fraunce wth her sonne Le-
ysa, and that the lande myghte not
be wthout a ruler, the lordes assem-
bled at Baris, and there toke theyre
counsaile for the admyssyō of an hed-
yngge of the land. Whiche lordes
after longe debatyng of thys matter
fynallye agreed that thys aboue na-
Radulphus o. Rauf, sonne of p. duke
of Burgoyne, as aboue is sayde, as-
serte hys to the crowne shuld be ad-
mytted to kyng, and so was admyt-
ted. Of the whiche, lytle of his dedes
are put in memoire, excepte that in p.
tyne of hys raygne the Sarasins en-
tered the lande of Burgoyne wth a
greate armye, and byd muche harme
in that duchye. Wherefore the kyng
gatherynge hys hoost, met wth them
at a place called in latyne Carrolas,
and in frenche Callo the lesse, where
the frenchemen were vycrys, but not
wthout greate losse of theyr people.

Then it foloweth, whan this Rauf

had ruled the land of Fraunce by the
space of .xii. yeres, he dyed wthout
issue male. And was buryed in the
churche of saynte Calumb in the p. y-
upnce of Brays.

Anglia.

Englande.

The cxxxiiii. Chapter.



Ethelstane the sonne
of Edward the el-
der, beganne hys
raygn ouer p. more
parte of Englande
in the yere of our
lord. ir. hundred &
xv. and the thyrde
yere of Rauf. than kyng of Fraunce

Ethelstan the
sonne of Ed-
ward.

In the seconde yere of the rayg-
ne of Ethelstane, for an buyte and a
peace to be hadde betwene the kyng
and the Danes of Northumberland
he maryed to Wythrycus the kyng
his syster. But after .v. yeres this Wy-
thrycus dyed. After whose deathe he
seizede the countrey into hys owne
hande, and put oute the sonne of the
fozesayde Wythrycus. And when he
hadde thus accorded wth the Da-
nes of Northumberlande, he shortly
after made subiecte to hym Constan-
tyn kyng of Scottes. But the sayde
Constantyne meked hym so lowly to
the kyng, that he restoyed hym to his
former dygnyte. Wherefore, the sayd
Constantyne sayde in prayse of the
kyng, that yt was more honoure to
make a kyng, then to be a kyng.

Howe p. kyng
of Scotlande
was subiecte
to kyng Ethel-
stane.

Whiche acte was done by the assy-
maunce of Polycronycon, in the yere
of grace. ir. hundred and. xvi. whiche
then after that sayinge shulde be the
seconde yere of the raygne of this E-
thelstane. It is testyfyed of Polycro-
nyca, that thys Ethelstane shulde ma-
rye one of hys sisters named Edyth
o. Edyth, but o. Des the syst. of that
name Emperoure of Almayne, and
receaued

recreaned from hym manye p̄cious
treasures. But of thys spekeheth nothing
the cronycle of the Romayns. Howe-
beit it is shewed ther, that the fozsayd
Ottho oꝝ Otto had a wyfe named A-
lunda, whyche as before is sayde in þe
storpe of Edwarde the elder, myghte
be the daughter of the sayde Edward
and of Edgina his second wyfe. But
Vincencius hystorpalys sayeth, that
Henry duke of Barony, whych was
father vnto the fyfthe Otto, sente vn-
to Ethelstane, requyring of hym his
syster to marye vnto hys sonne Otto.
By whyche reason I maye folowe,
that thys Ottho married the sister of
Ethelstane, but not Eopth.

The descrip-
tion of a trewell
sent to Ethel-
stane by Otto
þe Susperous

Rehercell of
all the trewels
that Otto sent

Wher the say-
enges of Polycronycon by-
gyn.

Of these fozesayd trewelles sent by
Otto, one was a p̄cious besell of
stone called Onychinus, whych was
of such clearenes, and also so subely
& craftly wrought, that it appeared to
mannes syghte as grene corne hadde
growen wythin it, and moaned and
waued as corne doth standyng in the
feelde. Moꝝe ouer in it appeared by-
nes burgenynge and berynge fruyt,
and men also to syght, mounyng and
drynkyng. He also receaued the grente
Constantynes swoorde, wherein was
grauen wyth grete letters of golde
the name of the owner. And the hyl-
tes thereof were couered wyth grete
plates of gold. And one of the nayles
was fastened to the crosse of the sayd
swoorde, that Christ suffered wyth his
passyon. But in this report oꝝ sayyng
Polycronycon varyeth fromme hys
fozmer sayyng, where he reportethe
two of the sayd nayles to be spent by
pon the byrdell of the sayde Constan-
tyne, and the thyrde naye to be caste
into a daungerous sholow of the see
as before is reherled in the. lxx. chap-
ter of thys worke. He also receaued
the spere of Charlys þe grete, which

after the appoyon of somme knyghtes
was the spere that Longous opened
wyth Christen syde. And the baner of
sainte Morys, wyth a parte of the ho-
ly crosse, and a parte of the crowne of
thorne of our sauoure.

Of the whych trewels kyng Ethel-
stane gaue a parte vnto saynt Wyl-
thunys of Wynchester, and some he
gaue vnto the abbaye of Palmes-
burys.

I haue sene a cronicle of Englade
which testyfeth, that this Ethelstane
was the fyfth kyng that euer was en-
crowned in thys lande. Albeit I fynde
therof lytle aucthorite, excepte that
Gyudo and other testyfyen, that he
was crowned at the kynges towne,
nowe called kyngeston tenne myles
frome London, of Ethelgyne then Ar-
chebyschop of Canterbury. But that
proueth not oꝝ argueth hym to be the
fyfth so; that reason. For cyghte so
was hys father Edward crowned of
Wemounde Archbyschoppe of the
sayde see. But Gyudo also sayde af-
fyrmeth that Alured grauid father of
thys Ethelstane, was anointed kyng
by aucthorite of Leo, the. v. then by-
schoppe of Rome wherfoꝝe it agreith
better that he shulde be the fyfth.

Then it foloweth in the storpe, that
aboute the. viii. yere of the regne
of thys Ethelstane, dyed Frystane by-
schoppe of Wynchester, and Wyl-
stane was byschoppe after hym.

Soone after Constantyne kyng
of Scottes, brake cowaunte wyth
kyng Ethelstane. Wherfoꝝe he as-
sembled hys knyghtes and made to-
ward Scotland And in his way he tur-
ned to L. Jhon of Beuerlay & offered
there his knyfe vpon the alter sayyng
þ if he returned with victory, he shuld
redeeme hys knyfe wyth a noble pry-
ce, and that doone proceeded bypon
hys

Wher þe
of the
heades

hys tourneye, and in conclusyon dys-
comfyted the Scottes, and broughte
theym agayne vnto dewe subiectyon
And after accordyng to the promysse
before made, he returned to Pojke, &
so to the churche where the corpes of s.
Ihon of Beuerlay laye, redraunynge
hys kniffe woꝛthely as he before had
promysed.

In the .vi. chapter of the .vi. boke
of Polycronycon, it is remembredde
that kynge Ethylstane after this sub-
dunynge of the Scottes, beyng wyth
hys lordes and samplers nere vnto
the castell of Dunber, prayed to god
and saynte Ihon of Beuerlaye, that
in that countrey he myghte leue some
remembraunce oꝝ toke, that those that
then were lyvinge, and also suche as
shulde come after, mighte knowe that
the Scottes by ryghte shulde be sub-
iectes to Englyshe men.

And sone after wyth hys sworde he
smote hypon a greute stone standing
nere vnto the sayd castell, wyth which
stroke the stone was cꝛuen to an elle
in length, that in the tyme of Edward
the thyrde was there remainynge to
be sene. And whyther at this day it is
so, that I am in doubte.

Re haue hard before, that kynge
Ethylstane after the deathe of Suth-
eyrus kynge of Northumberlande,
seized that lande oꝝ prouince into his
owne handes, and put out hys sonne
Whych after allyed hym wyth Con-
stantyne kynge of Scottes, and ma-
ryed hys daughter. Wyth whose sayng
and exhortacyon, he gathered a com-
panye of Danes, Scottes, and other
and etred the mouth of humber wyth
a stronge nauy.

Wherent hearynge Ethylstane, in
all goodly haste prepared hys armye
and at length met wyth hym and hys
people at a place called Byrnfoꝛde,

where he had a great solenne bycro-
tye. For as it is shewed in þe foresayd
chapter and boke, after the kynge by
the helpe of god had defendede the sub-
tyl assault made hypon hym by nyghte
of hys enemyes, he hypon the moꝛne
by the helpe of hys brother Edmund
& Dodo the archyshop, chased hys
sayde enemyes, and slewe there Con-
stantyne kynge of Scottes, and syue
smal oꝝ vnder kynges, and twelue du-
kes, wyth the moꝛte partye of all the
straunge nacjons at that tyme there
gathered. Whych battaill shulde be
done by the meanyng of the sayd Po-
lycronycon, aboute the laste yere of
hys reygne.

The clxxxv. Chapter.



It is also testyfyed
of dyuerse wyttres
þ Ethylstane after
this victorie thus ob-
tained of þe Danes
& Scottes, oꝝ Scot-
tes & Danes he also

subdued þe North Byrons þe dwelled
at Herfords and there about, and com-
pelled them to paye to hym yearlye
for a trybute. lxx. C. ponde of syluer
xxv. C. heade of neate, & .xx. ponde in
golde. But Gwydo sayth that kynge
Ethylstane caused to come befoꝝ him
at Herfords cytye the rulers of al the
North Bytayne, and there had wyth
them such comunycacyon, that he foꝛ-
ced them to graunte vnto hym as a
yearlye trybute. xx. ponde of golde
lxx. hundred ponde in syluer, & of he-
des of neate. xxv. hundred, wyth dog-
ges & haukes to a certayne number
After whych bycrotyes he wente vnto
Grete, and repayred it and the wal-
les therof fully penyly.

Dane Ihon Lydgate a Dunke
some tyme of saynt Edmundes buryng
made a goodly creatyple of thys kyng
Ethel

How Constant-
yne of Scot-
tes was slayne

The testamēt þe
the Northmen
hys payed to
the kynge.

A treatise ma-
de by Iohn Lyd-
gate.

Colbynde a
great Gyaunte

A byson.

Ethelstane, shewing that he was in
so grete persecucion of the Danes
þ he was constrained to cal at Wyn-
chester a great counsaile of hys loy-
des. Whereafter longe debatinge of
the mater, a diuerse ambassades and
messages sent about by þ kyng & the
Danes. It was lastly concluded that
the kinge shulde partie þ him a cham-
pion to fyghte wþ Colbynde oꝝ
Colbynde a gyaunte a Dane, whych
the Danes had apointed for theȝe
cheuetayne. Wherefoꝝ the kyng en-
ferching througþ his landes for such
a knyght and myght none fynd, was
in grete daunger and dystresse and
heynes. And for so much as he well
perceaued that mans power fayled,
he by þ aduise of loydes spiritual and
seporal fil to fasting and prayer, and
continued them by a certain of time
with perfecte & charytable deuocyon.
In time of which sayd abstinence,
a visyon was shewed vnto Ethelstan
comforynge hym, and also commaun-
dyng hym, that early vpon the next
mornyng he shulde stand at þ north
gate of the cytye of Wynchester and
there he shulde fynde amonges þ po-
pule a mā clad in palmers webe, whō
he shulde chose for hys champion.
After whych vpyon thus to him the
wed, he dyd accorþynly, and found a
man of goodly stature and somdeale
stypken in age, a clad as he was mo-
nyshed by þ vpyon. Wherof he first
gaue vnto god thankynges, and af-
ter made request to this manne, that
he wolde take vpon hym this batayl
for the defence of thys lande, whych
layde for hym many reasonable excu-
ses, as wel for hys age as otherwyse.
Howbeit fynally he graunted þ king
to fulfyll hys request and comaunde-
mente. And at the daye before lympe-
ted and assigned met in the felde with

theforenamed Gyaunte called Col-
bynde, wþout the gate of the cytye
in a meddowe oꝝ pasture called Hude
mede where betwene them two was
foughten a longe and cruell fyghte
so that the kyng was in grete fere
of hys champpon. But fynally by the
helpe of god the man wanne the ho-
noure of that fyghte, and slewe that
giant that was of exceedyng sta-
ture, and therunto of grete and pas-
syng strength. Whych victoꝝ by
the manne thus by grace obtayned,
the kyng with hys barons sette him
into the cytye of Wynchester with so
lemne processyon, and conueyed him
vnto the chathedalle churche of the
same, where he thanked God wþ
grete deuocyon, and offered there
the are, wþ the whych he had slayn
the Danes champpon. After whych
oblacyon wþ deuote reuerence & other
obseruaunces by hym and other syn-
shed, the kyng caused hym to be con-
uayed vnto hys court, where he tar-
yed that nyghte wþ muche daunger.
And vpon the moꝝe earlye he made
suche meanes, that he wolde nedelye
departe, and that in the same aparell
that he came thither. Whē the kyng
was aduertysed that hys man wolde
so basely depart, whom he intended
to haue holden wþ hi in hys court, &
to haue endowed wþ ryche posses-
sions: he comaunded him to be brough-
t vnto hys pꝛesence.

And when he sawe he coulde not
cause hym to tarpe, he requyzed hym
to shewe hys name, wherof also he
besoughte the kyng to pardon hym.
Wherefoꝝ the kyng consyderynge
hys basely departynge, wþ many
other thynges in hym to be conside-
red, was the moꝝe desyrous to haue
of hym some knowledge. And for
that he was effectrouse in hys desyre
when

The victoꝝ
of the
per gyaunte
þ Danes
pꝛon.Howe þ he
reuerend
man wþ
cylion.

when the manne perceaued that he coude not wyth the kynges pleasure departe wythout dyscloſynge of hys name, he ſayde he myghte not dyscouer hys name wythin the walles of the ctyte, wythout the offence of hys conſcience.

Wherfoze the kyng graunted to go wyth him till he were in the byode feldeſ. Upon whych graunte thus made, the kyng commaunded byuerſe greate gyftes to be to hym preſented, whych all he bitterly refuſed. Shortly to conclude, the kyng wyth a certayne of his lordes coueyed this ſayde manne vnto the towneſ ende. And when he was thither comen, he there requyred of the perſourmaunce of the promyſe. Where this mā ſyttynge on hys knee, beſoughte the kyng of hys eſpecial grace, that he wolde put aparte hys lordes and other, ſo that he myghte ſhewe vnto hym hys name onely.

Whych done, he in moſte humble wyſe beſoughte hym, that he wolde kepe hys name ſecret for the ſpace of xxiii. houres. Wherof by the kynges affirmauce to him ſymely made he ſhewed vnto him, that he was his naturall lyege manne and ſubiect, and hys name was Guy of Warwyke. Of whych tpydnges the kyng was verie ioyous, and offered hym then of newe manye ryche rewardes and gyftes. But all was in vayne, for he would nothyng receaue, ſo that the kyng and he laſtely departed wyth weappynge eyen. And after as aſſymeth my ſayde authoure, not farre frome Warwyke in a toyldeſnes, he purchaſed by gods purpoſe a lodgyng in an heremitage, where by the terme of two yerres and moze he dwelled and kepte an hardelyſe. And hearynge that dame Felcece hys

owne wyſe fed daylye. till poore men for Chyſtes ſake, he went thither ſo byſe tymes and ſet there hys almes, hys ſayde wyſe then lpyng at the caſtell of Warwyke, not knowynge of anye manne what he was, tyll laſtly he was viſyted wyth ſooze ſykenes that he knewe wel that he ſhulde dye. Wherfoze he ſente hys weddinge rpyng vnto hys wyſe, requyrynge her in all haſte to come and ſpeake wyth hym. Whych ſhe obeyed in humble wyſe, and ſpedde her vnto the ſayde heremitage wyth all womanlye dylygence, and founde hym dead at her commynge, whom ſhe beſpyent wyth many a ſalte tere. And as ſhe was enſourmed of the meſſenger as he dyed ſhe buryed hym ryghte there. And moze ouer as ſayth my ſayd authoure he monyſhed her by the ſayde meſſenger, that ſhe ſhulde prouyde for her ſelfe, for ſhe ſhulde alſo alter her mortal lye the. xv. day folowynge. Whych alſo ſhe obeyed, and made ſuche prouyſon, that ſhe was in that place buryed by hym. All whych matter the ſayd Dame Iohn Lydgate aſſymeth that he toke oute of the booke of Gerarde Cambryes, whych wrote muche of the dedes and doyngeſ of the prynces of Englande, as Polycronyca & other authours teſtyfien, and as the ſayd Lydgate in the ende of his ſayd treatyſe wyneſſeth, as by the matter folowynge apeareth.

The death of
Guy of War
wyke

for moze authoryte, as of this mater Chys tranſlacyon, ſuch as in ſentence Out of latyn made by the cronycalar Called of olde Gerardus Cambrye Whych wrote the dedes, with great dyligence.

Of the that were in Weſtſaxon crowned kynges, Greetely comended for theyr knyghtly

lye excellent.
Guy of Warwyke, in hys famous
wrytynge.



Which sayde treatyse is shewed at length i meter of. viii. staves after the maner of the precedentes, by the dylygent labour of the sayde Dane Ihon Lydgate. The which I haue here set in, for so much as it concerneth mater that was done in the tyme of the regne of thys Ethelstane. The which after accord of moost wryters, brought thys land agayne to onem monarchye, & reigned as king therof by þ ful tyme of. xvi. yeres & buried at the monastyr of Walmesburpe, leuyng after hym no childe. Wherefoze the rule of the lade fylt vnto Edmund hys brother.

The Death of
Ethelstane

Fraunce.

Lewys the. v.

Francia.

The. clxxxvi. Chapter.



Whys the sonne of Charles the symple beganne his reigne ouer the frenchme, in the yere of oure loyde. ix. hundred and xxxiii. & the. ix. yere of Ethelstane then king of England. We haue heard befoze in the ende of the storye of Charlys the symple, howe Elgyna the quene with Lewis her yonger sonne, was fled into Englande to her father Edward the elder. Wherefoze the loydes of fraunce not knowinge where he wth the chylde was gone, chose the fornamed Rauffe for theyr kyng. After whose death the sayde loydes of fraunce bepryng ascertayned of the beyng of the sayde Lewys in Englande sent vnto him the archbpyshop of Senes, and Huges surnamed le graund, despyng

hym to retorne into fraunce, & take therof posselpon.

Then Elgyna heyrng the message of the loydes, and trustynge vnto the by counsaile of her frendes, made her redy with her sonne, and sayled shortly after into fraunce. Where he was receaued wth muche honoure, and shortly after crowned her sonne Lewis kyng at the cytie of Laon.

Thys Lewis is named þ. v. Lewis. In the thyrde yere of whose regne fyl a scarstye of come and bytyle by reason wherof ensued a great famin in so muche that the people dyed þ realme, & many dyed for default. For as wtnesseth the french cronycle, a quarter of wheate was the worth. x. ponde, of that monye, whiche is of value after starlig mony .i. l. s. o. ther aboute. Thys king beyng in mynde the murder and treason done agayn hys father by Hebertte, as befoze in the storye of Charles þ symple is declared, cast & ymagyned in hys mind howe he myghte wthout shedding of blood, reuenge the death of his father, & after many ymagynacions & thoughtes reuolued in hys mynde, he lastly deuysed a letter, & he whiche he charged a seruante of hys to bryng to hys pcesence, when he was set among hys loydes in counsaile. Where kyng Lewys hadde compassed thys in hys mynde, he for nedes of hys realme called a great counsaile of his barony at Laon: whither amonges the other, the sayde Hebertte Erie of Nerlendows was warned to come. And when the kyng was acertayned of theyr comynge, he appoynted a certayne company in harnes to be in a secret chamber, nere vnto the place of the sayde counsaile, and at conuenient tyme after podye vnto the same, and all hys loydes wth hym.

And

And when he hadde a season commo-
ned wth his lordes of suche maters
as hym lyked, sodenly came one to
hym, and sayde that a man was com-
men wth a letter dyrected vnto his
grace oute of Englande, the whiche
he commaunded to be broughte vnto
hys syghte.

When the kyng had vnfolde the
letter, and reade a parte thereof, he
smyled. Wherof the Lordes beyng
ware, purposed the kyng to haue re-
ceyued some iewelless or toposse no-
ueltys oute of Englande.

While the kyng was about to de-
lyuer this letter to his scribe or secre-
tarye, one of his Lordes sayde vnto
hym. Syr, we truste ye haue some to-
cande and mery tydynges out of En-
glande, that ye haue cause of smylyng
I shal shew the cause vnto you sayde
the kyng. There is dwelling in En-
glande a kynnesman of myne named
Hartman, the which is a man of great
myghte, and myne especyall frende.

He sheweth me by this letter, that an
husbandeman or a villayne hadde or
requyred his Loyde vnto his house
to dyner, and vnder the coloure ther-
of he slewe his sayde loyde. And for
the sayde Hartman thynketh the lawe
of that lande to fauourable for suche
an hapnous dede, he therfore wyrteth
to me to haue mine aduise in this ma-
ter. Wherfore sens ye be all presente,
I praye you shewe to me your opiny-
ons in this mater. Whiche wth one
voyce sayde, that the murderere was
worthy to suffer the moste shamefull
and cruell death, & to be hanged and
strangled in a rope. But for the kyng
wolde be certaynly enfourmed of the
consentes of theym all, he beganne
at the hyghest, and so pursued theym
till he came to Hebert Earle of Her-
mendoy, the whiche allowed the sen-

truce as the other had done.

Then the kyng made a token to
the Walsmen betwene hym & them
before appoynted, so that anon they
were present, and set sureholde vpon
the sayde Hebert. To whom the king
sayde, Hebert thou arte the husband-
man or villayne that I haue spoken of
whiche slewe his loyde vnder coloure
of hyddynge or gelyngs hym in his
house. For trayterously thou dydest
requyre my Loyde and father vnder
thyne house or castell of Beron; and
there not remembryng the kynnes
to the by hym before dayes shewed,
nor thyne allegyaunces and trouthe
that towarde him thou shuldest haue
borne, kepte hym lyke a prysoner and
lastely murdered hym, to the grete
daunger agayn god, & to the worldes
shame. Wherfore accordynge to thy
desert, and after thyne owne sentence
and iudgement, take now thy reward
and guardon.

After whych sentence thus geuen
by the kyng, the sayde Hebert was
by the executors ladde vnto an hyll
withoute a Cytye of Laon, and there
moste shamefully hanged. Whiche
hyll for that cause was named Heber-
tes hyll longe tyme after.

How Hebert
was hanged.

About this tyme the seconde duke
of Normandy named William lon-
ga Espata, the sonne of Rollo or Ro-
bert fyrste duke of Normandy, was
slayne by treason of one Arnolde erle
of Flaundes, for encheson & the said
William ayded a nobleman of Wy-
cardye named Herlopyn, agayn the
sayde Arnolde.

This William left after him a sonne
named Rycharde, whiche at the tyme
of his fathers death was not of suffy-
cient age to rule so great a dukedome.
Wherfore Lewis kyng of Fraunce
despouse of that pryncesse, whiche
t. i. of late

of late dayes belonged to his antecessours and progenytours, sought busely the wayes and meanes, to haue this chyld Rycharde vnder hys ruycon & gupdunge. And thys to byng to effecte he spedde hym vnto Roan, callinge there befoze hym the lordes and rulers of the countrey, hauinge vnto them many pleasaunt and fayre wordes, in promysynge to them ayde and assistance to reuenge the death of the lord and duke, and in the conclusion despyed of them & he myghte haue the noysyllhynge and byngynge bp of the chyld, tyll he came to hys lawfull age.

Whiche thinge thus by the kyng despyed, the lordes anone coniectured in theye myndes, & he despyed the keepynge of theye yonge lord, to the ende that he myghte the moze esely obteyne the posselpon of that dukedome. For the which, the lordes and other of the cytie were in great rumour & grudge agayne the kyng. Wherof he being monysshed, to appease the multitude the kyng toke the chyld in hys armes, and so bare hym into the place of the assemble of & people, and there shewed vnto them wyth affirmauce of greate othes, that hys entente was onely for the weale of the chyld: and for the defence of hys countrey, and not to clayme anye ryghte or tytle of the duchye, excepte onely the homage thereof, whiche belongeth to hym by iuste tytle.

By meane of which saye speche the kyng obteyned hys purpose, and caried the chyld w hym into Fraunce not forgettyng the vnkynde dealynge of the Roymans.

When Arnold erle of Flaunders vnderstode that to the kyng of Fraunce the gupdng of the yonge chyld was committed, fearynge that he wth po-

wer of the Roymans wolde runne vpon hym in reuengynge of the chyldes fathers death, sent vnto the kyng ten pounde weyght of golde, wherof every pounde contayneth xii. ounces, and every ounce in value of fyne gold forty. s. so that after this rate hys present shulde be in value to the summe of ii. hundred and xl. pounde. Albeit mayster Sagwyne sayth he sente vnto hym but xl. marke, besechynge hym to be hys good and graciouslye lord, and not to geue to hastye credence to hys accusours. For he in suche wyse wolde declare hym selfe, and deliuer vnto the kyng the murderers of duke William, by meane wherof he shuld certaynlye knowe, that he was innocent of the sayde dukes death.

And ouer this he made a frende about the kyng, which spake good wordes for hym, and putte in the kynges mynde the great hurtes and iniuries that he and hys progenytours hadde susteyned of the Danes or Roymans. By meane wherof thys murdour was forgotten, and moze and moze the kyng maligned agayne the Roymans and to the chyld he bare not so good mynde: as some men thought that he wolde do.

Vpon a daye, when the kyng was retourned frome his dysposyte of hunting, a light complaint was brought to hym of the chyld Rycharde, of an offence that he had committed. For the which he rebuked hym otherwyse then was spyryng to hys honour, and called hym opprobriously, and threatened hym greuouusly, and after that caused hym to be kepte moze straitly then he befoze had vsed to be.

To thys chyld Rycharde was assigned a mayster or teacher: named Osimunde, whiche Osimunde hadde a sampler named Juon. These two apperteyn-

appreceptynge the kynges designa-
cyon that he bare toward the chyld
studied for his enlargynge, and last-
ly counsailed hym þe he shulde sayne
hym selfe syke. The which was done
in suche wyse that all suche as was
wapped vpon hym, supposed hym to be
ry syke, by reason wherof his keepers
toke the lesse cure of hym.

Wherof Osmund beyng ware, and
also beyng sure of the kynges, made
a grete trulle of hearbes of grasse,
wherin he wapped the chyld, and so
conueyed hym out of the cytye of La-
on, and there receyued hym an hoys-
redy for the tourney, and so sped hym
vnto Colup, and deliuered the chyld
to the captayne of that towne.

And from thens he rode all nyght tyl
he came vnto Denlys, & there shew-
ed all his doynge vnto the erle of that
countrey named Bernard, which was
nere kynnesman vnto þe yonge duke.

The clxxxvii. Chapter.

Bernarde hauinge know-
ledge of the escape of hys
kynnesman Richard sent
in al haste vnto Hughe le
graund erle of Baris, for
to haue hys ayde and assystance. The
which without taryeng assembled his
knyghtes, & conueyed the chyld from
Cousy to Denlys or Baynlys to his
necuewe Bernarde, where he was re-
ceyued with much ioye and honoure.

When Lewys was ascertayned of
the scape of Rycharde, and howe he
was in the gurdynge of Hughe the
grete or graunde, anon he sent vnto
hym, geuynge hym in commaunde-
ment that he shulde restore the chyld
to hym. The whiche excused hym,
and sayde that the chyld was in the
keppynge of Carle Bernarde and not
in hys.

The kyng sayng howe he was de-

liued, sente for Arnolde or Arnulfe
erle of Flaunders, which at his com-
maundemente counsailed the kyng
to wyne Hughe le graund with riche
bestowes or gyftes. After whose coun-
saile wythynge, kyng Lewys wyl-
led the sayde Hughe to mete with hym
at the crose of Compeyn, where the
sayd Hughe shortly after met with the
kyng. To whome the kyng promys-
sed grete parte of the duchy of Floz-
mandye, with that that he wolde re-
fuse the partye of the Roymans, and
take his part agayn them. By meane
of whiche promyses thys talle Hughe
was ouercomen, and agreed with the
kyng to warre vpon one partye of the
countrey, whyle he warred vpon thre
other. And shortly receyued an ar-
mye of the kyng, and spedde hym to
Bapon, and made cruell warre vpon
that countrey. And kyng Lewys en-
tered vpon the prouynce of Caur, and
wasted and spoyled that coste in all þe
myghte.

Whan Barnarde the Dane, and
also Barnard erle of Denlys, concey-
ued the vntrowth of Hughe le graunt,
and also the grete hoodes that they
were beset with, by theyr counsailes,
and other, they sente vnto the kyng
certayne messengers, geuynge theym
in commaundemente to saye, that in
bayne the kyng had entered that coun-
tre with his armye, for the cytye of Ro-
an and all the prouynce was at his co-
maundement. Beseechynge hym not
to waste nor spoyle the countrey, but
to ayde & helpe to defende it agayns
theyr enemyes.

Of thys message the kyng was
ryght sayne, and shortly sped hym
tyl he came to Roan, where he was
accoynge to his honoure receyued.
For the whiche cause he sente in al þe
haste vnto Arnulfe erle of Flaunders,

c.ii. wyllynge

wyllinge hym to sease of hys watter in Bayon, vntyll he receyued further knowledge.

The kynge thus resyng in Roan deuyled hys matters at hys pleasure, so that the Normans obeyed theym to all his requestes. And for the good abearynge that Barnarde the Dane was of agayne the kynge, he graunted to hym the gedyng of the ponge duke. And when he shoulde departe, he ordeyned as hys deputye, one named Raouille or Rauf. The whiche after the kynges departure, behaued hym so cruelly to the Normans, that they were veryrke of hym. And ouer thys, the foysayde Barnarde seeyng the kynges retourne, and other moze greuousle punishmente than they befoze hadde susteyned, sent hys messengers vnto Grolle: kynge of Denmarke than beyng at Chyrbourch, wyllyng hym to assemble hys people and to make of theym two hostes. Wherof to sende ¶ one by lande and that other by water, & so to entte the countre of Normandy in wallyng and spolyng it, by reason wherof he myght byng the kynge to some communicacio. Which all was done as ¶ sayde Barnarde had deuyled.

When the kynge had witting of the Danes, that they wth so great a mulcitude were entred the prouynce of Normandy, he assembled his hoste and sped hym thitherwarde, and in procelle of tyme came vnto the Cytie of Roane. Where by his counsaile it was condescended, that a metynge & frendely communicarpon shoulde be had betwene the kynge and the sayde Grolle, at a place called in frenche: Herlicum. Where at the daye apoynted bothe Prynces mette, wth bothe hostes standynge or housynge a lytell dysaunce of. And whyle the two

prynces were there in communicarpon of the deeth and murder of duke Wyllyam, a Dane markynge Herlopyne (for whose causes, as befoze is shewed duke Wyllyam was slayn) w a spere wounded hym so greuouslye that he dyed forthwith, whiche dede his brother called Lambert with other of the frenchemen entendynge to reuenge, wth theyr weapons, fell vpon the Danes, whiche theym receyued with greute dysalence. So that of that a fraye ensued a shympylthe, and after the shympylthe: a foze batayle. For bothe hostes iorned on bothe sides, & faughte cruellye cyther wth other a long while. But in the ende ¶ frenchmen had the woyle, and were compelled to flee. And the kynge to saue hys lyfe fledde also, whiche by reason of hys vntustye hysse, was taken, and kepte secret a certayne of tyme by his talier. But lastely he was dyscouered and broughte vnto the cytie of Roan as a prysoner.

The kynge thus beyng in holde vnder the keepynge of the Danes, Engeberge hys wyfe makynge for hym great dole and sorowe, toke her tourney to the kynge of Germany, whose daughter she was, besechyng hym to prouyde for the deliuerie of her loze and husband. But of hym had she no socoure, but rather dysconforte, shewynge to her that the trouble that her husbnde susteyned: he had well deserued, for his vniuersallnesse that he agayne Wyllyam the duke & Rycharde his sonne had bled.

Wherfoze the quene beyng thus aunswered of her father, rode vnto Hugh le graunde, besechyng hym of helpe in this greate nede. The which at the request of the Quene sent vnto Barnarde erle of Henlys, requyrring to moue some waies vnto the Danes

for the enlargynge of the kyng. By whose labour and meanes lastely a counsaile was kepte at saynt Cler: byon the ryuer of Cyte. Where after many argumentes and reasonys made finally it was agreed that the kyng shulde be enlarged tyll an other daye of communicacyon, lapenge for pledges hys sonne and heire named Lothary the byshop of Senlys, and the byshop of Beauuayse. Whiche done the kyng was set at large, and forthwith rode vnto the Cytie of Laon, Where he abode the other daye of communicacyon, whiche after was holden at the forsayd ryuer of Cyte. And concluded a peace, whiche lasted but a shorte while after.

This peace thus confirmed, Scollo the kyng of Danes with greates gyses was retourned frome whence he was despyed. And Rycharde the pong duke toke vpon hym the rule of hys owne signory, and grew and encreased forthwardly. Wherof Hugh the graunde taking hede, and beholding hys wyse demeanure and conuersacyon, made suche labour and meanes vnto Baruarde earle of Senlys that he maryed to hym hys daughter named Emmaret. Wherof being enfourmed the frenche kyng, caule in hys mynde thys greates alpaunce bytweene the ponge duke and two great perys of his lande, and thought that these, iii. knyghts in amyte and alpaunce shoulde dysurbe hym when they lyed. Wherof he called to him Arnold Earle of Flaunders, by whose counsaile he sente the sayde Arnold vnto Ottho kyng of Germany, requyryng hym of ayde to warre vpon the Roymaynes, and to breake this assurye of this ponge duke, and of Hugh le graunde, & of Baruarde earle of Senlys, & for hys laboure he shulde haue

to him and to his heires the prouince of lordshyp of Lozayne.

Ottho with thys couetouse promysse deceyued, assembled his burghers, and at the daye and place appointed mette with the kyng, and with theyr people sped them to Roan, and layde siege vnto the cytie. And while the kynges were occupied in wasting and bytynge the byllages nere vnto the Cytie, to putte the Roymaynes in the more feare, Ottho sente hys newe with a certayne of hys people in secretes wyse vnto the gates of the Cytie. But when he was comen to the gate that opened towarde the ryuer of Wyen, and thoughte there to bypne his enterpryse, the cytyens susceid ouer hym lordshyp, and gaue to hym batayle, and slewe hym and many of hys compaynes, and the remnaunte they chased from the walles of the cytie.

When Ottho had wytyng of the ouerthrowe of his men and deathe of his newe, whom he enterly loued, he made inwarde heynesse, and caste in his mynde how he myght reuenge the deathe of hys newe. But when he appoyched the Cytie, and behelde the strength therof, with also the fearenesse of the Roymaynes, he repented hym of enterprysynge of that sorowful, and turned all hys hatred vnto Arnold earle of Flaunders, by whose searpyng and counsaile that brage was fyrst begun, in so muche that he sought the meanes to bypne the sayd Arnold into the handes of the Roymaynes.

Wherof Arnold beyng warned trusted his stuffe and harnays secretly, and in the nyghte stole awaye, and so retourned into Flaunders with his retynne. The which thinge knowen to the two kynges, in as secretes wyse

The death of
Lewis the v.

as they myghte, departed also frome
the siege. But yet therfore they ene-
mies beyng ware, pursued them and
slew many of theyr company. And of
the pere that this was done in, hadde
ronne his ful compass, Lewis þe king
died, and was buried in the temple
of the Byshoppe saynte Remigius :
within the Citie of Rannes, when he
had reigned in great trouble. xi. ye-
res leuynge for his heire a sonne na-
med Lotharye.

Englande.

Anglia.

The clxxxviii. Chapter.

Edmunde.



Edmunde the by-
thet of Ethelstan :
and sonne of Ed-
warde the elder, &
of Ethelwida þe. iii.
wyfe of the sayde
Edward, beganne
his reygne ouer England, in the pere
of our Lorde nyne hundred and forty
and the. vii. pere of the. v. Lewis then
kyng of Fraunce.

In the fyrste pere of his reygne,
the Danes of Northumberlande re-
belled agayne hym. And for to make
their party the stronger, they sent for
a Prynce of Danes named Aulasse,
then beyng in Icelande. The which
broughte wyth hym an other Prynce
of ruler of Danes named Regnald
with a greate hoste of Danes & other
straunge nacionys, and entred þe foie-
sayd countre, & warred byn the next
borders, in wastynge and spoyleng þe
inhabytauntes of the same.

Wherof whē kyng Edmund was
warned, anon he assembled his peo-
ple and sped hym toward the countre
and lastly fought wyth the two sayde
prynces of the Danes, of at the leaste
chaased them from towne to towne tyl
he foiled them with al their company

of straunge nacionys to forsake utter-
ly that pryncce, and bet downe that
countre of Cumberland þe had muche
fauoured and ayded þe sayde enemies
agayne hym, and toke therein greate
pryses, and deuoyded them amonges
his knyghtes. And that done, other
for the good seturce that Malcolyne
kyng of Scotlande had in this by-
age done vnto the kyng, of for the
trowth and allegaunce þe in tyme
folowynge shulde beare vnto hym, of
for bothe, the kyng gaue there to the
sayde Malcolyn the countre of Cum-
berlande, and leased all the resydue
of the kyngdome of lordshipp of North-
umberland, and ioyned it vnto his
owne kyngdome.

But yet the Danes retourned a-
gayne in the tyme of Edwardus þe nexte
kyng as after Malbe shewed, so that
as yet the fyne of ende of this kyng-
dome is not accompted.

This kyng Edward had a no-
ble woman to wyfe named Elgyna,
of whome he receyued two sonnes na-
med Edwyne and Edgar.

And as testifyeth Henry archde-
con of Huntugdon, this Edward
had ofte warre wyth the Danes, the
which as he affermeth helde then ma-
ny good townes in myddle England
as Lyncolne, Notyngham, Derbye,
Stafforde, and Lyncetour, the which
by his knyghtly manhode he wanne
from them. And amended many thin-
ges whē his realme that had ben lōg
tyme in disorder by meane of the Da-
nes. Of the ende of fyne of this Ed-
munde byuers oppynions there be.

For Marianne the Scot sayeth, that
whyle this kyng Edmund endeue-
red hym selfe to saue his seter frome
the daunger of his enemy that wolde
haue slayne hym at Bulker church, Peter's
the kyng in tyddynge of the frape: was
was

was wounded to the death, and dyed shortly after.

But Wylsam de regibus sayeth that the kynge beyng at least at the forsayde towne or place, bypon the daye of Saynt Augustyne, clyped a felon sytting in the hal named Arof whych he before tyme for his felony hadde exiled, and lepte ouer the table and plucked that cheefe by the heare of the head to the ground. In whych doyng the sayd felon with a knyfe wounded the kynge to the death, and also with the same knyfe wounded manye other of the kynges seruantes, and at length was all to helment & dyed forthwith. If this be true, it shulde seme that kynges at those dayes vsed not the honour that they now haue and exerce. But whych of these two meanes was vsed in the kynges deeth, by a grement of al wyteres this kynge dyed, whan he had reygned. vi. yeares and moze, & was buryed at Glassebury the whych before he had sumptuously repayred, & left after hym two yong sonnes, as before is remembred, Edwyn and Edgar. But for they were to yong to rule the land, therfore the rule therof was comytted to Edredus theyr vncle and brother to theyr father

The clxxxix. Chapter.

Edredus the brother of Edmunde and sonne of Edward the elder, and Ethelswida his wyfe began his reygne ouer the realme of Englande, in the yere of our lord. .x. C. and. lxxviii. & .xliiii. yere of the .v. Lewis the kyng of Fraunce. The whych as before is touchyd was admytted kynge by authority of his barony. For so muche as the two fornamed chyldren of Edmunde, Edwyn and Edgarre, were

thought to yonge and insuffycent to take vpon them so great a charge. The whiche Edredus was anointed kynge of Wydd archbishop of Canterbury in the towne of Kyngeston. And soone after he warded vpon the Danes, that then were recetred into Northumberland, or after some wyters there dwellynge vnder trybut of the kynge, subdued before of Edmunde his brother, and bette theym downe, and caused theym to holde & obey vnto theyr former couenautes. And the Scottes then began to batye whych he also broughte vnto due obedience.

After a certayne tyme, the Danes of Northumberlande, whiche euer continued full of gyle, and doublenes, not beyng contente to holde the couenautes before made and promysed vnto Edredus the kynge called vnto them theyr olde accessaires and helpers, and detraied from the kynges subiectes the cytye of York and other stronge towncs and castels, to the greate hurte of the countrey, and vnto dyspleasure of the kynge.

Wherfore he beyng therof aduertysed, in goodly and conueniente hast assembled his people, and spede hym thither, and destroyed muche of the lande. And in that fury bynt the abbey of Rypon, whiche the Danes kept for a fortesse and strength, and wan from them muche of the strengthes that they to fore to had wonne, & broughte theym agayne vnder his subiectyon.

When this kynge Edred had thus spedde his iourney, and was returninge into Englande, northyng suspectyng the sayde Danes, a compaigne of theym by the certyng of Hyrcus a kynge or prynte of the Danes then folowed the kynges host, and on this

thys halfe yowhe fell vpon the kyn-
ges tereward: and destroyed & slewe
many a man. For the whiche doyng
the kyng was soze amoued and tur-
ned hys people agayne, entendinge
to haue destroyed þ country viterlye

Whercof the Danes beyng ware,
so lowly meked them vnto hym and
gaue vnto hym such gyftes, that the
kyng refrained hym of the greates
that he had purposed to theym. But
amonges other actycles þ he bound
them vnto, one was that they shulde
banyshe and viterly refuse they; soze
sayde duke o; kyng called hyrcus.
Whiche thynge wyth dyuerse and
manye other graunted and fermye
bounde to kepe, as well by hostages
taken as other suretye, the kyng re-
turned into Englande ioyninge this
kyngedome to hys other. So that
here is rekened the end of thys kyng
dome, whiche shulde endure as be-
foze is shewed in the. C. ix. chapter of
thys woike, by the terme of foure hi
dyed. and. ix. peates,

In the same peate that the kyng
had thus subdued þ Danes, a strong
sykenes toke hym so, that he dyed &
was buryed in the cathed; all church
of the cytye of Wyndchester, in. x. viii
yere of hys age, & þ. l. yere of hys rey-
gne, as testyfyeth Gyspo and other.

Francia.

The. cxx. Chapter.

Locharius the eldest
sonne of the. v. Lew
is beganne his reig-
ne ouer the French-
men, in the yere of
oure lordes incarna-
cion. ix. hundred and
lv. and the. viii. yere of Edwardus then
kyng of Englande. Thys Lothay;
by meanes of Thebaude o; Theo-
balde Erie of Chartres, toke partye

agayne Rycharde duke of Norman-
dye. And so; to haue agayn hym som
groundly cause he sent vnto the duke
monysynge hym to haue in mynde,
the fayeth and allegaunce that the
dukes of Normandy ought to bere
vnto the kynges of Fraunce. And so;
mayntaynyng of the same, and so;
other matters that he hadde to speke
wyth hym of, he willed hym to come
to a place apointed, where all suche
matters myght haue farther expedy-
cion. Al whiche commaundement o;
request was graunted of the duke.

When the kyng had receaued this
answere from the duke, wherof he de-
med befoze the contraye, he sente so;
Arnolde erle of Flaunders, Godfrey
erle of Angewer, and Theobalde be-
foze named. By whose counsailes af-
ter many argumetes made the kyng
agreed to call the duke vnto the cy-
tye of May; and there to be trayn hym
At whiche daye and place apointed
the duke w a conuenient company
came vnto the sayde cytye syde, there
abydyinge the comyng of Lothay;
vpon the other syde, whiche lastly ca-
me thether wyth a greate people.

Wherof when the duke was ware he
fered treason, so; the whiche cause he
sente espyes to knowe of the kynges
intent. And they as wyse men espyed
all the purpose of the hoost, & shortly
returned, & shewed to the duke that
he was in great daunger. The which
shortly after appered so; the French-
men began to passe the riuier in great
number.

Then duke Rycharde consyderyng
that he was of so lytle myght to wyth-
stand the great power of the French
hooste, sente aparte of hys men to de-
fende the passage, and wyth the rem-
naunte returned into the cytye of Ro-
an. Whercof the kyng beyng ware
that

Francia.

Lotharius

that the duke was hym escaped, called agayne his people, & with great dyspleasure returned vnto Lyon.

It was not long after that the kyng assembled a greete host of Burgonyons and Frenchmen, and entred into Flaundres, and besieged the cite of Bayon, and lastly wanne it by the treason of one Gylberte a knyght belonging vnto the cite. Theobald a boue named. When the kyng hadde thus wonne the cite of Bayon, he betoke the keepinge thereof vnto a knyght. The whiche puttyng therein a strengthe of knyghtes, yode vnto a castell called Harmurle, and besieged it with a certayne of knyghtes. In whiche season the kyng for needes of his realme, returned into Fraunce.

When duke Rycharde was ware of the kynges departure, he with his people passed the water of Wash, and costed the country, and fyl sodaplye vpon the Theobalde kyng at the forsaide seige, and slew of his men bi. C. and. xl. parsonnes, and put the cite in such a feare, that he escaped w greete daunger, and fled with small companye, till he came to his owne cite of Chatteris.

Then duke Rycharde considering the greete malice of his foeme, and strengthe of them, sent vnto the kyng of Denmarke then named Erarde, requyringe hym of a pde a helpe for to withstande the malice of his enemies.

The which Erarde receaued gladly that message, & promysed to theim all they request, & shortly after sente to the sayd duke a great army of Danes, whiche sped them by the see till they came to the place wher the water of Wash falleth into the see. Wher of the duke being aduertysed, in short

space dyue vnto them with his people, and so with them entred the cite of the cite of Chatteris, in wasting and destroying it without mercy, and after entred the lande of Fraunce in wallynging it, and slew of people without mercy and ppy.

For this mysery & tyranny thus executed by the Danes, the kyng being therewith confused, sente for the byshoppes of his land, to haue theyr advice. Amonges the which the byshop of Chatteris being present, was by the hois counsaile admitted to go to the duke, and knowe the cause why that he bring a chrystyan man, made suche destruction of the chrystye people, and occupied the lande of churche men with so manyfold hartnes and searhes, and to conclude the tyme of trespase for a certayne of tyme. The sayde byshoppe accomplisshinge the kynges pleasure, was answered of the duke, that this verayon that he put the lande of Fraunce to, was for the injury that the kyng had before tyme done vnto hym, and yet contynued the same in holdyng from him this cite of Bayon, the whiche he hadde gotten to his great enemy the cite of Chatteris. So that in conclusion a restrainte of warre was grauntede, vpon condycyon that by a day assygned, the kyng would apoynt a day of commynycacyon, and in the meane tyme resioye vnto hym his cite of Bayon.

When the kyng had receaued the answer from the duke, he made such meanes that the duke receaued his cite of Bayon, with all dyspleasure forgiven agayn the fornamed Theobald. Whiche was done by metpayson of a religious manke, as assymeth the french boke. And after the day of metpayge was appoynted at a place

When duke Rycharde and the kyng were agreed

a place called Gyndolfoss. Where the duke made obynasice for receyving of the kyng, and commaunded the papynis and Daines to behaue the reuerently agayne the kyng and his people, & which was obyed in al ome maner.

Whiche & duke
recreased the
kyng.

And & kyng there receaved with muche honoure, hadde vnto the duke manye goodlye wordes, requyryng hym to forget al hys former unkyndnesse, trusyng to helpe vnto hym suche pleasures in tyme to come, that shulde recompence all the former dyspleasures and unkyndnes by hym be fore committed. With which saye speche the duke takynge it without dyspyllacyon, was well satisfiede and content, so that after assuraunce of amptye and peace betwene theym stablyshed, ether geuynge vnto ether greate and ritche gyftes, they departed as frendes. The which peace continued durynge theyr lyues.

The. ccc. Chapter.

Lothayze thus being in loue and amitie with the Roymanes, caste in hys mynde howe he myghte help vnto hys newe Otthon kyng of Germany, & prouynce of Austracy or Lozayn, & in tyme passed was belongynge to hys progenytours. And thus to bynge to effecte he gathered in ryghte secrete wyle a chosen host of Frenchmen, and with them passed the country in such wyle that he was entred the cytie of Aquisgram, or ayne greate fame or noyse therof made. Wherewith Ottho being dysmayde, fled for that season and suffered the sayde Lothayze for that tyme to execute hys pleasure, so that the sayde Lothayze spoyled the kynges palayes and other places, to the greate entyching of hym and his

hooste. And when he had tarped there a certayne of tyme, he returned with out battayle with greate pompe into Fraunce.

It is shewed before in the begynnyng of & story of Ethelstane kyng of England, that Wery Duke of Saxonne, the which is mente for Germany, sent vnto the sayde Ethelstane to haue hys sister Alunda to mary vnto hys sonne Ottho.

Ye shall vnderstande this Henry is of some wyrters admytted for emperoure. But hys sonne Ottho forenamed, was Emperour in dede, whose sonne this Ottho was about named, and called the second of that name, and Emperour after his father and sonne of the forenamed Alunda sister to Ethelstane.

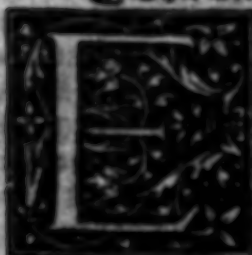
Then this second Ottho Emperour & kyng of Germany, being thus as ye haue hard surpysed of hys newe Lothayze kyng of west Fraunce gathered a stronge hoost and entred the realme of Fraunce. And as wyrtesseth Gerardus wyrtter of hystories, destroyed the country of Doisons and lastly came vnto Parys, and byet the suburbes of that cytye, and hadde a greate parte of hys will of the sayde Lothayze. But the frenche cronycle bargeth from this saying, and sayeth that Lothayze by the helpe of the duke of burgoyne and of Hugh Capet erle of Parys, after & sayde Ottho had spyed the suburbes of the cytye of Parys issued out of the towne & fought with the Emperour, and compelled hym to geue backe and fle. Whom & kyng pursued tyll he came to the ryuer of Aysy or Sene, where ether host encountered with other a foughit cruelly. But at length the Emperour was foyled to foylake the feeble, and much of hys people slayn & drowned within

within the sayde riuer. And so great a number as assymeth the frenche flozpe, that the court of f water was stopped, and ouer flowed the felde nere vnto the sayde ryuer.

But this bycropp not withstanding as wpmelseth mapster Cogwyn, the kyng contrary the mynd of the duke of Burgoyne, and also of Hugh Capet, released vnto the Emperour the tyle & ryght of Lozayne. The which was cause of couetyng of the realme by the sayd Hugh, & blurpyng of the same, as assymeth the sayd authour. Which agreement betwene these two pynces stablyshed & ended, ether returned into hyr owne countrey. After the whych season no notable dede is put in memozy of the sayde Lothary; so that he synally syckened and dyed in the peare of oure loyde. *ix. C. lxxx. & vi.* when he had ruled hyr principat by gouernourly by the full terme of. *xxx.* wynter, and was buryed in the mynster of s. Remigius in f cytie of Rapanes, leuynge after him a sonne named Lewis.

Anglia.

The. cxxii. Chapter.



Edyous o: Edwin the eldest sonne of Edmund brother of Ethelstane, beganne hyr regne ouer Englande, in the peare of oure loyde. *ix. hundred &*

lvi. & of the seconde peare of Lothary; then kyng of Fraunce. This Edwin was crowned kyng at kynstone o: kyngestowne besyde London, of the archebyschoppe of Caunterburys. The whych selfe day of hyr professy on o: coronacion, broke sodenly from hyr loydes, and entred a secret chamber, and there occappyed hym selfe sin-

fully with another mans wyfe. Whose husbonds as one withoute testyfyeth he flew, for to haue the vnlawful vte of her betwye, not consyderynge the alpaunce of affinite of kyndred betwene them, as assymeth the sayd authour. Edmund wyter of Royses, sayeth that Cogwyn contrary the lawes of f church, helde a woman as hyr concubyn. Wherefoze Dunstane accused hym vnto Odbo archbyschop of Caunterbury, by whose power the kyng was caused to refuse and forsaik the company of f woman. For the whych Cogwyn bare great malysce vnto Dunstane, and at length by hyr cropp power, banyshe hym his land, and forced hym for a season to holde hym in Flaunders. And for the malysce that he bare towarde hym, he dyd muche dyspleasure to all blacke munkes of Englande, in so much that at Walmysbury he put out the monkes and set in secular prestes in thayr steade.

It is red of hym, that he toke such pycpous Jewels as Ethelstane had befoze receaued from Dehon the Emperour, geuen vnto Winchester and Walmysbury, and gaue them vnto alpaunces and straungers. And thus was not onlye vnkynde to the munkes, but also he used such tyranny, and other vnlesful meanes to hyr subiectes, that lastlye they rebelled agaynst hym, and speciallye the inhabytantes of the countrey of Mercya o: middle Englande, and also of Nozthymbrys, and putte hym clearelye from all kyngelpe honoure and bygnity, when he had reigned after most wynters the ful terme of. *xxx. yeres,* & was buried after, in f cathedra churche of Winchester, leuynge none heyre of his body, wherefoze the rule of the lād fyl vnto Edgar his yoger brother.

The. cxxiii. Chapter.

Edgar

How Edwin was accused by Dunstane,

Howe the subiectes of Edwin rebelled and deposed hym of al hyr kyngly honoy

Edgar þe
þer of Edm

Edgar the seconde sonne of Edmunde and brother of Edwyn laste kynga, beganne his reigne ouer the realme of Englande, in the yere of oure Lord. .x. hundred and. .ii. and the. .v. yere of Lotharyus then king of fraunce. The whiche of dyuerse wyters is wrytten to be of the age of. .xv. yere, when he was admytted for kyng tyl he hadde reigned the ful tyme of. .xii. yeres. Whych tyme ended and expyred, he was enoynted & crowned kyng in the cytye of Bath upon a whytsonday, falling then by the. .xv. daye in Maye, of Dunstan and Oswalde Byschoppes, that one of Caunterburge, and that other of poke.

In the begynnyng of hys regne he called home Dunstan, that befoze was exiled of kyng Edwyne.

Howe and by
whiche Englaunde
was made one
monarchye of
kyngdome.

Then he made Dunstan that was abbot of Glasterburge. Byschoppe of Worcester, and buyed and knyt into one, the prouynce and lordshippes of Englande, and made of them one monarchye and kyngdome.

In many places he put away clerkes and prestes that lyued bycouisly and set there for them munkes. And as wrytten is by Gylde, Polycronyca and other, he buyded and repayed to the number of. .xl. houses of religyous, whereof Abyndon, Peterburgh, Thorney, Kamespe, & Wynton were parcell of them.

Howe Edgar
remoued the
naughtye pre-
stes, and put
in as cruel as
woode mores

And at Wynebester in the new abbe he put in Monkes: where befoze dayes were secular prestes.

The cause whereof was, for so muche as the prestes fled or negligently slowthed þe dyuine serupce of God and let bykers in theyr places whyle they lyued at theyr pleasure in other places, and spent the patrymonye

of that churche after theyr sensuall wyl.

Then kyng Edgar gaue to the bykers the lande that befoze belonged to the prebendaryes, trustyng there by that they woulde do theyr duties. But it was not longe to, or the sayde byrates were as neglygent as the other. Wherfore finally, the kyng by aucthorite of Jho b. of Rome the. .xii. of that name, voyded clearly the prestes and ordayned there Monkes, though some of hys prelates were not therewith contented.

The laste
Edgar kyng

Thys Edgar kepte suche iustice, and dyd so sharpe execution, that neuer befoze hys dayes was dyed lesse felony or robberies. And for he wold haue the rauenous beestes destroyed thorough hys lande, he caused Lud wallus pryncer of kyng of Walys, to pelye to hym petyce by way of tribute thye hundred boules. By meane wherof wythin the space of. .iiii. yeres after in Englande and Walys myghte scantely be founden one woulfe a lyue.

The laste
of Edgar
was
England
was

It is wrytten of dyuerse authours that kynadus kyng of Scotlande dyspyssed Edgar, for that that he was lytle of stature. Wherof Edgar beinge warned, despyed the sayde kynadus to dyner, and made to hym good countenaunce. After whych dyner ended, he toke the sayde kynadus by þe arme, and so wyth him helde company tyl they came into þe felde. Wher beyng byseuered frome both theyr seruauntes, Edgar dyeme from vnder hys garment two swordes, and despyed kynadus to take the chosse of the and sayd to him: now thou hast good layse to save thy strength wyth myne, that befoze tyme thou haste so muche dyspyssed. And lette vs now proue whiche is moze worthy to be subiect

Howe Edgar
dyspyssed
the sayde
kyng of
Scotlande
for his
littleness

subiecte to other. It is not fyttinge
for a knyghte to make greace boile at
the boorde, and to do lytell in feld.

When the Scottishe kyng harde the
kyng thus challenge hym, he knewe
well hys wordes before spoken were
disclosed to the kyng, wherof he was
not a lytell abashed. But for to ap-
peace the kyng, he behaved hym so
lowely, and gaue to hym suche plea-
saunt wordes, that the kyng forgave
the trespassse.

This Edgar amonge other of his
polytyke dedes, vled in þe somer tyme
to scowze the see wth certayne shyp-
pes of warre. And agayne the wynter
he prouided to lape the sayde ship-
pes in sure hauens, and had redye in
hys owne seruyce, and in hys Loydes
houses, a certayne number of souldy-
ours that were allwape redye when the
kyng had nede of them. And his shyp-
maysters were in wages wth hym
thorowgh the yere, that euer attended
vpon the shippes, to se that nothyng
fayled, that vnto theym was necessa-
rye. By meane wherof he kepte hys
lande in great quiete fro outward ene-
myes. And in the wynter he vled to
ryde ouer the lande, and to se how his
offycers entreated the people. And yf
any were accused of extorcion or other
crimes, and agayne them fully ex-
pely proued, he yd vpon al such warpe
correccon.

And for so muche as in his dayes
greate myltitude of Danes dwelled
in dryet places of Englande, which
vled many vices, and specially great
drynkyng, wherof ensued dyunken-
nesse and many other vices, to the e-
uill examples and hurte of hys com-
mons & subiectes: he therfore ordey-
ned certayne cuppes wth pyntes of
mayles set in them; and ordeyned and
made a law, that what person drank

past þe marke of one draughte, shulde
forfayte a certayne peny. Wherof the
one half shulde fall to the accusour, &
that other halfe to the ruler of the bo-
rough or towne that the offence was
done in.

It is tolde of thys Edgar by dy-
uers authoures, that he vpon a sea-
son beyng at Chester, entred þe cytye
of Dee, & there lytting in a bore, toke
the rule of the helme, and caused, byt
kynges, which of Gyudo ar called re-
gull, whiche is to meane small or ly-
tell kynges or vnderkynge, & which
he commaunded to towe him vp and
downe the cytye vnto saynt Johans
churche, and from thens to hys owne
paleys, in token that he was lord and
kyng of so many prouynces.

This noble Edgar had two wy-
ues. By the fyrste þe was called Egel-
fleda the whyte, he had a sonne that
was named Edward. He was after
kyng, and slayne by reason of hys
stepmother Alfrida, called in the en-
glish the cronicle Estrylde. And vpon
his seconde wyfe Alfrida or Estrylde
he gat a sonne named Egelredus, or
after the english boke Elfred, which
was kyng after Edward the mar-
tyr, as after Halbe shewed. And of s.
Wylfryth, whiche of some wyters
is accompted for a menchon, he had
a daughter named Cyth. But thys
was of bast and not in wedlocke.

For as Gyudo and Polydoron testi-
fyen, this byrgin Wylfryth knowing
that the kyng caste to her vnlawfull
loue, put vpon her þe habite of a nunne
thynkynge thereby to withdraue the
kynges loue. But that notwithstanding
she was at length broughte to
the kynges bedde. For whiche dede
he was greatly blamed of the Wyf
Hoppe Dunstane, and yd therfore
vll, yere penauance, by the best or by-
d dng

How Edgar
shewed hym
selfe lord and
kyng of all
that that re-
gion within
Englande.

How Edgar
shewed hym
selfe lord and
kyng of all
that that re-
gion within
Englande.

How Edgar
shewed hym
selfe lord and
kyng of all
that that re-
gion within
Englande.

Scrudhage.

dynge of the sayde Dustane. And the fozenamed wylfyrth after þe chylde bozne lpyued so religyously, that she is now copted for a saynt in heuen. Of her doughter Eoþe it is reorde, that at lawefull age she was at Wyltune Mozne a nunne. Many verses ben reherced of this holy virgynne Eoþe, in the nyne chapter of the seuenth boke of Policronycon. The whiche I passe ouer for length of the mater.

The ccciii. Chapter.

EDGAR thus ruling þe lande after the death of his fyrste wyfe Egelseda, word was brought to him of the beautie of Alfrida or Estrid doughter of Ogarus erle of Deuenschyre. Wherefore he sent a knyght of his courte named Ethelwold, to espye whether the mayd wer of such beautie as she was reported of or not, chargynge hym yf she were so beutypous, þe then he shuld aske her to wyfe for the kyng.

But this knyght hauyng spghte of thys mayden, was so wounded wth the darte of thys blynde god Cupyde that he forgoate hys trouthe and allegaunce, þe he shulde owe to his mayster and soueraygne, and returned, shewyng to the kyng, that she was nothyng of the beautie that she was reported of, but of meane fayrenesse as other women were. Wherefore he besought the kyng coulydeyng she was her fathers heyre a good maytpage, that he wolde be so good loyde to hym as to wyte vnto her father, þe he myghte haue her vnto wyfe.

The whiche grace he obteyned, and at length was marryed vnto her.

In processe of tyme þe same of the beautie of thys woman sprange so wyde, that lastely it came to the eares of Edgar. Wherewith the kyng in mynde beyng soze dyscontentyd wth

Ethelwold, whych he hym hadde dysued, yet kept good countenaunce, and made semblaunte, as though he had nothyng forced that mater.

And vpon a tyme as it were in game, warned this Ethelwold, that then was an Earle by reason of hys wyfe or otherwyse, þe he wolde lodge one nyghte in his house, and appoynted the daye when it shulde be. With this monysson the earle beyng nothyng contented, ranne home nyghte deade for feare, and prayed hys wyfe of helpe in that tyme of neede, and that she wolde in all that she myght make her self as fowle and as vnclenly as she could, and shewed to her all the rekydue of the mater. Then the woman cast in her mynde þe great displeasure that might ensue toward her agayne god, to make þe fowle, whych he had made goodlye and saye, and also to her Loyde and husbunde agayne the kyng, thynkyng that he shulde cause her thus to doo, to the ende to morke and dysceue hym. Wherefore in consyderacyon of the premysse, she enourued her in moche costly and shewyng aparyll. And ouer that yf dame nature had hadde any thyng so gotten for mysprynted in her, she left not that by womans helpe myghte be amended or reformed, and at the kynges comynge receyued hym with all lope and gladnesse. By whych meanes this ponge amorous kyng was sore caught in the druples snare, so that he sette reasonne a part, and folowed his owne sensualite. And for to byng his purpose the better about, he kept forth a countenaunce as he had bene well contented wth all thyng, and despyed the earle, that he wolde wth hym syde on hunting into the woode of welmerley that now is called hoye-woode, where he alwaytynge hys season

Howe Edgar was deceyued of hys wyfe by the knyght whiche he sent to se her.

Howe the knyght was in loue wth that ladye whiche þe kyng sent hym vnto.

Howe the knyght deceyued the kyng and was marryed to the ladye.

Howe the kyng was deceyued of hys wyfe by the knyght whiche he sent to se her.

The knyght was in loue wth that ladye whiche þe kyng sent hym vnto.

The wyfe of the knyght.

Howe the knyght deceyued the kyng and was marryed to the ladye.

son & tyme, strake the earle thozough the bodye wth hys Maſte, ſo that he dyed ſone after. And then he maryed this Elfrida oꝝ Eſtride Moxtely, and hadde by her Egeltedus, as befoze I haue ſhewed. Foꝝ the which dede ſayeth Kanulfe, thys Elfrida builded an houſe of nunnes at Warwel. But o- ther authours ſay, it was foꝝ the ſlay- enge of her ſtepſon Edward.

Alſo the englyſh cronicle ſheweth that thys Ethylwolde was ſlayne by an other meane and not by the kyng.

About this tyme dyed Oddo arch- byſhoppe of Caunterbury, that was of the nacyon of Danes. Of hym is tolde a longe proceſſe in the .x. chapp- ter of the .vi. boke of Policronycon. And after hym Byglinus, that then was Byſhoppe of Wynchelſter, was made his ſuccelloure. But foꝝ he was not ſufficient foꝝ ſo greute a charge, he went agayne to Wynchelſter.

And Dunſtane byſhop of Londō and of Woꝛceſter, was ſacryd arche- byſhoppe of Caunterbury, and went to Rome, & receyued the pall of John the chiltene of that name. This Dun- ſtane was fyrſte abbotte of Glaſtyn- bury, and byſhoppe of London and Woꝛceſter, and laſtely archbyſhoppe of Caunterburpe. In hys dayes the oꝝder of munkes was religyous and full of vertues. Foꝝ it had religyous rulers, clere of ſcyence and of clergy, ſo that then menne were lad as much with theyꝝ dedes and good examples of vertuous liuyng, as by theyꝝ fa- mous and vertuous preaching.

Then Edgare as befoze is ſayde was crowned kyng at the cytle of Ba- the, of Dunſtane archebyſhoppe of Caunterbury, and Oſwolde archbi- ſhop of Eoꝛke, when he hadde ruled this lande .xii. yeres. The cauſe why it was ſo longe oꝝ thys Edgar were

enoynted, was, as teſtyfyeth Gydo foꝝ hys vnleſul lecherpe, and ſpecial- lye foꝝ the offence done wth Wyl- fryde. Foꝝ the whyche dede he was of Dunſtane ioynded to ſeuē yeres penaunce. The whyche penaunce du- tyng, he was kepte from the ſaide en- oyntment as affermeth the ſayde Gy- do. But foꝝ what cauſe ſo euer it was by agremente of dyuers wyters, he was not crowned tyll he hadde repy- ned twelue yeres.

It is alſo tolde of thys Edgar, that he beyng vppon a ſeaſon at the towne of Andrup, he was enamou- red vpon a noble mannes doughter whiche was of paſſyng beautye, and made ſuche meanes by force oꝝ other wyſe, that the parentes were agreed that the kyng ſhulde haue hys plea- ſure. But the mother ſubtyll of wytte bethoughte her of a whyle, and ſente a ſeruaunt of hers, whiche was bothe comely and ſayze to the kynges bed.

In the moꝝnyng when the daye be- gan to wate clere, the woman began to ſpyze, and wolde haue departed from the kyng. But the kyng reſtray- ned her and aſked the cauſe of her ſo haſty departyng. Foꝝ I muſte be at my worke wth my ſelowes ſayde the woman, at myne houre to kepe my taſke. And when the kyng hadd que- ſtyoned wth her further, he learned that ſhe was a bonde woman, and a- ſked of the kyngs freedom for ȝ nigh- tes ſerupce. The kyng at this hadde good game, and cheryſhed that dam- ſell ſo after, that he made her ladye of Loꝛdes. Foꝝ theſe insolent and wan- ton dedes, it is ſayde, that by the coun- ſayle of Dunſtane, he buylded and re- payred ſo many abbayes and houſes of religyon as aboue is reherſed.

Thus this noble Edgar paſſyng his tyme in vertue medled wth byce
v.ii. laſtly

Howe the
kyng was en-
amoured v-
pon a noble
manes dought-
er.

Howe the mo-
ther of the
mayde deuy-
sed the kyng.

For what
cauſe ȝ kyng
buylded ſo ma-
ny Abbayes.

lastly had wyttynge of the rebellyon of þe Byrtayns oꝝ Walshmen. Wherfoze he assembled hys knyghtes, and entred the lande, and dyd them great harme and waste. And amonge other prayes, spoyled the countrey of Glamorgan, and also toke oꝝ spoyled the countrey of Ono.

The death of
kyng Edgar.

But the kyng dyed wythin ten dayes after, when he had reigned after moste wynters the ful terme of .xvi. yeres. And was buried at Glassebury, leuynge after hym two sonnes, Edward the martyr and Egelredus, by two sondre wyues.

Henricus þe hystorygrapher made of hym these verses folowynge.

Byder of the pooze, and punysher of trespasse.

The geuer of woꝝshyp, kyng Edgar is now gone.

To the kyngdome of Heuen, whiche lyke to prayse was.

As Salomon, that for wysdome aboue all shone.

A father in peace, a lone to his sone founder of temples, and of monkes stronge patrone.

Oppressour of all wꝝonge, and of iustyce guardone.

The .cxv. Chapter.

In a story of this noble pꝛince Edgare, I fynde wyrtten a story, the which is alleged by the authour, þe it shuld be done by a kyng of Spayne named Cambyses, in the tyme of the regne of thys Edgare. But in that sayenge he varyeth from other authoures and wynters verie farre, as Vincencius hystoryalis, Antoninus, Ranulphus & other. For all be it the sayde acte was done by the sayde Cambysle, as the forenamed authoure affermeth, yet it was by the sayde Cambyses executed, longe before the incarnacion of Chyyste. For

this Cambyses was the sonne of Cyrus kyng of Parlys and of Medis, whiche reigned ouer those pꝛouynces aboute the pꝛe of the woꝝld .iii. thousande. lxx. before the commynge of Chyyste, folowing the accompte of thys woꝝke .xii. hundred yeres & .xxx. But it might be, that þe whyle monke that was authoure oꝝ wynter of thys acte to the story of Edgare, was moued for the great iustyce that he reede in the story of this Edgare, thinkynge to enhaunce it by the reason hereof, where he sayeth that in the tyme of this Cambyses, a Judge was to hym accused and conuicted vpon the same accusacyon, þe he had geuen a wꝝonge sentence by meane of takynge of mede. Wherfoze thys Cambyses to the terror and feare of other, commaunded þe sayde iudge to be slayne quike and the skynne to be spꝛedde ouer the place oꝝ stole of iudgemente, and that done, made the sonne of the foresayde iudge to lytte as Judge in the place, where hys father before satte, wyth these verses wyrtten vpon the face of the sayde place of Judgement as followeth.

Sede sedens ista, index inflexibilis sta,

A manibus reuocet munus, ab ante preces

Su tibi lucerna, Jex, lux, pellis q; paterna

Qua recedes natus, pro patre sponte datus.

Whiche verses maye be englyshed in maner & sounte as foloweth. Thou that lyttest in thys Judyciall place.

Syt by ryght, and holde thyne handes from mede.

Thyne eares from prayer, & fauoure from the chafe.

Let law be thy guyde, kepe iustyce in thy rede.

Thy fathers skynne, whiche doth thy chaper spꝛede.

Haue in thy mynde, sal not vnto lyke offence

The ephe
of a wꝝch
corrupt
wꝝch
Chyrist
g.c.

offence.

Lette for thy faulte: thou make lyke recompence.

And I haue befoze shewed this acte was put in execution the .x. C. yere and odde befoze the cominge of Christ. And syng the sayd cominge of incarnation, haue expyred x. hundred yeres and moze, which al maketh ouer two thousande. vi. hundred yeres. In all which tyme I haue not read in any cronycle of this lande nor other where, that any iudge hath bene put to lyke sentence. Wherefoze it is to presuppose, that in the lawes both spirytual and tempoꝛall, all iudges haue well bozne these verses in mynde, and exercysed them in minystrynge of due iustices perspetyly as they; cushions had bene freshly lynyed with the foresayde skynne, & empynted so narrowly these verses in the boke of they; conscience, that they in all they; iudgements set asyde all parcialyte and fauoure, and holde they; handes from al meyes and rewarde, so that nowe it is thus w moze, or elles thus it shoulde be.

The. cxcvi. Chapter.

Edwarde the sone of Edgare, and of his fyrste wyfe named Egelsteda, began his reygne ouer this realme of Englande, in the yere of our Loyde. ix. hundred. lxxvii. and the twelwe yere of Lotharye than kynge of Fraunce.

Ye shall vnderstande that after the deeth of Edgare styrte arose amonge the Loydes, for admyssyon of they; kynge. For Elfrida or Elstreda wyth Alphyrede duke of Mercia, made dyuers frendes to haue her sonne Egelredus promoted vnto that dignyte, a chyld of seuen yeres of age, that she & he myght haue the rule of the lande.

But Dunstane wyth ayde of other Byschoppes, and of the Earle of east Englande or Essex, withstode so that doyng, that he crowned this Edward kynge at the towne of Kyngestowne, to the greuouse dyspleasure of hys sayde mother Elstreda & other of her assynptie.

In the tyme of this Edward ap-
pered *stella cometa*, a blasynge starre, whereafter ensued many inconueniencies as well to men as to beastes, as syknesse, hunger, moeyne, and other lyke mysertes. But none of thys fylle in the dayes of this Edward, but after his death. The fozenamed Alpherus Duke of Mercia, whych in all thynges fauoured much the dedes of the quene, put out the monkes at Winchester, that kynge Edgar as befoze is shewed had there set in, & broughte in for them wanton clerkes, or as Raulphe sayeth: clarkes wyth concubynes. But Dunstane and the Earle of Essex wythsayde that doyng, and helde agayne the Duke and suche as fauoured hys partye. For the whiche arose greate styrte betwene the prelates and the monkes of Englande.

For the clerkes that were befoze tyme put oute by Edgar, sayde that it were a wretched & cursed dede, that a newe comon compayne vnknoen: shulde putte oute olde landymen frome they; place, nor it shulde not be plesynge to God that had graunted the place to the olde wonner, nor no good man ought to allowe suche doyng, for then sample that therof might ensle. The monkes sayde that Christ allowed nother the olde dweller, nor yet the persone. But who so wolde take the crosse of penaunce vpon hym, and folowe Christ in vertuose lyuynge he shoulde be his dysciple. For thys was holden a generall counsaile of
v.ii. byshoppes

The ap-
pering
of stella
cometa.

A contemp-
tion
betwene
pre-
lates and mon-
kes.

In general con-
cell of bishoppes.

Bishoppes and all the clergy of the lande, at Wynchester.

In the assen-
sible of the cler-
gye.

But for all this: the strepe ceased not. In so much that a newe assem-
ble of the clergy & other was appoynted after at a place called the strete of Calue, where the counsaile was kept in an upper losse. In this counsaile Dunstapne was greuously despyed and rebuked of some unkyfull men. But yet he kept his opinion grounded upon iustyce and verrue. And whyle they were there in this greate dyspysion and argument, which waye shuld be admitted and allowed, sodenly the topstes of the losse failed, and the people fell downe, so þ many were slayne and greuously hurte. But Dunstane escaped, with few other that toke hys partye unhurte. This wonder wth the other, caused sylence amonge them that entented to maynteyne this foresayd quatell, so that Dunstane hadde all hys will.

Thus passynge the tyme of the reigne of Edward the kyng, he came vpon a ceason frome huntynge in the forest of woode after some wyters, nere vnto the castell of Cozse: in the west countre. Where he losynge his companie and seruantes, reioyced vnto the castel befoze sayde, where at that tyme his mother wth her sonne Egilredus kept her houlholde. Whē the Quene was warned of hys comynge, anone she called to a seruante of hers whiche she much trusted, and tolde to hym all her counsaile, shewynge to hym further howe he shoulde behaue hym in accomplisshynge of her will and mynde. And that done, she wente towarde the kyng, and receyved hym wth all outwarde gladnesse, and despyed hym to tate wth her that nyghte. But he in curteyse maner excused hym self, and for spede

despyed to drynke vpon his horse styng, the which was shortly brought.

And whyle the cuppe was at hys mouth, the seruante befoze of the Quene enfourmed, strake hym to the herte wth a sworde or a longe dagger sharpe on both sydes. After which stroke by the kyng receyved, he toke the horse wth the spores, and ranne towarde the place that he was comen fro, or elles suche waye as he supposed to mete of hys companie. But he bledde so soze: that for fayntenesse he fell frome hys horse, hys one fote beinge faste in the styttrope. By reason wherof he was drawen of þ horse ouer wayes and felde, tyll he came vnto a place named than Cozpsgate, where he was founden dead. And for the maner of his deeth was unknowe, and also he for kyng not knowne, he was buryed vnmortehelp at the towne of Warehyn, and there rested by the tearme of thye petes after. In whiche tyme and season god shewed for hym dyuers myracles, as syghte to the blynde, helthe to the sycke, and helyng to the dese, with dyuers other whiche I ouer passe.

Wherof hearyng his stepmother beganne to take repentaunce, and entended to dyspyte hym by waye of pylgrymage. But how or for what cause she entended inwardely, I can not saye, but the horse or beaste þ she rode vpon, myght not nrygh the place, by a certayne space, for beatynge or any other thynge that to hym myghte be done by man. But after this by her meanes he was translated from this to Septon, that now is called Whaltesbury, & there buryed with great honour. But syn that tyme, parte of his bodie was translated vnto the abbaye of Leof beshpe Hereforde in the edge of Wales, and some parte thereof to Abyndon

Hyndon. And it is reported that at Shaftesbury remaine hys lunges, in the place that is called Edwardys Howe.

For the murder of thys blessed mā it is sayde as befoze is shewed in the storye of Edgar, that his stepmother founde two monastaries of women, one at Ambysbury, and that other at Warwel. In the whiche place of Warwel in her latter dayes, she refused the pompe of the worlde, helde there a solitarie and strait lye, and ended her lye with greute penaunce and repentaunce, and was there buried when she dyed.

Thus as ye haue harde was thys vertuous yong kynge Edward murdered, whē he had reigned after most wyrters. iiii. yeres, leuynge none issue, wherfoze the rule of the land fyl to Egelredus hys brother.

The xxvii. Chapter

Egelredus the sonne of Edgar & Alfyda oʒ Estre lde hys laste wyfe, beganne hys regne ouer Englande, in the yere of oure Loyde. ix. hundred, and. lxxi. and the. xvi. yere of Lothary then king of Fraunce.

Thys is named of some wyrters Ethelredus, and in the Englysh cronycle Eldrede. In whose begynnyng the grounde wared barayne, and all myltes befoze bodyd by the appetyng of the blasynge starre, in the dayes of Edward, now began to take place and encrease vnto the crith Thys as oʒ other of hys progenytours, was crowned kng at Kyngestone, of the archbishop Dunstane, & of Oswald archbishop of yorke. To whom as it is redde in the lyfe of saynte Dunstane amonges hys prophesies, that in the day of his coronacyon, he sayd

unto the kynge: for thou comest to thys kyngedome by the death of thy brother, in whose death Englyshmen conspyred with thy wicked mother they shal not be without bloodshedynge and sword, tyl there com people of unknowne tynge, and brynge them into thyldoms. And thys trespass shall not be censed without lōg vengeance.

Of thys Egelredus wyrters agree that he was goodlye of shappe and of visage, but that was mynged with lechery and crueltye. It is also redde that when Dunstane shoulde christen hym, as he helde hym ouer the fonte, he spyled therein.

Wherfoze Dunstan swore by god and by hys mother, thys shal be brynde to God & hys church. Which sayd not in hys forthe goynge, for he was vnglacous in hys begynnyng, wyrtched in the myddle of his lye, and hateful to men in the ende thereof.

In the seconde yere of hys regne a cloude was sene in Englande, the whiche apered halfe lyke bloud, and the other halfe lyke fyre, and chaunged after into sondre coloures, and dysapered at the last. In the. iiii. yere of hys regne the Danes assayed in sundry places of hys lande, as in the p̄t of Chanet belyde Kente, in Coznerwall, and Sussex, and dyd in those costes mych harme. And after some of theym came to London, but there they were put of. Howbeit they destroyed a great parte of Cheshyre.

And in the ende of the same yere, a great parte of the cytye of London, was wasted with fyre. But how it beganne myne authoure myndeth not. But ye shall vnderstand, that at this tyme the cytye of London, had moste housynge and buydynge from Ludgate

The wyrters of Dunstan

Egelred was lecherous.

The lyfe of Egelredus

What trouble happened in the. ii. y. iii. yeres.

A great fyre in London.

Ludgate

The cause why this Ethelredus was so long a kynge

And thus

But that in the. ii. y. iii. yeres

gate toward Westmynstet, and lytle
or none where the chefe or hert of the
crite is now, excepte in dyuerse pla-
ces was housing, but they stode with
oute order. So that manye townes
and cyties, as Caunterburpe, porke
and other dyuerse in Englande, cal-
led London in byldynge at those
daies, as I haue seene or knowen by an
olde booke some tyme in the Gyrlde
hall of London named domes daie.
But after the conquest it increased &
woyld after passed and excelled all
the other.

About the .viii. yeare of this kyn-
ges regne, the kynge maryed Etle
Edgbertus daughter named Ethel-
gina or Elgina. Of the which in pro-
cesse of tyme he receaued a sonne na-
med Edmund, whych after was sur-
named Ironsyde, and .ii. other sonnes
named Edwyn and Ethelstane, and
a daughter named Edgna.

In this pastyme dyed Ethilwalde
Byschoppe of Wynchester. He was
borne in Wynchester, and noysshed
vnder Dunstane at Glasterburpe, &
there worne Monk, and after was
chosen abbot of Abindon, in the tyme
of the regne of kynge Egedus, And
in the tyme of Edgar he was sacre
Byschoppe of Winchester, where he
made an abbey of Nunnes.

After whiche tyme Ethilwalde
Alphegus abbot then of Bathe was
sacred Byschoppe of Wynchester the
whych was after archbyschop of Can-
terburpe, and was cruellie slayne of
the Danes, as after shalbe shewed.

About the .ix. yere of Egelredus
fo: strepe that was betwene the Bys-
choppe of Rochester and hym, he with
hys knyghtes besieged the said crite
whereof Dunstane sent to the kynge
admonysshing hym that he shulde re-
frayne hym of that crueltie and sul-

set the byshop and hys crite in peace

But thys message mylde no-
thinge the kynges courage. Then
thys manne sente to him an hundred
pounde in golde, wyllynge hym to re-
frayne of that outrage, the whych he
receaued, and brake the sege.

About the .xi. yeare of hys reg-
ne dyed archbyschoppe Dunstane. Of
whome Ranulphe in the .xiii. Chap-
ter of hys .vi. booke of Polycronycon,
maketh reherfall of dyuerse of hys
vertues and myracles the whiche I
passe ouer, and the rather because of
hys legende. Hys life is mannyfest. Sy-
trycius was archbyschoppe after him,
and after hym Wulsticus. And after
Wulsticus, Elphegus was archebys-
chop of that see.

It was not longe after the death
of Dunstane, butte that the Danes
perced Englande in many and sondry
places of the land, in such wyse that
the kynge was to seke, to whych co-
ste he shulde go fyghte to wythstande
hys enemyes. And in conclusyon in
aduoydynge of moze harme, he was
compelled to apeace them with great
summes of monye. But when that
monye was spente, they fylle to newe
robbynge of the people.

Then the kynge graunted moze
monye. But fo: all that, the Danes
robbed and spoyled the countrey of
Northumberlande, and besieged Lo-
don at the last.

And fo: the augmentacyon of
kynges sorowe, Elsticus that then
was master or admiral of the kinges
naue, fled as a false traitoure. And
after that reconcyled and fledde the
seconde tyme to the Danes. Where-
fo: the kynge in wretch of the father
commanded the epen of hys sonne
Algarus to be plucked or done oute
of hys heade.

But

Many townes and cyties in Englande dyd call London done in those daies

How the kynge maryed Ethelgina the daughter of Etle Edgbertus

How Dunstane wold haue had the kyng to let the Byschoppe of Rochester alone.

How the Danes perced Englande

How Elsticus fledde to the Danes

But whyle this persecution thus continued, by means of the byshop of Wyndchester Elphegus a peace was concluded for a tyme betwene þe kyng and the Danes. And the prince of cheste captayne of them named Aulaff, was so exhorted by the sayde byshoppe, that he became a Chryssten man, to whome the kyng was God father, so that after the sayde Aulaff returned to his owne, without doing of more harme, so that for a whyle the warre of Danes ceased.

But whyle that rested, the bloudy fyre with a byenynge heart vexed the people thorough the land, that much folke therof dyed.

Continuynge whyche mysery, the Danes agayne assailed the lande & dyd in dyuerse places greate harme, so that for lacke of a good head or gouernour, many thynges in the land perished. For the lordes were at such dyscencion that one with that other, & when they were assembled to speke of treatie of peace betwene that one lord and that other, and yf any good thyng were deuysed for the hurte of theyr enemyes, anon the Danes were warned thereof by some of the same counsaile. Whereof were suspected Elsticus and Eoicus.

And to this sojourn was loyned hunger and penury amonges the commons, that euerye one of theym was constrained to plucke and stele from other, so that what by the pyllage of the Danes, and inwarde theuys and bybours, this lande was broughte in greate myserye and myschefe.

The cccviii Chapter

Elcredus then wrapped in myserye, left not to gather of his subiectes what he myghte, as wel by vnlawful meanes as

other wyse. For sayeth Kanulphe myne authoure, he wolde for sayned or small causes, by myserye meane of theyr possessyon, and after cause me to redeme theyr owne for great sommes of monye.

And ouer þe he walowed lechery, geupnge hym to all bycous & incontinent lyfe of his body. By whiche vnglacius meanes, he broughte this land in such ruyne, & what he myghte not helpe by strengthe, he wanted w monye. So that from the fyrst enter of the Danes as testyfyeth Polycronyca in the cccviii. chapter of his. vi. booke and also Gyrdon with other authours that from the fyrst tribute of

x. M. ponde, he broughte yt at the laste in procelle of. v. or. vi. peares to a thousande ponde. The whyche yearly duringe his lyfe and after, to the commynge of Saynte Edward was leuyed of his subiectes, and named for the continuance therof Dane gelle. Whiche is or was to meane monye payed to the Danes, or woite ly, Dane mony.

In this tyme as it were aboute þe xvi. peare of his reyn, dyed Oswald the archbyshoppe of Caunterburge & anon after dyed Ethelgyna þe quene.

Thus continuynge this land vnder the greuous tribute of the Danes, and also by sustaynyng of many bylannes and iniuries by the Englyshe men of the sayde Danes, as after some tyme Malapere, this Eggeredus by counsaile of his samplers about the ccc. yere of his reyn made Emma þe daughter of Rycharde duke of Normandy, before mynde in the storye of Lewis the. v. and Lothayre his sonne kinges of Fraunce. The whyche Rycharde was the thirde duke of Normandy, and the fyrste of that name, and also was surnamed Rycharde

The incompent luyngs of Egredus

The great tribute that the land was byought in.

Dane gelle howe it came.

Howe Eggeredus married Emma þe daughter of Rycharde

Of Egredus.

Richard without fere oꝝ the hardy-
as moze of hym shalbe shewed in the
scope of the lytelle Leys kyng of
fraunce.

By reason of marryng of this Em-
ma, whych in the frenche cronycle is
named þe floure of Normaundye, this
Egredus was greatly inhaunsted
in hys owne mynde. By presumption
wherof he sent into al good burghes
citties, and townes of hys lande, se-
cret and straghte commyccions, cha-
rgynge the rulers that upon a certayn
daye, that is to saye: upon the day of
saynte Byrce at an houre assened in
every place of hys lande, the Danes
shulde be todaynele slayne. And so it
was done.

And as the cominen fame telleth
that this murder beganne at a lytle
towne i Hertfordshyre, wythin. xliij.
myles of London called Welewyne
oꝝ Welwyne. For the whyche deade
it tooke fyrste that name, as who wol-
de weane, that the weale of that co-
untrye was there fyrste wonne. But
who that well consydereth the sequel
of this stoye: shal fynde lytle wy-
nyng oꝝ weale ensuyenge of this
dede.

But oꝝ I procede further, here I
wyl touche somewhat of the pryde
and abusion of the Danes, that they
exercysed in England, in some parte
thereof as I haue sene in an olde cro-
nycle, whereof the authoure is vn-
knownen. There it is shewed that the
Danes by strength caused husbände
menne to ear and sowe the lande, and
do all other byle labour that belon-
ged to husbandry, & the Dane helde
hys wyfe at his pleasure, wyth dou-
ghter and seruaunte. And when the
husbände man came home, he shulde
scantly haue of his owne as seruaun-
tes had, so that the Dane had al hys

commaundement, and ate & dranke
hys syl of the best, whē the owner had
scantly hys syl of the worst. And o-
uer that the cominen people were soo
of them oppressed that for feare and
dredde, they called them in every such
house as they hadde rule of, Lorde
Dane

But in processe of tyme, after the
Danes were boyded the lande, this
word Lorde Dane, was in dyspoy-
and dyspree of the Danes, turned by
Englyshe men into a name of oppro-
prie called Lurdayne, whych to our
dayes is not forgotten. But when
one Englyshe man wyl rebuke ano-
ther, he wyl for the moze part cal him
Lurdayn.

Then to retorne to oure fyrst mat-
ter. Truth it is whē the Danes were
thus murdered throughe Englande
tydynges thereof sprange into Den-
marke. Whych kindled in them such
a furie, that the kyng thereof named
Swanus, assembled mostely agreat
hoost and nauye of Daynes, and in
moste processe after landed in Co-
wayll. And by treason of a Norman
named Hugh, whych by fauour of þe
quene Emma was made Erie of De-
wyre, the sayde Swanus toke Exe-
toure, and after bette downe the wal-
lys.

Then he entred further into the
lande. In whych season the kyng
sent vnto Edwyce, chargynge hym
to assemble the west Saxons, and to
wythstande the further entree of the
Danes. The whyche accordynge to
hys commysyon assembled the west
Saxons, & made good countenaunce
to wythstande the sayd enemyes. But
when the hostes shulde topyne, were it
for fere oꝝ for treason, he fapned hym
sych and fled from hys people. The
whych for lacke of an hed were fapn
to

The todayne
destruction of
the Danes

from whence
this word of
opprobrium
is called Lurdayne
did first come

The landing
of the king of
Denmark in
Cornwall

The whyche
names of the Da-
nes

to gene backe, to theyr hurte, and to theyr enemyes greate aduantage & comforte.

Wherefore the Danes resoyted the to Wylton & Shipborth, and anon spoyled both these towne, and there refreshed theym. But for swanus had wytyng that the kynge was comynge towards hym with the power of hys lande, he therefore departed thence and returned with greete pylage to hys wyppes, & sailed aboute the lande, and lastlye landed in Norfolk. Where he wastynge and spoylynge the countrey, came in processe vnto the ctyte of Norwich and robbed and spoyled yt, and after yode to Thetford, and dyd lyke wyse to that towne, and fyrde it and destroyed the country nere there aboute.

But soone after a noble manne of that countrey called duke Willell mette with the host of Danes, and gaue vnto them an harde and sharp batayll, and slewe manye of the enemyes and put them backe. For this, and for hunger that the assailed this lande, swanus returned ofte vnto hys wyppes, and departed agayne into Denmarke, and taryed there all the wynter folowynge. In whych season he made greete prouyse to re-enter the land of Englande.

The cxxix. Chapter.



About the xxiij. yere of the reygne of Egelsred, & fornamed swanus with a strong army, landed at Sandewich, and spoyled all the countrey nere vnto the see syde, and rested hym there tyll he hadde of an army commynge agayn hym. And when he was ware thereof, he returned to hys wyppes agayne: and he tyng the kynge was farre westward

he landed in Sussex, and spoyled yt wonder soye. And when he there was warned of the comynge of batayle of Englyshemen, anon he toke wyppynge agayn. So that when the Englyshemen wende to haue met with them in one coast, than wolde they so daynly lande in another. And when the kynge prouided to mete with the wyppynge the see, other they wold sayns to flee, or elles they wolde with gyftes blende the admyrall of the kynge's nauye.

By which subtylte and crafty menes, they wotted and tryed the hoste of Englyshemenne. And where euer they wente they slewe, bynt, and robbed withoute compassyon and pety. The kynge then beyng at Wyntesburge, hearing of the great sleight and cruelty of the Danes, called his counsaile to rede what were beste to be done for the defence of hys enemyes. Where it was concluded, that the kynge to haue peace with the Danes shulde pay vnto them. xxx. thousand pounds. But whyle this was in doynge, the Danes destroyed a greete parte of Baroke or Barkshyre.

When this peace was thus made swanus with hys company returned into Denmarke. And that yere folowynge, the kynge made Edyrus fornamed duke of Mercia. Thus Edyrus was of lowe byth, rych, of tynge false, and subtyll of wyrt, softe and eloquent of spech, vntrusty and false of thoughtes and promise, as of hym some dele befoze is shewed, and after mooze shall appere.

In the xxvii. yere of Egelsred, a prince of Danes named Cuthyll landed in Kent. The whych so greuously warred in that country, that the Englyshemen were fayne to make peace with hym, and so departed.

A conclusyon made that the kynge shoulde pay to the Danes xxx. thousand pounds to haue peace

And

And yet the persecucion of Danes
 ceased not. For in one country of Eng-
 lande or other, they ever in whyles
 robbed & pillled the Englishmen. So
 that all the country along the coast, fro
 the North parte of Englande unto
 the yle of wyght, was by them de-
 stroved or hugely sette a backe. And
 when the kynge intended to make
 prouyseon for to withstande them
 euer Canutus woulde counsaile hym
 to the contrarye. Shewing hym that
 he shulde spend hys treasure and tra-
 uayle hys people in vayne. By mean
 wherof the Danes entred. I. mples
 wythin the lande, and byente and rob-
 bed by dyuerse tymes many bylages
 & townes. So that they increased and
 wared passynge cytche, and the Eng-
 lyshemen neddy, bate and poze. Thus
 contynuinge thys misery, Swanus
 or after the Englyshe Swayne then
 beyng in Denmarke, and hearing
 of the encrease of hys people wythin
 Englad, repented hym of his former
 couenauntes, and thought that the hole
 domynyon of Englande shulde be-
 longe to him of ryght. For the which
 he prepared hys army and nauye in
 moost defensible wise, and sped hys
 into Englande, and to the ryuer of
 Humber, and landed in Northumber-
 lande.

The arrivall
 of Swanus
 kynge of Den-
 marke.

Wher the erle or ruler of that coun-
 trey with all the rulers of the same,
 swore feaute unto the sayde Swa-
 nus, and promitted to kepe that coun-
 trey unto hys vse. And when he had
 doone hys wyll in that countrie, he en-
 tred agayne the water, and by the ry-
 uer of Trente he passed to Canyns-
 burgh, and so by North warlunge-
 strete, and subdued the inhabytaun-
 tes of that country, and forced them
 to geue unto hym pledges. Whiche
 pledges, with also hys nauye, he

toke hnto Canutus his sonne, whyle
 he wente further into the lande. And
 that done, he with hys people kepte
 on his iourney tyll he came into Wec-
 cya byllinge and sleynge the menne
 of that prouynce. And reserved & wo-
 men to vncient luyrge, as well the
 religious as other, & toke by strength
 Wynchester and Drenford, and dyd
 in them what he lyked.

And after he had thus passed the
 lande, he byewe the nexte waye to-
 ward London. But in passynge the
 reuer of Thames he lost some parte
 of hys people, other for lacke of a
 byrdege or for seoparding the pas-
 sage vnapudly. And so in processe
 he came vnto London, where at that
 tyme kynge Egfredus was. Where
 fore Swanus left the cyty, and byew
 into Kent, and so toward Countee
 burys without let, weldyng the cou-
 try at hys wyll, & lastly beseged that
 cite. The which manfully defended
 theyre entrenches by the space of .xx.
 dayes.

The cyty
 Countee
 burys
 without
 let, weldyng
 the cou-
 try at hys
 wyll, &
 lastly be-
 seged that
 cite.

Whych sege beganne vpon the
 dape of saynte Mathewe in the mo-
 neth of September, and endured as
 is aboue sayde, and then taken by the
 treason of a deacon named Almar-
 cus, the which before tyme Elphegus
 than archbishoppe of that see, had
 preserued from deach.

Then the Danes syled the cytye
 when they before had spyled it, and
 toke the archbishop and put hym in
 straggly prison. And the monkes of
 saynt Augustynes abbay they tyshed
 that is to meane they slew .ix. by cruel
 torment, and the tenth they kepte a
 lyue, the which after was sold and
 sette to all seculer laboure. And as
 wytnesseth Antonyus or Vincente
 bystoppall, they slew and broughte
 in seruage ouer the summe of .ix. hun-
 dred

The cytye
 of the mon-
 neth of
 Countee
 burys.

dyd

number of men, women, and chyldren, beyond the number of. viii. thousand. As with muche crueltie it is shewed, in the. vii. chapter of the. xvi. tyele of the woꝝke of the sayde Antoninus.

And finally for this byshoppe Elpheg? wolde not condescende to geue vnto them as sayth Policronica thye thousande pounde, after they hadde kepte hym in harde prysen by þ space of seuen monethes, vpon an Easter euen, they after many bylanies vnto hym done at Ekenewiche within thye myles of London, they stoned hym to death. Where he laye in the felde vnto buried a certayne of tyme, and after carped to London, and buried reuerently in the churche of saynt Paule. But afterwarde in þ tyme of Canut? he was taken by agayne, and carped to his owne churche. Of this Elphegus Antoninus and also Policronica shewen many vertues and miracles, the whiche I passe ouer for lengthynge of the tyme.

The. cc. Chapter.

In this pastime, kynge Egelredus feryng the ende of this persecucion, sent Emma the quene with her two sonnes Alfhrede and Edwards, vnto Richard the seconde of that name, then fourth duke of Normandy, which was brother vnto the sayde Emma, with whome also he sent the byshop of London.

About the. xxxiii. yere of þ reigne of Egelredus, the Danys when they had wonne a great parte of the countrey of wessaxon, returned agayne towarde London. Wherof hearing the Londoners sent vnto them certayne gyftes and pledges.

In all this season mine authoure maketh no mynde, that euer þ kynge gaue vnto the Danys any notable

battayle, but kepte hym in holdes of places, for hys owne sauegarde, and lytell frute of profyte to his lande. At the laste he was chaled vnto the yle of Wighte, where with a secrete compaignie, he helde a great parte of þ wynter, and synally withoute carnall of comforte, sailed ouer to his wife into Normandy, and there helde hym a certayne of tyme.

When Swanus was ascertained of the departynge of Egelredus oute of the lande, he was enflamed with exceeding pyre, so that he arreted exceeding impossycions of the people, and greued theym wonderfull.

And amonges other of his tyrannies he asked a great summe of money of saynt Edmundes landes. Which the rulers denayed, for so muche as they claymed to be free of all kynges tribute. For this he entred the terrytoꝝ of saynte Edmundes, and wasted and spoiled the countrey, and ouer that despyled that holye martyꝝ, with manassynge of the place of his sepulture.

Wherfore, the men of that countrey fearynge this tyrant, gaue them to fastynge and prayer, so that shortly after he was styched in an euerynge amonges his knyghtes, with þ sworde of Sainte Edmundes in the towne of Sherfords as sayeth Gypdo, but after Policronycon and other, in the towne of Garpesborough. Where he dyed with pellyng and cryng the. iiii. daye after.

In feare wherof, Canut? his sone after that he was kynge, closed in the lande of that holý martyr with a depe dyche, and graunted to the inhabytauntes therof, great fredome, & quit them of all knyghtly taske or tribute. And after buylded a churche ouer the place of hys sepulture, and ordeyned there an house of Munkes, & endued

f.i. them

The styrngs of Egelredus and leauynge his lande.

The pyre of Swanus.

The destruyng of Swanus.

Canutus the
son of Swa-
nus buried
the abbey of
Saint Edm-
des burie.

them with saye possessyons. And af-
ter it was vsed that kynges of En-
glande when they were crowned, sent
for an offerpynge they? crownes vnto
Sainte Edmundes Wyne, and rede-
med thepm afterwarde with a con-
digne pryce.

When Egelredus had wytyng
of the death of Swanus, by procure-
mente of hys frendes, he made mea-
nes to retourne vnto his owne. By
whose meanes he was sente for, with
condicyon that he shoulde refourme
his olde condicyons. And for persout
maunce of the same, he sent his sonne
Edward into Englande before hym
And in the lent folowynge the kyng
came hym selfe, and with hys people
sped hym towarde Lyndesey. Where
Canutus was at that tyme ressaunt
not prouyded of the kynges so hasty
comynge.

Wherfoze he beyng not puruey-
ed to wythstande the kyng, fledde in
to Sandewyche in Kente. And for he
there proued suche personnes as be-
foze tyme his father and he hadde ta-
ken pledges of, and fande theim not
perseueraunte in they? promysse, he
made to be cutte of all the noses and
handes of the sayde Englyshe peo-
ple, and sailed into Denmarke when
he had done, and retourned the nexte
pere with a greate many, and sayled
aboute the lande, and toke prayes in
the Southe countrey. Wherof the
kynge eldest sonne named Edmund
made prouysyon with the ayde of E-
dricus to gooe agayne hym.

But when he shoulde haue mette
with Edricus at a place assigned and
hys holte, he was of hym discepued,
wherfoze he was compelled to geue
place vnto hys enemyes. And as it
was after knowen, the sayde Edri-
cus had promysed his fauoure & ayde

vnto the sayde Canutus.

By reson wherof Canutus entred
the countree of west Saxen, and for-
sed them to swere to hym feauty, and
to geue vnto hym pledges, and other
countreys adlopyngs vnto the same.
In this season Egelredus beyng at
London, was taken with a greuouse
syrkenes and dyed, & was there buri-
ed in the churche of S. Paule, where
at this daye in the North yle behind
the quere, appereth in the wall a toke
of his sepulture, which repned o; as
saye Policronicon and other beseged
England, by the terme of .xxxvi. yeres
full, letyng after him a sonne named
Edmunde Iron syde ouer Alphrede,
and Edward sonnes of Emma.

France.

The.cci. Chapter.



Whys the. vi. of þ name
and sonne of Lothayre,
beganne hys regne o-
uer Fraunce, in the pere
of our Lo;des incarna-
cyon. .l. hundred and. lxxvi. and the
v. pere of Egelredus then kyng of
England. Of the which other for his
youth o; for þ mo;tnesse of his reigne
lytell of his dedes is left in memo;ry
excepte þ the frenche boke witnesseth
that for he had none yssue, and Hugh
Capet before in the story of Lothayre
mynded, was his famylper and chyl-
connsaller, he shulde therfoze ordeine
and admytte the sayde Hugh for hys
heyr. But moze verely as before is
touched in the aboue named storye, &
in the ende thereof, thys Hughe was
stronge and myghty, and in the later
dayes of Lothayre: coueted the rule
of the lande. Wherfoze after þ death
of this Lewis, for so muche as he left
no chylde after hym, he then haupng
the chiefe rule of Fraunce, by strength
and

The refour-
ming of Egel-
red into En-
glande.

The tyrannie
of Canutus.

The death
of Egelred.

France.

Lothayre.

and poinet made hym selfe hyngre.

But for I promysed in the story of Egelebus, somwhat to shew of Rycharde the fyrst of that name & why he duke of Aquitaine, I shall somdele length this story in the story of þe sayd Rycharde. This Rycharde as afferme al wyters, was named Richard with out fere. And for this cause that foloweth, as testifyeth the frenche boke. He bled much to byd his bedes for all chylde soules. And upon a night whē he hadde longe watched, he entred a church, where stode a corpe buried and noman watchyng it. And whyle he sayd his orisons for that soule & other, he sayd his gloues upon a deske by hym. And whē he had ended his deuotions, he went out of þe church forgetting his gloues behind. But shortly after he remembred him of them, & retourned toward the church for to fetch his sayd gloues. When he cam at the church doore, he found the corpe there standing, with his armes spread abroad, and makyng great noyse and cry. Wherefore the duke made þe signe of the crosse in his forhed, & confured the corpe þe he shoulde rest, but all was in vayne. Whereof the duke drew his sword and stroke at the corpe, & to his thynkyng parted hym in two peces. And þe done, entred the church, fet his gloues, and so departed. And for this chaunce he ordeyned after throughe his realme that a corpe shuld be watched the fyrst nyght or longer, as men had deuocyon. Which gyle was somtyme bled in England, & began of the daymans as men maye coniecture, after they had fyrst conquered this lande.

Dolpertoncon sheweth in the vii. chapter of his. vi. boke, þe this duke Rycharde dyed on a nyght that a monke of the house of saynt Iudoen in Roan, as he went toward his lem-

man by nyght, fell besyde a byrdge & was drowned, whose soule afire was in styfe betwene an angel and a fend. The whiche after a longe styffe, descended to put þe iudgemēt in duke Rycharde. Then the duke gaue sentence, that the soule shuld be restored agayne to the body, & then the body to be set vpon the byrdge that before he was fallen fro. And yf he the went to his lemman he shuld be the fowles, & yf not, he shuld be the fowles. And when this sentence was put in reuocyon, the monke fled into the church therby. Upon the morow when þe duke awoke, and called this byrdge to his memory, to knowe the certainte thereof he went to þe sayde church, & fande the monke there his clothes yet wet, & after went to the abbot of þe place, & told to him all this dede, aduertysyng him to take better ouersight of his floche.

To these narracions the hearers maye geue credence as them lyketh. For they be nother in the psalle nor yet in the gospel. Albeit Antoninus archebyschop of florence, when he seethereth any lyke narracions, whiche he thynketh somwhat doubtfull, he sayeth these wordes and sayeth, *plura est credere*. The whyche narracion is tolde of this duke, whyche by all presumption was registred of some women scribe. This duke with his wyfe, lyued long whyle a dishonest life, and contrary to the lawes of the church. Whereof his people murmured sore, so that at lengthe by the holysome doctryne of some of his clerkes or spirytual men, he married her to his lawfull wyfe.

The fyrst nyght after þe wedding, were it in game or othertwyle, the duchesse turned her buttocke in þe dukes lap as she before tyme had neuer done. When the duke frayed the cause of

Belme these tales as ye list

Olde wyne tales.

The death of
Lewys.

her so dying, for no more sayde he may
I do what me lyeth, where before I
myght do but what you lyked. Upon
this Gunnoxe he gate besyde ocher
chylde, Emma that was the wyfe of
Egheceus as before ye haue harde,
and died when he had ruled Norman
dy by the terme of. lli. yeres.

Then to retourne to the. vi. Le-
wys kynge of Fraunce, from whome
we haue made a longe digression, as
happynesseth master Gygwyne he dy-
ed in the yere of our lorde. ix. hundred
lxxxix, when he had reigned. llii. yeres
and was buryed at Compayne.

Ye shal vnderstande that this Le-
wys was the last king of the blode of
Deppn. And for I promysed before to
shew the descenc of the sayde Deppn,
to the ende ye maye the better know
this story, and also to knowe the kyn-
ges of Fraunce frome the kynges of
Germany, whiche both descended of
this Deppn: hereafter I shal moze cler-
ly set it out in braunches. But first I
will expresse the kynges of Fraunce
as they reigned lytally, and to nyete
eyther of them the terme that he regn-
ed, that thereby it maye appere how
long this blode contynued in þe house

of Fraunce, or it were apperched by
Hugh Capet, as after appereth.

The yeres.

Deppn.	lvi.
Charlys.	lvi.
Lewys the fyrste.	lvi.
Charlys the Ballyd.	lxxvii.
Lewys ballus.	ii.
Lewys and Charlys.	ii.
Lewys the fourth.	liii.
Eudo.	ii.
Charlys the simple.	lvi.
Radulphus.	lvi.
Lewys dous.	lvi.
Lotharius.	lvi.
Lewys the syxte.	lii.

Of the which kynges ii. were
not of that blode, as Eudo
and Radulph^o, but admit-
ted of þe barony of Fraunce
to rule the lande, till two of that pro-
geny, that is to meane Charlys þe sym-
ple, and Lewys the. v. were comen to
theyr lawfull age. So that from the
fyrst yere of Deppn, which began his
regne in the yere of grace, seven. C.
and. i. to the fyrst yere of Hugh Capet
that began his regne in the yere of
our lorde god. ix. hundred and. lxxxix.
expyed or passed. ii. C. x. yeres.

The linyall descenc of the Emperours & kynges of Fraunce.

Deppn the father of Charlys the greute.

Charlys the great Emperour.

Lewys the fyrst Emperoure.

The kynges
of Fraunce.

The kynges
of Germany.

Lothays Emperour, and the sonne of Lewys
the fyrste.

Lewys Emperour the sonne of Lothays.

Lothays the seconde the sonne of Lothays.

Charlys the. iii. and sonne of Lothays.

Lewys kynge of Germany and brother unto þe
sayde Lothays.

Lewys the sonne of Lewys, whiche was brother
unto Charlys the. viii. Emperour.

Lewys the sonne of Lewys, whiche of some is
compted Emperour.

Radulphus the sonne of Lewys Emperour.

Lewys the sonne of Radulph, laste Emperour of
Fraunce.

Charlys the ballyd the sonne of Lewys the fyrst
of his seconde wyfe Emperour.

Lewys Ballus, the sonne of Charlys the Bal-
lyd.

Lewys and Charlys sonnes of Lewys Ballus.

Lewys the fourth, and sonne of the sayde
Charlys.

Charlys the simple, the sonne of Lewys the
fourth.

Lewys the syxte, and the sonne of Charlys the
simple.

Lothays the sonne of the sayde Lewys.

Lewys the sonne of Lothays and the last kyng
of that stocke.

The

The crif. Chapter.



Hugh the sonne of Robertte the tyraunte, descended of Hugh legraund began to take the rule, or to vsurpe the crowne of fraunce, in the yere of oure Lorde. ix. hundred and, lxxxix. and the eight yere of Egeltredus then kynge of Englande. Thys as wrytynlyth the French cronycle was cyle of Darps. And as sayeth Antoninus, he maryed one of the doughters of Edward the Elder. Thys also was named Capet, for so muche as in his pouth, he vled in game to laye asyde his felowes hodes. In whose begynnynge, Charlys that was the brother to Locharye, and vncle vnto to Armys the fyrte laste kynge, beyngynge of the deathe of his neneue Le wys wpythoute pssue, as nette heye, with ayde of some lordes of fraunce and also of Loeyne, the whyche then he was lord of, gathered an arme: and entred fraunce, and then came to the cytie of Laone. Within which cytie, he with his wyfe and people, by the treason of the byshoppe of the same Cytie was taken and deliuered wpyth his wyfe and chyldren into the handes of his enemyes, the whyche sente them vnto Oyleaunce there safely to be kepte.

Then thys Hugh was crowned in the Cytie of Rayns, and welded the lande with moze surety. Howebeit the earle of Flaunders named Arnulphus or Arnolde before spoken of wolde not be vnder his obedyence. Wherefore this Hugh assembled his knyghtes, and by his strengthe toke from him the countre of Artoys, with many stronge holdes and castels, and lastely forced the sayde Arnolde to fle into Flomandye, to aske ayde of Ry-

charde the fyrte of that name, before spoken of in the storye of the. vi. Armys By whose meanes after some wryters William Longa Spata father to the sayde duke Richard was slayne. But that notwithstanding, by frendshyp of the sayde duke Rycharde, this Arnolde was reconcyled vnto the kynge, and contynned after as his subiecte.

In the cytie of Raynes was archbishop at this tyme a noble prelate named Arnolde, sone of bast of Locharye, and newe to Charlys then ppysonet as before is touched. The whyche for malice that the kynge bare vnto hym, for cause of the fornamed Charlys, called a counsaile of the clergy of his lande, and layde agayne hym such obtecyons, that he by thery assente was put from that benefyce, and sent hym to Oyleaunce there also to be kept in ppyson. And set in hys place one Gilberte, or after the French booke Serbys, a conynge man in philosophy, whiche had before tyme bene tutoure or mayster vnto Robertte sonne of the sayde Hughe. But after thys yeres, Byllhoppe of Rome, Johan the fyrte of that name, sente downe his comaundement vnto Gupan, archbishop of Sens, charging hym that he shulde remoue the sayde Serbers, and restore the sayde Arnolde to hys proper see. Whiche was done shortly after, and the sayde Serbers was after thys preferred by one of the Othons emperour vnto the church of Raucene and contynned there tyll the deathe of the. xvi. John. After whose deathe he was electe byshoppe of Rome, and was named the seconde Syluester, & lyued foure yeres.

Then it foloweth in the storye, *The death of Hugh.* when thys Hugh hadde reygned full viii. yeres and moze, he dyed in the yere of oure Lorde. ix. hundred. xlii.

l.iii. and

and was buryed at saynt Denys, le-
uyng after hym a sonne named Ro-
berte.

Robert the
sonne of Hugh
Capet.

C The. cciij. Chapter.

Robert the sonne of Hugh
Capet, began his regne
in the yere of our lord, W.
C. and. xcviij. & the. xliij.
yere of Egredus then kyng of En-
glande. This was conyng in many
sciences, and a man of good maner &
vertue. He made dyuers hymnes, se-
quences, & respondes, as *O Iuda et Hieru-
salem, O constantia martirum, Adsit nobis
sancti spiritus gratia, or moze congruently,
Sancti spiritus adsit nobis gratia*, wth dy-
uers other.

In the beginnyng of his regne
while Bowcharde erle of Meleon was
at the kynges court, Gaucer or Wal-
ter a knyght & seruaunt of the sayde
Bowcharde, to whom the sayde Bow-
charde hadde deliuered hys castell of
Meleon to kepe in hys absense, for
greate gyftes the sayde Walter had
deliuered the sayde castell vnto Eu-
do earle of Carnotens. Wherfore the
kyng at the request of the sayde Bow-
charde, sente strenghte commaunde-
ment vnto the sayde Eudo, chargyng
hym in all goodly wyse to restore the
sayde castell vnto Bowcharde. The
whiche commaundement he utterly
refused to obey. For the which the kyng
beyng so amoued, sent for Rycharde
the seconde of that name, then fourth
duke of Normandy, and wth they
bothe armys: besyged the castell v-
pon euery parte, and at length wanne
it, and toke the sayde Walter within
the same, whome the kyng for his vn-
trouthe, commaunded soone after to
be hanged vpon a gybet, and the ca-
stell to be restored vnto the forer named
Bowcharde, and after returned eu-
ery man to his owne.

In the tyme of the regne of thys
Roberte, dyed Henry then Duke of
Burgoyne. The whiche for lacke of
issue of his body, bequeithed his duke-
dome vnto kyng Roberte. But the
Burgoyngs withstode that legacye
and dyde to theyn for an herde and
captayne. Lawdyr earle of Fieuers,
and wth hym helde by strengthe or
for a strengthe the cytie of Ancerre.
Wherof hearpyng kyng Roberte, sent
for the forer named Duke of Norman-
dy, and so led them towarde Bur-
goyne, and besyged the forer named cy-
tie. But at length the cytie was pol-
den, and Lawdyr put at the kynges
grace. And that done, the kyng wth
hys host besyged an other stronge
cytie called Aualon, and not wthout
greate daunger wanne it also at length
and after receyued the countrey wth
deme obeyssaunce, and ordered it at
his owne pleasure, and so retourned
into Fraunce.

Arnolde erle of Bens vsed greate
tyranny amonges the bishoppes and
mynistres of the church. Wherfore
Leophycus bishop of p^r see, thorough
the ayde and counsaile of Regnalde
bysshop of Darby, put out the sayde
Arnolde, and deliuered the cytie vn-
to kyng Roberte. But the brother of
the sayde Arnolde wth a certayne of
his knyghtes, fledde to the castell and
it helde wth strenghte. Wherfore the
kyng layde syege to the sayde castell,
and at length wanne it, and toke the bro-
ther of Arnolde named Fromonde &
sent hym to Meleunce there to be pri-
soned, where he dyed shortly after.

Thys Roberte as sayth the frenche
boke buylded fyrst the castell of Mount
fort. He founded also dyuers mona-
steryes and temples, & at Meleunce
the temple of saynt Iuan, at S^tamps
a church of our lady, & dyuers other
in dy-

in dyuerse places of hys realme. And he endowed the church of saynte Denys wth many great libertyes, and had especyall deuocyon to s. Polpe ouer all other sayntes.

It is redde of thys kyng Robert that vppon a season when he hadde longe whyle lpen at the sege of a castell nere vnto Oyleaunce, and sawe it was defulte to wynde by strengthe he founde the meanes to take the same by polpepe.

And when he hadde reigned after moost accorde of wynters, and ruled hys lande nobly .xxx. yeres, he dyed, and was buried in the house of saynt Denys, leuynge after him of his fyrst wyfe Constaunce a sonne named Hety, and annother named Robert, and of hys seconde wyfe two sonnes named Symonde, and Almarich. But it shulde seme by the sequelle of the nexte storye, that Constaunce shulde be laste wyfe, and the other the fyrste and deuoyled frome hym for somme cause, so that her chyldren shuld not be leggetymat, albeit, the Authour of thys maketh no menyon.

Anglia.

The .ccliii. Chapter.



Edmund Ironside the sonne of Egelredus, and also Canutus the sonne of Swanus kyng of Denmarke, began to rule þe Englyshe men, in the yere of

oure lord a. m. d. c. lvi. & the .xii. yere of Robertte then kyng of fraunce. For the Londeners wth the assystence of some of the Loydes of Englande fauored Edmund.

But the moore partte of the Loydes fauored Canutus, and especyallye, the spyrytualty, that before tyme

had sworne fealty to his father. And he the being at Southampth, swoze to them to be vnto theim a good and trewe iustyce, and to intreate the people soberly and ryghte wysely. Then Edmund beinge of the archbysshop of poike crowned at London, and the solennte fynished and ended, he sped hym to westsaxon, and subdued the country. In whiche tyme Canutus, which in the Englysh story is called Knoughe, dyete wth hys people to London, and woulde there haue entered. But that was forboden hym of the Londeners. For the whiche he layde hys ordynauce aboute the city, entredyng to haue entred perforce. But it was not long o; he was fayne to breake hys sege and to departe thence.

When Canutus was put of from London he dyete Westwarde, and mette in processe wth Edmund in Dorsete wyth besyde Chyllpyngham where betwene theim was foughten a stronge and cruell battayle. But in the ende Canutus was ouercome & compelled to forsaake the felde. After thys they mette agayne in Worcester wyth, where they fought a moze stronge battayle. For thys was so stronglye biddē by that men coulde not iudge whych parte had the better, o; which the worse. But as wytnesseth Polycronyca ether of them departed from other, ether for weytnes of syghte o; for lacke of the day.

But vppon the moore folowynge both hostes toynd agayne, & fought eagerly. Continuyng whiche fyghte Canutus espyeng Edmund to be at aduantage of wyntynge of the felde sodaynlye pyght a dead mannes hed vpon a speare head, and cryed to the host of Englyshme, He sle ye Englysh men and saue poure selves, lo, here is the

How Edmund was crowned at London

How Canutus besieged the city of London

The battayle betwene the kyngs and Canutus

The polpe of the Dames

the heade of Edmunde your kyng. But Edmunde therof beyng warned, spedde hym towarde that parte of the seide, and behaued hym so comfortably amonges his men, that by his knyghely courage his people recovered that they before had lost and continued the battayle tyll nyghte, in suche wyse that he had rather the better then the worse, and caused Canutus to refuse that countrey, and to returne towarde London agayne.

The dyscom-
fytte of Ca-
nutus.

Then Edmunde beyng aduertised that Canutus was returned towarde London, he folowede hym and passed the ryuer of Champe, and deliuered the cytye frome daunger of the Danes, and afterwarde encountered the Danes, at a place called Wyntsofde, where with them he had a cruell fyghte, and dyscomfytte the at length.

The battayle
at Wyntsofde.

In this passe tyme Emma his wyfe of Egredus, feryng the fortune of the warr, sent her two sones Alfyed and Edward, vnto her brother Rycharde the seconde of that name and fourth duke of Normandy.

But Canutus then, whych as before is sayd, was euer subtyll of wyl consyderynge the good fortune of Edmunde and his knyghtely courage, thoughte that at length he shuld overcome the Danes. Wherefore to saue his lande, and also to bypunge about his malicious treasor, he sought the wayes & meanes howe he myght stande in his grace and fauoure. And at length obtayned his entente and swoze to hym to be his trewe subiecte.

When kyng Edmunde had a season sojourned at London, he then made towarde the Danes that then were in Bret, and met with them at a place called Wiffesfode or Wiffofde, & there

dyscomfytte them, and chased Canutus to the yle of Sheppey. And there Canutus tooke shyppyng, and sailed aboute the lande, and entred lastly in the countrey of Mercia and spoiled a parte therof.

The dyscom-
fytte of the
Danes in
Sheppey.

Then the two hostes met some after at a place called Wyntsofde: where after a longe fyghte Canutus with his retynne fledde to the comfort of the Danes. By mene wherof kyng Edmunde was put to the worse, for manie noble men were slayne vpon his party. Amonges the whiche the byshop of Lyncolne and the abot of Ramsey were two, that thether were come to treat a peace between bothe prynces. But whiche this was lorde to the charge of Canutus, he by his durtrewe meanes so excused hym, that no man myght charge hym with any defaute.

The meane
of Canutus.

Thus continuing this mortal warr betwix these two martial prynces, to the great desolacion & mortallite of the people, one of the knyghtes of the party of Edmunde gat hym to an hygh place, where he might be somewhat hard of the holl: & spake in this wyse: Dayly we saye: no man hath the byctoyre for Edmunde may not be overcome for his great strength, and Canutus may not be overcome for fauoure of fortune: What shal then be the fruyt of this continual stryfe? None other but when the knyghtes bene all slayn on either parties, then the dukes compelled by neede shal accorde, or elles they shal fyghte alone without knyghtes. Then saynge this shal be the ende, why dooe they not one of these two? If they accorde: why is not this kyngdome sufferyente for twayne, that so long suffred for vnyte? If they couetyse of lordshyppen be so greete that eyther hath indignacion to take

The meane
of Canutus.

and

The fyrte parte.

231

and haue parte wth other, o' elles
that one to be vnder that other, then
lette them fyghte a lone, that wol be
the loydes alone left. If al men fyght
all men be slayne, by meane wherof
no men shalbe left to be vnder they;
lo'bedypp o' leading of dukys, no; yet
to defende the kyng agayn stronge
enemyes o' nacyons.

These wordes thus spoken, were
fyghter well allowed of bothe hostes
for as assymeth myne authoure, at
this tyme a trectise was made betwe
ne both p'inces for a certayne tyme.
After whiche peace ended, were it by
ocasyon of these wordes o' otherwys
the sayde two dukys Edmund and
Canutus agreed to try they; quarels
betwene them two onely.

And for this was assigned by they;
bothe agreementes, a lytel yle called
the Oling nere vnto Gloucestre, o' af
ter some wyrters named Dneledge
bycleped wth the water of Seuerne
In whych place at the daye appoynt
ed, the two champions met without
company o' assysee within the sayd
yle, the hostes of both parties stan
dyng wthout the yle, and there a
bydyng the fortune of this battay
le. There eyther p'roued other, fyrste
wth sharpe speares, and after wth
hene and cuttinge swoydes. What
shall I of this make longer p'ocesse
when eyther hadde other wel p'roued
and assayed, by receayng of harde
and sope strokes, by the fyrst moxon
of Canutus, as most wyrters tellye
they lastly accorded and bylled toge
ther as loouers to the greates comfort
of both hostes

And shortly after by the aduice of
both they; counsaile: condescended
vpon partycion of the lande, whych
immedyately was done to both they;
agreementes: and loued after as two

brothyren during they; natural lyues
But the serpente I dyd of enuye and
falle conspiracy, whych ever burned
in the herte of Edmunde was bynded
to loye, & of pure force yt must byrde
out vpon a lyghter flambe, so whan he
myghte not accomplysh by his owne
personne, he falsfyllid by his sone, as
easily byuerse authours. For as af
symeth Gyrdo, this sone of Ed
munde alwaytynge his tyme, chynge wth
the kyng was at the wyddynght to
purge nature, & wth a speare strake
hi into the fondamet and so into the
body, wherof kyng Edmund dyed
shortly after at Oct. The kyng thus
beyng slayne, anone Edmunde this
kyng therby to be greatly exalted,
spedde hym in all haste vnto Canu
tus, and saluted hym as kyng, and
shewed hym of this treason ouerlye
for his lone honore. When Canutus
had well vnderstandyng of the con
fession of Edmunde, he lye a hycret
and rightwys dyence sayd vnto him
In this wyse. For thou hast Edmunde
for I loue thou derest vnto me, slayne
thyne natutall loyde, whych I most
loued, I shal exalte thyne hed aboue
all the loydes in England. And forth
with commaunded hym to be taken
and his heade to be strycken of, and
pyghte vpon a spear head, and after
set vpon the hyghest gate of London
But Marianus & Scote telleth, that
Edmund dyed at London by natu
rall sykemes: about the feaste of S.
Andjewe.

And the Englyshe cronycle assy
meth the foynamed treason, but by
another maner of doynge. But howe
soeuer this noble p'ynce dyed, truely
it is after agreement of most wyrters
that he ended his lyfe: when he hade
repynd one yere and moze, as much
as from the month of June vnto the
ende

Chetwode
died of Edm
and his sone
whych lye f
kyng.

The ende of
Edmund

I wolden
not that the
two p'ynces
myght thus
try they; qua
rels.

Whe ther
it
sheweth
wyrters.

The infere
warde of a
scapitour.

On agayn
of this p'yn
ce

ende of November, and was buried
at Chelseybury, by his groundfa-
ther Edgar, Dolycongre. Sheweth
in the xliii. chapter of hys vi. booke
that Canutus after the death of Ed-
mund, gaue unto Ediven the lord-
shippe of Deyra, and by hys coun-
saile expelled the brother of Edmund
called the kynge of Chorles: and the
rough hys counsaile executed many
cruell dedes. Of this Edmund re-
mained two sonnes, that is to wyte
Edmund and Edwards.

The. cxi. Chapter.

Canutus. x. knought af-
ter the Englyshe cron-
icle sonne of Swannus,
as before is touched, &
ponger brother as ap-
peareth by the story followinge, began
hys domynion alone ouer England
in the yer of our lord. M. cc. xii. and p.
xxi. peare of Roberte then kynge of
fraunce. The which anone after the
death of Edmund assembled a coun-
saile at London, where among other
thynges in that counsaile debated, a
questiō was put, whether in the com-
posicion made betwene Edmund &
Canutus, any special remembraunce
was made for the chyldren or brether
of Edmund, for anye partycion of
anye parte of the lande.

Whereunto it was answered of
the lordes nay. Assymynge farther-
more with an oth for the biges plesur
that they to the bittermooste of theyre
powers would pue of that bloude of
Edmund in al that they myght. By
reason of whyche aunswere and pro-
myse, they thought many of them to
haue standen in the great grace and
fauoure of the kynge, but it turned
all otherwyse.

For many of them: or the moze par-

tye, suche as Canutus apperceaued
and knewe that they beforetime were
sworne to Edmund and hys heires
and also were natyue Englyshe men
he mistrusted and disdayned euer af-
ter. In so much that some he expelled,
and some were slayne, and somme by
goddes punishment dyed sodayn-
lye.

But among al, Ediven with his
sugred wyrdes contynued in the kyn-
ges fauoure as sayeth Marpanus,
beforemyned. By whose counsaile
and other, he shortly after outlawed
the forsaide brother of Edmund
surnamed kynge Charlys, as before
is touched. But he afterwarde was
reconspied to the kynges fauoure,
and lastly slayne of hys owne seruati-
tes.

Canutus also by the sayd counsaile,
sent the two sonnes of Edmund,
named as before is sayde Edmund
and Edwards unto hys brother Swa-
nus then kynge of Denmarke, to be
slayne after the oppinion of some wy-
ters. But he abhorynge that deade
sente them to Salomon then kynge
of Hungarye as wytnesseth Gyn-
do, and other. Wherein process of tyme
Edmund dyed, and hys brother Ed-
warde in tracte of tyme married Aga-
tha the daughter of the. iiii. Henry
then Emperoure of Almaine.

Of the which Edwards and Aga-
tha proceeded Margarete that after
was queene of Scotlande, and Chy-
tyane that was a menchon, & a sone
named Edgar and surnamed Ethe-
lynge.

This Edwards of the cronicles
of Englande is named Edwards the
outlawe, for somuche as he neuer re-
turned into Englande as sayeth the
sayde Englyshe Cronicle, after hys
fylle exile.

Then

Canutus



Howe the lordes
agreed to
make Canu-
tynge.

Then to retorne vnto Canutus, the whych after some thynges ordered in his lande, deuoyded hys sayde land in foure parties. That is to meane the fyrst pynnyppal whych at those dayes was Westsaxon, he helde vnder hys owne guydinge. Estengland, which cōteyned North & Suff. he betoke to the rule of the erle, Tuckill: a Dane of whom somwhat is in the.iii. chapter of the storie of Egelredus. Mercia he betoke to þe subtyl erle Eoƿer. And the.iiii. Northumberlande, vnto a Dane named Hyrcus. But lyke as the man of Inde at no time chaunged his coulour, so thys Eoƿer chaunged neuer hys false maners. But no wythstandyng the greate benefytes that he dayly receaued of hys pynnyces, there as he to other had ben false and desceuable in dayes past, euen so now he demeaned hi agayn Canut?

Wherefoze he being accused & pꝛoued with defaute, was commaunded of the kyng to haue iudgement. The whych was done immediatly, & hys hedde for dyuerse causes sympten of, and it wyth the bodye for spete caste into a foule and filthy place. But Ranulphe sayeth that he was slayne by the kynges agremente within his palays at London, and hys bodye with the hed throwne after into the towne dyche. Thus wyth shame he ended, & in falshode and dyspꝛuulacyon had contynued much of hys lyfe.

About the.ix. yere of hys reygne, Canutus called a Parlyamente at Drenfoye, where among other thynges yt was enacted, that Englyshme and Danes shuld holde the lawes of Edgar lately kyng.

In thys passyng dyed Swanus byother to Canutus kyng of Denmarke wythout issue, wherefoze that lande feli to Canutus. For the which

cause he wyth a stronge armye sayled thither to take the possessyon, and to set the countrey in an order, or after some wytters to apcease and wythstād the Wandelys, & the had perced that lande and done therein much harme.

Where Goodwyth the Erle, whose daughter Edward the confessor after maryed wyth a certayne number of Englyshemen fyll vpon the Wandelys by nyghte, and dysstressed the insuche wyse, that Canutus had of them hys pleasure. For thys dede the kyng had Erle Goodwyth euer after in good fauoure, and loued Englyshemen moze specially. And when he was returned into Englande, he shortly after or befoze, maryed Emma the wyfe lately of Egelredus. Of the whych, he receaued in processe of tyme a sonne, and named hym Hardcunytus, or after some Hardkynpꝛus, and after the Englysh boke Hardkynough.

The.ccxvi. Chapter.



At the tyme also of thys Canutus, about the.cvi. yere of hys reygne, the Brettes rebelled agayn hym. Wherefoze he with a greate armye entrede Scotlande, and at length ouercame the kyng of that lande named then Malcolyne, and brought them agayne to hys subiectyon, as is recorde in the bookes of Marcanus the Scot. By reason of whiche victory Canutus was the kyng of.iiii. kyngedomes, of Englande, of Scotlande, of Denmarke, and Norway.

Then as wytnesseth dyuerse authours after he had betaken thys lād of Englande to the guydyng of Leofricus Egelnothus, and other, he the returned into Denmarke. And from thence he yode to Rome in the.xv. yere

of

best Canu
the history of
the

the death of
the king
the

the death of
the king
the

Canutus
king of.iii.
kingdoms

of hys reygne, and redemed the scole of Saxons fre of all former tpybute graunted, as befoze in the Royes of Iue and Olla, and other kynges of Saxons is some dele moze touched. Whych redempcyon of tpybute as sayth Guido, was called Rome Scot. But it shall seme in that sayng some doubterth, for so much as at this dape in dyuerse places of Englande, as in Rothehamtonshyre and other, þe Peter pence are yet gathered.

Canutus also after he had in Rome accompyshed hys purpose, he in hys returne towards Englande executed wonderfull deades of almes, in releuyng of the pooze and other gossipe woꝝkes, and payde greate good for raunsom of Chyristen pꝛysoners, amonges other of hys dedes.

It is witnessed that he shulde agre wyth the bisshope of Rome that was called Benet the .viij. of that name, and paye to hym certayne summes of monye, that hys archebyschoppes after that dape myghte haue the palle wythoute paynge of moneye therefoze.

Whyle Canutus was occupied in hys iournepe, a complaynte was bꝛoughte vnto hym of some deeneauous and rule, that were occupied & exercysed in hys absence wythin thys realme. Wherefoze he wrote home letters to the loydes, chargynge theym strayghtlye, that all suche defaultes were redressed agayne hys comming home.

Thys kyng as wytnesseth Guido was of greate magnyfycence, and bled suche iustyce and temperaunce, þe in hys dayes in the west partes of the woꝝlde, was no pꝛynce of renowne as was Canutus. And ouer that he was greatlye beloued and dyedde of hys subiectes:

Of Canutus it is redde, that after hys commynge frome Rome, he bega some dele to pꝛesume in pryde, and let moze by hym selfe thā good wysdom wolde. In tyme of whych exaltacyon of hys mynde, he wente vnto the Camys syde, and behelde howe the water swelled oꝝ flowed. And sooe standyng nere the water, the water touched hys fete. Than he charged the water that he shuld flowe no hygher and that in no wyse shulde touche hys Loydes clothes. But the water kepte hys counse and wet at lengthe the kynges thyghes. Wherwith the kyng abashed, stert backe and sayde all earthly kynges maye knowe that they powers be vaine, and that none is worthy to haue the name of a king but he that hath all thynges subiecte to hys helles, as here is shewed by woꝝkynge of hys creature thys water

It is also wytnessed of the sayde authoure, that Canutus maryed his daughter had by hys last wyfe, vnto Henry sone of Conzadus the Emperoure, the seconde of that name, as al so it is testyfyed of þe authour of Cronica cronicarum.

And he repayzed manye monastaryes, and specyallye suche as befoze tyme were hurte oꝝ thꝛowne downe in the tyme of hys fathers persecucion. And beganne and ended the monastarye of Saynte Edmundes Bury, and endowed it wyth ritch possessions as befoze is touched. And dyed finally at Shaftesbury, and was buryed at Wynchestre, when he hadde raygned .xix. yeres, leuyng after him two sonnes of hys wyues, the eldeste was named Harold, and the yonger Hardekanutus. The whiche spynge hys father was made kyng of Denmarke.

Fracia,

The. ccviii. Chapter.



Ente the sonne of Robertte, beganne hys domynion ouer þe french men, in the yere of our Loyde a thousand. ccxix. and þe tenth yere of Eadwardus then kyng of Englande. To the whiche Henrye, Constantyne the mother was so unkynde, that she by her meanes wolde haue preferred her yonger sonne Robertte duke of Burgoyne, to the rule of the lande befoze thys Henrye, so that by her meanes, bothe cyties and castelles were withhelden frome hym, and was by her suche other as toke her parte so ouerlad, that he was forced to resorte vnto Robertt then duke of Normandy, for to aske helpe of hym to withstand his enemyes.

Ye shal vnderstande that this Robertt was the vi. duke of Normandy, and sonne of Rycharde the seconde, & also father vnto Wyllyam bassarde, that conquered Englande.

This Robertt was lyberal, and noble of condycion, but defamed of the deathe of his elder brother Rycharde the thyrde. For the whiche murther as wytnesseth dyuers authoures, the vii. yere of hys dowchery he wente to Iherusalem, and dyd in that pylgrimage many honourable and lyberall actes, the which in good order ben remembred in the. xix. chappiter of the. vi. booke of Polycronicon.

This Robertt receyued kyng Henrye wyth all honoure, and gaue vnto hym greate and riche gyses, and sent for his frendes and knyghtes, so that the kyng hadde by his ayde a greate and myghty hoste. And retourned agayne into Fraunce, & in short whyle

after reconquered frome hys sayde mother bothe Cytes, townes, and castelles, that she & her fantoures from hym withhelde.

And synallye agreed so wyth her, that he and she conynued frendes theyr lyfe tymes endurynge. After whiche accord, aboute the fyfte yere of hys reygne he made warre vppon Eudo Earle of Champayne, and vppon Baldewyne earle of Flaunders, and in proesse of tyme wanne frome them certayne cyties and castelles, the which Constante his mother had befoze tymes geuen to them in tyme of dyscencion.

In this warre was slayne Eudo, earle of Champayne. Wherfore hys two sonnes Stephen and Thyrbaud mainteyned the warre agayne þe kyng but to theyr both harmes in the ende. For Stephen loste thereby the cytes of Chartres and towers, and Thyrbaude the cytes of Troyes & Mault with other.

When Henrye hadde ended thys warre and set his lande in some quyetnesse, he then buylded a monastery of saynt Martyn called Des Champs beynde Paris, and set therein seculer prelates.

In thys passetyme Robertte, duke of Normandy moued to vspyte the holy sepulture of oure Loyde, called befoze hym hys lordes of hys lande, wyllynge and commaundynge them to owe theyr trewe allegaunce vnto his yonger sonne Wyllyam, and to take hym for theyr lord and duke, yf he retourned not agayne.

And to thys, he caused to sweare Robert then archbishop of Roan, & the other of hys lordes, and after departed vpon the sayde journey, and dyed in the Cyty of Bethenia, as he was comynge homwarde. Wherof þe

The death of
Robert Duke
of Normandy.

lordes of Normandy beyng ascet-
tained, accepted the foresayde Willy-
am to theyr lord and souerayne.

Of this Willyams procreacion,
it is wyrtelied of Vincent byshop of
And other, that hys father passynge
by the Cytie of towne of Faloy: in
Normandy, he sawe a compaigne of
mappens daunsynge by the strete.

Amonges the which was one of pas-
seng beautie called Arlet, and dought-
er to a skinner. To the whiche, duke
Robert caste vnlesfull loue, in suche
wyse that he caused her to be brought
to his bed the nyghte folowynge, and
helde her to his concubine a certayne
of time after, & begat on her this Wil-
lam. When his mother was wth hym
concepued, she dreemed that her bowels
were spredde ouer all Normandy
and Englande. And when he was
boorne of his mothers wombe, he fyll
to the grounde, and closed hys han-
des with powder of the floze of pau-
ment. Therfore the midwiffe made an
exclamacion, and sayde thys chyld
shall be a kynge.

Then it foloweth, when this Wil-
lam was thus admytted duke, some
of his lordes by the meane of þe kyng
of Fraunce, began to withdraue them
from hym. In so muche þe earle Gyl-
bert to whome duke Robert had be-
taken hys sounge sonne to gyde, was
slayne, and other that were respectfull
frendes vnto the chyld. There was
fghting and manslaughter, and the
countrey folle faren with, by reason
of the opinions that were amonges
the selues, wherof Guy a Burgoyne
was one of the chiefe causers. For he
with hys adherentes sayde alwayes,
that they wolde haue no barlarde to
be ruler of them.

This Guy as saith þe French boke
was nere kynnesman vnto the sounge

duke, descendyd of the doughter of þe
seconde Rycharde, and intended to
haue ben duke hym selfe. For þe which
he entensed the kynge of Fraunce a-
gayne hym in all that he myghte, but
at lengthe duke Willyam toke hym
and put hym to death.

Thus the French kynge forget-
tinge the kindnesse shewed to hym by
duke Roberte his father, toke partye
againe hym to the vttermoste, and or-
dred hym two hostes. Wherof one
he deliuered vnto his brother Almar-
ryk, and warned hym to entre the cou-
ntrey of Caus, and he hym selfe ladde
that other, and entred with it the cou-
ntrey of Curoit.

But Willyam not fearing þe kyn-
ges greate power, beyng growen
well towarde mannes stature, lyke a
lustye sounge knyghte made towarde
the kynges brother, and gaue to hym
batayle, and hym ouercame, & chased
the Frenchemen to theyr great bylan-
ye. Wherof hearynge the French
kynge with his people, sped hym to-
warde Willyam to reuenge þe shame
done to his men. But in conclusyon
he wan there no honour. Then peace
was made betwene the kynge and the
duke, and the French prysoners were
deliuered.

But this peace endured not long,
for þe French kyng callynge to remem-
braunce the losse of his men at Mort-
mere or deade see, with other disauan-
tages by hym sustayned of the sayde
duke Willyam, called vnto hys ayde
Geoffrey Earle of Hungers. And
when hys hoste was assembled, they
entred the prouynce of Normandy, &
continued their iourney til they came
to an arme of the see, where the hoste
shulde passe ouer.

Of this newe warre duke Willy-
am beyng warned, in all haste assem-
bled

Notes the
French king
ordered by
the young
duke of Nor-
mandy.

The history
that the duke
had of the
Frenchmen.

A parable

Notes the
French king
made vnto
duke Wil-
lam.

bled his Roymans, and sped him the
next waye to mete the frenche men.

In this meane while the frenche
kyng had passed the water wth cer-
taine of hys hoste, trustynge that the
remnant shulde haue folowed. But
soone after the water flowed so faste:
that his people myghte not passe.

And in this whyle came the Duke,
and sette vpon the kynges hoste, and
bette theym downe cruelly, so that at
length, the kyng was compelled to
flee, and losse a greate number of hys
knightes, to consyder them that were
slane wth the other that were taken
prysoners.

When kyng Henry had well dis-
gested in hys mynde, the wrongfull
trouble that he by enuyous persones
had put the Duke vnto, and remem-
bered the euill expedicion that he had
in that warre, he reconciled hym selfe,
and made meanes that the duke and
he myght be agreed and accorded.

The whiche by discrete sollicitours
was shortly after broughte to good
effecte, so that they continued as fren-
des during theyr lyues after.

Then Henry abstained him from
all warre, and vled the rest of his life
in peace and quyetnesse. This Henry
had two wyues, and of the laste whiche
was daughter to the kyng of Russe,
he had thre sonnes, the first to saye Phi-
lippe, the whiche he made kyng of
fraunce by his life, Robert that was
after duke of Burgoine, and Hugh the
was after named Hughe le graunde,
and was father vnto Raufe earle of
Gloucester.

And in this kynges dayes, Bur-
goine that had ben vnder the frenche
kynges oberlaunce ouer a hundred
and xxx. yeres, refused the frenche king
a parte of them, & turned vnto Con-
radus the seconde of that name than

emperour. So that, that parte which
stretched to Champayne belonged to
fraunce, and that other parte which
stretched towardes Basain, belonged
to the Almayns.

And that yere that the kyng had
admytted hys sonne Philippe to the
guydunge of the realme, he dyed, and
was buryed at saynt Denis, leuynge
after hym the issue soynamed, when
he hadde reygned after mooste wyters
xxx. yeres.

Anglia.

The ccviii. Chapter.

Englands.



Harold the sonne
of Canutus, and
of Elgiva the ex-
lys daughter of
Hamptō, began
hys reygne ouer
Englande in the
yere of oure Loz

Harold.

des incarnacion. M. ccc. lxxviii. and the x.
yere of Henry then kyng of fraunce
This for his deluyernesse and swift-
nesse, was surnamed Harrefote. In
whose beginning styfe was amonge
the lordes, for so much as of his birth
shulde be doubtfulle, whyther he were
the kynges sonne or not, and specyally
rathe Goodwyne, that vnd the be-
termooste of his power to sette hym by
and putte Hardyknute his brother
to that honoure. But Leofricus that
Canutus so much loued and trusted,
with the ayde of the Danes, withstode
so myghtely Goodwyne and his son-
nes, that they sayled of theyr purpose.

How Harold
was called
Harrefote.

Inome as this Harold was crow-
ned kyng, he banished his stepmo-
ther Emma, and toke from her suche
goodes and tewelless as she had. The
whiche Emma sayled then into Flaun-
ders, and there of Bawdwyn the
rele was treuently receyued, & there

p. ii. abode

abode durynge the lyfe of thys Harcolde. The whiche continued his lyfe to lytle fruite of profyte of the lande, no; yet of the subiectes, so that of him other for the byce that clerkes lyfte not to put in memoire, other for the rudenesse, whiche is woorthye no memoire, nothynge of hym is putte in remembraunce, but that he dyed at London, or after some at Orenfoide, and was buried at Westminster, wher he had reigned as mooste wyters agree. iii. yeres and odde monethes, leuyng after hym none heyre. Wherfore his brother kynge of Denmarke was nexte kynge after hym.

The .ccij. Chapter.



Hardkynytus the sonne of Canut & of Emma, was made king of Englande, in the yere of our lordes incarnation a .M. xli. & the.

xii. yere of Henry then king of Fraunce. This of some wyters is named Hardkynytus & Hardynough, and was anon after the deth of his brother sent for into Denmarke, & receiued sopouly, and crowned at London of Ethelnotus then archbishop of Caunterbury. But this was of such cruelty, that he sent Alfricus archbishop of Yorke and erle Goodwin vnto Westminster, commaunding them for the injury by his brother Harcolde before done vnto his mother Emma, that they shuld drawe the corpes out of y place where it was buried, and to be thowen in to the ryuer of Champs, whiche was done accordynge to his will. Which corpes after as testifyeth Cupdo and other, was founden by a fysher, and buried vntreuerly within the church parke of Saynte Clement standinge without the temple barre of London.

And as Pollicronicon sayeth, for a moze cruelte, he caused fyre the bed

of his saide brother to be smytten fro the bodie, and then thowen into the sayde ryuer. Lette the hearers to this geue credence as them lyke, for to me it semeth though the kynge had bene of suche cruelte, that the byshoppe fornamed wolde not haue ben the executour of so foule a dede.

This king also leued & fornamed trybute named Dane gelt, and spent it to the lytell comfozte of the realme, but gaue vnto shipmenne and mariners, and other lewde persons, great and vnspytynge fees and wages, and was of suche prodigalityte, that hys bourdes and tabelles of hys courte were spred, iiii. times in the daye, and the people serued of great excelle both of meate and also of drynke.

With leuyng of the foresayde trybute, the comons greatly grudged, so that in Worcester two of hys seruantes, whiche were assygned to gather that money were there slayne. For the whiche dede the kynge was so sore displeased, that he byente a greete parte of that towne.

This Hardkynytus after some authoures, maryed hys syster named Gunilda vnto the thyrd Henry emperoure. The whiche was of passyng beautie, and was the daughter also of Emma laste wyfe of Canutus.

But in processe of tyme thys Gunilda was falsly accused of spowsebech for triall wherof she was putte vnto her champron. Wherfore she beynge in greater agonie, lastely trustynge to God, and knowynge her selfe wythoute gyfte of that offence, put a childe that she with her hadde broughte out of Englande in steade of the champron. The whiche foughte wyth a man of gyauntes stature, and fynally hym slewe, and broughte vnto confusion.

When

The death of Harcolde

Hardkynytus.

The coronation of Hardkynytus.

The cruelte of Hardkynytus.

The punishment of Hardkynytus.

* Note that the order in this story is not a genealogy, but a noble man's story, and is not a genealogy, but a noble man's story, and is not a genealogy, but a noble man's story.

When Gunpda had thus cleared her selfe, she utterly refused the emperours companie, and ended her lyfe in the seruyce of hym the onely God, that so had defended her ryght.

But it shulde appere by Policro-nicon, and also by Antonius, that this mayden was married to the saide Henry by the lyfe of her father Canutus, and also durynge the lyfe of the sayde Henryes father named Conradus the seconde, as befoze is touched in the storie of the sayde Canutus, and not by thys Harophyntus her brother.

It is read that the kyng betoke all the rule of the lande vnto his mother and earle Goodwyn, the whiche had maryed, as wytnesseth the englyshe Cronycle, the doughter of Canutus gotten vpon his fyrste wyfe Elgina. By whome many thinges were misse ordered, and specially by the subtyltye of this earle Goodwyne.

This earle had many sonnes, as wytnesseth Policronycon in the. xxv. chapter of his. vi. boke. By his fyrste wyfe that was kynge Canutus syster and not his doughter as is aboue sayde, he had one sonne. The whiche by vndyscrete strykynge of an hoise, was thowen into the Champs, and drowned. And the mother was lastely smytten wth lyghtenynge, and so dyed. Of whome it is there remembred, that she was so vnglacypouse, & of so vyle condycion, & she let yonge women to hoiedome, for to gather by that vnlesfull meane ryche. After the whiche wyfe so dyed, he maryed the seconde, of whome he receyued. vi. sonnes. That is to wyte Swannus, Harold, Constantine, Wolstanus, Sithe, or Durthe, and Leofricus, & a doughter named Goditha, which after was married vnto Edward the

confessoure.

The two sonnes of Egeledus Alphyredus and Edward, whiche as ye befoze haue hard, were sent into Normandy by Emma their mother, came in the tyme of the reigne of this king into Englande, for to vsyte and see their mother, and brought with them a greates number of Normans. Then this Goodwin imagined in his mind howe he might preferre his doughter Goditha to one of these brethren, and thoughte in his minde that the eldest wolde disdayne that maryage. And for he thoughte to ioyne her vnto the ponger, and to make hym kynge and her quene, he compassed the death of the elder.

And by this mean Goodwin waned the lordes of England, & sayde it was a great reoperdy for the lande, to suffer so manie straungers to entre & lande wout lycence, wherfoze it were necessary that they were punished to the example of other. By whiche meanes he gatte authoryte to order & mater as to hym seemed best, of his owne power, because he was of mooste myght next the kynge. Wherfoze he yode and mette wth the sayde Normans, and slewe of theym the mooste number. For vpon Gynlde drowne he slew alway. i. & saved .x. And yet for he thoughte to many by & meane lest a lyue, he este agayne tythed agayne the sayde tythe, and slewe euery tenth knyght of theim and that by cruell deathe, as wyndynge they guttes out of theyr bodies, as sayeth Policronycon, and amonge other putte oute the eyen of the elder brother Alphyredus, and sent hym to Ely, where he died in shorte tyme after, all be it & the englysh boke saith & he was slaine by the forenamed torment. And Edward was conueyed, and by some

a p.iii. other

Howe Goodwyne tythed & Normans.

The tything of Goodwin.

other waye brought to his mother. But she fearing the treason of Goodwyn, sente hym soone ouer the sea agayne. Howebeit the englyshe cronycle telleth all otherwyle. When Goodwyn was after accused for this cruell dede, he sware depely that he was forced of the king so for to dooe. But in one Cronycle, I fynde that this dede was executed by Goodwyn in the tyme of Harolde Harefote, beinge kynge.

Then it foloweth in the story, this kyng Hardkynytus beinge at a feast at Lambeth by London, mery and iocande, whyle he stode drinking he fell downe sodainly, and dyed, of wated dumbe, and laye tyll the eyght daye after, the whiche was the eyght daye of the moneth of June, and then dyed, when he hadde reigned after mooste wynters two yeres, leauing after hym none yssue of his bodye lawfull, and was buryed by his father at Wynchester.

Here endeth the lyne of offsprynge of Swamus: and all other Danes, so that after this kyng, the bloode of Danes was clerely extyncte and put out from all kyngly dignytie within this realme of Englande.

And also the persecucion of them ceased clerely after this kynges deeth. The whiche had continued, to reken from the first landyng in tyme of Brighticus kyng of west Saxen, and the nyne yere of his reigne, as in the story before is rehersed, by pterme of .ii. C. lb. yeres.

The .ccc. Chapter.

Edwarde the sonne of Egredus.



Edwarde, the sonne of Egredus, and of Emma his laste wyfe, beganne his reigne ouer Englande, in the yere of

oure Lozde a thousande, ciiii, and the xiiii. yere of Henrye, then kyng of Fraunce. The whiche after the death of Hardkynytus was sente for into Normandy, and pledges layde for hym that he wythout fraude shoulde be made kyng. And then he came with a fewe straungers. But as sayeth Marianus, some of þe lordes had sent for Edwarde the outlawe, sonne of Edmund Ironsyde, for to be their kyng. But after the assyurance of the sayde authoure, when he knewe that Edwarde his newewe was in possession of the lande, he wolde meyle hym no farther.

Then this Edwarde by the great aduysle of Goodwin erle of west Saxen, and of Leofricus erle of Chester was crowned kyng at Westmynster of Edinus then archbyschop of Caunterburie, & wedded in pcesse of time after, Goditha the doughter of earle Goodwyne, whiche of Gyudo is called Editha. The whiche he entreated in such wyse, þe he put her not frome his bed, nor yet dwelt with her fleschely. Wherbyther it were for hate of her kynne, or for loue of chastite, þe trouth is not shewed. But all wynters agreen that he continued his lyfe without offence with women.

This kyng discharged Englishmen of þe greate trybute called Danegelt, the whiche before is sundry tyme spoken of, so that after þe daye it was no moze gathered. And also he subdued the Britons or walshemen þe made warre within the bondes of þe lande. But after that their duke or leder called Gyspy or Gyspyth, with ayde of the Irishmen entred the cyuer of Deuerne, and toke many prayes, and departed againe without fyght.

In the tyme of the reigne of this Edwarde, Emma his mother was accused

The sadde death of her dydinitus.

The ende of the reigne of the Danes within Englande.

The death of the Danes.

kyng the warre with the Britons.

The takinge of the walshmen by the kyng and the Britons.

accused to be samylar with þe byshop of Winchester. Upon which accusacion, by counsaile of erle Goodwyn he toke from her many of her iewellics, & caused her to be kepte somdele moze straitly in the abbay of Warwel, and the byshop he comitted to þe examinacon & correccion of the clergy. But his mother moze sorowynge & defame of Alwyne the byshop then her owne estate, wrote vnto diuers byshoppes, and besought theim of iustice, affirmynge that she was ready to abyde al lefull and mozte sharpest trial.

Then diuers of þe bi shoppes made labour to the kynge for her and for the byshop. But Robert then archebisshop of Caunterburpe, beyng with theyr labour discontel, sayde vnto them in this maner. My brethren byshoppes sayde he, how dare ye defend her that is a wylde beaste & not a woman. She hath defamed her owne sone the kynge, and taken her lecherous lemman the byshoppe.

But be it so that the woman wold purge the preste, who shal then purge the woman, that is accused to be consenting to the death of her sonne Alphyed, and procured venim to the poisoning of her sonne Edward. But howe so it be that she be guilty of gyltlesse, yf she wyl go barefoted for her selfe, iiii. steppes, & for the byshop, continually vpon. x. ploughs Marys byennynge: and fyre hote, then yf she escape harmlesse, she shall be assayed of this chalenge and she also.

This was of her graunted, and the daie of purgacion assygned. At which daie the kynge & great parte of his lordes were present, but this Roberte sayled, were it for pite or other wyse. This Robert was a monke of an house in Normandie, & came ouer by the sending for of the kynge, & was

fyrst made Byshoppe of London, & after Archebisshoppe of Caunterburpe.

Then she was blyndfolding, & led vnto the place betwene ii. men, where the yron laye glowynge hote, and passed the. ii. Marys unhurt. Then at laste she saide. Good lord, when shal I come to the place of my purgacion. When they opened her eyen, and she sawe that she was past the paine, she kneled downe and thanked God.

Then the kynge repented hym, and restored vnto her, that he before hadde taken frome her, and asked of her forgyuenesse. But the archebisshoppe of Caunterburpe fledde into Normandie. It was not longe after, that kynge Edward gathered a stronge nauie at Southhampton, of moze verely in the haue of Sandewiche, for so much as he was warned that Swanus kynge of Denmarke entended to make warre vpon hym.

But Policroicon sayth þe he gathered thus nauie to withstande Harolde Harfagar then kynge of Northganyss, & entended to haue entred england. But he was letted by þe foze named Swanus, & shortly after made warre vpon þe saide Harolde & other. An other cronicle shewith, that þe Danis and Northganyss, which is to mene men of Norway, wer agreed to come tomyntly into England. And while the kynge was whippynge of his men, one brought forth a hole full of mede of meth to drinke vpon bon byage. And after þe came hole after hole, so þe after drinke came dyobenes, & after tangeling, & tangeling turned into strife and strife turned into fyghting, wher thowough many were slayne, and the other turned to theyr owne, so þe that iourney was leste of. But the legend of his lyfe in the churche telleth, that

y. iii. he

A strange
thinge yf it
were true.

A great nauie
gathered by
kynge Edward.

A broken
cease.

he beyng at masse in the church of Westminster vpon a whytsondaye, in the tyme of the leuacyon of the sacrament he laughter. Wherof the lordes beyng aboute hym, meruayled greatly, and after frayned of him the cause. Wherunto he answered alyde that the Danes wryth the Roiswapes of one assente were purposed to haue come into thys lande, & here to haue taken prais. But as the king of Danes shulde haue entred his shippe, he fell into the see and was drowned, so that I trust in my dayes they shal not noz none other straungers make any warre in this lande.

The. cxi. Chapter.

In the tyme of thys Edwarde fyll passing great snowe, & which began in the beginnyng of January, and so continued tyll the xviij. day of March o; saint Patrickes daye, wherof the greates quantite fyll in & west countrees of England. And after that ensued great deth of men, and moeine of bestes, & by lighthing the coyne vpon the grounde that yere was wonderfull byent and wasted.

Aboute the. x. yere of Edwardes as moueth Policronica, and in the moneth of September, Eustace earle of Bolongne came a lande at Douer, whiche earle hadde wedded after the sayinge of the sayde authoure, kynge Edwardes wyf. This was parted frome his company in so secretes wise that his knyghtes were sayne to serch for hym, wentinge to them that he had ben slayne by some of the dwellers of the towne.

In the whiche serche, they demeaned them so vndyscreetly, & they slewe a citeznye of Douer. By meane wherof the people arose, and in the questyonyng of thys mannes death, canne

at lengthe vpon the earles compaigne and slewe twente of his menne, and wounded many mo. Hasefly the earle appered, and toke his mennes parte. But in conclusyon, he was sayne to withdraue him selfe with a fewe persons, and tode vnto the kyng then beyng at Glouceter, and made vnto him a greuous complaint of the men of Douer.

Then erle Goodwin, for so muche as to hym was committed the rule of Kente, was charged to ryde thither, and to take wyche of the inhabitauntes of that towne. But he withsayde that commaundemente, and counsaile the kyng to sende for & wardens of the castell of Douer and rulers of the towne, for to answer to suche matters as were layde agayne them, and if they were gyltye to punyssh them, and ellys not.

This answer of Goodwin pleased nothyng the kyng, noz suche as were aboute hym, wherfore many mo lordes were sent for. Amonge the whiche Leofricus erle of Chester and Sworde erle of Northumberlande of myne authoure ben named. After which assemble of lordes erle Goodwyne hadde suche monicyon of some of the counsaile, & he withdraue him from the court, and gathered to hym strength of knyghtes out of dyuers wythes, as west Baron & Kente, and howed at Beuerston tyll hys sonnes came vnto hym w more people. Soone after came vnto hym hys eldest sone named Swanus, & brought with hym a saye compaigne & he had receyved in Oxenfordshyre, & Glouceter shyre, & Harolde his other sonne with a felyshyppe that he had assembled in east Englande, and huntynge don shyre, so that of these people was made a greates hoste.

Then

A greates
snowe.

The lanchyng
of the earle of
Bolongne.

In the
chance.

The kyng
sayde of
Goodwin.

The kyng
& Erle
of Kente.

In the
chance
of the
kyng.

Then Goodwyn to the kynge was accused, for gatherynge of soe greate an hooste. But he excused hym, and sayde, it was done to wythstande the Walyshemen. The whyche contrary proued, he was commaunded to send awaye the people, and to come wyth a certayne number vnto the court. But that he refused. Then the kynge wyth hys counsaile heringe at London, Goodwyn and Harolde, was est sent for, and charged to come to the court wyth xii. personnes wythoute moo, and to render into the kynges handes all knyghtes fees that he and Harolde hys sonne hadde wythin Englande. To this by theim was answered, that they myghte not come to the counsaile of treachours and gyle full menne, and that also wyth so few menne in number, they myghte not wythout parell or shame passe by the countrey.

In this whyle a parte of Goodwyns knyghtes wyth dyewe theim, and hys power beganne to mynyshe, and the kynge in this whyle had gathered a stronge hooste. Then proclamation was made, that Goodwyne shulde come to the court as befoze is sayde, or a wynde the lande wythin vi. dayes. Wherefoze Goodwyne consyderynge the leoparde that he was in trooke wyth hym thre of hys sonnes, that is to mene Swanus, Colly and Gurthe, and sayled into Flaunders, where he was receaued of the Erie Bladwyn after some wynters, whose daughter Swanus hys sonne hadde befoze spoused and was named Indyth. And Harolde and Leofricus, two of hys other sonnes wyth a fewe shippes sayled out from Byrstone in to Irelande.

When the kynge was ascertayned that Erie Goodwyne, wyth hys fyue

sonnes was in this maner departed out of hys lande, he shortly after called a parlyamente, & by authoryte of the same, outlawed Goodwyne and his thre sonnes that were gone with hym. And that done he put hys owne wyfe and daughter of Goodwyn into the abbaye of Wartwell wyth one mayden, as sayeth Marcanus. And soe Goodwyn and hys sayde sonnes contynued two yeres outlawed. In the whyche season he or hys retynue toke diuerse tymes prayes in marches of Englande, and in the ende dytwe to hym suche strengthe, that he was purposed tooe haue entred the lande with force, and to haue warred bypon the kynge. But by medpatoures that fauoured Erie Goodwyn, a peace was made betwene the kynge and hym, soe that in procelle he was receaued toe grace wyth hys sonnes & hys daughter restoyed to her fyrste and former honoure. And for this pence to be continued, for Goodwyns parte was deliuered for pledges & sonne of hys called Wylnotus and a sonne of Swanus named Harum, or Harun. The whyche two pledges kynge Edwarde sente into Wylstan duke of Normandy to be kept. And Algarus the sonne of Aelfryc Erie of Chester, to whome the kynge had geuen the erledome of Harold, & ruled petytely in tyme of hys absence, at hys retorne deliuered it toge him agayn, gladly & without grudge.

The.ccxii. Chapter.



Trynge the tyme of this outlawyng of Goodwyne, Wyllyam barbarde duke of Normandy came wyth a good compaign into this lande, and was honourably receaued to whom the kynig made great chere And

Howe Goodwyn is outlawed.

Howe kynge Edward bled his owne wyfe whiche was his daughter of Goodwyns

Howe Erie Goodwyn was agayne restoyed to his honour, and hys daughter too her former dignite.

Howe Erie Goodwyn is outlawed.

Howe Erie Goodwyn is outlawed.

Howe Erie Goodwyn is outlawed.

And after he had tarped here a certayne of tyme to hys agremente and pleasure, he returned to hys owne w great gyftes and pleasures. And Emma the kynges mother dyed shortly after, and was buryed and wyche-ster. And Swanus the eldeste sonne of Goodwyne wente to Hierusalem, and from thence towarde Lycya, and dyed by the waye of colde, that he had taken of gonyng barfoote. Then the Romans that hadde geuen to the kyngye cruel counsailes agayne Englyshe menne, were by Goodwyne and hys frendes cryed. Amonge whyche Roberte Archybyschoppe of Caunterburie that had spoken soore agayne theym was one, whyche after wente to Rome to comeplayne to Leone the ix. of Hyctoure the seconde.

And whē he had receaued letters of the B. of Rome dyrected to þ king he returned to hys abbay of Semetp cum in Normandy, where he sometyme hadde bene Monke and abbot, & there dyed.

After him Stigandus was made hys successoure, the whyche as sayeth Polytronicon, had befoze tyme lefte the byshoppyche of Shyrborne, and toke the see of Winchester by strength.

He also vsed frayres of holy church thynges, and was a letwde or vyleticed man, as the moze part of the byshoppes of Englande at those dayes were. And ouer that he passed other in ryches and dissimulation. But yet he neuer had the palle frome Rome, though there be greute sale that maketh many mastres.

Then was openly spoken that he was not worthy a byshoppyche, that coude vse the byagge, or pompe of the world, the vse of voluptuosytye, of glotonye and lecherie, the wyppynge awaye of clothyng, the countenaunce

of knyghtes, and the gatherynge of horsmen, and thynckerth full lytle on the prosypte of soules. And yf men say to them that a byshoppe shulde be chosenne for holynesse of lyuynge, and for hys good clargge, and not for couetyse of monye, they wolde answer as foloweth: *Nunc aliud tempus, aliis prore pore mores.* The whyche verse maye be Englyshed in thys maner.

As tyme requyryeth, so men doone them vse.

In wynter warme clothes, in somer lyghter and lesse.

In tyme of sadnes men done games refuse.

And in myghte tyme, menne myghtes them dysse.

So in tyme passed, was vsed greute sadnes

In the chyrche. But nowe men lyghte be.

Wherefoze the maners muste wyth men agree.



That by suche lyghte answered they playned or excused the harpynesse of theyr myse lyuynge.

About thys tyme, which shulde by Ranulphe be about the .xii. yere of the regne of Edward: Marcanus the Scot that befoze I haue often named, that wrote muche of the dedes of the kynges of Englande at the age of .xxv. yeres was thoozne a Monke at Colleyne in Almayn in the abbaye of Scottes. Whych Marcanus after some wytters was in greute fauoure wyth Malcolm king of Scottes.

In the .xiii. yere of kyng Edward the Scottes rebelled agayn þ kinge. Wherefoze Edward erle of Northumberland, by the kynges commaundement gathered a greute host and entered

Carlbisshopes
in those daies

The thynges
that are vncō
ly for a byshop

fred that lande, and behaued hym so manfullye, that in processe he subdued the Scottes, and chased the kinge out of hys cuntry, so that after king Edward gaue that kyngedome vnto Walcolyne sonne of the kyng of Cambrye, to beholden of hym & hys heyres kynges, as chiefe Lordes of Scotlande.

Upon Ester monday aboute the sayde pere Goodwyn spittinge at the kynges boure wyth other lordes in the castell of Wynsoze, yt happened one of the kynges cuppe beters tooe stumble and to recouer again, so that he shedde none of the dyncke. Wher at Goodwyn lough and sayd, nowe that one brother hath sustayned that other. Whereby he ment that the one fote or legge hath sustained the other from fallinge. Wyth whych wordes the kyng matched hym and sayde, Ryght so my brother Alfrede shulde haue holden me, ne had Goodwyn be. The Erle then conceaued þ the kyng suspected hym of hys brothers death and sayde vnto the kyng in defendynge hys vntrouthe: ly; as I perceaue well it is tolde to þ, that I shuld be the cause of thy brothers deth. So mought I lauely swalowe this morsell of breade that I here holde in my hande, as I am gylelesse of the dede. But as soone as he had receaued the brede, sozthwyth he was choked. The the kyng commaunded hym tooe be drawen frome the table, and soo was conueyed to Wynchester, and there buried.

Martianus sayth that as erle Goodwyn sat at the kynges table at Wynchester, he was sodapnely taken with a pallsape or some other sykenes vpon the Ester monday, and dyed the thyrde dape after. And hys lordshippes were geuen vnto Harold his eldest sonne

then lypynge, and Haroldes erldome was geuen to Algarus the sonne of Leofrycus, whych was the erldome of Drenfozde after some wyters

It was not longe after that kyng Edward sente vnto the. iiii. Hentpe than Emperoure of Almayne, Aldze dusbyshop of Worcester, wyth other noble men, prayng him that he wold sende vnto Englande hys colen Edward sonne of Edmund Ironsyde for so much as he ented to make him hys heyre. The whych request was fulfyllled, soe that he came into Englande sone after, the whiche as ye haue harde befoze, was named Edward the outlawe

But as witnesseth Gupdo and other the pere after þ he came into Englande, he dyed at London, as was buried at Westmynster.

Thys pere folowynge kyng Edward through euell counsaile expyled wythout gylte Algarus the sonne of Leofrycus. The whych assocpat hym wyth Gryffyne kyng or duke of Wales, and destroyed þ country of Harfozde, and dyd muche harme tooe the towne and set þ mynster on fyre, and slewe. vii. chanons therof. Then the kyng sente Harold agayne hym, þ whych chased the Walsshmen into theyre owne boundes, and recouered the sayde towne by apoyntmente holden by the sayde Algarus, and a medded al hurttes befoze done by þ Walsshemen and lastly recōpyled the sayde Algarus and hys company vnto the kynges grace.

The. ccciii. Chapter



Boute the. xv. pere of kyng Edward dyed the noble duke Sward ruler of Northberland of the fyfte, of whome Gupdo reher-
seth

the bysonne
of the
Scottes.

the sodapnely
death of Erle
Goodwyn.

The manner of
dying of Duke
Edward.

seth dyuerse notable actes whiche I
passe ouer. Of whome it is reade that
when he sawe well he shulde dye, he
caused hys armoure to be put vppon
hym, and so armed and sittyng in a
chayre, haupnge al the ryghtes of the
churche, sayde, that sooe it became a
knyghte and manne of honoure tooe
dye, and not lyeinge as an other meene
man, and so dyed, and was buryed at
Poyske. And hys Erle dome was after
geuen to Coltepe o; Coltepe sonne of
Goodwynne.

The death of
Leofricus.

In the yere folowing o; p. xvi. yere
of kynge Edward, dyed also p. good
erle Leofricus erle of Mercia and of
Chesster, and was buried in the abbay
of Couentre, the whiche befoze he
had builded. Thys manne purchased
many great perylleges for the towne
of Couentre, and made it free of all
maner of roules, excense onely of horse
for the whiche to haue also free, the
commen same telleth, that after long
request made vnto hym by hys wyfe
named Godina, he graunted her tooe
haue it thereof free, with that, that
she woulde ryde naked throughe the
towne, by meane wherof yt was fre
ed. The Algarus hys sonne was erle
after hym.

Howe Couen-
try was made
free.

Harolde the eldest sonne of Good
wyf, was in great authoryte, and ru-
led much of the kynges acynge.

The yere folowing, Algarus was
accused by malysce, & exyled the lande
wherfoze he fled agayne to Gysstynne
duke of wales as he befoze had done
of whome he was toyously receaued
and mayntayned. The kynge therof
beyng informed, sent Harolde into
wales to make warre vppon Gys-
stynne. The whych quytte hym in sooe
knyghtelpe wyse, that he chased the
walshmen, byente the sayde Gysstyns
palaces at a place called Rutlan, and

his nauire, and then returned into En-
glande aboute mydlynte. But about
rogatyon dayes nexte folowynge, the
sayde Harolde wth his byother Col-
tepe was sente thither agayne, wth a
stronge acynge. At whych season they
destroyed agreate parte of Wales &
in conclusion brought the walshme
vnto dewe subiectyon, and forced the
to geue pledges for the contynuaunce
of the same. And that doone pursued
so soze vpon the sayde Gysstynne, that
in the ende hys owne people for pur-
chase of theyr owne lyues, slewe the
sayde Gysstynne, and sente hys head
vnto Harolde in the moneth of Au-
guste, so that after the death of thys
Gysstynne by the commaundement of
the kynge, the countrey of Wales was
comynitted to the gyardynge of the ii.
byethren of Gysstynne, the whiche had
sauored moze the kynges partpe in
tyme of the foresayd warre then their
brother. And thys warre in Wales
thus brought to ende, Harolde by hys
pollicy reconsyled agayne Algarus,
erle of Mercia to the kynges grace,
so that he contynued in hys fauoure
duryng hys lyfe after.

The byth-
ren of the
Walshme.

About the .xx. yere of the reygne
of kynge Edward, Harolde sayled
towarde Roymandpe to wylset hys
byother wyllmotus and Harun hys
neuewe, the whych as ye befoze haue
harde were sayde there for pledges
for the peace to beholden vppon erle
Goodwynnes syde agayne the kynge.
But he in hys courtesol saylyng was
wether dyspuen by tempeste into the
countrey o; prouynce of Dountye, o;
moze verely into p. prouynce of Doff-
tyn, where he was taken as a pryso-
ner, and sente vnto Duke wylliam
of Roymandpe. The whiche forced
hym to swere, that he in tyme folow-
ynge shulde mary hys daughter and
that

that after the death of kyng Edward he shoulde have the lande of England to his behove, accordynge to the wyl and mynde of Edward after some wyttis. And after the oppynon of another cronycle wytten in latyn, the sayde Harold fei to be in the moze fauoure of duke William, shewed to him that kyng Edward in pcesence of his barons, had admittid the sayde William for his heire, and conuanted wth hym, that if he ouerliued the kyng, he wolde in safe wyse kepe the lande to his vse. For the whiche tydynge a promysse William graunted to hym his daughter to wife, that than was wthin lawfull yeres of marriage wth great dower.

And for to cause Harold to be the moze stablyer in his promysse keeping he deliuered to hym Harun his newewe and sonne of his brother Swanus, whiche he much desyred, & kept wth William the brother of the sayd Harold. After whiche couenantes suffycently stablyshed and enacted, Harold departed from duke William wth greute and ryche gyftes, and in processe of tyme landed in Englande. And at his comynge to the kynges pcesence, he shewed to hym al that he had done in the foresayde waters, where wth, the kyng was well contented, as assymeth the sayde latyne cronycle.

The ccciiii. Chapter



At the ccc. yere of kyng Edward as testyfythe Ranulphe, Costitus the brother of Harold was for cause not shewed byfayned in the kynges court, & wente vnto Harford in the march of Walys, where at that tyme the seruantes of Harold by commaundement of the myghter were helyed to make prouy-

dis for to recreane the kyng. But wha this Costitus was thither comen he cruelly slewe the sayde seruantes of his brother, and hacked them in small peaces, and cast them after in mere solace or salte. And that doone sent worde vnto the kyng, that if he wolde come vnto his feest, he shoulde lacke no powdered meate, what so euer he had desyde.

This cruell dede sprange wyde, so that for it he was hated of all men in so much that his owne tenantes the men of Northumberland, of which prouynce he than was lord, arose agayn hym and tooke from him that he hadde, and lastlye chased hym in to Flaunders with a fewe personnes than awaytinge vpon hym. But the vertuous kyng Edward not being contented wth the commons doyng consyderynge it to be done wythoute his aduise and comaundement, sent thither Harold to do correccion vpon the heades of Captaynes of the Northumbres. Wherof they beyng ascertayned continued they strenght and met wth Harold and his people, and let hym so vnderstande that they were rely bozne, and feely noyshed, and that they myght not suffer no cruelties of dukes. Also they had lerned of their elders and soueraines to mayntain freedom or to suffer deeth and to lyue in quyetnes vnder an easye duke. Whan Harold hadde receued this message, and aduertysed the strenght of the Northumbres, he perceaued wel that without great effusyon of bloude he myghte not correcte the mydoers. Wherfore it seemed to hym better to fauour the coster, than to take hede of the synfuler prouyde of his brother, so that he returned to the kyng wth this answer, and purchasid the prouyde pardon of

A cruell murther comyttid by Costitus his brother to Harold.

The flying of Costitus.

of him, and also procured so the king that he assigned tooe thep in an other duke of carle, that was named Balchayus.

And Costus hys brother wyth his wyfe & chyldren remayned in Flaunders, duringe the kynges lyfe.

And to conclude thys storye, trouthe it is that thys blessed kyng dyed the iiii. day of January, whā he had reigned. xlii. yeres. vii. monethes, & odde dayes, and was buryed in the monastery of Westminster, the whiche he before had greatly augmented and repaired, but not in that maner & forme that it is nowe in. For the church that nowe there standeth, was so redpyed and buylded newe of Henry the chyld and sonne of kyng Ihon. The which also after some wyters, translated this blessed kyng Edward from the lower part of the chyrch, and shyned him there he nowe lyeth. And thys kyng Edward lefte after hym no chyld, for he was accompted for a vyrgyn whan he dyed.

France.

Phylippe the
fyrste

Francia.

The. ccc. Chapter.



Phylippe the fyrste of that name and sonne of Henry, beganne hys domynion ouer frech men, in the yere of oure lord. M. lvi. and the. xvi. yere of Edward the confessor than kyng of England. And of thys Phylippe it is reade, that he married a wyfe named Berta the daughter of Baldwyne erle of Holland and of frysce. Of the whiche Berta thys Phylippe receaved a sonne and named him Lewis, and a daughter that was called Cunstauce.

But in proccesse of time he haunted so muche the compaignie of a woman

named Bertande, that he hated hys lawfull wyfe, and at length helde her in pryson, and kepte that other in her stede, and gatte vpon the sayde Bertande two sonnes named Phylippe & Flores, and a daughter whych myne authoure nameth not. For thys avowtry, he was often monyshed of the b. of Rome that he shulde leue the compaignie of all euil woman, and take to hym hys lawfull wyfe & be so longe had holden in pryson wythin hys castle of Monstreull. And for he wolde not be obedyente unto the byshop of Romes counsaile he was synally accused of Urbayne bishoppe of Rome the seconde of that name. By means wherof, he was reconspied and restored agayne to hys wyfe, and refused hys concubyne.

And in the tyme of thys Phylippe Godfrey de Bollis wyth many other chrysten prynces, at the exhortacyon of Peter the heremite, sailed into the holy lande, and wanne the cite of Hierusalem oute of the Saracens handes. Whych prynces laste crowned the sayde Godfrey kyng of the sayd cite. And after it sooe continued in possession of chrysten men, by the tyme of. lxxx. and. x. yeres, vnder ix. chrysten kynges, & longer myghte haue endured, hadde not dyscrecion fallen amongest them selves. And so by Antoninus, Peter Destey, and other it is manifestly shewed Thys bypage after most accord of wyters, began in the yere of grace. M. lxxvi. and the. xvi. yere of this Phylippe. And the sayde Godfrey was crowned kyng of the sayd cite of Hierusalem after assymaunce of the sayde wyters, in the yere of grace a M. and. lxx. and. xii.

Of thys Phylippe lxxviii. wordes more is left in wytyng. For lyke as hys

Jerusalem is
the possion
of chrysten
prynces.

hys father Henry made hym kynge by hys lyfe, and suffered hym to haue the rule of the lande, ryghte soe thys Philip after a certayne of tyme, comyngeth the rule of the land vnto Lewys hys sonne. And he set hys mynde to huntynge and other dysportes, and so ledde hys lyfe in all slooth and poelnes.

Then Lewys takynge vpon him the charge of the realme, subdued the Cite of Mounte Mersy and other, that laboured to take from y church of Saynte Denys certayne pzeueleges, and also constrayned theym to restore and satisfye all hurttes and harmes to the sayde church by them doone.

Thys Lewys as assymeth the frenche cronycle, warped the daughter of Guy Cite of Cotchesorde, the whiche after for nearenesse of kynne was defozed frome the sayde Lewys, to the great dyspleasur of the sayd Carle Guy. Wherefore he moued warre agayne the sayde Lewys, and toke frome hym certayne holdes and castelles, of the whiche the castell of Gurney was one. But at length Lewys had the better of that warre, and recouered dyuerse of the sayde holdes.

And amonges other prysoners by hym and hys knyghtes taken, he toke a myghtye and a stronge captayne of the sayde Carle Guy named Hombolde, the whiche he sente to the castell of Weampes, and there safelye to be kepte.

Buttynge whiche warre, Philip the kynge sickened, and dyed the yere of grace, a thousand an hundred, and fyfte when he hadde raygned full. viii. and fortye yere, and was buryed at saynte Benet sur Loyr.

Anglia.

The. cccvi. Chapter.



Harolde the seconde sonne of Carle Goodwynne, and laste kynge of Sarong, beganne to rule the realme of England the fyfte daye of Iu

nuarye, and the yere of our lord. M. and. lxxvi. and the. viii. yere of Philip the fyfte then kynge of Fraunce. Thys as most myghtye for so muche as the blessed kynge Edward dyed withoute yssue, not myndyng the pryncesse of hym befoze made vnto Wylyam duke of Normandy as befoze I haue shewed, toke vpon hym as king and was crowned of Aluredus then byshoppe of Yorke. Albeit as assymeth Guydo and other, some of the lordes entended tooe haue made Edgar Adelynge kynge, whiche Edgar as assymeth the sayde authoures, was sonne to Edward that was the sonne of Edmund Ironsyde, and named of some Edward the outelawe. But for thys Edgar was yong, and specially for Harold was stronge of knyghtes and ryche, he wanne the reygne. Howbeit, Marcanus sayeth that kynge Edward ordayned befoze hys death, that Harold shold be kynge after hym. By reason wherof, the lordes crowned hym thereupon at Westmynster.

Anone as he was crowned, he beganne to for dooe cruel lawes and customes befoze bled, and stablyshed the good lawes, and speciallye suche as were for the defence of holpe church and punished the euill doers, to the fere and example of other.

In whiche tyme after that Harold was thus made kynge, Cospre or Cospre hys brother whiche as befoze is sayde

Harolde.

Harolde comyngeth to him
to take the
crown of
England.

On death of
Philip.

The returne
of Cospre
ther to Harold
whiche he
muche hurte.

sayde was of Northumbres chased into Flaunders, made hym a naupe of threfoze smale sayles, and sayled aboute the yle of Wyghte, and toke prayes wythin the sayde yle & others places of Kente. And frome thence he sayled into Lynsey, & dyd there much harme both with fyre and sword. But soone after he was chased thence by Edwin & Walcarus Carles of Mercya and of Northumberlande. And then he sayled into Scotlaynde, and tarped there tyll the somer after.

When Costius was thus wth hys robbers chased, then Harolde Harfagar kyng of Northgaynes or Norwayes, wth a greate nauy of .iii. hundred shippes or moo, entred þ mowth of the ryuer of Tyne. Thys Harolde Harfagar as sayeth Gyde, was the sonne of Canutus, and kyng of De marke and of Norway. The whyche herynge of the deth of holy Edward purueyed the sayde greate arme to wyne Englande, as hys ryghtfull enherytaunce. When Harold was warned of hys greate flete of Danes he sente vnto the fornamed Carles or dukes of Mercya and of Northumberlande, commaundinge them to stande theyr landyng, whyle he gathered his strength. Then the forsayde dukes sped them towarde the Danes and gaue vnto theym a sharpe and a stronge fyghte. But in conclusion the Englyshemen were put to the wyse, and were fayne to geue backe, so that the enemyes entred farther into the lande. The kyng hearyng of the dyscōfytur of hys people, made the moyste haste towarde hys enemyes, so that the fyrte dape after he came to Stempstorde byrge. In thys whyle was Costius before named come oute of Scotlande and gone to the party of the Danes agayne hys olde brother

In thys forsayde place both hooden toged & saught then, & ether a sharpe cruel batel. Wherin fyl many a sturdy knyght vpon the Englysh partye but mo vpon the Danes side, so that in the ende Harold their kyng was slayne, & that of the hand of Harold Costius was also slayne in the same fyght. Olafus brother to þ sayd Harold Harfagar, with Paulus duke of the ples of Wykes, were there taken prisoners. The whyche the kyng caused to hym to be sworne, to kepe such promyses as they to hym ther made & toke good pledges for peformance of the same, & after suffered theym to retorne from thence they were come.

It is also specially remembred of the sayd author, þ one knyght stode vpon the forsayde byrge, & with his are defended the passage maugre the hole host of the Englyshemen, and slewe .xl. Englyshmen or mo wth his are, & myght not be ouer come, tyl an Englyshman went vnder the byrge & stycked him vpwatd with his spere thzough an hole of the byrge.

For thys byctory Harold was suppyessed wth pyde, and also wth couetouse, soe that he dreuyed not the prayes of hys enemyes amonge hys knyghtes, but he kepte theym to himselfe, or gaue parte vnto suche knyghtes as he fauoured, and spared to the that had wel deserued, by reaso wher of he lost the fauore of many of his knyghtes.

In thys pastime, the daughter of duke Wyllyam, the whyche Harold shuld haue marryed, dyed wythin age wherfoze Harold thought him þ moyscharged of his promise befoz made to her father. But Wyllyam warned Harold of conuauentes broken and medled menasses wth prayes by

The atyual
of Harold har
fagar the sonne
of Canutus,
kyng of Den
marke.

Howe the du
kes assayed þ
Danes.

Harold the
sonne of
Canutus.

Harold
the sonne
of Canutus.

Harold
the sonne
of Canutus.

William of
Normandy
calling the
realm of En-
glande. 2.

by sondry times. Wherunto Harold
answered that a nyce folowre coue-
naunte ought not to be holden. Namely
þe helth of other mennes right
and kyngdome, withoute the hole as-
sente of the senatours of þe same land
And farthermore a lettre of the might
and ought to be broken, and speryal-
lye when it is compelled to be shewen
for nede or for dyede.

Upon these answers receyved by
duke William from Harold, in the
whyle that messaungers wente and
came, duke Wyllyam gathered his
knyghtes, and prepared his naue,
and all other thynges necessarye un-
to the warre, and hadde assente of the
lordes of his lande, to aide and assiste
him in his journey.

And ouer that, he in suche wise en-
fourmed the byshoppe of Rome, than
being named Alexander the seconde,
that he conformed hym in takyng of
that bygge, and sent vnto hym a ban-
ner, the which he willed hym to beare
in the myppe that he him selfe shulde
sayle in. And so beyng purveyed of
all thynges concernyng his journey
he sped hym to the sea lyde, and toke
shippynge in the haven of saynte Vla-
ler, where he tarped a longe tyme or
he might haue a conueniable wynde.
For the which his souldoyours mur-
mured and grudged, & sayde it was a
woodnesse and greute dyspleasyng
vnto God, to delyue an other mannes
kyngdome by strengthe, and namely
when God wythsayde it by the wo-
rdyng of his elemente.

At the laste, the wynde shortly af-
ter came aboute, and they toke shyp-
pyng, and helde his course toward
Englande, vpon this grounde and
aple folowynge.

The firste and principall was to
challenge his right, & to haue the domi-

nion of the lande that to him was ge-
uen (as he assermed) of king Edward
the confessor and his nexte.

The seconde was, to take wyche
of his deathe & cruell murder of his
niece Alfrede, & brother of the bles-
syd kyng Edward, that was slaine of
earle Godwynne and his adherentes
as befoze ye haue harde in þe booke of
Hardyngtun, the which dede he as-
cribed chesely vnto Harold. And the
thirde was, for to avenge the wronge
done vnto Robert archbishop of Can-
terburie, which as he was enformed
was cryed by þe meanes and labour
of Harold, in the tyme of Edward þe
confessor, as befoze is shewed.

The. ccvii. Chapter.

Duke William heppyn his
course, landed in pcesse
of time at Hasting in Sus-
sex, in a place called Peue-
nelley. And in his goynge out of his
shyp, & takyng the lande, his one fote
flobe, and that other stakke faste in þe
lande. The which spyng one of his
knyghtes þe was nere vnto him, cried
alowde & sayde, nowe sy; duke þe hol-
dest Englande, and thou shalt sone be
toured from a duke to a kyng.

The duke of this made game, and
entred further into the lande, & made
his proclamacions and cryes, that no
man shulde take any prayes, or dooe
any force to the people. For he sayde
that it was reasonable that he shulde
spare that thyng that shoulde be his
owne.

Harold in this whyle was in the
North partes of Englande, and had
hittyn of the landynge of the Nor-
mays, and sped hym toward them
in all that he myghte, and gathered
his strengthe by the countreys as he
came. But the Duke made so good
wynde, that he came to London befoze

3.1. the

The landynge
of duke Wyl-
lyam.

Proclam

The sayynge
of duke Wyl-
lyam at Lon-
don.

the kyng. Where he was holden out, till he hadde made good suretie, that he and his people shoulde passe thorough the cytie withoute taryenge. The whiche was obserued. And so he passyng the cytie, passed the byrdge, & went ouer into Suffer.

Kyng Harolde entending for to knowe the strengthe of his enemyes, sent espies into the Dukes hoste, the whiche made repoyte vnto the kyng that all duke williams souldoyours were pyles. For they had their ouer lippes and chekes shauen, and the Englyshemen at those dayes vled the heare of theyr ouer lippes shad, and not shauen. But Harolde vnto that answered and sayde, they be no pyles, but are stalewoyth and surdye knyghtes.

Then Surth or Surth one of the pongeste byrthen of Harolde, counsailed hym that he shoulde stande aparte, and suffer hym with other of his lordes to fyght with the Romans for to muche as he was sworne vnto the Duke: and they were not, alledgyng furthermoze, that yf they were ouerthrowen, that yet he myghte defende his quarell, and fyghte for the countrey.

In this meane tyme, William sente a monke vnto Harolde, and referred to hym the matter of wares, & to chuse one of the thre.

The fyrste that accorded to his othe he shoulde render the lande, or helyner it vnto the possessyons of William. And that done, to take it againe of hym, and holde it of him as in fee, and so to reigne vnder him for terme of his lyfe, and after his deathe to recourne it to the sayde William, or to suche one of his sonnes as he wolde assigne it vnto. Or secunde, leave the kyngedome without more stryfe. Or

thirde, in excheuynge of Medynge of the moze plenty of chrysten mennes bloude, that he wolde defend his quarell in his owne person agayn the Duke, and they thre onely to trye the matter by dynte of sworde. But Harolde refused these offers, and sayde he wolde trye his quarell by dynte of swordys, and not by one sworde, and that he and his knyghtes wolde defende their countrey agayne all straunge nacions, prayyng to god to be the ryghte betwene them twayne.

When duke William hadde receyued this answer frome Harolde, & sawe well that there was no meane but fortune in battayle, he charged his people that myghte watche, to occuppe them in prayer, and speciallye the pyles and the religious people where the Englyshemen gaue them all to drynke and longe.

Then vpon the morowe being saterdaye, and the viij. daye of October bothe hostes assayed other, in a place where as now standeth the abbey of Bataile, in Suffer. In the begynnyng of this battayle, a banner or a banner called Chylter, a Roman spaied before the hoste of Romans, as he was an Englysheman, or knyghte that came agayne hym, and after that one other, and so the thre, and was slaine at the laste.

Then the Welshons smote together with a greete noise and crye, & foughte for a longe season. And the Englyshemen meane defended them manfully, and better for that that they kepte them hols together, withoute starynge or spryngyng abrode. The whiche when William apperceyued, he gaue a sygne vnto his knyghtes, that they shoulde fyghte backe, and make countenaunce as though they dyd better. Then the

Roy.

The offer
that duke will
iam made to
kyng Harolde.
1

2.

Normans imbatelled the foote men, and set horsmen for wynges on eue-ry syde. By the whiche wyse the Englyshe men were defeneyd, and some oute of arape, and the Normans turned agayne vpon the Englyshe men, and slawe them downe on euery syde.

This batayle was soze foughten of the Englyshe menne, that Duke Wyllyam was thysse kelled that daye by reason that the hoise were þ daye slayne vnder hym. Lassep Haroldde was wounded in the eye wth an arrowe, and full to the ground and was slaine, and his people scatered, so that well was hym that nyghte saue hym selfe by fleyng. Then duke wyllyam buried his men that there were slaine and suffered his enemyes to dooe the same.

Of the deathe of thys Haroldde is dyuerslye wyrtten. For Geraldus Crambyent. in hys booke called Itinerarius sayth, þ after Haroldde had receyued manye woundes, and losse his leste eye, he fledde from that felde to the countrey of Chester, and lyued longe after an holpe lyfe as an ancre in the selle of Saynte James, laste by saynte Johans church, and made there an holy ende.

When the deathe of Haroldde was knowne to the earles of Mercia and of Northumberlande, the whiche for strenghtnesse of waie myght not bying theyr people to that felde, or elles for that þ they wytsfully withdrowe them selves from Haroldde, because he none other wyse departed þ prayes amonges them and theyr knyghtes at the former felde of Hozganes: then they dyete the nette waie to London, and toke Agatha Haroldde wyfe and sent her to Chester. And they and Aldredus byshop of York with the Londoners, agreed and promysed eether

vnto other, that they wolde make ED-gare Kychelinge kyng, and defende hys regite to the vttermoste of theyr powers.

But that promysse notwithstandinge, when they harde of the greates strengthe that dayly fell to duke wyllyam, & of his promysions, they were sayne to bryake that appoyntment. And the saide earles submitted them and gaue vnto hym pledges, and became to hym hys lyege menne by homage and feautye.

And thus when Haroldde had ruled the lande from the .v. daye of Januarye, to the .xiii. daye of October, he was slayne, when he had reygned nyne monethes and odde dayes, and was buried at the monasterie of the holpe crosse of Waltham, whiche he before hadde founded, and set therein chanons, and gaue vnto theym saye possessions.

And here endeth for a tyme þ bloud of Barons, the whiche continued to reken from Hengestus fyrste reygne, by the space of tyme of fyue hundred and .lxxxi. yeres. And yf it be rekened from the begynnyng of the west-Saxons, then it endureth by þ terme of .v. hundred. lxx. yeres. Which continued as rulers and kynges of this lande all the saide tyme, only except þ passed betwene þ fyrste yeres of Canutus, & the laste yere of Hardeknutus. In the which season passed or flowed vpon .xxiii. yeres. All be it þ the persecucion of þ Danes lasted much longer, as tofoze I haue shewed in the story of the fozenamed kynntus.

The .ccc. viii. Chapter.

Then for as muche that God of hys vnkownen iugementes to man, and by hys high & myghty counsaile, wolde suffer this duke to conquere so noble a lande, and to

3.ii. be

The ende of Haroldde.

Howe longe the bloude of the Barons continued in the lande of Englaunde.

be lord and soueraygne ouer so many noble inheritous as were, & now be with in the same. I thynke it conuenient to shewe here the discent of þe sayde duke, and howe nere of bloude he was vnto þe blessed kyng Edward the confessor.

Wherfore as befoze to you I haue shewed in the storie of Charlys the Symple somtyme kyng of fraunce, a myscreant or a pagan named Rollo persecuted soze þe realme of fraunce and lastly wan by strength the cite of Roan the hed or chefe Cytie of Normandy. And in conclusyon for a small peace betwene the sayde kyng, and Rollo to be had, the sayde Rollo was chrystened and named Robert, & married Sylla the daughter of þe said Charlys. To whome þe kyng gaue in waie of Dower, þe hole duchy of Normandy. The whiche Robert after he was chrystened, ruled that dukedome as a good chrysten man by the tearnie of .xiii. yeris, and receyued of þe said Sylla a sonne, & named Willam the whiche after was surnamed *Longa spata*, as who wolde saye Willam with a longe sworde. This Willam was duke after his father .xxv. yeris, & left

after hym a sonne named Rycharde, which as befoze is shewed in þe storie of Lewes the .vi. was named Richard the hardy. Then Rycharde the hardy was the .iii. duke, and reigned .lii. yeris, and had by his wyfe a sonne named Rycharde the good, and Emma that was wyfe to Egelredus and mother to saynt Edward the confessor. After hym the good Rycharde was duke, and reigned .xxviii. yeris, and left after hym two sonnes, that is to saye Richard and Robert. The fyfthe after two yeris was slaine by treason of his brother Robert, so that Robert was then duke, and reigned .ix. yeris. The whiche Robert, as it is befoze shewed in the storie of Henry kyng of fraunce, was father vnto thys duke Willam. And this Willam was the .vi. duke of Normandy, & ruled it or he conquered Englande, after moche wynters .xxi. yeris.

Wherby it appereth, that Emma was aunte to duke Robert, father of Willam Conquerour. And saynte Edward and thys duke Willam were by the fathers syde: couzins in lawe remoued, as sheweth by this draught folowynge.

- | | | | |
|------------------|---|---|--|
| The .i. duke. | 1 | Rollo or Robert the fyfthe duke. | |
| The .ii. duke. | 2 | Willam <i>Longa spata</i> , sonne of Robert and seconde duke. | |
| The .iii. duke. | 3 | Rycharde the hardie, the sonne of Willam, and thyrde duke. | Rycharde the good, and sonne of Rycharde the fyfthe. Emma mother of Edward confessor and daughter of the sayde Rycharde. |
| The .iiii. duke. | 4 | Rycharde the .ii. surnamed the good, and sonne of Rycharde the fyfthe, and fourth duke. | |
| The .v. duke. | 5 | Richard the thyrde sonne of Rycharde .ii. and fyfthe duke. | |
| The .vi. duke. | 6 | And Robert the sonne of Richard .ii. and brother of Richard the thyrde and fyfthe duke. | |
| The .vii. duke. | 7 | Willam the sonne of Robert, and the seventh duke and noble Conquerour. | |

The seventh parte.

Ad thus here an ende of þe syxte parte of this worke, for so much as the lande was hert conquered, and putte vnder the rule of a nother nacyon.

This sixte parte, to be accompted from the firste yere of Iue, vnto þe laste daie of þe reygne of Harold, or begynnynge of Wyllyam conqueroure, includeth of yeres thye hundred and. lxxx. yeres and one.

Ad so this lande was conquered after the fyrste comynge of Bute to folowe þe accomptes of this worke, by the force of this duke Wyllyam and his Roymans. ii. thousande two hundred and two yeres.

Thus endeth the syxte parte.

The seventh parte.

Nowe shaketh my hande, my penne wareth bulle,
For weryed and tyred, seynge this worke so longe,
The authoures so rawe, and so farre to culle,
Dymme and darke, and straunge to vnderstande,
And farre oute of tune to make trewe songe.
The stoppes and yeres to make accordeaunte,
That it to the reader myghte shewe trewe and pleasaunte.

But vnder correctyon all thyng maye be boine,
And so I remytte yt vnto suche as bene experte,
Prayenge to theim, as I haue done befoine,
Of thei; protectyon, thys maye shewe a parte,
Holsome and playne, scrupesfull and p;ofytable,
And to the readers and hearers, to poule and delectable.

For were not that, I durste not farther wade,
The streame is so depe, and thereto so daungerouse,
But one thyng there is, that somewhat dothe me gladdre,
The greate daunger and stoppes doughteous,
Bene ouerpassed, so that moze dounteous,
The authoures bene, and moze manifestlye,
The stoppes folowynge they done certifye.

Wherfoze as befoze to you I dyd promyse,
Thys seuenth parte now I wolde take in hande,
Beseechynge all wayes in moste humble wyse,
The wille of bountye, that floure moste ad;ouande,
By whose humylytie man fynde comfozte lande,
And was redemed from hys captiuytie,
This parte to synne, he wyll myne helpe be.

celle of tyme the sayde Malcolme caste suche loue vnto the sayde Margarete, that he toke her to wyfe, as be fore is touchyd in the fyrste chapyter of the story of Canutus. Of þ whiche Margarete the sayde Malcolme receaued two daughters and fyre sonnes thereof thye named Edgarre, Alexander, and Dauyd, were kynges of Scotlande nexte folowynge theyr father.

And Holde one of the foresayde doughters was after maryed vnto þ fyrst Henry kyng of Englande. And the other daughter Mary, was maryed to Eustace Earle of Bolognit. Of Holde the fyrste daughter, Henry receaued two sonnes named Wyllyam and Rycharde, the whiche bothe dyed befoze theyr father, as after in the story of the sayde Henry Hall appeare. And he receaued also two daughters named Holde and Mary, whiche Holde or Hawde was maryed to the v. Henry Emperour of Almanye. After whose death he was agayne maryed to Godfrey of Geostrey Planta genet earle of Aungrowe. Of whom descended Henry surnamed Mortmarte, and kyng of England, called he the seconde. And the other daughter Mary was maryed vnto the Erls of Blaines, of whom descended Holde or Hawde, that was wise vnto kyng Stephen.

Than it foloweth, that thys Wyllyam after thys foresayde trybute so leaped of the Englishmen, and knowynge of the departynge of the Lordes foresayde kepte the other the straghter. But it was not longe after that Martharus was reconcyled tooe the kynges grace, and sayled agayne as folowynge shalbe shewed. For thys & other causes whiche were trepous tooe shewe, Wyllyam exhalted the

theyr possessions of the lande, sooe that they daylye increased in greate honoure and welth, and the Englysh men as fast decayed. Kyng Wyllyam also made.iiii. stronge castels, where of two be sette at yorke, the thyrde at Lyndetyngham or Nottingham, and manned them wyth Normans, and the.iiii. at Lyncolne.

About the thyrde yere of his reygne Harold & Canutus sonnes of Swanus kyng of Denmarke, came on lande in the North of Humber wyth a stronge nauy, and in all hast dreyue them towarde yorke. Than the Normanes whiche hadde the rule of the towne and castelles, ferynge that the Englyshemenne wolde ayde the Danes, and wyth the houses of the suburbs of the towne haue fylled the towne dytches, sette the suburbs on fyre. Wherof the flame was so bigge and wyth the wynde so stronge, that it toke into the ctyte, & byente aparte therof, wyth the mynster of saynt Peter. In tyme whereof the Danes by fauour of some of the ctytyns entred the ctyte, and slew moze then thye. Of the Normans.

But it was not longe or kyng Wyllyam chased the Danes to theyr shyppes and tooke so greate dyspleasure wyth the inhabytauntes of that prouynce, that he destroyed the lande lyng betwene Yorke and Durham in suche wyse, that.ii. yethers after or there aboute, the lande laye vnlabored & vntylled, onely out taken saynt Johns lande of Beuerley.

And of the faimpe that the people of that countrey sustayned, wonders are reported, that they shulde ente all maner of betwinnes, as cattes, cattes, dogges, and other, so hard they were kepte by the warre of the kyng. And in that yere also Holde or Hawde the

iii. castels builded by Duke Wyllyam.

How Harold and Canutus landed in North Humber.

How the Normans set a fyre to the suburbs of yorke.

How kyng Wyllyam chased the Danes and destroyed the countrey.

Great faimpe

the wyfe of kyng Wylliam, was crowned quene of Englande, of Aldredus archebyschop of yorke.

In the.iii. yere of the reygne of thys kyng the Scottes wyth Malcolme they kyng entred Northumberlande, and wasted and destroyed soze that countrie, and slewe therein much people, and manye they tooke prysoners, and helde them as bonde men.

But in the.vi. yere of hys kyngdome, Wylliam made such warre bypon the Scottes, that he lastly forced the sayd Malcolme to swere tooe hym both homage and feaute, as it is wytnessed of Wylliam of Malmesbery and other wyters.

The.ccc. Chapter



Kyng Wylliam by counsel of the Erle of Hartforde and other, caused the abbeyes of Englande to be searched. And what mony in them at that season was founde, he caused it to be broughe to hys treasour.

Soone bypon thys in the tyme bytwene Easter and Wytsondaye, was holden a solempne counsaile at Wyndchester of the clargy of Englande. At the whych counsaile were present two cardynalles, sent from the seconde Alexander than byshoppe of Rome. In thys counsaile, Stigandus archebyschop of Caunterbury was depyved from hys bygnpte, and that for thre causes.

The fyrst was, for that he had holden wrongfully þe byshoppych, whyle Roberte the archebyschop was living.

The seconde cause was, for that he had receaved the paule of Benet byshoppe of Rome the.v. of that name.

And the thyrde cause was, for that he occupied the sayde paule wythout

lycence a lesfull authoryte of the court of Rome.

Than Stigandus proued the beneuolence of kyng Wylliam. For where befoze he made to hym lounge and frendly countenaunce, and byd vnto hym grete reuerence, than he chaunged all hys myldenes into sternes, and excused hym by the byshoppe of Romes authoryte, so that in þe ende Stigandus was depyved of his dignyte, and kepte in Wyndchester as a prysoner the tyme of hys lyfe.

It is recorde of hun that he was sooe conetouse and sparynge, that he woulde take nothyng of hys owne, and vsed tooe swere by Alhalowes, that he hadde not one peny. But that othe was proued vntrewe after hys death, by a lptell key that was found fastened about his necke. For by that keye was founden grete treasoure vnder the earth in moo places than one.

In thys counsaile also were put downe dyuerse other byshoppes, abbottes, and prynces, by the meanes of kyng Wylliam, and all tooe the entente that he myghte preferre Romans to the rule of the churche, as he hadde preferred hys knyghtes to the rule of the temporalty, that he myghte stande in the moze surtye of the lande.

In thys counsaile Wolstane that than was byshop of Worcester, asked beselye of the kyng certayne posselions fallen into hys habes, by þe death of Aldredus laste Archebyschoppe of yorke, that were wyth holden by the sayd Aldredus. But the kyng myght not here than of any such matters, for hurtyng of the lyberty of the church of yorke.

Than bypon Wytsonday after, the kyng gaue the sayde Archebyschoppych of yorke vnto Thomas a chanc

of

Howe Wylliam made the kyng of Scottes swere tooe hym both homage and feaute.

Kyng Wylliam caused þe abbeyes to be searched.

Stigandus depyved of þe byshoppyche of Caunterbury, and þe cause why.

of Bayon, and sente for Lamfranke
an othe Rozman than abbot of Ca-
domonence, and gaue vnto hym the
arche byshoppe of Caunterburpe.
Thys Lamfranke was an Italian
boine, and was perfectly learned in
science of theologie of holpe wyte
and tyghte apte in gouernynge of thynges
both spyrtyual and tempozall.

Upon our Lady daye the Assumpon
the kynge made hym archebyshop of
Caunterburpe. Than Thomas that
was chosen archebyshoppe of porke,
came vnto Lamfranke for tooe be sa-
cred as the vsage woulde. Of whom
Lamfranke asked an oth, and his pro-
fession in wytyng concernynge his
obedpence. Thomas answered and
sayde that he wolde neuer dooe that,
but yf he myghte therof here suffy-
cunte authoptye and skilfull reasons
and byndynge, by the whiche it myghte
be knowen that he shulde so do wyth
oure anye pzeiudice of hys church.
Than Lamfranke shewed and pro-
ued skilfull, that hys askynge was
reasonable and tyghtefull. But yet
Thomas wolde not assente, but with
sayde it, and wente for that time from
Lamfranke vnfacred, and shewed vnto
the kynge, that Lamfranke entended
to do wrong vnto hym and to his church
of porke.

Than the kynge callynge Lam-
franke before hym sayde, that he tru-
sted moze in hys cunnyng than he did
in good sayth or reason. But he an-
swered so reasonably vnto the kynge
that in the ende Thomas by the com-
maundemente of the kynge was fayne
to come agayne to Lamfranke to be-
sacred, and wrote hys profession with
hys owne hand of his obedpence and
radde it, in the whiche was contay-
ned that he shulde be obedpente in all
that belongeth to the wysshyppe of

God and all chrystien sayth. Whiche
doone, he was sacred and so departed.
And shortly after Lamfranke asked
and toke profession of all the byshop-
pes of Englande.

The.cxxi. Chapter.



In the v. yere of Wylly-
am the conquerours reig-
ne, Edwyn and Marcar-
tus Earle of Mercya, and
of Northumberlande, be-
ynge in feare of daunger, boyled the
kynges courte secretly, and were re-
belles some what of tyme.

But at lengthe it turned to bothe
theyr harmes. For Edwyn was slayn
as he wente towarde Scotland, and
Earle Marcharus with the byshop
of Durham named Egelwynus, toke
the ylle of Elye for theyr sauegarde.
But the kynge helde them so shortly
that in processe they were fayne to yeld
them to the kynges grace and mercy.
Than he sente the byshop tooe the ab-
bey of Abyndon to be kepte there as
a pylsoner, where he was so dayntlye
fedde, that he dyed for hunger.

But some wyters testyfy that he
was so hygh harted, and after he knewe
he shulde remayne there as pylsoner,
he wolde neuer eate meate after. And
Earle Marcarus was had to the towre
of London.

In the sixte yere of hys reygne,
kynge William as before is touched
wente with a greete army into Scot-
lande, and subdued Malcolme theyr
kynge, as before I haue shewed in the
precedynge chapter.

In the vii. yere of kynge Wyl-
lyam, Thomas archebishop of porke
not being contente to be vnder prynces
and obedpence of Lamfranke, appe-
aled tooe the courte of Rome, so that
the sayde two Archebishops apered
both in proper person before Alexan-

How Edwyn
and Marcar-
tus boyled
him
ges court.

A contention
between
the
archbishop of
Caunterburpe
and the
Arch-
bishop of porke
who shulde be
the chiefest.

der bishop of Rome afoze named. In whose presence Lamfranke was sooe well fauoured, that where Thomas aboue named and Remygus bishop of Dozchester, were for skylfull causes depyued of theyr croses and ringes, he by hys fauoure and meanes restored them to theyr former dygnitie. The cause of Thomas was, for that he had holpen duke William toward hys iourney into Englande.

For the whych the sayde duke promysed hym a byshoppych yf he optayned byctorye.

And the other was depyued, for he was proued a prestes sonne. Than Thomas moued the cause of the primacye of Caunterbury, and of subiection that to hym shulde be long, and sayde that these two seas were ferre a sonder, that is to meane Caunterbury and yorke, and that nother of them by the constitucions of Gregoꝝ shuld be subiecte vnto another, but that the one is moze worthy than the other, for so much as he is of elder tyme. Tooe thys answered Lamfranke and sayd that the constitucions of Gregoꝝ made no mencyon of Caunterbury but of yorke and London. Than the bishop of Rome remytted thys matter to be determyned befoze the kyng and the byshoppes of Englande and gaue the palle to Lamfranke.

What a palle
is.

But for this teryme of wynde palle is tooe manye one vnknoen, I wil therefore here shewe vnto you what thyng it is. Thys palle is an indument yf every archbishop must haue & is not in full authoryte of an archebishoppe tyll he haue receaued the pall, and it is a thyng of whyle like the byedth of a stole.

But it is of another fasshō. For wher the stole is made in length, & is wome aboute the prestes necke, thys is top:

ned together about, so that it lyethe a parte thereof vppon the shulders. And that one end hangeth streighte downe to the grounde befoze, & that other behynde, garnysed in dyuers plates therof with croses.

And wher the stole is wome nere vnto the albe whan the preste is requested to masse, thys palle is wome vppon the vestmente ouer mooste of all, whan an Archbyshoppe syngeth hys masse.

Whan Lamfranke had thus sped his nedes at Rome, he with the other two byshoppes retourned into Englande, where thys matter hangynge in vayne betwene the sayde two Archbyshoppes, was had in communycacyon. For triall wherof Bedes story was broughte forth. Wherein it apere, that from the fyrste Augustyns tyme to Bedes last dayes, vppon the season of a hundred & xxxi. yeres, the Archebishop of Caunterbury had primacye of all the byshoppes of Englande than called Brittain and of Irelande also, and that the Archebyshoppes of Caunterbury had kepte counsailes nere vnto yorke, & cleped therunto the bishoppes of yorke and made some byshoppes, and depyued dyuerse from theyr dygnities, and to thys were adioyned certayne priuileges, that were graunted for thys maner of doynge.

The Arche-
shop of Can-
terbury is
more of Eng-
lande.

Whan Thomas had harde, al the allegacions, he denyed al, and layed for hym the palle in the whiche Gregoꝝ B. of Rome demed the church of yorke & of London shulde be euery pety, and neyther of theym subiecte to other.

To thys was answered by Lamfranke, that he was not bishoppe of London, no; thys questyon was not moued for the churche of London.

But

But Thomas sayde that Gregor had graunted to Augustyne power to haue vnder hym al the bishoppes of Englande, and that London at þe tyme was the pryncypall see of al Englande. Albeit that the. B. of Rome mynde was, that betwene London & poꝛke shulde be no dyuerstyte of honour, because they were archeslammes and that by theyꝝ wynte all other myght lyue vnder belve obediēce. And though Augustyne chaunged þe see from London to Caunterbury, yet Gregor wold not that Augustynes successours shulde be aboue the bishoppes of poꝛke. For he wolde then haue set in hys epistle these wordes folowynge: I graunte to the Augustyne and to thy successours. But for he wolde that no suche power shulde stretch to hys successours, therefore he made no mencyon of hys successours.

Lamfrank to thys answered and sayde: If that authoꝛyte were graunted to Augustin alone and not to his successours, yt was a symple gyfte that the. B. of Rome gaue vnto Augustyne, that was so samplar wyth hym and namelpe whyle Augustyne ordayned nōt sacred no bishoppe of poꝛke whyle he liued. For the see was ful, during hys lyfe, by reason wherof he put not hys authoꝛyte in execucion. But þe pꝛyleges of bishoppes of Rome conspyrith thys bygnetye to Augustynes successours of Caunterbury, and demeth that it is shyll a good reason, that all the churches of Englande shuld take loze and lyght of that place.

By these reasons & otheꝝ at length Thomas was overcome, and graunted gladly that the sacryes bynke of Dunster shulde be the begynnyng of hys byodes. And ouer that it was ther

demed, that, in all thynges, concernyng the woꝛshype of God and the sacry of holy church, the archbyschop of poꝛke shulde be subiect to the archbyschoppe of Caunterbury. So that yf the archbyschoppe of Caunterbury wolde cal a counsaill in any part yf Englande, the Archebyschoppe of poꝛke shulde be there at, wyth all the bishoppes of hys prouynce, and be also obediēte vnto the lawefull heires.

And at all seasons when the archbyschoppe of Caunterbury shulde be sacred the Archebyschop of poꝛke, wyth the bishoppes of that church, shuld come to Caunterbury and sacer him there.

And yf the Archebyschop of poꝛke shulde be stalled oꝛ sacred, then shall he come to Caunterbury, and elles where in all Englande, where the archebyschoppe of Caunterbury wyll hym assygne, and there to be sacred of hym, and he shall make to hym an othe wyth professyon and obediēce.

Whan Lamfranke herd thys iudgemente geuen thus, he retoyed inwardly. And for it shulde remayne of recoꝛde that hys successours shuld not newly plede for that cause, he caused it to be registred in most substantial wyse. And ouer that sent a pꝛylye for þe cause to Alexander for named bishoppe of Rome of all thys doing wyth the professyon of Thomas the archebyschop also sayd. Of thys Lamfrank is many notable thynges wyrtten of dyuerse wyrtters.

The. cccii. Chapter.

ABoute the. x. yere of kinge Roplams reygne Roger erle of Hereford, by whose counsaile the kinge as befoꝛe is sayde had searched all the abayes of Englande, wher the Carle had

had wedded hys syster vnto Raufe Earle of East Ingles, that is to saye Norfolk and Suffolke, agayne the kynges mynd, he with þe sayd Raufe made conspyracie agayne the kyng and caused another Earle by theyre subtile meanes to be agreable vnto theyr vntrouth, whych Earle had to name Walref.

But at length when thys earle Walrefe had knowen the fyne of theyr entente, he went vnto Lamfranke, and shewed to hym the whole matter. By whose counsell he shortly after sayled vnto the kyng, then beyng in Normandy, and dysclosed the matter vnto hym, & put hym holly in hys grace and mercy.

When the kyng had hard of these tydynges he made good semblaunte vnto thys Earle Walref, and spedde hym the faster into Englande. But howe so it was, the fornamed. ii. Earles were warned of disclosing of this mater in such wyse þe they gathered to them such strength, that the kyng coulde not haue them at his pleasure but as he was fayne by strong hand, to chase and outlawe them. And for that he failed of his purpose of them he imprisoned Earle Walref at Winchester, and lastelye caused hym to be beheaded, moze of tyranny, then of iustice, as assymeth myne authoure, whose copys was buryed at the abbaye of Crowlande.

In the. xi. yere was holden a great counsaile of synode of the clarge of the lande in saynt Pauls church of London, where amonges many thynges ordained for the rule of þe church of Englande, dyuerse byshoppes sees were transported frome one place to another, as Welwepe to Chycheester, Kynton to Exeter, Welles to Bathe, Shyrbourne to Salysburie, Dor-

chester to Lyncolne, and the sees of Litchefeld to Chester. Whych thynges thus ordered, wyth manys other for the church, the sayde counsaile was dyscolued.

In the. xiii. yere of hys reygne. After the death of Harman bisshope of Salysburie, succeeded Osmund the kynges chauncello; The whych buylded ther a newe church, and broughte thither clarkes that were garnished wyth vertue and conynge. And he hym self wrote and bound booke þe were occupied in the deuynetyng of the church, as the ordynall of consuetudynarye, the whiche at thys daie is occupied in the moze partte of Englande, wyth Wales, and Irelande, and is now named Salysburie vse, or the ordynarye after Salysburie vse.

In the. xv. yere of hys reygne Robert the eldest sonne of kyng Wylliam, the whych was surnamed Curthose or Shorthose and Mozte boote also, for he myghte not haue the duchy of Normandy, whych hys father hade some tyme assygned and given vnto hym, and after for hys wysdomes had agayne resumed yt, he wyth fauour and ayde of the french kyng Phylippe and of Lewis hys sonne took prynces in that duchye, and put hys father to muche trouble, in soche manere that at length the father and the sonne were in playne felde wyth. ii. greates hostes, and ether wyth ether foughte a cruel battaile.

It is read that duringe thys battaile Wylliam was thynke frome hys horse, and in greates reoparty of hys lyfe. Wherof hys sonne Robert beyng ware was so moued wyth pity þe he welcomed his father, & depured hym free from al danger of his manys. But howe soon he was of the

The beheading
of earle Wal-
ref

A grete syno-
de of counsell

The transpor-
tyng of dioces-
se byshoppes

This Osmond
made the ordi-
nal of consue-
tude wherof our
thys daye is
called Salys-
burie vse.

Robert the
best com of
Wylliam was
beled.

The seventh parte.

221.

the kynge, trouthe it is that many of his men were slayne, and hys seconde sonne william the red soze hurte, so þ in the ende kynge william was faine to refuse the felde, and gatte at that tyme none aduantage of hys sayde sonne. for the whiche dede and rebellyon thus made by the sonne, the father accursed hym after the opinyon of some wyters.

While king william was thus occupied in Normandy, the Northumbres warre sterne and rebel, and slew in theyr rage walkerus the byshop of Dorcham, but for what cause myne authoure expresseth not.

Aboute thys tyme, Watyng earle of Shyrewesbury made two abbates, whereof one was set in þ suburbs of Shyrewesbury, and þ other at wenlok.

In the xvii. yere of king william a cursed stryfe was occered betwene Thurstone abbot of Glasterburys a Norman, and his monkes. Whereof a parte of the cause was, þ the abbot despised, & wolde haue set aparte such longe and offces, as by Gregoie byshop of Rome, and Augustine his discyple, of olde tyme to them was assygned, and wolde haue compelled them to haue folowed þ ble of one william of fescampe. And ouer þ, this Thurstone wasted & spende the goodes of that place inordinatly, in lechery & by other insolent meanes, & wythdrew from þ monkes their olde accustomed dyet. for the whiche causes fyrste beganne great wordes with chidinge, & after strokes and fyghtes, so that the abbot gat vnto hym armed men, and fell vpon his monkes, & slawe two of them at the hygh alter, & wounded of them. xviii. And the monkes wyth fourmes and candellstiches defended theym, in suche wyse that they hurte many of the armed men.

Then the complaynt was brought befor the kynge, by whose iudgement Thurstone was agayne returned vnto Cadony fro wher he was brought and the monkes were spyedde abrode into dyuers houses thozoughe Englande. But it is sayde that in the tyme of William the Red, this Thurstone obtayned the rule of that abbay agayne for the pryce of fyue hundred ponde.

In the xix. yere of his reygne, king william then raised a newe maner of trybute. for he caused to be gathered thozough Englande of every hyde of lande. vi. s. In hyde of lande conteyneth. h. perches, and euery perche conteyneth fourre acres. And so an hyde of lande conteyneth. xx. acres, an acre conteyneth. xl. perches in length, and foure in bryde, and foure acres make a parche, and. v. perches make an hyde, and. viii. hydres make a knyghtes fee. By the whiche reason a knyghtes fee shoulde welde a hundred and. x. acres and that is demed for a ploughe tyll a yere.

And not longe after he caused to be searchyd howe muche lande eache of his barons helde, howe many knyghtes fees, howe many townes, & what number of men and of beastes were within this lande, wherof he comaunded a booke to be made, which all was done. for the whiche dede, this lande was after greued with many sondrye plagis, as after Mall appere. In the twentye yere of the reygne of kynge william, Canutus kynge of Denmarke: wyth helpe of the Flemmynges, to whome he was called wyth a great armye came towarde Englande but by the prouysyon of the king they were so feared, that they were lette of theyr journey.

Then king william gaue vnto. xiii.

3.4. of his

A newe kinde of trybute.

v. d. p. s. f.

In hyde of lande what it is.

A knyghtes fee.

Howe Canutus kynge of Denmarke beganne to ap- proch toward Englande.

Howe Wal- ter the by- shop of Dorcham was slain.

Howe the by- shop of Dorcham was slain.

Howe the by- shop of Dorcham was slain.

of his champions. ill. byshopps. To Hoize he gaue London, to Will
iam he gaue Thetforde, and to Ro-
bert he gaue Chester, whiche Robert
was after remoued to Couentre. Of
this Robert repositeth Ranulphe, that
he scraped frō one beme of his church
in Couentre. v. hundred marke to syl-
with the hande of king william. For
earle Leoftricus þ was duke of Mer-
cia in the tyme of Edward the confes-
sour, had adourned that church wth
greate riches of golde, syluer, & oþer
precyous iewelles.

In this yere Cogare Ethelpnge,
whiche was reconcyled vnto the kyn
ges fauoure, by licence of the kynge
sailed into Apulia.

Then beganne the foresayde pla-
ges to sprynge. For greate moynayne
fell vpon the brute beastes, and ben-
nyngne feuours amonges the people,
and also great hunger and barceines
of perth. Also in this yere great hurte
was done in many places of the land
by fyre, and specyallie in the cytye of
London, where vpon the. vii. daie of
the moneth of Iulie sodayne fyre be-
gan, the whyche byent a greate parte
of the churche of saynte Paule, wth
also a greate parte of the cytie.

Then kynge Wyllyam beyng in
Normandy was sycke, and kept his
chamber at Roan a lōge tyme. Wher
foze Whyllyppe the frenche kynge in
his game saide that Wyllyam lay in
chyldebedde, and noryshed hys fatte
wombe. The whiche wordes when
they were blowen to king Wyllyams
eares, he was greuously discontente,
and sayde, when I am churched, I
shall offer vnto hym a thousand can-
delles lycht, with the which he shall
holde hym smallye contented. The
which promyse he after performed.
Fo; in 8 moneth of Julie when come

fruite, and grapes were moſte floxiſh. Wherby
ſpyng, he entred into Fraunce wth
a greate army, and ſitte on ſpye many
Cities and towneſ in the weſte ſyde
of Fraunce, and laſtly came vnto the
citty of Meaus, and ſpyed it, a bzente
a parte therof wth the church of our
lady, wherin he bzente a woman being
cloſed in the wall of the ſayde church
as a recluſe.

But of this thyng speaketh not þe cronycle of Fraunce, no; yet for the moze parte of anye thyng that soundeth to the; by Monourte doone vnto them by englyshemen.

In this heate, oꝝ as some wyrters
haue by the leapping of an hoise, king
william toke such a diseale oꝝ spknes
that it was the cause of his deathe .
And when he felte hym thus greued,
he called hys sonnes befoze hym, and
erhoited theym in hys beste maner ,
that they shulde charitably loue and
fauour euery of theym the other, and
holde togyther as lounge byethen,
and after made his testamēt, & them
oꝝdeined William Rufus oꝝ Willy-
am the rede to be kyng of Englande.
And Rozinandy he besette vnto Ro-
bert Curthose. And to Henry his yong-
gest sonne he bequethed his treasour
and mouable goodes. And that done
he enforment hys two eldest sonnes
of the disposycyon of bothe peoples,
and warned William to be lounge
and liberal to his subiectes, and Ro-
bert to be stern & sturdy vnto his.

Then he was moued wth implones
and bespught from prison his stone
brother the byshop of Bayon, Mar-
charius earle of Northumberland. w^{ch}il
notus the sonne of Harolde, or after
some the sonne of Goodwyne, that
was sent to willsam by Edward the
confessoure, to remayne for a pledge
for his sayde father Goodwyne. And
woxly

The seventh parte.

The death of
Willelmus Duke
of Normandy
and con-
sequence of
Englande.

Wholly after these thynges with other
done he died in Normandy, & was bu-
ried in the ciste of Caen, when he had
reigned as kynge of Englande. xxi.
yeres, and vpon ten monethes, in the
moneth of Iulpe, and the yere of hys
ducherye the. lvi.

When Wyllyam was deade, men
spake of hym as they dooe of other
Prynces, and sayde that he was wysse
and gylefull, ryche and couetouse, &
loued well to be magnified and pray-
sed, a fayre speaker and a great dysp-
muler, a man of shyfull stature, but
soudenlye fatte in the bellye, sturte of
face and stronge in armys, and ther-
with bolde, and had therewith greate
pleasure in huntynge and in makynge
of great festes. But he passed al ocher
in leuyenge of taks. Whycher con-
dicpon hys subiectes construed thye
maner of wapes, and sayde it was to
the entente that he wolde excellen all o-
ther in rycheesse, or elles for to with-
stande and defende hys enemyes, or
elles to staunche the appetyte of hys
couetouse mynde. He buyded two
abbayes in England, one at battayle
in Shutter, where he wanne the seide
agayne Harold, and is at this daye
called the abbay of Bataille, & the other
he set besyde London vpon the south
syde of Champs, and named it Bar-
moundesay. And in Normandy he
buyded two also.

The death
of King
Willelmus.

This man made the newe forest in
the countrey of Southhampton, the
which to byng about, he calte downe
dyuers churches by the space of thir-
tye myles, and replenished it wth wyld
beastes, and made harde and sharpe
lawes for the increasyng of theym,
as losynge of eyen and other.

And he helde Englishmen so lowe
that in his dayes was almoste no En-
glish man that bare any offyce of ho-

noure or rule. But yet some deale he
sauoured the Cyrie of London, and
graunted vnto the cytyzens the fyfthe
charter that euer they had, the which
is wyten in the Saxon tongue, and
sealed with grene waxe, and expessed
in cyght or nyne lyues.

The. cccxiii. Chapter.

Wyllyam Rufus, or Wyl-
lyam the red, the second
sonne of Wyllyam Con-
queroure, beganne hys
reigne ouer Englande
in the moneth of Iulpe, and the yere
of our Loyde a thousande and. lxxxix,
and the. xxi. yere of the fyfthe Phy-
lyppe then kynge of Fraunce.

Ranulphe monke of Chester the-
with in hys booke of Policronycon, &
Robert Curthose eldest sonne of Wyl-
lyam Conqueroure, was at the tyme
of hys fathers deathe absente. The
which heryng that his father had pre-
ferred hys yonger brother to the kyng-
dom of Englad, was therewith great-
ly amoued, in so muche that he layde
his dukedom to pledge vnto his bro-
ther Henry, and with that good ga-
thered vnto hym a stronge army, and
so landed at Hampton.

Wherof Wyllyam his brother be-
yng warned, in all haste sente vnto
him messaungers, to whome he gaue
commissyon to saye in maner as folow-
eth. Thy brother Wyllyam prayeth
to take no greife wth that he hath done,
for he clepeth hym selfe not kyng, but
as vnder kyng to reigne vnder the,
and by helpe of the that arte greates
then he and better, & rather borne.

And if thou consyder it well, he
hath nothing mysused hym agayne
the. For he hath taken vpon hym
for a tyme, because of thyne absente.

T. 1. But

777.

Willelmus
conqueror
graunted
vnto the cy-
ties of London
the fyfthe cha-
rter that euer
they had.

Willelmus
Rufus.

How Robert
the brother of
Willelmus Ru-
fus was appe-
ared and reue-
ned with his
host.

But for he is now in authoryte by the sufferance, he prayeth þ he mape vnder the so contynue, payeng to the yerely. iii. thousande marke, with condycion that who so euer lyueth mape enioye the kyngdome. When Robert had hard that message vnto the ende wagged his hedde, as he that conceyued some doubtenes in this report. But for he was lyberall and allowed moze the honoure, then he did his profyte, as in other thinges folowynge of his dedes it shall appere, therfore he lyghtely assented to all that was desired, and retourned shortly after into Normandy wth pleasaunt wordes withoute profyte.

The coronation of Wyllyam Rufus.

This William was crowned the xiiij. daye of September, vpon the daye of saynte Colma and Baimyan and was well apored of Lamfranke: whyle he lyued. He was dyuers and vnstable of maners, so that betwene him & his lordes was often discenciõ. In the springing of somer folowynge his coronacyon, Odo Bysshoppe of Baton, which as befoze ye haue hard was deliuered out of prysoun by Wyllyam Conquerour, came into Englad whome the kyng ioyously receyued and gaue vnto hym shortly after the earldome of Kente. But he toke vpon hym in processe of tyme to rule, in suche wyse as the kyng grudged wth his doynge. And for the kyng and his sayde vncle spt at vnhyndesse, so that he withdrew hym from the kyng, and ayld hym with þe byshop of Durham, þe earles of Northumberland & Shyrewesbury, with other. The whiche confederyd together, toke partye agayne the kyng, and dyd thynges to his dyspleasure and hurte. And amonges all other damages by theym doone, Roger de Mount Gomoxe earle of Shyrewel

Confederary.

burie, destroyed the countrey and endes of England to Worcester towne, with ayde of the Walsmen. But in the ende, thozough the prayer of the holy byshoppe Wolstane, the walsmen were so locked and sebled, that a fewe knyghtes discomfited of them a greate hoste.

When king William conceyued þ well nere all the Normans toke partye agayne hym, he then forced of necessitye byrwe to hym the Englyshmen. And fauoured them by gyftes & easy lawes, so that by theyr strengthe he lastely recouered the earle of Shyrewesbury, and chased some other of his enemies, and shortly after occupped the castel & stronge holdes in Kent belongynge to byshop Odo his sayde vncle, and in þe ende compelled hym to forswear Englande.

And that done he besieged þ cytie of Rochester, wherin the byshoppe of Dutham, the earle of Northumberland, & other noble men were gathered, and wan it at length by appointment, so that his enenies were vnto hym reconcyled.

The byshop of Dutham.

In the thyrde yere of his reygne dyed Lamfranke, when he had bene archbyshop of Caunterbury. xiiij. yeres. By whose meanes the monkes of Englande were broughte vnto the vse of theyr religyon, the whiche befoze his comynge, lyued moze lyke to secular prestes then religious men and excerplesd theim in huntynge and hawkynge for to auoyde podelnesse, & dyspnyge and caroyng in the wynter nyghtes, that they myght be redde to kepe theyr howses and nyghelpe seruyce. And in theyr apparell they were lyke vnto consules & not vnto monkes, with many other defformytes. The which in the beginning of Lamfrank, he of polycie suffered for a season

The last Lamfranke.

The byshop of Dutham.

The tenth parte.

235.

son, lest he had brought all in his top
arones, and thereby might haue can-
sed some scisme or barysaunce to haue
ysen in the churche. In auoydynge
wherof wth other inconuenyences,
he yttell and yttell restrayned them of
theyr outrage, and in p[ro]cesse of time
caused and constrayned them to lyue
after the constytucyons and rules of
theyr religion.

Aboute this tyme, Roberte Cur-
thoise duke of Normandy, entending
to take his biage into the holpe lande
layde his dukedome to wedde vnto
his brother Wyllyam for ten thou-
sande p[ou]nde. For leuynge wherof
kyng Wyllyam set a taske vpon his
commons and subiectes, and reised a
sarre exceedinge some vnder colour of
the same, so that Byschoppes melted
theyr vessel, and lordes spoyled their
tenauntes.

The kyng of Scottes also brake
the peace befoze made with Wyllyam
Conqueroure, and wasted and take
p[re]sapes in the countrey of Northum-
berlande. Then the kyng p[ro]uoked
a nauye and sayled thither in the win-
ter time. But by the tempest of the sea
halfe his nauye or a greate parte of it
was drownded, and many of his kny-
ghtes were losse for colde and hun-
ger. But yet in the ende after dyuers
conspytes and bykerynges, by me-
diacyon of frendes, a peace and vny-
tie was concluded, so that Malcolyn
then kyng of Scottes shulde be obe-
dient to kyng Wyllyam, vnder þe same
othe that he was befoze tyme swoyne
vnto his father, a king Wyllyam shuld
perely geue vnto him in the waie of a
fee. xii. markes of golde.

In the fourth yere of his regne
and the xvj. daie of October, pas-
singe greate tempest of wedering fel
in sondrye places of Englande, and

specpally in þe towne of Winchester
For there by tempeste of thunder and
lyghtenyng, a parte of þe steeple of the
churche was throtorn downe, and the
crucifye with the ymage of our ladye
also standynge vpon the roode lofte,
was in lykewyse ouerthrowen, and
broke and shatered. And after folow-
ed a contagye and a fowle stench.

Also this yere at Lond[on] was grea-
t harme doone by force of the wynde,
which blew with suche violence that
it ouerturned or ryued as wptneslyth
Dolichonrycon, ouer the number of. vi.
hundred houses. And the tofe of satne
Mary Bole in chepe was also much
wherwith two men were slayne. And
also at Salsburie was hurte doone
with the same wynde or þe lyke therof.

The rage of
the wynde.

In the. v. yere of Wyllyams reigne
he went into Northumberlande, and
repayred suche holdes and castelles,
as the Scottes by theyr warres had
blemyshed and apayred, and caused
a newe castel to be made at Caerrol þe
citty or towne, whyche the Danes of
two hundred yeres passed, hadde de-
stroyed. Then þe kyng returned vnto
Gloucester, where he was greuously
bered with sikenesse, so that he wende
he shoulde haue dyed. In time wher-
of he toke greate repentaunce, & promy-
sed yf he might escape, he wolde amed
his liuing and become a newe man.

But after he was restoyed to helth
that promyse was shortly forgotten
And in that yere he gaue vnto Ansel-
me the archbyschoppe of Poike.
But he myghte take of it but as the
kynge's pleasure was, tyll suche tyme
as the kyng hadde taken his t[ri]bute
therof. And moze ouer he auouched, þe
sea of Lyncolne belonged to þe sea
of Poike, tyll the byshop of Lyncolne
had pleased him with a great summe
of money, as. v. thousand marke after

A. iii. the

the wytyng of Ranulphe.

Great flow-
des.

A great froste

In the. vi. yere of his reygne were excedyng floodes, whereof the lyke in many yeres passed hadde not bene sene. And after that ensued wonderfull froste, which frose the greates treemes in suche wyse, þat hoysse and carre passed ouer the great ryuers. And in the ende when the yse melted & brake the payse therof brake many a stronge byrge, both of tymber & of stone.

The. cccxlii. Chapter.



Wente this tyme þat welshmen wpyth theþ? kyng of duke named Rees, brake oute vpon the Englyshmen in þat Boydour, where standeth the castell of Bykenocke, and there made masteryes for a while. But in the ende hys people were chased and slayne, and he wounded unto deathe, so that he dyed the thirde dale folowynge. This Rees is accompted of wyrters, to be þat laste kyng of Wales. For after this daye they were so daunted, that kynges of Englande hadde theym in suche rule, that they were vnder moze stedfaste obedyence then they were befoze tyme. Howebeit they rebellid full often as after Malcolpne.

Rees the laste
kyng of Wa-
les.

And þat yere folowynge kyng wpyl-
lam to haue þat countrey in the moze
quiet, hewed downe much of þat wood,
and builded in sondry places stronge
castels and pylles, by meane whereof
moze and moze they were plucked to
obedience. But not shortly after, but
specyally in the dayes of Edward þat
fyrste and Edward the thyrde.

Malcolin kyng of Scotland came
vnto Gloucester, to comen wpyth the
kyng of dyuers maters, and to take
a synall agrement. But for kyng wpyl-
lam wolde haue demyd hym in hys
courte, therfoze Malcolpne departed

from the kyng in greates displeasure.

For the whyche and other causes, the
warre betwene Englande and Scot-
land was reuyned, so that vpon saint
Bricius daye folowynge, Malcolpne
with hys retynne foughte wpyth an
earle named Roberte and than earle
of Northumberland, and there was
slaine with his eldest sonne Edward.

The thirde
cause of
the warre
betweene
Englande
and
Scotland.

Robert
the
third
sonne
of
Edward.

For sorowe whereof, Margaret
quene of Scotlande and syster vnto
Edgare Ethelpnge, as in the fyrste
chappeter of the story of William con-
queroure is shewed, dyed soone after.
Then the Scottes made Dunwalde
brother of Malcolpne theþ? kyng,
and put by his sonnes. But by the
ayde of kyng William, Edgare
which of some wyrters is named Wu-
ham, was made kyng, as eldest sone
of Malcolpne.

In the. vii. yere of the reygne of
kyng William, Anselme of An-
celme that was archbishop of York, was
remoued to Caunterbury as as-
fermeth one cronycle. But Wolpcon-
nicon and Gupdo sayen, that Hughe
earle of Chester being speke and dys-
eased, in the. vi. yere of wpyl-
lam Rufus, sent into Rome for Anselme
than abbot of Barry for thys cause.
The fyrste to vysyte and se hym, and
to be reconcyled of hym, as the man
that he moste trusted. The seconde
cause was, that he shulde releue some
abbays of Englande, that the kyng
deyed wpyth greuous tributes. And
the thirde cause was, þat he shulde foude
an abbay of Chester, whiche place he
after builded, and made one Richard
his chapleyne fyrst abbot of the place
and sone after he was made arch-
bishop of Caunterbury. Wherby it ap-
pereth that the sayde see was voyde
ouer the terme of thys yere.

This sayde. vii. yere, Englande &
A.D.

Normaundye were greued with tribute and moeyne of men, so sharply that tilling of the earth was spared or put of for that year, and ther after ensued greate hunger. Thys yere al so the Scottes slewe theyr kyng Edgar, and restozed agayne to the rule of the lande the soynamed Dufwald And many gressly and vncouth synghes were thys yere sene in England as holles of menne synghyng in the skye, and fyre lempes and other

In the .x. yere of Wylliam Rufus, wythe and defencys sly betwene hym and Anselme byshoppe of Caunterburie, for Anselme myghte not call his synodus nor correcte the byshoppes, but as the kyng would. The kyng also chalenged the inuestytur of byshoppes, and pylled the spirytualite and tempozalyte wyth vncasonable taskes & tributes, the which he spent vpon the towne of London & the makynge of Westmynster hall And ouer that the kynges seruantes, greued and pylled Englishemen vncasonablye. And to thys myserye was ioyned the vnsacable couetous of Ranulphe that was somtyme chauncellor vnto Wylliam conquerour the whiche was at thys day the kynges procuratoure, and gathered his taskes ouer all. He was so couetouse and so euell dysposed, that he wolde leupe thre taskes for two. He pylled the tithes, and bare downe the pooze and caused manye men to loose theyr landes for smal causes, and therfore the kyng had hym in his synghular fauoure. And by his meenes bishoprikes wer bought and sold as playnly as other marchandyses.

For that tyme, clarkes used busked and bysided headres, long tailed and blasynge clothes synnyng, golden gnydels, and roode wyth gylte spur-

res, wyth bysnyng of dyuerse other enormytes. All whiche vyces Anselme woulde haue corrected, but he lacked assistance of his byethren the bishoppes. For the whiche cause and other he departed the lande. Wherewith the kyng beyng myse contented, sente after hym suche personnes as robbed and spoyled hym, and entreated hym in moost cruell maner. For the whiche dede Ranke byshoppe of Chycheester blamed the kyng, and al so rebuked all suche Byshoppes as had refused the partte of Anselme, & had fauoured the kyng in causes concerninge the forsayde barpaunce.

And furthermore he wythstode the kyng and his offycers in takynge of synes of preastes for cryme of fornicacion. For whiche causes the kyng wyth the sayde Ranke was sore annoyed and dyscontented, and optayned suche fauoure, that he suspended many churches of his dyoces. But in the ende, Ranke demeaned hym in suche wyse that he hadde his owne wyll, & his churches elarged and freed that befoze were stopped wyth thornes. And the kyng gaue vnto hym the synes of preastes wythin his dyoces, and endued the sea of Chycheester w manye greate gyftes.

And vpon a tyme kyng William was rydynge towarde his dysporte of huntynge, and sodaynely a messenger came vnto hym and sayde: that the cite of Cenemona in Normaundye was besegged. Wherfore he wythout longe taryng or aduysemente, toke the streyght way to the sea syde, and sente to his lordes, chargynge them to folowe. When the sayde Lordes came to his presence, they demysed hym to tarye tyll his people were assembled.

But he wolde nothyng do after theyr

The besyging of a cite in Normaundye.

they; counsaile, but sayde, suche as hym loued, he shortly wylt well wold folowe hym, and soe pobe to thyppe, settinge a parte all pailles.

The master of the ship was afrayed, he sawe the wether so darcke and so clowdy, counsailed the kyng toose tarp tyl the wynd would blowe moze fauourably.

The hardines
of the kyng

But he commaunded hym to make all the speede that he coulede vpon hys lyfe, sayng that he neuer heard that euer anye kyng was drowned. And so he passed the sea and laded in Roymandye, and gathered to hym there hys knyghtes.

Whā the captain of the siege, whose name was Helyas, knewe of the kynges landyng, he feared, and anon began to breke the siege. But by treasō he was taken and brought to the kynges pcesence. To whome the kyng seiwed suche pptye, that he suffered hym to be at hys lybertye. Whych after the oppnyon of Wylliam de regibus, was done moze of pyde than of compassyon.

¶ The. ccc. b. Chapter

In the. xi. yere of the regne of thys Wylliam the rede, at a towne called Fichamster in the countrey of Barkeshyre, a wel cast out bloude as befoze it hadde doone water.

¶ Strange
thyngs.

And after by the space of. x. dayes great flames of fyre were sene in the element in sondry places and tymes. Thys yere also the. ii. earles of Wyche welsburye and of Chester eyther named Hugh by the kynges commaundement entered with they; knyghtes the yle of Man, o; Anglesape, and slewe therein many Wyllshemen, and gelded many mo.

The geldyng
of Wyllshemen

Amonge the whypche a prest named Hyntebus was drawn out of a church and serued the same wise, and also cut hys tuncut out of hys head, and put out hys one eye.

In the whypche season and tyme, the kyng of Northgaynes o; Northwaye whan the yles called than Wykes and now Wykes, after came wth hys strength into the soresayde yle of Man, where at the same seaso were the sayde two Earles, Than betwene them was mortal fyght, in the whypche Hugh Earle of Wyche welsbury was strycken wth an arrowe in hys eye, and dyed wthyn. viii. dayes after.

But as sayeth Gysdo, the Danes were chased and Englyshmen had the vitorye.

Kyng Wylliam was much in Roymandye, so; somuch as Roberte hys brother was all thys season in the holy lande, of whose actes shall some deale be touched in the storye of Henry the fyrste. And Wylliam had muche payne to rule the Roymans, so; they rebelled often agayne hym.

In the. xii. yere of hys regne, he came out of Roymandye, and when he sawe the hal of Westmynster that he hadde caused to be buylded, he was therewith dyscontented, that it was so lyele. Wherefoze, as it is rehersed of some wyrters, he intēded if he had lyued to haue made a larger, & that to haue serued so; a chamber.

Robert of Losange, that some tyme had bene abbot of Ralsay, and thā byshoppe of Chetford by gyfte of a thousande pounde to the kyng, repēted hym after, and beweped that vnskyllfull dede, and tooke hys waye to Roome, and dyd so; it hys enioyned penance, and after returned into Englande, and tourned hys sea frome Chet.

What the
Carle of
Wylshemen

The seventh parte

287

Therfor he to Roymwich, and founded there a saye monastery of hys owne goodes, and not of the patrimony of christes church. But therein is a doute to consider. For he was fyrst an abbot and after a byshop.

Aboute thys tyme, by the meanes of one Stephen Hardynge a Dunke, of Shetbourn, an Englysheman of the order of Wystraux or whit mistes had hys begynnynge in the wyldernesse of Cisterpe wythin the prouince of Burgorn, as witnesseth Ranulph munke of Chesser. But other wytters as Iacobus Shyllippus, and the author of Cronyca contritum, Ma theolus, wyth other, sayen that thys Stephen was the seconde abbot of h place, and that it was fyrst founded by the meanes of one Robertte abbot of Polyncense, in the yere of grace, M. cc. viii. whych to folowe they sayinge, Shulde be in the .ix. yere of the regne of thys kynge.

Thys order was after broughte into Englande by one called Walter Espreke, that founded the fyrst abbay of that relygion at Riual, about the yere of grace. xi. C. cxi. The whych shulde be aboute the .xxxi. yere of the fyrst Henry than kynge of England. Somwhat of they relygion is touched in the .i. Chapter of .v. viii. boke of Polycronicon.

After that kynge Wyllyam, as before is sayde, was retourned oute of Roymandy, manye wonderfull prodgyes and tokens were shewed in Englande, as the swelling or tylling of the water of Thamys, in such wyse that it dyownd dpuerse tolnes, and dyd much harme by out passinge his boundes in dpuers places about London and elles where wyth dpuerse other thynges whiche I ouer passe.

The kynge was warned of thys,

and tolde by hys samplers that god was notte contente with his lyvinge. But he set all at naughte, and made of it a scoffe of tape.

In the .xiii. yere of hys reigne and begynnynge thereof, as the thyrty daye of Auguste after the saynge of Ranulphe, thys kynge Wyllyam being at hys dysporte or huntynge wythin the newe forest, by glaunsynge of an arrowe shot of a knyght named Walter Tyrell, was wounded to the deth in the .xliii. yere of hys aage. After whiche deade the sayde Walter escaped and saued him selfe, for few ther were that hym pursued. And soe the kynge thus wounded, was layed vpon an horse lytter, and so conueyed to Wynchester, wher shortly after he dyed and was buryed.

Of thys manne myght be made a much longer storie, yf all hys dedes shulde be touched. The whiche toke vpon hym great thynges, and much gretter entented yf he myght haue lyued. The daye before he was slayne one asked of hym wher he wold kepe hys Chyrmasse. At Doytiers sayde the kynge, for the Earle intendeth to go to warde Ierusalem, and I wold assaye to haue hys Cardome in mortgage, for well I knowe he must cheyche for monye to performe that iourneie. The daye when Wyllyam dyed he helde in hys handes the thre byshoppes, of Caunterburpe, of Wynchester and of Walsourp, and dpuers abbayes, of the whiche he let some to ferme.

Also he refrayned the monye that of olde tyme was payed to Rome called Rome scotte. Of this William reporteth Henry of Huntynghdon, and sayth that though this manne were lyghte of some thynges: yet he was stedfast and stable of hys promyse,

so

Some Wyllyam Rufus was slayne

Cronyca of Wyllyam Rufus

Henry and Richard

so that what he promysed good or euil shuld be performed And though he were named couetouse, it shulde seme that he was lyberal, as is shewed by this narracion folowynge.

Upon a season when the abbot of a place in Englande was drade, two munkes of the same place, the which before hadde gathered monye, made they; cryndes to kyng wylliam, and offered large offers ether of them to be promoted to that bygnete. Ther was also a thyrd monk, the which of mekenes and of humilite folowed the other two, to the entente that bypon hym that the kyng had admytted for abbot, he woulde haue geuen attendaunce, and as his chaplayne to haue with hym retourned. The kyng called before hym the.ii. munkes seuerally, and ether oure professed other.

As he caste his eye asyde, he spyed the thyrd, the which he deamed hadde comen also for the same cause. The kyng called hym, and asked yf he wolde geue anye more then his byethren hadde offered to be abbot.

But he answered to the kyng & sayde, that he wolde nother offer nor yet geue for it one peny, nor woulde haue so grete a charge by anye mane wyngful.

When the kyng hadde well vnderstanden this thyrd monk answered, he sayde that he was best worthy to be abbot, and to haue the rule of so holpe a charge, and so he gaue vnto hym that benefyce, without the kyng anye praye.

This kyng wylliam vsed alway lemmans, wherfore he dyed without yllue legyttymate, when he had reigned as before is sayde fully. xii. yeres and odde dayes.

The. cxxvi. Chapter.



Enter the.iii. sonne of wylliam Conqueroure and fyrst of that name which for his conynge was surnamed beclerke began his regne and domynion as kyng of Englande, the fyrste daye of Auguste in the yere of oure Lorde. xi. hundred and one, & the. xlii. yere of the fyrst philipp then kyng of fraunce and was crowned at westmynstre nyght thertelpe after, of Thomas archbishop of yorke, and thers byshop of London.

This Henry in his pouch plyed him to suche studye, that he was instructed in the. vii. artes lyberall. In none he made holy churche free, & vsed saynt Edwardes lawes, with the amende-ment of them.

He put out of his court myce and wanton menne, and closed Ranulph byshoppe of Durham in the towne of London, the which as ye before haue heard was so grete with wylliam his brother, and sent for Anselme archbishoppe of Caunterburie which before was fled for the tyranny of wylliam Rufus.

This Henry chastyshed the olde vntrewe measure, and made a parde of the length of his owne arme, with dyuerse other thynges reformynge, that longe before his dayes hadde benmyssed and he abhorred the excesses of mikes and bynkes, and vsed to fyghte more with counsaile then with the sworde.

In the seconde yere of his regne Robert his brother, that by all this season hadde bene occupied in warres vpon Chyffles enemies, hanting word of the deeth of his brother wylliam, and howe his brother Henry had

Henry the first
was the son
of William
Conquerour

Henry the first
made the
lawes

The sonne
of Robert
the first

The sonne
of Robert
the first

hadde taken vpon hym as kynge, returned into Normandy, and there made preparacion for to come into Englande.

In this season also was broken out of prison Ranulphe byshop of Durham, and comen to the sayd Roberte into Normandy. The which excyted duke Roberte in all that he myght to warre vpon his brother Henry, so that he assembled a stronge armie of knyghtes, and tooke shippinge, and landed in processe of tyme at Dorchester. But by medycion a peace was made, and that in suche condycion, that he shoulde haue .iii. thousand markes yearly, as before was promised vnto him by wylliam Rufus his brother with other condycions of succession and other thynges, the whiche I passe ouer for length of tyme.

Thus Roberte beinge contented contrary to the myndes of his Lordes, after a season he hadde dysposed hym in Englande returned into Normandy, where of his Lordes he was for this and other dedes before done as after is shewed, lytle or lesse and lesse let by. For albe it by his fathers lyfe he hadde byctorie, and viceroyly dyspleased him as some dele he fore is touched, yet by his manhode and manfull dedes, he fell into the fauoure of the people, and byd manye and greate notable actes, and special ly at the wyngynge of the citie of London vpon the miscreantes and Turkes.

And he was chosen kynge of Hierusalem. The whiche he refused, for the paine and trauayle that he shoulde haue with al, and also for the couete pynnes of the crowne of England for as soone as had he knowledge of the death of his brother wylliam, and

he departed the countrey and sped him homeward in al that he myght. For the whiche dede as after as shal the myne authoure: he speke the wyse in all his dedes after.

This Roberte was wyse in counsaile, stronge in battaile, and also right lyberal, and in his returne fro Hierusalem, maryed the daughter of wylliam de Aersana Lord of Apulia, with whom he receaued great sommes of monye for his dower, the whiche by meane of his lyberaltee he spent mostly after. Then fortune began to crowne vpon duke Robert and set his owne Lordes agaynst hym, that they sente vnto kynge Henry his brother, wyllynge hym to come into Normandy, and they wold deliuer the countrey vnto hym, and holde hym for theyr chefe Lord and ruler. Whereunto as sayeth the Englyshe cronycle, kynge Henry soone consented.

But of euer this warre betwene the sayde duke Roberte and kynge Henry beganne, this Henry maryed Maude or Holde, the daughter of Malcolme kinge of Scotland, and of Margarete his wyfe daughter of Edward the oute lawe, as in the begynnyng of wylliam Conquerour is touched.

Of the whiche Holde this Henry receaued after some wyters two sommes and two daughters, that is to saye: wylliam and Rycharde, Maude and Mary.

And also the sayde authoure with other saye that Roberte of Normandy came into England in the fourth yere of the reygne of kynge Henry and hadde good there of his brother and sister. For the whiche he at the request of his sayde sister, released to his brother the fore named tribute

Howe Henry
the fyfth cap-
tured into Ro-
mandy with
a great army
to warre wth
hys brother.

of .iiij. thousand markes. But by euil
tale tellers and couetouse of synnys
thys brotherly loue was after dissol-
ued, in suche wyse that the kyng with
a stronge army sailed into Royman-
dye, and helde hys brother Robertte
wth so sharpe warre, that he chased
hym frome one countrey to another,
and wanne frome hym Roan, Caan
Faloy, and all the good townes of
Roymandye, and lastly constrained
hym to aske helpe of Whyllpp kyng
of Fraunce, and after of the Earle of
Flandres, but he sailed helpe of
thym bothe. Then wth suche pow-
ers as he could make, he gaue batell
vnto hys brother kyng Henry. In
the whiche he was taken, and sente
ouer into England, and put into the
castell of Cardiffe in Wales, where
he remayned as prysoner whyle he ly-
ued. And when he was deade he was
buried at Gloucestre.

How Robert
Duke of Ro-
mandy was
taken.

Wher church
of Caput Bar-
thelme was in
Symphelde
was buylded
of a mynstrell

In this tyme and season, as it were
in the .iii. yere of kyng Henry, the
churche of Saynte Barthelme in
Symphelde of London was begon
to be founded, of a mynstrell of thys
kyng Henryes named Raper, and af-
ter persourmed and ended by good
and well dysposed cytyzens of the cy-
tye of London.

Symphelde
was a lathow
for the cytye.

Thys place of Symphelde was
at that tyme a lay stowe of all ordure
or filth, and the place where the felons
and ocher transgressours of the kyn-
ges lawes were put to execution.

The .ccxviiij. Chapter.



Was kyng Hen-
ry had finished his
warre in Royman-
dye, and was retur-
ned into England
Robert de Boleyn
whiche was the el-
dest sonne of Roger de mount Come

the Earle of Shyrewesburge, arose
agayne the king and manned his ca-
stels of Shyrewesburge, of Wyndesore
of Rundall, and of Tychynhill, and
incoraged the Walshemen agayn
kyng. But the kyng pursued so cru-
elly the sayd Robertte, that wthyn .xij.
dayes he wan all those castelles and
slew manye of hys men, and gat the
sauoure of the Walshemen by giffes
and pleasaunte wordes, and also com-
pelled the sayd Robertte to forsake
Englande. The whiche sailed into a
corner of Roymandye and keppe hym
there secretly, tyl such tyme as to him
was thyether comen William Earle
of Cornewall, whiche William was
also Earle of Roxtun in Roymandye.
When these two Earles were assoc-
at, they gathered to thym a grete
strength of Roymans, and dyd great
harne wthyn the prouynce.

Wherfore the kyng sailed thither
and made sharpe warre vpon thym
In the whiche he lost many of his me-
But in the end he put fro them thys
strength, and tooke thym both prys-
soners, and so helde thym the terme
of thys yeres. And that doone, he set
that country in good rest and pease
and after returned into Englande.
After whiche retorne, kyng Henry
made sharpe lawes agaynst theues
and ocher that dyd vniuersall meanes
In whiche lawes was contayned lo-
synge of lyfe, of eyes, of stroones, and
ocher members of man as the gyfte
requyred.

Henry the
fifth made
lawes agayn-
st theues.

And sone after Ancelme archebys-
hoppe of Canterburge, assembled
a grete counceill at London of the cler-
gye of Englande. By authoryte of
whiche counceill, dyuerse abbottes &
ocher were put frome thys dygnite,
for that they had taken before tyme
they abbates by vniuersall meanes.

And

Henry the
fifth made
lawes agayn-
st theues.

The seuenth part

293

And amongs all other verrees one was, that pceses shulde sojgo they; wrytes. Then styfe fell betwene the bypge & Ancelme, for þat he wolde not sacre the pceses that had taken inuestiture of lewde mennes handes, whych befoze was soj boddend by pon payne of cursynge. But Gryald archedyshope of Poike, for the pleasure of the kyng, sacred such the bysshoppes. Wherfoze Ancelme beyng dyscontente, departed the lande and poded to Rome, to shewe thys wryth o- ther thynges to the .b. therof, whych at that day by most accord of wryters shulde be Pascall the seconde.

In the .vi. yere of the kyng, the coun- tre of Flaunders was soze blemished and hurte by meane of the see, so that the Flemminges yode about to haue soroute of dwellynge, and requyred of the kyng to haue licence that they myght inhabyte the in the east parte of the ryuer of Tweede, the whych to them was graunted. But after a cer- tayne of yeres they were remoued in to west Wales, where they remayned a longe while, but after they sprad al Englande ouer.

In the .vii. yere of thys kyng, by pon a freyday at nyghts in the .xv. weke of clene lente, was sene an by- couth starre betwene þ south and the west, the whych nyghtlye appeared at one howse, and continued so by the space of .xxv. dayes. And for aga- ynst that out of the east part appeared a great leupn or borne of byghnesse whych stretched towarde the sayde starre.

And bypon there thursedaye nexte ensynge, were sene .ii. dones, that one in the East, and that other in the west.

And in thys yere, Ancelme by the bynges agreement, returned agayne

frome Rome, and shortlye after cal- led a conuocation at London. In the whych by the .b. of Romes authoryte it was newly confirmed and enacted that no temporal man after that day shulde make inuestiture wryth crosse or wryth ryng.

In the .viii. yere of the reygne of kyng Henry, the fourth Henry Em- peroure of Almanye, the whych had maryed Holde the eldeste daughter of kyng Henry, when he was of the age of .v. yeres, pyloned Pascal .b. of Rome & byuerle of the Cardynal- les. Thys Henry also warred agayn bys father Henry the .iii. and lastelye cast him in strong pylon. For which deade as assyrmeth Rannulph, he wyl fullye when he hadde ruled the Em- pyre .xx. yere, respyned hys dryngte into the handes of Calyxtus þ second of that name then .b. of Rome & after came secretly into Englande, & vnto Chester, vntwytting his wyfe or anye of hys frendes, where he lyued longe after a straght lye, and he was bur- yed there at last. But to thys saying dysagreeth the wryters of the stoyes of Emperours. For of them it is wit- nessed, that thys Henry the Emperour after he had ruled the Empyre as be- foze is sayde .xx. wynter, he dyed at a place in Almanye called Spyr, and there was buried, wryth thys scryp- ture vpon hys tombe.

Ille hic, pater hic, auns hic, preant iacet hic,

Whych is to meane in our bulgare tongue as foloweth.

The sone here lyeth, & also þ father.

The deys; for & þ great graudfather.

When Henry the Emperour was thus dede as after þe shalbe shewed, when conuenience of time requyeth what became of his wyfe it shal there be declared.

Howe Henry the .iii. Empe- rour of Alman- ne pyloned þ byshop of Ro- me and diuys of hys Cardy- nals.

The Epitaph of Henry the .iii. Empe- rour of Alman- ne.

In the .ix. yere of the reygne of kyng Henry, the Archebischoppe Anselme professed Gerardus Archebischoppe of Poike to the poke of hys obedyence, as he was befoze taughte by the loze of Lamfrank hys predecessour. And the .x. daie of Auguste folowinge, he sacred .v. bpschoppes at one tyme, as of Wynchester, of Salysbury of Eter, of Hartforde, and Clamorgan. And kyng Henry ordayned a bpschoppes sea at Elpe, and ordayned there Henry that had bene bpschoppe of Bangor, and besette Cambridge wythe to the sea of Elp. And to the bpschoppes sea of Lincolne, he gaue his owne towne of Spalding, for he had mynyshed that sea by the pfectment of Elpe.

The death of
Anselme

In the .x. yere dyed Anselme archbischop of Caunterbury. After whose death the sea was voyd .v. yeres, and the goodes of the church spent to the kynges vse. And whē he was prayed to helpe þ church, that was wythout an hedde and a pastoz, he vled to aunswere, that hys father & also hys brother had accustomed, to set there the best proued men þ they myghte fynd. And to the entente that he myght do the same, he tooke the moze tyme and leysure. Wyth suche mylde answers so put of the tyme, that he fylled hys cofers wyth the great summes of the benefyce.

A contauersy
betwene Lewys
the French
kyng & kyng
Henry

About thys tyme as wytnesseth þ French cronicle, a cotrauersy begane betwene the kyng and Lewys king of Fraunce sonne to Phillip the fyrst. Thys Lewys was surnamed Lewis the greate, other for hys bygnesse of personne, or elles for greatnes of his dedes. Thys Lewys sent vnto kyng Henry beyng in Normandy, & gaue vnto hym monysion of homage for the duchy of Normandy, and also þ

he shoulde restore vnto hym or beate downe to þ ground, the castel of Gisors, and also to recompence and restore for hurtes and harmes that hys Normans hadde doone in those partes. But all thys of kyng Henry was denyed, and shortly after schymps mes and cocke fyghtes beganne betwene the sayde two prynces, kyng Henry lypnge at the sayde castell of Gisors, and Lewys at a place called mounte Calne. But thys increased in such wyse, þ after ether pryncce soughte moze roome places, whose knyghtes sondrye tymes metir. But of anpe notable battaple I fynde no remembraunce, albeit that the sayde warre continued by the tyme of two yeres. In the ende of whych two yeres William the eldest sonne of kyng Henry, beyng a chyld and wythin age, contented so wel the mynd of Lewys that he refrayned of hys warre for that tyme.

In the .xiii. yere, at Shyrewesburye was a great earthe quake, and at Notyngham from the moze to the vnderlyde. The ryuer of Trent was so fozedryed in the moneth of June, as sayeth Gwydo, that menne went ouer drye. And the starrs called stella cometa or the blasinge sterre aperead soone after. Thereupon folowed an harde winter, grete death of the people, & scarlete of vytable by the great moynne of beastes. In thys yere also the kyng founded the abbaye of Wyke wythoute the walles of Wynchester, that of olde tyme was wythin the walles.

A great
quake

The .ccc. lvi. Chapter.



At the .xv. yere of his tregne the kyng entended to haue promoted Fayrus abbot of Abyndon vnto the sea of Caunterbury

But

The seventh part

275

But by a counsell kepte at Wyndesore of the byshoppes, the kynges mynde was chaunged, and to that sea was then admytted Raufe that was byshoppe of Rochester.

And the same yere one Thurstone was choosen Archebyshoppe of York: the whiche with sayde his professyon of obediencie that he shuld owe vnto the see of Canterburie, wherfore at length he was depriued of his dygnyte.

But after by labour that he made to Walsall the byshoppe of Roome befozenamed, the sayde byshoppe of Roome wrote vnto the kyng that he shulde restore Thurstons agayne to the see of York. By whiche meane he was agayne restorred, but yet he dysdained to do his lawfull obediencie vnto Raufe Bechebyshoppe of Caunterburie.

The the next was renewed, whiche Lamfranc befoze as ye haue harde in the thyrde chapter of Wylliam Conqueroure, dyd appeare, and was brought in argumente befoze the byshoppe of Roome.

The whiche at the kynges request promysed that he wolde nothyng do nor saye, that shuld be derogatoryon to the archebyshoppe of Caunterburie, or to the dygnyte of his church. But in conclusyon the byshoppe of Roome gaue such a defuse sentence in this matter, that he lefte þe styfe vndetermined & vnsloped.

And when the kynges procuratours with also the Archebyshoppe of Caunterburie were absente, were yt for neade or for fauoure, the Byshoppe of Roome was so bowed, that he forsooke the olde rule used befoze his dayes, and sacced the sayd Thurstone, and gaue vnto hym the palle. For this deade the kyng was sooze

dyscontented with Thurstone, and warned hym the entre of his lande. Wherfore the byshoppe of Roome wrote after shewtelpe to the kyng, wyllynge hym to suffer Thurstone to occupie the see peaceablie, or he shulde be accused and suspended by the dignyte of the office of Canterburie, and so Thurston enioyed his see.

In the yere of our lord. xi. hundred and xlii. as sayeth the French cronycle whiche was the. xlii. yere of this kyng Henry the first, þe warre was agayne quickened betwene king Henry & Lewis kyng of Fraunce. Wherof was the occasyon, as sayth the sayde French Cronycle. The bande Carte of Chartres. Whiche Thibaud was greued by the French kyng and for necessyte requyred kyng Henry of ayde and helpe, to whome the kyng as to his kynsmā sente ayde and socoure. And afterwarde the kyng sailed ouer with a stronge armye, and sente a noble mā named Stephan into the Loydshyp of Wyte, to defende it agaynst the French kyng. When Lewis vnder stood that kyng Henry, was landed in Normandy with so greate power, he in all the haste assembled a stronge power, and dyue hym toward the kyng.

But there were so stronge holdes mannyd with Normannes, and also such depe and great ryuers, that the French kyng myght not wyne vnto kyng Henry.

Then lastely by a fente of warre whiche were longe to reherse, he won a towne named Lynghes in Cause, in the whiche towne was a bydye to passe the ryuer of Ther, and so in to Normandy.

When a certayne of the knyghtes of Lewis, had thus wonne the sayde

B. ii.

towne

Romy the ship
images

The warre be
tweene kyng
Henry and
French king
remued

towne, the sayd Lewis with his people sped hym shortly after, and rescued his forlorn knyghtes, and then spoiled and robbed the towne the whiche was ryeche, for so muche as it had bene in quyet and rest manye yeres before. He also slewe and toke prisoners al the Roymans ther dwellinge, & put in their stead frenchemen. And that done he sped hym towarde kynge Henry, the which was at a castell called Male assise, & there made purveyaunce for the defence of the frenchemen. And when he had garnished yt to his pleasure he departed thence. But not longe after the frenche kynge came thither with his hole hoste of frenchemen, and after many soze and cruell assautes, took the sayde castell, and sette it downe even with the grounde. After which season as sayth the sayd cronycle, fel to the frenche kynge manye and diverse misfortunes. For shortly after amonge other myssechaunces, a noble captayne of his named Anguecan de Chammounte, the whiche had doone muche harme in Roymandye, to kynge Henry, and wonne there some castelles and other stronge holdes, dyed sodapnelye. And in shortlye time after, Balowpne Earle of Flaunders a man of great strength & puissance, as he besieged a castell was wounded in the face, and dyed within fyve dayes after. Then Fauques Earle of Hungros, in whom also this Lewis assayed much and trusted, married his daughter unto Wylliam the eldest sonne of kynge Henry, and refused the kynge of fraunces parte, and ayded and assisted kynge Henry in al that he myght, so that dailye the power of kynge Henry increased and the frenche kynges mynished. Lastlye these two princes met with

both theyr hostes in a playne feld, & fought a deadly and cruell batayle where in the ende the frenche kynge was overcomen, and lost muche of his people, and was compelled to flee unto a place called Audely for his safeguarde. But this overthrowe of frenchemen is excused in the mooste fayrest maner. so that they excuse theym selves and saye that kynge Henry set upon kynge Lewis, when he was not ware, but his knyghtes all oute of array & order, and also kynge Henry had far exceeding number of men over that theyr kynge had, with other wordes of bothe of them selves, and flatter of Englyshemen, the whiche as to me appereth is an augmentacyon of theirowne shame. But Ranselpe the monk sayeth shortlye, that kynge Henry overcame the frenche kynge copally in battayle.

Then it foloweth in the storie, finallye these sayd princes were agreed and Wylliam the sonne of king Henry dyd homage unto the frenche kyng for the landes of Roymandye, by the agreement of his father. For the kyng thoughte hym selfe to good to be under the obersaunce of the frenche kyng. Then kynge Henry caused his free meyne of Englands and of Roymandye, to dooe homage unto his sonne Wylliam.

And some after Fauques becommed left his Earldome of Angers or Angers, in gyardinge of kynge Henry, and yode hym selfe into the holy lande, and willed in his testamente, that if he returned not agayne, that the sayde Earldome shuld remayne unto his sonne in lawe Wylliam, sonne of kynge Henry, whiche hadde married his daughter.

Aboute the xx. yere of the reigne of kynge Henry, quene Maud or Maud his

Wylliam the sonne of Henry dyd homage to the frenche kynge for the landes of Roymandye.

hys wyfe dyed in Normandy, the
wyche in her pouth was set by her
father kynge of Scottes into a nun
ry, and there ware and vled the valle
and abbey of a Anne. For which
cause when kynge Henry was agre
able to take her vnto wyfe, this mat
ter fell in greute dysputacion, & An
celme then archbishop of Caunter
bury was soe agayne that marpage
a season of tyme. But at lengthe it
was sufficiently proued that she was
there as a figure, a woman weyringe
that abbey withoute professyon of
order. And this was thus ordred by
her father, to the ende to put by vn
worthye woters. This of wynters
was reputed for a blessed and holpe
woman, after the luyng of a world
ly woman.

When king Henry had continued
in Normandy vppon the season and
terme of .iii. yeres, he toke shipping
at Hatterflete in Normandy, and say
led happely into England the same
day, that is to meane the .xiii. daye
of November as sayth some wynters
And shortly after William duke of
Normandy, with Rycharde his bro
ther, Rothe the countesse of Derby,
Rycharde Earle of Chester, with hys
wyfe the kinges niece, & the archdeane
of Hereford and other, to the number
of a hundred and .xl. personnes, toke
shipping at the sayde port, & were
all drowned, a bocher onely excepte,
wyche misfortune felte by the ouer
sight of the master and other, which
fell at a dyscencion in the nyghte a
mong them selves, by reason wherof
they ranne vppon a rocke as shewed
the sayd bocher. From this daun
ger William duke of Normandy was
escaped, and was in the shyppe bothe
neare vnto the lande. But when he
hearde the lamentable cry of the Cos

tesse Rothe, he commaunded the co
wers to retourne and saue the sayde
Countesse, which done, by what mis
fortune I cannot saye, after she was
receaued into the bothe, were it by tem
peste or ouer chargynge of the boote
or other wyse, they were all swallowed
of the see, so that none of theyn was
after founde, but patte of theyn good
des. Of this duke William some del
clauderous wordes are leste in me
more, both in the Englyshe cronicle
and also of other wynters, the wyche
I ouerpass.

The .xxii. Chapter

The park of
Woodstocke.

In the .xxi. yere of hys reig
ne, kynge Henry made the
parke woodstocke besyde
Oxenforde, with other ple
asures to the same. Fauques Earle of
Angers retourned oure of the holy
lande, and maried the syster of her
that befoze he had maried vnto Wil
lam duke of Normandy, vnto the
sonne of Roberte Curthose, and ga
ue with her the Earledome of Cono
manna. And shortly beganne to kyndle
betwene kynge Henry and the sayd
Fauques, for the witholdynge of the
dowze or lordshipp of hys firste dou
ghter, maried vnto William the kyn
ges sonnes.

In the .xxii. yere of kynge Henry
dyed Raufe archbishoppe of Caun
terbury, and one named William was
set in his place after hym. And the kynge
in this yere beganne the foundacy
on of the abbay of Reding. And John
a cardynall of Rome was sent from
Calixt the seconde of that name then
B. of Rome, for certayne matters to
certifye the B. of Rome. In the tyme
of which he was beynge here, the Car
dynall made warpe processe agayne
proues that noryshed Chyssen moy
les, and rebuked them by open pub
lyc.

The founda
cion of the ab
bay of Reding

Exhorta
cion of
king Hen
ry to the
warre in
which
he was
wound
a
part of
the
miller of
the
mill.

lypymente and other wyse, so that he
wan hym there but smal and litle fa-
uoure. But thys dyspmyled doctour
toke so greute seruence in the corre-
ccion of the iudgemente of prestes of
England, that he forgoat the loze and
counsaill of þe famous philosopher
Caton, which in þe booke of hys coun-
saill of wysedome thus sayeth

Quæ culpæ solet, ea tu ne feceris ipse.

Turpi est doctori, cum culpa redarguit ipsum.

The whyche two verses maye be En-
glished as foloweth.

Supse the wel, let reason be thy guyd
When other folke thou arte aboute
to blame.

That suche defeaute in the be not es-
pped.

For if there be, then shalte thou haue
the shame.

A mans honoure suche thynges wol
reclapme.

It is full foule when that a man wol
teache.

If that hys dede agayne hys wordes
preach.

Thys counsaill was not remembred
of the sayde Cardynal. For in the eue-
nyng after he hade lewdlye blowen
hys hoine, and sayde it was a detesta-
ble synne to aryse from the syde of a
strumpet and sacre the body of Chyrlie
he was taken wth a strumpet to his
open shame and rebuke.

In the. xxb. yere of kyng Henry
was called a counsell at London,
where the spyritualte condescended
that the kynges officers shulde pun-
nysh the prestes that cheryshed the for-
sayde mules. But the sayde officers
toke mony, and suffered the prestes
to spurre theyr mules at theyr plea-
sure. Whych office at thys day is so
clearlye reniced of al spyritual men
that nether kyng nor byshop taketh
for it any synes, nor yet correccion ne

cessary to be done for the same

In the. xxb. yere of hys reygne as
reporteth an olde Cronycle, the gras-
tres by procuring of the king came
fyrste into Englande, and had theyr
fyrste house buylded at Caisterbury.
And about this tyme by most accorde
of wyters, died Henry the. iiii. Empe-
rour of that name, which as befoze is
touchyd marryed Wolde the daughter
of kyng Henry. After whose death þe
sayd Emperesse came vnto her father
in Roymaby. When king Henry was
ascertayned of the death of Henry þe
emperour, for so much as he had non
heyr male, he caused soone after the
moze party of hys lordes of Englad
as wel spyritual as temporal, to swere
in hys presence, þe they shuld kepe the
land of Englad to the vse of Edward
the Emperesse, yf he dyed wthoute
issue male, and she then surueyed

In the. xxviii. yere of kyng Henry,
Geffrey Plantagenet erle of Angeou
marryed Wolde the Emperesse. Of the
whyche two descended Henry the se-
conde, that after Stephan was king
of Englande

And after hys comyng then into
England, he then solided the abbaye
of Redynge befoze spoken of. And o-
uer that he relesed vnto Englyshme
the Dane gelte, that was by hys fa-
ther and hys brother renued.

In the. xxx. yere of thys kyng Hen-
ry, dyed the Earle of Flaunders, and
kyng Henry sayeth Ranulphe, was
by agreemente of Letys the frenche
kyng made Earle, and next heyr &
inherytoure to the sayde Earldome.
But it is not expessed by what ma-
ner of tytill or succession.

In the. xxxi. yere of the kyng dyed
Robert Curthose the kinges brother
the whyche he had kepte as prysoner
in the Castell of Cardyfe from the
fourthe

¶ chaffe Carr
bynall.

The fyfthe
yere of the
gras tres
to Englan

The. xxviii.
yere of the

thir. yere of his reygne o; there about,
whose coys as befoze is shewed, was
buryed at Glouceter befoze the bygh
altare. And aboute thys tyme was
founded the priorye of Royston in the
prounce of Chester, by one Wylly-
am, the sonne of Archelle. And the
abbay of Combecher in the same pro-
uynce, was also founded aboute the
same tyme.

In the xxxv. yere of kyng Henry,
was borne of Wolde the Emperesse;
Henry thoste mantel, o; Henry the.ii.

Kyngs Henry being in Royma-
die after some misters, fell from o; his
horse, wherof he caughte his death.
But Kanulphe sayeth, he toke a sur-
fet by eatynge of a lamprey, & therof
died, when he had reygued full. xxxv.
yeres and odde monethes.

Then h kinges bowellis were dra-
wen out of his body, and then salted
with muche salte. And so; to auoyde
the stench whiche hadde infected ma-
ny men, the bodye was lastelye closed
in a bulles skynne, and yet it was not
all stynted. He that clenched the hed, dy-
ed of the stench of the byayne.

Then lastly h body was broughte
into Englande, & buried in the abbay
of Redynge, that he had befoze foun-
ded. Then the fame of hym was blo-
wen abrode, as it is blowne of other
pynces, and sayde h he passed other
men in.iii. thynges. In wytt, in elo-
quence, and fortune of batayle. And
other sayde he was ouercomen wth.
iii. vyces, with couetyse, with cruelty;
and with luste of lechery.

One other made these versys
of hym as folowen.

Kyng Henry is deade, beaustie of the
worlde, so; whome is great dole.
Goddess nowe maken so; they kinde
brother. For he is sole.
Mercurius in speche, Mars in bat-

ayle, harte strange Appollus
Iupiter in best, egall with Saturne
and enemye to Cupido.

Kyng he was of reygnt, & man of most
might, and glayous in rayning.
And when he left his crowne, the self
honour downe, so; myse of such
a kyng.

Roymandye than gan lowe, so; losse
of they flour, & linge wel away
Englande made none, & Scotlande
dyd grone, so; to se that daye.

France.

France.

The. cxxx. Chapter.



This is the sonne of h
kyng Philyppe be-
ganne his reygne o-
uer the Frenchmen,
in h yere of our loyde
x. hundred and. vii.

Lewis the
sonne of the
kyng Philyp

to reken hys begyn-
nyng from the deathe of hys father,
and the fyrte yere of the kyng Henry
then kyng of Englande. Thys Le-
wis as befoze is touched, was admyt-
ted vnto the rule of the land certayne
yeres o; his father dyed, and was sur-
named Lewis the grente, so; grette-
nesse of his bodye.

Now as this Lewis had synished
the obsequye of the funerallys of hys
father, he withoute taryenge called a
councell of his loydes spirytual and
temporal, at the cytie of Dyleance,
where, of the Byllhoppe of the same
sen with other adopyng, he was so-
lemlye anoynted and crowned. But
not withoute grudge of the arche-
hoppe of Raynes, so; so mach as of
custome h French kinges bled there
to be crowned.

Doons after the coronacyon of
Lewis, Guy le Roux, & Guy de Cers
hys sonne, whiche befoze tyme had
ben at debate and warre with Lewis
and Lewis had from them taken the
castell

the castell of Gurnape, thys Guy le Rous wryth hys sonne, serunge they myghte not pzeuayle agayne þe kyng, awayted they; tyme and season, and espyed when Endo his owne brother and earle of Cozbueryll went forth on huntynge, and toke hym, & as a prysoner kepte him in the castell of Baudum. Whereof the cause was, for so muche as the sayde Endo wolde not assyste nor ayde þe sayde Guy le Rous his brother agayne the kyng. When this was knowen, auone the frendes and ternautes of the sayde earle shewyd this mater vnto the kyng, beseechynge hym that he wolde ayde and assyste them to recouer they; naturall loyde. Whereunto the kyng graunted, and forthwith sente a knyghte or capayne of his, named Juncelyne, accompanied with xi. hoysmen befoze, for so muche as it was shewed vnto the kyng that such as had the rule of the castell wolde receiue such psones as were sente from hym, and deliuer the castell with the prysoner vnto the.

Upon whiche appoyntment thys Juncelyne as befoze is sayde, was sent to entre this castell. But all contrarye to the former promyse made, this Juncelyne was betrayed and taken; and many of his men slaine, and him selfe set in pryson, where þe sayde earle of Cozbueryll was. Whereof when the kyng was enformed, he was passing greuously discontent. Wherefoze in a haste he sped him thither, and compassed the castell with a stronge spege, & those that were within defeded them manfully. In the tyme of the whiche siege nother Guy the father, nor Guy hys sonne, were wrythin the sayde castell of Baudum.

But Guy the sonne as a lusty & leperdous knyght, put hym selfe in aduenture byuers wayes and tymes to

haue entered the sayde castell for comforte of his men, but all was in vaine. Fynally the kyng made so sore and cruell assautes, that he wan the sayde watre wryth greate dyspule, and after the hole, and deliuered the earle and Juncelyn his steward, & whiche were in greate doubte of their lyues. And suche as he toke prysoners of the souldiours, some he put to death, and some he prysoned to their lyues ende, to the terrour and feare of other.

In pcesse of tyme after at a place called the Roche of Guy, whiche one Guy of olde tyme had buylded, dwellyd at this daye one of that Roche named also Guy, the whiche hadde to wyfe: a fayre and good woman, the doughter of one william a Roiman. Whiche william entendynge to dysherre the sayde Guy, and to be loyde of that stronge place, bypon a tyme when the sayde Guy was in þe church or chapell to heare his dityne seruice entered the churche with a certayne of harnessed knyghtes vnder they; mantellis, and fell vpon him, & all to helpe him. Whereof hearinge þe wyfe, ranne as a madde woman, and fel vpon her husbande, to the entente to saue hym from the strokes.

But the tryautes were so cruel, & they forbare nothyng of they; crueltye, but wounded her wryth her husbande, so that bothe were slaine, and that done entered the castell, and slew all such as they founde therein. When this william father to þe wyfe of Guy or brother to her as affermeth maister Robert Bagwyne, was possessed of þe castell of Guion, he thought thereby to rule all the countrey enuyron.

But the gentyles and comons hearinge of thys shamefull murder, assembled them together, & of one mind whyle some of them rode to the kyng

to enfourme hym of that cruell dede, the other prepared abyllmentes of warre, and layde syege to the sayde castell. The kynge Lewis hearynge of this shamefull dede, and the wyning of so stronge an holde, fearynge the rescue of Englyshemenne and Normans, lest that castell by that meane myght fall in theyr handes, sente his commissyon vnto the rulers of that countrey, chargyng them with all diligence to assaute that place. And yf they might wyne it, to put the executors of þe murder vnto moche shamefull deathe. Whiche commaundement receyued from the kyng, strong assaute and cruell was made, & manfully it was defended.

But the losse ranne to them of the castell, so that in pcesse of tyme whe this Willyam conceiued well that he mighte not contynue the defence therof, he beganne to treate & agreed that yf he myghte haue free vyssue for hym and his, and assurance that he wyth his knyghtes myghte go quietly vnto a place þe he wolde chole, he wolde then deliuer the castell wyth all that was therein. The whiche requeste of dyuerse of the hedde capitaynes was graunted and swozne. But so soone as the castell was deliuered, and the Frenchemen entred, the multytude: not wythstandynge the former promysse and othe, fell vpon the same Willyam and his souldoyers, and them put vnto deathe by many cruell toymentes, and finally caste all their carcasses into the ryuer of Mayne, vpon the bynke wherof the sayde roche and castell was standynge.

And shortly after this, ensued the warre betwene this Lewis and king Henry of Englande, as it is befoze shewed in the .x. yere of þe sayde Henry. And after the warre ended betwene

these two prynces, Hugh Duflake a man of greare myghte at those dayes in Fraunce, rebelled agayne þe kynge, and warred greuously vpon agayne the countesse of Chartres, & robbed, and pylled the churches of the countrey, as well as other places, so that the sayde Countesse wyth her sonne sonne Chybaude, were fayne to seke soroute of the kynge. Wherfoze the kynge called a counsell at his Cytie of Drelepe, where agayne the sayde Hughe many greuous complayntes were put. But for so much as þe sayde Hugh at that tyme was not presente, to make answer vnto suche thynges as then were layde to his charge, the kynge commaunded that the castell of Terry, or of Thoyre in al the haste shulde be manned and bytaried, to þe ende that by the comforte & strengthe of that castell, the kyng yf nedde requyred myghte laye syege to the castell of Duflake, for so muche as þe one was nere adioyning vnto that other.

In which passetyme the said Hugh was smomoned to appere befoze the kynge and his counsaile, but he refused to appere.

When the kynge was enfourmed of the garnysynge of the castell of Thoyre, & of the disobedience of Hugh he assembled a stronge hoste, and compassed the castell of Duflake wyth a syege, and set Chybaude sonne of the Countesse vpon that syde that lode towarde the Joyourne of Chartres, so that stronge assautes & cruel warre was made on every parte.

What shulde I make longe pcesse, to tel of the fereful shot of þe gonnes vpon both partyes, or of þe sharpe shotte of arrowes, the castynge of stones, or scalyng of the wallys, or spryng of the dyches, the spryng of the gates, or yet the moiall & cruell fyght on both

on bothe parties, noꝝ of the manyfold deade boodies and mapmed, by reason of the sayd assautes, oꝝ yet the manasses oꝝ mockes, oꝝ greates boistys oꝝ cruakes used of the souldyours, duringe thys spege. But fynally after the kyngs hadde lpen befoze the sayde castell a certayne of tyme, he wanne it by pure foꝛce, & toke the sayd Hugh with his accessaries. The whiche he commaunded to be kepte as prysoners in the castell of Thoyse foꝝ a season.

Then the kyng caste downe the sayde castell of Dussake vnto the grounde, excepte a litle towne made of tymber, the whiche he reseruyd foꝝ a lodgyng. And that doone, some of the foꝛesayd prysoners he putte vnto deathe, and some he dyscretyed after the greke of their offence. And so thus foꝛesayde countesse of Charters with her sonne Thybaude was in quyet of theyꝝ countrey and castell of Dussake belongyng vnto the sayde earldome. But howe it was, in procelle of tyme folowynge, this Thybaude entendyd to haue recouered there a newe castell, whereby as the kyng was enfourmed, he wolde haue encroched thynge appertayning to the crowne of Fraunce, wherfoze the kyng with stode it. Foꝝ thys, a grudge fell betwene the kyng and earle Thybaude so that in procelle deadly warre was made betwene them.

The which continued in such wise to theyꝝ bothe damages, that fynally the warre was agayne reuined betwene kyng Lewis and kyng Henry, as in the sequent pte of the reygne of the sayde Henry is declared, by meane of thys warre betwene the kyng and this earle Thybaude, wherof the circumstaunce wolde aske a longe lpsoure to rehearse, as it is shewed in the frenche storie. But fy-

nally this earle Thybaude losse none honoure, all best that the frenche cronycle wonderfully fauoureth the partye of the frenche kyng, that the reader maye well apperceptue, *Quis pinxit leonem.*

The. cccxi. Chapter.

This Lewis also hadde great warre with Henry the fourth of that name Emperour, the whiche maryed Wolbe the daughter of Henry the fyrste kyng of England as befoze is shewed. Wherfoze the occasion was as saith the frenche cronycle, foꝝ so muche as the sayde Henry the emperour had befoze time bene accursed of Gelasius the seconde of his name then byshop of Rome, at Raynes a cite in Fraunce. Foꝝ the which cause as there is surmytted, the sayde emperoure assembled an honge hoste of Almaynes and Italyans, and entered the lande of Fraunce, & did therein much harme. But in the ende when he knewe of the great prouisyon that Lewis made to mete hym, and of his great power, he then as affermeth the frenche cronycle, withdrew him, & so auoyded his lande of Fraunce without stroke stryking. But of this speaketh nothing the authoure, & wrote the story of this Henry the emperour.

After this the earle of Flaundres named Charlys, the systers sonne of kyng Lewis nexte duke after Baldwyn, which died, as befoze is sayde in the thyrde chapyter of the storie of kyng Henry, of a wounde in his face this foꝛesayde Charlys was loze hated of the prouoste of Brudges. The whiche to byngne his malice to some effecte, counsayled with his adherentes howe he myghte see the sayde Charlys. By whose counsaile a meane was founde to byngne the earle vnto Brudges, a towne of Flaundres, foꝝ the

the wele of the sayde towne. After
whose commynge vpon a dape he be-
ynge in a churche and hearynge hys
duyne seruyce, was slaine of the said
prouoste and his complcys. Wherof
hearynge kynge Lewys, anon wryth
a greate army entred flaundres, and
besieged the towne of Bruges: and
lastely toke the sayde prouoste. The
whiche fyrste was bounden to a post,
and then his eien with a reede stricken
oute of his hed. And then shot with
arowes, and lastely set vpon a whele,
where he remayned tyll he dyed. And
a felowe of his named Bartopus, the
whiche was consentynge to the same
murder, was hanged vpon a galous
by the waste and armys, and by hym
a mastiffe o; greate curte dogge, the
which as sone as euer he was lymtten
bote vpon þe sayde Bartopus, so that
in processe he all to rent hym, a dyd to
him so great payne, that lastely he en-
ded his lyfe in greate mysery.

In þe tyme of the reigne of this Le-
wys, the Bysshop of Clermonde was
doided his sea by þe cruelnes of þe erle
of Arverne. Wherfore the kyng assem-
bled his knyghtes, and by strengthe,
set the bysshoppe in his place agayne
maugrey his enemyes. And agayne
the seconde tyme when he was est put
out by the sayde erle, the kyng resto-
red hym, and toke suche pledges of þe
erle, that he remayned after in good
quiet. In the latter dayes of this Le-
wys, his eldest sonne named Phylp
with a conuenient compaignie, vpon a
dape for his dysposyte rode aboute cer-
taine stretes of the Cytye of Paris, &
as he rode, an hougge sodenly starte
amonge the hougge scete of the chylde,
wherwith the hougge beinge fraide, lept
sodenly, and caste the chylde to the
grounde, with so great vyolence that
he dyed that nyghte folowynge.

For his myschappe, the kyng toke
greate heynesse, so that he wared day
ly moze feble. And for he was vnweldy
lye, by reason of ouerladyng of fleshe
and myghte not well traunple, he ther-
fore by the aduyce of hys lordes, ad-
mytted hys seconde sonne named Le-
wys to the rule of the realme, & hym
he crowned by hys lyfe tyme, and al-
so maryed hym vnto Elynoure, the
doughter of the Duke of Guyan, by
whiche he was inherytoure vnto her
father.

And shortly after the kyng spe-
ned, and to hys greate payne in an
housse lytter was broughte vnto saynt
Denys. Where he lyenge a season
like, and knew that the howse of deeth
was nere, commaunded such as were
aboute hym, that they shulde spredde
a tappete vpon the grounde, and then
lape hym vpon the sayde tappete, and
vpon hym to be made a crosse of as-
shes, whiche all was done accordyng
vnto hys commaundemente. And
there he so laye till he died, in the yere
of his reygne to reken from the death
of his father, vnto his owne endynge
dape thrytye yeres, so that he reygned
xxix. yeres full, and odde monethes,
and was buryed in the monasterie of
Saynte Denys wryth greate pompe,
with this scrpyture folowynge vpon
hys tombe.

*Illustris genitor Lodouici rex Lodouicus,
Vir clement, Christi seruorum semper amicus,
Institui fecit pastorem canonicorum,
In sella ueteri trans flumen Parisiorum,
Hanc uir magnanimus almi uictoris amore,
Auto reliquis onauit rebus honore,
Sancte Dionisi, qui seruas corpus humatum,
Martyr et antistes, Lodouici solue reatum.*
Which verses maye be expounded in
our bulgar tongue, as foloweth.
The noble father of Lewys, Lewys
the kyng.

To chyl

The manner
of the ende of
dyngs of Lewys.

And death.

Whiche Phylp
the eldest
sonne of Le-
wys was de-
stroyed by the
falling of an
hougge.

To Chyrtles seruantes ryght meke
and lounge.

Caused to be made of Chanons an
howse.

In a fell of Darps where the streame
flowes.

Whych this man myghty for loue of
saynte Victor.

Wyth golde and relyques enoyed
with greate honoure.

Wherfore saynte Denys, whiche ke-
pest his bodye graued.

Party and bisshoppe, praye that his
soule be saued.

Englande.

Anglia.

Che. cccxii. Chapter.

Stephā earle
of Boloyne.



Stephan, Earle of
Boloyne, and sonne
of the earle of Ble-
sence, and of the wi-
ues syster of Henry
the first, named Ma-
ry, began his regne

ouer the realme of Englande, in the
yere of our lord. xi. C. cxxvi. & the first
yere of Lewes the. viii. of the name the
kyng of Fraunce. This was a noble
man and hardye. But contrarie hys
othe, after the affirmance of some
mysters that he made to Holde the
empresse, he toke vpon him the crowne,
and was crowned vpon saynte Ste-
phans daie in the Chyrtlemasse weke
at Westmyster, of the archebysshop
of Caunterbury, the whiche in lyke-
wise had made lyke oth vnto the sayde
empresse, in presence of her father as
before is touched. In punishment
wherof as men demed, the sayde arch-
bysshop dyed shortly after.

And many other Lozdes whiche
dyd accordynglyke, wente not quyte
without punishment. A greate cau-
ser of this peturpe as reherseyth one

author, was this, one Hugh Bygote
steward somtyme wyth Henry the
first, immediatly after the decease
of the sayde Henry, came vnto En-
glande, and befoze the sayde archebys-
shoppe and other lozdes of the lande,
toke wilfully an othe, and sware that
he was present a lytle befoze the kyn-
ges death, when kyng Henry admit-
ted and chafe for his heire to be kyng
after hym Stephan hys neuewe, for
so muche as Holde hys daughter
had dyscontentyd hym. Whereunto
the archebysshoppe with the other loz-
des gaue to hasty credence. But this
Hughe scaped not unpunished, for
he dyed miserablye in a short tyme
after.

When kyng Stephan was crow-
ned, he sware befoze the lozdes at Oc-
ford, that he wold not holde in his
hande the benefices that were voided, &
that he wold forgeue the Dane gelt,
as kyng Henry befoze hym had done
with other thynges whiche I passe o-
uer. And for this Stephan dyd the
commynge of the empresse, he therfore
gaue lycence vnto his lozdes, that euery
of theym myghte buylde a castell or
strong fortres vpon his owne ground
And soone after he agreed wyth Da-
uid kyng of Scottes, a receyued of
hym homage, after he had from hym
wonne some townes and holdes.

The towne of Exetoure rebelled a-
gayne the kyng in the seconde yere
of hys regne. But he in the ende sub-
dued theym. And Willlam archebys-
shoppe of caunterbury dyed the same
yere, whose benefyce was after giuen
vnto Chybaude Abbote of Bec in
Normandye.

Aboute the fourth yere of hys
regne, Dauid kyng of Scottes re-
pentynge hym of hys former agree-
mente made wyth the kyng, entered

The rebelli-
on of hys
of Exetoure.

How Da-
uid kyng of
Scottes com-
to his
minded the
realme.

of

The seventh parte.

305

of rictre the boundes of Northum-
berlande aboute the ryuer of Thersle
towards the prounce of York, and
byrte and slewe the people in moste
cruel wyse, not sparing man, woman
nor chyld. Agayne whome Thur-
stone by the kynges comaundement
was sent. The which with his power
quyte hym so knyghtly, that he o-
uerthrewe the hoste of Scottes, and
slewe of theim a greate number, and
compelled them to withdraue agayne
into Scotlande.

The discouery
of the
harmes.

In the whiche passetyme the kyng
laide spege to the castell of Bedforde,
and wanne it. And that done, he then
made a viage into Scotlande, where
he dyd lytle to his pleasure or prospe-
rite. When in his retourne homeward he
toke Alexander byshop of Lyncolne
and helde him in duraunce tyl he had
peided or gyven vnto hym the castell
of Newberke. And then he chased Ay-
gellus byshoppe of Ely.

Also in thys tyme he toke suche
displeasure with his lounge frende
Roger byshoppe of Salysburie, that
he caste hym in bondes, tyl the sayde
Roger hadde rendred vnto hym the
twoo castells of Wykes and Whar-
burne. For the whiche thys Roger
in remembryng the greate ingraty-
tude of the kyng, toke suche thought
that he dyed shortly after, and left
in redy coyne fortye thousand marke
whiche after his deathe came to the
kynges cofers.

One cronycle sayth þ kyng Ste-
phan obtayned these forsayde castel-
lys, to the entente he myghte fortifye
thepm wth his knyghtes to with-
stande the empyesse, whose commyng
he euer feared. And the yere folowing
he wanne wth strength the castells
of Gloucetter, of Hertford, of Webley
of Wyke, of Dudley, & of Wyke.

Welburge, for the whiche cause Ro-
bert earle of Gloucetter began to with-
draue his allegaunce frome kyng
Stephan. This Robert was the sonne
of Henry the fyrste by reason of hisse
and so; this byspite sent letters
vnto Wolde the empyesse his wyfe,
promysynge vnto her greate ayde to
wyne her ryghte.

In the meane whyle that the em-
pyesse made prouysio for her iourney
byng Stephan concluded a mariage
betwene Eustace his sonne, and Con-
stance the kynges wyfe of Fraunce
doughter of Lewis the great, & which
compleued the amys betwene En-
glande and Fraunce.

Then in the moneth of July and
vi. yere of Stephan, Wolde the em-
pyesse as testifyeth Henry the chancer
in his. ii. booke, entred this lande by
the porte of Portesmouthe, & so keppe
on her iourney, tyl she came to Wy-
ke, and dyd greate harme by the
meane of her passage thorough the
countrey. In which tyme of her sayde
landynge, kyng Stephan laye at the
siege of walynghforde castell.

The landynge
of the empyesse.

But as soone as he hearde of the
landynge of the Empyesse, he anon
sent out comysions for more strenght
and so dyde towarde his enemyes.
But in this tyme and season, Robert
Earle of Gloucetter, and Ranulphe
earle of Chester, wente vnto the em-
pyesse wth the power that they might
make. The Empyesse hearynge the
greate power comyng wth the kyng
dyde vnto the cite of Wyke now
called Lyncolne, and there helde her
a longe season for all that the kyng
myghte doo.

But lastly the empyesse wth her
people escaped, & the kyng was pos-
sessed of the cite, & there bode tyl can-
delmas. After which season, earle Ro-

C.4. bett

bert and Ranulfe befoze named, with a great power of walshmen, & the power of the cymryse, came agayne the kyng. Where as when bothe hostes were nere loynynge, the earle Ranulfe of Chester spake to his knyghtes and sayde: I requyre you that I that am cause of your parell, maye be the fyrst that shall enter into the parell. Then answered earle Robert, and sayd, it is not vnworthye to the yachest the fyrst stroke and dignyte of this fyght. For vnto the it is lyttinge, for noblenesse of bloude and vertue of strengthe, in the whiche thou passest other men.

But the kynges false othe moueth men to warre and to fyght, where we muste nowe wyne the mastery or be ouercomen. And he that hath none other succour, is constrained to defend hym by knyghtlye and strange dedes of armes & of manhode. And so shall we nowe agayne them that be entred with gyle and wickednes, as Robert earle of Mellent, the earle also of Albemarle, and Simon of Hampton, the which is a man of great bolle and of small myght.

Then kyng Stephan repayred to let forwarde his people, and earle Baudewyne had wordes of comforte to the kynges people, & sayde: When I shall fyghte, to them is behouefull the thynges. The fyrste is ryght of cause, lest men fall in parell of soule. The seconde is quantite of men of arms, lest men be oppreste wyth exceeding number. And the thyrde is the effect corage of strength of knyghtes, that I quartel shuld not faile for lacke of hardy and assured fyghtynge. As touchyng whiche the pointes I trust we be well spedde. But and ye take hede farthermoze what enemyes we haue, fyrste we haue agayne vs Robert earle of Glouceter, whiche blyeth

greate manasses, and executeth lytle or small dedes. In mouth he is a Lyon, but in harte he is a Shepe.

He is pompos in speche, & darke in vnderstandynge. There is also Ranulfe erle of Chester, a man without reason and ful of folhardynesse, rebp and pryete to all conspyracye and vnstedfastnesse of maner and dedes, hasty and furiose of harte, and vnware of parells. He assaureth ofte to achue greate dedes, but he bringeth none to effecte. And what he sperly and frelyshely begynneth, he cowardely and sapntely forsaiketh, as vnhappye and vngrypouse in all his dedes, and is ouercomen in euery place. For he holdeth with hym banished men and scullers. And the mo of them that be in a compagne, the soner they be ouercomen, and weake they be in fighting for cyther of them putteth truste in his felowe, whyle hym selfe is ouerthowen.

But or he might haue finished his wordes to moste mennes audyence, the crye of the enemyes, with noyse of trumpettes and gruntinge of horses approached and smote togyther, and for the goode the arrowes, and gresely, and cruell fyghte was contynued vpon bothe sydes for the whyle that it endured. Where thorough the grene felde was turned into a perpyt redde, so that many a pale and wan bysage was there sene peldynge the gooste, wyth armys and legges disseuerd & departed. A longe whyle this fyghte stode in questyon, whither partye shulde obteyne vycroze. But in the ende kyng Stephens partye gaue backe and fledde, and he full knightly abode on felde wyth a fewe of his knyghtes, and was taken, and so he was brought vnto the cymryse, the whiche commaunded hym to be con-

ueyed

The thynges
necessary for
men that shal
fyghte.

The manner
of the battell

By the
phenomenon
the cymryse

neyed vnder such keepynge vnto Bristowe, where he was kepte as a prysoner, frome the sayde tyme of Candelmasse, vnto holy Roodes daye next ensuynge.

Aboute thys tyme was founded þe abbay of Stratforth Langthorne, wpythin foure myles of London, by a knyght called syr wylliam de Mountfychet.

The cccciii. Chapter.

When þe empyesse had won this victorie, and had committed þe kyng to warde as befoze ye haue harde she was not therewith a litle exalted, but thought in her mind that she was in a surety of the possession of the hole realme. But she was disceyued, for Kent toke partye wpyth kynge Stephan. But yet after thys victorie thus obteyned, the empyesse came vnto Wynchester, and after to Wiltone, to Drenfozde, to Reading and to saynt Albons, into the which Cyties and towne she was receyued with all honoure.

And fynally she came to London for to enter the state of the lande. At her whiche there beynge, the Quene made assidue labour for the deliuerie of the kyng her husbande, promysynge that he shulde surrender the lande into her possession, and he to become a religiouse man, othe ellys a pylgryme to hys lyues ende. But all was in vayne, for she myghte purchase no grace as then vppon no manner of condicions.

The citezens of London also made greute labour, that they myghte vse the lawys of Edward the confessor as they were graunted by wylliam Conqueroure, and not the Lawys of her father, whiche were of moze straitnesse. Wherof in no wyse they of her

counsaille myght haue any graunte.

For this the citezens were discontented, and knowynge that the countrey of Kent wolde strength their partye, ordeyned to haue taken her. But she beynge therof warned, departed in haste, and left behinde her hir sone of housholde, and so fledde vnto Drenfozde, where she abode her people, the whiche was deuyded and scatteryd. And in this whyle she sent vnto Dauid kynge of Scottes and her vnckle for to ayde her, the whiche in all haste came vnto her, and so yode to Wynchester, where she layde spege to the byshoppes to wyse, the whiche the kynges brother at that tyme helde wpyth strengthe.

Then the quene with ayde of her frendes, of Kentyemen and other, made a stronge hoste, wherof was capitayne a knyght named Gylliam de Wyke. When the empyesse hard of þe great strengthe of the quene, and saw that her owne mynysshed rather then encreasyd, she fledde secretly and escaped vnto Glouceter. And earle Robert her brother was taken soone after, and put in prysen. Then Dauid kyng of Scottes hearing of this, returned into Scotlande.

Then meanes was made vpon either syde, for deliuerie & exchaunge of the prysoners, so that fynally it was agreed that the kyng shulde be deliuered for earle Robert. But of this agreement were concluded much sorow was wroughte wpythin thys realme. For the Empyesse pylled and spoyled on her partye, and the quene by promyses and manaces borrowed & toke vpon the other syde, & the souloyours sale and extorponed vpon both parties, so that riche men were made needy, and the poore were oppressed.

In this meane whyle the empyesse

C.ii. retur-

A great hoste gathered by þe quene wife of kyng Dauid.

retourned agayne to Orenfozde and
bystayled and manned it in her beste
maner.

The deliue-
rance of kyng
Stephan.

Then lastely the kyng was deli-
uered vpon holy Roode daye in har-
uest, and sone after he belepyed Oren-
fozde wth a stronge siege, from þ^e tyme
of Wilhelmus vnto the selson of chryst-
mas, at which time and season the em-
pyesse v^sed a newe gyle for constryn-
te and necessitye of bytyle.

In that time was greates plente of
snowe fallen vpon the grounde, and
the froste was therewith so great, that
Champs wth other greates ryuers
were then frozen ouer, so that man &
hoise myght passe the water vpon the
yle. The empyesse then constrained of
nede: as befoze is sayde, apparayled
her and her compaigne in whyte clo-
thyng, whiche a farre of apred lyke
the snowe, and so vpon a plumpe go-
punge togyther as nere as they myght
escaped the daunger of theyr sone, and
so came to Walsyngfozde. And thens
in p^{ro}cesse of tyme, she wth a small
compaigne departed, and retourned
fynallye into Roymandye vnto her
husbande.

The maner
of the flyenge
of þ^e empyesse
and her hoise

So soone as þ^e empyesse was thus
departed from Orenfozde, the towne
was yelden vnto the kyng, where the
kyng had much of the empyesse stuf-
fe as wel harnes as other stuf-
fe of hou-
sholde. The he entendid to haue pur-
sued her. But thynge were brought
vnto hym, þ^e Ranulfe earle of Chester
wth an hoise of Walsmen was co-
mynge towarde him. But by mediacy-
on of frendes thys Ranulfe in þ^e ende
to the kyng was reconcyled, and was
with hym agreed.

About this tyme & season as it is
testified of dyuers authoures, the Je-
wes vppon Easter euen crucified a
chylde named william, in the cytie of

How the Je-
wes crucified
a chylde on E-
ster, euen in þ^e
cytye of Roym-
mandye.

Roywiche. And in the tyme of Henry
the seconde, aboute the fyrte yere of
hys reygne as sayeth Polycronicon,
they crucified an other at Gloucestre
In the .xxii. yere of his reygne, kyng
Stephan was agayne crowned at Lin-
colne. And soone after he toke frome
Ranulphe earle of Chester the castell
of Lyncolne.

Robert earle of Gloucestre made al-
so newe warre vpon the kyng, & had
the better of the kyng at Wiltone, so
that the kyng was lyke to haue fal-
len in Robertes daunger. But yet the
kyng escaped wth muche payne.
And there was taken a Baron of the
kynges named sir William Baretel
for whose deliuerie the kyng gaue
after to the sayde Earle, the castell of
Shybourne. And that done the said
earle Robert began to foude a strong
castell at faryngdone. Wherof the
kyng beyng enfourmed, assembled
hys knyghtes and sped hym thither-
ward, by meane wherof þ^e woike was
for that tyme impeached & let.

In the fyftene yere of the reygne
of kyng Stephan, the ryuer of Cha-
mps was so strongly ouerfrozen, þ^e
hoise and carre passed ouer vpon the
yle.

The ryue
of Champe
ouerfrozen

In the .xxii. yere, Ranulphe earle
of Chester dyed, that was surnamed
Gercious, and was the iiii earle after
the conqueste, and hys sonne Hughe
was earle after him, which was a ma-
n of great strength and vertue. And in
the same yere, as wytnesseth Guydo
and other, dyed Giffrey Plantage-
net husbnde of Holde the empyesse.
After whose death, Henry Hoyt man-
tell that was þ^e sonne of the laide Ge-
frey and Holde, was made Duke of
Angeous & Roymandye. The which
in fewe yeres after married Elanour
the daughter of the earle of Poytow,
the

the whiche Elanout was before ma-
ried vnto Lewis kyng of Fraunce
and from hym deuorced for nenesse
of bloude, when he hadde receyued of
her. ii. daughters named Mary and
Elys, as wytnessyth the frenche cro-
micle. And so this Henry was earle of
Angious by his father, duke of Ro-
mandy by his mother, & earle of Boy-
towse by his wyfe.

It was not longe after, that Eu-
stace, the sonne of kyng Stephan
wyth ayde of the frenche kyng, war-
red vppon Henry duke of Ro-
mandy, the whiche after some wyters
was ymagyned by Stephan hys fa-
ther, to the entent to let or stoppe hym
that he shuld not come into England
to claime his inheritaunce. But duke
Henry defended hym so knyghtly, &
the sayde Eustace wanne thereby lytle
honoure or profyte.

In olde cronicle Meteth, that king
Stephan intended to haue crowned
the sayde Eustace his sonne kyng of
Englande by his dayes, but the bps-
shoppes of Englande refused & dede
by commaundement of the bishoppe
of Rome.

In the .xxviii. yere, the kyng layde
syege vnto the castelles of Awebe-
ry, or walingforde, and of warwyke
or warwel, the which had ben kept by
the empysshe frenches from the time of
her departynge vnto that daye, & ho-
ped of rescous by Henry duke of Ro-
mandy. But the kyng then wan & ca-
stelles of Awebery & of warwel, and
walingforde defended the holders tyll
the comynge of Henry the duke. The
which in the ende of the sayde yere w a
great armie entred Englande, & fyrst
wan the castell of Walsynburge.

And thens he poded to London, &
wanna the towre, as muche by polly-
ty & by saye promys as by strength.

And suche stuffe of hitale & armour
as he fande therein, he sent to waling-
forde. And that done he wente to the
towne of walingforde, and wan such
holders as were there aboute.

Then king Stephan with his po-
wer dreyue towarde the duke, and fy-
nallye by meane of medyatours, as
Thibaud archbishoppe of Caunter-
burie and other, bothe prynces to co-
mon of peace, met nere vnto the water
of Wyne or Tyne. But as fast as some
laboured to haue peace, so faste other
laboured to haue warre, so that at the
communitacyon the peace was not
concluded.

After the kyng and the duke were
departed, the kyng poded towarde
Epswyche in Suff. And the Duke
toke the waye to Wywelbury, where
he wan the castell of the sayde towne.
From thens the duke wente to Not-
hyngham and wan the towne. Wher
fore the souldpours that helde the ca-
stell, seynge that the towne toke par-
te with the duke, brake out vpon the
night, and fired the towne and byente
a greete parte therof.

In this while dyed and was bryd-
ned Eustace the sonne of kyng Ste-
phan, and was buryed at Feuerham
in Kente in the abbay that hys father
before had buylded.

Eustace the
sonne of Ste-
phan dyed
and.

Thibaud archbishop of Caun-
terbury left not to labour & conclude
the peace betwene the kyng & the duke,
and endeuoured hymself therein so dy-
lgently, with the assente of other,
that in the yere folowynge, the peace
was concluded vpon dyuerse condi-
cions. Wherof one was, that the kyng
shulde contynue as kyng durynge
his lyfe, and immediatly after the con-
clusyon of this peace, the sayde Henry
shulde be proclaymed in all the chiefe
Cyties and townes of Englande for
C.iii. hys

A peace then
was betwene
the kyng and
the duke.

hepye apparante, and be kyng after the deth of the sayde Stephan, and the kyng shoulde take hym for his sonne of adopyon and ryghtful hepye vnto the crowne. To the whiche countauntes iustly to be holden, the kyng was fyrste swozne, and after his lordes spirytual and tempozall, and so podede bothe vnto London, where they were royally receyued. And when the kinge had felsted the duke, and geuen to hym xijche gyftes, he toke leaue of the kyng, and so retourned into Normandy, as assymeth the sayde author the flour of histozpes. Howebeit the Cronycle of Englande saith, that the accorde was made vpon dyuysyon of the lande betwene them, that is to meane that both shoulde reygne togyther, and epyther of theym to enioye halfe the lande. But howe that diuysyon was made, or whiche parte of the lande eueriche of them shoulde holde, no mencio therof is made. And the former accorde shuld be as aboue is sayde, concluded. viii. dayes folowing the Epiphanye of our lord in the towne of Drenford. And the king died in the moneth of October folowinge, when he had reigned. xviij. yeres full and odder monethes, & was entered in the foresayde abbay of Feurtham.

Of dyuers authours as Ranulfe and other, it is recorde that this Stephan lyued in great veracion & trouble all the terme of his reygne. It is saide also that this Stephan married Holde or Hawde the daughter of Mary, the whiche was the daughter of Henry the fyrste, and countesse of Boloine, by whome he claimed the tytle to be crowned, as by the yonger daughter of Henry the fyrst, and Henry Mozte mantel claymed by the elder. But after mooste certenty of wyters, this Stephan was sonne of Eustace

earle of Boloigne, and of Mary syster vnto Holde that was married vnto Henry the fyrste, whiche Holde and Mary wer daughters of Margarete wyfe of Malcolm kyng of Scottes, which Margarete was syster to Edgare Chyrling, and daughter of Edward the ouriawe, that was the sonne of Edmund Ironsyde.

Then the eldest syster Holde, bare Holde the empyesse by Henry the fyrste. And Holde the empyesse, daughter of Henry the fyrste, hadde by her seconde husbunde Gestepe Plantagenet Henry the seconde. And so by Henry Mozte mantel or Henry the second retourneth the bloude of the Barons to the crowne of Englande, and so it dped by Stephan, but mooste conuenlye by Henry the fyrste, as by the dyscent of his mother. By whiche reason it foloweth, that the bloude of William conqueroure continued but. lxx. yeres, yf it be accompted from the fyrst yere of William conqueroure, vnto the laste yere of Henry the fyrste.

This kyng Stephan at the requeste of Holde his wyfe, builded in the yere of grace. xi. hundred. xl. the abbey of Coggeshale in Essex, and sette therein white munkes. Also about the same tyme, he founded the abbaye of Feurtham in Kent, where he nowe royoally resteth. And the thyrde he founded in Furnes in Lancashyre, and all be garnished with munkes of Cisteaux order, and dyed as before is sayde without yssue of his bodye.

France.

The. cccxiii. Chapter.



Emps the eyghthe of that name, and sonne of Lewis the grete, began his reygne ouer the frencharien in the yere of our lord. xi. C. and. xvi. and the

The beache
ende of kyng
Stephan.

The beache
of William
conqueroure
peres our
the mile.

The seventh parte

the fyrst yere of Stephan then king of Englande. This also is called the younger Lewis, in whose begynnyng Iohannes de tempoibus dyed.

*of one that
hath. xii. yeres
hys yeres*

Thys Ihon was sometyme a squyre in the house of Charlys the conquerour, the whiche lyued ouer. iiii. hundred yeres, for þe whiche cause he was named Ihon of tyme, as he þe myght remember thinges done of olde tyme passed. This Lewis at þe tyme of hys fathers death, was in the country of Guyan: for to receaue the dowter of hys wyfe Elianoure, as befoze in the storye and seconde chapter of kyng Stephan is touched. But when he heard of the deth of his father, he sped hym into Fraunce. Where after the necessaryes for the weale of hys realm ordeyned, he maryed hys wyues sister named Alys, vnto Arnould erle of Vermandoye. After whiche marriage solenysed, tidynge was brought vnto hym, that the Chyrtien people beyng in the holye lande as warrours vpon the Turkes and Saracens, were distressed and ouerthrowen and dyuerse stronge holdes from the taken and wonne.

Wherefoze, by the exhortacion of þe Monke Barnarde, whiche at thys tyme is called B. Barnard, the sayde Lewis, with also Contradus the. iiii. of that name then Emperoure of Almanye, with Alphon then kyng of Spayne, with dyuerse other nobles of Fraunce and other prouynces, toke vpon them the crosse, and prouided for the expedycon of that iourneie, in the. iiii. yeres of hys regne after some wyters. But of the takinge of hys iourney dyuerse wyters hold dyuerse oppinions, so that the doubte resteth betwene the yere of oure lord xi. hundred and. xl. and the yere of. xl. hundred and. l.

301

*how Lewis
toke hys dowter
into þe
ly lande.*

When all thynges were redy for that iourneie, the kyng, the quene, with the flour of the chivalry of Fraunce set forthwarde vpon that iourneie, and came in pprocess of tyme vnto Constantinople the noble, where he met with Contradus þe Emperour, and Alphons kyng of Spayne. Whom the prynces Emanuel then Emperoure of Constantinople the noble receaued to penyons and made to them by hys outwarde countenaunce lounge and frendlye chere, and promysed vnto them ayde in that iourneie both of vytapill and also for guydes for the nexte and surest way. But he contrary to hys promyse dyd dysapoynt them, & nothing ayded them.

*The dyscreit
of Emanuel,
Emperour of
Constantynople.*

For he deliuered vnto them meale myngled with lime, wherof growe much harme to the Chyrtien hooste after. And also he assygned vnto the suche guydes, as broughte theym in to places and countreys of sterlyte and other daunger, so that lastlye the French kyng with great dyspylulte and losse of his men, came vnto the cytye of Danas, and beleped it with a stronge spege: the whiche he assauted and enpayred very sore, and was lyke lye to haue won it, yf he had assaunted the place styll where he began. But by counsaile of some false chyrtien men, the whiche as wytnesseth Peter Dystrope and other had taken mede of the Turkes, the kyng by thei counsaile remoued the ordynance from the weker place vnto the stronger. Where after diuerse assautes made, the kyng conceaued well þe he was dysceaued. A cause of thys treason as sayth the forsayde Peter was thys. The Erle of Flaunders, which by diuerse experymentes saw þe cytye was lyke to be gotten, made supplicacion to the kyng and so the lord

des, that he myghte haue the rule of the ctye at such time as it were wone the whyche to him was graunted.

Whereof beyng aduertysed byuers Surpous of that countrey bozne, disdained that a straunger shulde be lord of theyr inheritaunce, and for that cōdescended and agreed to that treason, by mean wherof the chrystien pynces lost theyr trauel.

Then the chrystien pynces seing þat they were thus deluded, toke theyr aduice howe they myghte contynue theyr pylgrymage vnto the holie cite of Hierusalem. But in thys counsell soulded and quickened so many oppynions, that eache was contraryous vnto other. By meane wherof the emperoure was so discontented, that he toke leue of the frenche kynge and other, and so returned into hys owne countrey. But the frenche kynge tarried there in that coastes a yere after and dyd there but lytle, worthy anye memoire. Albeit, of thys vyage the frenche boke maketh a great & longe processe, touchyng the wyngyng of the ctye of Antioche, wth hys beyng and councelles keepyng wthyn Hierusalem, and other thynges there reherced. But for I se the matter dysagreable to other wyrters, and also thynke that much thereof is fained, I therfore passe it ouer, howbeit, that to some personnes suche fables bene full pleasaunte to here. Wherefore all such I rempne vnto the sayd frenche cronicle, & so what I shall followe the authour Spaldus, & which wth other testifyen, that Lewis in hys returne towarde fraunce wared spcke for the longe forberynge of his wyfe.

Wherefore by the aduice of phisicians & also of hys byshoppes, he was counsayled to take a wench because

hys wyfe was so farre fro hys. But the kynge wthstode that counsaile and sayde that him had bene leuer to be spcke & dye of Goddes hand, then to lyue in spouse byekynge, & offende hys lawes. And so the kynge put him selfe to the merce of God and receaued helth shortly after. Also it is told of hys that he vled to fast euery fydays byede and water, and by hys fastyngs he was counsayled that he shulde leue that fast for weakyng of hys selfe, and fede a. C. of pooer men euery fydape, the whyche vnto God shulde be muche moare acceptable.

To thys he answered and sayde, we wold gladly fede so many pooer men or mo, but our fastyng wll we not byeke. For wthoute the profyte that it doth vnto the soule, it profyterh also ryghte muche to the bodye. For the purgacion and rest of one dape, helpeth much to put of the superfluytis of the other, and also yt maketh the harper appetyte.

When Lewis was returned into fraunce, for what happe it is of the frenche cronicle made doubteful, he was from Elproure hys wyfe deuorced, of the whyche he hadde receaued before two daughters as before is touched, the whyche in processe of tyme folowinge, was maryed vnto Henry duke of Normandy, wherby mariage was a newe occasyon of the warre betwene Englands and fraunce. For the landes of Poytwe, wth Gascoyne and Guyan, Lewis claymed by hys former posselpon, & Henry by reasone of the matrage of the sayde Elproure, as heye to the sayde landes. Of the which warre shalbe shewed in the booke of the sayde Henry followinge.

After whyche deuoyte thus made, kynge Lewis maryed the youngest daughter

The continence and chastity of Lewis's wife.

The profit of fastyng.

How Lewis was deuorced.

How Lewis was married.

The seventh part

daughter of the kynge of Spayne that was named Constance, and she dyed of her fyfthe chyld. Then for so muche as kynge Letys hadde none heyr male, by counsaile of hys barons he maryed the thyrde wife, the whiche was the yongeste daughter of Chybaud Earle of Bloys, & was named Alis. This sayde Erle dyed, and left after hym.iiii. sonnes and.ii. daughters. The eldest sonne named Henry was Earle of Troyes, the seconde named Chybaud was Earle of Blois the thyrde named Stephan was Erle of Sancerre or Sancerre, and the fourth named Wyllyam was archbishoppe of Narbonne. The eldeste of the daughters was duchesse of Burgoyne the seconde was countesse of Barre, the thyrde was maryed fyfthe to the duke of Buel, and after to a knyght named sir Wyllyam de Goer, the.iiii. was counesse of Berche, and the fyfthe as befoze is sayde quene of Fraunce whiche was a womannes garnyshed wth manye vertues as the story declareth.

The.cccc. Chapter.

In a processe of tyme after this solempnyfacion of this marriage, complaynte was broughte befoze the kyng of the Carles of Cleremounte & Dup or Dupll, sonne of the duke befoze rehersed, and of the Earle of Blomet, that they shulde spole and wast the churches and landes to the said churches belongynge. For the whiche dedes the kyng commaunded the sayd.iii. Carles to warde, but not wthout warre and sheddyng of bloude.

And after the subduyng of the said thre Erlys, a knight or a great ma of myght called Wyllyam the Earle of Chalou, wth a company of tyauntes assembled for to robbe and spole

the church of saynt Peter of Cluny in Burgoyne. Wherof herynge the prestes and mynisters of the churche, to the entent to myttigat and to appease the cruelte of the sayde tyauntes, dyd vpon them the oymantes of the sayde church, and yode agayn theym in processe, with a great company them folowynge of the people of the towne and the countrey thereabout in peasable and charitable wyse.

But when the sayde tyauntes approached vnto the sayde company, without compassyon and pitye, as Curres ranne vpon chrysten men, or with lesse pitye so ranne they vpon the prestes and other, and spoyled them of all the sayde oymantes and flem of that company to the number of fyue C. or mo, and after spoyled the sayde church, of suche stuffe as was there in leste.

It was not longe after or kynge Letys hadde wyttynge of this cruel deade. Wherof in aduengynge the churche, he gathered a conuynce power and sped hym thether.

But the sayde Wyllyam erle of Chalou herynge of the kynges comynge fledde the countrey, so that the kyng myghte haue no certayn knowledge where he became. Wherfor the kyng entred & sealed hys landes, and gaue the mopty there of to the duke of Burgoyne as chiefe lord of that soyle, and the other halfe he gaue vnto the Earle of Fleuers, to whose auncetie in tyme passed the sayde mopty appartayned. And that done he commaunded inquirye to made of hys accessaries the pcedensons or pcedendats of the whiche he punished by dyuerse manner of tormentes and beathes, to the great contentacion of the countrey.

When the kyng hadde thus fynished this vyage and was returned into

A bloke more
from.

into France, soone after was know-
ledge brought vnto hym, that þe Bur-
gonyons & men of the towne of Ver-
deley, rebelled agayn the hed church
or abbay of that towne, and intended
to haue done some bylance to the ab-
bot and munches of the same, where-
fore the kynge sped hym thither in al
the hast. But for they sauegarde the
Monkes were compelled to fortifye
the church, and to defende them by
force of armes, so that betwene them
and the Burgonyons many an arba-
laster and stone was shot and caste.
And for the kyng myght not so hast-
ly forsaye hym of hys souldyers, he
therfore sente vnto þe Erle of Fleuers
by whose meane as to the kynge was
shewed this ryot began, comman-
dunge him that he shuld se this ryot
appeased, and that the church of Ver-
deley were restored of suche harmes
as to theym was done by the inhaby-
tauntes of the towne. But of this co-
mmandement the Erle set but lytle, so
that the buegeses persevered in theyr
erroure. Wherefore the abbot sent a-
gayn to the kynge, beseechyng hym
of hys moost gracious ayde and so-
cours. Then the kynge hearpyng of
the Cartles dysobedience, was there-
with greatly dyspleased, and suspec-
ted the Erle to be partye in the cause
and sped hym the faster thetherward.
But when the Erle was informed
of the kynges commynge he somber-
ly fered, and met with the kynge at a
place called Bozet, and there demea-
ned hi in such wyse, that the kyng for-
gaue hys offence. Then he promysed
that the kynges pleasure shulde be
fulfylled in all thynges as he hadde
before comaunded, with moze as pe-
lyked hym to deuse. Upon whyche
promyse so made, he commaunded
that the Burgonyons shulde fynde

restrayne theym of that rebellyon a-
gayn the church, and that they shuld
newly be swoyne to be obedyent vnto
the abbot & vnto hys successours
as theyr pcedecessours had bene, and
ouer that for the hurtes and harmes
that they had done to þe place at that
leson, they shuld pay to the sayd abot
and conent. xl thousand sous. 3 sous
is in value after sterlyng mony. i. 6.
ob, so that. xl. thousand sous amoun-
teth in sterlyng mony. iii. hundred
and. lxxv. pounce. After whyche ende
thus made, the kynge returned into
France.

It was not longe after þe kyng
receaued of quene Ilys hys wyfe a
sonne, and named it Philyppe. But
for that kyng Lewis had made many
pylgrimages, and vied many wayes
of charite, in geuyng of almes and
otherwyse, for to haue a sonne to be
his heyre, therefore he surnamed this
chylde A dieu done, a chylde geuen of
God. Then this Lewis for he intol-
erable dedes of the Jewes whych in
those dayes hadde great inhabytyng
within the land of France, and vied
vserie and slepyng of Chyristen chyl-
dren, he punished manye by death, &
manye he banished hys land, but yet
many remayned.

Of this Lewis dedes is lytle mo-
re cronckled, except wher hys sonne Phi-
lyppe was of the age of. xiii. yeres,
hys father caused him to be crowned
and resigned to hym all the rule of
the land, and dyed the yere folow-
yng at Paris in the moneth of Oc-
tober, in the yere of grace. x. hundred
and. lxxv. By whyche reason he reyg-
ned, to taken from his fathers death
to hys owne, vpon. xiii. yeres, and
was rtyshely entered by þe meane of
hys last wyfe at þe monastary of Bar-
bell, the whyche he founded in hys
yonge

The mony
erly mony, in
somes mak. 6.
d. sterlyng, and
after that
mony is made
be mony in
er. 4. xxv. p.
tundes, xl. p.
lynges & d.
pound sterlyng
mony.

The surname
of kyng Lewis
is chylde.

ponge dayes. After whose death the
laid quene Alis. adorned hys sepul-
ture in the moste richest manner, with
golde, spinaer, and pprecious gemmes
vpo whose tombe was grauen these
two verses folowynge, as a counsayl
let to vnto hys sonne phyllip.

*Nunc superes tu, qui super es successus, honoris
Degenet es, si degeneris a laude prioris*

Whych versys are to be vnderstand
as after foloweth.

20 Some take good hede, thou that
doest ouerlyue.

Hym that in honoure and vertue did
excelle.

Se thou alter not, nor thy selfe de-
pyue,

But folowe hym, whych was of ho-
noure the well.

Foz if thou do not, menne shal of the
tell.

Thou arte degenerate and gro'wen
out of kynde.

Thy progenytours laude haupnge
nothyng in mynde.

Anglia.

The. cccxvi. Chapter.



Enty the second
of that name and
sonne of Gestepe
Platagenet erle
of Ingeon, and
of Holdes & Em-
priele daughter
of Henry & syt
begā hys reigne
ouer the realme of Englands, in the
moneth of October the yere of oure
Lorde God. xi. hundred and. lb. and
the .xix. yere of Actys the. viii. then
kyng of fraunce.

Thys Henry was some delected
of face and bryde of bryste, horte of
bodre, and therewith fat, the whych
to aswage, he tooke the lesse of men-

tes and dymkes, and exercised much
huntinge. He was resonable of spech
and well lettered and wyse, and also
noble in knyghthod, wise in counsayl
and dyed to mych destynes he was al
so free & lyberall to straungers, and
harde, and holdinge frome hys sam-
lyers and seruauntes. And whom he
loued enterely, or hated, harde it was
to retorne hym to the contrarie.

He loued rest and peate, to the ende
he wyghte the moze folowe hys delec-
tacyon and pleasure, with mo. byres
reherfed by. Gyalde the whych foz
length I passe ouer.

Thys Henry yet, as wytnesse the
Kanniphe, was not all baten of ver-
tues, foz he was of so great courage
ousnes, that he wolde often sape that
all the worlde suffreth not to a cora-
gious herte. And he increased hys
herytage so myghtely, that he wanne
Irelande by strength, and toke Wil-
lyam kyng of Scottis, and toynd
that kyngedome to hys owne. From
the south Ocean to the north yslan-
des of Orypes, he closed all the lan-
des as it were vnder one pryncypate
and spard so largelpe hys Emprye, &
meine rede of none of hys progeny-
tours that had so many prouynces &
countries vnder theyr dominion and
rule. Foz besyde the realme of Eng-
lande, he had in hys rule Normandy
Gascopn, and Gulton, Angeou & Chy-
non. And he made subiecte to hym
Fluene and other lades. And by his
wyfe, he obtayned as het ryghte the
mountes and hylls of Spayne cal-
led motes Pirani. Of & whiche wyfe
Elynour by name, deuoyced, as befoz
is sayde, frome the. viii. Actys kyng
of fraunce, he receaued. vi. sonnes &
thre daughters. Of the sonnes fyue
were named Wylliam, Henry, Ry-
charde, Godfrey, and Jhon, The el-
dest

dest of the maydens hight **M**olde or Maude, was maryed to the duke of of Baron, the seconde Elpanoute to the kynge of Spayne, and the thyrde named Jane, to Wyllyam kynge of Seyple.

The fortune
of Henry the
seconde.

Thys Henry was prosperous in hys begynnyng, and vnfortunat in hys ende, and specially in the laste v. yeares of hys reygne. For in the fyrste of those v. yeares, his strength beganne to mynyshe, the seconde yere he losse a vyage in Irelande, the thyrde he losse Aluerne agayne the kynge of Fraunce, the fourthe yere he lost Butrypan, and the fyfte yere he losse the cyte of Cenomenca and Turon wth many holdes to theym belongynge.

Thys Henry the seconde ascertainment of the death of Stephan, spedde hym into Englande, and was crowned the sondaye befoze Chyristmasse dave of Theobalde archebyschope of Caunterbury in westminster church

Thomas Becket.

The fyrste yere of hys reygne he subdued Irelande. And soone after Thomas Becket, whiche after was Byschop of Caunterbury, was made Chauncelloure of Englande. Thys kynge cast downe dyuerse castells, that befoze in tyme of kynge Stepha were buylded, other for dyspleasure of the owners, or elles for the feare they shulde be strengthened agayn him. And also he banyshe manye of the Lordes and gentelmenne that kynge Stephan had in hys fauoure.

Cohens in the
synnamente.

Aboute the thyrde yere of hys reygne in the mooneth of October, were sene in the synnamente two sunnes, and in the Moone was sene a redde crosse.

But of thys wonder whethe the authoure of Cronica conicarum and sayeth that aboute thys tyme in

Italye in the mooneth of Novembre appeared. iii. Sunnes by the space of thye wyndes in the West, and the yere folowynge appered thye Moones, wherof the myddle Moone hadde a redde crosse ouer what the face.

Whych there is noted for a prodgy or a token of the scysme, that after el amonge the Cardynalles for the election of the B. of Rome Alexander the thyrde, whych scysme by meane of the fyrste Frederike then Emperoure, endured almost. xx. yeares.

Also aboute this tyme, Adrian the fourth of that name was. b. of Rome an Englysheman bozne in the towne of saynt Albion of whome is moze declared in the begynnyng of the. xii. chapyter of the. vii. booke of Polycronicon.

Also in thys yere the kynge wente wth a stronge armpe into Wales, and after he hadde sette that countrey in an order and quyet, he buylded a stronge castel at Rutland, and founded the abbay of Basingewerk

Chrysos
tomy as
Wals.

In the. vi. yere of hys reygne, this Henry maryed hys seconde sonne Henry, vnto the kynges daughter of Fraunce, that is to meane Lewis the viii. whiche the sayde Lewys receaued of hys seconde wyfe named Constance the daughter of the kynge of Spayne, as he befoze haue hearde in the seconde chapter of the story of the sayde Lewys. Thys mayden was named Margaret. By reason of which maryage, was appeased the warre that was begonne betwene Fraunce and Englande for the landes of Foytwe and other, the whych kynge Henry helde by reason of hys wyfe. In the whiche warre muche harme was doone, and moze wolde haue ensued, if yt hadde not by thys meane haue bene agreed.

In

The ſeuenth parte.

317.

Thomas
Becket.

In þ. vii. yere of his reigne, Theo-
balde archbyſhoppe of Caunterbury
dyed, and Thomas Becket chauncel-
ler of Englande was archebyſhoppe
after him, of whome moze ſhal ſolow.

In the ſame yere king Henry with
a ſtronge hoſte rode to Scotlande,
and made ſo cruel warre vpon Wyl-
lam kyng of that lande, that laſtely
he was taken, & dyd to the ſayde Hen-
ry recompensacion, in yeldyng vnto
hym the cytie of Carleill, the caſtell of
Bamburgh, the newe caſtell vpon
Tyne, with dyuers other holdes, and
a greate parte of Northumberlande,
the which he had wonne from the boi-
deters. And after feltrie and homage
done by the ſayde Wyllyam vnto the
kyng, and a certayne ſumme of mo-
ney by hym promysed wythin. ii. mo-
nethes ſolowynge, the kyng ſuffered
hym to go at large.

But another authour ſayth, that
the kyng of Scottys was not taken
but ſtrongely beſieged in a towne of
caſtel. ſo that fynally he was forced to
agree to the ſoſeſaide couenauntes.

Caunterbury
by neg-
ligence.

In the. vii. yere, the cytie of Ca-
terbury was ſired by negligence, and
a greate parte therof byente. And in
that ſeaſon, the archbyſhop Thomas
beganne to replie agayne the kinges
mynde, for thynges that the kyng did
exerceyſe agayne the lybertyes of the
churche.

The. cccxvii. Chapter.



In the ninth yere, the
kyng called a par-
lyamente at North-
hampton, where he
intended þ. reforma-
cion of many prin-
ciples that the clar-
ge hadoe. Amonge whiche this was
one, that althoughe one of the clergie

hadde committed felony, murder, or
treason, yet myght not the kyng put
hym to death as he dyd the laye men.
The whiche thing wyth many other,
the kyng thoughte to redreſſe in the
ſayde parlyamente.

But Thomas Becket then arch-
byſhoppe of Caunterbury hearynge
that the kyng went aboute ſuche thin-
ges, reſpyed hym vnto his face. And
perceyvinge that he myghte not pre-
uaile agaynſte the kyng, gate hym
ouer ſtrapte to Alexander then byſ-
hop of Rome there complayninge of
the kyng, what inturpes and wyon-
ges he wolde do vnto holpe churche,
continuyng there and in fraunce,
the ſpace of. vi. yeres.

In the fourtene yere of his reigne,
the kyng crowned Henry his eldeſt
ſonne then lyving, kyng of England
at Weſtmiſter, to the ende he myght
haue full power & authoryte to rule
this lande and the people of the ſame
while his father was occupied in Ro-
mandye and other countreys, where
his landes laye.

The coronaci-
on of Henry
the. iii. eldeſt
ſonne of Hen-
ry the. ii.

In much of this ſeaſon, the kyng
ſent ouer byſhoppes, and proctours,
to complayne vpon Thomas Becket
to the byſhoppe of Rome for wel nere
all the byſhoppes of Englande were
agayne hym.

In the. xvi. yere of þ. reigne of king
Henry, Letops the kyng of fraunce
agreed kyng Henry & Thomas Bec-
ket, the kyng then deynge in Ro-
mandye. Vppon whiche agremente
Thomas Becket came to Caunter-
bury, and there ſo reſpyng hym, ſent
for ſuch perſones as had ſpoyled and
taken awaye his ſubſtance, aduert-
ſynge theym by ſayde meanes to re-
ſtoze the ſayde goodes.

But when he ſawe that he myght
not haue his goodes by ſaſte meanes

D. i. he

he then vsed compulсарes, and denounced them accursed but yf they re-
sioyed hys goodes agayne by a cer-
taine daie.

Wherewith þ partyes beyng agre-
ued, sayled ouer vnto the kyng into
Normandye, & shewed vnto hym gre-
uous complayntes, and not one whit
more greuous then the cause or mat-
ter requyred. For the whiche the king
sayde in open audyence of his knygh-
tes, that yf he had any good knygh-
tes aboute hym, he had bene aduen-
ged of that traittoure longe or þ tyme

At the tyme of whiche wordes vt-
teryng, was present syr william Byr-
ton, syr Hugh Monypell, syr william
Tracy, and syr Regnolde spyr Ayle.
Whiche foure knyghtes takynge ad-
uise eche of them of other, of one wyll
and mynde toke shyppe and say-
led to Douer, and so vnto Caunter-
burie, where the fiftte daie of Chy-
stmas they slewe the sayde trayterouse
byshoppe (whych a lptell befoze had
accursed both the kyng and all other
that eyther had taken and kepte anye
of hys goodes or ellys othertwyle mo-
lested him, and this he did in an open
pulpit and greute audyence). In the
yere of our loyde a. M. C. lxx. as appe-
reth by these verses.

Anno millesimo, centesimo, septuagesimo,
Anglorum primas, corrui esse Thomas.

The whiche is to vnderstande in
our vulgare as thus.

¶ The yere, to taken from Chyestes
incarnacyon.

A thousande an hundred and seven-
tye therunto.

In englande a primate of greute ab-
hominacyon,

Was slayne with swearde, Thomas
that wolde not do,

The kynges beste, which wylled him

to go fro,

The popes churche, and lybertyes of
the same,

Wherby of trayterye, he wonne a per-
petuall fame.

In the xviij. yere of his regne, þ <sup>The kyng
his journey
into Irelande</sup>
kyng made a tourney into Irelande,
where, with great traualle he subdu-
ed the Irish. And after with helpe of
the primate and byshop of Armache,
he refourmed the maner of the dwel-
lers and people of that countrey, and
that in thye thynges specially. Firste
in culyng and orderyng of the church
by the curates, & howe they shulde or-
der their deuine seruyce, and minister
the sacramēt of matrimony as it was
in englande & other chrystien regyons
The seconde was, howe that the laye
people shuld behaue them to their cu-
rates, and what wyse they shulde pay
and offer to god their tythes. The iii.
was for makynge of theyr testamētes.

This was ordeined that every mā
shulde make his laste wyl in ptesence
of his neighbours, or at leste cause it
to be red in theyr ptesence. And fyrste
he shuld taken what he ought, & to set
so much of his goodes. And if he had
a wyfe and chyldren, then the resydue
of his goodes, his dettis being payde
to be deuyded in thye partes, one to þ
wyfe, the second for the chyldren, & the
thyrde to be spent for the weale of the
souls. And yf he had no chyldren, then
the halfe to hys soule, and that other
halfe to his wyfe. And yf he hadde no
wyfe nor chyldren, then to dispose his
goodes at his pleasure.

In the retourn of the kyng out
of Irelande, was a wonder thyng
shewed vnto hym vppon Whytson-
daie, whych in the calender is called
Dominica in Albis. When the kyng
shulde take his horse, sodenly appa-
red

red vnto hym a man of pale & warme colour barefote, and in a whyte hyt-tell, the whyche bodely spake vnto the kynge in the language of ouche, and sayde syr kynge, Chyrtte greeteth the well, and his mylde mother Mary, with also Johan Baptys and Peter, and commaunde the strenghtely that no Marchettes, no scruple workers be holden vpon the sondays in þe landes of thy lordeshipp, outtake that longeth to dyspyng of meate.

And yf thou dooe after thys byddynge, I assure the that all thyng that thou begynnest to good entente or of good purpose, thou shalt byngeth to good ende. The kynge lyked nothyng thys speche, and sayde vnto the knyght that helde hys byddell. Albe of thys churle whether he haue dremed all this that he telleth. Wher vnto this man answered, whither I haue mette thys tale in my dreme or not, take thou hede well of my saying for and thou dooe not as I haue aduertised the, and amend thy life, thou shalt shortly heare suche thynges, that thou shalt be heuy for, vnto thy lyues ende.

The kynge toke all in game, and the man vanysht sodenly, that the kynge and hys knyghtes wonderyd of his departinge. Wherof when the kynge was warned, bothe of his first sodenly appearynge, and of hys departinge, the kynge sette it nere hys mynde, and entended to do some thynges after that manns counsaile. But howe yt was, yt hadde no forwarde.

After that Thomas Becket was slayne, the Ponkes by assente of the kynge, chace Rycharde Wyoure of Douer, the which was a man of euyl lyving, and wasted the goodes of the church moynatelly.

The ccccxiij. Chapter.



Beate the twenty pere of the kynges reygne, he purchased a dispensacyon for the voyage that before he had deso lempnely auowed before two cardynallys, to gooe into the holys lande, and to seuerde hys proper personne agaynst Chyrttes enemyes. The whyche dyspensacyon was graunted vpon one condycion, that he shoulde buylde thre abbayes in Englande.

In fulfyllynge wherof, the kyng put oute of the house of Waleham seculer chanons, and set there in theryn stude chanons regular. And for the seconde, he auoyded the monkes oute of the house of Bumbysburge, and sette there Penchons, that he hadde broughte frome beyonde the sea. And for the thirde he renewed courtely the charter house of Wytham beside Wylsburge.

By the whyche thre dedes, he thought hym selfe excused of his former promise. Then beganne his sonnes for to make warre vpon hym, the whiche were ayded by the Scottis the kynge and the two earles of Chester, and of Lyncolne.

The cause of whyche warre was after the declaracyon of some wyrters, for so muche as the kyng hadde empylsoned Elanoure hys wyfe, & kepte þe wyche Rosamonde agayne all good order.

But other saye yt was for certayne landes in Normandy, whiche by ryghte of the frenche kynge, Rycharde the thyrde, sonne of byrde and seconde then lyuyng, wolde haue taken from his father. Of thys warre speaketh nothyng the frenche cronycle.

Then as testifyeth Ranulfe, this
D. II. Inna;

innatural warre endured by þe terme
of two yeres, vnto the greates dysur-
baunce of the kyng & of hys realme,
till the king wth greates deuotion dys-
ted the graue of Thomas Becket.

After whiche pylgrimage was by
hym synysled in shorte processe af-
ter William kyng of Scottes, and
the two fozenamed earls of Chester
and Lyncolne, were taken at the ca-
stell of Anwyke. But yet he leste not
the compaignie of the fozenamed Ros-
amunde, vnto the whiche wench he
hadde made an house of wonder wo-
kyng, so that no creature, man oꝝ wo-
man myghte wyne to her but yf he
were instructe by the kyng, oꝝ suche
as were ryghte secrete with hym tou-
chyng that matere.

Thys house after some wyrters
was named Labacynthus, oꝝ Deba-
lus worke oꝝ house, which is to mean
after mooste expositours, an howse
wroughte lyke vnto a knotte in a gar-
den called a mase. But the common
fame telleth, that lastely the Quene
wanne to her by a clewe of threde oꝝ
spike, and delte with her in suche ma-
ner, that she lyued not longe after.

Of the maner of her deathe spea-
keth nothyng myne authoꝝ, but whē
she was deade, she was buryed at the
howse oꝝ monasterie of Goodestowe
besyde Orenfoꝝde, with these versys
vpon her tounbe.

Hic iacet in tūba Rosa mundi, sed non rosa munda

Non redolet sed olet, que redolere solet

The whiche versys, to our vnder-
standyng mape thus as foloweth be
englyshed and expownded.

The Rose of the worlde, but not
the cleane floure.

Is here nowe grauen, to whome
betwixt was sente.

In this graue ful darke nowe is
her bowye.

That by her lyfe was swete & redolēt
But nowe that she is frome thys
lyfe blente.

Thoughe she were swete, nowe
sowly doth she stynke,

I myrroure good for all that on
her thynke.

Longe tyme after the deathe of the
saide Rosamunde, in þe sayde abbay
was shewed a cofet of þe saide weches
of the length of .ii. foote, in which appe-
red fighting gyauntes, sterling of be-
tes, swimmyng of fshes, and flyeng
of fowlys.

In the fozesaide .xx. yere after the
opinion of Guido, þe kyng had the se-
cond monition of meding of his life,
by an Irishman that tolde vnto hym
many secret tokens, which the kyng
supposid no man hadde knowen but
hym selfe. But yet the kyng toke ly-
tell here therunto.

In the .xxi. yere of his reigne, af-
ter the fozesayd takyng of the Scot-
tyshe kyng & al. catlis, the .xi. daye be-
foze September, William kyng of
Scottes by assent of the lordes spyr-
tuall and tempozall, dyd homage to
kyng Henry at his cytie of York.

Where the saide William graunted
by his litters patentes, that he & hys
successours kynges of Scotlande,
shulde make theiꝝ homage & fydellite
vnto the kynges of England as often
as they shalbe necessarily requyred.

And in spgne and token of þe sub-
tecepon, the kyng of Scottes offered
his hatter & his sabell vpon the aultar
of saynt Peter in þe church of York.
Whiche for a remembraunce of þe dede
the saide hat & sabell were there kepte
many yeres after. And ouer þe lordes
of Scotlande swoꝝe, that yf they
kyng at any tyme wolde withdraue
hym from allegaunce, they wolde al-
aȝyle agayne hym, and be to hym as
enemyes

Here it maye
appeere that þe
warre be-
tweene these
Princes was
sturred by to
cause þe kyng
to confesse he
had done evyll
in puttyng to
death Tho-
mas Becket
that rebell,
which þe kyng
was doyne in
hādewrought
dayle mira-
cles, wherby
he was com-
pelled not on-
ly to confesse
that he dyed
an innocent,
but also to
wꝛowp and
reuerence him
as a saynte,
such was the
poppes bynd-
nelle and su-
persticion.

Howe þe
of Scottes
dyd homage
to kyng Hen-
ry the first

enemies, till he were returned vnto his sayth & keepinge of hys promise. And for the more strength of the saide composition, the kynge of Scottys came after to the kyng Henryes parliament holden at Northampton, and a nother session into Normandy.

Ranulphe monke of Chester sayeth that Lewis the. viii. of that name kynge of Fraunce, deliuered vnto kynge Henrye a daughter of hys to haue in guydynge, and to haue bene married vnto Rycharde his sonne, the which after the death of Rosamound he deflowered of her by gynette. After whiche dede, as affirmeth the sayde authoure, the kynge was in wyl to haue wedded that damoyzell. For expedition wherof he made great meanes to Huguncia a cardynall then being in his lande, that he wolde make a dyuorce betwene hym and Elanore the quene. And thus he dyd, to the ende to haue the more fauoure of the Frenchemen, that by thys ayde he myght the better dyscreete his sonnes. But he failed of his purpose and also it turned to his owne harme. For by this meane, he caused the saide Rycharde his sonne to shewe all hys demeanoure vnto the frenche kyng, so that by his informacion vnkynndnes kyndled betwene them two, & thereof ensued mortal warre, as sayth the Englyshe cronicle, and also Polichronicos.

But of this warre spekerh nothing the frenche cronicle, nor of none other during the lyfe of the saide Lewis after this daye, which dyed in the. xliiii. yere of this Henrye. But the warre that was betwene the two kynges of Englande and of Fraunce, was betwene this Henry and Philip sonne of this Lewis, as after shalbe shewed.

About the. xliiii. yere of this king as wryteth dyuers wryters, fell

wonderfull wederynge and tempests of thunder in myddes wynter tyme in Hamphyre and other places, by violence wherof a pyeste amonges other was slayne. And in the somer folowynge about Mary Magdalene tyme, fell hayle of suche bygnesse, that it slew both men and bestes. And about this tyme were the bones of kynge Arthur and his wyfe Gwepnour founde in the vale of Bualon, whose heate of the hed of the sayde Gwepnour was then hole and of freshe colour, but so soone as yt was touched, yt fell in powder. Whiche bones were translated and buryed wthin the churche of Glasseburpe, and were founden by a synger of gessys vnder an holow oke sytten fore wthin the grounde. Whiche fyndinge and translatynge is an obiecte to the fantastical saying of the Walsheimen, that afferme hys commynge agayne to regne as he befoze dyd.

Then had kynge Henry the seconde, monycon by a knyght called Sir Wyllyam Chesterby of Lyncey, the whiche warned hym specially for the reformation of seven articles. The fyrste was, that he shulde sette better dyligence to the defence of a holy churche, and maynteyninge of the same. The seconde, that he shoulde se hys lawes executed, with better iustyce then at those daies was vsed. The thyrde was, that he shulde surmyse no mater agayne to the men, and by that meane plucke from them theyr landes & goodes. The fourthe that he shoulde restore all suche landes and goodes gotten by suche vnlawfull meanes or by anye other. The fyfte, that he shulde for no meane tarpe to the rightfull sentence, but suffer the right to haue his process. The sixte, that he shoulde se to the paymente

D. iii. of

3 great hayle

Here by thys
holy churche
is vnderu and
all thynges
that made for
the welth and
prosperite of
hoyes, prelates,
monkes,
frees, & chano-
nes, & suche
other of those
sortes, & not
the vniuersall
of catholike
churche of
Christ.

of hys subiectes, for suche stufte as was daylye taken to his vse, & also to the paymente of hys seruantes and souldours wages, whiche dayly fell to robbing for defaute. The seventh and the laste was, that he shulde in al haste voyde the Jewys of hys lande, whiche dayly wrought greatesorowe to his comons, and to leue them somewhat to spende in theyr iourney. But as he toke the other monicyons, so he toke thys, and continued his lyfe as he befoze had done.

The xxxix. Capter.

The death of
Henry the el-
dest sonne of
Henry the se-
conde.

In the xxviii. yere of hys reigne after mooste wyrtues dyed Henry his eldest sone then kyng. And in thys yere whiche shoulde be the fourth yere of Philippe the seconde, or of Philippe surnamed Gouen of God, the warre beganne betwene kyng Henry and hym. Wherof was occasioun as testifyeth þe saide french cronycle, the denyng of þe deferring of homage that shulde be done to the saide Philip of Rycharde then eldest sonne of king Henry, for þe landes of Doytow.

In other cause also was, þe where certayne couenautes were stablyshed and enrolled betwene kyng Henry & Lewis father of this Philip, at þe marriage of Henry hys sonne and Margarete syster of Philip, for certayne holdes and castells, wherof the castell of Gisors was one, which were deliuered in dower wth the sayde Margarete, vpon condicyn that yf the saide Henry had ysue by the saide Margarete, then the sayde castelles to remaine vnto the saide heyres, and yf the sayde pynge Henry dyed withoute ysue of the sayde Margarete, that then the sayde castelles and holdes to be reuerted vnto the crowne of

Fraunce, and for that kyng Henry deuyed or deferred these two poyntes, and wolde not answer when he was called, the frenche kyng therfore entered the lande of Barry wth greates strength, and wasted the countrey of Gupan without merrey.

Wherof kyng Henry beyng warned, in all haste assembled hys people then beyng in Normandye, and dyctwe hym towarde þe frenche kyng whiche then had layde syege vnto the castell called in frenche Roaul, or þe castell of Roaul.

When both hostes were nere and lykely to haue ioyned, medyatours were sente vpon bothe parties, to create a peace. By meane wherof in pprocess a trefwe was taken for a certayne tearnme, so that eyther hoste departed wthoute strykyng of stroke at that season.

Aboute this tyme dyed Rycharde Baldewyne Bpshoppe of Worcester admitted to that sea, though the munnyes of Caunterburpe wthsayde it with all theyr power.

In the thyrtye yere of the kyng, Heraclius patrparche of Hierusalem came into Englade, for to haue ayde agaynst the Sarazyns that hadde wonne great parte of the landes that Chyristen menne hadde in the holys lande, and for to defende the holy crite, whiche by Saladyne Wynce of Surey was wonne mostely after.

For by the repute of Peter Byscop, whiche made a booke in french of the wyynyng and losynge of the sayde Cytie, it appeareth that it was wonne by Godfrey de Bulyon, in the yere of Chyristes incarnation, a thousand. lxxx. and. xix, and so continued vnder the rule of nyne Chyristen kynges, vntyll the laste kyng named Guyde Alesyngham, or Alesyngham

After the
death of
Henry the
second.

A patrparche
of Hierusalem

quam loose it wth the holpe crosse,
in the yere of oure Lorde. xi. hundred
lxxx. and. ii. whiche maketh the yere
of the regne of this kynge Henry
the. iii. Then it foloweth in the sto-
ry, this Heraclius made besy request
vnto the kynge for ayde, and profe-
ted hym the keyes of the cite and of
oure Lodes graue, and letters of Lu-
cius the. iii. of that name then. B. of
Rome chargynge hym that he shuld
take vppon hym the iourney, and to
haue mynde of the othe that he befo-
re tyme had made.

The kynge deferred this answer
and Balowyn the archbishop pre-
ached and exhorted meane to take the
crosse by whose meanes manye there
were that auowed that iourney. Last-
ly the kynge gaue answer, and sayd
that he myghte not leue his lande w-
out keepynge, nor yet leue it to the pray-
and robbery of the frenchemen. But
he wolde geue largesse of his owne
to such as wolde take vpon them
hyage. With this answer the patry-
arke was dyscontente, and sayde we
seke a man and not monye. Welne-
uer euerie chrystien regyon sendeth vnto
vs monye, but no lande sendeth to
vs a pynce.

Wherefore we aske a pynce that ne-
deth money, and not money that ne-
deth a pynce. But the kynge laped
for hym such excuses, that the patry-
arke departed from hym dysconten-
ted and comfortlesse. Whereof the
kynge beyng aduertysed, entending
somewhat to recomferte hym wth
pleasaunt wordes, folowed hym vnto
the sea syde. But the moze the kynge
thoughte to satysfye hym wth his
fayre speche, the moze the patryarke
was dyscontented, in so muche, that
at the laste he sayde vnto hym. Wher-
to thou haste regned glayous-

lye. But hereafter thou shalt be for-
saken of hym that thou at this tyme
forsakest. Chyncke on hym what he
hathe geuen to the, & what thou hast
yelden to hym agayne. Howe fynde
thou werste false vnto the kynge of
fraunce, & after this Thomas Bec-
ket, and lastly thou forsakest the pro-
tection of Chyestes faith. The king
was amoued wth these wordes, and
sayde vnto the patryarke. Though
all the men of the lande were one bo-
dy, and spake wth one mouth they
durste not speake to me such wordes.
No wonder sayde the patryarke, for
they loue thynge and not the. That is
to wraue, they loue thy goodes tem-
poral, and fere the forlosse of promo-
cion, but they loue not thy soule. And
when he had so sayde, he offered his
hedde to the kynge sayng. Do by me
tyghte as thou dydest by Thomas
Becket. For I had leuer to be slayne
of the, then of the Sarasyns. For thou
arte worse then anye Sarasyn, and
thy people foloweth praye and not a
man. But the kynge kepte his pacy-
ence, and sayde I maye not wend out
of my lande, for myne owne sonnes
wll aryse agaynst me when I were
absente. No wonder sayde the patry-
arke. For of the deuyl they come, and
to the deuyl they shall, and so depa-
ted from the kynge in greute ire. Af-
ter the patryarke was thus departed
the kynge sent Ihon his second sonne
into Ireland. In the whiche hyage
he spent the kynge great goodes, &
dyd lytle profyte or none.

In the. xxi. yere of kynge Henry
the Jewes crucyfied a chyld in the
towne of Burge in Suffolke, named
Roberte, for whome God shewed af-
ter manye myracles.

And the. xxi. yere, the kynge made
a hyage into Ireland to redresse thyn-
ges

The wonder-
ful pacence of
modesty of a
pynce, so suffe-
ring the rayting
of such alowd
wretch.

Howe the Je-
wes crucyfy-
ed a chyld in
Burge in Sul-
folke.

ges there oute of order. But fortune was to hym so contrarye that he lost hys trauple, lyke as the peare before hys sonne Jhon had done.

In the. xxxii. yeare of thys kyng Henry, at Dunstable in the ayre was seen a crucyfyre, and Chyriste nayled thereon, wher he appeared visibly to many a mans sight. And in this yere the kyng lost the countrie of Aluerne when he had spent greate goodes about the defence of the same. Now be it of thys warre spekerh nothynge & French cronycle.

Che. ccl. Chapter.

In the. xxxiii. yeare of the kyng, Rycharde the Earle of Glocestre arreued warre agayne king Henry hys father and tooke partye wth the French kyng. By mene of the whych warre, al such summes of mony as were before gathered by dymys and otherwys, for the helppynge of the crosse to be made into the holpe lande, by the sayde Rycharde and by many other nobles of the lande, were spent in the same unnatural warre, wherfore the kyng sayled into Normandy with a strong armie. But of the kyngs were there landed, the sayde Rycharde by helpe of the Frenchmen hadde wonne the cyties of Comyres, of Heaus, and also the castels of Raoul and Gylours wth other. At the laste the French kyng Phyllippe the seconde, wth the sayde Rycharde came vnto the cytye of Cenomanna, entending to lay seige vnto the same. Whereof king Henry beyng warned, set the suburbes on fyre, because his enemies shuld in the haue no socour. But the flame of the fyre was by the wynde dymen into the city so sharply, that the king was compelled to forsake it. Where-

wth the kyng was so amoued, that in hys departyng frome the cytye he sayde these wordes. For thou hast taken frome me thys dape that I most loued in the worlde, I shall acquyte the, for after thys tyme I shall by nombre the that chynge, & shuld most haue pleased the in me, whych is my ne hert.

After thys he lost moze darye, so that hys enemies preyed stronge ly agayne hym.

It is. rend of hym, that he shuld be at so greate an after deale in thys warre, that lastely he shuld put him in the kyngs of Fraunces mercy, his honoure and hys crowne reserved. But this is doubtful of credet. For sure I am, yf the French kyng had suche aduantage of hym it shulde not haue fallen thynge the booke, but haue bene regystrid in the moste aduauuntynge maner, where as in the French cronycle is touched no worde of lyke matter. But truthe it is that fortune was to him contrary, in such wyse that wth o; for anger and impatience, he fel into a feuer. Wherof he lastly dyed in the castell of Conomeus o; of Chynon in Normandy. In the moneth of July, when he had regned. xxxiii. yeares and. viii. monethes with odde dayes, and was buried at founte Ebzade, wth thys epytaphy vpon hys tombe.

*Sufficit hic tumulus, cui non sufficit orbis.
Res brevis est ampla, cuiusuit ampla brevis
Rex Henricus erat: mihi plurima regna subegi
Multipliciq; modo, duxq; comesq; fui
Cui satis ad uocum non esse ut omnia terra
Climata, terra modo sufficit octo pedum.
Qui legis hac, pisa disc remina mortis: et in me
Humane speculum conditionis habet
Quod petis in fide operare boni, quia mundus
Transit, et incautus mori inopina rapit*

Che

The sonne as
garnis the fa
chen.



The whyche heres are thus muche
to meane in sentence.

Suffysyth nowe thys graue, to whiche
all earthly thynges

Suffysed not, my mynde so hygh
was set.

Time that was short, my name was
dyd lpyng.

Whyche same by death is into short
netheret.

Kyng Henry was I called noman I
thoughte my bet.

Whose mynd sometyme al earth not
suffysed,

With foute of ground now hath my
bodye compysed.

Thou that thys redest, the parell
of death and in me

Thou mayest beholde the course of
euerye wyghte

That earthly is. Wherfoze proude
and se.

That thou well maye do, shortlye do
it, and ryghte

Defet not the tyme, for I ascertayne
the eyghte.

The world is transpyt, and butwa
tely men taketh.

Cruel death, from whom none estate
escapeth.

Gerardus Cambrens, whych in
hys booke of dyspncepons set oute

the lyfe of thys Henry, sayeth byde-
full it is to aledge agayne hym that

maye put a manne oute of land, and
to dyscrys hym with many wordes

that maye exyle a manne with one
wyrd.

Wherfoze it were a notable
dede to tell the sothe of a prynces de-
des, and offed the pryncce in no meane

But yet when the pryncce is passed
and goone, then men wyl talke with
out fere, that befoze tyme they spared

for fere.

Then to folowe the soth, this kyng
Henry noysshed styfe amonge hys

chyldezen with all dyslignce, happing
therby to lyue hym selfe in the noye

rest. When men wolde aske of hym
when he wolde leue hys greate dedes

he vled to aunswere that the world
shulde sayle, or a courageous harie

shulde lease of greate dedes. He was
parlesse in chynalry, in warre, and in

lecherye. He wedded Elyanour wyfe
of Lewys kyng of fraunce, contray

ry to the commaundement of hys fa-
ther. For he had shewed to hym that

he had lpen by her, when he was the
sayde kynges steward.

He reigned. xxi. yeres some deale
to hys worthy dysse, and. iiii. yeres

somewhat to hys payne, but the laste
v. yeres to hys greate trouble and

sojowe. Furthermoze, the sayde Ge-
rard descryueth the progeny of thys

Henry, whych I outpasse because
it is so comen.

Rycharde hys sonne wolde often
tell that wonder, and vled to saye: no

maruall though they greued the peo-
ple that were comen of such kynde

For of the denell they come, and to
denell they shall.

It is also read of thys Henry, that
in a chamber at Wyntsoore he cau-

sed to be papited an Eagle with. iiii.
bydes, wherof. iiii. of theym al tased

the body of the olde Eagle, and the. iiii.
was cratchyng at the olde Eagles

epen. When the questyon was asked
of hym what thyng that pictur shuld

signifye, it was aunswered by hym:
thys olde Eagle (sayd he) is my selfe,

and these. iiii. Eagles betoken my. iiii.
sonnes, the whych cease not to pur-

sue my death. And specially my yon-
gest sonne Iohn, which now I loue

moost, shall moost specially awayte
and imagen my death.

France.

France.

Phylippe the
seconde.

The. cccii. Chapter.



Phyllp the seconde of that name, surnamed Deyudo- ne o: given of god and sonned unto the viii. A. wys, bega to regne ouer the realme of Fraunce, in the yere of our lord. xi. hundred and. lxxix. & the. cccii. yere of Henry the second than kynge of England. Whych sayd Phylippe reigned somwhat of tyme by the lyfe of his father, which tyme is accompted vnto the regne of hys father.

This in the xxiij. yere of hys regne, for the great enomytes that the Jewes vsed wthyn the realme of Fraunce, as crucyfinge of chyldeyn and excrucyng of theyr detestable wyferye, he after due p:ofe made, put the malefactours to death, and the other in aduoydunge moze daunger, he cryed and put cleare oute of hys realme.

The polycye
of Phylippe
French kynge.

This Phylippe also as befoze in þe booke of Henry the seconde is touch- ed, excepted the sonnes of the sayde Henry to make warre vppon theyr father, by the which meane this Phylippe gat manye holdes and townes frome the sayde Henry wthyn hys duchy of Gylon. But after the death of Henry, this Phylippe gaue ouer all the sayde holdes and townes vnto Rycharde the eldeste sonne of the sayde Henry, and receaued of hym homage for the same. And as witnesseth the French cronycle, the sayde Rycharde in token of obedyence, was present at the coronacion of the sayd Phylippe. But ye shall vnderstand that than he was not kynge of Eng- lande. x. yeres after. But if it so were that he were presente at the sayde co-

ronacion, yet was he duke of Gylon ouerlyfe.

About the thyrty yere of hys regne Cracypus patriarche of Hierusalem came into Fraunce, & requyred ayde of this kynge Phylippe to withstand the fury and persecution, whych Da- ladyne prynce of the Turkes had ex- cited and dayly continued in the cō- trey of Iherusalem agayn the Chryst- ien to the greates destruction of them and vndoyng of the countrey, and great seoparde of the losynge of the holy cytye of Iherusalem. For this kynge assembled a great counsell at hys cytye of Paris, where the sayde Cracypus made request to the kynge as befoze he had doone to Henry the second. For he was in Fraunce in the yere of our lord. xi. hundred. lxxx. and two, and in Englande he was in the yere of grace. xi. hundred. lxxx. and. vii. After whiche counsell there so holden, it was agreed that the king wth ayde of the bishoppes and other of the poppytialtie, shoulde ayde the sayde patriarche, the whiche were set forth in all possible hast. But after the repoyte of Peter Wyldore, whych made a recule o: litle booke of the win- nyng and loosynge of Hierusalem, they wth mo chrysten prynces were dyscuen by the tempest of the sea vnto the poyte of Damas, where vnder co- lour of a fained truce, they were ta- ken and cast the moze parte of theym in prysen.

And when kynge Phylippe had thus deliuered the patriarche, he then gathered his knyghtes and made an armye agayne Hugh duke of Bur- goyne, the whiche at that season and tyme had be clipped the castell of Ales- gye wth a stronge seige, and hadde promysed not to departe thence tyll such tyme as he had wonne that hold.

by

The seventh part.

by appoyntement of other wyse.

And for the defence of rescowse that myghte be made for the same, he had manned.iiii. castels of towne thereunto adiournaunte, with greates strength of menne of armys. But after the kynge was thether comen with his host, the sayde towres were sone ouertourned, and the king with a certayn of hys people, of Guy captayn of the sayde castell of Alergy was toponisly into the same receaued, and rendred to hym þe castell, & became his lege mā. Wherewith the sayde Hugu beyng sooze amoued and dyscontented, seynge there he was dyspoynted of his purpose, departed thence with his of dynance and people, and robbed and spoyled the countrey there aboute, sparynge nother church nor house of religyon, in so cruel and greuous maner, that the byshoppes and abbotes of that partye of Burgoyne made peteous request vnto the sayde Phylippe that he of hys speacpall grace woulde ayde and socoure theym and theyr churches agayne the tyranney of the sayde duke Hugu. The kynge beyng moued with thys petyous requeste, made sharpe warre vpon the sayde Hugu, and at length wane frome hym a stronge Castell named Chastelone. Wherewithall the duke was put to suche a studyall and fere that he was forced to seke meanes of treaty and of peace. Wherof the conclusion was, that he shulde pay vnto the churches befoze by hym hurte and harmed. xxx. thousande pounde. Whiche conclusyon taken and surety set for the same, the kynge returned into Paris. Where the kynge so resyng hym a certayne of tyme, and haupnge experyence of the intolerable and foule stench that daily grewe by the fylthe of the earth and

myre in the stretes, made prouysson dyspentye with ayde and helpe of the cytyzens, whiche as then hadde lande within the cytye, that the stretes were shortly paved after. And at thys tyme whan the cytye was thus paved, as affermen many authours the name of it was chaunged frome Lutelle of Lutelle vnto Paris.

The pavynge of the stretes in Paris.

Howe Paris was called in olde tyme.

The.ccxlii. Chapter.



In the .vii. yere of thys kyng Phylippe, as sayeth the frenche boke, Margarete wyfe vnto thys Phylippe, late wyfe vnto Henry, late dysceased, and eldest sonne of Henry the seconde kynge at thys day of Englande, was maried vnto the seconde kynge of Hungary.

In the .i. yere of thys kyng Phylippe, the cytye of Hierusalem was taken of Baladync pynce of Egypte, and Guy de Lassingnan, last chrysten kynge of that cytye, with the holpe crosse was taken in the felde, whiche after that daye came neuer into chrystien menne's possessyon. Of thys sorowe & heuynesse word was brought vnto kynge Phylippe, with request of ayde to reskue certayne cytyes, as yet rested vnder the dominion of the Chyrtien, as Tyre, Trippe, and Antioche, with other small holdes. For sauegarde whereof manye nobles of Fraunce tooke vpon them the crosse as the duke of Burgoyne, the Earle of Flaunders, Theobalde Earle of Bloys, the Earle of Rochford, the Earle of Champayne, with manye other noble knyghtes, which for legyth I passe ouer, and the reporte of theyr dedes, so somuch as it concerneth no thyng the matter that I haue promysed to speake of.

Phylippe the seconde French kynge

In thys iourney also kynge Phylippe intended to haue gone, and for the same great taskes & dymys were leuyed thzoughout hys realme, the whych to thys dape are called Saladynes dymes. But the let of thys iourney as sayth the French cronicle was Rycharde duke of Guyan, and after hys father Henry the seconde, that made warre vppon the French kynge, as befoze is touched in the story of the sayd Henry. Durynge which warre the sayd Henry dyed, in the xi. yere of thys sayde Phylippe.

Aboute thys season and tyme, the Jewes whych by meane of great gyftes, had agayn purchased theyr dwellyng within the country of Fraunce, wherof a wedowe was lady and maistresse called Bjanous, in absence of the kynge toke a chrysten man, & surmyled agayne hym felony and murder. For the whych by fauoure of the sayde ladye, the sayde Jewes sette a crowne of thorne vpon the sayd chrystyan mannes hedde, and after scourged hym, and lastelye in dyspyson of Chrystes religion, and despyte of the same, crucyfyed the same personne. Wherof when the kynge was enfourmed in all haste he sent vnto the sayd country or castell of Bjanon, and surpylled the sayd Jewes so sodaynelye that none escaped, and byent there of them to the number of .lxxx. for theyr malycious and abhomynable dede.

In the .xi. yere of þ regne of thys Phylippe, dyed Isabel the quene of Fraunce hys wyfe, a woman of good fame and greate vertue.

In the .xii. yere of hys regne as sayth the French booke, thys Phylippe toke vppon hym the crosse, haungyng promysse of kynge Rycharde then newly crowned king of England, to kepe compaigny wth hym in that iourney.

But he kept not promysse. Wherwith this Phylippe beyng dyscontented sayled befoze and lardd serge vnto the cytye of Acon or Acre. Fromme thys sayinge barpeth Polycronica, and also Peter Destoy. For Polycronicon sayth, that after the kynges of Englande and of Fraunce had made surety betwene them for perfourmaunce of thys iourney, they bothe toge ther tarped at Taron in Fraunce, for to abyde the Sommer tyme. And at spyngynge of the yere, they of one wyl & purpose, tooke theyr wyage towarde the holpe lande, that is to wytte, that one by water and that other by lande and mette agayn in Cerylya. Wher the French kynge departed from him and so sayled to the sayde cytye of Acon or Acre, and lardd hys serge ther vnto. In whych passyme kynge Rycharde warred vppon the kynge of Syppres, and hym wth his land subdued and after came vnto Acon, wher the French kynge had longelyen at serge withoute gettyng of any great aduantage of hys enemyes, sayyng vnto kynge Rycharde that he hadde spared the wyynnynge of the towne tyll hys commynge, to the ende that he at hys commynge myghte be partner as well of the honoure as of the wyynnynge. But how it was, such bykyndnesse fell betwene theym there, after they hadde wonne the sayd towne, as after in the storye of kynge Rycharde shalbe shewed, that this kynge Phylippe retourned into Fraunce shortly after. In the whych retourne the sayde Phylippe spakened, and the duke of burgoyne dyed. And when kynge Phylippe aseason had sojourned in Fraunce, he maryed Jugebert the daughter of the kynge of Denemarche. The whych maryage as sayeth Ranulphe, was despyed of the French

A cruel and malicious act of it were true

French king, to have with her granted the title which the Danes hadde vnto the crowne of Englande, with also ten thousande markes of syluer, for to wyne with the sayde eyght and title. But it was not longe or she were frome hym deuoyced, for cause of alpaunce of gossyped or otherwile.

Howe be it in processe of tyme after, the sayde Ingeberte was to hym againe toynd by the authoxtre of Innocente the thyrde of that name, then bishop of Rome in the yere of grace: xii. hundred and nyne, and yere of the reygne of this Philyppe. xii. so that the sayde Ingeberte was deuoyced from her loyde by the teatme of. xviij. yeres, or therupon.

In which tyme & season the said Philyppe had married the daughter of Philyppe duke of Sweup, & then was returned vnto her father.

The. cxxlii. Chapter.

Kynge Philyp for dyspleasure which he bare toward his Richard, made sharpe and cruell warre vpon the Roymans, & wan therein byuers holdes and townes, & finally layde siege vnto the cite of Roan. Wherof hearing John earle of Huntington, or after some earle of Drenforde, brother to kynge Richarde whome the French boke nameth Johan withoute lande, with the earle of Arundel & other noble men, spedde him into Roymandy, and so ayded the cytyzens and soulpoures of Roan, that as testyfyeth the French cronicle, the French king was so moued w the warre & defence of the same towne, that in a passynge furpe consyderinge the winter season drewe vpon, and that he might not carry away his gunnes & other great ordynaunces, he set all on a fyre, and so with great agony departed.

And within thye monethes after he layde siege vnto the castell of Verneil where when he had lien. iii. weekes or moze, a messenger came vnto hym & saide that the cite Curour was take of the Roymans, & the people thereof take prisoners. Wherfoze in all haste he departed, & rescued the sayde cite and prisoners, and that done returned to the sayde spege, and assyged it so strongly, that lastly he had it deliuered by appoynement.

By this reason was kynge Richarde deliuered out of the handes of the duke of Burgye. And then beganne the warre to be moare cruell, whiche I passe ouer, forsomuch, as I intende to shewe the effecte therof in the Roype of kynge Richarde folowynge.

About the. xliiij. yere of the reygne of this Philyppe, fell such plenty of water, that the grounde was therewith so bucked and drownd, that coarne and other fruytes by reason thereof greatly decayed and scanted, in such wyse that wheat was shortly after at. x. s. a quarter sterlynge mony.

In the. x. yere of the reygne of this Philyppe, dyed Richarde kynge of Englande, to whom was herre John befor named his brother. The which concluded a truce with this Philyppe for certayne yeres, as after in the Roype of this John Mal moze clerly apere.

And soone there after meane were made to kynge Philyp, that he shuld receaue agayne into his compaigne Ingebert his wyfe, and to renounce Mary daughter of the duke of Sweup, or after some authours, the daughter of the Duke of Bohemye. But the kynge with this moxpon was no thyng contented, nor yet agreable to folowe any such monition or request, wherfoze the pylasie of the land as-

C. l. seemed

sembled theym in counsell, and by a full and hole authoryte, seynge they myghte not induce the kynge to no confirmyng of agremente to resume his lawfull wyfe, and to refuse that other, they denounsed hym and his realme accursed.

Wherwith the kyng was so annoyed and vexed, that he depyved certayne bishoppes from theyr sees, and also toke in his possession the spirituall goodes, and prysoned many prelates and other religious men, and ouer that closed þe sayd Ingebert within the castell of Champis, and forther more greued his commons wth greuous exaccions and taxys. Than wythin a shorte terme after, Johan de saynte Poule cardynal, and Arhan of Othe mon bishoppe of Dyt and Legate of the byshop of Rome, wyth the archbishoppe of Burdeaur and other, by the commaundemente of Innocente the thyrde, kepte a greate counsell in the cite of Soysse.

¶ Counsell.

Where the kyng was monyshed to appere, for so muche as befoze he hadde graunted to be reconcyled vnto his fyfthe wyfe. Wherfore thes mater bynge in argument befoze the spirituall iudges by the space of fyfene dayes, without sentence geuyng. Wherfore the kyng beyng wyth the delays discontented, sodainly wyth his wyfe departed, wythout takynge of them any congy or leaue, sendyng theim vnderstandynge that as yet he wolde be aduysed or he were dysseuered from his wyfe. Wherof when the sayde Johan cardynall and the other byshoppes hadde wyttynge, accompanyng theyr labourer losse, they returned whostely after vnto Rome, and shewed vnto the Byshoppe of Rome all as they hadde done.

And soone there after kyng Jo-

han was honorably receyued of thes kyng Phylippe, as in the storye of the sayde John Mall be more plainly shewed.

And in the yere folowynge, which shoulde be in the begynnynge of the twentye and thre yere of this Phylippe died Marce his wyfe, which he wyng fully had holden contrary vnto the lawe of the church by the teatyme of tenne yeres, or thereupon. Of the whiche Marce he hadde receyued a man chyldre & a doughter, the whiche after were made legytemate by Innocente the thyrde, though some noble menne of Fraunce there agayne grudged.

¶ The cccliiii. Capter.



It was not longe after, that the kyng assembled greate people and entended to haue entred the landes of the earle Ros-

sel, and of Roger de Rose, of the whiche he had brought befoze him many greuous complaints, of greate exaccions and exaccions, that the sayde Earle and Roger hadde executed and doone vpon the churches nere to the valey of Soyssons, and wolde not refrayne for all the kynges commaundemente. Wherfore he rpygged his armie and dyeme toward them.

But as soone as they were aduertysed of the kynges comynge, anone they submytted theym to the kynges grace, obligynge theym selfe to make restitution accorpyng vnto the kynges pleasure, to all suche places and persones as they hadde offended. And thes acte thus synplished, kyng Phylippe returned vnto a place bytwene Clerdon, and the yle Audelp,

The seventh parte.

In the whiche place the kynge hadde appointed a grete counsaile of parlyamente.

Where amonge other maters it was concluded, that Johan kynge of Englande shoulde be somoned to appere as the frenche kinges lyege man at the same parlyamente to be holden at Paris, wythin fyfene dayes of Easter to answer suffcientlye unto the kynge vpon suche questyons as there shoulde be purposed unto hym; for the duchye of Normandy, for the countrey of Fungeon: and of Poytters:

But for that kynge Johan came not at that daye appoynted, nor none for hym accordeynge to the monyement unto hym geuen, therfore this kynge Philippe notwithstandinge the amptye and trewe before conferred, assembled his hoste and entred the duchye of Normandy, and made therein warpe and cruell warre, and wanne a castell therein named Bonte of Boute, and byused of crased the castellis of Gentyne and Gurney, and sealed all the landes whiche Hugh de Gurney helde, and gaue them to the Duke of Britayne. And also he gaue unto hym the earledome of Fungeon and two hundred knyghtes prysoners of Normanes and Englyshe wyth a grete summe of money.

It was not longe after that the duke of Britayne was departid from the kynge, but that he wth suche power as he myghte make, entered the countrey of Fungeon, to take therof possession. Where in shorte space he was encountred of kynge John, and foughte together a cruell batayle. In the whiche in the ende the duke was putte to the worse, for the moze parte of his people were slayne, & hym selfe with Hugh le Buns, Godfrey de Le

spgnan, and manye other nobles of Fraunce and also of Britayne, were taken prysoners. Wyth whiche tydynes the frenche kynge was greuously discontented.

And where as at that time he had beleped the castell of Arches wth a stronge siege, he remoued from thens and yode to the cite of Compes and byrnte a parte therof. But as testifyeth the frenche cronycle, he taried not the commynge of kynge Johan. But for that wynter was commynge toward, he ceasyd of his warrs for that yere, and so byewe hym selfe into Fraunce.

In the yere solothynge, whiche was the yere of this Philip. xxiii. of kynge John the.iiii. yere, the warre newely beganne, whiche I ouerlasse for as muche as it shalbe shewed in the storye of kynge Johan.

In the. xxvi. yere, of this Philip Almaricus a student of Paris helde certayne opinyons of Herespe. Of the whiche whenne he was abiured, he toke suche thoughte that he dyed shortly after. It was not longe after but that other clerkes and studyautes helde an other erronpouse opinion concerninge the vnioun of the trinite. Of the whiche nomber Peter byshoppe of Paris, and one Gaayne a man of grete conynge were two, the whiche were degraded, and after consumed with fyre, and the body of the forenamed Almaricus was agayne taken oute of the earthe, and after byente.

After aboute the thirti yere of the reigne of this Philip, for conspideracyon, as sayeth the frenche booke, that Johan kynge of Englande had exchyd dyuette of his Byschoppes, and taken from them theyr possessions and goodes, the whiche to this

The laste of
of warre.

C.ii. kynge

kyng Phylipp were comen for ayde and socoure, he therfore moued with ppye, assembled a grete hoste, and entended to haue sayled into Englad to haue refourmed these matters.

With the whiche hoste he passed tyll he came vnto Brauclynge by lande, where he appoynted his nauy to mete with hym.

And to the same place also, Ferrande then earle of Flaunders hadde assentynely promysed to come, with the ayde of hys Flemmynges, where the kyng for hym tarped a certayne of tyme. But shortly after the kyng was ascerteyned that the sayde earle was alied with kyng John hys enemye, and purposed to ayde his partye in all that he myght. Wherof the occasion was, as assermeth the sayde Frenche Cronycle, for so muche as Lewys eldest sonne of kyng Phylipp helde frome the sayde Ferrande two castellys or towne named sainte Omer and Bre.

When kyng Phylippe apperceyued that he was thus of the earle disappointed, he by counsaile of hys Baronys putte by hys iourney into Englande, and assailed the countrey of Flaunders, and so rode vnto Calysle a lytell frome Brauclynge, and with warpe assaute wanne the sayd towne and so from thens to Brugis, and commaunded his nauy to be brought vnto the haven of Sluse, which is with in shorte waye of Brugys. And when he had executed hys pleasure at Brugys, leaupnge a certayne of hys people for to strength his nauy, he rode vnto Gaunte, and there rested hym & his people.

In whych season Regnolde earle of Boleync, Gylliam longe Espe, or Gylliam with the longe sword, with a crewe of Englyshe men ar-

ued in Flaunders, to whome Gylliam bydewe Ferrande the Earle with a grete power of Flemmynges. The whiche shipped them in small caruyles and barkes and other shippes of aduantage, and with a sperte courage sette vpon the Frenche kynges nauy lyenge at Sluse, as before is shewed, where was fought a stronge and cruell batayle.

But in the ende, the Flemmynges had the victorye, and hadde the rule of all the Frenche flore, the whiche in number as testifieth the sayde french cronycle, were a thousande and tenne sayle. The whiche for number and greatnesse myghte not all lye within the haven, but spredde a grete parte of the ryuer besyde. Whiche so lyeng withoute the haven, the Flemmynges conueyed thence, and after layde ordynaunce to the towne of Sluse, and assyged it.

Kyng Phylippe hearyng of the losse of hys nauy, and of the assaulyng of the towne of Sluse, in all haste, spredde hym thither, and there in suche wyse resisted hys enemyes, that he slewe of them vpon two thousande, and toke of them dyuers prysoners, and rescued þe towne. But for he saw he myghte not recouer his shippes beyng within the haven, he caused them to be discharged of vtell & oother necessaries, and after set them on fyre and the towne also, and that done, toke certayne hostages of Brugis of Gaunte and of Ipe, and so returned into Fraunce.

Chapter.



When kyng Phylippe was returned into Fraunce, it was not longe after that by þe meanes of some well disposid perlonen, he was recon-

reconcyled, and toke to hym his law-
full wyfe Ingeberta oꝝ Ingeberte,
doughter of the kyng of Denmarke,
which was a great comfoꝛt vnto all
his people. And this it nowe apperith
that the sayde Ingeberte was frome
her lord oꝝ husbnde, by the tearme
of syxene yeres and moꝛe, as befoꝛe
it is touched in the seconde Chappter
of this storye.

In the yere of grace. xii. hundred.
xiiii. as saith the frenche booke, which
maketh the yere of the reygne of this
Philippe. xxv. Otho the. iiii. of that
name and Duke of Saxony, whiche
of some of the electours was chosen
foꝛ emperoure, in the quarrell of kyng
John entred þ pꝛouince of Henaude,
and there beyng accompanied with
Regnolde Earle of Solesme, Far-
taunde Earle of Flaunders, and by-
uerse other nobles, as wel of Englad
Saxony, and other places, made pꝛo-
uisyon to fyghte with kyng Phy-
lippe, whiche then warred in flaun-
ders, so that the frenche kyng was
at the castel of Peron, and Otho was
at the castell of Valensens, oꝝ Va-
lensens.

About Mary Magdaleins tyme,
the frenche kyng in wassing þ coun-
trei of Flaunders came vnto þ towne
of Turney, and Otho returned from
the foꝛesayde castell, and came vnto þ
castell oꝝ towne named Mortenge,
the whiche was but syxe myle frome
Turney. Wherof hearynge the kyng
entendyd to haue sette in shorte tyme
bypon his enemyes. But by the ad-
uys of his barons he was letted, foꝛ
so muche as the wayes and places
were streyghte and narrowe towarde
his enemyes. foꝛ the whiche consyde-
racpon by counsaile of his sayde ba-
rons he was letted, and remoued to-
ward Henaude foꝛ to haue moꝛe lar-

ger playnes.

So that after saynte Jamys day
he returned, purposyng that night
to haue lpen and also hys hoste at the
castell called Lylly. But he was let-
ted of his purpose. foꝛ Otho whiche
was warned of hys remouyng, de-
med hym to haue fledde and pursued
after the baungarde of the kyng, of
the whiche were capytaynes the by-
counte of Dylpon, and one named
Fyter Garny, the whiche was a kny-
ght and a religyouse man, a man of
great counsaile and hardynesse.

Fyter Garny
was a capytayn.

These beinge accompanied with
foure thousande men, rode tyll they
came to an hyl oꝝ lytell mountayne,
where they clyped the auantage of
Otho and his hoste. Wherfoꝛe Fyter
Garny returned to gyue the kyng
knowledge, and the bycount remay-
ned in the place, and houed with hys
compane.

When the kyng hadde knowlege
of the comynge of hys enemyes, he
in good maner kepte on hys iourney
In which season Otho, with his peo-
ple came vnto the ryuer whiche was
somedeaile daungerouse to passe, how-
be yt in pꝛocesse he passed yt. And
when he and his hoste were ouer, he
made waye towarde Turney, in so
much that the bycounte and hys com-
pany demed them to haue returned
to Turney. But so soone as Fyter
Garny was returned vnto the sayde
mount, anon he demed the contrary,
and sayde pꝛecysely þ other they must
gyue batayle to theyꝛ enemyes, oꝛ ellis
they must fle with shame.

In this whyle the kynges people
came vnto a bydge where they shuld
passe ouer. And the cautele of hys e-
nemyes was, that when the kyng
with the moꝛe parte of hys people
hadde bene passed that bydge, they

C. iiii. wolde

wolde haue sette vpon the rere warde and haue distressed them, and so haue kepte that byrde & the kynge shoulde not haue socoured his people. But o the kynge were passed, the fyght was begonne, in so muche that hydeouse crye came to the kynges earys, at armys at armys, to harness to harness, our enemyes be come.

A grete bat-
tyle.

Here vnto the kynge was a chapel halowed in the honour and worshippe of saynt Peter, wherunto the kinge podes & made there his deuoute prayres, and that done armed hym, and lepte to hoise ioyouslye cryenge, as barons at armys. Then the flambe which was passed the byrde, was countermanded. And then beganne the trumpetts and taboures to blowe, whiche reuyned the palled hartes, and caused them to forget the drede of death.

But for the kinges people might not so hastily retourne and passe the byrde, & kinge as a valyaunt knight toke hys hoise with hys spurres, and set forward to encourage the other of his knightes, so that his enemyes heyrnge of hys comynge, were some- deale dyscourage and gaue place vnto the kinges hoste. Then Otho heyrnge of the kinges retourne, embatayled his people. But so it was that he tooke the north parte of & felde, by reason whereof the sonne was in hys face to his afterdeale, for that was exceeding hote ouer the other.

Then was the batell begonne in dyuers parties of the felde so cruelly that many a man was there overthowen. The whiche endured by a longe space, in such wyse, that harde it was to discern whiche partye had the better of that other. Cyther pryncce enforced so straitly that other, that cyther of theym were unhorsed and in great

leopardye.

If here I shoulde rehearse the bycrouse dedys of the frenche kynge and hys knyghtes in order, after the expressement of the frenche booke, I shoulde thereof make a longe storye. But trouthe it is that in the ende, Otho was compelled to forsake & felde to the grete losse of hys people, and Fraunce the earle of Flaunders was taken with many other, as Reynold earle of Wylem, and. xviii. other of name.

And one thyng hardly me seemeth to be credence giuen vnto, rehercyd by the frenche cronycle, whiche sayth that of all the frenche hoste mysed but one spynge man, the which after was founde amonge the deade Almaynes soe wounded, and after cured and healyd agayne. Which maye be tolde for a grete wonder, consideringe the sayde fyghte lasted ouer foure houres, as testifieth the sayde cronycle.

But sure the authoure of the wyter ouerfeeth him selfe in that repoyte for he sheweth befoze in the diuysyng of the fyght of thys batell, that when kynge Philippe was felled from his hoise, two of his knightes wered a myghte befoze hym, that one named Guilliam de longe champe, and that other Gerarde le Cygne. But maister Roberte Bagwyne explyeth thys moze clerely, sayenge that after the felde was doone and the Emperoure was fledde, leauynge hys banner of splayed Eagle behynde hym, a busshmente of the number of seuen hundred men recoueryd that standarde, and so kepte them together.

Wherof when & king was enforced, he sente agayne them one of his knightes called by Thomas Malory accompanied with. l. footemen & two thou-

thousande hoysen. The whiche distressed the sayde companie, without losse of any manne as befoze is sayd. And moareouer, the sayde authoure sayeth, that vpon the partte of the sayde Deho, of knyghtes and gylts harnesse were slayne a. M. and. h. C. and of the hoysen and footmen a C. and. l. M.

But of the Frenchmenne whiche shoulde be surest of the rekenyng, he maketh no mencyon. But truth it is that in all the cronycle throughe the French booke rehearsed, all thyng touchyng thei honoure is declared and shewed to the bettermoste.

And that whiche concerneth thei dyshonoure or losse, it is eyther subtely excused, or so darkely or mystically wytten, that the reader therof shall hardly come to the knowledg of the truth. And that is well apperaunt in the stoopes of Phylippe de Valoys and of kyng Ihon hys sonne, in þe expyement of þe saytes done & extorties agayne the thyrde Edward kyng of England and prynce Edward hys sonne.

Than it foloweth in the story: whā Phylp hadde obtayned thys greates vyctoye of his enemies, and ordered other thynges concernyng hys people, as countermaundyng them the nexte waye vnto thei countreys, he wth hys prysoners spedde hym to Paris, and there of his great bounty graunted to the sayde Carlys of Boelyn and Flaunders thei lyues, but not of imprisonment. For the Carle of Boelyn was sente vnto the castlle of Peton, and Heraunt Erie of Flaunders was committed to the castell of towre of Loure without the walles of the city of Paris than newly made. But wthin lesse than. x. monethes after, by labour of hys wyfe, he wth

other of hys leyge menne was deliuered, payyng thei synaunces, and perfortumyng of other streyght condycions.

The. ccc. Chapter.



Fwas not longe after that kyng Phylippe traueled hys knyghtes, and spedde hym to ward the countreys of Portowe. Wherof beyng warned the Carle of Choners that than was cheefe ruler of that countreie vnder kyng Ihon, seynge the feblenesse of the commons that daily were vexed wth warre, and also the losse of kyng Ihons frendes, notwithstandinge the sayde Ihon was than within. x. moones, yet he made suche meanes to kyng Phylippe by the labour of Peter than Duke of Carle of Bytayne, that the sayde kyng accepted the same Carle to hys grace, & graunted to hym and hys, a trelwe for. iiii. yeaeres.

But that not wthstandyng the kyng kepte on hys tourney toward kyng Ihon. Wherof kyng Ihon beyng enfourmed, and also of the peace betwene the Carle of Choners and the French kyng, he by meanes of one Robertte a legat of Rome soughte meanes of a treatye and of peace, so that in processe by dygnyte of the sayde Robertte and other a peace was concluded for. v. yeaeres whiche peace concluded and assured ether kyng returned into thei owne prouynces.

Wthyn thys whyle after, the French kyng was returned into Fraunce, he called to mynd the great vyctoye had of the Almaynes, wth also one other whiche Letys hys sonne aboute the same tyme hadde gaped of kyng Ihon in the countreys

trie of Angeou, at the castell of Morn
or Mayne, for the whych two bycto
ryes the kynge edyfied a monastie
belyde the cytie of Sapntles, in
honoure of saynt vixto; and endow
ed it wyth sayze and rych possessions
and named it the abbaye of Saynte
vixto.

In the .xxvi. yeate of the raygne
of thys Whylippe, A thys hys sonne
by procurynge and stutynge of the
lordes of Englande, sayled into the
sayd prouynce, as moze playnly shal
be shewed in the .xvi. pere of the regn
ne of kynge Ihon.

Wanye mo storpes & actes myght
I bypunge in and set in thys storpe of
thys kyngge Phylippe, pt I Wulde fo
lowe the frenche booke. For he ma-
keth there a rehearsal that containeth
xxxix. great leues of parchemynne, Of
whych I haue taken out suche as to
me seemeth most couenyent, and haue
ouer passed the other for length of the
tyme.

Then it foloweth, thys Whylpe
after these dayes djethe hym to moze
quyete and reaste, so that after thys
peace o; trewce concluded with king
Jhon of England, the authoure spe-
keth not o; myndeth of anye noble
deade by hym doone. So that in the
yere of oure lozde. xii. C. 3. xii. which
shulde be the yere of hys reygne. Thus
the sayde authoure begynneth, and
sayeth that in that forsayde yere ap-
peared a greate eclipce of the sonne,
wherof the lyke had not bene sene in
manye yeres passed.

And in the yere folowynge dyed
thys Whyllyppe in the moneth of Ju
lye, whan he hadde reigned vypon
thritt. yeres. Befeore whole death ap
peared a greate comete or: blasynge starre
the whych the frenchemen, wyth also
the foiesayde eclypce, they aduindged

for pronostyquis and tokens of the
kynges death, the whiche was bury
ed wth excellent pompe in the mo
nastyr of saynte Denys, in the yere
of our lord. a. 99. ii. C. and. xiii. and
of hye age. lxxii. leuynge after hym
the fornamed Xewys, whiche was
entournd kyng after hym

This phylippe amonges other notable thynges ordayned in hys testament, he set to the ayding and twynnyng of the holy cytye of Iherusalem six. C. **lxx.** pounde of Marys mony, to the hospytall in Mount fort a. C. **lxx.** pounde, and to be distributed amonges the pooze commons of hys lande he gaue. **xx.** pounde.

But here is to be noted, there is a greate dyuersyte betweene a pound of Paris mony and a pounde of sterlyng mony. For a pounde of Paris monye is but .ii. myllinges and .vi. pence sterlyng, or nere there aboute. And so it foloweth that a thousande pounde of Paris, is but a hundred xii. pounde sterlyng. By whych accompte it foloweth that þe kyng gaue to the abbe of the holy lande .xxvii. thousande fyue hundred pound sterlyng to the hospytall. xii. thousande and fyue hundred pounde sterlyng, and to the pooze people two thousande and fyue hundred pounde.

॥ (३३) ॥

20 And thus here I make an ende of
this volume, for cause and con
sideration, as after is shewed
in the begynnyng of the
next volume more
manifestly.

৯২:৯২:৩৬

The death of Schleppe

¶ Aenuoꝛe.

Rece forth rude volume, and recommed me,
To my dearest frende experte in all science,
Praye hym at lapers the to ouerse,
And where in meter oꝛ prose he fyndeth offence,
Of congrewe Englyshe, oꝛ of perfecte sentence,
Humble hym praye, that he wyl the coꝛecte,
Whiche in all his fautes is so cꝛꝛumspecte.

¶ And shewe to hym foꝛther hys merpꝛe to encrease,
The seconde volume is redy to him dꝛyghte.
Praye hym he wyl not theretoꝛe wꝛth the sursease,
Tyll that thy felowe, he haue by hys in syghte.
And by hys science bꝛoughte into good plyghte
That to all readers it maye be delectable,
And to the hearers fruytfull and pꝛofytable.

¶ And not to dysdayne my malpperte rudenesse,
That to hys payne I shulde thus boldely sende,
Oꝛ hym to wyl to suche great busynesse,
So rude a woꝛke to coꝛecte and amende.
But shewe hym sothlye that all that I entende,
Is foꝛ to enhaunce hys prayse and greate laude,
As he shall knowe I truste wꝛthoute fraude.

THE
JOURNAL
OF
THE
AMERICAN
MEDICAL
ASSOCIATION
PUBLISHED WEEKLY
CHICAGO, ILL., U.S.A.

VOLUME 10
NUMBER 1
JANUARY 1917

CONTENTS
ORIGINAL ARTICLES
SYMPTOMS OF
TUBERCULOSIS
IN THE
LUNG
BY
J. H. H. H. H.

The page is framed by a highly decorative border. At the top, a large arch contains a series of small circles. Below the arch, two tall, fluted columns stand on either side of the text. The columns are topped with ornate capitals. At the base of each column is a large, square block with a checkered pattern. The left block contains a large, stylized letter 'W', and the right block contains a large, stylized letter 'R'. The entire page is printed in black ink on aged, slightly textured paper.

T The secōde

Volume of Kabyans cro-
nycle, conteynyng the cron-
cles of England & of Fraunce
from the begynnyng of the
regne of kynge Ri-
charde the fyrste,
vntyll the
xxxii.
yere of the regne of oure
moſte redoubted so-
ueraygne lord
kynge Hen-
ry the
viii.

The table.

The table of the seconde volume
whych sheweth and declareth al
the actes done in euery kynges
dayes contayned in þe said volume and þe
euery acte folowith by letter, & by þe nom-
ber of the lefe, as in this saide table is ex-
pressed, & beginneth at the wards of Lon-
don & at kyng Richard the fyrst, whose
actes moze at length shalbe shewed, wth
other kynges ensuyng by letter in
thys sayde table, as
fy:st A. B. C. &c.

A Cris a stronge cytee in the holye
land was wonne by the chrysten
as appeteth. pagi. 2.

Actes of þe great Cane Tartarus. pa. 46.

Abbate of Waltham was accorded wth the
cytesyns of London. pagi. 56.

Accorde made betwene kyng Henry the
the. iii. and hys barons. pagi. 78.

Actes doone in Hethenes, by Lewys the
French kyng. pagi. 97.

Actes of Icon abouenamed cyte, wonne
agayne by the Turkes. pagi. 141.

Accord of agremente was made betwene
Englände and Scotlände. pagi. 179.

Actes made for weryng of spike. pa. 186.

Actes in Fraunce done by the duke of A
caster. pagi. 209.

Actes made by Frenchmen for the occupi-
inge of the admyssyon of the enheritoure
of Fraunce. pagi. 224.

Accorde made betwene the dukes of O-
leunce and of Burgoyne. pagi. 336.

Accuzacions by the duke of Burgoyne a-
gayne the duke of Oyleunce. pagi. 337.

Accord made betwene þe said dukes. pa. 337.

Acte made for geueing of liueris. pa. 341.

Actes made agayne straungers. pa. 372.

Actes made for the halowynge of the so-
daye wthyn the cytee of London. pa. 398.

Abbay of Burp was spoyled. pagi. 295.

A dyminne was graunted to kyng Henry
the fyfte. pagi. 367.

A quindecime was graunted to kyng He-
ry the thyrde. pagi. 42.

A letter deuised by the barons and sente
to kyng Henry the thyrde. pagi. 76.

A letter was sente by Richard kyng of
Romans to the barons. pagi. 76.

A quarter of wheat was solde for. ii. Myl
lynges. pagi. 175.

A fraye was made in Fletestreete vpon a
bakerys seruaunte. pagi. 301.

A fraye made in Fletestreet by one Herbot
tell. pagi. 369.

Andrew Trolope dysceaued the lordes.
pagi. 419.

A letter sente by Edward the thyrde vn-
to the kyng of Fraunce. pagi. 194.

Agreement was made wth the Scottes.
pagi. 128.

Answer made by the French king to king
Edwardes letter. pagi. 194.

Ambassade sente by the French kyng in-
to Englände. pagi. 182.

Ambassade sente againe by the said kyng
pagi. 182.

Ambassade sente into Fraunce. pagi. 183.

Ambasad sent fro the b. of Rome. pa. 429.

Ayde graunted by kyng John. pagi. 259.

Ayde was graunted by the inhabytaun-
tes of the countre of Languedok. pa. 259.

Archebysshop of Oyleunce slayne. pa. 142.

Archebysshop of porke wth other was ta-
ken in battayle. pagi. 347.

Articles of treason lade againe by Roger
Mortimer. pagi. 181.

Articles of peace ratyfied betwene kyng
Edward & kyng John. pagi. 217.

Articles of dyspleasure shewed in wy-
tyng by the duke of Glocestre agayn the
bysshop of Wyntchester. pagi. 375.

Archebysshoppe of porke ouerturneth the
Scottes. pagi. 204.

Articles of peace concluded betwene the
ecle of Flaunders & hys subiectes. pa. 288.

Annualetaspe honourable was founden
in Poules church. pagi. 297.

Adouourty was espyed. pagi. 441.

B Irons warre begā to growe in the
xli. yere of Henry the. iii. pagi. 63.

Barons warre receaued a newe kyndled
in the. xliiii. yere of Henry the. iii. pagi. 67.

Barons assembled thei companies in
the

The table for the senenth parte.

the marches of wales in the. xli. yere of
the sayde kyng, pagl. 70
Barons entred þe cytes of London, pa. 71.
Barons discorde among the self, pa. 72.
Barons were chased the. xlii. yere of Ed-
warde the seconde. pagl. 161.
Battayle of Lewys betwene kyng Hen-
ry the thyrde, and the barons, pagl. 71.
Batayle called the whyte batayle, loke in
the elcuenth yere of Edward the seconde
pagl. 151.
Batayle of Burbyrdge betwene kyng Ed-
warde the. ii. and the barons in hys. xlii.
yere, pagl. 162.
Batayle very cruel agaynst the Scottis
called Halpdon, pagl. 112.
Batayle of Bown oꝝ Soluce upon the see
betwene the frenche meyne and Edward
the thyrde, in the. xv. yere of hys reygne,
pagl. 152.
Batayle of Cressley in the. xxi. yere of Ed-
warde the. iii. pagl. 203.
Batayle of Dootpers betwene kyng Ed-
warde the. iii. and the french king, pagl. 212.
Batayle betwene king Philyp of Fraunce
and the towne of Calyle in Flaunders,
pagl. 239.
Batayle of Whypstrey, in the. iii. yere
of Henry the. iii. pagl. 345.
Batayle at Blak pole, in the. vi. yere of
Henry the. iii. pagl. 347.
Batayle of Agyncourt, in the thyrde yere
of Henry the. v. pagl. 357.
Batayle of sainte Albons by the. xlii.
yere of Henry the. vi. pagl. 413.
Bloze herth feide appertys in þe. xlii. yere
of kyng Henry the. vi. pagl. 419.
Batayle of Ludlowe, pagl. 419.
Bataille of Northampton, pagl. 422.
Batayle of wakefeide appertys and the ba-
tayle of saint Albons, pagl. 424.
Batayle of Poys, oꝝ Towton, oꝝ Whyp-
strey, pagl. 426.
Barnet feide, pagl. 433.
Batayle of Tewkesbury, pagl. 435.
Bartram de Cleiton warred in Spayne,
and chased the kyng, pagl. 224.
Blasfyming appertys, pagl. 175.

Blanke charters bled in England, pa. 39
Byshoppe of peace betwene Englands &
fraunce, loke in the. xlii. yere of kyng Ed-
warde the. iii. pagl. 222.
Byrle, a stronge towne of Byrtayne be-
wegeb, pagl. 232.
Benevolence was fyrst founded & graun-
ted in Edward the. iii. dayes, pagl. 457.
Byshoppe Goolesheide and of hys actes
appertys in the. xlii. yere of kyng Hen-
ry the thyrde, pagl. 72.
Byshop of Exeter beheaded in the. xlii.
yere of Edward the. ii. pagl. 167.
Byshoppe of Roystreche made warre in
Spayne, by the Byshop of Rome come
maundement in the. vi. yere of Rycharde
the. ii. pagl. 295.
Byshop of London hath a memoꝝ of the
cetyzens of London, pagl. 302.
Byshop of Winchester lent to kyng Henry
the. v. xx. M. pounde, pagl. 367.
Byshop of Winchester forsayde created
cardynall, pagl. 376.
Byshop of Salpsbury was slayne in the
ende of. xlii. yere of Henry þe. vi. as moꝝe
playnly is shewed, pagl. 416.
Byshop of Chycheester called Reynold Be-
cok was abjured of herselfe, pagl. 417.
Bonifacius byshop of Rome, and of hys
condicions, pagl. 146.
Bul of the byshop of Rome manifested as
Poullys crosse, pagl. 70.
Bushe, Baggoe, and Gyne and of theꝝ
actes, pagl. 33.

Charles the fiftte of that name and
surnamed the sayre, and by other
unto Philyp surnamed the longe
sonne of the fourthe Philyppe, beganne
hys reygne ouer the realme of fraunce,
in the yere of grace a thousand. iii. C. and
xlii, and the. xv. yere of the seconde Ed-
warde kyng of Englands, and reygned
yeres. vi. pagl. 174.
Cardinalles that were sent into Englands
frome the byshop of Rome, were robbed,
appertys in the. x. yere of Edward the. ii.
pagl. 156.

The table for the vii. parte.

Caen a stronge towne in Normandy be-
sieged by kynge Edward the thyrde, and
wonne it, pag. 102.
Calys besieged and gotten by kynge Ed-
ward the.iii. pag. 103.
Cardynall sent from the bishop of Rome
laboured for peace, pag. 107.
Castell of Mount was solden by by ap-
pointment, pag. 155.
Carrekes. iii. were taken by the Duke of
Clarence, & the catle of Kent, pag. 147.
Charpte of kynge Lewys, pag. 101.
Charles de Valois brother to Philip le
Beume and uncle unto Charles p. v. for
sayde dyed, pag. 46.
Charles de Blois was slayne in the bat-
tyle betwene sy John Mountfozte and
the sayde Charlys, pag. 176.
Charles the. vi. of that name, and sonne
of John, beganne to rule the Frenchmen
in the yere of our lord. M. iii. C. lxxiii,
and. xlviii. yere of the thyrde Edward
kynge of Englande, and reigned yeres.
xvi. pag. 281.
Charles the. vii. of p name a yonge childe
and sonne of the. vi. Charlys, began his
reigne ouer fraunce, in p month of Sep-
tember and yere of our lord. M. iii. c. and
lxx, and the thyrde yere of the seconde Ry-
charde then kynge of Englande, & reyg-
ned yeres. xlii. pag. 322.
Charles the. viii. of that name, and sonne
unto Charles the. vi. as sayen the French
authours, but the Englyshe wyters shew
en the contrary, as in p story of this Char-
les shal appere, this began to reigne ouer
the Frenchmen, in the yere of our lord
a thousande thre hundred. xlii, and
the laste yere of Henry the fyfte kynge
kynge of Englande, and reygned yeres.
xxvi. pag. 327.
Chauntries founded in Pouls church
in London, pag. 329.
Ceremonies for the coronacion of kynge
Henry the. iii. pag. 33.
Creatyon of Dukes by kynge Rycharde
the. ii. pag. 297.
Clement bishop of Rome displeased, for p

he myghte geue no bishopryches within
realme of Englande, in the. xlviii. yere of
kynge Edward the. iii. pag. 178.
Citizens of London, are tolle free, pa. 41.
Citizens of London were arrested, pa. 61.
Clerkes of Oyleaunces withstande the
king of fraunce commaundemēt, pa. 246.
Church of monastery of westminster was
ended of building, pag. 119.
Constable of fraunce was murdered by p
adulter of Charlis big of Hauerne, pa. 252.
Constable of the Towre of London was
drowned whose name was called sy Tho-
mas Ramstone, pag. 342.
Constantynoble was wonne by the Tur-
kes, as is shewed, pag. 411.
Colatyon made by the archbishoppe of
Caunterbury to the lordes for the depol-
tion of king Rycharde the. ii. pag. 319.
Conclusyon of maryage by kynge Henry
the. vi. pag. 377.
Condicions of kynge Lewys, as is shew-
ed, pag. 457.
Comming of p Emperoure into fraunce
and of his honorable recepte, pag. 224.
Compolycyon was made betwene kynge
Henry the. i. x. and the duke of York, as
appere, pag. 423.
Copp of a letter sent from Edward the. iii.
unto the French kynge, and answer to the
same made, pag. 174.
Copp of an instrument made for depolysing
of kynge Rycharde, pag. 314.
Copp of a byll putte into the parliament
house for the tempoalteers, as is shewed
pag. 351.
Copp of a letter sent by the bishop of win-
chester to the duke of Bedforde, pag. 77.
Copp of a pardon made by the kynge to p
citizens of London, pag. 83.
Correcyon of adultery, as is shewed in,
pag. 150.
Coronacion of quene Katherine, as ap-
pereth, pag. 366.
Corps of king Henry the. v. was brought
solempnyte brought unto the monastery
of westminster, pag. 366.
Countesse of Hereford laboured to make
a peace

The table for the seventh parte.

a peace betwene kyng Edward the. iii. &
kyng Philip of Fraunce, pag. 126.
Covenantes betwene the regent and the
kyng of Flaunde are expressed and shew-
ed in, pag. 127.
Covenantes of marriage betwene kyng
Henry the fyfte, and the frenche kyng be-
holde in, pag. 128.
Crossed freeres came fyrste into England
in the thyrde yere of kyng Edward the
seconde, pag. 129.
Circlyffe of golde belonging to saint Be-
nys churche in Fraunce was asked by the
kyng of the monkes for aide, pag. 130.
Dame Blaunce was aided, by Phy-
lyppe the frenche kyng, as appe-
reth in, pag. 131.
Dame Elinour Cobham was arrested of
treason, as it is shewed, pag. 132.
David brother of Lew in prince of walys
was sought treason, pag. 133.
David aforesayde was taken, pag. 134.
Daunting wonderfull beholde, pag. 135.
Derkenesse intolerable fylle in Paulys
church the bishop being at masse, pa. 136.
Deuoyce betwene Charlys & French king
and Blaunche, pag. 137.
Debe corplis what number in one yere
were buried in London, pag. 138.
Depe a towne in Normandy was strong-
ly assailed by & lord Talbot, pag. 139.
Denham esquier, toke the lord Spuers
at Sandwich, pag. 140.
Dyscencion amonge the Lordes of En-
glande, pag. 141.
Dyscencion fyl amonge & lordes in Nor-
mandy, pag. 142.
Dyscencion grete betwene & French king
and the king of Flaunde, pag. 143.
Dyscencion fyl amonge the French men
for cessynge of an ayde, pag. 144.
Dyscencion grete amonge the thye esta-
tes of the realme of Fraunce, pag. 145.
Dyscencion inconueniences fyl in England
and in Fraunce, pag. 146.
Dyscencion dyspoyntes and meruayles were sene
in the ayre, as it is shewed, pag. 147.

Duke of Ostriche dyed, & the hostages of
king Richard were free deliuered, pa. 11.
Duke of Lancasters actes, pag. 209.
Deke John of Lancaster made warre in
Fraunce, pag. 128.
Duke of Lancaster passed throughte
Fraunce withoute fight, pag. 131.
Duke of Burgoyne complayneth vpon
sy John Chalons knight, pag. 142.
Duke of Normandy maketh his oracion
to the cytezens of Paris, pag. 143.
Duke of Normandy was proclaymed regent
of Fraunce, as is shewed, pag. 144.
Duke of Lancaster reuered Fraunce, pa. 145.
Duke of Lancaster warred in Spayne,
pag. 146.
Duke of Glouceter spake sharpe wordes
to king Richard the. ii. pag. 147.
Duke of Glouceter was arrested and mur-
dered, pag. 148.
Dukes of Hereford & of Northfolke fyl
at dyscencion for cause shewed, pa. 149.
Duke of Lancaster claymed the crowne,
pag. 150.
Duke of Oyleaunce laboured against the
vniuersyte of Paris, pag. 151.
Duke of Oyleaunce was slayne, pag. 152.
Dukes of Oyleaunce and of Burgoyne
make newe warre, pag. 153.
Duke of Burgoyne was slayne, pa. 154.
Dukes and barons were put to death for
treason, pag. 155.
Duke of Clarence was slayne, pa. 156.
Duke of Glouceter was made protector
of Englande, in the fyfte yere of & reigne
of kyng Henry the fyfte and the Duke
of Bedford, regente of Fraunce, as is
shewed in, pag. 157.
Duke of Bedford wyndeth holdes in
Fraunce, se in, pag. 158.
Duchesse of Holand was taken prysoner
loke in, pag. 159.
Duke of Alencon was deliuered for hys
ransome, pag. 160.
Duke of Northfolke was in grete re-
pary of downynge, pag. 161.
Duke of Burgoyne tourned frome the
Englyshe partye to the frenche partye,
+ ii. as is

The table for the seventh parte.

as is shewed in. pagl. 386.
 Duke of Burgoyne layde spege to Calis pagl. 389.
 Dukes and earles were created. pa. 397.
 Duke of Suffolke was arrested. pa. 403.
 Duke of Somerset was arrested as he-
 weth in. pagl. 405.
 Duke of York gathered people, as appe-
 reth in. pagl. 409.
 Duke of York discharged of his protec-
 tourshipp. pagl. 415.
 Duke of York and other were attainted
 as appereth in. pagl. 419.
 Duke of Buckingham and many other
 were slayne. pagl. 422.
 Duke of York taketh þe kiges see. pa. 422.
 Duke of York w other was slain. pa. 423.
 Duke of Burgoyne assyseth the French
 kynges sonne agaynst hys father, as is
 shewed in. pagl. 429.
 Duke of Britanie and other conspyred a-
 gayne the kyng. pagl. 429.
 Duke of Somerset w other put to death
 pagl. 445.
 Duke of Clarence wth other landed at
 Dartmouth. pagl. 450.
 Duke of Exeter found dede in þe se. pa. 456.
 Duke Clarence drowned in wyne. pa. 459.
 Duke of Glouceter was made protectour
 pagl. 463.
 Duke of Buckingham sheweth the tytle
 of kyng Rycharde. pagl. 464.
 Duke of Glouceter taketh possession at
 Westminster, as appereth. pagl. 465.
 Duke of Buckynghā conspyereth against
 kyng Rycharde, and was taken and be-
 headed at Salisbury. pagl. 466.
 Duke of Ostrance was taken in batayl
 as is shewed. pagl. 472.
 Duke of Birtayne dyed, whereby greete
 warre foloweth, as it is shewed. pagl. 472.
Edwarde the fyrste of that name,
 and sonne of Henry the thyrde, sur-
 named Edwarde Longe shanke,
 began his reigne ouer England the. xviij.
 day of November the moowe after saint
 Edmonde the archbyschop in þe yere of our
 lord. M. CC. lxxii. þe. ii. yere of the. iii.

Philipp then kyng of Fraunce, & reygned
 nobly. yeres. xciii. pagl. 113.
 Elanoure mother to kyng Rycharde,
 was enlarged. pagl. 116.
 Edmund Crouchbak was married to the
 daughter of the Earle of Armurle as ap-
 pereth in. pagl. 119.
 Edmund wodstok wrought treasid. pa. 123.
 Edward þe sonne of Henry the firste dis-
 tressed the barons, as it is shewed. pagl. 126.
 Edward the firste distressed the barons þe
 seconde tyme, as is shewed. pagl. 129.
 Edward went into the holy land, and of
 his feates there done. pagl. 132.
 Edward of Carnarua, as appereth. pa. 139.
 Edward the second called Edwarde Cal-
 natuan, the sonne of the fyrste Edwarde,
 beganne his dominyon ouer England in
 the moneth of July and yere of our lord
 god. M. iii. C. and. vii. and the. xxi. yere of
 the. iii. Philyppe o; Philyppe the saye
 then kyng of Fraunce, and reygned ye-
 res full. xix. pagl. 151.
 Edward the fyrste married to his. ii. wyfe
 the frenche kynges syster. pagl. 153.
 Edward the. iii. of that name, and sonne
 of Edward the seconde and of dame Ma-
 bell the daughter of Philyppe le Beawe,
 o; the. iii. Philyppe late kyng of Fraunce,
 whiche Edward about the age of. xv. ye-
 res beganne hys reigne ouer the realme
 of Englande the. xxv. daye of January,
 in the yere of grace. M. iii. C. and. xxvi. &
 the. iii. yere of Charles þe saye then kyng
 of Fraunce, the whiche reygned yeres. li.
 pagl. 178.
 Edward Carnarua, was miserably slaine
 as is shewed. pagl. 187.
 Edward Haploll was made kyng of
 Scottes. pagl. 179.
 Edward the thyrde sayled into Brabant
 with his wyfe loke in. pagl. 191.
 Edward the. iii. chalenged the hole kyng-
 dome of Fraunce. pagl. 194.
 Edward the eldest sonne of the Duke of
 York was electe for kyng of Englande
 loke in. pagl. 452.
 Edward the. iii. of that name, and eldest
 sonne.

The table for the .viii. parte.

sonne of Rycharde duke of Yorke whiche
was proclaimed heire apparante to the
croune, beganne hys deminyon ouer the
realme of Englande, in the fourth daye
of Marche in the yere of grace. M.iiii. C.
li. and the seconde yere of the. xi. Lewys
then kynge of fraunce, and reigned at
that tyme cyght monethes, and yeres.
viii. pagi. 442.
Edward the. iiii. befoze named wanne the
felde of Barnet vpon Easter day agayne
kyng Henry the sytte in the yere of grace
M.iiii. C. lxxi. a yere of Lewys the French
kyng aforesayde, and reigned after that
daye ten monethes, and yeres twelue. So
that syt and laste he reigned out. vii.
monethes assygned vnto Henry the sytte
dayes. xvi. monethes a yeres. xxi. o; with
the sayde monethes of Henry the sytte set
vnto Edwardes reygne make. xlii. yeres
and odde dayes. pagi. 453.
Edward the syt of that name and sonne
of Edward the fourth of the age of. xiiii.
yeres and lesse, began to reygne as kynge
of Englande the. x. daye of Aprill and yere
of our Loyde. M.iiii. lxxiii. and the. xxxv.
yere of s. xi. Lewys then kynge of fraunce
and reigned tyll the. xx. daye of July next
folowynge, in whiche season passed dayes
lxxii. pagi. 462.
Eleanoure queene & of het progenye, loke
in. pagi. 424.
Emperoure of Almanye came into En-
glande. pagi. 346.
Enue of Frenchemen. pagi. 10.
Enguerram was put to death. pagi. 172.
Epitaphye of Rycharde the syt, as ap-
pereth in. pagi. 20.
Epitaphie of frederike emperour. pa. 30.
Epitaphie of Edward the syt, pa. 32.
Epitaphie of Edward the. iii. pagi. 238.
Epitaphie of kyng Richard s. in. pa. 343.
Earthquake fell in Englande. pagi. 17.
Erie of Denbroke was ouerset w French
men and other. pagi. 232.
Expellment of s. grudges attwene kyng
Richard the first & the french king. pa. 2.
Eugen bishop & of his actes. pa. 351.

Falle Chyriste was crucified, as is
shewed in. pagi. 38.
False clerke of Orenforde whiche sayned
him selfe madde, came to wodstoke enten-
ding to haue slaine king Henry s. iii. pa. 47.
Fautes o; actes of warre done at Donka-
ble. pagi. 198.
Fishes wonderful taken in the. xxx. yere
of kyng Henry the. vi. pagi. 415.
Floren of golde was made by kyng Ed-
warde the. iii. pagi. 392.
Feyers mirrors came firste into Englande
loke in. pagi. 396.
Friers Augustines in s. xxx. yere of king
Henry s. iii. builded their house, in a place
in walis called wodhouse. pagi. 53.
Fryers were put to death. pagi. 330.
Frenche kyng sente for his doughter that
was king Richardes wyfe. pagi. 330.
French nauy discomfyted. pagi. 436.
Froste extedynge, loke in. pagi. 349.
Olscopnes make war against French
men bo;detters in kyng Charles s.
v. dayes, as is shewed in. pagi. 178.
Gabel o; tare reised on salt. pagi. 245.
Gynnes castell was yolden to Englyshe
men, loke in. pagi. 208.
Gudge betwene Baldwin and his mon-
kes. pagi. 14.
Gudge arose betwene kyng John and
his lordes. pagi. 33.
Gudge and displeasure betwene the by-
shop of Wynchester & the duke of Glou-
cester, it is shewed in. pagi. 373.
Gudge and murmure toke place among
the nobles of fraunce. pagi. 471.
Harme done by thoder, as appereth
in. pagi. 222.
Hawle without reuerence of the sacrament
was slaine in the church. pagi. 293.
Hastynge's lord Chamberlayne was so-
demly put to death. pagi. 463.
Henry the thyrde of that name and sonne
of kyng John, a chyld of ten yeres, be-
ganne to reygne ouer Englande, in the
moneth of October, and yere of our lord
M. lxxv. C. and. c. vii. and the. xxxviii. yere
of Philip then kyng of fraunce, and
*iii. 1092.

The table for the. vii. parte.

reigned peres. ix. pagl.

Henry Bolingbroke the. iiii. of that name and sonne & heire of John of Gaunt duke of Lancaster, the which John was second sonne of Edward the thyrde lyvinge after theyr father, of the thyrde sonne to reben prince Edward, this Henry after the deposicion of Richard in the ende of the moneth of September, began to reigne ouer Englande, in the yere of our Lorde. M. iii. C. lxx. and. ix. and the. xix. yere of Charles the. vii. then kyng of Fraunce, & reigned peres. xiii. pagl.

Henry the. v. and dame Katerine daughter of Charles the. vi. of. vii. a chyld of halfe yere of age, began hys reigne ouer Englande & Fraunce, in the ende of the moneth of July, & yere of our Lorde. M. iii. C. xxi. and the firste yere of Charles the. vii. of. viii. & then amonge the Frenchmen was allowed for kyng, and reigned peres. xxix. pagl.

Henry the. vi. of that name, and sonne of Henry the. v. of the name and sonne of Henry the. iiii. began his reigne ouer the realme of Englande, vpon the moyn after saynt Cuthbertis day, of the. xxi. day of March in the ende of the yere of grace. M. iii. C. and. xiii. and the. xxxii. yere of Charles the. seventh then kyng of Fraunce, and reigned peres. ix. pagl.

Henry of Derby with other landed at Ravenspore, as is shewed. pagl.

Henry the. v. forsaide sayled into Fraunce like in. pagl.

Henry Derby fornamed and of his issue is shewed. pagl.

Henry the. iiii. also forsaide married the duchesse of Burayne. pagl.

Heretys of John twisyl apereth. pa.

Heretys taken in saint Gyles felde and after byent. pagl.

Homage done by lordes of Almain, to Richard Earle of Cornwalle, brother to king Henry the thirde. pagl.

Homage done by the kyng of Scottes to kyng Edthe. iii. pagl.

Hugh bishop of Lyncolne died. pa.

Henry brother to Richard the first was ordeined kyng of Englande in the moneth of Aprill, and yere of our Lorde. M. C. xxi. and the. xx. yere of the second Philip then kyng of Fraunce and reigned peres. xii.

The interdycion of this lande, began in the. vi. yere of this kyng, & endured tyl the xii. yere. Henry the sonne of Alwyn, in the. i. yere of this kyng was admittid for the spyshe Mayre of London. And in the sayd. i. yere of kyng John, London bydge was begon to be made of stone. pagl.

John the spyshe in Fraunce of the name and sonne of Philippe de Valois, began his reigne ouer the lande of Fraunce, in the moneth of Auguste, and yere of our Lorde. M. iii. C. and. i. and the. xxxiii. yere of the thyrde Edward kyng of Englande and reigned peres. xiii.

This kyng was taken prisoner of Edward the pynce of Englande at the batayl of Poitiers in Fraunce. pagl.

Japhet was gottid by king Richard. pa.

Jakys de Arriuple fauoured the English partye. pagl.

Jake Meraue and wyl Watwe made an insurreccyon. pagl.

Jake Sharpe was taken and putte to death. pagl.

Jake Cade and his felowes. pagl.

Jake Cade wrought much of his wyl in London, & after robbed, & so slaine. pa.

Jewes were banished this lande. pa.

Jewes were spoyled and slayne. pagl.

John brother of kyng Richard was pryowde. pagl.

John reconcyld to hys brother apereth. pagl.

Inquestiouns were made vpon the rulers of London, as is shewed in. pagl.

Jordan of the yle of Gascogne grew out of kynde. pagl.

Inglyshe lordes wan spyshe vpon French men. pagl.

Inglyshe soudpours slayne vnder salte conduyte. pagl.

Itenerati ples in Southwerke. pa.

The table for the .viii. parte.

The of Ely holdeth banished men. pa. 10.
 The of Rhodes fyrst wonne. pag. 13.
 Isabell late wyfe vnto kynge Rycharde,
 was married to hys eldest sonne of the duke
 of Oyleunce. pag. 37.
 Issue and dyssent of syr Roger Spyn-
 mer. pag. 27.
 Justices of iudges punished. pag. 123.
 Justes holden in Smythfelde. pag. 199.
Kynge John and hys land was en-
 terpoynted. pag. 26.
 Kynge John was compelled to
 graunte certayne articles. pag. 33.
 Kynge Henry the .iii. sayled into Royma-
 dy. pag. 47.
 Kynge Henry the .iii. in proper person sat in
 iudgemente. pag. 60.
 Kynge Johns surtye. pag. 129.
 Kynge John of Fraunce was taken pry-
 soner. pag. 127.
 Kynge John was deliuered. pag. 120.
 Kynge John dyed in England. pag. 123.
 Kynge Rycharde soughte manie prou-
 spous. pag. 18.
 Kynge Rycharde sayled into the holy land.
 pag. 19.
 Kynge Rycharde was taken prisoner. pa. 12.
 Kynge Rycharde was deliuered. pag. 14.
 King Rycharde sayled into Roymady. pa. 38.
 Kynge Rycharde assailed the castel of Cy-
 sous. pag. 20.
 Kynge Rycharde was slayne. pag. 40.
 Kynge Henry the thyrde scapeth coun-
 sayle of the maye. pag. 70.
 Kynge Henry sayled into Fraunce to be
 present at the French kynges parliament.
 pag. 172.
 Kynge Henry was taken of his Barons.
 pag. 172.
 Kynge Henry layd siege to London. pa. 12.
 Kynge Henry thosed Wysses. pag. 12.
 Kynge Lewis toke the crosse. pag. 79.
 Kynge Edward the fyrst buylded castels
 in Wales. pag. 57.
 Kynge Edward sayled into Fraunce. pa. 122.
 Kynge Edward the seconde was taken,
 and also resigned the crowne. pag. 125.

Kynge Edward the .iii. came secretly to
 London. pag. 127.
 King Edward married Charly in Fraunce.
 pag. 120.
 Kynge Edward chased the Spanyarde
 from the sea. pag. 127.
 Kynge Edward wente into Scotlande.
 pag. 124.
 Kynge of Scotte was deliuered. pa. 124.
 Kynge Edward sped hym toward Barps.
 pag. 125.
 Kynge of Flaunde was suddenly take. pa. 125.
 King of Flaunde was set at large. pa. 126.
 Kynge Edward married in Fraunce. pa. 128.
 King John was receued in Fraunce. pa. 120.
 Kynge of Flaunde became feodory vnto
 the French kynge. pag. 122.
 Kynge of Ermony asked ayde of kynge
 Rycharde the seconde. pag. 126.
 King Richard ayded the Jannayes. pa. 300.
 Kynge Rycharde married the French kin-
 ges daughter. pag. 302.
 King Richard sayled into Irela. pa. 317.
 Kynge Rycharde was put to death. pag. 343.
 Kynge Henry the .iii. married the duchesse
 of Bytayne. pag. 379.
 Kynge Henry the fyfte sayled into Royma-
 dy. pag. 380.
 Kynge Henry e married the French kyn-
 ges daughter. pag. 380.
 Kynge Henry was receued into Lon-
 don. pag. 384.
 Kynge Henry and hys wyfe sat crowned
 in Barps. pag. 385.
 Kynge Henry the .vi. shewed hys vertue.
 pag. 380.
 King Henry was dubbed knyght. pa. 377.
 Kynge Henry was crowned at Barps. pa. 377.
 Kynge of Scotte was murdered. pa. 321.
 Kynge Henry the .vi. was taken. pag. 422.
 Kynge Edward the .iii. was receued in
 to London. pag. 424.
 Kynge Edward ayded the duke of Bur-
 goyne. pag. 440.
 Kynge Edward spoused dame Elizabeth
 Graye. pag. 440.
 Kynge Edward fled thys land. pa. 410.
 Kynge Henry taken out of hys towre. pa. 437.
 Kynge

The table for the .vii. parte.

Kynge Edward was proclaymed bluc-
per. pagt. 492.
Kynge Edward landed at Rainspore
pagt. 493.
Kynge Edward repofseffed. pagt. 494.
Kynge Henry the .vi. dyed in the towre of
London. pagt. 495.
Kynge Edwardes chyldren wer taken out
of fayntuare pagt. 496.

Letters of Laguedok byent. pa. 173
Letter sent by the barons to kyng
Henry. pagt. 76.
Lewyn pryncce of Wales rebelled. pa. 117
Lewyn was flayne. pagt. 118.
Letter taken up & crosse in chepe. pa. 167.
Lords assemble at Brundell. pagt. 308.
Lords put to death. pagt. 355.
Lords fled from Lodowe felde. pa. 439.
Lords proclaymed traytours. pagt. 421.
Lords came to London. pagt. 422.
Lords of Fraunce warred upon the
kyng. pagt. 429.
Lords contynue the malice. pa. 430.
Lords dystorde myght in the selves. pa. 431.
Lorde Moyle appealed the cite of Salys
bury. pa. 341.
Lorde Strange, and sy John Trussell
fyghte in the church. pa. 360.
Lorde Talbot was flayne. pagt. 422.
Lorde Egremond was comytted to New
gate. pagt. 416.
Lorde Welles conspyred agayn the kyng
pagt. 449.
Lorde chamberlayne beheaded. pagt. 461.
Lorde of Normandy. pagt. 426.
Lewys sonne unto the French kyng war
red in Englande. pagt. 34.
Lewys returned into Fraunce. pagt. 37.
Lewys sayled into the holy land. pagt. 38.
Lewys gave sentence agayne the barons
pagt. 44.
Lewys the .ii. of that name and sonne of
Philip the seconde, began hys regne o
uer the Frenchmen, in the yere of our lord
M. CC. and .xxiii. and the .vi. yere of the
thyrde kyng Henry than kyng of Eng
lande, and reigned thre yeres. By thes

kyng returned the blonde of Charles in
to the possessors of the crowne of Fraunce
pagt. 37.
Lewys the tenth of that name a chyld of
twelve yeres, and sonne of the aboue na
med the .ii. Lewys, which is named saynt
Lewys, began hys regne ouer Fraunce,
in the yere of our lord M. CC. and .xxvi
and the nynt yere of the thyrde Henry
than kyng of Englande, and reigned ye
res. xliii. pagt. 96.
Lewys the .xi. by accompte and sonne of
Philip the .iiii. beganne to regne ouer
Fraunce, in the yere of our lord M. CCC.
and .xv. and the .vii. yere of the seconde Ed
warde than kyng of England, and reyg
ned two yeres. pagt. 172.
Lewys the .xii. of that name after the ac
count of this booke, .x. after the French
account, wherof the cause is before shew
ed, sonne of the last Charles, beganne to
rule the Frenchmen, in the yere of oure
lord M. CCC. lvi. and .xxvi. yeres
of Henry the .vi. than kyng of Englan
and reigned xxvi. yeres. pagt. 431.
Lewys refused his lordes companye and
sounfayle. pagt. 431.
Lewys rescuerth Warps. pagt. 432.
Lorde of townes and castelles in Norm
dy. pagt. 424.

Marshale sen in the fyrmaments
pagt. 423.
May of London presented. pa. 57.
Maye and hys byrthen founde gylpe
in hurtyng the commons. pagt. 56.
Maye and cytyens agreed to the lordes
pagt. 73.
Mares of syluer were fyfte graunted to
officers of London. pagt. 176.
Menne of Northwiche entred. pagt. 241.
Manhode of Bathewe de Ropa. pagt. 21.
Marchaunt straungers entred upon
hectres of London and wer punished
pagt. 21.
Maddok & Walshman rebelled. pagt. 22.
Marpag of the seconde Edward. pa. 74.
Malpessprange amonge the Lordes of
Flaunders.

The table for the bill parts.

flauders. pag. 152
 Marcellous hable fell. pa. 111
 Michaell Cony mayre of London ad-
 iudged. pag. 117.
 Mortmaine was first enacted. pag. 119.
 Mortimer was aduancet. pag. 120.
 Mortimer was put to death. pag. 121.
 Cony bestowed of p. cyer of Lood. pa. 122.
 Martyn Bylloo Marteyn, was putte to
 cruell death. pag. 123.
 Maner of cyline in the churche of Rome.
 pag. 124.
 Maner of the metynge of the kynges of
 Englands and of Fraunce. pa. 126.
 Many knightes of the bath made. pa. 131.
 Maruaples of Champs pag. 132.
 Malles for kyng Henrye the. v. pag. 136.
 Maner of treatye betwene the landes of
 Englands and of Fraunce. pag. 137.
 Marpage was despoyned. pag. 139.
 Marpage concluded. pag. 139.
 Manhode of chalongers. pag. 142.
 Maximilian and the frenche kyng des-
 corden. pag. 147.
 Margaret sister vnto Edward the. iiii. be-
 parted from Londo toward p. sea. pa. 147.
 Mountagen was slayn. pag. 134.
 Humynge made for treason. pag. 142.
 Murder was punished. pag. 147.

Number of wardes in Londō. pa. 3
 Names of. xli. petes of Englande
 pagi. 62.
 Newe rolle was broughte by. pagi. 91
 Archolus Byembje wpyth other was put
 to death. pagi. 297.
 Raup of frenchmen dysstressed. pagi. 112.
 Newe coyne of soluer was stryken. pa. 116.
 Newe dyspleasure that kynge Rycharde
 toke agayne the cytes of London. pa. 307.
 Newe coyne of golde smytten. pa. 352.

Creboon the byshops of Romes
legate was pursued of the clarge
of Englande. page 45.
Decall of the fray in fletestret. page 301
Decall of displeasure betwene kynge Ry
chard 3 the duke of Glouceter. page 305.

Of the chere, and receauynge of kynge
 by the french kynge. pa. 67
 Of officers charged and discharged. pa. 67
 Of kynge Johns pledges. pagt. 221
 Of the seruicours in the tyme of quene
 Katherine of aragon. pagt. 367.
 Of the cite was besieged. pa. 367.
 Of the swoyne by f kynge of England
 and of fraunce for prece. pagt. 221
 Of purt Damman and Daniel somtyme
 chere counsellours of Lewis the french
 kynge were hanged. pagt. 469.

Preface of this worke. pag. 1.
Peace was taken betwene the kyng
of England and of Fraunce. pa. 22
Phylipp kyng of Fraunce warred vpon
kyng John. pag. 23
Phylipp byake the peace. pag. 24.
Parlyament holden at London. pag. 37
Peter of Dountstet put to death. pa. 34.
Parlyament holden at Hertone. pa. 44.
Parlury was punished. pag. 50.
Parlyament at Orenford. pag. 62.
Parlyamente at Westmynster. pag. 64.
Parlyamete holde at Orenford. pa. 74.
Parlyamet holde at Westmynster. pa. 77
Parlyamet holde at Westminster. pa. 93.
Peace was made betwene the kyng and
Gilbert de Clare pag. 88
Punishment of Londoners pa. 83
Phylipp the thyrde of that name and sonne
of Saynte Lewis, was made kyng of
Fraunce, in the yere of our lord. M C C
lxx. and the lxxx. yere of the thyrde Henrie
than kyng of Englande, & reigned. xv
yeres pa. 104
Phylipp the fourth of that name & sonne
of the thyrde Phylip la beawe o; saye be
ganne to reygne ouer Fraunce, in y
ere of our lord a thousand two hundred. lxxxvi
and the ffortene yere of the fyrst Edward
than kyng of Englande, and reigned
xxxix. yeres pa. 159
Phylip the fyfte of that name and surna
med the longe, sonne of the fourth Phylipp
and brother to Lewis the xi. by accompe
beganne his reygne ouer Fraunce, in the
yere

The table for the. viii. parte.

peace of grace, a. M. CCC. and. xviij. and
the. x. yeare of Edward the seconde than
kyng of Englande, and reigned. v. ye-
res. pagl. 173.
Phylpp de Maloys, earle of Maloys, and
the sonne of Charles de Maloys brother
to the. iiii. Phylippe, was not withoute
some strep chosen and ordayned protec-
toure of the lande of Fraunce, and after
kyng of the same, the seconde daye of fe-
bruary, in the yere of our lord. M. CCC.
and. xxviii. and the seconde yeare of Ed-
warde the thyrde than kyng of England
and reigned in trouble. xii. yeres. pa. 176
Phylippes actes in Italy pagl. 177
Parliamēt holdē at Westmynster. pa. 174
Plees remoued frome London. pagl. 176
Punishment for murder. pagl. 177
Parliamēt holdē at Westminster. pa. 170
Parliament holden at London. pagl. 174
Parliament holden at London. pagl. 170
Parliamēt holdē at Westminster. pa. 176
Parliament holden at Northampton. pa. 177
Parliament holden at York. pagl. 162
Parliamēt holdē at Northampton. pa. 179
Parliament holdē at Salysbury. pa. 180
Parliament holden at Burgh. pagl. 399
Parliament holden at Couentre. pa. 421
Parliament holden at Leicester. pagl. 354
Parliament holden at Leicester called
Battes. pagl. 774.
Paules steeple set on fyre. pagl. 397.
Pargentes and other ordynances made
by Londoners for the recepyng of the
kyng. pagl. 311.
Parys was losse by treason. pagl. 336.
Peace concluded betwene the regent and
the kyng of Flaunde. pagl. 279
Peter kyng of Castyle beheaded. pagl. 227
Peryn was drawe out of the church, and
hanged. pagl. 265
Plees put in exerceise for þe countre of Ar-
toys. pagl. 241.
Plees remoued fro London to York. pa. 302
Pynde of the frenche kyng. pagl. 149.
Pynce Edward married the earle of He-
nawdes daughter. pagl. 159

Quene hyeth was fyrst let to ferme
to the citeyns of London. pa. 72
Quene passed betwene the abbot
of Westmynster and the cyte of London
pagl. 72
Quene of England sayled into Fraunce
pagl. 109
Quene of England was proclaimed en-
emy. pagl. 166
Quene forsayd landed in Englande by
strength. pagl. 166
Quene Anne was specyall good ladye to
the cyte of London. pagl. 302
Quene Anne died pagl. 304
Quene Margarete was receaued of the
Londoners. pagl. 172.
Quene Margarete made a voyage into
Englande pagl. 444.
Quene Margarete was taken. pagl. 454

Richarde the fyrste of that name &
sonne of Henry the seconde, began
to reigne in Englande, in the yere of our
lord. M. C. xxi. and the. xi. yere of the se-
conde Phylpp, and reigned. x. yeres wyth
odde monethes. In the fyrste yere of thys
kyng the cyte of London was commyt-
ted to the rule of. ii. balyffes, whych so co-
tinued tyl the. x. yere of kyng John. pa. 4
Rycharde the seconde of that name, and
sonne of pynce Edward sonne of Ed-
warde the thyrde, beganne bys reigne o-
uer Englande, the. xii. daye of Junye, in
the yere of our lord. M. CCC. lxxii. and
the. xii. yere of the. v. Charles than kyng
of Fraunce, & reigned. xii. yeres. pa. 292.
Rycharde the thyrde of that name, & bro-
ther of Edward the. iiii. beyng duke of
Glouceter and protectoure of Englande
beganne to blurpe the. xxvi. day of Juny
in þe yere of our lord. M. CCC. lxxiii
and the yere of Lewis than kyng of
Fraunce, and so contynued two yeres ful
and as much as frome the. xx. day of Ju-
ny to the. xii. daye of Auguste, by dayes.
lvii. pagl. 467.
Ranulph erle of Chester & of bys daugh-
ters. pagl. 42.
Raine

The table for the .viii. parte.

Rayne exceeding.	pagi. 157
Relpygnacion of the duchy of Normandy	pagi. 65.
Relpygnacion of kynge Rycharde.	pagi. 315
Relpygnacion shewed in the parlyament	pagi. 317.
Roberte knowles knyghte and of hys	scates. pagi. 214.
Roberte knowles toke Capyt Omers, &	other holdes. pagi. 229

S hoote a place of honoure in London was byent by the commons.	pagi. 294.
Saynte mary Ouerpes in Southwarke was fyrst buylded.	pa. 30.
Saynte Stephans chapell of Westminster begonne	pagi. 224
Siege layde to saynte Omers.	pagi. 193.
Spyge layde to Ampas.	pagi. 276.
Scottyshe kynge dyd homage to kynge John.	pagi. 23.
Scottes byekynge theyr oth	pagi. 127
Scottes were subdued.	pagi. 127.
Scottes had peace to theyr aduantage	pagi. 179.
Scottes were agayne ouerturned, as appereth	pagi. 182
Scottyshe kynge taken ppysoner, as appereth.	pa. 211.
Spensers were banysed.	pagi. 160.
Spensers both the father and the sonne were putte to death.	pagi. 168.
Sunne was turned to the colour of bloude	pagi. 163

T anner & byllayne surmpled hym heyr to the crowne of Englande.	pagi. 156.
Templers knyghtes of telyggon were destroyed.	pagi. 149.
The sentence agayne kynge John was denounced.	pagi. 26
The wardes of London were ceased	pagi. 289.
The spyttenes wer graunted at one tyme	pagi. 229.

Cytile of ryghte whiche the kynge of Englande hath vnto Scotlande, see in the	pagi. 117.
Cytile of Edward the thyrde whiche he hadde to the crowne of Fraunce, see in the	pagi. 232.
Cytile of the duke of Gloucestre hadde to the crowne was shewed at Paules crosse	pagi. 464.



Wardes and churches wpythin London.	pagi. 4.
Warpaunce betwene the byshoppe of Roome and kynge John.	pagi. 26.
Warpaunce betwene the Londoners and the constable of the towre.	pagi. 69
Warre betwene the kynge of Englande and of Fraunce.	pagi. 24
Warre was concluded betwene the sayd landes.	pagi. 272.
Warre betwene kynge John and hys lordes.	pagi. 33
Warre made in Normandy, as appereth	pagi. 126
Warre made in Guyan wpyth fortune thereof.	pagi. 164.
Warre betwene the frenche kynge and the kynge of Flaunders, as it appereth	pagi. 253.
Warde and maryage of heyr was graunted to the kynge, as it appereth.	pagi. 40.
Wyllpā Walworth slewe Jacke Straw	pagi. 294.
Wysurers were punysed, as it appereth	pagi. 248

20 Here endeth the seconde

(*) Table. (*)

*

1. The first of these is the fact that the
2. second of these is the fact that the
3. third of these is the fact that the
4. fourth of these is the fact that the
5. fifth of these is the fact that the
6. sixth of these is the fact that the
7. seventh of these is the fact that the
8. eighth of these is the fact that the
9. ninth of these is the fact that the
10. tenth of these is the fact that the

1. The first part of the report is a general introduction to the subject of the study. It discusses the importance of the study and the objectives of the research.

2. The second part of the report is a detailed description of the methodology used in the study. It includes information about the sample size, the data collection methods, and the statistical analysis techniques.

3. The third part of the report is a presentation of the results of the study. It includes tables, figures, and text describing the findings of the research.

4. The fourth part of the report is a discussion of the results and their implications. It discusses the strengths and limitations of the study and provides recommendations for future research.

5. The fifth part of the report is a conclusion that summarizes the main findings of the study and provides a final statement on the importance of the research.

(a) (b) (c)

1. The first of these is the fact that the
2. second of these is the fact that the
3. third of these is the fact that the
4. fourth of these is the fact that the
5. fifth of these is the fact that the
6. sixth of these is the fact that the
7. seventh of these is the fact that the
8. eighth of these is the fact that the
9. ninth of these is the fact that the
10. tenth of these is the fact that the

The first of these is the fact that the
 Government has not yet decided whether
 it will accept the offer of the
 United States to purchase the
 Alaska Pipeline. The second is the
 fact that the Government has not yet
 decided whether it will accept the
 offer of the United States to purchase
 the Alaska Pipeline. The third is the
 fact that the Government has not yet
 decided whether it will accept the
 offer of the United States to purchase
 the Alaska Pipeline.

1. The first of these is the fact that the
 2. second of these is the fact that the
 3. third of these is the fact that the
 4. fourth of these is the fact that the
 5. fifth of these is the fact that the
 6. sixth of these is the fact that the
 7. seventh of these is the fact that the
 8. eighth of these is the fact that the
 9. ninth of these is the fact that the
 10. tenth of these is the fact that the

The Prologue.

1.



Nowe for as muche
as we be comen to
the tyme, that offi-
cers were chosen &
chargid with þe rule
of the cytie of Lon-
don, it is necessarie

that there we do shewe what officers
they were, and of þe name that to them
was admittid and gyven. Then ye
shall vnderstande that at the coming
of Wylliam Conqueroure into this
lande, as euidentlye appereth by the
charter of him to the criteyns of Lon-
don graunted, that befoze those daies
and then, the rulers of the sayde crite-
zens were named *Port greuis*, which
woyde is diuuate oꝝ made of two sa-
on woꝝdes, as *Porte* and *greue*.

Porte is to meane a towne, and
greue is miente for a gardeyn oꝝ ruler
as who wolde meane, gardeyne, ru-
ler, oꝝ keeper of the towne. These of
olde tyme, wyth the lawes and custo-
mes then vsyd within this cytie were
registred in a boke called the *Domes-
day* in Saron tongue then vsed.
But in the later daies when the sayde
lawes and customes alterid & chaun-
ged, and for consyderacyon also that
the sayde booke was of small hande,
and soze defacyd, it was the lesse sette
by, so that yt was enbeselyd oꝝ losse,
so that the remembraunce of suche ru-
lers as were befoze the daies of this
Rycharde the fyrste, whose stoye shal
nexte ensue, are losse and forgoten.

Wherfoze nowe I shall begynne,
at the fyrste pere of the sayde fyrste Ri-
charde, the whiche of some wyters
is surnamed *Cure de Lyon*, and so
contynewe the names of all officers
as well baylyffs, Mayres, and shyp-
ues, tyll the laste peres of Rycharde
the thyrde kynge in dede and not of
trygher.

Whiche Baylyffs I shall ap-
poynte the rule of, from Mychelmas
to Mychelmas, & the Mayres frome
suche tyme and season as nowe is ac-
customyd & vsyd, that is to saye from
the daye of Symon and Jude vnto
the same feast nexte ensuyng, vpon
whiche daye the newe Mayre taketh
his charge at the Gylor haule, and
the olde Mayre is there and then by
charged of the sayde offyce of may-
raltys.

Nowe wolde I sayne
In woꝝdes playne
Some honoure sayne
And bynge to mynde
Of that auncyent cytie
That so goodlye is to se
And full trewe hath be
And also full kynde,

To prynce and kynge
That hath bozne iuste rulyngs
Syn the fyrste wyngynge
Of this Ilande by Bute
So that in greate honoure
By passynge of many a shewe
It hath euer bozne the flowre,
And laudable bute.

Of every cytie and towne
To seche the woꝝde towne
Neuer yet caste downe
As other many haue be
As Rome and Carthage
Hierusalem the sage
With many other of age
In stoye as ye may se

This so oldely founded
Is so surely groundes
That no man may confounde it
It is so sure a stone
That it is vpon sette
For though some haue it thrette

aa.1. with

with manasses gryn and greate,
yet hurte had it none.

Chyſte is the very ſtone,
That the cytie is ſette vpon
Whiche from all his ſoon
Hath euer preſerupd it
By his ſpecyall fauoure
Whiche is oure onely ſauoure
From the ſynfull behaueoure
That oure fozeſathers dyd comyt.

The partyſhe churches to reken
Of whiche number as I ſhall ſpeken
Wherin ſpeake many preſt & deaken
And Chyſte dayly they ſerue.
By meane of whiche ſacrifice
I truſte that he in all wyſe
This cytie for her ſeruyce.
Doth euer moze preſerue.

This cytie I meane is Troynouant
where honour & woꝛſhypp doth haunt
With vertue and ryches accordeant
No cytye to it lyke.

To ſpeake of euery commodite
fleſhe and fyſhe and all dentye
Cloth and ſylke with wyne plentye
That is for hole and lyke.

Breade and ale with ſpyces fyne
With houſes fayre to ſoupe & dyne
Nothyng lackyng that is condigne
for man that is on molde
With ryuers freſhe & holſom aper
With women that be good and fayre
And to this cytye done repayre
Of ſtraungers manyfolde.

The vitayle that herein is ſpente
In thye houſholdes dayly tentye
Betwene Rome and ryche Kente
Are none maye them compare
As of the mayre and ſhyppes thwayne
What myght I of the Juſtice ſayne
Kepte within this cytye playne

It were longe to declare.

For though I ſhulde all daye tell
O; that with my tyme dogerell
Myght I not yet halfe do ſpell
This towneſ great honoure
Therefore ſhortely as I began
Praye for it both chyldre and man.
That it maye contynue and
To beare of all the floure.

And ſo to dwell in reſte and peace
Good loꝛde graunt that it not ceaſe
But euer to haue moze encreaſe
If it be thy wyll
And to contynue the olde ſame
The kynges chaumber & right name
London to kepe withoute blame
As it hath hyther tyll.

who ſo him liketh theſe verſis to rede
with fauour I pray he wyll them ſpel
Let not the rudeneſſe of theym hym
lede.

For to deſpauce this tyme dogerell
Som part of þe honour it doth you tel
Of this olde cytye Troynouant
But not therof the halfe deil
Connyng in the maker is ſo adaunt.

But though he had the eloquence
Of Cully, and the moꝛalytie
Of Senek, and the influence
Of the ſwete ſugred Armonie
Of that fayre ladye Caliope
Yet had he not connyng perſyghte
This cytie to prayſe in eche degre
As it ſhoulde duely aſke of ryght.

¶ Ere after I ſhall declare the
wardes of this fozeſayde cy
tye, with alſo þe partyſhe chur
ches þe ſtand within the ſaide wardes.

The warde of þe towne wherein are
thye partyſhe churches

l.
Saynt

The wardes of London.

71

Saynt Olave
Alhalown at Barkynge.
Saynte Dunstane.

Saynt Andjewe vnderhafte
Saynt Katerins by Chyrlies church
Saynt Katerine Colman.

Byllyngsgate.
Saynt Botulphe
Saynt George in podpynge lane
Saynt Andjewe in Elchepe
Saynt Margarete callyd Watens
Saynt Mary byll.

ii. Porte Sowbyn warde. ii.
Saynt Botulphe withoute Algate.

Lyme strete warde. i.
Saynt Mary Aare.

Lande bypde warde. iii.
Saynte Benet at Grace churche
Saynte Leonarde in Elchepe
Saynt Margarete in Bydgstrete
Saynt Mages in Bydgstrete.

Byshoppes gate warde. ii.
Saynt Botholphe at the gate
Saynt Alborgth
Alhalowns with in saynt Helyns.

Comehyll warde. iii.
Saynt Michaell.
Saynt Peter.

Doogate warde. iiii.
Saynt Laurence Dountenap
Alhalown the moze
Alhalown the lesse.

Byadstrete warde. iiii.
Saynt Martyne Dintewiche
Saynt Benet fynke
Saynt Barthelmewe the lytell
Saynt Chylofer
Saynt Peter the pooze.
Alhalowns in the walle.

Walbzoke warde. v.
Saynt John in Walbzoke
Saynt Mary Bothawe
Saynte Swythpne in Candelwpe
strete.
Saynt Stephan in Walbzoke
Saynt Mary wolchurch in p pultry
Saynt Syth in Boclersburp.

Colmansstrete warde. v.
Saynt Stephan.
Saynt Olaff in the Jury
Saynt Margaret in Lothbery.

Candelwpestrete warde. vi.
Saynt Martyne Oigo;
Saynt Clement
Saynt Mphaell in crokyd lane
Saynt Mary Mchurche.

Chepe warde. vi.
Saynt Laurence in the Jury
Saynt Mary Bowe
Alhalowns in Honp lane
Saynt Mary of Colchurche
Saynt Mphedys in the Pultry
Saynt Benet Moxhogge
Saynt Martyne Dompers
Saynt Maryn in Iremonger lane
Saynt Mary.

Langbourne warde. vii.
Alhalown Stans in Lumbardstret
Saynt Gabryell
Saynt Denys in Lanchurche strete
Saynt Edmund
Saynt Nicholas Icon
Saynte Mary Wolnoth in Lum-
barde strete.

Cordwayner stretwarde. vii.
Saynt Mary of Alderniatp
Saynte Incelyne

Algate warde. viii.

aa.ii. Saynt

The Wardes of London.

Saynte Pancras.

Quen byth warde. xlvii.
 Saynte Mychaell.
 Saynt Mary somerset
 Saynte Mary Mowthawe,
 Saynte Nicholas Olasse
 Saynte Nicholas colde abbey
 Saynte Peter.

Byedstrete warde. xlviii.
 Alhalows in Byedstrete
 Saynte Myldrede
 Saynte Mathye
 Saynte John Euangelist
 Saynte augustyne at Paules gate
 Saynte Margarete moyses
 Saynte Botolph.
 Saynt Margarete in fryday strete.

Wynter warde. xlix.
 Saynte Martyne
 Saynte Mychell colege
 Saynte Thomas apostle.
 Saynte Jamys Garlyke byth
 Crypyte in knyghtydet strete.

Barnarde castell warde. li.
 Saynte Andzewe
 Saynte Benet.
 Saynte George
 Saynte Mary Magdaleyne in olde
 fyllhe strete.

Faryngdon warde within. lii.
 Saynte Yevan
 Saynt Nicholas in f fletheshablis
 Saynt fapthys in Dowlps churche
 Saynt Martyne within Ludgate
 Saynt Mychaell at Querne.
 Saynt faulter in faulter lane.
 Saynt Peter at the crosse of Chepe
 Saynte Gregory in Dowlps church-
 parde.
 Saynte Gemyn within saynte Mar-
 tyne the graunte.

Faryngdon warde without. liii.

Saynte Dunstone
 Saynte Byde
 Saynte Andzewe in Holbozne
 Saynt Sepulcre without Newgate

Albylsgate warde. liiii.
 Saynt Botolph without the gate
 Saynte Anne
 Saynt John zachary
 Saynt Leonarde in faulter lane
 Saynte Mary stanpge
 Saynt Mathewe in syluer strete.

Bassynge haule warde. lv.
 Saynte Mychaell there.

Crepelgate warde. lvi.
 Saynte mary Magdaleyn in mylke
 strete.
 Saynte Mary in Aldermanbury
 Saynt Mychaell in Hogynlane
 Saynt Albones in wodestrete
 Ellsng spittle that nowe is a parpthe
 churche.
 Saynt Olaf in syluer strete
 Saynt Gyles without the gate.

The summe of f parish churches
 within London. C. liii.

¶ Ere after ensue f Cathedzall
 churches, chapelles, & other
 churches that are within the
 Cytie.

The Cathedzall churche of saynt
 Poule in the ende of Chepe.

The hospytall called saynt Bar-
 tylmewys spittle.

The chapell of oure lady of Bar-
 bynge in the towre warde

f churche where the crossed fre-
 ers somtyme were.

f churche where the Iugustynes
 freers somtyme were.

f colege of S. Antony in f warde
 of Byedstrete.

f churche

The seuenth parte.

A church late called acrys standynge in Chepe.

An house where the gray feres were somtyme, standynge in the warde faryngdon within.

An house where þ blacke feres were somtyme standynge by Ludgate with in the foze lapde warde.

An house where þ white feres were somtyme, standynge in Fleetestrete.

A church of college called the Temple, standynge at the Temple barre.

A chapell standing in pardon church parde within Poulys.

A chapell standing in þ church parde at Poulys ouer the charnell house.

A chapell standynge wythin Crepell gate saynt Jamys in the wall.

A chapell called Waprey standing be lyde Byshoppes gate founded by the prestes of that fraternyte.

A chapel of corp^s Christi in þ Pultry

A chapel standing vpon Londobryge

A chapel standing in felde Hall pard of our Ladye.

A church standing by Poulys, called saynt Martyne le graunde.

¶ Churches and chapells without the cytye.

Westmynster church.

The kynges newe chapell

Saynt Stephans chapell.

Saynt Margaretes church.

A chapell at Cotehyll

A chapell of saynt Anne in Cotehyll strete.

A chapell at Rauncyale.

A parish church therby of s. Martine

A chapell of our Lady of Dewe.

Withoute Algate.

A parish church of our Lady standynge without þ barrys, called white chapell.

A colege of saint Katherine standing on the este ende of þ towre of London

A parish church of chapell wythin the lapde to wyre, of saynt Peter.

Southwarke.

A parish church of Mary Magdalene.

A parish church of saynt George.

An hospytall of college.

A parish church of saynte Olas.

A parish church called saynte Saviours.

Without the temple barre.

A parish church of saynte Clement

A chapell of saynte Spytte.

Saynt Ursula at Strande.

Withoute Smythfelde.

A church called saynt Johns withoute Smythfelde.

A church called Clerkenwell.

A chapell in pardon church parde.

Without Bishoppes gate.

Shordyche parish church.

¶ The summe of the cathedral churches, chapelles, and other suche lyke churches wythin the cytye and withoute is. c. lvi.

¶ Summe of all þ churches, aswell parish churches, chapelles & other wh in the cytye of without is. C. lb.

Richard the fyrste of that name, a seconde sonne of Henry the second, beganne his reigne ouer Englad in the moneth of Julye, and pere of oure

Lorde ten hundred, lxx. and ten, and the. xi. pere of the seconde Phylippe then kyng of Fraunce.

This Richard prouyded besyde to set good rule in Roymandy, when he had hearde of hys fathers deathe,

and after spedde hym into England, and after.

aa. llii. where



Richard the fyrste of that name, a seconde sonne of Henry the second, beganne his reigne ouer Englad in the moneth of Julye, and pere of oure

Richard the fyrste.

Rycharde the fyrste.

S comen
at Jemes.

where he was sorowfully receyved, and in the moneth of September folowynge and thyrde daye, he was crowned at Westmynstre of Baldwyn archbishop of Caunterburpe. Upon the whiche daye the Jewes of Englande and specially such as dwellyd within London and nere aboute, assembled of them a certayne number, and presumed farther then requyred for theyr authoryte. For whiche presumption they were fyrste rebuked and after one of theym stryken. Wherupon the kyng sente of his comon people supposyd that to be done by the kynges commaundement. Wherefore in a furpe as those that they hated as the deuil for theyr vserpe and other unhappye condicions, they fel upon them, and chased them to their houses, and there robbed and spoyled wythoute pyte and bent some of theyr houses, wherof the rumour ranne to Westmynstre to the kynges audyence. Wherefore,

in all haste he sente downe, georgynge straight commaundement that they shoulde cease of that ryot. But the people were in such ire and wodnes, that they refrayned not for al the kynges sonde, tyll they had executed the fyne of theyr malyce. And albeit, that this ryot was after greuouly shewed agayne the commons of the cyte, yet it passed unpunished, for the greates number of the transgressours.

The fyrste
the people.

And the same daye of coronacyon, all prisoners that laye in anye prison aboute London at the kynges sute, or for other small or sayned accions were frely deliuered.

Soone after the king gaue many dignities, and to his brother John he gaue the prouinces of Northampton, Devonshyre, and Cornewall, & created hym Earle of Lancaster. And then the kyng ordained the cyte of London to be ruled by two baylliffs whose names were as foloweth.

The fyth
baylliffs.

Anno domini. M. C. cc.

Balliuf

Henry of Chornepyll.

Rycharde fyrst Ryuer.

Anno domini. M. C. cxi.

Anno primo.

IT was not longe after that the kyng had thus exalted his brother John as befoze is shewed, but that he also preferred him to the marriage of the Earle of Glocesters daughter, by reason wherof he was Lorde of that Earledome. These greates aunncementes made hym after unkynde to his brother, and by pryde thereof to couete afterwarde the hole kyngedome.

This yere kyng Rycharde was ascoyled of the offence that he had dysyd in rebellyon agayn his father. In recompensacion wherof as testifyeth

the authoure Gwydo, he voluntarily toke vpo hym & promised to warre vpon Chyffes enemies. Albeit that other wyters shewe, that it was for that his father had so willed hym by his life. But for what cause, so it was preparation and prouision for his iourney was made from that day forthward.

This yere also the kyng enlarged Elpanoure his mother, whiche longe befoze at the commaundement of his father her husbande, was as a prisoner kepte in secreete keepynge. After which enlargynge, she lande was much gubbed by her counsaile. And this yere as sayeth Manulphe, kyng Rycharde

The helyn
eye of Elpa
noure bym
Rycharde
manulph.

The seventh parte

charde gave ouer the Castell of
Barwyke and Rochysburgh to the
Scottyshe kyng, for the summe of
t. thousande pounde, for the exployte
of hys boage. And fater moze he
solde to the olde byshop of Durham
his owne prouynce for a great summe
of monye, and created hym Earle of
the same. Wherfore the kyng sayd
after in game, I am a wondrous crafty
man, for I haue made a newe erle
of an olde byshop. By such meanes
the kyng emptied manye byshopes
and ryche prestes bagges and fylled
his cofers. And ouer that he graun-
ted out annuities and fees out of the
crowne, as thoughe he toughte no-

thyng of hys retynnyng. For thes
dede some of hys samplers as they
durste blame hym.

But he sayde to theym that in ty-
me of neede, it was good polycy for a
manne to ayde hym wth hys owne
and moze ouer he shewed therto, that
yf London were hys, at that tyme of
neede he wold sel it, yf he myght get a
conueniente marchaunte that for it
were able to paye.

Another way he hadde also to ga-
ther monye, for he had licence of In-
nocence the thirde of that name, to dy-
spence wth such as hym lyked wth
in hys realme for takyng vpon them
the crosse.

Anno domini. M. C. cxi.

Balliui

Thon Herlpon,

Roger Duke.

Anno domini. M. C. cxi.

Anno secundo



At the seconde yere in
the moneth of October
kyng Rycharde betoke
the gupdyng of the lād
vnto the byshoppe of
Ely then chaunceller of Englande, &
sayled into Normandy, wher setting
the costre vnder sad gupdyng. Mozt
ly after mette wth the frenche kinge
Phylip the seconde, the whych tomt
ly rode to Turon, and there ouerpal-
sed the Moztnes of winter. In which
passe tyme makyng ether wth other
assuraunce for contynuaunce of so
grete a iourney, at the spring of the
yeare these two prynces tooke they
boage toward the holle lande, that
is to meane kyng Rycharde by the
sea, & king Phylip by the lande, and
apoynted to mete agayne in the land
of Scyccilia or Sicil. In this mene
tyme, in Englande the Jewes in dy-
uerse places of the realme, as Lyncol-

ne, Staunfozde, Lynne were robbed
and spoiled, and at pozke, to the nom-
ber of. iiii. C. and moo, cut they; ma-
ster beynges and bled to death.

These two kynges accorpyng to
they; appoyntmente met in Scyccill
wher grudge beganne to kyndle be-
twene theym for correccyon of they;
souldyours. The frenche kyng
departed agayne fromme kyng Ry-
charde, the whych ther made certayn
ordinaunces for warre, as a towre or
castel of timber which he named Ma-
tegriffons, and also prouyded for by-
tall for bothe hoostes.

In this tyme also the kyng of
Cyprys hadde taken two shippes of
kyng Rychardes, and denyed the de-
liuerie of them. Wherfore the sayd
Rycharde entered the lande of Cyprys
makyng therein sharpe warre and
chased so the king from cite to cite,
that lastly he yelded hym vnto kyng
Rycharde.

Howe the Jewes
were killed the
seuen.

A verynter
betweene the. ii.
pyraces

Rycharde the fyrste

Rycharde bypon condycyon that he shulde not be thowen in bondes of pryson, whereof kyng Rycharde in the pryng of his promysse caste hym in bondes of syluer.

When kyng Rycharde had dwel- led there bypon two moonethes, and had taken his pleasure of that coun- try, and taken a mende at his owne wyll for his shippes, then he depar- ted from the sayde yle of Cyprys, & sayled toward Icon or Acris. In the whych course so keppynge toward Icon, he incountred a greate shype of the Soudans of Smyr, fraught with greate ryches, and tooke it, and so ca- me at lengthe to the cytye of Acris, wher at that tyme lay befoze the sayd towne the frenche kyng wth his hooste, and had losse a lytle befoze. ii. M. of his me, which were parted fro his hoost to haue done an enterpryse bypon the Turkes, but they were lay- ed for and dystressed.

Then as testyfyeth Peter Dylscop kyng Rycharde was ioyously recea- ued of the frenche kyng. After whose commynge, it was not longe that the sayde cytye was geuen by by apoint- mente as foloweth, and as affirmeth the sayde Peter, and also the cronycle of Fraunce. Fyrste that the Mara- syns shulde departe out of the cytye, leuynge behynde them horse, harnes bytall, and all other thyng be- longyng to warre. Also they shuld cause to be restored all suche prysonniers of chrysten men as they had vnder their keppynge, wth other couengintes whiche I passe ouer.

And thus was the cytye of Acris pel- den into the chrysten mennes handes in the moneth of August, & the yere of our lord. xi. C. lxxx & xii. But when it came to the partynge of the pray of the cytye, there began malysce to kyn

de his bynde, whych was not lyght- ly after quenched.

Of this varyaunce betwene these two kynges of England & of Fraunce bynners maners are shewed. For Bo- lycronyca sayth that it beganne by re- son that kyng Rycharde denyed to kyng Philippe halfe of his win- ynges in Cyprys, accordyng to the couenautes betwene them assuted at Tuton. But kyng Rycharde sayd that the conuencion there made, stret- ched no further then to suche goodes as was wonne wthyn the lymttes or boundes of the holpe lande. In o- ther grudge was, by reason that the frenche kyng adde not the Earle of Champayne beynge in dystresse of neede. Wherefore the sayde Earle be- yng discontente sayde to the frenche kyng. For hether to I haue done ac- cordyng to my duty, but hereafter I shall do as I am compelled by neede for your grace hath byther to chery- shed me but for myne, but now I shall go to him that is moze redier to geue then to take, and so departed to king Rycharde, of the whych he had all his pleasure. The thyrde cause was as sayth Kanulph, for as much as king Rycharde at his begynnynge in Sci- cill maryed the syster of the kyng of Flaunde, where befoze he hadde pro- mysed to marye the syster of the sayd kyng Philippe.

But of these articles speaketh nothyng the frenche cronycle, albe it he sayeth greate default vnto king Rycharde sayynge, in sedycious and byle wordes, that kyng Rycharde falselye byake his appoymentes, and kepe no promysse that by hym was made. Howeouer the sayde cronycle sayeth that he solde the yle of Cyprys vnto the Templers for thyrtye thousande marke, and after

The cause of the dyscord betwene these two kynges.

Howe kyng Rycharde toke a shype of the Soudans.

The metynge agayne of the ii. kynges at Acris.

Howe the cytye of Acris was geuen by.

The malysce beyned.

toke

The seventh parte.

84

toke it agayn from them by strength and deliuered it vnto Guy de Lellis nan that was the lasse Chyftene of kyng of Hierusalem. And ouer this the sayde French cronycle sayth that he toke from a knyght of the duke of Syrrech the sayde dukes baner, and in dyspyte of the sayde duke trade it vnder fote, and dyd vnto it all the dyspyte he myghte. And ouer all this where as Conradus Marquis of Tyre was trayterous ly slayne by two of his owne seruauntes, that kyng Ry-

charde shulde laye the charge therof vnto the frenche kyng.

For these grudges and sykenes, he also fere of treason to be wrought betwene Saladine the Souda, and kyng Rycharde as assymeth ealed geth þe forsayd authoure, kyng Phylippe with a small company of Chyppes departed from Icon o: Acrys, & sayld to Bayl o: Dopl, and there respyng hym a season, contynued his iournepe vnto Roome, and so lastlye into his owne prouynce of Fraunce

The departing
of the French
kyng.

Anno domini. M. C. xcii.

Wylliam Hauerthall.

Balliut

Ihon Buknot.

Anno domini. M. C. xciii.

Anno. llii.

In the thyrde yere and mooneth of Nouember, when the French kyng was thus departed, hig Rycharde with the duke of Burgoyne whom the French kyng had left be hynd him to haue the rule of the French hoost lefte and remaynyng in Acce and the country there aboute called befoze hym dyuers persons o: pledges of Turkes, for the persourmaunce of certayne appoyntmentes taken wth them at the tyme kyng o: geuyng by of the sayde cytye of Acrys. Whereof one aspecyall couenauant was, þe by a certayne day than expyred, they shuld cause the holy crosse to be restoyed vnto the chrystyan pyntes. The whych for he saw well that they wolde not o: myghte not persourme, he therfore put in execution of Turkes ouer the number of. v. M. as testyfyeth the French cronycle. But that agreed not all of the best wth the former sayinge, consyderyng the cytye was deliuered by appoyntment, there shulde not so

manye Turkes remaine there. But Peter Dystrope sayeth, that for breakeyng of this apoyntement, kyng Rycharde put to death all such Turkes as were than within the cytye of Acrys, whyche maye be mente by the hostages o: pledges.

It was not long after that tydinges was broughte vnto kyng Rycharde that the cytye of Hierusalem was withoute anye greate strength of souldyours, and that it myghte be wonne w easye labour. Wherefore kyng Rycharde assembled the lordes to haue theyr counsaile, where it was concluded that euerye captayne shulde prepare hym to go thither. Upon whych agreement, the chrystyan hoost spedde them in suche wyse, that they were wthin. v. myles of the sayde cytye of Hierusalem, where they tooke a newe counsaile howe they shul order them & their people to lay theyr sege about the citie. In whych counsaile it was concluded, that kyng Rycharde with his Englyshemen shulde haue the barwarde, and the Duke of Burgoyne

The agreement
betwene king
Rycharde and
the Frenchme

Richard the fyrste

The vntre-
fastnes & dyt-
simulation of
the frenche

gopne the ceterlathe. After whiche
conclusyon taken, the kyng spedde
hym vpon hys waye towarde the cy-
tye. But by what myshappe or myf-
fortune I cannot saie, so sone as the
kinge was departed, the duke called
the lordes of fraunce befoze him, and
sayde, it is euidente vnto you, that al
best oure heade and souerayne lord
is absente, the floure of the chyualry
of fraunce is ptesente.

And yf anye thyng be done to the
honoure of the chystien, and rejoyche
of myfdeis, yt is most lykely to be do-
ne by vs, consyderinge the insufficy-
ency of Englyshemen and other, yet
neuerthelisse, what somer honour
growe by oure dedes to the chystien
hoost, it shalbe accompted vnto king
Rycharde because of hys ptesence, so

that we shall haue the payne and tra-
uayle, and Englyshe men shall haue
the honoure. Wherefoze, yf ye wyll
do by my counsaile, we wyll retorne
vnto Acre, and there tarpe tyll we
se farther. Some agreed to thys co-
unsayle and the moze in nomber, and
the othe spedde theym in all haste af-
ter kyng Rycharde, and shewed to
hym of the Dukes retourne, where-
he beyng so enfourmed returned al
so vnto Acre.

The retorne
of kyng Ry-
chard to Acre

It was not longe after that the
sayde Duke was takenne wth gre-
uous sykenesse and dyed. And about
that tyme also dyed Baldewynne the
Archbishoppe of Caunterburpe,
whiche amonge other Lordes of En-
glande, accompanied the kyng in
that iourney.

The death
of the Duke of
Burgoyne

Anno domini. M. C. xciii.

Anno domini. M. C. xciii.

Ballui

Arcolas Duke.

Anno quarto.

Peter Rowlay.

The beleagere-
ment of kyng
Rycharde.



About thys season of
Mychelmasse in the
thir. yere of hys reigne
of this sayd Richard
speddynges were brou-
ghte to hym that the
twone or castel of Ja-
pheth was besyged of Saladyne,
and lykely to be soone wonne, wth
oute the chystien wer the soner ap-
ped. Wherefoze kyng Rycharde, whiche
Peter Wyctroy calleth the good kyng
Rychard, sped hym thither wth his
armye by water, and sente another
hooste of frenchemen and other by
lande. But so yt was or the chystien
myghte wyne thether, the sayde to-
ne and castell were won, and the pry-
soners therein taken, were sent by wa-
ter towarde suche prysons as Saladyne

had apointed them vnto. With
the which of good fortune kyng Ry-
chard met and them rescowyd. And
that done, with hys Turkes whiche he
conuayed he put in sure holde, & held
on hys iourney to Japheth, and there
by strength rescued the towne and ca-
stell and restoyed the chystien to theyr
former possession, and left wth them
moze strength of knyghtes. And for
to be the moze fered of the myscrean-
tes, kyng Rychard caused hys priso-
ners to hym belongynge to be slayne
where other solde them to their great
aduantage, by meanes whereof he
was had in wonderfull feare of the
Turkes.

The retorne
of the kyng
of Japheth

Then kyng Rychard after this
wyctroy hadde at Japheth, wonne al
strong holdes called Waton and Sa-
dys

The seuenth parte

dies, and strengthened them with chyr-
sen knyghtes. And with such good-
des as he there wanne of þe Turkes
he repayred the castel of Ascalon and
other, that greatly was impayred by
the warre of the Turkes.

In this season and tyme þe kynge
Rycharde was thus occupied in the
holye lande, the byshoppe of Ely as
before is sayde haupnge the rule of
Englande, dyd manye cruell dedes,
and oppressed the clergie and also the
laye see. He wolde comenlye tye in
a thousande hoise, and greued abbay-
es by meane of hys gyses of lodgyng
with theym. Also he helde in hys han-
des the sea of Poike for long season
And after the deth of Baldwyne that
died as before is shewed in holye
lande, he also tooke the sea of Caun-
terbury vnder his rule. Then he pry-
ued Gessy that was chosen to the sea
of Poike of hys mouables, and caste
hym as a prysoner in the Towre of
London.

And soon after called a counsaile
at Westmynster as the kinges procu-
rator, and as legate of the .b. of Ro-
me then Innocent the .iii. At this cou-
cil Huges Rouant then byshoppe of

Chester, a great famylie of the sayd
byshoppe of Ely, putte forth a com-
playnte agayne the monkes of Coue-
try, þe thei had shed the sayde Huges
bloud befoze the hygh autler of theyr
churche. For which cause the byshop
of Ely demed, that the sayde mun-
kes, shulde put frome theyr sayde ab-
bay, and clarkes shuld be set in there
for them, so that by myghte the mun-
kes were put thence and dysparkled
aboute in sondry places, and clerkes
with prybendes set in theyr stalles.

Also the forrenamed Byshoppe of
Ely called in proper name Wylliam
de longe Champe, contynuyng hys
tyrannes, pryued Huges byshoppe of
Durham of all maner of worshyppe
and greued the byshoppe of Winche-
ster, and wretched nygh all the lande

But so faste as this innaturall or
euell dysposed manne besyed hym to
bet and greue the chyrsten menne in
Englande, so faste besyed this good
knyng Rycharde to bette a bette the in-
fedeles of Surte. So that dayly he
wanne of them, or at the lest put them
frome the wyppynge of such townes
and holdes, as they by theyr greete
strength intended to haue wonne.

A complaynte
of þe monkes of
Cowntrey.

Anno domini. M. C. xciii.

Balliui

Roger Duke.

Rycharde knyng of Alen.

Anno domini. M. C. xciv.

Anno quinto.



At the ende of Septem-
ber and begynnyng of
the .v. yere of knyng
Rycharde, Guy de Le-
spengeman last chyrst-
ian knyng of Jerusalem dyed, a Tho-
ras a noble Chyrstian man captayne
of a towne called Sur, was shote
after slayne by the Turkes. Whose
wyfe for as muche as she was ryght

full enherytoure of the crowne of Je-
rusalem, the knyng gaue her in mar-
age vnto the Earle of Champayne.
And for knyng Rycharde perceaued
well the Chyrstian hooste mynyshed
dayly, as wel by insympties as lake
of bytyle and other wyse, he sought
menes of a pence or trespase for a tyme
and had it graunted for .iii. yeres. The
whych peace stablyshed and proclay-
med

med in the hoste and countre nere a
boute kyng Rycharde betoke the ru
le and gubdyng of the chysten vn
to the Caste of Champayne, promy
syng him o; the trewe were ended to
come wth a stronger host, and wth
goddes myghte to set hym in posses
sion of the cyte of Ierusalem as the
eyght of hys wyfe.

Then Hubert byshoppe of Salys
burpe podye forth hym selfe frome the
kyng to the holpe cyte, and offered
there an host and returned agayne to
the kyng. After whose retourne, the
kyng takynge leaue of the Caste of
Champayne and other, toke his wypp
pyng at Acris o; Acon, whych is na

med Cholomayda also, and so retur
ned to the yle of Cypre o; Cyprys.

Thens the kyng sente the quene
hys wife and her sister with the moze
parte of hys people vnto Cypyll, and
he with a smal copany for he myghte
not endure the softenesse of the sea,
tooke hys wypppyng in the moneth
of September, & sayled w a stronge
wynde towarde a countre called
Hystria. But he was bypven by force
of wetherpyng betwene Venysse and
Aquilegia o; Aquilegia, and howed
there a season, and colled heither and
thether, so that lastely he was espy
ed and taken of the Duke of Styrye
chys menne.

Howe kyng
Rycharde
was taken of the
duke of Styrye
chys men.

Anno domini. M. C. cxb.

Balliui

Wylliam fy; Isabell.

Wylliam fy; Arnolde.

Anno domini. M. C. cxbi.

Anno. bi.



About the moneth
of October and. vi.
yere of his regne
chys good kyng
Rycharde was ta
ken in foyme solo
wyng. As he laye
thus as befoze is sayde, betwene Ve
nice and Aquilegia a prouince of the
duke of Styryche, one Meynarte of
Goyezyn ruler of that countre vn
der the fo; sayde duke, made oute cer
tayne souldoyours for to haue taken
hym. But he by hys prouidence and
manhode escaped & sayde Maynard
o; Maynarte, howbeit that some of
hys knyghtes were there taken.
The kyng Rycharde passed the cou
ntre secretly, tyll he came to a towne
named Frysake.

In thys towne then proueste o;
ruler a knyghte called Frederyche de
Saynte Doom, the, whych also byd

hys demanoure to take the kyng
and toke sxe of hys knyghtes pry
soners, but hym selfe wth the rem
nant of his copany escaped. Then
the kyng seing & he was in daunger
of hys enemyes, dyde moze into the
way toward Almayn. But chys was
sone knowen of hys enemyes, so & by
& meanes of one called duke of Lim
ple a cosyn to the Emperoure, all the
wayes were closyd in such wyse, that
in the end kyng Rycharde was taken
by the seruautes of & sayd duke, nere
vnto a cite o; towne called Meue o;
Meune, within the land o; terroire
of the Emperoure, & after broughte
vnto the sayde duke Limple, o; after
some to the duke of Styrych, & which
spoyled hys all & he had, & after caste
him in prysyn, & there streghely kept
him by the space of a moneth, and at
the monethes ende sent him vnto He
ry the. vi. of that name, o; after some
wynters

Howe
kyng Rycharde
was taken

The senenth parte.

Mytters the. v. sonne of the fyrst Fre-
dericke then Emperoure of Almaigne,
the which helde him in moze vyle pry-
son from that tyme tyll lene after and
couenaunted with þe duke of Ostrich
to haue the thyrd parte of the profite
that came of kyng Rycharde.

Aboute the sondaye of Palmys,
the emperour brought forth the kyng
before the lordes of Almaigne, there to
geue answer vnto suche thynges as
shulde be layde vnto hym. Where he
came forth w so good a countenance
and also answered so discretly and di-
rectlye to all maters layde vnto his
charge, that the Emperoure was not
alonely bende to shewe to hym mercy
but also he dyd to hym honoure and
worshyppe, and helde hym at moze ly-
bertye after that dape.

It is redde of this Rycharde, that
durynge the tyme of his imprisonment
he shulde sle a lpon, and teare þe
harte out of his bodye, where tho-
rough he shulde deserue the name of
Rycharde Cure de Lpon, and that he
shulde with a stroke of his swerde sle the
emperours sonne, and also deslozys

the emperours doughter. But these
are fables ymagined by englysh tale
tellers, to auance they kyng Richard
as the Byttons by they sayned talys
auanced they kyng Arture. In this
passetyme Wylliam Longeshampe,
bysshop of Ely, continuing his crue-
lyte and tyrannye within Englande,
was lastely by strength of the lordes
put out of the land. Then he came to
the kyng beyng prysoner, and shewid
for hym selfe the beste he coude. But
when he sawe he might not begyle the
kyng with his sugred wordes, he had
small trust of the kynges fauour, & re-
turned into Fraunce, to tary there þe
kynges couynge.

This yere John the kynges bro-
ther by excyting of the frenche kyng
when he heard of the takynge and im-
prysonyng of his brother, beganne to
make warre wpythin the lande, & toke
by strength þe castelles of Wyndesore
and of Notyngham & other. And the
frenche kyng vpon his partye made
stronge warre in Normandy, as it is
before shewed in the story of þe second
Philyppe then kyng of Fraunce.

Anno domini. M. C. cxi.

Balliui

Robert Belsaunte,

Jokell Josue.

Anno domini. M. C. cxii.

Anno. xii.

Cal. per.



In the seven yere of kyng
Rycharde, Hubert byshop
of Salysbury, the whiche
had accompanied þe kyng
in that botage, and was sent with the
quene into Sicilly, returned & came
to the kyng where he was prysoner.
Whom the kyng sent soone after in-
to Englande, to haue þe guidynge ther
of, and also to treate wpyth the lordes
and commons of his Realme, howe
he myghte be sette at lybertye.

It was not longe after the comynge
home of this Hubert, but the munkes
of þe house of Chyrtres church of Cau-
terburpe chase hym to the Archebys-
shoppes see, and hadde the palle, and
was stallyd soone after. Thys was
ealy to the munkes, how wel þe Mar-
nes of Baldwyne had somdeale gre-
ued theym. And though the Bald-
wyne were a good man & hols in his
lyfynge, yet one thyng he dyd to the
derogacyon of the munkes of Cau-
terburpe

bb. i.

terbutye, for he purposyd to put the prerogative of the election of the archbishop from the monks.

And because therof, he beganne to buylde greute houses nere vnto the Monkes churche, by fauoure of the king Henry the seconde (but not with out wedpyng of bloude) and there entendid to haue set in secular chanons with prebendys and suffraganes of bishoppes for to treate with the saide chanons of the foresayd election, and to put by the monks clerely. But the monks when they sawe they myght no longer resiste Baldwyn, they then appealed to Innocent the thyrde byshoppe of Rome, by whose commaundemente that woike ceasid, & so stode vnsynghed tyll the sayde Baldwyne was deade.

After whose deathe the Monkes

made þe woike playne to the grounde Trevisa translatoure of Polycronicon, sayth it was wonder that Baldwyn wolde in that maner deale with the monks, considering he was first archdeacon, & then whyte make, and then abbot, and after byshop of Worcester, and laste archbishoppe, and to bypnyng men of moze impertye lyfe, in to the place of men moze persyte, & to chaunge relyggyouse men for secular

But yet the saide Trevisa allowith Baldwynes dede or entet for good for he sayth that Chyriste was the hed of holy churche, and called and made his apostels byshoppes, but none of them was munke or yet frere. Wherefore Baldwyne dyd better to pefarre the relyggyon whych Chyriste made, then the relyggyon whych was instytuted and ordeyned by man.

Anno domini. M. C. xcvi.

Gerarde de Jutloche.

Ballui

Robert Duraunt.

Anno domini. M. C. xcvi.

Anno. viii.

The. viii. yere



The ransome
of kyng Ry-
charde.

At the moneth of January and. viii. yere of þe reigne of kyng Rycharde, when the sayde Rycharde had sufferyd harde pylsonment bypon the tearme of a yere and thye monethes, he was deliuered out of pylson for the ssume of an. C. thousande ponde of sterlyng money.

For pledge wherof, he leste in the keppinge of the Emperoure, the Byschoppes of Roan and of Bath. But not for all, for a great parte was payed or the kyng were deliuered. For paymente of whiche ransom all the wolfe of whyte monks and chanons was taken and solde, and ringes and crossys of prelates, with vesselles and chalices of all churches thopoughe þe

lande, & ouer that. xcvi. Mynes were scraped or spoyled of the golde & syluer that bypon them befoze tyme was laide, for no priuylege of holy church nor other persone at that season was sparyd. Then kyng Rycharde came vnto Swyne in Flaunders, and taryed there two monethes, other to abyde the wynde, or ellys to make prouysyon for chynges whiche neded. There þe emperours men had almost taken him agayne. So the emperour forthought the deliuary of kyng Rycharde, as Pharaos forthought þe deliuary of the chyldren of Israel.

Then the kyng toke shipping, & landed in þe end of Marche at Sandwyche, and from thens came streight vnto London, where he was receiued with

The seventh parte.

15.

with all tope and honour. And when he hadde a season rested him there, he with a certayne number of knyghtes rode to Nottingham, & won the castel and after the castel of Eghyll by force of armes, and set the wardens of theym in warde.

And that done, he called a councel of his lordes at wyndchester, where by authoite of the sayd councell, he depriued John his brother then being in Fraunce of al honour, & toke from him all suche landes as he befoze had giuen to hym, & crowned hym sone after againe king of England in þe said cytie of Wyndchester. After the which coronacion he called a parlyamente, by vertue wherof he resumpd all patents and annuities, fees and other grauntes befoze his voyage by hym solde and graunted, and caused the parties to be contentyd with suche reuenues and profytes as they had receyued of the sayde offces or landes in tyme of his absence, & sparyd not any persone for any sufficiencye of wytyng that to him befoze was made.

When kyng Rycharde hadde by these foresayd meanes gatherd some money, he then in the moneth of Iuly sayled into Fraunce, and besegyd a castel called Arques, and sped there as witnesseth Policronyca diuersly. Which woide diuersly may well here be spoken. For who so redeth þe french cronycle, he shall fynde that þe french kyng was byctoz. But and he rede the englyshe boke, then shall he fynde kyng Rycharde byctoute. Wherfoze me thynketh Ranulphe sayd wel when he sayde they spedde dyuersly. For it is so dyuerse by the repoyte of wyrters, that the certayntie to whom the honour shulde be giuen is hard to be knowne.

All be yt that in the countrey of

Blois, as witnesseth the sayd french cronycle, kyng Rycharde scapyd the frenche hoste, and tooke the kynges somer hoise, with parte of his treasure. But in shorte whyle after, a trefwe was concluded betwene these two kynges for a pte.

Then Johan whiche hadde tourned to the frenche kyng agayne his owne brother, seynge the fame and honour of his brother, and feblenesse of his owne power, made meanes vnto Elanoure his mother, by whose medycyon he was reconcyled vnto his brother the kyng, and after became his trefwe knyghte.

When the kyng and his brother Johan were thus agreed, they rode ouer the land to dyspte the countreys and se howe they were guyded by the officers of the kyng. Amonge other two there were, whiche shewyd þe they wolde do many thynges to the kynges profyte, the one was abbot of Cadonence within Normandy, and that other was named Wyllyam with the longe bearde.

The abbot warned the kyng of the fraude of his officers, wherby he thought by the punishment of his officers, he shulde wyne great fauour of the people. Then this abbot gate a warrant of the kyng, and at London called diuerse officers befoze him, for to pelde to hym theyr accompte. But he dyed shortly, so that his purpose came to small effecte. And Wyllyam with the longe bearde shewed to the kyng the outrage of the ryche men, whiche as he sayd sparyd theyr owne and pylled the poore people.

It is said that this Wyllyam was borne in London, & purchasid that name by vse of his bearde. He was sharpe of wytte, and some deale lettered, a bolde man of speche, and sadde

bb.ii. of

The agrement
betwene king
Rycharde and
his brother
Johan.

the kyng
shulde be
put into
the landes
of
him, all his
owne graunt
and sales.

of countenaunce, and toke vpon him greater dedes then he coulde welde, and some he vsed cruelly, as apperith in appeaching of his owne brother of treason the whiche was a Burges of London, & to hym had shewed great kynnesse in his yowthe.

Thys William styed and excyted the common people to desyre and loue fredome and lyberte, and blamed the excesse and outrage of ryche menne. By suche meanys he dreyue to hym many greate companyes, & with all his power defendyd the poore menys cause agayne the ryche, and accused dyuers vnto the kynge, shewynge that by theyr meanys the kynge loste many forsaytes and escheatys. For this, gentylmen and men of honoure malygned agayne hym. But he had suche comforte of the kynge, that he kepte on his purpose.

Then the kynge beyng warned of the congregacions that this William made, commaunded hym to cease of suche doinges, & the people myght exercise theyr artes & occupacions, by reason wherof it was left for a whyle. But it was not longe or the people folowed hym, as they befoze that tyme had done. Then he made vnto theym colacions or exhortacions, and toke for his anteteme, *Haurietis aquas in gaudio de fontibus saluatoris*. That is to meane, ye shall drayne in tope waters of the wellys of oure sauoure. And to this he added, I am sayde he the saupour of poore men, ye be poore, and haue assailed & harde handes of ryche men. Nowe drayne ye therfoze helesfull water of loze of my wellis, and & with tope, for the tyme of your visitacion is comen. I shall (sayde he) departe waters from waters, by waters I vnderstande the people. Then shall I departe the people whyche is good

and meke, from the people that is wicked and proude, and I shall vsue the good and the euill, as & lyght is departed from the darkenesse.

When thys came to the knowlege of the archebyschoppe of Caunterburpe, he by counsaile of the lordes of & spiritualte sente vnto thys William, commaundyng him to appere befoze the lordes of the kynges counsaile, to answer vnto such maters as there shulde be layde vnto hym.

At which day this william appeared, haupnge wth hym a multitude of people, in so muche that the lordes were of hym adrad. For the whyche cause they temptyd hym wth pleasant wordes for & tyme, & commaundyd certayne persones in secrete manner to espie when he were boide of his companie, and then to take hym, and to putte hym in sure keepynge. The whiche accordynge to the commaundement at tyme conueniente as they thought, sette vpon hym and to haue taken hym. But he with an are resisted theym and slewe one of theym, and after fled to saynt Mary Bowe church of Cheape, and toke that for his sauegarde, defendynge hym by strengthe and not by the suffrages of the church, for to him dreyue shortly great multitude of people.

But in shortly processe, by meane of the heddis and rulers of the cytye the people minished, so that in shortly tyme, he was left with fewe personys and after by fyre compellyd to forsaie the church and so was taken, but not without shedig of blood. After which takynge he was aregnyed befoze the iudges, & there with nyne of his adherentes, caste and iudged to die, & was hanged & they wth hym the daye followinge. But yet the rumour ceased not, for & comon people cased a great cryme

Colacions
and exhortacy
ons made by
Willia with
the longe
beards.

Howe Will
iam with the
longe beards
tooke Bowe
church.

crpme vpon the archbysshop of Caunterbury & other, and sayde þ by they meanes Wyllyam, whych was an innocent of such crimes as were obiecte and put agayne him, & was a defedoꝝ of the pooꝛe people agayne extoꝛp-ners and wꝛonge doers, was by them put wꝛongfully to death, appꝛouyng him an holy mā & martyꝝ by this tale folowing, sayeng þ a man being lyke of the scuers, was cured by vertue of a cheyne whych this Wyllyam was bounde wꝛthyn tyme of hys dures of impꝛysonement, whiche by a pꝛeste of the alipe of the sayde Wyllyam was openly declared & pꝛeached. Wherby he bꝛought the people in suche an ex-roure, that they gaue credence to hys woꝛdes, & secretly in the night conuey- ed away the iebert that he was hanged vpon, and scraped away þ blode that was shed of him when he was taken, oꝛ ellys when he was hedded & quarteryd, so þ they made there an holowe place by fetchyng awaye of that erth,

and sayde þ syke men & women were cured of dyuerse syknesse, by vertue of that blod & earth. By these meanes and blowing of fame, that place was the moze vlytred by women & vndys-crete perlones, of þ whiche some wat-ched there the hole night in pꝛayer, so that the lenger this continued, þ moze disclaunder was anoyd to the iustys-ces, and to suche as put hym to death

Not wꝛthstandyng in pꝛocesse of tyme, when his actes were publyshed as the slepyng of a man with his owne hande, and vsyng of hys concubyne wꝛthyn saynte Mary churche in tyme of his there beyng, as he openly con-fessed in the houre of his death, wꝛth other detestable crimes, somwhat ke- led the greate flame of the hasty pyl- gꝛymage. But not clerely, tꝛyll the archbysshoppe of Caunterbury accu- sed the pꝛeste that bꝛought by þ fꝛysle fable, and also caused that place to be watched, that suche ydolatre shulde there no moze be vled.

Anno domini. M. C. xcviij.

Anno domini. M. C. xcix.

Balliui

Roger Blounte

Anno. ix.

Nicholas Duke.

ix. p. m.

In þ moneth of Apryll and ix. yere of kyng Rycharde when he had pꝛouyded to sende foꝛthe. xx. thousande pounde to the emperour, foꝛ full pay- mente of hys raunsome, the pledges whiche had lyen foꝛ the same, came so- denly into Englande, & shewed vnto the kyng that after his departing, the emperour sent them vnto the duke of Ostꝛiche, to remayne wꝛth hym tꝛyll the money were payde. And foꝛther there they shewed that the saide duke was accursed of Innocent the thꝛyde then bishop of Rome by reason of his

wꝛonge done to the kyng, & that hys pꝛouince was greued with many mis- chues. And as þ duke rode foꝛthe on a dape in his dyspoꝛt being saint Ste- phans date, he hurte his fote in suche wyse wꝛth a thorne oꝛ other venym, whiche ranced & gtewe so soꝛe, þ lastly he shulde dye oꝛ cut it of. But in hope of recouerye he contynued, tꝛyll in the ende he was warned þ he shulde dye. Then he sent foꝛ his bꝛysshoppes, and askyd to be assopled of the sentence of the churche whiche he stode in. The whiche was denyed hym, excepte he wolde sweare to stande and abide the

bb.iii. oꝛ dy-

of dynaunce and dome of holy church to wyche the wronge that he hadde done to kynge Rycharde. The duke swate, and was assayed, and shortly after the two Byschoppes pledgys for the money were deliuered at their lybertye.

Then kynge Rycharde calling to mynde that the bittermost daye of the trewece taken betwene hym and the frenche kynge approached, made him redy and sayled into Normandy. Where befoze hys commynge the frenche kynge by occasyon of þe Normannes as saith þe frenche boke, was entred þe countrey of Burgis toward whome kynge Richard sped hym with all possyble speede, so that both hostes laye partid with a ryuer called Osson or Oysne.

Then to folowe the sayeng of the frenche boke, for so much as the englyshe cronycle speaketh lytle or nothing of this acte, lette wise men that heare this cronycle, construwe it after theyr dyscrecyons. For all be it the frenchman wrote yt to the honoure of frenchemen, yet to othet that shal reade or heare it, because it soundyth so nere butrouthe, it shal rather redounde vnto theyr dishonoure. For the frenche cronycle sayth, that these two hostes thus as aboue is sayde lyeng togither without shynnyng or asfautte, kynge Richard contrary the opinyon and minde of his loydes, with a fewe accompanied and unharnysched shulde come to the frenche kynges tente, and there in ptesence of his loydes shuld do homage to þe frenche kynge for the duchye of Normandy and counteys of Angeou and of Poytyers, and there swoze to the kynge to kepe peate durynge his lyfe, and after but. dayes met agayne and fynysched the sayde peate, with assuryd othe by

pon eyther partie, and after departed as frendes eicher resoyting into their owne countrey. But it semed a faynt peate. For within foure monethes or lesse folowynge, kynge Rycharde with his hoste entred the prouince of Berry, and layd siege to þe castel of Wiersoune, and gate it by strength, and after poded to the castell of Royncourte the whiche was deliuered to hym by appoyntement.

When kynge Phylipp harde of the wyntinge and ouerthrowe of the castell of Wiersoune, he in damagynge of kynge Richard layde syege to the castell of Aubeuple, and it assayed egerly. But it was so stronge and so well defendyd by the Normannes, þe frenche kynge was holden of. When kynge Richard had garnysched and fortifyed þe castell of Royncourte with all thyng necessary to the warre, he drewe hym toward Aubeuple to remoue kynge Phylipp from that syege and fell vpon the frenche menne by warrely.

But the frenchmen quit them so knyghtly, that they chased kynge Rycharde and hys people, and toke a Normanne knyghte, named Guy de Thonars a man of greates hardynes. And then kynge Phylippe returned to the castell and towne of Aubeuple, and assauted it moze sharply, so that in the ende the souldiours of þe towne yelded it with the castell for a certayne summe of money.

And when he had posseltyon of þe towne, he threwe downe þe castell platne with the grounde, & after strenghted the towne with frenchmen, and then poded vnto the castell of Gylours, and from thens resoyted to the fornamed castell of Royncourte, and assayed it in so cruell maner, that shortly he wanne it, and toke therin. xv. knygh-

tes and. xliiii. yemen, wth plentie of
bytaile and armoure. In thys tyme
and season kynge Rycharde gathered
ne we strength, and alyed hym wth
Balworne Earle of Flaunders and
wth Arnolde Earle of Dampmar.

tyr and of Bolepne. By whose mea-
nes as wptneseth the frenche booke
kynge Rycharde wasted so;e the coun-
trye of Fraunce, and byente therein
some townes and bylages, and toke
therein manye ryche prayes.

Anno domini. M. C. xcix.

Anno domini. M. CC.

Constantine fpy Arnolde.

Ballini.

Anno. r

Roberte le Beawe.



About the beginnyng
of the moneth of Octo-
ber, and. x. yere of Ry-
chard f. sayd Rycharde
entred the country of
Unequercyne, wth a
strong host & made there in cruel war
in destroyng of the country & assau-
ted the castell of Gisors, and threwe
to ground a strong hold called Cour-
cellys, and byente there aboute many
byllages.

Wherewith kynge Phylpp was
so greauously amoued, that wth
a small number of knyghtes he pear-
sed the hooste of Englyshmen, and en-
tred the castell of towne of Gisors.
But of hys men were taken a certayn
number, as Mayne de Bussy, Ma-
chewe de Helly, Gulliam de Helly
and manye other, with the which pry-
soners and many ryche prayes, kynge
Rycharde, then departed, leuyng the
frenche kynge wthyn Gisors.

It was not longe after that kynge
Rycharde was thus departed, but
kynge Phylippe callynge to mynde
the great losse and dishonour that he
had receaued by that warre by kynge
Rycharde, assembled a great armye,
and entred the duchy of Normandy
and wasted the countrye from Auel
brough to Beawmont le Roger And
that done he returned into Fraunce,

and lycensed his knyghtes to go eche
man into hys owne countrye.

When kynge Phylippe had thus
synghed hys warre in Normandy,
kynge Rycharde then wth hys ar-
mye entred the forrenamed countrye
of Unequercyn, and also Beawuor-
cyn, and tooke within them as he be-
foze had done ryche and many prayes
and wth them departed. Whome f.
byshop of Beawuay, beyng a good
knyghte and hardye of hys handes,
with a compaigne of knyghtes, and o-
ther, folowed to haue rescowped the
pysoners that kynge Rycharde had
taken. But they were taken, and a cer-
tayne of hys compaigne slayne.

Then f. Earle of Flaunders by the
ayde of the Englyshmenne, toke the
towne of Saynte Omer fromme the
frenchemen.

In thys season Innocente b. of Ro-
me befoze named, sente a legare into
Fraunce named Peter de Capys, to
reforme the warre betwene the two
prynces. The whyche at that tyme
was in such dysloynt that he coulde
not bynge it to any frame, and specy-
allye as sayth the frenche boke, be-
cause kynge Rycharde wolde not de-
liuer hostages and gagys as the
frenche kynge wolde.

Then kynge Rycharde after Chyff
was besyged a castell nere vnto Ly-
mogys

The cause of
the syege,

mogis. This castel in the French cronycle is called Chalons, and in þe Englyshe booke it is named Capllarde. The cause of this sege as sayth most wyrters, was for certayne ryche treasour to unden wythin the lordshyppe of sygnoye of kynge Rycharde, the whiche one wydomet bycounte of Lemonke had founden & wythhelde frome kynge Rycharde, and for hys sauegarde fledde vnto the fornamed castell, and defended yt manfully fro the fyrste weke of Lente, tyll the syxe daye of Apryl. Upon the whych day kynge Rycharde walkynge vntowse lye aboute the castell to clyppe the feblenes thereof, one named Betrande Genedon marked the kyng and woudd hym in the hedde, or after some wyrters, in þe arme with a venenous quarell. After whiche wounde receaued by the kyng, he commaunded Charpe assaut to be made, in þe whych assaute the castell was wonne.

Howe kynge
Richard was
wounded.

Then he made enquerie who it was that so had wounded him, the whych was brought vnto the kynges presence, and named hym selfe as aboue is sayde, or after some wyrters Peter Basye. Then the kyng demaunded of him why he shulde so lye in awayte to hurte hym, rather then anye of his felowys. For thou slewest my father, & my byethren sayd he, wherfore I intended to aduenge theyr death, what someuer became of me. Then þe kyng forgaue hym hys offence & sufferyd hym to go at lyberte. And the other of the souldyours taken in that castell the kyng commaunded to be hanged. But Polycronycon sayeth that after kynge Rycharde was dead, the duke of Braban whych then was presente caused the sayde Betrande to be taken and slayne quykly and after hanged. Then kynge Rycharde dyed the

The mercy of
the kyng.

iii. daye after, that is to saye, the ix. daye of Apryl, and was buryed at founte Eboyard at the fete of hys father. Howbeit some wyrters say that hys herte was buryed at Roan, hys bodye as befoze is sayd, and his bowels at Carelepyll in Englande, when he had reygned. ix. yeres. ix. moones and odde dayes, leuynge after hym none yssue. Of thys Rycharde a Mettreyan made these verses folowynge.

The death of
king Richard

*Christe, tui calicis prædofit præda caducis
ære breui reiecis, qui tollis æra crucis.
Viscera Carleolum, corpus fons seruet Ebarði,
Et cor Rothamagū magne Richarde tuum
In terra diuiditur, unus quia plus fuit uno,
Non superest uno gracia tanta uiro*

The whych verses maye be
Englyshed as foloweth

20 Christe of the thefe whych on the
righte hande was.

And asked merce, to vs thou made
a praye.

That we lyke wyse shulde for our tre-
spasse,

Aske of the merce and shewe no de-
laye.

For for the earthly thynges cast our
selfe away.

For who of thy crosse accompteth lyt-
tle roze.

The merce of thy passyon he losyth
euermore.

21 Thys manful knight this pryncce
wyctowouse.

Whiche toke thy crosse on hym with
great payne.

He folowed the thefe and asked mer-
cy thus.

For hys offence he warded thy foes
agayne.

And shedde theyr bloude on hyll and
the on

The seventh parte

10

eke on playne.
And all for loue good lord he hadde
to che.
Wherofore swete Jesu on hym thou
haue ppyte.

¶ Of whom the bowels at Carlell
and the trunche
At founte Ebade full rpychelp is
dyghte
The harte at Roan into the earth ys
suncke
Of worthye Rycharde. And so in thys
is twyghte,
That more than one whylom was in
myghte.
In earth is separat that kyng
more then one
Was, and of grace founde lyke to
hym none.

From the byo-
grapher of kyng
Rycharde.



Richard brother
of the aboue na-
med Rycharde
a yongest sonne
of Hentye the se-
cond, was ordai-
ned or proclay-
med kyng of En-
gland, the tenth
daye of Apryll in the begynnynge of
the yere of oure Lorde. xi. hundred
lxxx. and. xix. and the. xx. yere of the
seconde Phylippe then kyng of
Fraunce. Thys Ihon at the daye of
hys brothers death was in Royma-
nye, where at Chynon as sone as hys
brother Rycharde was deceased, he pos-
sessed hym of hys brothers treasoure
and sente Huberte archebyschoppe of
Caunterbury into England to make
prouysyon for hys coronacyon. And
vpon Easter daye folowynge he was
gyfde wpyth the sword of the duchye
of Byrtayne, and sayled soone after
into Englande, where he was crow-

ned kyng at Westmynstre vpon bo-
lpe thuridaye nexte folowynge of the
fozenamed Huberte. After whiche
solempnytye doone, he ordained the
same Hubert chaunceller of Englad.

In this whyle, the frenche kyng
helde a counsell at Cenomannya in
Turon, where to the derogacyon of
kyng Ihon, Arture the sonne of Ge-
fry Plantagenete and newwe to the
sayde Ihon, was made duke of Byr-
tayne. Whiche in contynently after
wpyth a great armye entred the coun-
try of Angeou, & toke possessyon ther-
of. And kyng Phylippe wpyth hys
people entred the duchie of Royma-
nye, and layed spege to the cty of Eu-
rou, and wanne it, wpyth al the stryg-
holdes there about, and stufed them
wpyth vytayle, and strengthed theym
wpyth hys owne knyghtes, and that
done wasted and spoyled the country
tyll he came to the cty of Meaus
where met wpyth hym the fozenamed
Arture, and dyd to him homage for
the countrey of Angvers.

In the moneth of Maye, Elyanoure
some tyme wyfe to Henty the second,
and inother to kyng Rycharde, came
into Fraunce, and so to the kyng to
Meaus forsayde, and made to hym
homage for the country of Portiers
as her in herptaunte. And soone af-
ter the kyng returned into Fraunce
and the duke of Byrtayne wpyth hym
whiche as yet was wpythin age.

Kyng Ihon betwpyng of thys warre
in Roymanye, and losse of the coun-
tries aboue named, assembled a coun-
cel and asked ayde of hys lordes and
commons, to wyne agayne the fore-
sayde landes, and had it graunted af-
ter so wynters. iii. of euery plough
land thzough Englad, beside þ sub-
sidy of the spiritual landes. And whe-
he had made redye for that belonged

to

to his boiagethe aboute heruest say-
led into Normandy, where he taried

till October folowynge, spendinge the
tyme to his losse and dishonoure.

Anno domini. M. CC.

Anno domini. M. CC.

Balliui

Arnolde frys Arnolde,

Anno primo.

Rycharde frys Darre

The first yere



After Michelmass in
the moneth of Octo-
ber, and frys the peare
of þe regne of kynge
Ihon, a trefwe of a
peace was concluded
betwene the two kin-
ges of England & of Fraunce, from
þe dape till mydsomer next folowing
and in lyke wyse, betwene the French
kynge and Baluwyne Earle of Flaū-
ders

And this yere was made a deuoyce
betwene kynge Ihon and his wyfe
the Earle of Glocesters daughter, be-
cause of merenes of bloud. And after
was he maryed vnto Isabel þe daugh-
ter of þe Erle of Engoules in Fraunce
and hadde by her two sonnes Henty
and Rycharde, and. iii. daughters I-
sabel, Elzanoure, and Jane.

This yere died at London Hugh
byschoppe of Lyncolne, and was con-
ueyed to his owne church and there
entered. At myblente after kynge
Ihon sayled agayne into Normann-
dy. And after Easter he mette wth
kynge Iphylippe betwene Vernon and
the ysle Audeleye, where the peace be-
twene both realmes was stablyshed
and cōfyrmed for terne of theyr two
lyues, & the landes deuided betwene

the two kynges, as eyther of theym
shulde hold them contented for their
lyues after. And in Moyste tyme after
Letwys the eldest sonne of king Iphyl-
ippe, maryed dame Blanche daugh-
ter to Alphons kynge of Castille,
and neuewe to kynge Ihon. To the
whych Letwes kynge Ihon for loue
of that woman shewed to hym great
bountye, and gaue vnto her manye
ryche gyftes.

In the moneth of July folowynge
kynge Ihon rode into Fraunce, wher
he was receaued of the French kynge
wth muche honoure and so conuey-
ed into Maynte Denys, where he
was receaued wth processyon. And
vpon the morowe, the French kynge
accompanied him vnto Paris, wher
he was receaued of the cytyzens wth
great reuerence, and presented by the
prouost of the towne in name of the
hole cytye wth ryche presentes. And
there kynge Iphylippe fested hym in
his owne palays, and gaue vnto him
and his lordes and seruauntes ma-
ny ryche gyftes, and after conueyed
hym forth of that cytye, and tooke le-
ue of hym in most louinge wyse. And
when kynge Ihon hadde spedde his
matters in Normandy, he then re-
turned into Englande.

The entrye
of kynge Ihon
into Fraunce.

Peace for ter-
ne of lyues co-
cluded betwe-
ne kynge Ihon
and Iphylippe
the French
kynge.

Anno domini. M. CC. i.

Anno domini. M. CC. ii.

Balliui.

Roger Desert

Anno. ii

Jamys frys Barth

The seventh parte

27

Ex. 1. part.



In the moneth of December and the second yere of kyng Ihon, Ranulph Earle of Chester by the example also thewed by kyng Ihon, leste his owne wyfe named Counsaunce and countesse of Byrtayne, whiche he before had married by counsell of kyng Henry the seconde, and wedded one Clemens. One cronicle sayth he did so, because he wolde haue yssue. But the sayd authoure sayth that a fter his oppnyon he dyspleased God so greatlye that God wolde suffer hym to haue none yssue, but the rather so; that dede dyed wthout.

Aboute this tyme, after the opinion of most wyrters, the people of nace called Tartares began theyr dominion. These men dwelled vnder the hil

les of Inde, that belongeth to prestes Ihon and chace of theym selfe a capytayne of loive bythe called Danyd, and so wth wyues and chyldren passed the next countreys wth robbing and spoylunge, and grewe shortly in greute strengthe, and after subdued the partes and manye other byrtayne countreys, and grewe lastelpe vnto greute domynion and Lordshyppe in the Eastre partes of the world, so that lately theyr pryncce or souerayne is called the great Cahan.

In this yere as wryteth Polycronycon, the kyng of Scottes dyd homage to kyng Ihon, at Lyncolne, and sware in the presence of a legate of Rome and .xiii. byshoppes to be trewe lyege man to hym and to his heires kynges.

The kyng of Scottes dyd homage to kyng Ihon

Anno domini. M. C. Cii.

Balliul

Arnolde

Rycharde

Anno domini. M. C. Ciii.

Anno. iiii



Aboute the moneth of December in the third yere of Ihons regne in þe prouynce of poike were sene. v. Moones One in the Eastre, the seconde in the Weste, the thyrde in þe North, the fourth in the South, and the fyfte as it were set in the middes of the other, and podede lyke tymes in compassunge the other, as it were by the space of an houre, and danyshed awaye soone after. This yere in the moneth of Februarye, kyng Philip called a parlyment at Arden, where yt was among other matters concluded, that kyng Ihon as his lyege man shuld appeare at his parlyment holden at Paris wthin. xv. dayes of

Easter nexte folowynge. But so; so muche as kyng Ihon nor none for hym appeared to shewe some lawfull impedymente, the french kyng therfore entred the duchy of Normandy and tooke the castelles of Bounte of Gentylne, and Burney, and leased into his handes all suche landes as Hugh de Burney held, and gaue the vnto Arthure forsayde duke of Byrtayne. And mozeouer, he gaue to the sayd Arthure the country of Angeou wth two hundred prisoners, and a certayne of monye to defend the sayd countrey agayne kyng Ihon.

When kyng Ihon had vnderstaundyng of al the cruel delynge of kyng Philip, he called a counsell and there asked ayde, and was graunted

Howe the french kyng beganne wth kyng Ihon

a newe

a newe apde to withstand the French
kynge's malice. And aboute Lam-
masse after, the kynge wyth a fayre
compaigne sayled into Normandy,
and so sped hym into the countre of
Angeou, for so muche, as he was en-
fourned that Acture hys neww and
duke of Britayne warred withyn the
same, & toke hi prisoner with certaine
other knightes as Sir Hugh le Buis
Sir Godfrey de Lougha, with dyuers
other. At which time kynge Philippe
lay at the siege of the castel of Arques
and herynge of thys dyscomfytur,
broke up his spege, to the intente to
haue rescowed the sayde Duke. But

when he was warned that he shulde
come to sperte, he then chaunged hys
purpose and wente vnto the cytye of
Comys, and wanne it by strength.
And after, for that winter bywe were
he returned into Fraunce. In whych
season also kynge John returned w
hys prisoners into Englande.

In this yere by counsel of the bur-
geyses of the cytye of London, were
chosen xxx. of the most substantiall
and wyllest men whych after summe
were called the counsaile of the cytye
Of the whych peacelpe the balyffes
were chosen, & after the maye & shy-
ues wer taken out of the same nobet

Howe the
persons were
chosen by the
counsaile of
the cytye

Anno domini. M. CCiii.

Royman Blondel

Balliui

Anno domini. M. CCiii.

Anno. lili.

John of Ely

The. lili. year



Forthys. lili. yere of hig
John, were sene many
wonderful tokens. For
ouer the winter, which
passed in length & hard-
nes many yeres befoze gone, wonder-
ful wethering, as of exceeding lighte-
nings, thunders, & other stormes of
wynd & raygne apered, & therwythal
hagle of the bygnes of hennes egges
which perished frute & corne, belides
other hurtes & harmes done bys hou-
ses and pong catel goynge abrode.

Also spytes were sene in the ayre in
lykenesse of foules, beapnge fyre in
theyr bylles, the whych set on fyre by
uerse houses. And sone thereafter dy-
ed Hubert archbishop of Caunterbu-
ry. In whose place was chosen cotra-
ry to the mynde of the king by þ moze
party of the couent of Caunterburge
Stephā Langton. Albeit, some ther
were that accordeynge to the kynge's
pleasure, named the byshop of Roj-

whych, & some other. For this eleccion
þ king was greuously amoured agay-
ne the munkes, and wold in no wyse
allow or admyt theyr eleccion. Wher-
fore they sent theyr eleccion vnto In-
nocent the. iii. the which admitted the
sayd Stephan & refused the other, &
sacrid him at viterb a cytye of Italy
& sent him after with letters of com-
mendacio vnto kynge John to take þ
possessio and frutes of hys benefice.
King John with this was sore amo-
ued, in so much, þ he warned him his
land & diuerse of the munkes of Cas-
terbury that fauored hys cause

About Easter kynge John sayled
into Normandy, for the French king
had recomended his warre in the
countre of Guyan, and wanne ther-
in daple diuerse stronge holdes and
castels, and allyed wyth him þ Earle
of Alenson, and hadde grete ayde of
the Portuys and Wytons.

And when he had brought that coun-
trie

Wonderful
tokens.

Stephan's
son.

The fower
yages of the
John's
munkes.

they vnder his subiectyon, he then re-
toured by Normandy, and wanne
Conker, the vale of Ruell, and the p-
le of Judeley. In this season þe
named by Hoppe of Rome sent the ab-
bot of Calmet into Fraunce, to re-
fourme these two Dynets. Wpþ
whome was also accompanied the ab-
bot of Cressons, the whiche endeou-
red them so, that they were nere agre-
ed of a peace. But for they wolde that
the frenche kyng shulde repayre and
amende suche houses of religyon, as
he had hurte & ouerthrowen in Guy-
an and other places belonging to the
croune of Englande, therfore he for-
soke the peace, notwithstanding that
kyng John in lyke wyse shulde haue
repaiied all like houses apperteyning
vnto the croune of Fraunce.

Then the frenche kyng in the
ende of Auguste layde spege vnto the

castell of Radebunt, and assailed it
by the teryme of .xv. dayes continual-
ly. But the souldyours within, defend-
ed yt so manfully, that they slewe
many of the enemyes, so that kyng
Philippe was fayne to geue backe,
till he hadde deuised newe engynnes
after the warre fallow. By reason
whereof he lastelye wanne the sayde
castell, and toke there twentie knigh-
tes, and an hundred & seven poumen,
and other, and .xii. artblasters. And
when he hadde fortestyed that castell
with french men, he then poded to the
castell of Gaylarde, and layde his or-
dynaunce to that, as he hadde doone
to that other. But he lape there a mo-
neth or he myghte do to yt anye hurte
or harme. In all whiche season kyng
John warped vppon the bozderers
of Fraunce, but of hys byctoyres I
fynde lytell wyten.

Inno domini. M. CC. llii.

Water bystone.

Inno domini. M. CC. b.

Ballint.

Willpam Chamberlayne.

Inno. v.



And this yere, that is to
saye the .v. yere of kyng
John, by reason of the
vncreasonable weathe-
ryng, that in the laste
yere fell, whente was solde for fiftene
shyllynges & quarters.

Kyng John in the somer folow-
yng, maryed his bastarde daughter
vnto Lewellyn Prince of Wales, and
gaue wþ her the castell and lord-
shippe of Clyngesmore, beyng in the
marches of South wales.

This yere the byshoppe of Rome
sente letters of recommendacyon vnto
kyng John, shewyng that he had
fauourably hearde hys protectours

for all suche maters as they had latde
agayne the Archebisshoppe of Can-
terburge: and some of hys nunkes,
that he shulde not of ryghte be admit-
ted vnto that sea.

But for that sayde maters of ob-
iectyon were by hym and hys courte
thoughte insuffycient, he therfore ex-
horted and wyllyd hym to accepte the
sayde archebisshoppe vnto hys grace
and suffre him to enioye the frutes of
his benefyce, and the nunkes by him
exyled, to retourne vnto theiþ proper
abbaye.

But the more his lordes & frendes
advised him to folowe the byshop of
Romes mynde, the more was he mo-
ued to the contrarie, in suche maner

cc. i. that

that the byshoppe of Rome's messengers returned without speche of theyr message.

Yet haue ye harde before, how the frenche kynge laye aboute the castell of Cayllarde, and myght not wyne it by the space of a moneth. Wherfore he after sente for newe ordynance, & assaile d it so fyerly, that wryth in. xx.

Anno domini. M. CC. v.

Balliut

Thomas Hancroft.

Hamonde Blonde.

John.

dayes after he hadde the sayde castell to the grete losse of men on both payes, and toke prysoners there within xxxvi. knyghtes, besyde the other number of pomen and arblasters, & that done scalyd the countrey there about and strenghted the sayde castell wryth his owne men, and then wryth grete pryde returned into Fraunce.

Anno domini. M. CC. vi.

Anno. vi.

Eke. vi. pte.



Aboute that season after Mychelmas, in the vi. yere of the trygne of hig John, came downe a strenght commaundment from the byshop of Rome, that excepte the kyng wolde peasably suffer the archbyshoppe of Caunterbury to occupye his sea, and his monkes theyr abbay, that the lande shuld be enterdyt, chargynge these foure byshoppes folowynge, that is to saye Wyllyam then byshoppe of London, Eustace byshoppe of Ely, Walter byshoppe of Wynchester, and Gilys byshoppe of Herforde, to denounce the kyng and his lande accursyd, yf he the commaundement disobeyed.

Then these foure byshoppes, wother vnto them assocate, made instant labour to the kyng, for the obseruynge of the byshop of Rome's commaundement, and to excheue the sensours of the churche. But all was vayne. Wherfore the foure sayde

byshoppes, accordynge to the byshoppe of Rome's wrytynge to theym sente, the moxowe folowynge oure ladye daye Annunciatyon, on the. xxvi. daye of Marche, denounyd kyng John with his Realme of Englande accursyd, and wrytte false the doyes of the churches and other places where deuyne scrupce before was vied, fyrst in Lont on, and after in all places as they wente thowghe the lande. The kyng for this dede was so amouyd with the sayde foure byshoppes, that he sealed all the tempozalties vnto them belonging into his handes, and put them in such feare, that they forloke this lande, and sailed to the archbyshop of Caunterburpe.

In this yere at Orenford in Sul. was taken a fishe in the sea of Foyme lyke to a man, and was kepte lyke moethes after vpon lande wryth rawe fleshe and spwe, and after: for they coude haue no speche of it, they calle it into the sea agayne.

Anno domini. M. CC. vi.

Balliut.

John Walgrane.

Richard of Wynchester.

Anno domini. CC. vii.

Anno. vii.

The interdyction of land

Wherfore the sayde four byshoppes or curisch byshop John went to the whole realme.

The strength of the town by shoppe.

A strange

The senenth parte.

276

Ch. vii. p. 1.

In the moneth of Nouember and vii. yere of þe kyng one named Hughe Dysell for treason at London was drawen & hanged. And this yere in þe moneth of Maye, þe frenche kyng entered into Normandy with a stronge power, and wanne there the castells of Faloy, and Dapounte of Danfrounte and after seaisyd all the landes vnto the sayde castell belonging, and so tyll he came to a place called saynte Mychaell in the paretell of the sea.

When the Normannes sawe that kyng Philip thus subdued the stronges holdes of Normandy, and that kyng John to the contrarie made no defence, the capytaynes of Constance, of Bapour of Bayon, of Lysent, of Anreuches, and Entour yelded them all to the frenche kyng and became his lyege men, so that he was in possession of the substance of the duchye of Normandy, except Roan and other fewe castells.

Then kyng Philip seynge these stronge holdes thus yelded vnto hym, layde his syege vnto the cite of Roan. Where after he had lpen a season, the capytayne of the towne desired a respyte of thyrty dayes, geuyng pledges and hostages, that yf the cite were not by kyng John or his assignes rescowyd wythin þe foresaide tyme, they wolde yelde the cite vnto the frenche kyng.

And in lyke wyse was appoyntement taken for the castells named Arquys and Vermell. In whyche tyme for that no socoure came, bothe cite and castelles were deliuered in to the frenche kynges handes. And thus hadde thys seconde Philip the possession of Normandy, whiche no frenche king had sene the

time of Charlis þe simple, which gaue the same duchye to Rollo ledest of the Normannes, with Gylla his daughter in marriage, synne the which tyme had passed ouer thre hundred yeres.

When the frenche king had thus brought into hys subieccion þe duchye of Normandy, he then about saynte Laurence tyme rode into the countrey of Guyan, and wanne there the cite of Doytters, wyth all the castells and towne to the sayde cite belonging, and when he hadde sette that countrey in an order and rule, he sped hym into Fraunce with great pompe and gloire.

It is assermed of some authours that the frenche kyng made thys warre vpon kyng John by excepting of the byshoppe of Rome, for his contumacie agayne the churche.

In thys yere also was a communicacyon of a peace to be hadde betwene kyng John and the archebysshoppe of Caunterburie, and was dyuen to a nere poynte of accord, excepte respytacyon that kyng John shoulde haue made vnto the archebysshop and other byshoppes, the which hys offycers hadde taken in the tyme of thyr absence. To the whyche respytacyon kyng John in no wyse wolde be agreable, wherfore the sayde communicacyon toke none effecte.

After this communicacyon, kyng John was so frette with malice, that in a fury he lette proclayme in sondry places of his realme, that all such persones as hadde landes and possessions wythin Englande spirytual or tempozall, that they shulde retourne into Englande by Mychelmas nexte folowynge, or elles to be clerely excludyd frome all sache landes. And ouer that strenght commandement was geuen to eueryche offycer in his

The byshop of Rome was the auctor of these warres.

cc.ii. coun.

þe frenche king
was ready with a
great power.

þe kyng
was ready
in all things.

countray, to make busye searche, yf any wytynges were broughte from the courte of Rome, to any pzelate of this realme, & yf any suche were founden, to byng him and his wytynges to the kynges ptesence.

And moze ouer þ they shuld lease

unto the kynges vse, all suche landes as to any persone were geuen by the sayde archbysshoppe or by the priour of Caunterburpe, syn the tyme of elc cyon of the sayde archbysshoppe, and the woodes of the same to be felld & solde in all haste.

Anno domini. M. CC. viii.

Balliui.

Roger Wynchester.

Edmunde Hardell.

Anno domini. M. CC. viii.

Anno. viii.

The. viii. yere



Henry þ first
sonne of king
John.

The rebellion
of the Irish
men.

Don the fyrste daye of the moneth of October. a. viii. yere of the reigne of þ king his fyrste sonne Henry by name was bozne of dame Isabell his seconde wyfe in the cytie of Winchester. And this yere rebelled the Irishmen, & dyd much harme in that countray. Which rebellyon after some wyters was, so; so muche as the kyng wolde haue leuped of them greuous taskis to haue made warre with, vpo the frenche kyng. But at length they greued or displeased the king in such wyse, that he was sayne to set a taske thowough hys lande to oppresse they;

malysce. And ouer that he asked of the whyte munkes of England. vi. thousande marke. But they excused theim by theyre generall hedde, so that the kyng toke wth theim greute dyspleasure. By reason wherof after hys retourne oute of Irelande, he verryd theym soze, and gathered of theym moze then befoze he hadde despyed, and caused some abbottes to forsake theyr houses.

Then he wth a puyssaunte army wente into Ireland and shortly subdued theym: and after he hadde sette the countray in a rule, he retourned into Englande.

Anno domini. M. CC. viii.

Balliui

Serle the mercer.

Hugh of saynte Albou.

Anno domini. M. CC. ix.

Anno. ix.

The. ix. yere.



In this. ix. yere, þ kyng consyderynge the greute losse which he had sustained by þ french king in Roymaby, and also in Angeou & Poiteau, made proussyon of all thynges belonngyng to the warre, & after about mid somer sailed ouer the sea, & landed at Rochel in Poiteau w a mighty hoste At whych season þ french kyng was at Chymon and fortifyed it, with al-

so the castellys of London and Wynterbury, and the Towne of Doytters whiche lytell befoze he hadde wonne, and after without taryng retourned into fraunce. Then kyng John hearynge of the frenche kynges departynge, sped hym to Angers & wanne that towne with lytle payne, and destroyed þ sayde towne. Thither came vnto hym the Elycount of Chonars, which befoze was so; dyde become þ frenche

The seventh parte.

29.

French kynges man, and by his apde kyng John then recoueryd some part of that countrey.

In this meane whyle kyng Phylippe gatherd a newe hoste, and began the distressedness of the Count of Thonars, entered the landes of the sayde bycount, and wasted and spoyled the countrey withoute pitye. Then kyng John spedde hym towarde the French kynges, so that in shorte processe of time, the two hostes were within lytle distaunce. But by what meane of fortune I can not say (for the meane thereof is not expessed) the two kynges there took peace for two yeres folowynge, and after either of them returned into his owne countrey.

In this yere the byshop of Rome being ascerteyned of the cruelnesse of kyng John executed agayne the white munkes of his lande, and also of his obstynacye he persevered in agayne holy church, sent downe a newe commission, by vertue whereof the curse of enterdyng was newlye denounced and manifested in sondrye places of Englande.

And ouer the byshop of Rome by authoryte of the sayde bull, assayed or acquyted all the lordes of Englande as well spirytuall as temporal, of all homage and feaultye that they of ryghte owed to the kyng, to the entente that they shoulde aryse agayne hym, and depyue hym of all kinglye honoure. But all this might not moue the kyng.

About the feast of saint Edward, in the moneth of Juny and latter ende of this foresayde nyne yere, the foresayd baylyffes were admitted to that offyce, and the olde, that is to

meane Roger Wynchester, and Edmund Hardell were dyschaarged, for so muche as they withstode the kynges purueyout of wheate, and wolde not suffer him to conuey certayne measures of wheate oute of the cytie till the cytie were stoppd.

For this the kyng took suche displeasure, that he sent downe streyght commandement vnto the xxxv. heydes or rulers of the cytie, that they shuld discharge the sayd two baylyffes, and to put them in pryson till they knewe the kynges further pleasure. Wherfore the sayd xxxv. persones took aduise, and appoynted a certayne of them selfe with other, and tode to the kyng then beyng at Langley, to empeter grace for the sayd Baylyffes, shewynge further that at that season such dystresse of wheate was in the cytie, that the common people were lyke to haue made an insurreccyon for the same. By whiche meanes and frendshyppe whiche they had in the court the kyng was so satisfied that he releasyd them from pryson.

And in shorte tyme after, the cytyens of London made suche sute vnto the kyng, that they hadde graunte to them by the kynges lettere patentes, that they shoulde perely chole to them selfe a Maye and two Shepues. After whiche graunte vnto them conformed, they amonge them selues ordeyned, that the two shuyres shoulde be chosen perely vpon saynte Mathewes daye, nyne dayes befoze Michellmas daye, and vpon Michellmas daye to take theyr charge, and the Maye to be chosen vpon the same daye, and charged with the other vpon the sayde date of Michellmas, all be it that nowe it is otherwise ordeyd.

(.)

cc.iii. Anno

The graunte of choyse of Maye & Shepues in the cytie.

The day that was first appoynted for the Maye & Shepues to be chosen.



Anno domini. M. CC. ix.
Primus maior.

John.

Anno domini. M. CC. x.

The first
year.

Henry 8. Alwyn.

Peter Duke.

Inno. x.

Thomas Beil.

The first year.



In the daye of saynt My-
chael the archaungel, &
L. pere of kyng John. He
re the sonne of Alwyn
was sworne & charged
as first maye of London, and Peter
duke, with Thomas Beil sworne for
Shyppes, and the name of baylyffes
was after thys daye clerely auoyded
within the sayde cytie from that daye
forwarde. Also where befoze thys
tyme the bypge ouer Chamis at Lo-
don, was made of tymber, and was
ruled guped, or repayered by a fra-
ternitye or college of prelates. Thys
yeare by the grete ayde of the cyte-
zens of London and other passynge
that waye, the sayde bypge was be-
gonne to be edified of stone. And this
pere saynt Mary Quereis in South
warke was begon to be builded. And
in this pere the bishop of Rome sent ii.
legates, or after some wyrters one le-
gate named Pandulphus, the which
in the byshop of Romes name had ma-
ny soze wordes of monition of obedy-
ence to kyng John, & charged hym to
suffer the archbishop of Caunterbury

with the bypge and munkes of the
same, to enioye thei ryghtes and pos-
sessions within Englande, and tarpe-
d here a certayne of tyme to bypge
his purpose aboute. But all was in
vayne, for he rode agayne to Rome
wthoute releasynge of the enterdy-
tynge.

Of the maner of thys enterdyt-
on of this lande, haue I sene dyuerse
opinions. As some there be that saye
that the lande was enterdyted thow-
lye, and the churches, and houses of
religion closed, that no where was
blessed Masse nor dyuine seruyce. By
which reason, none of the seuen Sa-
cramentes in all thys tyme shoulde
be ministered or occupied, nor chyld
christened, nor man confessed, nor ma-
ryed. But it was not so straghte, for
there were diuers places in England
which were occupied with diuine ser-
uice all that season, by licence purcha-
sed then or befoze. Also chyldren were
christened thowough all the land, and
menne houseled and anealed, excepte
suche persones as were excepted by
name in the bull.

The maner
of the enterdyt-
on of the lande.

The making
of London
bypge with
stone which
was in the
year of our
Lorde
M. CC. ix.

The building
of saynt Mary
Quereis in
South-
warke, nowe
called saynt
Mary Quereis.

Anno domini. M. CC. x.

Henry 8. Alwyn.

Peter ponge.

Anno domini. M. CC. xi.

Inno. xii.

William Glauke.

The first year.



In this pere which was the xi.
pere of kyng John after myd-
somer, or the terme of truce were
fullye runne, kyng Philippe wth
a stronge hoste entred the countie of
Gupan, and made newe warre vpon

the Wycounts of Thomars, and toke
hys castell called Dartenye, wth dy-
uerse other stronge holdes to the said
Wycounte belongynge, and manned
thym wth frenche men, and ordey-
ned one Guylpam de Roches: mar-
shall

The seventh parte

shall of Fraunce chiefe ruler of that countrey, and after retourned into Fraunce. But yt was not long after the kyng was departed, but that he sayde bycounte of Choners made sharpe warre vpon the Frenchemen, with such power as he myghte make and recouered a parte of hys lande. But one day when he had wonne a lytle holde, and taken therein a certayne of pyloners, in the returne towarde hys holde where he lodged, he

was supplised with the foynamed Eupham de Roches and a greute multitude of Frenchemenne, of the whiche after longe fyghte he was finally taken, with syr Hughe Chonars hys brother, syr Jermey de Le sygnam sonne of the Earle of Doytiers, and to the number of .l. persons of hys compaignie, the whiche were all as pyloners, the sent vnto the frenche kyng.

Anno domini. M. CC. xl.

Adam Whetpe.

Anno domini. M. CC. xli.

Herry syr Alwyne.

Anno. xli.

Stephanie Graas.

The xli. pater

Whetpe the
B. of Rome
lyan.



And this twelfth pere of king Ihon, the bishop of Rome sente agayne Pandulphe his legate

monyshed the kyng in sharpe maner that he shulde receaue Stephan Langton to hys benefice of the see of Caunterbury, and the pypour with the Dunches vnto theys abbays. Then the kyng callynge to minde the daungers whiche he was wapped in both wythin hys owne realme and also in Normandy and the hurttes whiche dayly grewe to hym by the same, made a promyse by oth, that he wolde be obedyent vnto the courte of Rome, and stand and obey all thyng, that the same courte wold adudge him. Upon whych promyse so made, the legate sente knowledge vnto the byshoppe of Roome and had commaundement from him that he shulde bind the kyng to these artycles folowynge.

First that he shulde peaciably suffer the foynamed Stephan Langton to enter the lande and to enioy the archbishopricke of Caunterbury, with

all profytes and frutes belongynge to the same.

Secondarily, that he shuld in like maner and fourme receaue the pypour of Caunterbury and hys Dunches, with all other besoye tyme exyled for the archebishops cause, and not at anye tyme here after bere or punyssh anye of the sayde persons spychuall or temporal, for any of those causes.

Therby, that he shuld restowe vnto the sayde archebishop and to all the other, all such goodes as were besoye tyme taken from anye of them by his officers, since the tyme of thys varyaunce growynge.

And fourthly that he shulde peld vnto the handes of the byshoppe of Rome all his ryghte and tytyle that he had vnto the crowne of England with all reuenues, honours and profytes belongynge to the same, as wel temporall as spychuall, and to hold it ever after, both he and hys heires of the byshoppe of Rome and his successors as feodaries of the byshop of Rome.

And whē these artycles wet graffed,

The great my
ty that thys
wile thys
was a, byng
is appoynted
with the tyll
we of the B.
of Rome that
advises and
byshs head

Caunterbury
whom to
byng was to
shd to graffed

What thyng
heer, but must
wepe & lament
to here a crye
then pynce to
be thus abu-
sed.

ted, and the lordes of the landes wone
to the mayntenaunce of the same, the
kyng kneeling vpon his knees toke
the crowne frome his head, and sayd
these wordes folowynge to the legate
deliuerynge hym the crowne. Here I
resygne vpon the crowne of the realme
of Englande and Irelande into the
handes of Innocente the thyrde, and
put me holpe into his mercy and or-
dynaunce. After reherfall of whiche
wordes, Pandulphe toke the crowne
of the kyng, and kepte the possession
therof. v. dayes after, in token of pos-
session of the sayde realme of Eng-
lande. And when the sayde. v. dayes
were expyred, the kyng resumed the
crowne of Pandulphe, by vertue of
a bande or instrumente made vnto
byshop of Rome, the which at length
is set out in the cronycle of England

and other places. Whereof the effect
is that the sayd kyng Ihon and his
heires, shulde euer after be feodary-
es vnto the forenamed Innocente &
to his lawfull successours byshopes
of Rome and to paye yearlye to the
churche of Rome a. 100. marke of syl-
uer, that is to saye for Englande, vii.
C. marke. And for Irelande. iiii. C.
mark. And yf he or his heires sayled
or brake that payment, that the they
shule paye of the right of the crow-
ne. But Polycronyke sayth. vii. hun-
dred marke for England and. ii. C.
markes for Irelande.

For the whiche summes after the
assymaunce of that authoure. Sup-
do the mony called Peter pence, were
gathered in sondrye places of Eng-
lande.

Anno domini. 1272. C. xlii.

Henry the thirde

Johne the first

Ihon Barlon

Anno domini. 1272. C. xlii

Anno. xlii.

The xlii. year.



The landing
of Stephan
Langton.

In the xlii. year
of kyng Ihon, and
moneth of februa-
rye Stephan Lang-
ton archebyschoppe
of Caunterburpe,
with the other ex-
pys landed in Englande, and after
in processe of tyme met with the kyng
at Wynchester. Where the king rece-
ued him with a ioyous countenaunce
and after there was assayed of the
sayde archebyschop. But yet was not
the interdyccion of the lande relea-
sed, for so much as the kyng at that
daye hadde not made restryccion vnto
the archbyschoppe and other, accor-

dyng to the thyrde article befoze re-
herled.

For the whiche as testifyeth the
Englyshe booke, he payed vnto the
Archebyschoppe thre thousande
marke, and to the other, by particu-
lers, fyftene thousande marke.

After whiche thynges perfourmed
and doone, the interdyccion was ad-
nulled and foze doone, in the moneth
of Iulye, and yere of oure Lord. xlii.
hundred and twelue, when he hadde
standen in forre full fyve yeres, and
as muche as fromme the fyve and
twentye daye of the mooneth of Iuly
whiche is vpon thre moonethes and
odde dayes.

Anno domini. M. CC. xlii.

The seventh parte

Raule Epland

Henry fyr Alwyn

Constantyne le Josne

Anno domini. M. CC. xlii.

Anno. xlii.



In this. xlii. yere of the kyng, for that he wolde not holde the lawes of Edward, & also for dyspleasure that he bare to dyners of them, that they wolde not fauoure hym agayne the byshope of Rome, and for other causes whiche here be not manifested, the kyng fel at dyscencion with his Lozdes, in so much that greute people were raysed on ether parties.

But for the kynges party was the stronger, the Earle of Chester with other lozdes tooke the cite of London and helde them therein a certaine of tyme. The whiche cronycle of Caxton wryth other sayen that a greute part of this barpaunce betwene king Ihon and his barrones was, for because the kyng wolde wrythout skyl full dome haue exyled the sayd earle of Chester, whiche to hym hadde no cause, but for so much as befoze seasons he hadde often tymes aduysed

the kyng to leue his cruelnesse and his accustomed anowtry, the whiche he exerysed wryth his brothers wyfe and other. But by the means of the archebyschoppe of Canterbury and other prelates, a peace was taken for awhyle.

In this yere upon the day of the translation of saynt Benet, on the. xi. daye of July, a greute parte of the Buroughe of Southwarke was byente And in the moneth of Auguste nexte folowynge, was greute and much harme done in London by fyre.

Sone after to stablysh the peace betwene the kyng and his Lozdes, an assemble was made on Berhamdowne, where the kyng and his lozdes mette wryth greute strength upon eyther syde. Where a charter of wrytynge was deuysed and made, & there seald by the kyng, so that the barony was wryth contented, & departed in peasable wyse euerych manne into his countrey.

A greute fyre in Southwarke

Howe fyre was chablyd betwene the kyng and his lozdes on Berhadowne

Anno domini. M. CC. xlii.

Roger fyr Aleyn

Martayne fyr Alps.

Anno domini. M. CC. xlii.

Anno. xlii.

Rycharde Batte.



In this. xlii. yere of the kyng, the peace whiche in the last yere was betwene kyng Ihon and his baronnes agreed, was by the king vyolate and broken Wherefoze the Lozdes assembled to the greute powers and made sharpe and cruell warre vpon the kyng, in so much that he was constrained

to sende vnto Normandy for ayde and socoure, and into other places. Then shortly after came into Englande a Normanne knyght, whiche broughte wryth hym a compaignie of Normans, Flemmyns, and Wyccardes. This knyght or captayne was named Foukes de Bente, the whiche wryth his compaignie was so cruell, that he destroyed as well cherygous houses

In this yere

Where the king was made to see upon the king

houses as other, and wrought much harme to the lande, and put the Lordes to þe worse. Then the kynge made foukes and other of hys compaigne wardens of castels and stronge holdes in Englande. The lordes seynge the kynge perseuer in hys wyngre, and woulde in no wyse be induced to holde hys owne grauntes, but to execute al thyng after pleasure, and no thyng after lawe or iustice: caste in theyr myndes how they myght bring the lande in a better rule or state, and by one aduyce and consente wrote vnto Phylippe kynge of Fraunce, that he wolde sende some noble manne in to Englande, and they wolde render

the lande vnto hym. In this whyle kynge John caused to be drawen and hanged at London one Peter of Donfretre, for the sayde Peter had monished dyuers myste happes that shuld come to hym for hys vicious lyfe, and also for he hadde often warned kynge John that he shulde reygne but xlii. yeres, the whiche he mente wythoute payinge of tribute. For after he was become feodarye to the byshoppe of Rome, he thoughte the byshoppe of Rome reygned as pryncypal lord of the lande and not he. For the whiche, and for dyuers other matters he was put to death.

The mynde of the lordes towarde theyre naturall pryncer

Anno domini. M. CC. xlv.

Roger fys Aleyn

Salomon Basyng

Hugh Basyng.

Anno domini. M. CC. xli.

Anno. xli.

The xli. year



Vpon Saynt Andrewes euen, or þe xix. daye of Nouember in þe xli. yere of hys reygne, kynge John after he had gyven a certayne of tyme wyth hys ordynaunce aboute the castell of Roucheſter in Kente, he wanne the sayde castell, and toke therin certayne gentlemen that had conspyred agayne him, the which he sent to dyuerſe pryſons.

And the barons helde them together at London, abydyng the comynge of Lewis ſone to the frenche kynge, the whiche neare aboute ascenſyon tyde landed in Englande wyth a strong army, and so came to Rocheſter, and layde ſiege to the caſtel, and wanne it with litle payn, for so much as it was greatly ſeibled wyth the aſſautes lately made by kynge John, &

ſyn that tyme not ſufficyently repayred. And whē he had wonne the sayd caſtell, he cauſed all the ſtraungers therin taken, to be hanged, and after came to London, where certayne aliaunces and couenauntes were ſtablyſhed betwene the lordes and him, and receaued of theym homage as aſſymeth Wolſeynton.

And after theyre matters betwene them there ſynlyſhed, he wyth the lordes departed from London, and gat the caſtelles of Wygate, of Elyſforde and of Frenham, and from thence to Wyndcheſter, where the cytie was yelded vnto theym, wyth all the holdes and caſtelles ther aboute, as Wolneſey, Wygham, and Beawmere. And aboute Saynte Margaretes daye, he wyth the lordes came agayne to London, at whole comynge the towne of London was geuen by to them by appoyntemente. And whete Roger fys

Howe kynge John wanne the cytye and caſtell of Roucheſter.

How Lewis the ſonne of the frenche kynge landed in Englande to take part wyth the lordes agaynſt the kynge

The seventh part

hys sleyn hadde tyll that tyme ruled
the cytye of London as maye, he for
so muche as he was accused to the
loydes to be fanorable to the kynges
partye, was then dyscharged of that
offyce, and one called Merle Percer
was chosen in his place, and so conty-
nued tyll Mychelmas folowinge

In thys passetyme kyng Ihon
beyng thus ouer set wth hys loydes
sente messengers to the bpschoppe of

Rome shewynge to hym the rebelly-
on of hys loydes, and howe they labo-
red hys destruccyon. Wherefore the
b. of Rome in al hast sente a legat in-
to England named Guallo o3dwa-
lo, the whiche after hys comynge,
commaunded Lewys to retorne into
fraunce, and laboured to the vtter-
mooste of hys power, to appease the
kyng and hys baronys. But al hys
laboure was in vayne.

Anno domini. M. CC. xvi.

John Trauers

Anno domini. M. CC. xvii.

Wylliam Hardel.

Anno. xvii

Indyche Aswlande

Ex. xvii. per

William
Hardel
John
Trauers

Ex. xvii. per
William
Hardel
John
Trauers



In thys. xvii. yere of
kyng Ihon, the warre
betwene hym and hys
loydes styll contynuing
he dyed of the flyre, as
testifyth Wolcromston, at the towne
of Awerke, vpon the daye of S. Ca-
lyste, o3 the. xxiij. daaye of October.
Howbeit the Englysh boke of cron-
ycle sayeth, that he dyed at Sebyng-
wedde an abbaye aboute Lyncolne,
by the impossounge of a munke of
the same house, the daye after saynte
Luke o3 the. xviij. daye of October.
and was buryed in the cytye of Wpn-
chester, But the authoure of Wol-
cromston sayeth he was bowelled at
Worceter in the myddle of the quier
of nunkes, when he hadde reigned
xvi. yeres. vi. monethes and. iij. day-
es, leuynge after hym two sonnes,
Henry and Rycharde, wth sondrys
daughters.

Of thys Ihon it is redde, that he
founded the abbaye of Beleswe in the
new forest, in recompensacyon of the
partye churches whych he there tur-

ned to enlarge that forest, as an abaye
of blacke munkes in the cytye of Wpn-
chester, where after the sayynge of
the Englyshe Cronycle he shulde be
buryed.

Thys kyng Ihon also after some
wynters, maryed one of hys dought-
ters vnto Otto the fourthe of
that name Emperoure of
Almayne yduke of Bar-
oun which helde warre
agayne kyng Phyl-
ipp of fraunce
as in the. v.
chapter
of the booke of the sayde Phyl-
ipp before is declared.



Edm. & thys
of that name, zel Henry the. iii.
best lōne of kyng
Ihon, a chyld
of the age of. ix.
yeres, beganne
his regne ouer
the realme of En-
gland, the twen-
tye daye of the moneth of October in
the yere of oure Lorde a thousande
two

two hundred and. xli. and the. xxi. yeare of the second Whyllym yet kyng of Fraunce.

Ye haue befoze harde of the cruel warre, whych Lewys sonne vnto the frenche kyng wyth the ayde of the baronys of Englande, mayntayned agaynste kyng John. The whiche after the death of the sayde John continued, for as much as then some of the Lordes that befoze hadde mayntayned the quarrel of Lewys now forsoke hym, and tooke party wyth this Henry as they natural & souerayne lord. Wherof the chiefe were the earles of Penbroke and of Chester, the which with they retinue helde sharp warre wyth the sayd Lewys and his affinitie, the whych entended to haue

bene kyng of Englande, by reason of couenaunces made wyth certayne lordes of the land, when he was fyrst sente for by them. Wherfore the forsayde Carle wyth the other of they party, to make they party the stronger, proclaymed the sayd Henry kyng of Englande, vpon the forsayde. xx. daies of October throughte the cytye of London, and in all possyble haste after made prouysion for his coronacyon, so that vppon the daie of Symonde and Jude nexte ensuyng, he was crowned at Gloucestre, of Peter then byshop of Wyndchester, Lewys the frenche kynges sonne being the at Lyncolne. In whych yeare stode styl as gouernout of the cytye of London tyl Whychelmas nexte folowynge

Anno domini. M. CC. xlii

Anno domini. M. CC. xlii

Wylliam Harbel

John Traucts

Anno. i

Andrwe Newlande

Thyrst year



Done as þ kyng was crowned, compassyons were sent ouer in hys name into all places of Englande, to gather strength of me to wythstande the forrenamed Lewis and to put hym wyth hys frenchemen and other alpaunces out of the lande, whych then had vnder theye rule and custodie the castels of Berkhamssted, of Hartesfode, and dyuerse other. And for this Lewis wold not cease of hys warre and retourne into Fraunce, therfore the forsayde Gualo of Swalo the byshope of Rome's legate, accused hym fyrst by name, & after all such as hym mayntayned or fauoured in this warre agayne kyng Henry. Then the forrenamed earls

accompanied with Wylliam Carle Marchall of Englande, Wylliam le Bryys Erie of Ferrys, wyth many other yode to Lyncolne, & wanne that towne vpon the straungers. Where was slayne a frenche man called earle of Berches wyth manye other soul-dyers. And ther was take of Englyshmen Serle Carle of Wyndchester, & Humfryde Bohun Erie of Hertford wyth diuerse other of that name. And in this whyle Lewis in prynces of Wales, for that he ayded the party of Lewis was accursed, and hys landes interrupted.

After the towne of Lyncolne was thus wonne from the frenchemen, Lewys wyth other parte of hys folow-ers dyete towarde London, for so much as wynde was brought to him that hys father hadde sente to hym a newe

The seventh parte.

a newe company of souldoyours, the
whyche shoulde lande in Englande
Mortely. Crouth it was that such an
ayde of souldoyours was made by the
Frenche kyng, & committed to a cap-
taine which in the cronycle is named
Eustace the munke, the whyche was
encounteryd vpon the sea with a cap-
taine of maister of the. d. portis called
Hubert at Burgh, & gaue to hym ba-
taye, & discomfyght hym at length, &
sent the hed of the saide Eustace vnto

the king. When Lewis hard of these
souldoyours, and considered howe daily
his strength minished, he was moze
inclynable vnto peace, so p in conclusy-
on he toke money as sayth Polycroni-
ca and pelded vp his castellis & streng-
thys whyche he helde, and after was
assoyled, & so returned into Fraunce.
But of this money p Lewis receyued
ben diuers opinions, for the englyshe
boke nameth it a thousande marke, &
the French boke saith. xv. M. marke.

Anno domini. M. CC. xliii.

Roberte Berle.

Thomas Bokerell.

Anno domini. M. CC. xlv.

Rafe Gylande.

Anno. li.

Chap. viii.

In this second yere of king
Henry, when the land was
doyded of the straungers,
then inquisiciōs wer made
to know what persones hadde fauou-
red the partye of Lewys agayne the
kyng, of the whyche the kyng par-
doned many of the laye fee. But the
spirituall were put to suche fynes, p
they were compelled to laye that they
might to pledge to please the kyng,
and ouer that to sue to Rome to be as-

soyled. And this yere Ranulphe earle
of Chester, for consideracions hym
mouing, toke his tourney into the ho-
ly lande. But one cronycle sayeth he
toke that tourney vppon hym, for so
muche as he hadde contrarpe his alle-
geaunce, made homage vnto Lewys
aboue named, and for malpce whiche
he bare towarde kyng John, enten-
dyng at the tyme of that homage do-
yng to haue made the sayde Lewys
kyng of Englande.

Anno domini. M. CC. xlv.

Robert Berle.

Benet le Ceptur.

Anno domini. M. CC. xlv.

William Blounde.

Anno. lli.

Chap. ix.

In this thyrde yere of kyng
Henry a parliament was hol-
den at London, by vertue wher-
of was graunted to the kyng. ii. s. of
every plough lande thozoughe En-
glande, whyche was for the charge
that he befoze hadde wryth Lewys

warre.

And this yere as wytnesseth Po-
lycronycon, kyng Henry beganne
the newe woike of p church of West-
minster, whyche after that sayeng
shoulde be in the twelue yere
of his age.

The begyn-
nyng of the
newe woike
at Westminster
etc.

dd. i. Anno

Robert Hertle,

John Waple.

Anno. lxxx.

Jofne le Spycer.

The. lxxx. yere

In this yere, Alexander hig of Scottes, maryed dame Jane oz Johan the syster of kyng Henry. And this yere was grete harme done in Englande by vyolence of a whylewynde, and fyty dragons, were sene flyenge in the ayre. And this yere were proclamacions made in London and thozoughoute Englande, that all straungers shulde auoyde the lande by Wyche- mas nexte folowynge, excepte suche as came wpyth marchaundysse, and to make sale of them vnder the kynges saufe conduyte. Whiche was chesely made to auoide Foukes de Bjet and his complcyys, whyche kepte the ca-

A proclamacion that all straungers shulde auoide the lande.

stell of Bedforde agayne the kynges wyll and pleasure. And in thys yere was kyng Henry secondarly crowned at Westmynster the. xxii. daye of Maye. And this yere the cytie called Danas in the holy lande, was by chrysten men gotten from the Turkyss.

The. lxxx. yere
of the
kinge Henry.

And this yere came oute of the holy land into England Ranulphe erle of Chester, and beganne to builde the castellys of Charteley & of Bestone, and after he buylded þe abbaye of Delacresse of the white order. For charge and coste of which saide castellis and abbaye, he toke tolle thozough all his lordship, of all such as passyd þe waye with any chaffre oz marchaundise.

Anno Domini. M. CC. xxi.

Anno Domini. CC. xxii.

Robert Hertle,

Rycharde Wymbeday.

Anno. v.

John Waple

The. v. yere.

In this. v. yere of kyng Henry, at Orenforde was holden a generall counsell of the byshoppes and clergie of this land. In tyme of which counsel a man was taken, the whyche shewyd hym selfe to be Chyste, and preached many thynges of erroute, whyche the clerkes at those dayes vled. And to approue that he was Iesus the sonne of God, and that he was comen to resourme those erroutes and other, he shewyd the carectes and tokens of woundes in hys bodye, handes, and feete, lyke vnto Iesus that was nayled on the crosse. Then he was appoynted and approuyd a false dissymuler. Wherefore by dome of that counsaile, he was

A general counsell of the byshoppes and clergie of the lande.

Of one that feigned hym selfe to be Chyste.

judged to be nayled vnto the crosse, and so deliuered to the executoures, the whyche at a place called Albury nayled hym vnto a crosse tyll he was deade.

Also thys yere, the kyng layde syege vnto the castel of Bedforde that Fowkys de Brente hadde so longe holden by strengthe. Thys syege beganne vppon the euen of the Assencion of our Loyde, and so continued tyll oure Lady daye assumpcion. In whyche passetyme, manye stronge assautes were made, to the greate losse of men on bothe partys. But fynallye aboute thys fozeclayde daye of assumpcion, yt was taken by fyrse assaute. Wherein was taken the foze-named

The castel of
Brent
was
gotten.

The seventh parte.

39

named Fowkys de Brent, and vpon the number of. lxx. souldyours, wher of the moze parte were put to deathe, and the saide Fowkis after he had de lyen a certayne of tyme in prysone, was for hys synaunce deliuered and flemysd h land. And in this yere came the freere Winoys first into England

These are grape freeres of the order of Saynte Fraunces, whiche yf that be trewe, they shoulde come into Englands sixe yeres befoze the deathe of saynte Fraunces. For after assy- maunce of the authoure of Cronica croniarum, Iacobus Philippus, & other, Saynte Fraunces dyed in the

yere of grace. xi. hundred and. xxvii. And that order was fyrste confirmed of Honorius the thyrde of that name byllhop of Rome, in the yere of grace twelue hundred and. xliii.

This order fyrst beganne vnder a fewe number of freeres at the cytye of Caunterburge, and after came vnto London, and rested theym there tyll they hadde an house there foundyd, by Isabell wyfe of Edward the se- conde, as after shall be shewed in the storye of the sayde Edward, all be it the foresayde house was begonne of Margarete the wyfe of Edward the fyrste.

Anno domini. M. CC. xlii.

Robert Serle,

Rycharde Kenger.

Josus le Josue,

Anno domini. M. CC. xlii.

Anno. vi.



In this seyre yere of the reygne of kynge Henry a conspiracy was made by one Constantyne the sonne of Arnulphe, wythin the cytye of London, for the whiche he was drawen and hanged the moze folowynge oure Ladyes Daye Assumpeyon.

This conspiracy was disclosed by a cytyen named Walter Boherel, and

Anno domini. M. CC. xliii.

Robert Serle.

Rycharde Joyner.

Thomas Lamberte.

Anno domini. M. CC. xliii.

Anno. vii.



In this seventh yere, Johan kynge of Hierusalem came into Englands, and requyred ayde of king Henry to wyne agayne that holy cite, but he retourned with small comfozte. And about this tyme John the sonne of Dauid Earle of

was so heynous & greuous to h king that he was in mynde and purpose to haue throwen downe the wallys of h cytye. But when he had well concey- ued that the persones which entendid this conspiracy were but of the rascal- lys of the cytie, and h none of the hed- dys or rulets of the same were there- unto consentynge, he aswagyd his ire and greuous displeasure, wiche he en- tendyd towarde the cytie.

Anguythe in Scotlande, and nere kynnesman vnto Ranulphe of Che- ster, married the doughter of Lewelyn Prynce of Walys, as it were for a fy- nall accord betwene the sayde Lew- lyn and Ranulphe ever after to be continued.

dd. ii. Anno

Anno domini. M. CC. xliii.

Anno domini. CC. xlv.

Rycharde Keynger.

Thomas Lamberte.

Anno. vili.

The. viii. yere



A thys. viii. yere of kyng
Henry, a parlyamente was
holden at Wobere a-
monge other thinges, þat loz-
des and barouns of the lande graun-

ted vnto the kyng & to his heires kin-
ges, the warde & mariage of their hei-
res, which dede was after of learned
men called *iniciū malorū*, þat is to meane
the beginning of ylls oꝝ of harmes.

The yere
of waste &
martyr.

Anno domini. M. CC. xlv.

Anno domini. M. CC. xlv.

Rycharde Keynger.

Andzewe Bokerell.

Anno. ix.

The. ix. yere.



A this. ix. yere of kyng Hen-
rye, Frederyke the seconde of
that name, and emperoure of
Almayne, for his contumacy agayne
the church of Rome was accursed of
the. ix. Gregoꝝ then Bysshoppe of

Rome. Wherfoze soone after he toke
two Cardynalls and dyuers pyla-
tes as they were goynge vnto a ge-
nerall counceyl kepte by the sayde bis-
shoppe, at a place called Spolete, a
citty of Italie.

Howe Frederyke the Emperoure was accursed of Gregoꝝ the. ix. byshop of Rome.

Anno domini. M. CC. xlv.

Anno domini. M. CC. xlv.

Rycharde Keynger.

Roger Duke.

Anno. x.

Partynne by Willpam.

The. x. yere.

A thys tenth yere of the regne
of kyng Henry, the plects of the
croune were plected in the towne
of London. In this yere also as wyt-
nesse the frenche chyoncle, diuers
souldpoures, whiche as to thys dape
kepte certayne castells in the coun-
tie of Doptiers, as the castell of Mon-

struell the castell of Aport, & the tow-
nes of Angely and of Rochel were by
the frenche kyng so assaulyd, that
they were constrayned to geue them
ouer vnto the frenche kyng then be-
ynge Lewys the nyth of that name,
oꝝ after some writers the. viii. & sonne
of Whyllyppe the seconde.

Anno domini. M. CC. xlv.

Anno domini. M. CC. xlv.

Roger Duke.

Stephan Bokerell.

Anno. xi.

Henry Cobham.

The. xi. yere.

A this eleventh yere of this kyng
Henry, the shirwike of London
and of Wyddel. were lettynge to

ferme for the summe of. lxxx. pound
by yere to þe Wyues of London. And
the. xlv. day of February þe same yere
was

The seventh parte.

41.

was graunted by þe kyng that all we-
ris in þe Chamis shuld be plucked vp
and destroyed for ever. And þe .xvi. day
of March folowing, the kyng graun-
ted by his charter ensealyd, that the ci-
tyzens of London shuld passe tol free
thorough all England. And yf any ci-
tyzens were constrayned in any cytie,
borough, or towne in England to pay
any tol, þe then the shryues of London
to attache any man comyng to Lon-
don of þe laide cytie borough or towne
where suche toll was payde, and hym
and his goodes to withholde and kepe
tyll the cytyzens of London be resto-
ryd of all such money payde for þe said

tolle, with all costes and damages su-
steyned for the same. And the eyght-
ten daye of August folowing, þe kyng
graunted to the sayd cytyzens of Lon-
don wareyn, that is to meane that the
cytyzens haue free liberte of hunting
certayne circuyte aboute London.
And in thys yere the towne of Lym-
syn with diuers holdes in Berregot
and Aluerne in the countie of Guyan
were geuen by to the fozenamed Le-
wis the frenche kyng. Wherfore the
kyng sente ouer his brother Richard
Earle of Cornewayle shortly after,
which landed at Burdeux with foure
hundred sayles.

Howe Rich-
ard brother
to kyng Henry
was sayled into
France with
a great navy.

Anno domini. M. CC. xxviii.

Stephan Bokerell.

Roger Duke.

Henry Cobham.

Anno domini. M. CC. xxi.

Anno. xli.

Quil. yere.



In the beginnyng of thys
twelue yere of king Henry
Stephan Langton arche-
bishop of Caunterbury dy-
ed, and the greate deane of Paulys,
mayster Rycharde Wethershed was
his successoure. And in thys tyme the
fraunchise & lyberties of þe cytie were
by the king confirmed, and to euerych
of the shryues was graunted to haue

ii. clerkes and ii. offycers without mo-
And to þe cytyzens of London was al-
so graunted this yere, that they shuld
haue & vse a comon seale. And in this
yere Richard earle of Cornewayle be-
sieged the towne of saynt Machatre
in Guyan. And when he had wonne it
by strength, he then layde his siege to
the towne of Rochel, tyll it was resto-
red by the marshall of Fraunce.

Anno domini. M. CC. xxix.

Walter Wynchester.

Roger Duke.

Robert sp. John.

Anno domini. M. CC. xxx.

Anno. xlii.

Quil. yere.

In thys. xlii. yere of kyng Hen-
ry, vpon Trinite sondaye, or af-
ter an other aouthour vpon white
sondaye, whyle the bishoppe of Lon-
don was at the hyghe masse in saynte
Pauls church of London, fell soden
cloudes, and therwith suche steeche
and tempeste of thunder and lyghte.

nyng, that the people theate assem-
blyd, voyded the churche, and the by-
caryes and chanons forsooke theyre
deskys, that the Byshoppe remay-
ned theate in greate feare alone, ex-
cepte a fewe of his menyall seruaun-
tes, and suche as attended vpon him
at the aultare.

dd. iii. Anno

Anno domini. M. CC. xxx.

Anno domini. M. CC. xxxi.

Rycharde fyr William.

Roger Duke.

Anno. xliii.

John Woodbozme.

The. xliii. yere

In this. xliii. yere of þe kyng was ordeined by the Mayre, and rulers of þe cytie of London, þe no wyse of that cytie shulde continew longer in offyce then one yere. Wherof the cause was

that diuerse of them by continuance of their offyce did diuers excozpons, and toke byrbes of bytellers w other defautis, which were founde and pzo upd pzeiudicial & hurtfull to the common weale of the saide cytie.

Anno domini. M. CC. xxxi.

Anno domini. M. CC. xxxii.

Roger Duke.

Rychaell of saynt Clete.

Anno. xlv.

Walter Denfelde.

The. xlv. yere.

In this. xlv. yere, the kyng had graunted hym a *Quindecim*, oꝝ a systene of the tempoꝝaltre, and a dyme and an halfe of the spirytualtre, to recouer his landes losse in Normandye, Guyan, and Poiteau. And in this yere Huberte of Burgh, that at this daye was chefe iustyce of Englande, had greued oꝝ dyspleased the kyng in suche wyse, that he was compelled to flee the kynges syghte. But he was so straghtly pursued, þe

he was taken in a chapell of Wyntewode in Essex, and so caste in pryson at the kynges commaundement. But after by laboure of the byshoppe Edmund of Bountenap, he was reconcyled to the kynges fauoure, when he had ben prysoned vpon xlii. monethes and exyled vpon thyrtyene monethes. And this yere was done great harme in London by fyre, the whiche began in an house of a wydow named dame Jane Lamberte.

Anno domini. M. CC. xxxii.

Anno domini. M. CC. xxxiii.

Andrewe Bukerell.

Henry Eldementon.

Anno. xli.

Gerarde Batte.

The. xli. yere

In this. xli. yere, kyng Henry vppon complaynt broughte befoze hym, by the frendes of Lewelyn pynce of Walys, þe William le Bruce oꝝ Brunze shoulde conspyre agayne the kyng, oꝝ after some, for he kept vnlawfully the wife of þe fozenamed Hamlyn: he was after longe prisonment hanged. And this yere dyed Ranulphe earle of Chester, Lincolne & Huntingdon. And his sisters sonne nomed John, sonne vnto the earle of

Ingulthe as befoze in the. xlii. yere of this kyng is declared was his heyre and helde that lordshyppe after hym. This John of mosse wyters is called John Scot, for so muche as hys father was a Scotte. This foresaide Ranulphe hadde no chyldre, all be yt he hadde foure systers. The eldeste byghte Holde oꝝ Hawde, and was maried to Dauid earle of Ingulthe and was mother to þe fozesayde John Scot. The seconde was named Hawys

The seventh part

43.

boys, and was maried vnto the earle of Arundel. The chyldre Agnes, was toynd to the Earle of Darbye. And the fourth named Habely, was maried vnto the Earle of Wynchester called Roberte Dupnaye. Thys Ranulphe dyed at Walyngfozde, and was buryed in the Chapter house of the Monkes of Chester, and oyday-

ned the fornamed John Scotte to be hys heyre, for that he wolde not haue so noble a lordeshyppe runne among o; to be deuyded betwene so manye dystaues. And thys yeare dyed mayster Richard Wethershed archebysshoppe of Canterburge, whose successor was Edmund of Bountenaye.

Anno domini. M. CC. xxxiii.

Andzeto Bukerell

Edmonde fys Warte

Roger Blunt

Anno domini. M. CC. xxxiiii.

Anno. xlii.

Ch. xlii. p. 100



In thys. xlii. yeare of pcepgne of kyng Henry the fornamed Edmunde of Bountenay o; of Abyndon, was facted archbysshop of Canterburge. He was named Bountenay forsomuch as he was buried at Bountenay i Burgoyne. And he was named Edmunde of Abyndon by reason he was borne in Abyndon.

Thys manne as befoze in the. xli. yeare is welwed, reconcyled Huberte

of Burgh to the kynges grace, and caused hym to be restozed to hys former offyce, as chiefe iustyce of thys lande. In thys yeare also the kyng beganne the foundacion of the hospitall of saynte Ihon wpythoute the Eastgate of Orenfozde. In whiche yeare also fylle wouderfull wether, as thunder and lychtenyng vnlpe vnto other. And thereupon folowed an earthquake, to the greate fere of the inhabytauntes of Hunteyngdon, and neare there aboute.

In earthquake

Anno domini. M. CC. xxxv.

Andzeto Bukerell

Rafe Alscheby.

Ihon Rozman.

Anno domini. M. CC. xxxvi.

Anno. xliii.

Ch. xliii. p. 101



AD in the. xliii. yeare of kyng Henry, þe Jewes dwellyng at Rozwyche were broughte befoze the kyng at Westmynster, to answer to a complante made agayn them by one called John Toly of the sayde towne of Rozwyche, that they shuld stele a chyld, & it cpyuised of þe

age of a yere, and after kept the same chyld secret to the intent to crucifye it in dyspyte of chrystes relygiõ. But how the matter was folowed, o; how so the Jewes acquyted the selues by their answer truth it is, þe they returned unpunished. And this yere Frederike the second of þe name, and Emperoure of Almayne, married the syster of kyng Henry named Habel, as testyfeth Polycronyca.

Anno domini. M. CC. xxxv.

Henry the thyrde

Anno domini. M. CC. xxxvi.

Andzewe Bukerell

Gerarde Batte

Anno. xix.

Roberte Ardel

The. xix. yere.



And in the. xix. yere, the moxow after saint Hylary, o; p. xiiii. day of January, Edmund archbyschope of Caunterburys, spowled the kynge and Elynoure the daughter of the Earle of Bouynce in hys ctry of Caunterbury. And in the vras of the sayde Hylarye, he was crowned at Westmynster as quene of Englande. Where in the felde by Westmynster lpyng at the Weste ende of of the church, was kept royal solempre and goodly Justyce, by the space of. viii. dayes. And the same yere the statute of Werton was enacted,

whyche is to meane certayne actes made by acte of parlymente, holden by the kyng and hys lozdes and commons at the towne of Werton, wher amonge other actes was ordapned a remedy for wyddowes that were defrauded of thyr dowres, also howe theys wythin age shulde be intreated, and remedyes for such as were stolen o; wytholden contrary to the garydens wylles. But moze certayne yt was ordapned at a Parlymente at Werton forsayde, whyche was holden the. xix. yere of thys kyng, in the moxowe folowynge the daye of saynt Martyn, o; the. xii. daye of November

Statutes of Werton.

Anno domini. M. CC. xxxvi.

Anno domini. M. CC. xxxvii.

Andzewe Bukerell.

Henry Cobham.

Anno. xx

Jurden Couentre.

The. xx. yere



At thys. xx. yere of kyng Henry, John Scot befoznamed Earle of Chester dyed wythout pssue male. Wherefoze the big consyderynge the greate prerogatyues belongynge to that Earledome, gaue vnto hys daughters other possions, and tooke the Earledome into hys owne hande,

Thys John dyed at Doxondale, and was buryed amonge hys antecessours at Chester, as assymethe Polycronycon.

And also he sayeth that he dyed wythoute anye chyld, and that the forsayde exchaunge was made with the fornamed sisters of Ranulphe, befoze expessed in the. xvi. yere of thys kyng.

Anno domini. M. CC. xxxvii.

Anno domini. M. CC. xxxviii.

Andzewe Bukerell.

John Chesalan

Anno. xxi

Gerarde Cozdwaner.

The seventh part

Anno domini. M. CC. xxxvii. Anno domini. M. CC. xxxviii. 45.

Ihon Chesaleyn Andzewe Bukerel Gerard de Cozdwane

Ch. xxi. p. 1.



Ad in the. xxi. yere Octobone a legat of the. ii. Gregorpe, came into England and ordapned good ordinaunces for the church. But not all to the pleasure of the yonge riargre of Englande. Wherefoze as he one daye passed thowowe Orenfozde, the scolars sought occaupon agayne his seruauntes and foughte with them and slewe one of the same, and put þe legat in suche feare, that he for hys sauegarde toke the belfray of Diney

and there helde hym till the bynges mynysters comynge from Abyndō with strengthe, medeled with saye woordes delpurced him and conueyed hym after with a compente compaigne vnto Walyngfozde. Where he accursed the misdoers, and punished them in suche wise, that the regentes and maysters of that vniuersity were lastlye compelled to go barefoe throughe Chepe to Paules at Londo and there to aske of hym forgeuenes and hadde that trespase with greates dyspculite forgeuen.

howe a legat was interred in Orenfozde

Anno domini. M. CC. xxxviii.

Rycharde Renger

John Whyllhale

Anno domini. M. CC. xxxix.

John Goundzesse.

Anno. xxi

Ch. xxi. p. 2.



At this. xxi. yere, a false clark of the foyleapde vniuersitye of Orenfozde, which fained him selfe madde, and before tyme hadde espyed the secret places of the bynges courte, came by a wyndowe towarde the bynges chamber, at hys manor at Woodstoke, entendinge to haue slayne the kyng. But he was espyed by a woman and tar

ken, and conueyed to Couentre, and there arceyned of that dede. Where after lausfull proues of hys malpicious entente made, he for þe same was there drowen and hanged.

And in this yere vppon the euen of Sante Butolphe, or the fyre and twenty daye Juny, was bozne at West mynster Edward that after was surnamed Longshanke. This after hys father was kyng.

Edward 15ys shanke.

Ch. xxi. p. 3.

Anno domini. M. CC. xli.

William Joynoure

Remonde Bengly

Anno domini. M. CC. xli.

Anno. xxi.

Rafe Nichep

Ch. xxi. p. 4.



At this. xxi. of kyng Henry before the tyme of the electyō of the bynges of Londo, one

Symonde fye Mary, whiche before in the. xvi. yere of the kyng hadde bene in that offyce, had purchased a com-

commaundemente of the kynge dy-
rected to þe Mayze and rulers of the
cyrpe, that they shulde cause hym to
be electe to that offyce for that yere
folowynge. But the Mayze wth the
heades of the cyrpe, wch stode it, and
chase the fornamed Rafe Althw, and
putte the sayde Symonde by, for the
whych he complayned hym to the
kynge. Then the kynge sente for the
Mayze and the rulers of the cyrpe, &
hadde vnto theym manye wordes of
dyspleasure, for the dysobeyinge of
hys commaundemente, and furder-
moze dyscharged William Joyntout
whych that yere was agayne cho-
sen newly to be Mayze for the yere
folowynge, and charged the cyrps
to proceed a newe electyon for the
mayze.

Whych then to satysfy the kynges

pleasure, chase Gerarde Batte. By
whose meanes and good polycye the
sayde mayze with his cyrps demer-
ned theym so well to the kynge, that
they obtayned hys gracious fauour
and caused the forclapde Symonde
to sayle of hys purpose, and was not
after admytted to that offyce, tyll he
hadde submytted hym to the rule of
the mayze and rulers of the same cyr-
pe. The whych Symonde behaued
hym so well after that he was admyt-
ted for an aldermanne. But in shorte
procelle after he deameaned hym so
ruell, and so contraryously vnto the
weale and good order of þe cyrpe, that
he was dyscharged of hys alderman
shyppe, and dyscharged from al rule
and counsaile of the cyrpe, as in the
xxiii. yere of thys kynge folowynge
is touched.

Anno domini. M. CC. xl

Gerarde Batte

Jhon Epours

Mychaell Topp.

Anno domini. M. CC. xlii

Anno. xliiii

The. xliiii. yere



And the. xliiii. yere of
kynge Henry Maynt
Paules church of Lon-
don was newly halow-
ed. And the grete Cha-
an of Tartarys befoze
in the seconde yere of kynge Jhon
mynded or touched of theys begyn-
ninge. In thys yere after he had fro
the Turkes wonne much of the East
landes, he sente an host into the land
of Hungary, the whych helde the peo-

ple of that countrey so shorte that as
wytneseth the authoure of Polycro-
nyca and other, they were constrey-
ned of necessity to eate theyr owne
chyliden and other vylefull meates.
But the authoure of Cronyca croni-
carum sayeth, that thys mysterpe fell
to the people of Hungary, in the yere
of oure Loyde, twelue hundred, and
xxi.

Whych after that saynge shuld
be in the fyfte yere of thys kynge.

Anno domini. M. CC. xlii

Remonde Bongley

Jhon Toppell

Thomas Durespne

Anno domini. M. CC. xlii

Anno. xlv

Ch. 17. p. 171



AD in the .xxv. yere of kyng Henrye, Gerard Bat was agayne chosen mayr for thys present yere. And after whose eleccion, he was by the woorthfull of the cytye conveyed unto Woodstoke, & presented after the custome unto the kyng. But the kyng enscourmed of hys last yeres dealynge, by such as oughte to hym no good wyll, sayde that he wolde not admyt hym to that offyce till suche tyme as he came to Westmynster, with whiche answer the sayde Gerard with hys company returned unto London. It was not long after of the kyng came to Westmynster, where accordynge to therye duty the cytyens of London agayne awaited vpon the kyng to knowe hys pleasure.

The mayr
comes in the
hundredth

Where the kyng called before hym the sayde Mayr, and after certayne questyons to hym put, he caused hym to be sworne in hys presence.

After whiche oth to hym geuen, the kyng charged hym by vertue of the same, that he shoulde not take of the bakers and brewers and other bytellers of the cytye .xl. pounde, whiche

other of hys predecessours, and also he that laste yere hadde taken. And also that he in contynently after hys comynge to London, shuld restore vnto the sayd bytellers and other cytyens, all suche money as he hadde with wyng in that pcedyng yere taken of the comynalte of the cytye. But for þat sayde Gerard alledged for hym certayne consyderacions, he sechynge the kyng to pardon hym of that restitucion, the kyng in dyspleasure swore a great othe, that he shuld not that yere be mayr, nor a tyme tyme there after. And so the commons certified of the kynges pleasure, chace in hys place of stede, Reynet de Būgape. And this yere the kyng rode into Wales. Wherof heryng Dauid then pryncce of Wales, met with the kyng at Ruthlande and submytted hym to the kynges grace.

And thys yere one Wylliam of the Marwe, was at London for treason drawn and hanged. Thys yere also were aldermen first chosen with in the cytye of London, whiche then hadde the rule of the cytye and of the wardes of the same, and were then yearly chaunged, as now the whys be chaunged.

The time that
aldermen were
first chosen in
London.

Anno domini. M. CCxlii

Remonde Bongley

John frys John

Rafe Jheby.

Anno domini. M. CCxliii.

Anno. xvi

Ch. 17. p. 172



Forthys. xvi. yere of kyng Henrye, Boniface was sacced archbishoppe of Caunterburpe. And thys yere the kyng with a saye company sayled into Normandy. Whiche vyage as sayeth the frenche Cronycle was

made by the sterpyng of a frenchman, named erale of March, for so much as þat sayd erale refused to do homage vnto Alphonse brother vnto Lewis the .x. of that name, & surnamed .L. Lewis then kyng of Fraunce. Thys Lewis the yere before had married his sayd brother vnto the daughter of þat Erle

Earle of Tholouse, and had geue to his sayd brother the erldome of Poyreau, wyth all the landes of Aluerne. By reason wherof he wold haue caused the sayde earle of March, to haue done homage vnto the sayd Alphons for such landes as the said earle held of the sayde Earldome of Poytours. But for the sayd earle March knew well that the ryght of Guyan belonged to the kyng of England, he therfore, and for other allyaunces made betwene kyng Henry and hym, refused the dooynge of that homage, and after came to kyng Henry, and expected hi to make warre vpon the French kyng. By reason wherof the kyng made prouysyon, and so landed with a stronge power at Burdeaur. After the assyzaunce of the French booke, this erle of March had maried the mother of kyng Henry.

Then it foloweth in this whyle the French kyng warred vpon the landes of the Earle of March, and had wonne .ii. castels of his named Founteneys and Uillers, wyth dyuers other whyche I passe ouer. And when he had beten downe some of theym, & some stoyed wyth new sowdours, he then went vnto a castel named Maucoune, and byake a byrdege after hym for so muche, as he was warned that the kyng of Englande was nere vnto hym. At the sayde byrdege was a lytle skymyshe, but lytle harme was there done. Then the French kyng toke the way ouer the ryuer of Charente toward Caylbourgh, wastynge and destroyinge the countrey as he wente, and so forth toward the towne called Saynces. And kyng Henry wyth his hooft made toward hym in all that he myght. In keepynge this course, the barons of the kyng en-

countred wyth the Earle of Bolegne which was vpon the French kynges party. That season the earle of Sainces bare the baner of the erle of Marches being in the barward of the kyng. But betwene these .ii. erles was soze fyghte so many a man vpon both parties was slayne, among the which the sayd earle of Sainces was slayne. Then came on both strengthes vpon ether syde, so that both kynges fought in the batell & greute slaughter of men was vpon both sydes. But in the ende the Frenchmen were wyetours, and toke prysouners .xx. men of name, as knyghtes and of higher degre, and thre clarkes of great fame and ryches, besyde other to the nomber of .v. hundred of meane people as wytnesseth the French booke. But of these men of name, nor yet of the thre clarkes, none is named nor shewed what good they payed for; they; raumsonne. Wherfore me lytle to wyte no further of this greute vyctorye, albeitt, that the sayde booke sayeth farther, that kyng Henry for feare retourned backe vnto Burdeaur, & ther made meanes to the kyng of France for a peace. But of all this fynd I no word in the Englysh cronycles.

Then the erle of Marches by meane of his sonne, was reconciled vnto the French kyng, & restoyed to his lades, except .iii. castels, which were named Melpyne, Cretaye, & Casterdaye, the which the French kyng retayned in his owne posselsyon. And sone after came to the French kyng the lordes of the castels of Wyndesore, and of Wyndesore, submyttinge them also vnto the kynges grace, beseechinge him of pardon, that they had so to his bygh dyspleasure fauored his enemye the kyng of Englande.

The seventh parte.

49

And after came in dyuerse other lordes and capitaynes, so that he was in possession of all the countrey of Guyan and Poyreau, vnto the ryuer of Gyronde.

I haue rehearsed the moze of this cronycle of Fraunce, vnto the entent that the readers may better perceyue the pyde & boldnes of the frenchemé. For in all theyr wytynges, when they come to any matter that soundeth any thyng to theyr honoure, it is wyrtten in the lengest and mooste shewyng maner to theyr honoure and wyshppe.

But as I haue sayde befoze in the fyfte chapytter of the storye of the seconde Phylippe kyng of Fraunce, yf it sounde any thyng to theyr dysho-

nour, then shal it be abrytlatid o: hid that the trowth shal not be knowen. And that appereth well here by theyr owne wytyng. For in the .vii. yere of kyng John, it is shewed howe Phylippe the seconde then kyng of Fraunce had wonne all Normandy and Guyan. And yet at this daye, this kyng Lewis warrio againe in þe same countrey, so that they euer tell of the wytynges, but they touche nothyng of the agayne losyng.

Then yt foloweth in the storye, when kyng Henrey hadde as befoze is sayde, concluded the foresaid peace of the whiche by mine authoure is no tearme sete, the kyng retourned into Englande.

Anno domini. M. CC. xliii.

Hugh Blount.

Anno domini. M. CC. xliii.

Rafe Methw.

Adam Basyng.

Anno. xxviii.

In this. xxviii. yere, the kyng retourned from Burdeaur into Englande. And thys yere þe ples of the crowne were kepte in the towne of London. And this yere Gylf

speth, which was sonne of Lewelyn lastely pryncce of Wallis, entendinge to haue broken pryson, fell ouer the wal of the inner warde of the towne of London and brake his necke.

Anno domini. M. CC. xlv.

Rafe Spycer.

Anno domini. M. CC. xlv.

Mychaell Tony.

Archolas Batte.

Anno. xxviii.

In thys. xxviii. yere of kyng Henrey. I fynde no notable

thyng wyrtten that was doone that presente yere.

Anno domini. M. CC. xlv.

John Gysors.

Robert Cornepyll.

Anno domini. CC. xlv.

Adam Betwly.

Anno. xxix.

ee. i. In this

Henry the thyrde.

In this .xxix. yere, Archobylas Batte contrarye to the ordynance befoze in the .xiii. yere of this kyng made, was againe chosen Shyreue of London. For the whiche he was conuicted of perjurye, and so discharged & punished. And for that Michael Conny, whiche for this yere also was chosen Mayre, was by depolycion of the Aldermen founde guiltye in the sayde crime of perjurye: therfore he was depolysed from his offyce and punished. And for him was chosen mayre John Gylours, & for Archobylas Batte was chosen Shyreue Robert of Cornhill.

Anno domini. M. CC. xlii.

John Gylours.

Symonde fytz Mary.

Laurence Frompke.

Anno domini. M. CC. xlii.

Anno. xxi.

In this yere also as testifyeth Iulius of Donmouth, Roberte Grosebed then byshoppe of Lyncolne, with other prelatys of the lande, complayned them vnto the kyng of the waste of the goodes and patrimonye of the church, whiche dayly was wasted & mispente by the alpaunce byshoppes and clerkes of this lande. Of the whiche straungers one named mayster Martyn, and nere kynnisman of Innocent the thyrde was one. The whiche the kyng by helpe of the Englyshe byshoppes auoyded, with other lyke offendours out of this realme.

The .xx. yere.

The depolycion of Frederiche the emperour.

Crosse vpon crosse.

Ad in this yere dyed Frederike the emperour of Almayn, whiche as befoze is touched in the .xviii. yere of this kyng, married Isabel sister vn to the kyng. The which for his rebellyon against the church of Rome, was accurssid first of the .ix. Grego, and lastely of Innocent the .iiii. he was againe cursid and depriued of his imperyll dignyte, geuyng comysyon & lycence to the electours of the Emperour, to chose a newe. The which wer of so many myndes in theyr election that some chace the duke of Thoring some the earle of Holande, and some chace the kynges byother Richard earle of Cornewaple. Whiche causyd stryfe that endured longe after, so that the onely emperour of Almayne was not of all men allowed, tyll Radulphus Duke of earle of Habsburghe in Almayne, was chosen by one assente vn to that dignyte, and therunto admit-

ted by Grego, the .ix. of that name, in the yere of our Loyde .xii. hundred and .lxxiii. And so that vnpaunce endured vpon .xviii. yeres, to the great impouerishyng of Italy, and the landes of the empye. Then as befoze is sayde this Frederik died vnassopled, and was buryed in a cytie called Ferenepola, with this superscripcyon vpon his tounge.

*Siprobitas, sensus, virtutis gratia, census,
Nobilitas orti, possent resistere morte,
Non foret extinctus, Fredericus qui iacet intus.*

Whiche verses are thus muche to meane in Englyshe.

If excellent of witte, of grace of good vertue,
Of nobylnesse of byrth myghte vnto deathe resiste,
Then shulde this Frederike most tall fate exchewe,
Whiche hym hath closed here nowe in his chesse.

The seventh parte.

71.

But none of these maye earthly man
allyste.

To Arise wth deathe, but all muste
paye hym dette.

Noble and innoble theare nothynge
maye lette.

An other verisfyoure made these. ii.
versys folowynge, of the interpreta-
cion of this name Fredericke.

*Fre fremit in mundo, de deprimut alia profundo,
Re res rimatur, eis cuspide cuncta minatur.*

The whiche maye in thys maner

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxv.

Peter Heyne.

John Uople.

Nicholas Batte.

of wyse be englyshed.

Fre fretyth thys worlde, and be con-
foundeth all,

Hyghe thynges of honoure, into dep-
nesse darke.

By sercheth busly þ goodes general
Of this worlde bothe of the laye and
clerke,

Makynge no questyon in hys moste
cruell werke.

And eis with swearde all thyng do-
eth manace,

And thus lyued Frederike in þ worlde
for a space.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxv.

Anno. lxxv

Calvary pere



A thys. lxxv. pere of
the regne of kyng
Hery, Lewis which
is surnamed saynte
Lewys then kyng
of fraunce, wth a
conuenient hoste sap

led into the holy lande, and there war-
red vpon Chyttes enemyes, and wan
the cytie of Damas at his fyrste lan-
dynge, and after tarped theare frome
the begynnynge of þ moneth of June
vnto the. xxii. daye of Nouember, and
after departed thence towarde Baby-
lon, entendynge to haue layde syege
to the cytie. But fortune was to hym
so contrary, þ by sykenesse and other
casualtyes he losse muche of hys peo-
ple, and in the ende was hym selfe ta-

ken prysoner of the Turkes, as more
playnely shall be shewed in the stoye
of the sayde Lewys folowynge.

And in thys pere was a myghtye
earth quake in Englande, þ the lyke
to it was not sene many yeres before.
Also thys pere the kyng sealed the
fraunchyse of the cytye of London,
vpon the euen of Saynte Bartholo-
meue, for a iudgemente that was g-
uen by the Maye and Aldermenne
agayne a wedow named Margarete
Tyell, and commytted the rule of the
Cytye vnto Wyllyam Haucryll, and
Edward of Westmynster, tyll oure
Ladys daye nexte folowynge. At the
whiche season the Maye and Shy-
ues were agayne to theyr offyces ad-
mytted.

A great earth
quake.

The fealshyp
of London
ceased.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxv.

Michael Comp.

Nicholas Joy.

Geffrey Wynton.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxv.

Anno. lxxv.

et. ii. In this

The. xxv.
pere.

52.

Henry the thyrde.

In this. xxv. pere of þe kyng the wharfe of London called quene hythe, was taken to ferme by the comynalte of the cytie, to paye yerely therfore. l. ponde. The which was then comyt- ted to the Shires charge, and so hath continued euen lens that tyme vnto this daie. Wherof the prosytes and tolls are so soze minyshed, þat thys daie it is lytle worth ouer twentye marke oʒ. xv. ponde one pere wth a nother. And this pere fell greute dys- temperaunce of wether, in such wyse that the grounde was bareyne byon

the same, and other myshappys folo- wed anon thereupon. And thys pere when the mater afozenamed of Mar- garete Wyell wydowe was well exa- mined, the iudgemente thereof was founden good and trewe. Wherfoze the Cytizens enioyed the lybertyes wthoute interrupcion, all be yt the kyng was wth theym some whate agreuyd, for so muche as they at hys requeste, wolde not exchaunge wth the abbot of Westmynster, suche ly- bertyes as they hadde in Wyddeller of the kynges graunte, for other to be hadde in other places.

The liberte
of London
sare enioy

Anno domini. M. CC. lxx.

Roger fʒ Roger.

Rafe Hardell.

John Cooslane.

Anno domini. M. CC. l.

Anno. xxxiii.

The. xxxiii.
pere.

Roberte
Grosche.

In þe. xxxiii. pere of kyng Hen- ry in the moneth of October dyed Roberte Grosche bys- hoppe of Lyncolne. He was the ma- ker of the booke called Dety Caton & many other.

Thys Roberte for so much as the tith. Innocent, greued the churche of Englande wth taskys & paymentes agayne reason, he therfoze sent vnto hym a sharpe pyssle. This Innocent then gaue vnto a chylde a neuewe of his, a chanonty which sell boyde in þe

churche of Lincolne, & sent the chylde vnto the byshoppe, charging hym to admytte the sayde chylde, and to sette hym in hys place. But this byshoppe boldly denyed the rescepte of þe chylde and wrote vnto Innocente, that he wolde not noʒ shulde receiue suche vn- to the cure of soule, that coulde not rule theim selfe. Therfoze thys Ro- bert was somoned to appere befoze þe byshoppe of Rome, and therupon ac- cused. Then he apperayd from In- nocentis court to Chyristes owne trone.

An appeal
from the bys-
hop of Rome
to Chyriste.

Anno domini. M. CC. l.

John Rozman.

Humfrey Basse.

Willjam fʒ Rycharde.

Anno domini. CC. ii.

Anno. xxxiiii.

The. xxxiiii.
pere.

A great wind

In this. xxxiiii. pere, was an exce- dyng wynde, the whiche in son- dyr places of England did great harme, which was in the begynnyng of thys pere, vppon the daie of Sy-

mon and Jude.

And this pere Simon fʒ mary al- derman of London, for his disobedy- ence and euyl counsaile that he gaue vnto Margarete Wyell, befoze in the xxxi. pere of thys kyng touched, with

The seventh parte.

with other secret labours & matters intended by him to the hurt of the cyte,

was discharged of his aldermanship & put out of the council of the cyte.

Anno domini. M. CC. li.

Anno domini. M. CC. lii.

Laurence Frompke.

Adam Basyng.

Anno. xxxv.

Nicholas Batte.

On thyspe
and thys pte.

On thyspe
and thys pte.



In this thirtieth and fyue pte of kyng Henry beganne the freer Augu-
stynes to builde o; inhab-
yte them in Walys,
in a place called woodhouse.

And in thys pte maried kyng
Henry hys doughter Mary, o; after
some wyters Margarete, vnto Alex-

ander kyng of Scottys at the cyte
of York, a did receiue homage of the
sayde Alexander for the kyngdome
of Scottes, o; for the prouynce of
Scotland, in lyke maner as many of
his progenitours hadde done dyuers
and many tymes befoze, as in thys
woke both befoze thys tyme and al-
so after is shewed.

Howe Henry
the iii. recei-
ued homage
of the kyng
of Scottes
for all Scot-
lande,

Anno domini. M. CC. lii.

Anno domini. M. CC. liii.

John Coleson.

William Dutham.

Anno. xxxvi.

Thomas Wymborne.

On thyspe
and thys pte.



In this thirtieth and fyue pte
the kyng graunted vnto
the Shyues of London,
that they shoulde pely be
allowed seven ponde, for certayne
pypurleges o; grounde belongynge
to saynt Pauls church, the whyche
at thys tyme is allowyd by the Ba-
rons of the kynges exchequer, vnto e-
uerie Shyue when they m; se they;
accompte in the offyce of the pype.

Also this pte was graunted by

kyng for the cytezens moze ease, that
where befoze tyme they bled pely to
peseute they; Mary vnto the ky-
nges ptesence, in any suche place as he
then were in Englande, y nowe from
this tyme forthwarde they shoulde for
lacke of the kynges ptesence beynge
at Westmynster, ptesente they; may-
re so chosen vnto the Barons of hys
Exchequer, and theare to be sworne
and admitted as he befoze tyme was
befoze the kyng.

The Marye
of London
sworne in the
Exchequer.

Anno domini. M. CC. liii.

Anno domini. M. CC. liii.

Nicholas Batte.

John Northampton.

Anno. xxxvii.

Richard Pycard.

On thyspe
and thys pte.



In this. xxxvii. pte, the water
of the sea, aboute the dape of
saynte Paulyn in the moneth
of January tole of suche heighte, that
it dyolned manye byllagys and hou-

ses nere vnto yt in dyuerse places of
Englande. And this pte the kyng,
the quene, and sy; Edward his sonne
with Bonysface Archebyschoppe of
Caunterburge, and dyuers other no-
ce. liii. bles

Howe the kyng
Edward, sayled into
Normandy.

bles of the Realme, sayled into Normandye, and tarped at Buedaur a certayne of tyme. But of they dedys or cause of they saylunge thither, is no mencyon made in the Cronycle of Englande. Howe be it in the frenche boke it is shewed, that the cause was to topne Edward the kynges sonne vnto the syster of þe kyng of Spayne by mariage.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxx.

Rycharde Hardell.

Robert Belyngton.

Raufe Alschevre.

This yere also the water of Thameys sprange so hygh, that it drowned many houses aboute the waters syde, by meane wherof muche merchandise was perished and losse. And this yere the cytezens had graunted of the kyng, that no cytezens shoulde paye scauage or tolle for any beastes by them brought, as they befoze tymes hadde dyd.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxx.

Anno. mccc.

The. mccc. yere.



At this. mccc. yere by procuremente of Rychard earle of Cornewale, for dyspleasure whiche he bare towarde the cyte, for exchaunge of certayne grounde to the same belonngynge, the kyng vnder coloure that the Maye had not done due execution vppon the bakerys for lackynge of theyr lyses, sealed the lybertyes of the cyte. That is to be vnderstande, that where the Maye and compnaltie of the cyte, had by the kynges graunte the cyte to fearme wth dyuerse customes and offyses, for assynted and ascerteyned summe of money, now the kyng sette in offycers at his pleasure, the which were accomptable vnto hym for all reuenues and profytes that grewe within the saide cyte. But wthin foure dayes folowynge, the feaste of saynte Edmund the byshop or by the nyntene dape of Nouember the cytezens agreed wth the sayde Earle for lyte hundred marke. After whiche agreement wth hym concluded, they sone after were restored vnto theyr lybertyes.

The liberties of the cyte escaped.

The liberties of London escaped.

This yere Rychard the kynges sonne and heyr was maried vnto Cleanoure the kynges syster of Spayne. And in the Chyrtmasse weke, the king landed at Douer and the quene with hym, with many other lordes. When the kyng was comen vnto London, he was lodged in the towre, where he sent for to come vnto hym the Maye and the Shyppes, wth whome he reasoned greuously for þe escape of one called John Gate. This John hadde murdered a pryoure allyed vnto the kyng. The maiore layde the charge of this matter vnto the Shyppes, for so muche as to them belonged the keepynge of all pylons wthin the cyte, so that the Maye returned home agayne, & the Shyppes remayned there as pyloners by the space of a moneth after or moze. And in theyr places and for them were chosen Stephan Dyster-gate, and Henry Walmoode. But howe the olde Shyppes passed out of the kynges daunger, I fynde not.

Edmunde the sonne and heyr of Henry the thyrde, married Cleanoure the kynges syster of Spayne.

The Shyppes of London were pyloners in the towre.

Anno

The seventh part

Inno domini. M. CC. lxxx.

Inno domini. M. CC. lxx.

Rycharde Hader

Stephan Dyltergate.

Inno. lxxx.

Henry Walmood



And in this. lxxx. yere in the fest of S. Ebelthrede, dame Elionoure wyfe yn to the kynges sonne sp. Edward, came vnto London, wher she was honorably receaued of the cytyzens, and the cytye ryche custayned and garnished with dyuerse rich clothes, where the kyng was present at her comynge And she was honorably conueyed throughe the cytye to saynte Iohns wythout Smythfelde and there lodged for a whyle. But after she was remoued vnto Saaop.

It was not longe after the kyng created the lybertyes of the cytye, for certayne mony whych the quene clamed for her ryghte of the cytyzens so that aboute saynte Martyns tyde in Nouember, they gaue vnto hys grace iiii. hundred marke, and then were reboyled to theyre sayde lybertyes, and the kynges vnder treasourer dyscharged, the which for the time was made custos or keper of the cyty. In the se-

ast of saynt Decyle, or the. xlii. daye of Nouember ensuyng, wer brought vnto Westmynst. C. and. two. Jewes from Lyncolne, the whiche were also accused of the crucyfenge of a chyld at Lyncolne in the dyspyte of Chyristes religyon, whiche Jewes were after sente vnto the Towre of London. Of the whiche in proccesse of tyme after. xliii. were conuycted and hanged, and other remayned longe after in pylson. In the wygyl of. S. Andrewe sp. Edward the kynges sonne came to London from beyond the sea. And the kyng of Scottes wyth the quene hys wyfe came in the somer season vnto the kyng to hys manor of Woodstoke, where he dysported hym a season, and after returned into Scotlande, leuyn hys wife wyth her mother tyll she wer lyghted of chyld. And vppon the daye of the decollacyon of saynt Iohn, the kyng the quene, and the quene of Scottes came to London, where they were honorably receaued, and so conueyed vnto Westmynst.

The comynge of Edward the wyke to London

Inno domini. M. CC. lxxi.

Inno domini. M. CC. lxxi

Rycharde Hardell

Mathewe Boketel.

Inno. xli

Ihon Wynoure



AD this. xli. yere, entered the lande dyuerse lordes of Almayn, the whych in Chyristmas, troke vpon the daye of the Innocentes, made homage vnto sp. Rycharde Carle of Cozentwall and brother to the kyng

the whiche as then stode kyng of Almayne and of Romans. And the thursdave nexte folowynge he departed from the kynges court, and sped hym wyth hys wyfe, and sp. Henry hys sonne vnto the sea syde, and after toke shippynge in Farnesay, the xxvii. daye of Aprill, and landed at

Doy-

On. 1734

the lybertyes of the cytye and the cytye

On. 1734

Richard Carle of Cozentwall and brother to the kyng

Doordeth in Holande the fyrste daye of Maye nexte ensuyng. And vpon assencion daye after, he was crowned kynge of Romans in the cty of Aquisgranum.

The kynge
toke hys souer-
ney in Wales

This yere vpon the fyrste day of August, the kynge toke hys tournay towarde Wales, for to subdue Lewelyn the sonne of Gryffyth the whych wryth hys Welshmen rebellyd agayn the kynge, for somuch, as for Edward hys sonne to whome he hadde a lytle before geuen the Earledome of Chester wold haue chaunged some of their knyghts condycions.

And for to bypunge hys purpose the better aboute, he sente for an armie of souldoyers into Irelande, and caryed for theyr comyng at hys castel of Benocke. But the yere passed fast on or hys people were gathered, so by the aduys of hys lordes he streng-

thed there certayne castels and retuned for that yere into England.

And aboute the feast of the Natyuite of oure Lady, a concord and a peace was concluded betwene the Lordyners and the abbot of Waltham, the whyche hadde bene in sute many yeres before, for certayne dystresses taken by the abbotes officers of the Londoners, wher they came with their mercymonyes vnto the sayde of Waltham, were as nowe it is agreed that al suche dystresses shulde be restored and yf anye were perished or lost for longe keepyng, that then the abbot to contente and paye to the partyes the value in monye, of suche dystresses so perished or looste, and that the ctyzens shulde enioye the lybertyes of that sayde euer after, wrythout payinge of anye tollage or tolle

Anno domini. M. CC. lvi

Rycharde Hardei

Rycharde Ewell

Wylliam Acheby

Anno domini. M. CC. lvi

Anno. cli.

The. xli. yere

A byll callid in
to the kynges
wardrobe at
Wynsoze.



And in the. xli. yere and beginning of þe same, was found in the kynges wardrobe at Wynsoze a byll or rolle closed in grene waxe and not knowen fro whence it shuld come, in the whych rolle was contayned dyuerse articles agayne the mayr and rulers of the ctye of London, & that by them the commynalte of the ctye was greuouslye tasked & wronged. Whyche byll was presented at length vnto the kynge. Whereupon he anon sente Wancell one of hys iustices vnto London, and ther in the feast of the conuersion of Saynte

Paul by the kynges authoryte, called at Pauls crosse a folkemote, beinge there presente by Rycharde de Clare Erie of Gloucestre, and diuerse other of the kynges counsaill. Wher the sayde Jhon Wancell caused the sayde rolle to be redde before the commynalte of the ctye, and after shewed to the people that the kynges pleasure and mynde was, that they shuld be ruled wryth iustyce, and that the lybertyes of the ctye shulde be maintained in euerye poynte. And yf the kynge myghte knowe those persons that had wronged the commynalte of the ctye, they shulde be greuouslye punished to the example of other. And that done, the sayde Jhon Wancell

3 folios

Parde more

cell charged the mayre, that euery Alderman in hys warde shulde vpon s^t moztowe folowynge assemble his wardemote, and that all those wardemotes shulde assemble in one place and chose of them selves without any coucel o^r aduise of any of they^r alderme xxxvi persons, and them to presente befo^r the lordes and hym, at the same houre of the nexte day in the byshoppes palayes at Paules. Then vpon the moztow al thing was done accordyng to his comaundement. And whē the sayd xxxvi. persons were presented befoze the sayd John Mancel, Henry Baa iustice and other, the sayd John sayde vnto theym, that they vppon they^r oth shulde certifye all such persons as they knewe gyltye in that actycles befoze vnto the commynalte shewed. Wherunto the sayde xxxvi citizens answered, p^r it was contrarie they^r lyberties to be swozne so many for anye matter of trespassse betwene the kynge and anye of the ctyzens, wherfoze they requyred a sparynge wyth which answer the sayde John Mancel beyng dyscontented, warned them to appeare befoze the kynges counsaile at the Gyldehal vpo the moztowe folowynge, where they kepte they^r daye. And thither came the sayde iustices John Mancel, and Henry Baa, s^r Henry Wengham chauncelloure of Englande, Whylip Louel vndertreasorer, and dyuerse other of the kynges counceill.

Then the sayd John Mancell exhorted the sayde personnes to be swozne by many meanes, as he the other day hadde doone. But all was in vayne for they excused theym alwaye that it was contrarie they^r oth and lyberty of they^r ctyte. Wherfoze the kynges counceill departed fromme the hall in partye dyscontented, and shewed vn

to the kynge the demeanoure of the sayde ctyzens.

Upon the euen of the Purificacio of oure Ladye, the mayre beyng warned that the kynge shulde comine to Westmynster, he wyth the moze part of the aldermen roode vnto knyghtbridge, and houed there to salute the kynge, and to knowe his fozther pleasure. But when the kynge came nere that place a hard of they^r beyng they he sente vnto them a squyre of house holde and charged theym that they shulde not presume to comine in hys syghte.

Wyth which message they beinge greatly discomforted returned home to the ctyte. After warde in the octaues of the purifycatyon of oure Lady, returned from the courte Wyche ell Cony Adam Balsynge, the which befoze were sent by the mayre to suche frendes as they hadde in the courte to knowe p^r cause of the kynges hygh dyspleasure. The whyche broughte worde that the kynge was well myned vnto the ctyte, but he was in ful purpose to haue such persons chastysed that had oppressed the commynalte of the same. Upon the moztow folowynge, came vnto the gylde hal John Mancel wyth other of the kynges coucel, the which to the people ther assembled, shewed manye saye and pleasure wordes. Among the whych he declared that the kynges mynde and wyll was, to correcte all such persons as had oppressed the commynalte of the hys derest beloued citie, and asked of the commons whyther they wolde be agreable vnto the same. The whych incontynently manye suche as knew lytle what the matter mente, cryed wout dyscrecyon, ye, ye, ye, nothyng regardyng the lyberty of the ctyte. And after that graunte thus had of the commons

howe p^r maye with the aldermen wente to mete with the kynge.

How the may
re and shires
were dyschar
ged of their of
fices and the
custody of the
citty deliue
red to the con
stable of the
towre.

mongs, the sayde Ihon Mancell dys
charged the mayre, shryues, and cha
berlayne of theyr offices, and deliue
red the custody thereof vnto the con
stable of the towre, and put in the ro
me of the shryues Mychael Conpe &
Ihon Audyan. And ouer that, al tol
lys & rollys and tallages befoe made
were deliuered vnto the sayde Ihon
Mancell, the whiche he there sealed
and deliuered theym vnto the Cham
berlayne. When the commons hadde
beholden all thys besynesse, they re
turned vnto theyr houses all con
fusyd.

Thys matter thus ordered, the sayd
Ihon Mancell wth dyuerse of the
kinges counsaile kept theyr courtes
dayre (the sondays excepte,) tyll the
fyrste sondaye of lent, the whych that
yeare was the .xxv. daye of february
callynge befoe hym .xii. wardes, of
citty. Of the whiche .xii. wardes, of
eueryche of them was taken thre me
so that of those .xii. wardes, .xxxvi. me
were impanelled and swozne, for to
enquyre of the foilsade articles, and
what persons of the citty had offen
dyd in them. This courte thys kepte
and holden at Gylldhall, no manne
was called to answer, nor no questy
on put vnto anye person by the sayde
enqueste or by any other. Vppon the
sayde sonday of lent, the mayre, alder
men, and shryues, wth the sayde en
quest, and foure men of euery warde
were charged to apere at Westmyn
ster befoe the kynge, at whych appe
raunce they were countermaunded
till vpon the next moztowe. At whych
season they commynge into the kyn
ges exchequer, found syttinge there
earles of Gloucestre, and of Warwik
Ihon Mancell, Henry Baa iustices
the constable of the towre, the custos
of the citty, and dyuerse other of the

kynge's counsaile. Then was called
by name Rafe Harde that petre may
re, Archolus Bat, Archolus fry, Jof
ne, Mathewe Bokerell, Ihon Tole
ham, and Ihon le Wynoure alder
men. Then sayd Ihon Mancell, that
the kynge by hys lawes and inquisi
cion of the certyfyns of the citty, had
founde them culpable, that they had
wonged and hurte the compynalte
of hys citty by dyuerse meanes, as
by the sayde inquisicions appetyd,
and forth wth caused it to be redde
befoe them. And whē the moze parte
thereof was redde, he sayde vnto the
thus maye you se that the compynal
te of the sayde citty hath bene by
you greuously oppzessed, & by your
meanes and counsaile the common
weale of the same destroyed, as by al
terynge of the tollys and other good
auncyente costomes, turninge them
to your synguler aduantage and
lucre. All whiche matters the sayde
Rafe and hys company denyed, and
that the commons was not by anye
suche meanes by theym nor none of
them greued or hurte, and that they
offered to be iustified and iudged by
the lawe and costomes of the citty.
Then Henry Baa iustice, asked of
theym whycher they wolde holde the
aduerture of the enquyre that they
had harde redde befoe, or elles stand
vppon the sayinge of the other war
des, that hadde not yet bene swozne,
but they kepte them to theyr fyrst an
swere. Then Ihon Mancell frayned
of the mayre what was theyr lawe &
costome. The mayre answered, and
sayde, that for trespasse of a certyfyn
doone agayne the kynge, he shuld be
fende hym by .xii. of the sayde certy
fyns, and for murder or sleynge of a
ma by .xxx. certyfyns, and for trespace
agayne a straunger by the othe of .vi
and

How the may
re & aldermen
and certayne
other apere
befoe the kin
ges counsaile

The manner
of fynyng
the pynys
of a certyfyn

The seventh part

60.

and hym selfe. Then after many reasons made by the sayde John Hancel, and also by the mayre and his aldermen, daye was geuen to them to appere vppon the morowe before the kinge and hys counsaile.

Upon the day folowing the kyng wyth many of hys lordes sytting in the sayde exchequer, the foresayde inquisycion was redde. And that done the mayre and aldermen were called in by name, and two aldermen moze whych before were not called, that is to saye Arnolde Thedmare, and Henry Walmod. Whē Kase Harbel had harde the kinge speake in the matter he toke suche fere that he and Nicholas Watte wythout farther ans were put them in the kynges grace, saued to them theyr liberties and fraunchyses of the cytye. But the other. vi. besoughte the kyng of hys ryghtwysnes that they myghte then be demed after the lawes and customes of the cytye. Then was sayd to theyr charge that ouer manye wynges by them doone to the kyng and to the comynalte of the cytye, they hadde altered the kynges beame, and ordered it to the aduauntage of theym selves and ryche men of the cytye. Wherunto the parties answered, and sayde: that the alteracyon of the beame was not doone by them onely, but by the aduice and consente of fyue hundred of the beaste of the cytye. For where before tyme the weper used to lene hys draughte towarde the marchaundise so that the byer hadde by that meane .c. vii. pounce in a draughte to hys aduauntage, and the seller so muche dysaduauntage, nowe for indifferen cyte and egalte of both persones or marchaundes, was ordained that the beame shuld stande by ryghte, & cleffe thereof enclippinge to neyther partie

as it doth in wepinge of gold and syluer, and the byer to haue allowed of the seller for all thynges .liii. pounce onely in euery draughte.

After these reasons and the other by theym made the kyng commaunded that vpon the morowng folowinge a folkemoot shulde be called at Pauls crosse, and so that courte was dyscolupd, and the mayre and the other, returned to London. Vppon the morowe the folkemoot beyng at Pauls crosse assembled, these. vi. aldermen beyng the murmuracyon of the comen people, and knowinge that the aldermen nor the woorthfull of the cytye shulde haue lytle or no sayinge in this matter, fearynge theyr cause yode into a channons house of Doulys, where at that tyme the sayd John Hancel and other sente fromme the kyng, tarped the assemblyng of the people, and shewed vnto theym that they entred not any lenger to plede wyth the king, but were contented to put them fullye in the kynges grace and merce, sayynge alway to them and all other cytyzens theyr libertie and fraunchyse of the Cytye. After whiche agremente the sayde John Hancell wyth the other came vnto the courte of folkemoot, where vnto the people was reherced a fayre and a pleasaunte tale, promysing to them theyr libertyes shulde be hoolye and inuolatelye preserued by the kyng wyth many other thynges to the great comfozte of the common people. And lastlye was asked of the whether the law and custome were such as aboue is reherced or no. Wherunto lyke by dyscret and vletned people they answered and cried rabbyshly, nay, nay, notwithstanding that the sayde lawe and custome, had before tymes bene dysd out of mynd. But to this was

was nother maye no: aldermen no: other of the grete of the cytye that myghte impugne o: make anye reason, for the vpholoyng of thei: aun- cyente lawes o: customes.

And no wonder though the kyng were thus hedp o: greuous to the cytye, for by such euil dysposed and malycious people as he had about him the lande was euell ruled, and much myschefe was vsed. Wherof ensued much sorowe after, as ye shall heare in the sequele of the story. Then Iohn Mancell called the maye and aldermen befoze hym, and charged them to be at Westmynster the morowe folowynge, to geue attendaunce vpon the kynges grace. Vpon the morowe the maye and aldermen tarynge the kynges commynge in the grete hal at Westmynster, lasteys the kyng came into saynt Stephans chapell. Wher a seacon he helde a counsaile wyth hys lordes, and after yode into the chker chamber, and there sat him downe and hys lordes aboute hym. Anone after the maye and aldermen were called into the sayde chamber, and sone there after called by name and commaunded to stande neare to the barre. Then Henrye was iustyce sayde vnto the maye and the seuen aldermenne, that for so muche as by fourme of the kynges lawes, they were founde culpable in certayne articles touchynge trasgression agayn the kyng, therefore the courte awar dyd that they shoulde makefyn and raunsome after the dyscrecion of the sayde courte. But for they hadde put them in the kynges grace and mercy, the kyng hath commaunded the fine to be put in respyt, that ye be not payned so greuouslye as ye haue deserued. After whiche iudgement geuen, they kneled downe, and then the

maye wyth wepyng teares, than- ked the kyng of hys bounty & good nesse, and besoughte hym to be good and gracious lord vnto the cytye, and vnto them as hys faythfull sub- iectes. Wherunto the kyng made none answer, but rose streyghte vp, and so yode hys waye leuynge them there. Anone as the kyng was depar tyd, they were all arested and kepte there tyll they hadde founde suretye, and eueryche alderman of them dys- charged of his warde and office that they had within the cite. But shortly after they put in sureties, and so retur ned heauely to London. And shortly after was Wylliam fyr Richard by the kynges commaundemente made maye, and Thomas fyr Thomas and Wylliam Gappysgate shytues. After thys, dape by dape, the chamber layne was called to accompte befoze the sayde Iohn Mancell, of al such tolles as wer gathered in the tyme of the mayaltie of Iohn Tolyham & of Rafe Hardell, beyng present to here the sayde accompte, dyuerse of the cominaltie of the cite, but none of the heades. By the whiche accompte no defaute myghte be arcted vnto any of the fornamed persones conycte afoze the kyng. By reason whereof, dyuerse of them were admytted to the kynges fauour shortly after, and restoyed to thei: offyces agayne, but not without payynge of monye, wher of the certaynte is not known. And in this yere wheat was so scaite that it was solde at London for. xxiij s. a quarter. And scanter shuld haue bene, yf plentye hadde not come oute of Almanye, for in Fraunce and flou- mande it fayled in lphwse. By me ne of thys derty and scarspitye, much pooze people dyed for hunger, and many of dyuerse countreyes of Eng- lande

The maye & aldermen agayn charged to apere at Westmynster.

The sentence agaynst the maye and aldermen

The seventh parte.

62

glande came vnto the cytie, and nere there aboute for comfozte of bytable, for yt then was better chepe in London then in many shires of England there aboute. And soone after was fornamed John Hancell made the knyght & chefe iustice of Englande.

deuyfed and ordered, touchynge and concerning the same mater & purpose. Of which. xii. beris the names ensue. Fyfte the archbishop of Caunterbury, the bishoppe of Worcester, sy Roger Bygote then earle of Norfolke, and marshall of Englande, sy Symonde de Mountforde earle of Leicester, sir Richard Clare earle of Glouceter, sy Humfrey Botham Earle of Herforde, of Warwyke, and of Arundell, sy John Hancell chefe Justyce of Englande, sy Roger Mortimer, sy Hugh Bygote, sy Peter de Saunoy, sy Jamys Audeler, and sy Peter de Mountforde. And for the knynges brother vpon the mothers syde, is to save sy Eym earle of Wynchester, sy William de Valaunce, sy Godfrey de Lyndesey, and sir Guyde Lyndesey, wolde not assente vnto the foresaid ordynances, they withdrew them towarde the sea syde with suche stuffe as they had, and wolde haue departed the lande yf they myghte then haue had shyping, for lacke wherof they were faine to retourne, & so rode to Winchester. But it was not longe after þ they were lycensyd to departe the lande with a certayne companie, and a certayne sūme of money to pay for theyr costys, and theyr daye sette by Bartylmewe tyde to auoide vpon paine of prisonment, whiche daye by them was kepte.

The names of the. xii. pers.

It was not longe after the synysynge of this parlyamente, but that strife and variaunce beganne to kinde betwene the kyng and þ earlys of Leicester and of Glouceter, by meane of such officers as þ laide earles had remoued and putte other in theyr romes. Amonge the which John Hancell was discharged of his offyce. And sy Hugh Bygote then admytted for hym. And for the foresayde ff. i. pers



At this. xii. pere also, the knyng aboute the feaste of saynt Barnabe in the moneth of June, kepte his high courte of parlyment at his towne of Oxenford. This of some wyters is named *insane parlyamentum*, that is to meane the woode or madde parlyament. For at this counsell were made manye actes agayne the kinges prerogatyue and pleasure for the reformation of the state of the lande, whiche after prouyd to the confusyon and hurte of the land, & death and destruccyon of many noble men, so that by occasyon therof began the famousse stryfe called at this daye the Barons war. Wherof ensued myche myschefe as hereafter shalbe shewed and declared moze at large.

Then as aboue is sayde, to auoid the enomytys and to resourne the euill rule then bled in the lande, by suche persones as daylye were about the knyng, manye and dyuerse ordynances were made, whereof the tenoure is sette oute in the ende of this boke. Wherunto the kyng somdeale agayne his wyll, wyth sy Edward his sonne and other agreed. And for these actes shoulde be holden ferme & stable, at this parlyamente was chosen. xii. pers, whiche were named Douze Perss, to who authoryte was gūen by strength of this parlyamēt to correcte all suche as offendid in by kyng of these ordynances and other by the sayde twelue perss after to be

parlyamente
then at Ox
forde called
the mad par
lyament.

the Douze
perss.

Wher heard of the murmur in the court, fearing that the king shoulde be aduertised how to alter from his promise, therfore they intending to make theyr partye the stronger, vpon the morowe folowynge Wharpe Magdaleyns daye, the kyng beinge at Westmynster, the earle Marshall, the Earle of Leiceter, with dyuerse other came vnto the Exchequer of London, where the mayre, aldermen, and compynalte of the cytie were assembled, where the sayde lordes shewed an instrument of wrytyng, at the whiche kyng manye labellys with sealys, as the kynges seale, sye Edward his sonnes seale, with manye other of the nobles of the lande, the whiche was the contente of the articles, whiche were ordeyned and made at Orenforde, wyllynge the Mayre and aldermen (considerynge the sayde actes were made vnto the honour of god, fydelyte vnto the kyng, and pryncipe of the realme) that they wolde also in vpholdynge of the same, sette theyr common seale of the Cytye. After whiche requeste thus to the mayre and the cytyzens made, after aduys and counsell amonge them selfe taken, they despyed a sparynge of the lordes, till they myghte speake with the kyng and knowe his pleasure in that behalfe. But fynally no sparyng

at that tyme myghte be graunted, so that in the ende, by the labour that the lordes made, with helpe of suche solycytours as they hadde within the cytie, the common seale was putte to, and the mayre and dyuers of the cytie swozne to mainteyne the same, theyr allegaunce saued to the kyng with preseruacion of the liberttes & franchises, and so departed.

Then daye by daye after the sayd douze Berys assemblyd at the newe Temple, where they kepte theyr countelles and courttes for the refozmacyon of the olde greffys, and remoued from the kynges dyuerse of his meny: all of household, and set in theyr places and offyces suche as lyked them.

And vpon the ix. daye of Auguste proclamacion was made in dyuerse accustomed places of the sayde Cytye, that none of the kynges takers shoulde take anye thyng within the cytie withoute the wylle of the owner, excepte two tunne of wyne, whiche the kyng accustomedly hadde of euery myppe comynge from Burdeaur, payenge but fowte shyllynge for a tunne. By meane of whiche proclamacion nothyng was taken by the kynges offyces, but it were streghthe payed for within the cytie and libertte of the same, whiche vsaunce continued but a whyle.

Anno domini. M. CC. lviij.

Diaper.

Rycharde Hardell.

Thomas sye Rycharde.

Robert Cateplon.

Anno domini. M. CC. lviij.

Anno. xliij.

The. xliij. yere

In this. xliij. yere, the kyng held one parlyament at Westmynster and a nother, or elles pryncipe to Winchester. And in this yere, sye Hugh Bygot iustyce to Roger Turkelay and other kept his

courte at Saynte Sauoures, and helde there the ples called Itinerit, The whiche is to meane the trauallynge of the waye ples. For ye shall vnderstande that at those dayes they were kepte in dyuerse places of Englande

The seventh parte.

646

glande, whiche nowe bene holden at Westminster, and Judges ordeyned to kepe a circuyte, as nowe they kepe the spyys in tyme of vacacion. At this sayde courte these Judges punyshed soze bayliffes and other offycers, that befoze them were conuycte for diuers trespassys, and specially for takynge of merchauntes otherwysse then the lawe theym commaunded: For the whiche the sayde chefe Justyce prysoned theym, and after sellid theym at greuous spyes. Also he somoned the cytezens of London to come vnto the sayde courte, for tollys that they had taken vpon þ further spye of the water. But it was answered that the tolls þ they there toke were taken lawfully, as they were redye to proue in places and courte conueniente to the same, whiche was within the p̄dict of theyr lybertye. But not withstanding that answer, þ sayde spy Hugh thargyd vpon quest. xii. knyghtes of Surey, to enquire of that mater and

other, the whiche acquyted the sayde cytezens, and shewed that the sayde tolle belonged to them of right.

In processe of tyme after the sayd spy Hugh with other came to Guildhall, and kepte hys courte and places there, wpythout all order of lawe, and contrarie to the lybertyes of the cytie and there punyshed the bakers for lake of spye by the Tumberell, where befoze tymes they were punyshed by the pylloze, and ordered many thynges at hys wpyll, moze then by anye good order of lawe.

Thys pere vpon Candelmasse euen came vnto London from beyonde the see Rycharde knyge of Almayne and Earle of Cornewaple, wpyth hys wyfe and chyldren, whiche had bene there and taken possession of þ kingdome as befoze is shewed. Agayne whose commynge the cytie of London was ryche help hanged wpyth clothes of sylke and aras, & sopously he was receyued of the cytezens.

The returne of Rycharde knyge of Almayne, and earle of Cornewaple.

Anno domini. M. CC. lviij.

Deperer.

John Gylours.

John Wyman.

Robert Cornehyll.

Anno domini. M. C. l.

Anno. clv.

In this. clv. pere, the frydaye folowynge the feaste of Symonde and Jude, in the parlyamente holden at Westminster, were redde in p̄sence of all þ lordes and compynalte at son dyp tymes, all the actes and ordinaunces befoze made in þ parlyament holden at Orenford, with certayne other artycles by the foresayde. xii. Peres therunto added. After readynge of whiche artycles, there beynge requested the archbishop of Caunterbury, with diuers other to the nomber of. ix. byshoppes, besyde abbottes & other de-

nounced all them accursed þ attempted in woꝛde or dede to breake the said actes or any of them. * In this parlyament also was graunted to þ kyng a taske called the Seutage, that is to meane. l. s. of euery knyghtes fee thowrough Englande, the which extended to a greate summe of money. For after dyuers wynters, there be in Englande in possession of the spiritualty and of the tempoꝛalte, or at þ dayes were, ouer and beyonde. xl. M. knyghtes fees. Which after þ rate shulde extend vnto. vi. score. M. li. & moze. And if it shuld be gathered of þ tempoꝛal me

the returne of Rycharde knyge of Almayne.

281

ff. ii. only

Ch. xliij.

Ch. xliij.

How þe kyng
came to Pau
les, and asked
lycense of the
comynalte of
the cytie, to
passe ouer the
sea.

onely, then yt shoulde not amounte
ouer the summe of. lxxiii. thousande
pounde. The kyng vppon the daye
of saynte Leonarde, oꝝ the xvjte daye
of Nouember came vnto Watwyls,
where by his commaundemente was
assembled the courte of folkmoote,
where the kyng accordynge vnto the
former ordynances made, asked ly-
cense of the comynalte of the Cytie
foꝝ to passe þe sea, and promysed there
in the pꝛesence of a greate multytude
of people, that he wolde be good and
graciously Loꝝde vnto the Cytie, by
the mouth of syꝝ Hughe Bygotte his
chefe Justyce, & to maꝓnteyne theꝝ
lybertyes vnburte. Foꝝ the whiche
the people foꝝ loꝝe made an exceedyng
Howte.

Upon the. viii. daye of Nouber,
the kyng rode thoroughe the cytie to
warde the sea syde. And vppon the
daye of saynte Byce oꝝ the. xiii. daye
of Nouember, he tooke hys wypppe,
and so sayled vnto Burdeaur. Wher
when he had tarped a season, he rode
vnto the frenche kyng then beyng
holy Lewys oꝝ the tenth Lewys vnto
Paris. Of whome he was honora-
bly receyued, and lodged hym in hys
owne paleys, by the space of an hole
weke making to hym great feast, and
guyng to hym and his, ryche and ma-
ny gyftes. And from thens kyng Hen-
ry rode vnto Saynte Denys, where
of the abbot and conuente he was re-
ceyued wyth processyon, and tarped
there by the space of a monethe. In
whiche season, a matpage was con-
cluded betwene John, Duke of Wy-
tayne and one of his daughters. And
at hys departynge he gaue to the ab-
bot a cup of golde, and a basyn with
an ewer of syluer. And foꝝ hys moꝝe
consolacion, kyng Lewys assygned
vnto hym a certayne lordes and other

noble men of Fraunce to geue atten-
daunce vppon hym, and to conueye
him, & to shew him a part of Fraunce
wyth all dyspozte and huntynge and
haubyng, and other many pleasures
of the countrey.

In whiche passetyme the frenche
kyng assembled his parlyamente at
Paris, where he shewed vnto his loꝝ-
des that his conscience was grudged
wyth the wythholdynge of all suche
landes as Philippe the seconde wan
frome kyng John in Normandy,
vpon the which he desired theꝝ faith-
full and frutefull counsaile. Where
after manye reasones and argumen-
tes made, yt was concluded foꝝ a fy-
nall concord to be had betwene kyng
Henry and hym, that yf kyng Hen-
ry wyth the agremente of hys Loꝝ-
des wolde resygne into the frenche
kynges handes, all suche tittle and
ryghte as he hadde in the hole duchie
of Normandy, of Angeou, Mayreau
and Mayne, foꝝ hym and foꝝ his heꝝ-
res foꝝ euer, that then the frenche
kyng of his greate bountye and grace
shoulde geue vnto the kyng of En-
glande and to his heꝝres kynges, the
lordeshyppe of Guyan, Angeou, and
Mayne, and by ryghtfull tittle called
euer after the Duke of Guyan, and
ouer that he shoulde be admytted foꝝ
a Pꝛete of Fraunce, to all whiche con-
ditions, as assyꝝmeth and wytnesseth
the frenche cronycle, kyng Henry at
hys retourne frome his dyspozte was
agreable, and with consente of his ba-
ronye, and in theꝝ pꝛesence, wyth al-
so the Baronye of Fraunce, dyd hys
homage vnto the sayd Lewys foꝝ the
duchy of Guyan, and after made hys
othe accordynge vnto the same. And
after greate gyftes receyued on ey-
ther syde, kyng Henry retourned
vnto Burdeaur.

Of this

Howe kyng
Henry was
crowned
in Fraunce.

Howe Henry
the thyrde
homage
Lewys the
frenche
kyng
foꝝ the
duchy of
Guyan.

Of this peace and concord spea-
keth a cronyculer named Gyrdo o:
Gyr, and sayth that kynge Henry say-
led into Fraunce, and asked restitu-
cion of the soynamed frenche kynge,
of suche landes as his aple philippe
the seconde hadde with extorste power
taken from kynge John his father.
But so; he fande the frenche kynge
straunge in his answer, and also had
lytle truste in hys lordes so; to haue
they; ayde, he fell to agremente wth
the frenche kynge, and solde to hym
all his title that he hadde in Norman-
dye, Gascoyne, and Guyan, the which
extendid vnto the petye value of .xx.
thousande pounde, takynge so; the
same tyle, thye hundred thousande
pounde of smal Tuton money, wher
of a pound is in value after sterlyng
money, but two shyllinges and thye
pens o; there aboute, so that he shuld
after that rate haue so; hys sayde ty-
tle after the value of sterlyng money
xxxiii. thousande, seven hundred and
fiftye pounde.

In the season and tyme that king
Henry was thus occupied in Fraunce
dissencion fell in Englande betwene
sy; Edward the kynges sonne, and
sy; Rycharde Earle of Glouceter.
So; appearyng wherof a parliament
which is to meane a counsaile of hys
lordes was called at Westmynstre,
whiche continued by the space of thye
weekes and moze. To the which coun-
saile the lordes came with great com-
panyes, and spectaliye the sayde sy;
Edward, and the earle of Glouceter
the whiche entenyd to haue lodged
within the cytie. Wherfoze the May-
re rode vnto the byshoppe of Worcester,
and sy; Hughe Bygote, and sy;
philippe Basset, to whome the kyng
with the archbyshop of Caunterbury
had taken the rule of the londe in hys

absence, the which all wrote vnto the
kyng of Almayne to haue his aduysce
in that matere.

Wher it was concluded, that no-
ther the sayde Edward nor the earle
shulde come within the cytie then there
to be lodged, nor none that helde by-
pon eyther of that parties. And so;-
ther it was prouyded, that all suche
within the Cytye, as were of the age
of fiften yeres and aboue, shuld be in
harnes to watche and kepe the Cytye
bothe daye and nyghte, and that the
gates shoulde be kepte shutte vppon
the daye, and a certeyne menne in har-
nesse to kepe euery gate of the cytye.
And soone after so; the sauegarde of
the cytie, and sure keepynge of the peace
wthin the same, the kyng of Ro-
maynes, wth the sayde sy; Hughe
and sy; philippe, came into the Cy-
tye and there were lodged wth they;
companyes, and suche other as they
wolde assygne to strenthe the cytie yf
nede requyzed.

Then aboute the frasse of Watne
Marke, the kyng came to London
from beyonde the sea, and was lod-
ged at the Byshoppe of Londons pa-
leys. After whose commynge by hys
assignements, the earle of Glouceter
was then lodged within the cytie, and
sy; Edward hys sonne was lodged
in his owne palays at Westmynstre.
And soone after the kyng commaun-
ded hym to be lodged at saue Johns
and all the other lordes were lodged
in other places without the cite. And
the kyng of Romaynes remoned a-
gayne to Westmynstre.

In whiche tyme a directyon was
taken betwene the sayde parties, a
newe assemble a parliament assigned
to be kepte at Westmynstre in the church
of saynt John Baptyst. And so; the
then alchynge myght not be sette in

an order, yt was pzojoged vnto the
feaste of saint Edward, at the which
season all thinge was put at ceste for
a while. In this yere also fel that hap
of the Jewe of Newburys, whiche
fell into a gonge vpon the saterdape,
& wolde not for tuerce of his Sab-

both dape be plucked out, wherof be-
ryng the earle of Glouceter, that the
Jewe dyd so greute reuerence to hys
sabboth dape, thought he wold do as
much to his help dape whych was son
dape, & so kept him there tyll monday
at which season he was founde dead,

Anno domini. M. CC. lxx.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxx.

William sp; Rycharde.

Adam B; Johnynge.

Anno. xliii.

Rycharde Couentre.

In this. xliii. yere, soone af-
ter the feaste of Symonde
and Jude, the kyng kepte
a royal feaste at Westmyn-
ster, where he made dyces knyghtes
Amonge þ which John duke of Byr-
tayne, whiche had maryed one of the
kynges daughters was there made
knight. And sone after was sp; Hugh
Spencer made chiefe iustyce.

After the feast of Candelmasse, the
kyng comaunded a folkmot to be cal-
led at Paulys crosse, where he in pzo-
per persone, to the kyng of Almayn,
the archeb; shoppe of Caunterburys,
and many other nobles came. Where
the kyng comaunded vnto the may-
re, that euery streppynge of the age
of twelue yeres and aboue shoulde be
foze his alderman be swoyne the dape
solowynge, to be trewe to the kyng &
to hys heires kynges of Englande,
and that the gates of the Cytie were
kept wth armed men, as befoze by

the kyng of Romaynes was dyp-
tyd. This yere also at a fayre kepte
at Roithampton, varyaunce fell be-
twene the Londoners and men of the
towne, so that betwene the cytyzens
and theym contynued longe sute and
plee, for a man of Roithampton that
then was slayne, to the greute veracy
on a trouble of bothe parties. But in
the ende the cytie had the better.

This yere also aboute Easter, the
Barons of the land, with the consent
of the Berys, discharged sp; Hugh le
Spencer, and admitted for hym sp;
Phylippe Basset in his tome of chiefe
iustyce withittyn þ kyng. For which
cause and other, grudge and displea-
sure beganne of newe to kyndle be-
twene the kyng and his lozdes, which
increased moze and moze. But by po-
lycy of the kyng of Almayne & some
pyelatys of the land, it was set in qu-
et for a whyle, hardely to the ende of
that yere.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxx.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxx.

William sp; Rycharde.

John Roithampton.

Anno. xlv.

Rycharde B; Rycharde.

In this. xlv. yere, shortly after
Alhalowyn dape, the Barons
admitted and made wyues of

diuers wyues of Englande, and dy-
charged suche as the kyng befoze
had admitted, and named them Bar-
daps

the. xliii.
yere.

3 folkmote

8 frays.

How the
rome of the
lambre bisho-
ped shew
le dyment
of bruns ch-
autyer com-
ry to the l-
hys wyrd and
mynde.

the. xlv. yere

The seventh part

67.

daynes and keepers of the countyes and cyties. And ouer that the barons wolde not suffer the iustys that the king had admitted, to kepe the ples and lawes called Itineranti, but such as were of theyr admyssyon.

Wherwith the kyng was greuously dyscontented, in so much, that after that season he laboured that he myghte dysanull the former ordynance and statutes, and to cause them to be broken, in so much, that vpon the second sondaye of lente folowynge, the kyng commaunded to be redde at Paules crosse, a bull of the graunt of Urban the.iii. of that name, as a confymacion of another bull befoze purchased, of hys pcedessoure Alexander the thyrde, to assyle the kinge and al othe that befoze hadde swoyne to the mayntenaunce of the foresayde articles made at Oresford, and after caused þe absolucio to be shewed throughe the realme of England, Walys, and Irelande, geuyng streyght charge to all hys subiectes, that none to be so hardy to wythstande noz dysobey the sayde absolucyon. And þe anpe were founden dysobediente to hys

commaundement, that he were streyght put in p'son, and not to be ransomed noz dyuered till the kynges pleasure were further knowen.

Aboute the feast of saynte Albon, in the moneth of June, the kyng of Almayne tooke wyppynge and sayled into Almayne. And the kyng at a foilkemoot holden vpon the sonday after saynte Peters day in þe moneth of Iulpe, hadde licence to sayle into Fraunce. And the morow after he departed fromme London towarde the sea syde, wyth the quene and other lordes, hys two sonnes sy: Edward and sy: Edmund beyng at that season in Gasan. When the kyng had ben a season in Fraunce, he returned vnto Burdeaux, where he fell sycke, by occasyon wherof he tarped in those partys till saynte Rycholas tylene folowynge. And in thys yere dyed Rycharde Clare Earle of Gloucester, and sy: Glberte de Clare hys sonne was earle after hym. To whome the father gaue great charge that he shulde vpholde the forenamed ordynances.

The kyng of Almain departed into Almayne.

Howe the kyng was lycensed to sayle into Fraunce

The death of Rycharde earle of Gloucester.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxi.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxi.

Thomas sy: Thomas

Phylp Walbroke.

Anno. xli.

Rycharde Taplour.



And in thys xli. yere in the the feast of saynt Martyn, on the. xi. day of November, a Jewe fell at varyaunce wyth a chrysten man in Colcharch in the wards of Chepe, and wounded the chrysten man wythin the same church. Wherofore the people of the cytye in a furpe

pursued the sayd Jewe to hys house and there slewe hym, and after fel vpon the other Jewes, and robbed & slewe many of them.

And on the euen of saynte Thomas the apostle folowynge, the kinge landed in Englande at Dover, & came to London the wenesdaye befoze. xii. daye. This yere the frost began about saynte Rycholas daye and so continued by þe space of a moneth & more

A great frost.

A dyspente
betwene the
prynces and
constable of the
towre.

so cruelly that the thames was over-
frozen that men passed over on horse
backe. And in the same wynter the kyn-
ges lytle hall at Westmynster, with
other houses adioyninge to the same
were perished with fyre, by the negly-
gence of a seruante of the kynges.
In this pease also unkyndnes be-
ganne to growe betwene the Londe-
ners and the Constable of the towre,
for that he contrary to the libertie of the
citty toke certayne shippes passyng
by the towre with wheate and other
vntayle, and tooke it into the sayde
citty, makynge the pryce at his plea-
sure. Wherefore great harme had en-
sued, had not ben the polycy of wyse
men. Whiche was shewed vnto the
kynges counsaile, by whose dyscrep-
on the matter was committed vnto
sir Philip Basset then chiefe iustice
and other, to set an order and rule be-
twene the sayd parties. Then before
hym were brought all evidences and
privileges for the aduantage of
bothe parties, where synallye after
longe plee and argument, it was fi-
nally demed and adjudged, that yf
constable or anye other offycer of the
citty wolde at anye tyme take anye
wheate or other vntayle to the vse of
the king or of the towre, that he shuld
come vnto the market holden within
the citty, and there to haue it. And in
a quarter within the mayres pryce,
and other vntayle after the same rate.
And yf he or any of his officers wold
do contrary to that ordynance, that
then the shyres shulde make repoynt
vnto the kynges counsaile, and to
withstand hym in all that he myght
so that the kynges pease were kepte.
In this pease also many murmurs
and grudges were tolde in many pla-
ces of the lande, supposynge that warre
shuld in shorte processe haue ensued

A dyspente
betwene the
prynces and
constable of the
towre.

betwene the kyng and his lordes, for
the bul of dyspensacyon before in that
other pte shewed. But by helpe and
medycacyon of good wyse men, these
murmurs and grudges were so appe-
ased, that the kyng agreed agayne
to the maintenaunce of the sayde sta-
tutes, and sent his wyttes, wherein
the sayde articles were comprised,
into all shires of Englande, geuyng
straighte commaundement to al men
to obserue and kepe the same, & such
other as were to them iorned by the
dyscrepion of the Carle Marshall,
the Erie of Leiceter, sir Philip Bas-
set, sir Hugh Wygote, and other, the
whiche shortlye after was reuoked
and denyed. Whereupon the archbys-
hoppe of Caunterbury, setyng that
after myghte ensue, made hym an er-
rande to Rome, and so by licence of
the kyng and of the lordes, departed
the lande, and so kepte hym oute tyll
the trouble was appeased and ceased.
Then vppon myddelton sondaie, the
mayre and the commons beynge pre-
sente, at a folkemoot holden at Pau-
lys crosse before sir Philip Basset
and other of the kynges counsell,
the mayre was sworne to be trewe to
the kyng and to his heires kynges.
And vppon the moztowe at quyd hall
euerye aldermanne in presence of the
mayre tooke the same othe. And vppon
the sondaie folowynge, euery strip-
lynge of the age of xii. yeres and a-
bove, before his aldermanne in his
warde was newly charged with the
same othe. Then the dyspleasure be-
twene the kyng and his barons be-
gan to appere and dysclose, whiche
longe whyle hadde bene kepte secret
in so much that dyuerse of them as-
sembled in the marches of Wales, &
gathered vnto them stronge power,
and

A folowynge

The seventh part

96

and sente a letter vnto the kyng vnder the seale of sp^r Roger Clifforde besochynge hym to haue in remembrance the oth and manyfold promyse that he hadde made, for the obseruynge of the statutes made at his towne of Wynterborne, wth other ordynances made to the honoure of god, for fayth and alleageaunce to his person, and weale and profyte of all his realme, wth llyngge hym farther to wthstande and desyre all suche personnes, as w^{ll} be agayne the sayde actes, lauyng the quene and hys children.

sons as to theim lyked, and put out such as there were set in by the kyng and gaue vnto them an oth that they shulde be trewe and faythfull to the kyng, and kepe those castels to hys vse and weale of the realme.

About mydsomer when they dreyne nere to London, they sent a letter vnto the mai^re and aldermen, vnder the seale of sp^r Symonde Mounteforde w^{ll}ng to knowe of theim whycher they wolde obserue the actes and statutes made in the parlyament of Wynterborne or not, or elles they wold ayd and assyste such persons as entred the byche of the same, and sente vnto theim a coppe of the sayde actes, wth a prouiso, that yf any that ther were specyfyed were to the hurte of the realme or common weale of the same that they then by the dyscret persons of the lande, shulde be altered and amended. The whych copie the mai^re bare vnto the kyng then beyng at p^r towre, accompanied wth the quene and the kyng of Almayne whych lately was returned from beyonde the sea, and sp^r Edward hys sonne, with other of hys counsaile.

How the Barons dreyne nere to London & sent a letter to the mai^re and aldermen of the same.

After the whych letter thus sente, and receauynge of it none answer, the sayd barons with banner displayed wente agayne suche as they knew that held agayne the sayd actes. And firste at Herteforde they toke the byshoppe of that see, and as manye of his chanons as were alpautes boine and toke suche treasour, and catel as they there fande, and bare it wth the. And after p^rode and sente vnto suche manoters as the sayde byshoppe and chanons hadde, and theim spoyled, and robbed, and some of them threwe to the grounde and consumed wth fyre, and put the sayde byshoppe and chanons in sure keepynge, and set other in thei^r places, and after wente vnto the other coastes wher they supposyd to fynde of thei^r enemyes, keepynge thei^r course towarde London beyng before them a banner of the kynges armes, and so holding thei^r iourney, much people dreyne vnto the. In the whych progresse euer as they fande anye that they knewe to be agayne the mayntenaunce of the sayde actes they impprisoned them and spoyled thei^r places, were they spirytual or tēporall men. And in diuers of the kynges castelles they set in such per-

Then the kyng entendynge to knowe the mynde of the cytye, asked the mai^re what he thoughte of those ordynances and actes, knowynge well that befoze hys commynge thither, he hadde counsailed with the aldermen and some commons of the cytye. The mai^re then abashed wth that questyon, besought the kyng if he myghte commun with hys byethen the aldermen, and he shulde shew vnto hym hys and thei^r oppynions. But the kyng sayde he wolde here his aduyce wthout moze counsaile. Then the mai^re boldly sayde, that befoze tymes he wth his byethen and commonalte of the cytye, by hys com-

maun-

inattendement were sworne to mapn
tayne all actes made to the honoure
of God, to the fayth of the kyng and
prowte of the realme, whiche othe by
hys lycence and moost gracypous fa-
uoure they entended to obserue and
kepe. And mozeouer, to aduoyde all
occasion that myght grow of grudge
or barpaunce betwene his grace and
hys Barones wpythin the ctyte, they
wolde aduoyde all allpauntes and
straungers oute therof, yf hys grace
were so contented. Whiche answer
the kyng shewed as he were therewith
pleased so that the maye wpyth hys
fauoure departed, and sente answer
to the barons to the same accorpyng
they lybertyes alway vpholden and
saued.

Then shortly after, for so muche,
as dyuerse noble menne of the lande
whiche helde agayne those statutes,
were ryden toward Dover, and there
entended to haue taken shipping for
fere of the barons, the kyng sent af-
ter them dyuerse persons of hys hou-
holde, and of the ctytzens of Londo
to refoutne and enduce them to re-
tourne, and tarpe wpyth the kyng.

And in that season all allpauntes,
the whiche were taken suspecte of a-
nye fauoure obpyng to that one part
or to that other, were amoued the cy-
te. But it was not longe after that
sy Edward the kynges sonne, sette
them or many of them in offices with
in the Castell at Wyndesore. Than
watche was kepte daylye wpythin the
ctyte, and in the nyghtes a certayne
were assygned to ride about the towne
wpyth a certayne footemen assygned
to them, to searche all the towne ouer
But of that insued harme. For while
the rydpyng watch was in one place
of the ctyte, some euell dysposed per-
sons vnder coloure of watchmenne

and to searche for straungers, robbed
and spoyled manye houses wpythin the
ctyte. For rempyd wherof a standpyng
watche was ordayned in every ward
And the kyng herpyng of the Ba-
rons nere commyng vnto the ctyte,
departed thence shortly after.

Then the Barons entred the ctyte
the sonday befor saynt Margaretes
dape. And shortly after the kyng re-
turned to Westminster, with the queene
and other of hys counsayl. And sone
after by the consente of the kyng and
the Barons, sy Hughe le Despenser
was made chiefe iustyce and keeper
of the towne.

Upon the moztowe folowing Ma-
ry Magdalene day, a wyte was dy-
rected vnto the maye and aldermen
chargyng them the kynges peace
were ferely kepte wpythin the ctyte
For in the same wyte it was also ex-
pressed, that the kyng and hys Ba-
rons were louynglye agreed. Farther
moze, was by the sayd wyte comman-
dyd, that wpythin the pcept of the
fraunches, were any persone or per-
sonnes knowen, that wolde wpyth-
stand the forsayde ordynaunces and
statutes, that all suche shulde be at-
tached and put in pryson, and theyre
goodes attached for the king til they
knewe hys forther pleasure.

Ye shall vnderstande that whyle the
lordes laye thus wpythin the ctyte, dy-
uerse couenticulis and gatheringes
were made of the ctytzens and other
that robbed in dyuerse places of the
ctyte and dyd muche harme. The
whiche was smallye corrected, they
were so borne oute and mapntayned
by theyr mayster. And the commons
of the ctyte were farre out of rule by
insensyng of tyrouse persons, that
in assemblies and courties that then were
kepe at Guyde hall or other places,

lym:

The seventh parte

171

simple and vndersecret persons shuld haue the voyce, and the worshipfull men lytle or nothyng regarded, wher of ensued dayly muche unhappyness and sorowe, as after shall apere.

The Barons then to obtayne the moze fauoure of the cyte, willed the to shewe yf they hadde anye of theyr lybertyes witholden, & they myghte agayne to them be restored, and also to deuise some newe to theyr weale and prosper, and they wolde labour to the kynge that they myghte haue thepm graunted. For the whiche comferte of the Lordes, the maye called the commons to the Gyldehall, and shewed to them the beneuolence of the sayde lordes, and willed thepm that euery offycer for his offyce, to deuise such thynges as myghte be benefycial for the citee. Wherupon they consulted together, & made a note in paper of dyuerse statutes, prouysons and ordynaunces to be graunted, whiche myghte moze properly be named abhomyngacions. For they were deuised to theyr synfuler prosper, and to the greute hurte of all other marchauntes commynge to the cyte, and to all other sayres & marchettes of Englande, and also pteudycall to the vniuersall weale of the realme. The which when they were ouersene by the hedes of the cyte, it was shewed vnto the sayd commons, that theyr ordynaunces were not lesfull nor charitable ordered, & therfore they knew well they shuld not be admytted, wyllynge them to deuise other. But all was in vayne. By mene wherof both those and other that were ryghte necessary for the common weale of the cyte, were reiected and put of.

The Barones vppon the moztowe folowynge saynte James day, departed from London towarde Wyndesore

to se the gurdynge of the castell. Wher at theyr commynge they put out the forsaide aliaunces before set in by the Edward the kynges sonne, the which associated with other, rode vnto Fulham, where the kynge then lay and shewed to hym that the Barons hadde spoyled them of suche goodes as they had, and that without cause. But the kynge put thepm of for that cause, and warned them to sue to him aboute Wyndesore when moare of his counsaill was with hym, and the they shulde haue iustyce.

Vppon the seconde day folowynge the feast of saynte Mathewe, or the xiii. daye of September, the kynge the quene, with his sonnes and other nobles of this lande, tooke shippynge and sayled into fraunce, to be present at the frenche kynges parlyamente then holden at Bonony. And the morowe after the octaues of saynt Mychael, he landed agayne at Douer. And the fypdaye folowynge he came to London.

And vpon the tuesday folowynge passed a quest of. xii. knyghtes of Wyndesore vpon a tury, betwene the abbot of Westmynster and the cyte, for certayne pteuileges that the cytyzens of London claimed within Westmynster. Where by the sayde tury it was founden before Gilbert of Brestone then chiefe Baron of the kynges exchequer, & the shryues of London at those dayes myghte lawfully enter into the towne of Westmynster, and all other tenementes that the abbot had within Wyndesore, and vnto the gate of the sayde abbaye and there to make commons and distrayne for lacke of aperaunce, all and eueryche tenaunt of the sayde abbot.

Aboute the quindena of saynt Mychael, the former complayne of the aliaunc-

Some thing
sayled into
fraunce.

The byrthen
of London

alpauntes & other, whyche as aboue
pe haue harde, as we shewed befoze þ
kyng and the lordes in the parlia-
mente holden at Westmynster
Where lastlye it was senteneyd, that
the Barones shulde restore all suche
goodes as they and theyr compaigne
hadde taken frome suche personnes
befoze that daye, as wel to alpauntes
as other bothe spyrituall and tempo

rall, and also that suche menysall ser-
uauntes as shulde be daylye in the
kynges house, and about his person,
shulde be suche as the kyng would
chose and admyt him selfe, the which
ii. articles the barons utterly denyed
Wherefoze olde ranoure toke place
and dyssemyon kyndled bys fyre of
malice agayne, betwene the kyng &
hys lordes feruently.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxii

Roberte Mounplere

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxiii

Thomas fyr Thomas

Robert Ruff.

Anno. Mvii

Therbyll peere



And in the. lxxvii.
peere, by procure-
ment and styng
of the Barons the
coynons of the cy-
tee of Lodd chafe
vnto theyr maye
foz that peere Thomas fyr Thomas
and wythout counsell of the alderme-
nsware at Gyldehall vppon the daye
of Symon and Jude, and made no
presentmente of hym vppon the mo-
rowe folowynge, nother to the kyng
noz yet to the Barons of the kynges
exchequer, as they of ryghte ought to
haue done. foz the whych presump-
cion the kyng was greuouslye dys-
contented agayne the cytye. Soone
after the kyng aduertysyng wel that
the cytye wolde take the Barons par-
tye, caused fyr Edwarde hys sonne to
take the castel of Winsor by a trayne
Whereof when he knew that he was
in possessyon, the kyng earye in a-
mornynge a lytle befoze Chyrlmas
departed frome Westmynster, and
rode vnto the sayde castell, whither
shortlye after came also manye of the
lordes that were vppon the kynges
partye. And as faste the Lordes and

kynghtes whyche held with the earle
of Lecester, dyed them towarde Lon-
don, so þ on epyther partye was much
people assembled In the which passe
tyme some well dysposed, laboured a
concorde betwene the kyng and hys
lordes. By whose meanes fynallye it
was agreed by both parties, that al
matters concernynge the foresayde
articles of statutes and ordinaunces
made at Orenfozde, and after by the
xii. Peeres, that the frenche kyng
shulde deme and iudge, whych shuld
be holden and whych not.

And as he demed, bothe parties
promysed assuredlye to abyde vpon
whyche agremente coppes were made
of the sayde statutes, and wyth let-
ters shewynge the effecte of the four-
mer agremente sente vnto the sayde
kyng of Fraunce then beyng Lewis.
And in the Chyrlmas weke folow-
ynge, the kyng toke shyppyng with
fyr Edwarde hys sonne and other of
hys counsaile, & sayled into fraunce
foz the foresayde cause. And foz þ par-
tye of the sayde Barones, was sente
ouer fyr Peter de Mounteforde and
other. Then befoze Lewys kyng of
Fraunce those statutes were soze ar-
gued

The seventh parte.

741

In the ende, the frenche kynge cal-
lynge befoze hym both parties vpon
the day befoze s^c conuersion of saynte
Paule, o^r the. xxiij. daye of Janua-
rye, s^ctyng in iudgemente gaue ex-
presse sentence, that all and eueryche
of the sayde statutes and ordynaun-
ces shulde be from that daye forwarde
bitterly fordone and sette at nought,
and all suche bandes and promyses
that the kynge o^r any other had made
for the mayntenaunce of the same,
shoulde be admylled & cancellyd, and
the kynge and all other, for anye ma-
tter concernyng those statutes sette at
lybertye. After whiche sentence thus
geuen the kynge retourned into En-
glande, so that he came vnto London
the xij. daye of february. But the
Barones beyng soze amoued wth
this sentence, and noting greate par-
tyalite vnto the frenche kynge, de-
parted from London westwarde, and
so into the marchys of Walys, where
they dyue to them greate power, and
warred vpon the landes and castel-
lys of s^c Roger Mortimer, & thertoe
some of them vnto the grounde, and
spoyled of his, what they might fynd
and ouer that byent of his manours
and houses. In whose ayde s^c Ed-
warde the kynge sonne commynge
his people were dystressyd, and he al-
moſte taken. For redressse of whiche
matters, a newe parlyamente was ap-
poynted to be holden at Orenfozde
in the Quindena of Easter nexte folo-
winge, whiche came neuer to effecte.
Albeit an other Cronycle sayeth that
frome this parlyamente then holden
at Orenfozde, the kynge and hys loz-
des parted all dystoyded. Then the
Barons dyue toward London, and
the kynge remayned at woodstocke.

And then newe assuraunce by w^{ch}
tynge subentyd was made betwene

the compnaltie of the Cytie, and the
Barons, withoute consente of manye
of the rulers of the sayde cytie. Wher-
foze the commons as menne enraged
made of them selfe two capytaynes,
whiche they named constables of the
cytie, that is to saye Thomas de Wy-
weldon and Stephan Bukerell. At
whose commaundement by tollynge
of the greate belle of Paules, all the
cytie shoulde be redy shortly in har-
nesse, to giue attendaunce vpon the
sayde capytaynes.

Aboute the beginnyng of lent, the
Constable of the towre, s^c Hughe le
Spenser, came wth a saye compa-
nye of men of armys befoze hym into
the cytie, and desyred assistance of the
fozenamed Constables. The whiche
commaunded the sayde belle to be tol-
led. By meane whereof the people
wytte theyr shoppes, and came oute
in harnesse in greate multytude. The
whiche after proclamacyon made,
that they shoulde folowe theyr capy-
taynes, withoute knowledge what to
do o^r whither to gooe, folowed theyr
sayde capytaynes, and so poded vnto
Chyrlwozthe vpon two myles be-
ponde Westmynstre, & there spoyled
the manoure of the kynge of Romay-
nes, and sette it after vpon a fyre.
And that done, hys water mylles and
other commodities that he there had
put them vnto bitter ruyne. And after
with greate noyse and crye, returned
vnto London.

This dede as saith myne authour
was cause of the moztalle warre so-
lowyng. For where befoze tyme the
sayde kynge of Romaynes hadde ben
for allyaunce that was betwene hym
and the Earle of Glouceter, a trea-
tye of peace to be hadde betwene the
kynge and hys Barones, after that
dede done, he was enemy vnto them

gg. i. to the

Howe the com-
mons of Lon-
don toke part
with the Ba-
rons agaynst
the kynge.

to the uttermoste of his power.

The kyng hering of this ryot, gathered vnto him a greate power. And for he hearde that syr Peter de Doughter was at Northampton, gathering of people to strengthe the Barones partye, he spedde hym thither, and wanne the towne vpon hym by force, and slewe many of hys menne, and fynally tooke hym & syr Symon the sonne of the earle of Leiceter, with dyuers other on lyue, the which with many Burgeyses of that towne that hadde take theyr parties, the kyng sent vnto dyuers prysones, and some he closed within the castel of the same towne.

In this passe time on Palmesondaye weke all the Jewes in London were spoyled and robbed, & the number of fyue hundred of theym were slayne, and dyuerse of theyr mansyons brennt and destroyed, and suche as of them were saued, were conueyed for great nede vnto the towne, and there kepte from the furpe of the commons. Wherof the occasyon was, for so muche as a Jewe wolde haue forced a chrysten man to haue geuen vnto him more then two pence, for the vsurpe of twenty shyllinges for a weke for ye Hall vnderstand that at those dayes, by lycence graunted vnto the Jewes of the kyng, they myghte take by vsurpe of euery man that of them wolde borrowe money two pence of a pounde for a weke lendynge, and so of greater and of smaller summes after that rate.

And sone after the Jewes were thus punished, manye houses of rehygion wpt in the cytie & nere there aboute, were serched for goodes of allmanes and muche founde. Wherof a parte was brought vnto the lordes, but the more parte was stolen and byrbed.

In whiche season, the kyng passed by dyuers countreis, and lastly came into Southsex with a stronge power wherof hearynge the lordes, made preparacyon to gooe towardes hym. In all whiche tyme the wardeyns of the fyue portes kept the sea with shippes, that no straungers shulde enter the lande to ayde the kyng agayne the Barons.

Then in the ende of April the Barons wth a multitude of the Cytte, whiche they put in baward, departed from London, takynge theyr iourney towarde the kyng. And when they were well onwarde vpon theyr waye word was broughte vnto them that the kyng wth an huge power was at Lewys.

Wherfore they by an hole assente diuised a letter, and sent it in the name of all the Barones vnto the kyng, whose names here vnder folowe but not all.

Syr Symonde de Mountford earle of Leiceter, and hygh steward of Englande

Syr Gilbert de Clare, earle of Glouceter.

Syr Robert Ferris, earle of Derby.

Syr Hugh le Spenser chiefe iustice, and syr Henry de Mountford sonne and heire to the earle of Leiceter.

Syr Rycharde Graye.

Syr Henry Hastynge.

Syr John the sonne of John.

Syr Robert de Wenpount.

Syr John Gynple.

Syr Robert Roog.

Syr Willam Warmon.

Baldwyn de Wake.

Syr Gilbert Gifforde.

Syr Archolus de Megraue.

Syr Godfrey de Lucy.

Syr John de Bessy.

Syr Willam de Mountdesey.

whiche

Howe the Jewes were robbed and spoyled within London.

The vsurpe permitted to Jewes.

Whiche letter sealed with the seales of the said earle of Leicester and of Glouceter conteyned as foloweth.

In þe moste excellent lord the kyng. Henry by the grace of god kyng of England, Lord of Irland, and Duke of Guyan, the Barons and other faithful your seruantes, theyr fydelyte & othe to god and to you couetyng to kepe, sending to you due saluting with all reuerence and honoure, vnder due obeyssaunce. Liketh it your highnes to vnderstand that many beyng about you haue before times shewed vnto your lordship of vs many euyl and vntrewe reportes, and haue found suggestions not alonly of vs, but also of your selfe to byng this your realme vnto subuersion. Knowe your excellencie, that we entende nothyng but helth and suretye to your persone, to the vttermoste of oure powers, and not only to oure enemies, but also to yours, and of all this your realme, we entende vtter greuaunce and correction. Beseeching your grace here after to geue to them lytell credence, for ye shall fynde vs your trewe and faythfull subiectes to the vttermost of our powers. And we Earle of Leicester, and earle of Glouceter, at the requeste of other and for our selfe, haue put to our seales, the .x. daye of the moneth of May.

The answere vnto this forsayde letter.

Henry by the grace of god king of England, Lord of Irland and Duke of Guyan, to Symonde de Mountford, & Gilbert de Clare, & theyr complices. Where as

by warre & generall petturbance in this our realme by you begon & continued, wyth also byenynnges & other hurtes and other enynnities that euidently appereth that your fydelyte to vs due, ye haue not kept, nor the surety of our person ye haue lytell regarded, for so much as our lordes & other our trusty frendes whych daily byde with vs ye vere and greue, and theim pursue to the vttermoste of your powers, and yet daily entende, as ye by the reportes of your letters haue vs as retteyned: we the greife of them admyss and take for our owne, specially whē they for theyr fydelyte whiche they to vs daily impende, stand and abide by vs to oppresse your infidelyte and vntrewe. Wherfore of your fauoure or assuraunce we set lytell store, but you as our enemies we vtterly desyre, wynnelle our selfe at our towne of Lewis the .xii. day of this moneth of May.

And ouer this the kyng of Romaynes, sy Edward the kynges sonne, and the other lordes beyng then with the kyng, sente vnto them another letter, wherof the tenour ensueth.

Richard by þe grace of god kyng of Romaines alway Augustus, and Edward þe noble fyrst begotten sonne of the kyng of England, aliother Barons fermely standyng and abidinge with our soueraigne lord the kyng, to Symonde de Mountford, Gilbert de Clare, and all other theyr false felowes. By the letters which ye sent to the kyng our most soueraygne lord, we vnderstande that we are despyed of you. Neuerthelesse this worde of diffidence appered vnto vs sufficiently before, by the deprauacyon & byenynge of our manoures, & carteng awaye of our goodes. Wherfore we wyl that

gg.ii. ye

The copye of the letter sent by Rycharde kyng of Romaines and Edward the kynges sonne to the Barons.

Cruell and detestable barons.

pe vnderstande, that we desyre you as our moztall and publyke enemyes. And when so euer we may come to reuengement of the iniuries that ye to vs haue done, we shal acquit it to the bittermost of our powers. And where ye put vpon vs, that nother trewe nor good counsell to our souerayne lord the kyng we geue, ye therein sape false ly and vntrewly. And yf that sapenge ye sy? Symonde de Mountford & sy? Gilberte de Clare wyll iustifye in the courte of our souerayne lord, we are redy to purchase to you suertye & safe comynge, that there we maye proue oure trewe and faythful innocency, & your false and traytouse lyenge. Witnesyd with þ seals of Richard the kyng of Romaynes, & sy? Edward the sonnamed. Gyuen at Lewys the. xii. daye of Maye.



When the Barons had receyued these letters from the kyng and his lordes they perceiued wel þ there was none other meane, but defende theyre cause by vynte of swordes. Wherfoze they putting their trust in god, sped them forth toward the kyng. And vpon a wednesday beynge then the. xliii. daye of Maye, erly in the mornynge bothe hostes met. Where after the Londoners had gyven the firste assaute, they were beten backe, so that they beganne to dawe from the sharpe shot and strokes, to the dyscomforte of the Barons hoste. But the Barons encouraged and comforted theyr men in suche wyse, þ not alonely the freshe and lusty knyghtes foughte egerly, but also suche as before were discomfited, recouered their vertue and strength, & foughte without feare, in so muche þ the kynges batward lost their places. Then was

the felde couered with dead bodyes, & gaspyng and groning was harde on euery syde. For eyther was despyouse for to bying the other out of lyfe. And the father spared not þ sonne, nor the sonne the father. Allsaunce at þ tyme was turned vnto diffiaunce, & chylle bloude that daye was shed wpythoute ppytie. Thus during the cruell fyghte by the moze parte of the day, lastely þ victoory fell to the Barons, so þ there was taken the kyng, & the kyng of Romaynes, sy? Edward the kynges sonne, with many other noble men to the nomber of. xlv. Barons and Banarettes, and people slayne a greate multitude ouer twenty thousande as sayth myne authours.

When the Barons had thus obteyned victoory, prouisyon was made for the saufe keeping of the prisoners, so that all were sente vnto dyuers castells and pylons, excepte the kyng his brother the kyng of Almayne, & sy? Edward his sonne, the which the Barones helde wpyth theym, tyll they came to London.

Then a newe graunte was made by the kyng, that the foresayde statutes shulde stande in strength. And yf anye were thought vntreasonable, they to be corrected and amended by foure noble men of the realme, þ is to mean two of the spirytualty, & ii. of the temporalty. And if those. iiii. might not agree, that then the earle of Argeou & duke of Burgoyne to be Judges of þ mater. And this to be fermely holden and obeyed by the kyng and his brother the kynges graunted þ their sonnes and heires shuld remayne with þ Barons as prisoners, tyll all thyng were synned accordyng to þ former agreement. And vpon this was a parliamente appoynted, to be holden at London at Penthecoste folowynge, but

The senenth parte.

784

but that came neuer to purpose. The the tuesdaye befoze the assencion day peace was proclaymed in London be thene the kyng and his Barons.

And vpon the daye folowing, the kyng and þ Barons came vnto London with the kyng of Romaines, and sy Edward the kinges sonne. Then sy Edward as pledge fo; the kyng and sy Henry sonne vnto the kyng of Almayn were sent vnto the towre, and there lodged, and from thens vnto Douer castell. And the kyng was lodged in the Bpshoppes palays by Paules, and the kyng of Almaine by dyuers other within the towre. Then it was agreed by the kyng, that fo; his moze suertye, and fo; the weale of the lande, that the Earle of Leyceter shuld be resyaunt in þ kinges courte vpon þ which agreement & other ma-

ny of the prysoners were set at large.

In this pasetime befoze the feide of Lewis, the quene & the king of Romaynes had sent ouer the sea fo; soulyours, to aide the kyng agayne the Barons, whiche nowe were comen in greate number vnto Douer, & there hounded in þ sea to haue landed. Wher of hearing the Barons sent the kyng of Romaynes to the castell of Berkhamsstede as prysonat, tyll the sayde allyauntes were retourned and caused kyng Henry with a great power to tyde thither, & foze the sayd hoste of straungers to retourn into theyr owne countreys.

And when the kyng had returned the sayde straungers, he shortly after with the grement of the Barons sailed ouer into fraunce, and returned agayne within thorte tearme.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxiii.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxiii.

Osbert Wynter,

Thomas sy; Thomas.

Anno. xlviii,

Philyppe Taploure;

In this. xlviii. yere, the lordes of the marches about þ feaste of Chyismasse, assembled them in those colles & did muche hatre vpon the lordshippes and manours of þ earlis of Leyceter and of Glouceter, þ standyng in marches of Wallis. Wherfoze þ king rode shortly after to Glouceter, and called there a counsell of his lordes. By authoryte of whiche counsell, yt was enacted, that as many of þ saide lordes as came not in by the octauis of saynt Hillary nexte folowpng, and yeldeb them vnto the kynes grace, shulde be cryled. And by þ saide counsell was also agreed, that in the saide octauis shulde a parliament be holden at Westmynstre, At whiche daye

the kyng wpth his lordes spirytuall and tempozall and commons of hys lande, beganne hys foze sayde parliament. Durpnce the whiche, it was there shewed the kyng beyng present, þ he no; sy Edward his sonne no; none of theym, shoulde after that daye greue o; cause to be greued, the earles of Leyceter and of Glouceter, the Barons, Banerettes o; knyghtes the cytezens of London and Barons of the. b. portes, no; none other person o; persones of hyghe o; lowe degree, that was vpon the partye of the sayd earlys, fo; anye mater of dyspleasure done agayne the kyng and the saide sy Edward his sonne, at anye tyme befoze that day. And þ to vpholde the kyng befoze his lordes was sworne.

gg.iii. And

And after that was shewyd and redde a charter of pardon, concernynge the sayde cause, and a confymacion of the statutes of the foeste, wth many other actes and statutes befoze graunted of the kyng.

Then in the feast of saynt Grego-
ry folowing, oꝝ the xii. day of March
sp: Edward the kynges sonne, that be-
foze was also swozne to perfourme
suche pꝛomys as p kyng had made
befoze in the parlyament, was deliue-
red at lyberte, & also sp: Henry p ky-
nges sonne of Almayne, the which had
ben kept as pledge as ye befoze haue
heard vpon p tearme of .ix. monethes
& odde dapes, vpon assuraunce made
that p sayde sp: Edward shuld dwel
and abyde in the kynges courte, and
nor to departe from thence wthoute
lycence of the kyng and of a certayne
of the Barons. After this, manye in-
strumcties and bandes were made by
the kyng and sp: Edward his sonne
foꝝ the perfourmaunce of coucaun-
tes and paccous made betwene the
kyng and the Barons, which shortly
after came to small effecte.

In the season betwene Easter and
Whentecoste, foꝝ oꝛderynge of the a-
foresayde statutes made at Orenfoꝝd
fell descencion betwene the earles of
Lepceter & of Glouceter, so that woꝝ-
des of dyspleasure was bitteryd be-
twene theim, the kyng and they also
beynge then at Glouceter. Then the
kyng and his Barons had labour
to set them at vyte and rest.

And vpon the sea, the Barons of
the fyue portes robbed and spoiled al
men that they myghte take, sparynge
nother Englysh marchauntes noꝝ o-
ther. Of whiche prayes as the comon
fame then went, some of the Barons
of the lande had good parte.

In the whysontweke folowing, the

kyng with the earle of Lepceter, and
sp: Edward his sonne, wth many o-
ther lordes beynge at Hertforde in the
edge of Wallys, p sayde sir Edward
secretly and wthoute lycence depar-
ted from the courte, & yode vnto Che-
ster, where he accompanied vnto hym
the earle of Glouceter and p lordes of
the Marches, the earle of Warrene,
sp: Roger Mortimer and other, and
from thens went vnto Glouceter, by
kynges the byddes as he went, to the
entente that he were not folowed tyll
he had assembled his power.

When knowlege of this came vn-
to the earle of Lepceter, he in all haste
sente vnto sp: Symonde his sonne, p
he shoulde gather his knyghtes vnto
hym. The which accordyng to that co-
maundemente assembled vnto hym
muche people, and wth them dyewe
towarde Winchester, so that he came
befoze the Cytie vpon the cuen of the
translacyon of saint Swythyn, oꝝ the
xiii. day of p moneth of July. Where
he was shut out, foꝝ so much as the cy-
tezens knewe not whither he came as
the kynges frende oꝝ not. And also a
lytel befoze they had receiued a letter
from sp: Edward, wyllynge them to
holde them oute of the cytie. foꝝ these
causes the citezens closed theyꝝ gates
agayne the saide sp: Symonde & his
company. But it was not longe oꝝ the
cytie was yelden. Then they spoiled
the towne, and stewe the moze partye
of the Jewes that dwelled in p same.
And that done, laide siege vnto the ca-
stel and assauted it. But foꝝ tydinges
were sayned of the commynge of sp:
Edward wth hys power, they de-
parted shortly thens, and so yode vn-
to Kenelwoꝝth.

Vpon the laste daye of Julye, sp:
Edward wth hys hoste came vnto
Kenelwoꝝth aforesaide, & tyll sobain-
ly vpon

A descencion
betwene the
Earls of
Lepceter and
Glouceter.

The seventh part

50

ly vpon the hoste of the fornamed sy Symonde, and wth Medynge of lytle bloude tooke there prysoners the Earle of Orenfozde, Wylla de moult Canple, Adam de Arewemarchet, sy Balwyne Wake, and Hugh Auple wth diuerse other, and sy Symond fledde into the castell and so escaped. Then these fornamed prysoners wer al sent vnto Glouceter, and there put in sure keppnge.

In thys mane whyle sy Symond Earle of Lepceter, tooke leaue of the kynge, whych then frome Hertfozde passed the ryuer of Seuerne, and so rode vnto Worcester, and perle wth greate payne passed the byddges befoze by sy Edward broken, and passed the countreys in gatherynge of people as he went, so þ in processe he had wth hi a stronge power. Wher of, hearyng sy Edward, costed towarde hym, and in the .vi. dape of Auguste met wth hym at Cuptham in Worcester Wyre, where betwene them was foughten a cruell fyght. In the whych at length was slayne the sayd sy Symonde, and sy Hentpe hys sonne and heyre, sy Hughe le Spenser, sy Peter de Mounteforde, and manye other noble men that held vpon the Barons partye.

After whych dyscomfytur, some malycious dysposed persons, in dyspyte of the Earle cut of his head and and hys dysmyllaryes, and fastened them vpon ether syde of hys nose, and after made a ptesente thereof vnto the wyfe of sy Roger Mortymer. Hys feete also and hys handes were cut frome the bodye, and sente vnto sondry places, and the trunche of his bodye buried wthyn the churche of Cuptham.

Some after thys byctoye thus obtayned by sy Edward, the kynge

he met, by whose auctorytes al prysoners then whych were in holde in diuerse places, by the commaundemente of the sayd sy Edward, were set at libertye, and manye other dayly accused and set in for them. And aboute the Statute of oure Ladye, a parlyament was holden at Wynchester, where by authoyte of the same, all statutes and ordynaunces befoze made by the barons at Orenfozde in the .xli. yere of the kinge, were vtterly for done and set at nought, and bodes and wytinges made by the king or anye other for the obseruance of the same, were cancelled and broken. Also at thys counsaill was ordayned that all suche as hadde fauoured the Barons, where they in pryson or at large, shulde be dysherited. And then the king resumed into his handes, al grauntes befoze made and geuen to anye persone. And for sy Symonde de Mounteforde myghte not agree wth the kynge at the parlyamente, he was restored to the castel of Kenelworth, as he befoze was assured, the whych he wth sy Hentpe de Halliges and other kepte longe after.

When the parlyamente was ended, the kynge came vnto Wyndsoze wth a greate powre, entendynge as the same then wente to destroy the cytee of London, for the greate yre and dyspleasure that he hadde vnto it. Whereof herynge the maye and aldermen, were stryken in a wonderful feare, albeyt, manye of the rabylls & wylde commons, were in full purpose to haue defended the cytye agayne þ kynge. And thus amonge them were dyuers and mane oppnyons. And no wonder, for at those dayes the cytee was inhabited wth manye maner of nacyns, whych then were admytted for crymyns.

Howe þing was mynde agaynst London.

Lastye

Whiche the King
desired study-
ed to pacify the
kinge.

Henry the third



Lasse, by grace and
sadde counsaill of þ
best in the cytie, they
cōdescēded to make
a supplicacyon to þ
kyng, and send it by
some religious persō

Of the whiche they made dyuerse, &
sente them by sondry personnes, but
all auayled ryghte noughte. For the
kyng was so greuously encensed by
some of hys counsaile agayne the cy-
tyzens, that he wolde not loke vpon
none of theyr supplicacyons. And yf
anye man spake for theym, he soone
woulde make suche countenaunce,
that men whiche were in hys fauour
fered to speake for them.

Then the cytyzens were counsa-
led by theyr frendes, that they shulde
make a wytyng, & seale yt with theyr
common seale, by vertue wherof they
shulde offer theym selves to put them
wholy in the kynges grace and mer-
cy touchyng theyr lyues and goodes.
Accordyng to the whiche counsaile
they deuysed a wytyng, and sealed
it with theyr common seale, and that
done, chose. viii. persones of the citie
such as had frendes in the court, and
sente them toward London the. vi.
daye of October. Vpon which daye
they encountered beyonde Colbroke
a knyght of the kynges called Sir Ro-
ger Leyborne, the whiche turned the
sayde. viii. persones vnto the cytee,
and he also roade wyth theym tyll he
came nere vnto the cytee, and ther de-
parted from them, and roade vpon
the backe syde of the towne vnto the
towze. But at hys departyng he wyl-
led theym to warne the maye wyth a
certayne of the cytee, to meete wyth
hym vpon the moztowe at Backyng
churche, whiche standeth nere vnto
the towze. Vpon the moztowe when

the maye & the sayde Sir Roger were
met, he after a longe processe made,
shewed to them of the kynges grea-
uous displeasure, which he bare to-
warde the cytee, and the meanes that
hadde ben vsed by theyr frendes and
louers, to obtayne grace for the cytee.
Lasse he expessed that no grace for
theym myghte be hadde, excepte they
wolde by theyr common seale bynde
them selves fully and wholy to stande
at the kynges grace, and to put in his
mercy their liues and goodes. Wher
vnto in the ende the cytyzens graun-
ted, and deliuered the sayde wy-
tyng vnto the sayde Roger, pray-
inge hym to be good meane for them
to the kyng. The whiche departed
toward þ king vpon the moztowe, and
returned agayne the. vi. daye after,
and wylled the maye and aldermen
to mete wyth hym agayne at the say-
de church. Wher he shewed to the
that the kyng by great instaunce of
theyr frendes hadde receaued theyr
wytyng, and wolde fyrst for the be-
ginning of contentacyō of his mynd
that all the chapnes, whiche stode
in euery strete and lanes ende wyth
in the cytee, shuld be lousd fro theyr
postes, and the post also drawne oute
of the earth, and all to be brought in
to the towze, and that doone, that the
maye wyth a certayne of the citizins
to the number of. xl. persones, shulde
the daye folowynge be at London
to conferme the graunte of theyr wy-
tyng. And that they shulde goo and
come, in safe and sure wise, he deliue-
red vnto them the kynges letter and
seale for the tearme of foure dayes.
Whiche all was doone accordyng
to theyr former deuise, and the maye
wyth the sayde personnes was re-
dy at London vpon the moztowe be-
yng sonday by one of the clocke, and
thero

Small cheate and worse lodgyngs.

Then vpon the morowe beyng
mondaye towarde nyghte, they were
takenne oute of that Towre, and de-
liuered vnto the baylyffe of the sayd
castel, and lodged by hys assygnement
excepte .v. persones, that is to meane
Thomas syz Thomas then mayre,
Wythiaell Thony, Stephan Buke-
rel, Thomas Wywellson, and John
de Fleete. The whiche .v. persons the
kyng hadde geuen to syz Edward
hys sonne, at whose commaundement
they remayned stil in the sayde towre
longe after, notwithstandinge, the
kynges safe conduyte to them as be-
foze is shewed, made. When tidinges
herof came vnto the cytee of London
albeit, that foze fere many befoze were
aduoyded, then there aduoyded ma-
nye moo, and conueyed theyz goodes
in secret wyle, into diuerse countreies
of Englande, so that manye of them
neuer turned after.

Anno Domini. 19. CC. lxx

Thomas de la Fourdeous.

Thomas f p 3 Thomas

Anno. dicit.

Gregory Bokkylse



tes, goodes, and catelles, as the sayd
cytezsus had in anpe other places of
Englande. And than he made custos
oꝝ gardeyn of the cytee, sꝝ Othon co
stable of the towꝛe, which sꝝ Othon
chase to be balyffes vnder hym, and
to be to hym accõptable to the vse of
the kyng, Ihon Wylman, and Walter
Hentze cytezins of the same cytee
And after thys the kyng tooke pled
ges of the best mennes sonnes of the
cytee, that hys peace shulde be surely
kepte wpythin the same. The whiche
wer put in the towꝛe of London, and
there kepte at the coste of theyꝝ paren
tes. And Hostelpe after by grete la
boure

bonne

boure and sute made, al the foresayd persons whiche were in keepynge of the bailliffe of the castel of Wyndesore this onely excepte, that is to say Richard Bonaventur, Symon de Harpstone Wylliam de Kent, and Wylliam de Glouceter, all the other Londoners. xxiii. in number, were deliuered and came to London the thursdaye folowynge the feast of saynte Luke, in the. xxi. daye of November, and the other. ii. were kepte still in the towne of Wyndesore.

Then dayly sute and labour was made vnto the kyng to haue his gracious fauour, and to know his pleasure what fyne he wolde haue of the cytee, for theyre transgressions and dyspleasure by the to hym done. For the whiche the kyng asked. xl. M. li. and fermely held him at. l. M. marke. But the cytee sayde for them that the poore commons of the cytee, whereof manye were aduocaded were the trespassours, and ouer that the best men of the cytee by these rororous persons were spoyled and robbed, and by the towers also of the sea, as the wardynes of the. v. portes and other, in this troublous season they hadde losse a greate parte of theyr substance. For the whiche cōsideracions and many other whiche were tedious to wyte the cytezens besoughte the kyng of his most gracious fauour & petye to take of them as they myght bere.

This matter thus hangynge, the kyng vpon saynte Nicholas euen, departed from Westmynster toward Northampton. And a litle before his departynge ordeyned by Ihon lynch knyght, and master Ihon Walden clarke, to be gardaines of the cytee and towne, the whiche were named in the kynges wytyngne Seneschalles, or Stewardes of the cytee. Upon the day

folowynge that the kyng was rydde these. ii. fornamed Stewardes sent for xxiii. of the most notable men of the cytee, and warned theym to appeare the daye folowynge before the kynges counsaill at Westmynster, wher at theyr apperaunce was shewed vnto them by by Roger Lepborne, that the kynges mynde was, that they shuld haue the rule of the cytee in his absence vnder the foresayde Seneschalles, and for to se good rule kept with in the cytee, they shuld be sworne ther before his counsaill.

The whiche there wer then sworne and countermaunded vnto the cytee And alway labour was made vnto the kyng for the fyne of the cytee, so that in the Christemas weke an ende was made with the kyng, by labour of such frendes as the cytee hadde aboute hym, for the summe of. xx. M. marke, for all transgressions and offences by them before done, certayne persones excepted whiche the kyng had geuen to by Edward his sonne being as before is sayde in the towne of Wyndesore. For the paymet of which summe at the dayes by agrement set, by Roger Lepborne and master Robert Warten clarke, wer assigned to take the sureties of the same. After which suretye by theym receaued, and sente vnto the kyng at Northampton, the kyng sent immediatly after vnto the cytezens, a charter vnder his broade scale whereof the effecte ensueth.



HAB by the grace of God kinge of England Lorde of Irelande, and Duke of Guyan, to all men healte. Knowe ye that for the fyne of. xx. thousand marke the whiche our cytezens of London to vs made, for the redemption of the transgressions

The fine that the Londoners paid for the transgressions against the king

The kynges Charter made to the Londoners

transgressions and trespasses to vs
to oure quene, to oure noble brother
Rycharde kyng of Almanye, and to
Edward oure fyrste begotten sonne
doone, we remitte and pardon for vs
and for oure heires to the sayde crite-
ryns and theyr heires, as much as in
vs is, so that they haue and enioye al
theyr former grauntes and lyberties
rentes, and profytes, frome the feast
of Chyristmas last past, and also that
the sayd critecryns haue to them al for
faites of al malefactours of the citee
whych in the perturbaunce befoze
made were intended, of for the same
be yet for to be endyte, Excepte the
goodes and cattelles of them, of the
whych we haue geuen the bodys vi
to oure foresayde sonne Edward, and
excepte the rentes and tregementes of
all those critecryns, whych now be &
shalbe oure eschete by reason of the
foresayde transgressions. And that
all prysoners whych now in prysons
remayne, be frelye deliuered, excepte
those persons whose bodys we haue
geuen to Edward oure sonne. And
that the sayde critecryns be as free as
they befoze the sayde transgressions
were, in al partes and coastes of this
oure landes. In wytnes whereof we
haue made these letters patentes, wit-
nesseth my selfe at Rothehamton, the
daye of Januarii, the yere of oure
reygne. clxx.

After whych pardon by the crite-
cryns receaued, all pledges for theym
beyng in the towne of London, and
also. iii. of the that were in the towne
of Wynsoze, that is to saye Rychard
Bonauenture, Simon de Hadistoke
Wylliam of Kent, and Wylliam of
Gloceter, were deliuered. Than also
were dyscharged the forenamed stew-
ardes for Ihon Lynde and mayster
Ihon Waldoren, and the critecryns of

them selves chose for mayre Wylliam
for Rycharde, & for the shyppes Tho-
mas de la fonde, and Gregoye de
Rokkesley. Than for leuypng of this
fyne were set as well seruauntes to
nouaunte men, as householders, and
manye refused the lyberties of the cy-
ter for to be quyt of that charge.

Whyle the kyng laye thus at Ro-
thampton, for Symonde de Mont-
fort put hym vpon the dome of Oc-
tobonus the Legate, that befoze was
come into this lande to resoure thin-
ges in the church of Englande, and
also to set bynnyng and reaste betwene
the kyng and his lordes. To whose
dome, and also of the kyng of the Ro-
mans, the foresayde for Symonde,
had bounden hym to stande. Vppon
whych promys and band, he was ly-
berted to be at large in the kynges
court, and so continued a season. But
in the ende when the kyng was com-
me into Lodd, he departed sodainly
out of the court & rode vnto Wynchel-
see, where he accompanied with the
rowers of the sea, and after some pry-
ses take departed frome them and so
sailed into Fraunce, and put hym in
seruyce with Lewis than kyng of
that prouync.

This yere also vpon the euen of
S. Ihon Baptyst, the kyng began
his sege aboute the castell of Kenel-
worth with a myghtie powre. But sic
Henry Hastynge, with such as were
wythin it, defended it so stronglye, &
the kyng and all his power myghte
not wyne the sayde castel of a longe
tyme, as after in the nexte yere Wall
appeare.

It is befoze shewed, how the quene
by her puruys had caused an host
of straungers to prepare the to come
into Englande, for to ayde her. And
the kyng agayne the barons: She
had

had also purchased a curse of the byshop of Rome, to accurse al the sayd barons and all theyr apders and helpers, and had commissyons dyrected to certayne byshoppes of Englande to execute þe same as of Londō, and of Wynchester, and of Chechester, the whiche for fere of the barones that denyed and deferred the execucion & sentence of the sayde curse, wherefore the quene made newe labour to the

b. of Rome than Urban the thyrde, & had it graunted, that the sayde byshoppes for theyr dysobedience shuld be corrected. And for this Octobon the forsayde Legate, this yere at a councell holden by hym and the Clergy of Englande at Paulys church in London suspended the sayde byshoppes, and them sente vnto Rome to be assayed of Clemente the thyrde.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxx

Edwarde Blounte

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxi

Thomas sp; Thomas

Peter Junger.

Anno. l.

The. l. yere



AD in the. l. yere vppon the euen of Saynt Thomas the Apostele befoze Chyrtmas, was yelden by apoyntemente the castell of Kenilworth.

At the whiche the kynge wyth his power hadde lyne as befoze is sayde, from Wyndesore tyll that daye, and than geuen ouer by sp; Henry Hastings and his complaces, vppon condycyon that he and al other shuld haue lyfe and lymme, and hoise and hatuelles, wyth all thynges wythin the castell to theym belongynge, and a certayn tyme of leysure to carry away the same.

And in this yere in the tyme of Lente, were the wardens of the fyue portes reconceyded to the kynge, by fauoure of sp; Edwarde the kynges sonne. And notwithstandinge, the greate harue that they hadde doone by robynge vppon the sea, as wel to Englyshe marchauntes as to other, they hadde to theym confermed all theyr fourmer pryuyleges. And

that to them was graunted, that yf a nyne manne Englyshe or other wolde sewe for restitucon of good by theym befoze taken, or for the death of anye of theyr frendes befoze slayne, that al suche complayntes shuld be sued & shewed in theyr courtes, and there to haue theyr maters determyned and not elles where. But what the cause was of this end thus made betwene the kynge and theym it is not shewed. But the commō fame at that day canne that the sayde wardens of the v. portes had at this daye the domynion of the sea. Wherefore the kyng was fayne to folowe theyr pleasures.

Aboute the feast of Whylippe and Jacob, the kynge helde his parlyament at Northampton. At the which were confermed that olde franchises and libertyes, by the kynges progenytours befoze graunted vnto the cytee of London, wyth a newe graunte for the wyze of Wyndesore. And at this parlyamente were dyscreyted many noble men of the lande, that be for tyme had taken the barons party for whiche cause they accompanied them together, and robed and ryued in dyuers

The seventh parte.

in diuers coostes of the lande, & toke
the towne of Lyncolne & spoyled it, &
after ransomed manye of the ryche

burgeyses of the towne, and toke the
isle of Ely, and strengthened it in suche
wise that they helde it longe after.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxvi.

John Doyan.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxvii.

Wylliam fyz Rycharde.

Luke Badecot.

Anno. li.

26. m.

In this. li. yere, at þe chosing
of þe maire, certayne contra
ueryses fylle atwene the ru
lers and the comons of the
cytie of Lodon. Wherefore by aduyce
of the Mayre & Aldermen, sz Roger
Lepdome wth other came vnto the
Gyldhalle, beyng harnessed vnder
their gownes and vpon the friday so
lowyng Alhalowyn called þe comons
to the election of þe newe maire, where
the best of the cytie gaue the nomina
cyon vnto Aleyn Douch, & diuers of
the other cried vpo Thomas fyz Tho
mas, whiche at that tyme was pryso
ner in Wyndesore castell, wherefore the
sayde Roger with the assistance of the
mayre and other, toke the saide rascal
and euill disposed persones, and sent
them vnto diuers pylons. This yere
also the gentylmen that helde the ysle
of Ely brake oute sondry tymes and
doyd much harme in Northfolke, and
in Suffolke, and Cambridgeshyre,
and toke the cytie of Northwyche, and
after the spoylinge therof, carped a

waye wth them many of the citezens
beyng ryche, and fynauced theym
at greate summes of money, and ly
ued there in that yle lyke vnto oute
lawes. By this and other, many hur
tes in diuers places of the lande was
done, by theys and other euill dispo
sed people, whereof the charge was
cuer layde vnto the forenamed gentil
men. Then the legate laboured vnto
the kynge, that the sayde dysherited
gentylmen myght purchase theyr lan
des of hym by fyne and ransome.
By whose labour the kynge lastely
agreed, þe sayde gentylmen shulde
haue theyr landes agayne by fynes
of. v. yere value of theyr lande. As he
that might dispend. xx. pound by yere
shuld pay an. C. pound & so other af
ter that rate, except sz Roberte scerres
earle of Derby, sz John de la warre
and him þe strake of the fyft of the kin
ges pursuuant. And some other per
sones which were of smal behanoure,
shuld be fyned by discrecyon of þe kin
ges conseil, but this toke no conclusio

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxviii.

Thomas Balyng.

Anno domini. CC. lxxviii.

Aleyn Douch.

Robert de Cornehyll.

Anno. lii.

27. m.

In this. lii. yere, for what hap
is not expessed, sz Gilbert de
Clare earle of Glocester refused
the kynge & in the march of Walis ga
thered vnto him a stronge power. To
whome also dyete sit John Epulke &

other of þe company dysherited And af
ter the feste of Chyrtmas, wh a greate
host came nere vnto London, þe tyme
the byshop of Rome's legate Octavianus
being lodged at the towre of London.
When the mayre and aldermen of
bb. i. the

had also purchased a curse of the byshop of Rome, to accurse al the sayd barons and all they; apders and helpers, and had comynssyons dyrected to certayne byshoppes of Englande to execute þe same as of Londō, and of Wynchester, and of Chechester, the whiche for fere of the barones that denyed and deferred the execucion & sentence of the sayde curse, wherefore the queene made newe labour to the

b. of Rome than Urban the thyrde, & had it graunted, that the sayde byshoppes for they; dysobedience shuld be corrected. And for this Octobon the foresayde Legate, this yere at a counsell holden by hym and the Clergy of Englande at Paulys church in London suspended the sayde byshoppes, and them sente vnto Rome to be assayed of Clemente the thyrde.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxx

Edwarde Blounte

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxi

Thomas sp; Thomas

Peter Junger.

Anno. l.

The. l. yere



And in the. l. yere vppon the euen of Saynt Thomas the Apostele befoze Chyrtmas, was yelden by appointement the castell of Kenelworth.

At the whiche the kyng wth his power hadde lyne as befoze is sayde, from Wyndesore tyll that daye, and than geuen ouer by sp; Henry Hastings and his complaces, vppon condycyon that he and al other shuld haue lyfe and lymme, and hoise and harnesse, wth all thynges wythin the castell to theym belongynge, and a certayn tyme of leysur to carry away the same.

And in this yere in the tyme of Lente, were the wardens of the fyue portes reconcepled to the kyng, by fauoure of sp; Edward the kynges sonne. And notwithstandinge, the greate harue that they hadde doone by rounge vppon the sea, as wel to Englyshe marchauntes as to other, they hadde to theym confermed all they; fourmer priuileges. And

that to them was graunted, that if a nyne manne Englyshe or other wolde sette for restitucon of good by theym befoze taken, or for the death of anye of they; frendes befoze slayne, that al suche complayntes shulde be sued & shewed in they; courtes, and there to haue they; maters determynd and not elles where. But what the cause was of this end thus made betwene the kyng and theym it is not shewed. But the commō fame at that day canne that the sayde wardeins of the v. portes had at this daye the domynion of the sea. Wherefore the kyng was fayne to folowe they; pleasures

Aboute the feaste of Whylppe and Jacob, the kyng helde his parlyament at Northampton. At the whiche were confermed that olde franchises and lybertyes, by the kynges progenytours befoze graunted vnto the cytee of London, wth a newe graunte for the wyte of Wyndesore. And at this parlyamente were dyscretyd many noble men of the lande, that befor time had taken the barons party for whiche cause they accompanied them together, and tobed and trued in dyuers

The seventh parte.

in diuers coostes of the lande, & toke
the towne of Lyncolne & spoiled it, &
after ransomed manye of the ryche

burgeyses of the towne, and toke the
isle of Ely, and strengthened it in suche
wise that they helde it longe after.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxvi.

John Doyan.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxvii.

Wylliam f. Rycharde.

Luke Badecot.

Anno. lxi.

21. m.

In this. lxi. yere, at þe chosing
of þe maire, certayne contra-
uerseyes fell attwene the ru-
lers and the commons of the
citty of London. Wherfore by aduyce
of the Mayre & Aldermen, s. Roger
Lepdorne wth other came vnto the
Cupldhalle, beyng harnesssed vnder
their gobmes and vpon the friday fo-
lowyng Alhalowyn called þe commons
to the election of þe newe maire, where
the best of the citty gaue the nomina-
cyon vnto Aleyn Douch, & diuers of
the other cried vnto Thomas f. Tho-
mas, whiche at that tyme was pryso-
ner in Wyndesore castell, wherfore the
sayde Roger with the assistance of the
mayre and other, toke the sayde rascal
and euill disposed persones, and sent
them vnto diuers pylons. This yere
also the gentylmen that helde the pte
of Ely brake oute sondry tymes and
dyd much harme in Northfolke, and
in Suffolke, and Cambridgeshyre,
and toke the citty of Rozyche, and
after the spoylinge therof, carped a-

waye with them many of the citzens
beyng ryche, and fynauced theym
at grete summes of money, and ly-
ued there in that ille lyke vnto oute-
lawes. By this and other, many hur-
tes in diuers places of the lande was
done, by theys and other euill dispo-
sed people, wherof the charge was
euer layde vnto the forenamed gentil-
men. Then the legate laboured vnto
the kynge, that the sayde dyscheryed
gentylmen myght purchase theyr lan-
des of hym by fyne and ransome.
By whose laboure the kynge lastely
agreed, þe sayde gentylmen shulde
haue theyr landes agayne by fynes
of. v. yere value of theyr lande. As he
that might dispend. xx. pound by yere
shuld pay an. C. pound & so other af-
ter that rate, except s. Roberte scerers
earle of Derby, s. John de la warre
and him þe strake of the fyft of the kin-
ges pursuauant. And some other per-
sones which were of smal behaoure,
shuld be fyned by discrecyon of þe kin-
ges conseil, but this toke no conclusiō

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxviii.

Thomas Basyng.

Anno domini. CC. lxxviii.

Aleyn Douch.

Anno. lxi.

Robert de Coznehyll.

22. m.

In this. lxi. yere, for what hap-
is not expessed, s. Gilbert de
Clare erle of Gloucestre refused
the kynge & in the march of Wallis ga-
thered vnto him a stronge power. To
whome also dyewe sir John Cyuile &

other of þe company dyscheryed And af-
ter the feste of Chyrtmas, w a grete
host came nere vnto London, þe tyme
the byshop of Rome's legate Octobonus
being lodged at the towre of London.
When the mayre and aldermen of

bb. i. the

the cytye were ware of the earls comynge, wpyth so stronge a power, not knowynge whether he were the kyn- ges frende or not, shytte the gates a- gayne hys foze cyders. And so; the kynge nor none of hys counsell was then nere vnto the cytye, the Maye and aldermen wente vnto the legate, and requyred hys counsell, whether they shulde suffer the earle to enter in to the cytye or not, wherunto þe legate answered that he thought not the con- trary, for he knewe well that he was the kynges trewe subiect and frende. It was not longe after that a messan- ger came from the earle vnto the mai- re, wpyllynge to haue lycence to passe thozough þe cytye into Southwerke, where he entendyd to lodge hym and hys people, whych was graunted, & so the earle passed thozough the cytye, and was lodged in Southwerke. To whom came shortly after by South- wery side, by John Cruple in a greate company.

Then the maye kepte the gate of the bydye shyt, and watched it daylye with a certayne of armed men, and e- uery nyghte caused the drawe bydye to be drawen, & the waters syde dayly and nightly to be watched wpyth ma- ny armed men. In lytell pzoesse of tyme after, the legate and the earle a- greed in suche wyse, that the earle by hys aduyce was suffered wpyth a cer- tayne of his people to be lodged with in the cytye. By reason wherof he day- ly dyewe moze & moze of his people in to the cytye, so that fynally many thin- ges were ordered by hym, & many of the comons toke his partye agayne þe maye and aldermen.

Then in the Easter weke he toke þe keyes of the bydye and of the gates from the officers of the cytye, and de- lyuered them to suche as pleased him

and receyued into the cytye many of þe dysherited persones, & gaue to them free lybertie to passe the bydye by all houres of the daye and the nyghte. The maye of all this sent word vnto the kynge, whiche then was gathe- ryng of hys power in Northfolke, and made hasty speede towarde Lon- don. In whiche meane tyme the earle with his compaigne made bulwerkes and barbicans atwene the towre and the cytye, and caste dykes and treches in some places of the cytye, & fortified it wonderously.

Then manye of the cytyzens fea- ryng a newe insurreccyon, voyded þe cytye as secretly as they might, whose goodes the Earle sealed to hys owne vse, or suffered his menne to spoile the at theyr pleasure. Then the comons of the cytye forgat theyr late punish- ment, and as menne without drede of god, or of theyr kynge, toke certayne of the aldermen and cast them in pzo- son, and sequestred their goodes, and dyspopled muche therof. And there- vpon ranne to the Cupidehalle, and there chose for theyr Maye or for cu- stos or ruler of the cytye by Richard de Culworth knyght, and for bapty- ses Roberte de Lynton, and Roger Marshall, and dyscharged the olde maye and wyffes. And that done, all suche pzoisoners as were in New- gate, Ludgate, and Crepplegate, or in any other pzoisons within the cytye for bycause of the Barons warre be- foze passed, they were deliuered & set at lyberte.

When the legate behelde all this rebellyon & dyscorde, he repented hym of hys fourmer counsell geuen vnto the maye. And for he sawe he myght not resourme the earle of his errour, he threatened hym wpyth the censours of the churche, and to accuisse him as the

The seventh parte.

22.

the dispersed were. And vpon this he commaunded the deuyn service to be sayde without note, & the church dozes to be shut in tyme of the service doing, & that no bel were ronge vnto the saide service, and all to the entent that the dispersed, which shode accursed shoulde not enter the churches to heare the deuyn service of god.

Then vpon .iii. weekes after Easter, the kynge came to Hain. .iii. myles frome London, and was lodged hym selfe in the abbay of white munes of Stratford. Whither came vnto him the Legate soone after, & was lodged also in the same abbay, where for strenghtnes of lodgyng his horse and mules were sette within the closter of the sayde abbay. Then the kynges hoste made dayly assautes vpon the cytie, and gunnes and other ordynaunces was shot into the cytie, which lettell of nothyng hurte the towne, it was so strongly fortified.

In this season the legate vpon his parte, and the kynge of Romaynes vpon the other parte, for allpauce that was betwene hym and the earle of Gloucestre, labored so to the kyng that a reformation of peace was spoken of. Durynge whiche treatye the souldoyers lyenge in Southwerke, made many robberyes in Southery and other places, and rowed ouer vnto Westmynster, and spoyled there the kynges palaces, and deuoured hys wyne, and brake the glasse of the wyndowes, and all other necessaries to that palays they destroyed and wasted, and somtymes came in lykewyse into London, and robbed there also.

Of whiche there was taken. .iiii. that bare the Conysaunce of the Earle of Derby, the whiche the Earle caused theyr handes and legges to be bounden, and then putte into a sacke, and

so caste into the Champs.

About the feast of saint Bernabe the peace betwene the kynge and the earle of Gloucestre was concluded.

After the whiche conclusyon taken, the earle remoued oute of the cytie, and was lodged agayn in Southwerke. And the kyng entred the cytie the sondays befoze mydsomer daye. And forthwith the kynges proclamacions were made throughe the cytie, of the peace betwene the kynge and earle. And after was geuen lybertye to the dispersed persons that they shoulde haue. .xi. dayes respyte to myste for them selves, that is to meane other to auoyde vnto suche places where they myghte be in some suertye, or elles to agre to the former composycion made by the Legate, and to paye the fyfte parte of the shynte of theyr landes, certayne persones to be accepted, as before is rehersyd. And as touchynge to the earle and suche other as before were not dyspersed, with also the citizens of London, to be clerely forgyuen and pardoned.

The earle of Gloucestre after rebellion pardoned.

And then was restored to theyr offices Aleyn Bouche for Mayre, and Thomas Basinge and Robert de Coznehill for shryffes. And the Alderman whiche before were depoynted were againe restored to theyr wardes and offices.

Upon the wednesdays folowynge the Legate interdyed all the cytie. Which endured from. vi. of the clocke in the mornynge, tyll. .iii. of the clocke the nexte daye at after none, and then it dyscharged, vpon the othe of two commons swayne in the name of all the cytie, that the cytie shoulde stande to the ordynaunce and iudgement of holy churche. But an other cronicle sayth, that this interdiccion shoulde haue continued longer, he had bene

The cytie of London interdicted.

by. ii. the

the sterrenesse of þ Londoners, which helde the legat so streyght, that they enforced hym to withdraue that sentence vpon the foresayde condycion.

Then after thys, all the bulwerkes and barbycans made by the earle in the cytte were plucked cleane vppe and the dyches fylled, that no parte of theym was sene. When the cytezens shulde haue theyr newe pardons graunted, an obstacle was made, for so muche as they as yet hadde not recompensyd the kynge of Romaynes for þ subuersyon of hys mantoure of Chyrltmothe. For the whiche was asked fyre thousande marke, so that synally wyth greate labour & stendshyppe, they agreed to geue vnto him for amendes a thousand marke, to be payde in two yeres.

It was longe after the kynge accepted to his grace by John Cypule, by Nicholas de Segraue, by Wyllyam Warmeryn or Wermyn, by Rycharde Gray, by John by John, and

by Gilbert de Lucy, with other. And accord was also made betwene by Edward the kynge sonne, and the for named earle of Glouceter. And then was all fortreces and other defences which befoze tyme were made in Southwarke and in other places toynynge to the same, pulled vp and destroyed, and the earle and all other souldyours cleane boyded. And after all thynges set in order and rest, excepte suche as yet kepte the pile of Caly the kynge rode to Shrowpsbury, where he taryed a season, for to comyd maters betwene hym and Lewelyn prync of Walys.

The kynge thus beyng at Shrowpsbury, a wytte was directed to by Alyn South mayre of London. vii dayes befoze Mychelmas frome the kynge, chargynge hym that the cytezens shulde not procede to election of newe shyreffes tyll hys comynge to London, but to suffer þ olde to abyde still in offyce.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxiii.

Alyn South.

Wylliam de Durham.

Walter Henry.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxx.

Anno. clxx.

The. lxx. yere.

Werte the
kyng.

In this. lxx. yere in the moneth of Noueber, fell a vraynace betwene the felshyppes of goldsmithes & raylours of London. Whiche grewe to makynge of parties, so that with þ goldsmithes toke partte þ felshypp of crafte of, & with the raylours helde the crafte of stayners. By meane of this muche people nightely gathered in þ stretes in harneis. And at length as it was prouyded, the thirde night, of the saide parties met vpon þ nomber of. v. hundred men on both sydes, and ran togither with suche violence

that some were slayne and many wounded. Then outcrys was made, so that the shyreffes with strengthe of other commons came vnto the riddynge of theym, and of them toke certayne persons, and sente theym vnto dyuerse prysones, and vpon the morowe such searche was made, that the moste of þ chefe causers of that fray were taken and put in warde.

Then vpon the fridaye folowynge saynt Katherins dape, scillyons were kepte at Newgate by the Mayre and Laurence de Bzoke iustyce and others where. xxi. of the saide persones were arreigned

The seventh parte.

arraigned of felonie, and. xiii. of them
cast and hanged. And for one God-
frey de Beuerlape holpe to arme one
of the sayde persons, he was also cast
amonge the other. In lent folowynge
the kynge being at Westminster com-
maunded the maire of London to pre-
sente vnto him fyve persons suche as
were able to be shryffes. Of þ which
fyve so presented, the kynge chose two
for to be shryffes, þ is to saye Willy-
am de Durham and Walter Henry, &
then caused them to be sworne, þ they
shulde gather the profits of the cite
and to geue a trewe accompte befoze
the Barons of the exchequer.

And þ moze after saint James
dape, o; the. xxi. dape of Iulie, the
kynge discharged sy; Aleyn Bouche
maire, and made Stephan Edworth
Constable of the towre, and custos of
the cite of London. Of these rulers
of the cite after the yere þ Thomas
sy; Thomas was Maire are dyuers
opinions. For after some wyters, fro
that yere, whiche was the. xlviii. yere
of kynge Henry, tyll the. lvi. yere, of
hys reygne, in the whiche yere John
Boyan Baper was maire, were all
custodes and gardens and no may-
res, and who to that was then consti-
ble of the towre of London, was also
custos of the cite.

About this tyme also by mediacy-
on and meanes of sy; Edward, all
suche dysherited perionnes as kepte þ
ysle of Ely, were reconcyled vnto the
kynge, and all fortreilles and defen-
ces therein by them made, plucked a-
waye and destroyed.

And in this moneth of Iuly, Oc-

tobonus the legat after he had made
many good rules in the churche, not
withoute greate charge of dynes le-
tued of the same, toke his leaue of the
kynge, and rode towarde the sea syde
with great treasure, and so returned
in processe of tyme to Rome. Where
after Innocent the fyft, aboute þ yere
of oure loyde. xii. hundred and. lxxvi.
he was chosen and created byshop of
Rome, and then named Bojan the. v.
of the name, and died within. l. dayes
of his eleccon. This yere also, for so
much as many of þ cytezens of Lon-
don for þ great imposscon & charge
that they were set at, toward the fyne
of threty thousand marke fornamed
wyth other charges, byrde the cite
wyth they; houtholdes and goodes,
and enhabyted them in diuers places
of the land, thynkyng thety to be ac-
quitted of the said selling o; charge, þ
other of the cite whiche remayned,
made instant laboure to þ kynge and
had it graunted, that all suche as for
the sayd cause had voided their good-
des out of the cite, shulde be distrap-
ned by the shire of þ shire where they
then dwelled, & forid to paye all such
summes as they befoze were assessed at.

And in the moneth of September
the fornamed. v. cytezens whiche re-
mayned prysoners in þ towre of win-
dese, þ is to saye Thomas sy; Tho-
mas, Michael Cony, Stephan Buc-
kerell, Thomas Wywelydon, and
John de la flete, as befoze in the end
of the. xlviii. yere is expessed, made at
thys season they; ende wyth sy; Ed-
ward the kinges sonne for great sum-
mes of money, & were delpyered.

Howe Octo-
bonus the legat
returned
with greate
treasure to
Rome.

Howe many
of the cytezens
of London
byrde the cy-
tie because of
the greate cha-
rges and charges
that they
were put vnto
to, but yet also
caped thep
not the pay-
ment.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxx.

Wylliam Haddpstone.

Thomas sy; Thomas

Inhetyll de Bluerne.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxx.

Anno. lxxx

hy. lxx. In this



And this.iii. yere, began harde froste aboute the feast of sainte Andrieu, and endured tyll it was nere vnto Candelmasse.

A great froste

The which was so feruent, & the Thames aboute the bydye betwene London and Westmynster was so harde frose that men and beastes passed ouer on fote from Lambeth to Westmynster and so bywarde in dyuerse places to Kyngstone, & marchaundise was carryed from Sandwyche and other hauens of the sea vnto London by land for the shippes at that season myght not enter into the ryuer of Thames.

A great floud

And about the feast of S. Medast fyll such plenty of water, that the Thames flowed & rose so hygh, & the lyke thereof was not sene by men then lyving. Wherof ensued much harme aboute London, for the selers by the water syde were all drownded, & in theym greace plenty of marchaundise perished and losse.

Howe kynge Henry gaue the rule & gouernment of London to sir Edward hys sonne.

In this yere in the begynnyng of lente, the kyng gaue vnto sir Edward his sonne the rule of the cytie of London, with all reuenues and profytes to it belongyng. After whiche gyfte the saide sir Edward made sir Hugh the sonne of Othou Constable of the towre and custos of the cytie.

And vpon the nyne daye of Aprill ensuyng, sir Edmund the kynges other sonne surnamed Crouchbake, married at Westmynster the daughter

of the earle of Fumalie. For sollemnite wherof, the kyng kepte there in the great hall a great honorable feast the sondaye folowynge.

And vpon the daye of saynte Ekenwalde, on the laste daye of Aprill nexte ensuyng, sir Edward the kynges sonne commaunded the cytezens of London to presente vnto hym syre persones able to be shypmesses of London. Of the whiche he admytted to that offyce Wyllyam de Hadelstoke & Anketyll de Aluerne, and swaie them to be accomptauntes as they predecessours were. And the syre daye of May folowynge presented at the Guild hall, and there charged of newe.

At these dayes a newe custome of toll was vsed to be payde by the cytezens of London vnto the kyng, whiche tolle sir Edward then hadde letten to fearme to a marchaunt straunger for xx. marke by yere. Wherfore the cytezens not wyllynge to be vnder the rule of a straunger, made great suite vnto the saide sir Edward, and lastely agreed with him to bye the saide toll free for the sume of .ii. hundred marke.

And in the ende of this yere, the kyng hadde graunted vnto hym towarde hys voyage purposed by hym into the holpe lande, the xx. peny of euery mannes substance mouable, thowghe oute hys lande of the laye fee, and of the spirytualtye by assente of the .i. Gregoie. iii. diemes, to be layed in this yeres.

What was the purpose of the voyage into the holy lande.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxx.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxi.

Walter Boster.

John Adryan Wyntner.

Anno. lb.

John Caploure.

The.ii. yere.

In this.ii. yere, the kyng of Romains concluded a couenaunt betwene the kyng and sir Gilbert de

Clare etle of Glouceter, for a voyage to be taken into the holy lande by the saide earle for the kyng. For the which voyage

age the sayde earle shulde haue to-
warde his charge. but .xx. marke, and
at the taking of hys shyppyng other
iiii. thousande marke, and to be redy
by the fyrste daye of May next folow-
inge, and if the earle were not redy at
the sea syde at that day with hys com-
panye to take shyppyng, he shulde
the forsaite to the king. ii. .xx. marke
For suterpe wherof the sayde Earle
shulde deliuer into the kynges pos-
sessyon hys castell of Henleget stan-
dpyng vppon the marche of Walys.
But thys came after to no purpose,
wherfore þ cause is not shewed. But
that iourney was perfourmed by sy
Edward the kynges sonne, as after
shalbe to you declared. In thys passe
tyme the cytezens of London conten-
ted so well sy Edwardes mynd, that
he laboured so for them to the kynges
grace, that they had then they char-
toure so confyrmmed, that they shulde
after they auncient lybertyes chose
of them selves a maye and two shyp-
fes, and the sayde shypfes to haue þ
offyces thereunto belongyng to fer-
me, as they had, except that where to
foze they payed for þ fee serme. iii. hu-
dred and .l. ponde, nowe they shulde
pay. iiii. hundred and .l. ponde. After
whiche confyrmacion thus graun-
ted and passed by the kynges hode
seale the cytezens vpon the. xiiii. day
of Iulye assembled at the Gyldehal,
a chafe for they maye Ihon Ady-
daper, and for shypfes Walter Do-
ter and Ihon Caplout. And vpon the
xvi. daye folowynge sy Edward be-
ynge presente, presented them vnto
the kyng at Westmynster, wher they
were admitted and swoyne. And then
was sy Hugh of Dchon dyscharged
of that rule of the cytee.

Then the cytezens of they frewill
gaue vnto the kyng an. C. marke,

and to sy Edward. b. C. marke,
whiche gyfte the kyng well accep-
And soone after they receaued they
chartoure of confyrmacion, berpyng
date the. xxi. daye of Iuly, and yere
of the kynges reygne.

And for the former conuencion be-
twene the kyng and the erle of Glou-
ceter was not holden, sy Edward
tooke vppon hym the kynges crosse.
To whome the kyng gaue all suche
mony as was graunted of þ laye fee,
as befoze is shewed, & then toke shyp-
pyng at Douer the. xi. daye of Au-
gust, and so sailed to Burdeaur with
hys wyfe and other noble companye

And for that Lewys then kyng of
fraunce was gone, he tarped at Bur-
deaur a certayne season & after sped
hym wyth hys forsaide companye
towards the cytee, of Chunys, where
the french kyng was. But he came
thither Lewys was deade. And the
peace concluded betwene Phylippe
hys sonne and the kyng of Chunys
Wherfore sy Edward entyndyng
to greue Goddes enmyes, with some
knyghtes of fraunce whiche enten-
ded the same, toke leue of the french
kyng and of sy Charlys hys vncle
then kyng of Sicile, and sayled fur-
ther into the holy lande, and aryued
at a pozte of Acris or Icon. For at
that daye in the holy lande was no
mo cytees in the possessyon of chryst-
en men, but that and þ cytee of Tyre,
wyth certayne castelles, whereunto þ
chrysten fled often for socoure agayn
the Sarazyns.

When sy Edward was come to
the cytee of Icon, the chrysten knygh-
tes receaued hym wyth great honou-
re and gladnesse, and lodged hym in
they beste maner. Where he tarped
by the space of a yere after, as affy-
meth the french cronycle. For it was
not

After comyn
by the cytye
of London to
the kyng and
sy Edward
his sonne.

The departynge
of sy Edward
& his sonne
towards the
holy lande

not longe after hys commynge thither, but that the Soudayn of Hurp (the whiche had wonne all the countreyes there about) came thither with a greates powre of Sarazyns, and assaulted the towne bygynnyng. But sye Edward with the ayde of chyllyen men bare hym so knyghtely, that he defended the cytee and the castles to the same belongyng, & terrytores of the same, that the Wendane for all hys great multitude and powre gat ther lytle honoure, notwithstandinge, he hadde in hys hoost, as assymeth the frenche cronicle, ouer an. C. W. Sarazyns. And moze assymeth the sayde cronicle, that sye Edward in hys polycyes and manfull actes so honurable behaued hym that he neuer dyd suche acte in all hys lyfe folowynge albeit, he dyd after manye of great honoure. But none that was lyke vnto the actes that he there accomplisshed and broughte vnto ende. By the reason whereof, hys name amonge the Intydels was had in memoire many peares after.

Of the honoure of thys marcell knyght I haue shewed the lenger rehearsal, for so much, as I fynde it testified of the frenche men, the whiche

I knowe wel by theyr other cronicles that they make of Englyshe prynces muste be of greates authoryte, or elles by theyr pt shulde not so specially haue bene noted. And mozeouer, I am assured, that pt a frenche pryncce had deserved suche a generall pryce, pt shulde haue bene set out and atty- culed euery acte thereof, that it shuld haue contained a large woike, and the specialties thereof declared to theyr moost laude and honour. Then thys noble pryncce beyng thus in Icon, and dayly puttynge the Sarazyns to shame and greates domages, they seynge they myght not preuaile agayn hym by strength of battayl, call how they myghte destroy hym by treason and sente vnto hym a Sarazyne in the name of a messaunger, the whiche in tellynge of hys sayned message, wounded hym with a knyfe enuened, of the whiche wounde he laye longe or he were thereof cured. But after confessyon made by the Sarazyn of all hys compassed treason, he was put vnto cruel death.

In thys peare also syl downe the steaple of Saynte Marye Bowe in Chepe of London, and sicke women and chyliden.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxx

Gregory Rokkysle.

Thon Wyrtan Wyntener

Henry Waleys

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxii

Anno. lvi.

The lvi peare



And in the lvi. peare in the mooneth of Nouember at the parliament holden at Westmynster, the marchauntes of London and other places of England, complayned the to the kyng the coustille of Flaun-

ders had taken fro the certayne goodes amounting to a great sune. Whiche complainthe the king sent to her to make restitucon. But for no was had the king commaunded the al men bozne in the parties in England shuld be attested, the the goodes to be vnder sure keeping. By whiche meane in conclusio the sent ouer embassadours, and

The seventh part

94

and besought the kyng that his marches myght use their entercountes into Flaunders as they befoze times had done, and suche lossys as befoze was by them sustayned, shulde be recopened. And so sone after, an amptye betwene the kyng and her was concluded.

In this yere aboute the ende of Marche dyed Rycharde kyng of Almayne and Earle of Cornewall together to the kyng, and was buried at Bayles an abbaye of whyte munkes by hym befoze tyme builded, after he hadde bene kyng of Almayne by the tyme of .xv. yeres. But after the rebarsall made befoze in the .xxx. yere of this kyng Henry, he shuld reygne .xvi. yeres.

In the moneth of June, the monastyr of the Cypre in the cytie of Roympe was consumed wth fyre by reasone of a fraye made betwene seruantes of the abbay and some of the cytyzens of the cytie, whych grew to a great shympne, for the ppyour of the same and other of the muches purueyed souldiours, and helde the belfrays and the churche by force of armes, and threw out stones and darters and shot many arrowes by reaso wherof many of the towne were both wounded & slayne, whych broughte the commons and yong men in such a fure and madnesse, that they fyled

the gates, and after foyled the fyre wtrede and dyde wood, that the church wth the booke and all other ornaments of the same, and all houses of offyce belonging to the same abbaye, were cleane bynte and throwen downe, so that nothyng was preserued, excepte a litle chappel. Whan tydynge of this ryot came to the kynges knowledge, he was therewith greuously displeased, so that he rode thither sone after, and therewith ded questes to be charged of knyghtes and esquieres that dwelled in the country about, and to endyte al such persones as were occasioners and executers of that dede. By reasone of whiche inquerie, synallys were caste and iudged vpon the number of .xxx. yonge men of the towne, the whiche were after drawen to the place of execution and there hanged and bynte to the grate dyscomfytur and sorow of the cytyzens. For they thought the ppyoure of the place was the occasyoner of all that myschefe, whiche was bozne oute and defended by the byshoppe of Roympe than beyng named Roger. And this yere was byuers podygges and straunge tokes sene in dyuers places of Englande amonge the whiche at Grenwyche beynde London a lambe was penyed, hauynge two perfecte bodys wth all members, and but one heade.

The inquerie in Roympe for the ryot.

The persones condemned for the ryot

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxii

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxiii

By Walter Henry

Rycharde Darps

Anno. lxxx

John Bedp'il



In this .lxxx. yere of king Henry and begynnynge of the same, the kyng spekened, so that he was forced to kepe his bedde at

Westmynster, where he called befoze hym Sir Gilbert Clare Earle of Gloucester and caused hym to be newly sworn to kepe the peace of the lande to the behoofe of Edward his sonne and

The death of
Henry the .iii.
who reigned
lvi. yeres and
odde dayes

¶ Then dyed vpon the daye of saynts
Edmunde the Bpshoppe, on the .xvi.
daye of Nouember, and was buried
vppon the South syde of saynt Ed-
warde in Westmynster, when he had
reigned .lvi. yeres and .xxvii. dayes
leuyng after hym .lvi. Edwards be-
fozenamed for hys beyze, and Ed-
munde Crouchebacke. In a table ha-
ngynge vppon the tombe of the sayde
Henry are wyrtten these verses solo-
wyng.

*Tertius Henricus iacet hic pietatis amicus
Ecclesiam stravit istam, quam post renouauit
Reddat ei munus, qui regnat trinus et unus*

The whiche maye be Englyshed
as foloweth.

¶ The frende of pytie and almesse
dede

Henry the thyrde whylome of En-
glande kynge.

¶ Who this church brake, and after
hys mede

Agayne renetwed into hys fayre buyl-
dyng

¶ Nowe resteth in here, whiche dyd so
greate a thyng

¶ He yelde hys mede, that **L O R D E**
in deyte

¶ That as one God reighneth in person-
nes thre.

France

Francia



Lewis the .ix. of h
name and sonne
vnto the seconde
Philippe, begā
hys regne ouer
h realme of Fraū-
ce in the yere of
our Lorde a. M.
ii. C. xlii. and the .viij. yere of the .iii.
Henry then kynge of Englande.
¶ This Lewis was crownded at Bay-

Lewis the .ix.

French kynge

nes the .viij. daye of Auguste. By the
meane of Lewis as testyfyeth the
Frenche Cronicle, returned the blood
of Wyppen to the enherytaunce of the
crowne of Fraunce, whose name was
Isabell daughter of Bawdewyn ear-
le of Flenante, whiche Bawdewyn
was dyscended of Ermengaut, som-
tyme countesse of Ramoure, whiche
was daughter to Charlys Duke of
Lozayne, the whiche Charlys was
lynfullpe dyscended of Charlys the
Conquerour that was sonne of Char-
lys Martellus the sonne of Pepyn.

¶ When this Lewis had passed the
solempnyte of hys coronacyon, he
made a vyage into h country of Poy-
tyers, and there wanne from the En-
glyshe men certayne castels and tow-
nes, as befoze in the .x. yere of Henry
the thyrde is touched. The whiche vy-
age by hym synnyshed, he at the contē-
placyon and prayer of kynge Ihon
kynge of Jerusalem, rode vpon hym
the crosse to warre vpon the Turkes
and after all thynges for that vyage
made redye, passed wyth his hoost by
Burgys and Aenens, and so to Lyon
and fro Lyon to Autignon the whiche
for dysobedience to the church of Ro-
me had stand accursed vpo the tyme
of .viij. yeres. But wher as king Lew-
is supposed he shulde haue passed w
his people as he had passed the other
cytees, the cytezens closed the gates
agayne hym, and woulde not suffer
hym nor his to come wthin the cytee
¶ Wherefoze the kynge commaunded
assaute to be made, and so contynued
there hys seyge tyl the myddle of Au-
guste, the whiche was begon aboute
the ende of Nouember, and lost there
many of hys men, among the whiche
Superle of s. Paule a man of greate
same was one, wyth the byshope of
Lemeryk and other to the number of
two

The seventh parte

95.

two. 99. or thereabout. Where with
thys Lewis was so amoured, that he
made a solempne othe, that he wolde
not departe thence tyll he had wonne
the towne.

When þ the rulers of the towne
had knowledge of the kinges anowe
and promise that he had made, they
toke aduylment, and shortly after
sente vnto the kynge. ii. noble men of
the cytee to entreate and common of
peace. But peace was to them bitter-
ly denyed, excepte they wolde submit
themy wholly to the correccion of the
bysshop of Rome, and after to stande
to the kinges dome, for dyspleasure
done agayne hym. In þ ende though
thys condycyon were greatly agayne
theyr mynde, it was lastly agreed vn-
to, & the kynge wth hys people was
receaued into the cytee. And after he
had rested hym there a season, that þ
cytezens had agreed them wth the
bysshoppe of Romes legate, and recea-
ued of hym absolucyon, wth a newe
bysshop named Peter Corbio of the. b.
of Romes eleccion than Gregore the
ix. with other thinges done acordyng
to the sayde. B. of Romes commaun-
dement: Then kynge Lewis comaun-
ded first the dyches of þ towne to be
fylled playne with the grounde. And
that done, he caused to be caste vnto
the earth. iii. C. of the sayeste houses
of the cytee. And after certayne sum-
mes of monye by hi receaued toward
hys charge, he departed thence tow-
arde Cholutse, and there by aduice
of hys barony, for so much, as wy-
nter was towarde, he retourned into
Fraunce, & so sped hym on hys iour-
ney, that vpon the euen of all Sayn-
tes he came to a place called Mount
Bauncer in the prouynce of Aluerne
where he was taken wth stronge sy-
kenesse, and dyed wthyn. iiii. dayes

after, whose corpes with great honour
was conueyed vnto Saynt Denys,
and there buried by his father, when
he had reigned. iii. yeres, leuyng af-
ter hym a sonne, the which is now na-
med L. Lewis, and was than of þ age
of. xii. yeres or neare thereabout.

The death of
Lewis the. ix.



Lewis the. x. of that
name surnamed. S.
Lewis, and sonne of
the. ix. Lewis laste
kynge beganne hys
reigne ouer the land
of Fraunce in the mo-

Lewis the. x.

nth of November, and yere of grace
iii. C. and. xvi. and the. x. yere of He-
rye the thyrde then kynge of Englad
The whiche for hys tenderesse of
youth, was thoughte insuffycient to
take so great a charge, and specially
of the duke of Bytaine than named
Peter Hancer, the whiche encensed
and styred manye noble men agayne
the sayd Lewis. But at length by pro-
uysyon of quene Blanch hys mother
and other Loydes, he subdued hys e-
nymes, and at Raynes was crowned
in þ moneth of December folowinge
of the Byshoppe of Soylons, for so
much as at that tyme the sea of Ray-
nes was bope.

The. iiii. yere of hys reygne and
of hys age. xvi. he buylded the house
of religioun called Rojan mount, and
set therein monkes of Cysleaur ordre
whiche Monkes, and endewed them
wth ryche posselions.

It was not longe after that great
barraunce fell betwene the vniuersi-
tye of studpentes of Paris and the cy-
tezens of the same, in suche wyse that
þ studientes were in purpose to haue
lefte the cytee, and to haue kept theyr
study elles wher. Of the whiche strife
the frenche booke expelseth not the
cause

A barraunce
betwene the cy-
tezens of Paris
& the vniuersi-
tye of Paris

cause, but sayeth that the kyng made good speche to agree the, for so much as kyng Henry of Englad had made labour to þe sayde studentes to come into his country, & to inhabyte them there wth many greute pꝑꝛuelegys. But in conclusion the frech king, so entreated the that they agreed to rest there styl. And that of a congruence, for they myght dwel in no land, wher they shuld moze surelpe be defended. For þe king of Fraunce bereth the flour de Lize for one of that causes, that is to say: for to defende the clargy. And the sayth of Chyꝛst betokeneth þe myꝑꝛ die leef. And the .iii. betokeneth Chyꝛ ualꝛy. So that by the Chyꝛ ualꝛy the clargy is defended, which mayntayn the sayth of the holy church. Aboute this season kyng Lewys maryed to hys fere Margarete the daughter of the Earle of Bourgne. Soone after the matrimony was solemnised, fre deryke the seconde befoze in the stoꝛy of Henry the .iii. myꝑꝛnded Emperour of Almanye, sente vnto Lewis requyringe hym that he wolde mete hym at a place called Alcolour, to þe ende that he myghte common wth hym: whych request kyng Lewys accep- ted, & wth a goodly company kepte there hys daye of meting. But whan the Emperour was ware that he was comon thither wth such a company he sayned hym syche, and broke hys apoyntment. Wherefoze the French men construed, that if the kyng had comon thither wth a small oꝛ weke company, he wolde haue conueyed hi into bygh Almanye, and ther to haue kepte hym tyl he had of hym hys ple- sure, concernynge the warre betwene kyng Henry and him, oꝛ in other thin- ges. But when kyng Lewys espyed the delucion of the Emperour, he the returned into Fraunce. It was not

long after that the kyng was enfour- med of the obstynacy of the Albygen- sy, the which of long tyme had bene effected with dyuers poyntes of her- sy, and many times reconciled by the kinges of Fraunce and other, and yet fallen agayne to the sayde erroure, wherfoze the kinge sent vnto spꝛ John Beawmoute the whiche toꝛned vn to theym, chargynge hym to enuade that couꝛtry, and to wast and destrope it, tyl he had forced theym to restore to the church such goodes as they be- fore had taken from it, and ouer that to cause theym to make amendes to the good chꝛyꝛten people, whych they harmed by the meanes of theyꝛ rapp- nes and extorcyōs. Upon which com- maundemente thus frome the kyng receaued the sayde John with a com- petente number of knyghtes entred the sayde country, and layde sege to a stronge castell named Mount Roy- all. And after manye fozte assautes wanne the sayde castell and manned it wth Frenchemen. And than yode to another strong holde than named Saggos, and there lyke wise ordered the same. And after walling the cou- trye, wanne from theym many tow- nes and holdes, so that in the ende he forced þe chiefe rulers of that pꝛouince to obey theym to all hys bestes, and deliuered to hym suretyes oꝛ hosta- ges, for the pꝛefourmance of þe same. So that he returned into Fraunce, wth great pompe and honoure, and receaued of the kyng at hys home comynge greute thanke, wth manye ryche gyftes. Aboute the .xv. yere of kyng Lewys, the warre was quiche- ned betwene thys Lewys and Henry the .iii. than kyng of Englande, for causes befoze shewed in the .xvi. yere of the sayde Henry. And after that warre as there is shewed ended, the kyng

The flour de
Lize

The whiche
was called
wꝛth

War betwene
Henry the .iii.
& Lewis the .x.

kyng, whiche was towarde the cytye of Lyon to haue byspected Innocent the fourth, whiche thither was fled for feare of Frederike the soynamed Emperoure, was taken with a synne named dysenteria of the flur. Wherwith he was so greuously vexed, that he laye longe at a towne called Popontopie, and was in greatese perard of lyfe, where lastly it came vnto his mynde, that yf it pleased God to restore hym to his helthe, he wolde make a voyage into the holy lande, & there warre vpon Chythes enemies. After whiche promyse solemnly auowed, he mended dayly, and was sone after restored vnto his helthe. When the kyng was recovered and returned vnto Paris, he called a councell of spirytual and tempozall, and there shewed vnto theym of the promyse whiche he had made, requyring them of theyr assystance and ayde, wherein he founde his lordes were agreeable.

And in the time and season þat propousyon was made for that iourney, the kyng with a goodlye compaignie rode vnto the abbey of Cluny, to bysyt the foresayde Innocent the .iiii. & he taried with hym .xv. dayes. And after his matter with hym spedde, wth playne remission to hym graunted, & all other that kept with hym that voyage he returned into Fraunce. And vpon wyssonday folowynge, he kepte a greate court of his landes at Melun where in presence of them, he called before hym Beatrice daughter vnto the earle of Bourgoigne and syster to the Quene his wyfe, and there gaue her in marriage vnto Charles his brother, and made hym there knyght, w many other for his loue. And the daye folowynge he gaue vnto the said Charles the earldom of Anion, with the lordshyppe of Mayn, And soone

after he rode to Paris, where he assembled many of his lordes to holde with hym his iourney.



he fyd day folowynge the feast of Penthecost, in þe yere of our lord, .xii. C. & .xlvi. and the .xxii. yere of the reigne of the said Lewis he with many of his lordes departed from Paris vpon his iourney toward the holy lande. In which was croised also the archbishops of Bourges, and of Raynes, the bishoppes of Laon, of Oyleaunce, & of Beauuais the earles of Artoys, of saynt Paule, of Blois, of Barre, of Harche, and of Mountfozte, wth many other noble men whiche were longe to rehearce. With the whiche compaignie the king passed thowghe Burgoyne, and so to Lion þat uttermost border of Fraunce where þe king found at þe time the forenamed Innocent þe .iiii. whiche there taried for feare of þe emperour Frederike.

When þe kyng a season had there taried wth the byshop of Rome, he sent forth the batwe warde of his host toward the place called Aque Mort. And shortly after folowed hym selfe with þe rest of his people. But certayne of his batward passynge by a castel called the Roche of Elyn, were spoyled & robbed, and some slayne. Wherof the kyng beyng enformed, charged his knyghtes to assaute the sayde castell. The whiche was done, & the shuldours hanged, & the castel made plaine with the grounde. And after he helde on his way tyll he came to þe foresayde porte of Aque Mort of the deade sea, where he toke shipinge, and so sayled forth vpon Battylme we even of the .xxiii. daye of Auguste, and landed after in the prouince of Cypre, where he taried all the wynter folowynge, for some parte of his host that

as yet was behynde. Wherof the king
he was sorowfully receyued, and at his
departing thence, kepte company with
hym in the same iourney. But there
fortune began to frowne vpon kinge
Lewys. For in the tyme of his there tra-
uelling, muche of his people slykened &
died. Amonge the whiche, passed to
God these menne of name folowynge
the byshoppe of Bauuais, the earles
of Mountford, of Barre, and of Wen-
dosme, with diuers other to the num-
ber of two. C. xl. When kynge Lewys
not all without troubles, as dysen-
sions amonge his people, and daun-
ger of takynge of the sea, had passed
the wynter and a parte of the begyn-
nyng of the yere, lastly aboute Try-
myte sondaye he toke shippynge at the
porte of Cypre then named Domme-
ton or Dommesson, and landed nere
vnto the cytie of Damasse or Damp-
et the fypdaye after. When the Chry-
sten hoste were comen nere vnto the
porte of Damasse, the kynge caused
them to be shipped in small vesselles
and so in order to saile or row toward
the cytie. But the Sarazens beynge
ware of theyr comynge, issued oute
of the cytie, and defended the porte vi-
gourously, so that many a chrysten man
was slayne at that recounter. But in
the ende the discomfytur turned v-
pon the Sarazens. For the chiefe
capitayne of the towne with two Ad-
myrallles were there slayne, and ma-
ny of theyr knyghtes. Then they
gaue backe vnto the towne, and suf-
fered the chrysten to lande. The kynge
then pyghte his paupers, & streng-
thed his felde for sodayne breakynge
oute of the Turkes, and so rested hym
and his people the sondaye and moun-
daye folowynge.

As faste as the chrysten made pro-
uisyon to order for theyr sure lyeng in

the felde, so faste the Turkes wythin
the towne made purveyaunce to con-
ueye suche goodes as they might oute
of the cytie, and lastely sette the hou-
ses on fyre, and vopded unknowinge
vnto the chrysten hoste. At none as the
flambe of the fyre appered, the chry-
sten men withoute resistance entred the
cytie and quenched the fyre, and after
possessed the cytie. Here I passe ouer
certaine legacions and messages sent
fro a pryncer of the Orient vnto kynge
Lewys, wherewith appereth moze fame
of wordes then of thynges of trouth.
Then the temples and synagoges of
the cytie were halowed and occupied
to chrysten mennes vse. And there the
kynge with his hoste rested hym tyll
the moneth of Nouember folowynge,
in the whiche season came vnto hym
the earle of Doytters with a fayre co-
pany. Then kynge Lewys with his
people departed from Damasse the xx.
daye of Nouember, by the ruer of Si-
lus, passynge with small vesselles to-
ward a stronge hold called Haffour
whither at length they came to great
daunger. Howe be it they myghte not
come nere vnto the towne to lay their
spege thereunto, bycause of a ruer
there runnyng named Chanops or
Chanoes. Wherfore the kynge pyght
his paulyons betwene the sayde ru-
er and the ruer of Sylus.

In this whyle the chrysten hoste
was thus lodged, word was brought
vnto the kynge that the Sowdan of
Babylon was deade, the whiche be-
fore his death had prouided a greate
hoste to be sente into Egypte to with-
stand the chrysten hoste, and had comit-
ted the rule therof vnto an hardy and
valiaunt Turke named Saphardin.
The whiche with a greate people,
came downe to his towne of Haff-
four or Haffour, & there dayly made
assaultes

The seventh parte.

assaultes vpon the chrysten hoste, so þæt betwene theym were had many bykeringes and skymishes to both damages. Lastly the kyng aduertysing in his mynd that he might nothing bere the Sarazens, withoute he myghte passe the ryuer of Chanoy, concluded by the aduysce of his maryners to make a bydye of shippes together, in suche wyse that a passage was made for his knyghtes.

When the Turkes espyed this ordynance, and apperceined well that yf the chrysten hoste had passed that ryuer, it shulde be to theyr greete dysauantage, anone with all ordynance and wot that they myghte make, they did the bettermoste of their powers to let the perpyng of this bydye and passage of the chrysten hoste. And to this fyl an other contraryte vnto the chrysten. For the water of that ryuer whiche was boode and depe was so troublous of wawe, that the bydye therwith was all to shaken, and dangerous to stande on.

But these Turkes entendinge to damage the Chrysten, left a certayne to defend the passage, while the other by a foode or passage vnknewen to þæt chrysten men, came ouer the ryuer, and assaulted the frenchemen egerly, so þæt there was betwene theym foughten a cruell batayle. Howe be it thowoughe deuine power of god, þæt Turkes were ouerset, and many of them slaine and taken. The which batayle was foughten vpon the .xx. dape of Januarie. But yet myghte not the chrysten wyne ouer the ryuer. For dayly þæt strengthe of the countreys there neare, came downe and fortifyed the hoste of the Sarazens more and more.

The dape folowynge the Purification of oure Ladye, blew suche a tempeste of wynde, that it dyd muche

harme bothe vnto the shippes, and also to the tentes and paulions of þæt chrysten hoste. And with that scarpyte of bytaye beganne to appere, so þæt the kyng determined to retourne agayne vnto Damasse.



When the Turkes espyed þæt retourne of the frenchemen they ordyned .iiii. barges of such lyke vessels, and stuffed them with pitch, rosin grece, and other lyquet and byrenning stuffe, and in the night sodenly brought theim abode where the chrysten shote laye, and then caste on them Gyckyspye, the whiche anone sette them in a lyght fyre. By reason wherof the chrysten shote was in great leopardy, and with greate labour preserved froms byrennyng.

For thys despyte that the Sarazens had done vnto the chrysten, the kyng was so therwith amoued, þæt he saide and promysed that he wolde not departe thence tyll he had done to the Turkes some displeasure. And vpon enquisicion made, he was enfourmed of a passage of foode, þæt was wythin .iii. myles of his paulion. Wherupon he called a conseil of his lordes, and shewed to them his purpose, geuing to þæt earle of Artoies the leding of his foce ward, and charged hym þæt when he were passed the foode, þæt he shuld tary there till the other deale of the host were ouer passed. When all thinges was orderyd to the kynges mynde, the sayde earle with his company set forthward and passed the sayde foode withoute daunger, and there forgettyng what to hym was befoze comaunded of the king, set forth incontynently towarde the Turkes, which he wel knew kept the place where þæt bydye was befoze made. And there foughte with theym .ii. whiche

whiche were all unpardoned, and unknowne of his sodayne commynge. Wherfoze he slew many of them, and after chased the other, whiche for socoure fledde vnto the cite of Bassour forreslapde, whome he folowed so egerly, that in the entreynge of the cite he entred with them, & there was slayne with a certayne of his knyghtes. By reason wherof the soldours of the towne were so encoraged, that they issued out vpon the chrysten and dyaue them backe till they sawe the kynges power come, and then retourned vnto the Cytie and shutte wth strength the chrysten gates.

Then kynge Lewys beyng ascertayned of the sayde earles deathe, made for hym greate dole. And after prouysyon made for the lodgyng of his people, he then made dyuers bygges & passages ouer the riuer of Chanoules. And for the chrysten hoste shuld be assured from the sodayne and vnware assautes & reprochis of the infidelites, therfoze he closed them within a strength of a dyche & pale, that they enemies might no way haue waie in to them, and named þe strength a park. In the whiche the chrysten hoste there lodged all the season of Lent.

In the which time þe sowe dan came downe with a great host of people. And for he myghte not lodge his people within the towne, therfoze he made an other like parke vnto the chrysten men, & there closed his people so that betwene the chrysten and them was manye conflyctes and assautes, somtyme to the losse of that one, and este to the losse of that other. But the Sowdane made all the meanes þe myght to kepe bytalle from the Chrysten hoste, & stopped all the passages betwene Damasse & theim, that from thence they myght haue no socour. By

meane wherof dysraies & sykkenesse spyl amonge the chrysten, so that they dyed hougely.

When kynge Lewys was ware of these mysertes on euery syde, he sente to the Sowdane to haue a tuce for a certayne tyme. But in conclusyon none wolde be to him graunted. Wherfoze of necessite he was forced to byk his felde, and with as good polycy as he myghte dreyne hym to the ryuer of Aplus, & so by wypp passed downe by the sayde ryuer towarde Damasse. But he passed not far o; þe he was assauted on euery syde, so that the fight contynued still without ceasing, to þe greate losse of the chrysten hoste.

Then lastely came the Sowdane with a freshe company, and beset the kynge so aboute, þe in the ende he was taken with his .ii. byethen Charles & Robert, the earle of Portygers, & earle of Angeou, the earle of Flaunders, & duke of Bytayne, the earle of Dorsons. And in the fight was slayn, & by woppes of Langrees, & of Dorsons with many other of whome þe names be not put in writpage.

When kynge Lewys was thus taken he was spke. Wherfoze with all dilgencce the Sowdan comaunded hym to be conueied vnto Bassour, & after caused all þe other of his men to be slayne as many as were wounded o; spke, except they were men of great fame, by whome greate aduantage might tise by reason of theyr raunsoe. And thus was the chrysten hoste take and spoiled of the Sarazains þe thurdaye nexte folowpng the feast of Easter, in the yere of our lord. M.ii. C. i. and þe .xxiii. yere of the regne of this kynge Lewys. The whiche after with the other of þe nobles of Fraunce were sente vnto Babilon o; Cayre, & there kepte in sondry prysons.

In

The seventh parte.

1074

In a processe of tyme it was agreed, that kyng Lewis shulde be deliuered frome prisson and conueyed saule into the handes of chrystendome upon condycion þe shulde gyfte render and geue vp into the Sowdane power the cite of Damasse, with all suche prissoners as he had of Turkes and Sarazins at that daye in his power, and ouer þe he shuld paye by a certayne day a certayne summe of besaundes, whiche after þe frenche booke shulde be. viii. M. besaundes Sarazin. But Peter Dystrop sayeth. iii. C. M. Besaundes. Of these Besaundes I haue learned there shulde be. ii. That one is called a Besaunde Imperpal, and the other a Besaunde Ducal. The Besaunde Imperpal is worth. l. ducates and the Ducall Besaunde is worth the xx. ducates. A ducate whiche is named a ducat de Camera, is worth. iiii. s. viii. d. A ducat Papall & Ventspan be of lesse value, as. iii. d. o. iiii. d. in a pece. Then yf his raunsome be esteemed after the imperiall Besaunde, he payde after the rate of. iiii. s. vi. d. the ducate, and after the summe of. viii. M. Besaundes, in sterlyng money lxxx. M. pound. And for this þe Sowdane promysed to deliuer all suche prissoners as he had in his prisons of chrysten menne. But in that he brake promysse, for of. xii. thousande he deliuered scarse. iii. In this tyme of takinge of the frenche kyng, a compaignie of yonge men assembled them togpyther in fraunce, and vnder their capitayne, whiche toke vpon him lyke a byshop, passed by Darys and Oyleaunce & other good towne of fraunce sayenge that they wold restore þe kyng to hys lyberte.

But lastely when they dyete nere vnto the porte of the deade sea, where

they shoulde haue taken shyppyng, there they fell to all thester and auoutrye. Wherfore the people of that costrey sette vpon them, and slew the capitayne and the moze parte of their company where thozoughe that symple feleshyp whiche named them selfe Sheperdes, was disseuered and sparkeled. When this kyng Lewis was deliuered from the daunger of his enemies, & was brought out of Egypt into Spye, he there executed manye dedes of charyte and of mekenesse, and repayed the cite of Joppen and other standyng vpon the sea syde, & from thens wente on pylgrimage vnto Nazareth, and to the mounte of Chaboz. And when he was retourned vnto Joppen, he receyued there tydings of þe death of dame Blanch his mother. Where after dyuers obseruaunces and prayes done for the soule of his mother, he toke there shyppyng, & sayled toward fraunce. And not wythout trauaple and trouble of the sea, at the end of. xii. weekes he landed in þe haven of Martiloz Martyl and so sped hys iourney that he came to Darys, in the pere of our Lorde. xii. hundred and. lxxi. and the. vi. pere after that he toke vpon him the voyage where, of the ctyzens he was receyued with mozte honoure and gladnes. And there callinge a counsell, he resourmed many thinges for the weale of his realme, & made one law whiche is spectallie remembred, that is that no man beynge in anchoyte of anye hyghe offyce, as Prouost, Pretour, or any lyke offyce, shoulde be any landes or rentes within that lordshyppe that he had rule of. And for that cause that he shulde not extorte or wronge, or be such landes the better chepe by reason of his might or power.

At this daye the Prouost or chancel
ii. iii. c. lvi

The frenche
kyng against
deliuered.

Imperpal
young men

rule of offyce was in the handes of cytezens of Paris, by reason of a seale therof made vnto theym by the kyn- ges progenitours. By meane wher- of many iniuries and wronges were done vnto the comon people, and ma- ny thevys and other transgressours by fauoure and money passed unpun- ished. Wherof this blessed kyng Le- wis beyng enfourmed vpon suffici- ent proofe made, dyscharged the cyte- zens thereof, and assygned a man na- med Stephan Boile in that offyce, assygnynge to hym perely a certayne styppende for executing of that offyce, and ordeyned that euer after, the wo- uost of Paris shuld be named by the kyng and his heires kynges.

The good
lawes made
by Lewis the
Frenche kynge

He also made ordynaunces to a- uoyde strumpettes oute of the cyte, and punysshemente for all accustoma- ble greates swearers, with many other good ordynaunces & lawes, the which I passe ouer for lengthing of tyme.

In this tyme and season were aby- ding in Fraunce in a place called saint Nicholas de Bois. iiii. childzen boyme in flaundres, the whiche were sente thither to learne þ maner of Fraunce and also to teache the chyldzen of a knyghte named syr Guillim de Buz to shote. These chyldzen vpon a seaso passed þ boundes of the abbey ground and entred the warrapne of a lord of Fraunce called Enguerran, lord of Coucy, and there chased & shote at co- nies for theyr dysporte. The whiche were there taken of the seruauntes of the sayde Enguerran, & presented to theyr lord, þ which of basy cruclenes caused the. iiii. chyldzen without ppye to be hanged. Wherof herpyng the ab- bot of S. Nicholas, complained him wpyth the assyssence of the forsaied syr Guillim vnto the king. The which incontynently sent to the said Enguer-

Cruelnesse.

ran charging him to apere before his baroun, to answer to such maters as there shulde be laide vnto his charge. Wher in the end after many reason- for hym layde, he by great instance of his frendes was pardoned of the gre- uous offence wpyth condicpon folow- yng, þ is to meane first he shulde paye vnto the kyng. x. M. pound of Paris money, which is to meane. xii. C. xl. li. sterling. And ouer that he shulde war- vpon goddes enemies in Spytia by þ space of. iiii. yeres contynually, vpon his owne cost & charge. And thpydely he shulde bulde a chapel wherin two prestes shulde spyn for euer, for þ sou- les of þ said infauntes. And after may- ster Sagwin, with the forsaied. x. M. pound and other aide of the kyng, the hospytall in Paris named the house of god in Pontopse, wpyth the frapet of the seere minours of grape seeres in Paris were made and repayred.

The frapet
of the
house of god
in Paris.

Then after many dedes of chary- tie done by this vertuous Prynce, as making of diuers houses of religyon seruinge of the pooze people with his owne handes, with fastinges & other infinite dedes of pitpe, he lastly in the xxxiii. yere of his reigne honozably re- ceived Henry the. iii. then kyng of En- glande, & stablyshed with him a peace as befoze in the. xliii. yere of þ reigne of the sayde Henry is declared.

A peace
between
Henry the. iii.
and Lewis
the. x. French
kyngs.

And that done, he in the. xxxvi. yere of his reygne, married his eldest sonne Philippe vnto Isabell the daughter of James kyng of Aragon. By rea- son of whiche maryage, the frenche kyng gaue ouer to the sayde James, all suche ryght as he had in the lord- shippes of Belac, Dampierre, Roussellon, and Barsellon. And the sayde James acquyted & gaue ouer to Le- wys, all suche ryght and ttle as he had in the Lordshippes of Carcasson, of

The seventh part

103

of Bygoire, and of Anslly.

And soone after he sente Charlys
hys brother at the request of the.iii.
Alexander then b. of Rome, into Cy-
cilia with a great powre, to withstand
the violence of Manfred sonne of
Frederike the.ii. than Emperour, the
whiche agayne ryghte withelde that
kyngdome fro the church of Rome.
Wher Charles after long fyght at a
place named Bonenut, slew in battel
and after was made king of the sayd
countrey by auctorite of the sayde
Alexander, payinge yearly vnto the
church of Rome. xl. M. ducates, which
is moche lyke after the rate of sterling
mony. viii. M. vi. C. lxvi. li. xiii. s. iiii.
d. every ducat accepted at. iiii. s. iiii. d.



Let so after, that in the
xlii. yere of kyng Lewys
Clement the.iii. of that
name, sente a Legate vn-
to Lewis, requyring him
to ayde the chrysten whych in Siria,
were greuously warred wth Tur-
kes and Sarazins. At whose request
the kyng called a counsaile, wherein
it was agreed þat socour shuld be made
wherfore the kyng wth hys. iiii. so-
nes, Dhypp, Jhon, a Peter, toke on
them the crosse. And in the fyrst daye
of Maye, the yere of hys regne. xliii.
he wth hys sayde sonnes and many
other lordes of fraunce as wel spry-
tuall as temporell, departed frome
Paris, and from thence roade vnto
Cluny, wher he rested hym. iiii. dayes
And fro thence sped hys journey tyll
he came to the fozenamed port of the
deed sea. Where met wth hym a car-
dynall and legate of Rome, wth dy-
uers other Bishoppes of fraunce,
the kyng of Nauerne, þat dukes sonne
of Bytayne, Alphons Earle of Por-
tugers the Earles of Artoys and of

Flaunders, wth manye other.

And whyle the kyng wth hys hoost
lay at the sayd port carrying a conue-
nient wynd, a dyssencion sprang betwene
the Catholikes and the men of By-
ouince, so that amonge the was fough-
ten such a skymish, that betwene the
was slaine vpon a. C. men and many
mo wounded of the strepe myghte be
all sealed.

Soone after the kyng wth hys
Lordes toke shippynge, and sayled
wth greute daunger of tempest, tyll
lastly he came to þe yle of Sardynes
where the chrysten hoost rested them
a season, and after kepte their course
tyl they came to the porte of Chunys
of Cartage. þat xliii. daye of the moneth
of Julie, where they rested in theyre
shippes that nyghte. Vpon the moorne
whan they shulde lande, all the porte
was beset wth Turkes and insyde-
les, whych shot dardes and castle sto-
nes, to the greauaunce of the chrysten
hoost, so that they warne lande wth
greute dyfficultye and payne.

Whan the kyng was landed, he
lodged hys people, and after sente to
searche for freshe water to refresh
hys hoost. In whych meane whyle the
Admyral of the kynges nauye came
vnto the kyng, requyring hi to haue
a certayne of knyghtes assigned vn-
to hym, trustyng in god to wyne short-
ly the towne. And so sped him, and as-
saured the towne.

But a none as the captayne of the
towne was ware of theyr comynge
he wth a greute company issued out
of the towne, and forsed the chrysten
hoost to geue back. Wherfore kyng
Lewys sent the Marchal of hys hoost
wth a certayn number of knyghtes
to socoure the sayde Admyral, and in
tyme of the fyght, gatte betwene the
Sarazyns and the towne, so þat whyle
some

The taking
of Tunis

Some foughte wth the Turkes the
other wanne the towne, wherof the
Turkes being ware, fled sone after
but not without greute slaughter of the
fo: after that fyghte, many of them
whych escaped fro the battayle, were
after slayne in Cauernys and holes
wher they hyd them in the grounde.
Whan the towne of Cartage o: Thunys
was by the chrysten thus wonne
anone the kynge commaunded the
deade bodyes to be caste out, and the
towne to be closed of all o: dours and
fylthes. And when all was doone as
the kynge had commaunded, he then
entred the towne, and lodged wthin
as manye as the towne wolde holde.
And the other he fortifyed wth dy-
ches and other strengthes, to preserue
them from they: enemyes, and so tar-
ried there the commynge of Charles
hys brother and kynge of Cyprisa. It
was not longe after that the cytee o:
towne was wonne, but that the kynge
of Thunis with a great host of Tur-
kes came neare to the towne, & made
howys & offers, but they abode not
therby. One day the Earle of Artois
in one company, and a knight called
sy: Peter Cabellanc in another com-
pany, gatte betwene the sea and the
Turkes that they were compelled to
fyghte, so that betwene theym was a
cruell fyghte, and many slayne vpon
both sydes. But in the ende the Tur-
kes were dyscomfyted and chased to
they: hyppes. In thys fyghte were
slayne .ii. Chrysten knyghtes, named
le Chastlayn and sy: Ihon de Bons-
soplers. After thys battayle o: fyghte
the Sarazyns made no great assau-
tes. But then by reason of the vnholi-
somnes of that countrey, sykkenes fyl
among the chrysten hood, so that the
people dyed fast. And shortly after þ
kynge was taken wth suche a slype,

and therewith an ague that he kepte
hys bedde. And after the fyghtes of
the church taken, and certayne mony
cyons geuen to hys sonne Phylippe
howe he shulde be haue hym in guy-
dyng of the realme of Fraunce, know-
inge the houre of deathe appoched,
charged suche as were aboute hym,
that they shulde laye hym vpon a bed
of ashes and powdye. Where he so ly-
inge a season in prayer expyed, the
daye folowynge saint Bartholomeus
daye, o: the .xxv. daye of August, whē
he had reygned .xliiii. yeaeres lacking
ii. monethes, leupng after him the .iii.
fozenamed sonnes, Phylipp, Ihon, &
Peter. Then the bowels were buried
in Cyprisa, and the body embawmed
wth ryche opyntementes, was carped
vnto saynte Denys of Fraunce, and
there, with greute reuerence entetred



Phylip the thyrde
of that name, &
sonne of Lewis
begā hys regne
ouer the realme
of Fraunce þ .xxvi.
daye of the moo-
neth of Septem-

ber, in the yere of oure Lord .M. .ii. C.
lxx. and the .liiii. yere of Henry the .iii.
than kynge of Englande, and began
then as befoze is shewed in Africa,
at the towne o: cytye of Thunys o:
Cartage, accompanied with Charles
hys vncle kynge of Cyprisa, the whych
came to the port of Thunis the same
daye that kynge Lewis dyed, and af-
ter tarried there and had many con-
flictes wth the Turkes, and bare
hym so manfullye, that in the ende he
forsoke the kynge of Thunys to seeke
to hym for peace. The whych was co-
cluded for .x. yeaeres, wth certayne co-
dycons of payinge of certayne mo-

nys

The seventh parte

109

ney for the kyng of Fraunce costes and certayne trowages of olde tyme due vnto the kyng of Cypryl yearly to be paid with many other articles concernynge the same peace whiche I passe ouer.

After whych peace concluded and assured, the kynges of Fraunce and Cypryl tooke shypinge at the sayde porte of Chunys, and sayled toward thei countres wth great daunger of tempest of the sea, and in processe of tyme landed in Cypryl, where Philippe wth greute reuerence and obseruance in mounte Royall buried the bowelles of hys father. And that done he tooke hys iourneys toward Fraunce through Italy. In whiche iourney dyed Ilabell hys wyfe, with manye other of the number of .iii. and mo.

Lastly the kyng came vnto the cytee of Upterbe, where the cardynales and other spiritual men were in consaile for the chosynge of a newe bishoppe of Rome. For at that time the sea was voyde by the deathe of Clement the .iiii. But that ellection was so diuers, that two yeres expyed or they myghte agree vpon a newe papo. And then they agreed vpon Theobald archibishop of Landenise named after the .x. Gregoie.

Frome Upterbe the kyng rode to the mounte of Flastone, and so ouer to the countrey of Tuscayne, and so to the mount of Bergue, and then to the cyte of Florence and from thence to Bolosing le Gzeisse and from thence to Cremorgne, where the kynges of cytters were not all wel intreated. In recompensmente whereof the mayr and burghes of that towne presented the kyng wth .vi. steades trapped in clothe of sylke and other presentes whiche the kyng wth curteisie and

thankful wordes refused. Then fro thence the kyng departed to Applan and frome Applan to Innergeaur, & so to Busane a cytee of Sauoy, and after passed the mountaynes, and so into the valyes of Moypen, and from thence tourned toward to the cyte of Lions vppon Rosne, and so to the cytee of Baston in Burgoyne, and passed the countrey till they came to the abbay of Cluny, and from thence into the countrey of Champayn and so to the cytee of Trops, and frome thence passed the countres, till he came to the lordshype of Paris, and so into the cytee of Paris.

Here I passe ouer the great prouysson made by the cytezens of Paris for the receauynge of thei prynces, that is to meane, the corps of Lewis and thei naturall pryncce Philippe hys sonne, and of the obseruances doone, and great assemblies of the lordes spirytual and temporell to welcome thei pryncce, & doinges of thei duties euery man accordynge to honoure. But after all these ceremonies in due honoure fynished, prouysson was made for the coronacyon of the kyng. The whych was crowned at the cytee of Ra pnes, vppon the daye of the Assumpcion of oure Ladye, in the yere of grace. M.ii.C.lxxi.



Soztly after that the solemnytie of this coronacio was passed, kige Philippe for hys recreacyon rode vnto the countrey of Hermendoyse. Where after he had rested him a season, Robert earle of Artois requyred him to vlyte his countrey. Where he was receaued of the burghes of Artoys wth great honoure and gladnes, and there was feasted wth al dyspoyt and gladnes

A cer.

a certayne of tyme after. The whych expyed, he returned into France.

About the thyrde yere of hys regne, the Earle of Forys contrarie to hys pleasure, toke party again Gerarde a knyghte and Loyde of the castell of Casseboun or Casseboun, the whiche before had slayne the brother of the earle of Armenac special frend of the sayde Earle of Forys. Whiche said two Earles to reuenge the death of theyr sayd brother, pursued the sayd Gerarde so narrowly, that for hys sauegard he refused hys owne castell, and fled vnto a castell of the kynges, and there helde hym wth hys wyfe, chylde, and substance. But when the ii. Earles were ware therof, they sped them thither wth theyr powers and layde siege to the castell, and in the end threw it downe to the ground, & slew all the souldyours that there found as wel the kynges seruantes as other, hopinge to haue founde theyr enemye Gerarde, the whych was escaped thence secretly.

When the rumoure of this dede came vnto the kyng, he dysdained soze that dede, and toke it ryght greuouse. In so muche, that he called hys lordes, and by theyr counsaile assembled his knyghtes, and entered wth force the pryncesse of the erle of Forys. The whiche herynge of the kynges great dyspleasure, fortifyed hys castell and there helde hym. The whych was so besette wth rockes of stone, that the kyng myghte not wynn to go wth ease. Wherefore the kyng commaunded the rockes to be cutte wth masons and other workemen & made a solempne othe, that he wold not departe thence, or he had the earle and hys castell at hys pleasure.

When the Earle had beholden the great powre of hys enemyes, and the

pryncesse of the kyng to wyne his castell wth other seopardies he made meanes to the kyng for grace and finally put hym and hys, into hys mercy. Then the kyng commaunded hym to be bound, and so to be conuoyed to the castell of Beauquesu, where he was imprisoned by an whole yere after. And the kyng sealed all hys landes, and sette a certayne of hys knyghtes to kepe hys castell, and carried his wyfe and chylde wth him into France.

But after a yere runned, the kyng was so laboured to, by the frendes of the sayd Earle, that he was enlarged from pryncesse, and vpon surety suffered to serue in the kynges court. Where he bare hym so well, that finally the kyng made hym knyghte, and restored hym to all hys landes. But what syll of the Earle of Armenac the story sheweth not.

About the vi. yere of hys regne king Philip married Mary the daughter of the erle of Burbo, or after some the daughter of John the duke of Briban, which he loued entyrcly. Where of Peter de Briban then beyng lord chamberlayne, hauing enuy & disdaine sought the wayes and meanes to mynsh the great loue betwene hys lord & her, and founde by hys meane that a sonne of the kynges named Lewys was pryncesse, the whiche dede he by subtile, & secret meanes, as though it had nothinge come of hym, layde it to the charge of the quene. For this the kyng made maner of inquisitions as well by sorcery as other. But in all hys workes he found his quene guiltlesse. Wherefore he suffered the matter to passe, till he myghte haue moze assured proofe in the matter.

About this season Ferdinandus kyng of Castyle, that before tyme had

The seventh part

107

hadde maryed Blanch daughter of
 Alys, dyed, leuynge after hym two
 sonnes bo:ne of the sayde Blanch, na-
 med Ferdynande & Alphons, whiche
 by couenaunte at the marpage made
 shulde be heyres vnto the kingdome
 of Spayne and Castyle. But the fa-
 ther of thys Ferdynande so beyng
 deade, contrarpe his honour and pro-
 myse, wote vnto þe lordes of Castile
 amone thynge them that they shulde
 admytte for they: kynges hys seconde
 sonne named Sancton o: Sancto,
 and swere to him both feauty and ho-
 mage. The whiche was all done ac-
 cordinge to his commaundement so
 that Blanch was dyspoynted of her
 dower, & her chyldren of they: ryght
 and enherytaunce. For the whiche
 kynges Whylp her brother was gre-
 uously discontented, and for refo:ma-
 cyon thereof sente vnto the kynges of
 Spayn, hys chefe boteler with other
 despyng hym to p:rfourme all such
 couenauntes as betwene hym & hys
 father were concluded, at þe marpage
 of hys syster Blanche, o: at the leaste
 yf that he refused that to do, that he
 wolde sende hys sayde syster with her
 two chyldre safely into Fraunce. In
 conclusyon, the mother wyth her two
 chyldren were broughte by the sayde
 boteler vnto the king, wythout other
 pleasure other in wo:de o: in deade.
 For the whiche he the yere folowing
 gathered a stronge hoste, and passed
 with the by Doyteau and Gascogne
 tyll he came vnto a towne ioyninge
 to the border of Spayne named Sa-
 interre, where the kinge met another
 partye of hys host. There by counsel
 of some of hys lordes, the kynges con-
 cluded to retourne into Fraunce, for
 daunger of wynter þe was commynge
 and other hid causes. But the cymoz
 of the hooste wente, that some of the

kinges counsaill had receaued trua-
 des of the kynges of Spayne. By the
 meane wherof the kyng lost hys iour-
 ney, and returned into Fraunce to his
 greute dyshonoure and domage.
 In tyme of kynges Whyllyppes re-
 turne into Fraunce, tyebynges were
 brought to hym, that Eustace de Be-
 an March, whome the kyng had ap-
 poynted to the gupdunge of the coun-
 trey o: kyngedome of Flaumie, was
 besyged in the cytee of Dampulne
 wherfore the kynges commaunded
 the Earle of Artoys to spede him thy-
 ther, to rescow the sayd Eustace. The
 whiche behaued hym so manfullye,
 that he rescowd the sayde Eustace,
 and chased Gasconers chefe sty-
 rer of that rebellion, and brought the
 people of that country againe to due
 subiection. Whyle the earle of Arto-
 ys was thus occupied in the sayde
 countrie, messaungers came to hym
 frome the kynges of Spayne, requy-
 ryng him seyng that he was so nere
 that he wolde come and dyspoynt him
 there for a season. Wherof the earle
 of Artoys sente kynges Whylp word
 and haupnge of hym licence yode vn-
 to the sayde kynges of Spayne, as to
 hys nere kynnesman, and there dys-
 ported hym a certayne of tyme to hys
 great consolacion. In whiche season
 dyuers letters came oute of Fraunce
 frome some of the kynges counsaill
 by reaso wherof the king of Spayn
 was informed of much of the frech
 kynges counsaill. Whiche letters he
 shewed vnto the Earle of Artoys, say-
 inge that he was not wythoute fren-
 des in Fraunce. But he wold not dys-
 close what parsons they were. When
 the Earle hadde tarped in Spayne a
 copetente season, he toke leaue of the
 kynges, and departed wyth great gyf-
 tes, and so sped hym, that in procelle
 of

of tyme he came vnto the kynge of Fraunce, and at a conuenient leysure shewed vnto hi of the letters shewed vnto hym by the kynge of Spayne, wherof the kynge was not a lytle amaryed. It was not longe after þ a curtoure oʒ messenger, whych vsed to beare letters from Peter de Bors vnto the kynge of Spayne, sʒl spke at an abbay. Where when he knewe he shulde dye, were it by exhortacion of hys ghostlye father oʒ otherwys, he called to hym the abbote oʒ hed of the house, chargynge hym þ he wold deliuer suche letters as he there had vnto the frenche kynges owne personne, & after dyed. After whose death the sayde religious man in conueniente hast sped hym vnto the kynges court, and presented hym wth the sayde letters, shewing vnto hym the mynde of the sayd messenger. Which letters when the kynge had vnclosed he anon knewe that hys chamberlayne Peter de Bors was the dyscloser of all hys counsailes. Wherefoze forthwith he commaunded the sayde Peter to be had vnder safe keepinge. Wherof hearyng the bishop of Bayon, fled streight the land, and so yode vnto Rome. The kynge then yode vnto Daris, where he called a counsaile of hys Lozdes to examyne the sayde Peter. Where synallye he was iudged to be haged. After which iudgement, he was committed vnto warde, tʒll the moztowe folowynge. At whych season longe befoze the sunne rysynge, the duke of Burgoyne, the duke of Braban, the Earle of Artois wth the prouost of Daris, came vnto the gapole, and there receaued the sayde Peter, and saue hym hanged oʒ the sunne was vp.

IT was not longe after þ Peter was thus put to death, but me-

nes were made betwene these. ii. kyn ges, so that a daye of meting was appointed, that the sayde kynges shuld mete to haue comunycacion, for the matter concernyng þ wynges done to dame Blanch and her. ii. chyldren befozenamed. Wherfoze the kynge of Spayn came vnto the cyte of Balon, and kynge Phylippe to a towne in the prouynce of Chouluse named Mount marchaute. Where these. ii. prynces beyng in comunycacion of the sayde matter, certayne messengers came to them fro the bishop of Rome, then Martyn the .iiii. chargyng them vpon payne of fallynge in to the censures of þ church, that they agree and fall vnto accorde, þ warre betwene them be not exteysed. By reason wherof kynge Phylippe remitted the matter to the B. of Rome, and returned vnto Chouluse. Where mette hym the king of Aragon named Peter. The whych after he had there taried wth kynge Phylipp, a tyme at hys pleasure, he toke his leaue of the kynge and after wente into Catholopne, where he met wth Constance hys wyfe and doughter of Sanctred sometyme kynge of Scypt, þ which was pyued of hys lyfe & kingdome by Charles brother of Lewys, as befoze in the. iii. chapter of the storye of Lewys is moztly rouches. Thys Constance in al that she myghte exhorted her husbände to gather hys people, & to enter the lande of Scypt, ascertaynyng hym that the Scylliens wolde take hys partte agayne Charles, for so much, as they well knewe that she was ryghteful heyre to þ kingdome.

In thys tyme and season whych was the. x. yere of kynge Phylippe the. x. yuer of Spayne tole of suche an hyghte, that it compassed the cytes of Daris in such wyse, þ noman myght come

come thither wthoute bo^{te} o^r barge
And the water passed wth such spo-
lence, that it brake bi. arches of the
greate bydges of Paris, and one of
the small bydges.

Then let vs turne to the kynge of
Aragon, whych by incensynge of his
wif, gathered hys people, and vnder
coloure that he wolde haue gone a-
gains^t the Turkes, had graunte of
the B. of Rome to receaue the dymes
of hys owne lande fo^r certayne petes
Whyle thys was in doyng, he sente
certayne persones into Sicyll to se
the state of that country. The whych
made confederacies wth diuers great
men of Siciliens, & ouer þ brought
wth theym dyuers of the rulers to
the presence of the kynge. Wth wh^o
þ sayde Peter made certayne appoi-
ntementes, and after retourned theim
into Sicyle. Where after they re-
tourne, they consayled so wth the
rulers of Palermo, and Messen, and
of they cyties, that in one nyght al
the frenche menne in Sicyll were
slayne, and after in moost cruell wyse
slew the women as well those þ were
wth chylde as other, and leste seue
o^r none of the frenchemen in all the
chefe cyties o^r towne of Sicyll on
lyue. When tidiges of thys mischefe
was broughte vnto Charles beinge
then in the country of Angeou, he set
messaungers vnto the. B. of Roome
Partyn the. iiii. requyring hys ayde
to defende hys enemyes. The whych
in all hast sent vnto Palermo the. B.
of saynte Marbyne, to charge the cy-
tyzys vpon payne of cursing, to o-
bey vnto Charles fo^r they king, and
to none other. But the rulers of Pa-
lermo and also of Messen wold not
suffer the sayde byshop to passe anye
further. And also sayde þ Peter was
entred the countrys, of whome they

wolde holde and on none other, wth
whych answer he was fain to retorne

In thys whyle Charles had sente
vnto hys newwe Philippe kynge of
Fraunce, the whych wth hys powre
to reuoke Peter frome Sicyll, enter-
ed the lande of Aragon by Durpu-
dyan, and toke the cytie of Icaue.
In whiche passetyme Charles enter-
ed Sicyll, and besyged Messene.
But the towne was so strongely fo^r
tyfied that he lost there hys labour
wherfoze he left that syege, and yode
into the playnes of saynte Martyn
and there taried the comming of his
sonne then prync of Valerne. The
B. of Rome then cursed Peter, fo^r as
much, as certayne word was brought
to hym that he had proclaimed hym
selfe kynge of Sicyll. And to the en-
tente to styze the moze people agayne
hym, he gaue hys lande of Aragon
vnto Charles Earle of Malors and
sonne of kynge Philip of Fraunce.
When Philippe as before is sayd,
kynge of Fraunce had wonne Icaue
fo^r somuch, as the wayes towarde A-
ragon were harde to passe, as wel fo^r
prouisyons made by the enemyes as
otherwyse, the kynge therfoze sought
great aduise how he myght wth lest
daunger wyne to his enemyes. And
after manye meanes sought, a Rus-
syan was broughte vnto the kynges
presence, whych assured the kynge
to gypde hym awaye into Aragon w-
oute the daunger of hys enemyes.
Wherof the kynge beinge glad, pro-
myssed to the sayd Russyan freedom
and lyberte wth other great rewar-
des, whych then tooke as a prync
to the frenche men. After whych pro-
myse made, the kynge put hym and
the moze parte of hys hoost vnder
the ledynge of þ sayde Russyan. And
fo^r to blynde þ moze his enemyes, he
lk l. sente

sent a parte of hys host towarde the moûtains, to make a shew as though al the host had passed the same way. When kynge Phylippe had ordeyned al thyng after hys mynde, he commaunded the lozward of hys people to followe the sayde Russlian, the whiche broughte them a streyghte and narrowe way, al to growne wth wood and bushes to the kynges great trauaile and all hys. But finally he broughte them into the playnes where they enemies lay, so that they made prouysion in orderyng of theyr people to set vpon the Dragons. Whereof the Dragons beyng ware, supposyng the French men myghte not so lightly haue wonne vnto them, beyng the out of aray and dispruued to fyght fled vnto the nexte holdes, leuyng to the French men much of theyr bytail and harnes. When king Phylippe had sene that hys enemies had forsaken theyr feld, he rested him there a season after his trauayl, and after rode to a towne named Pperlaat & besieged it. Whereof the souldiours after they had a season defended that towne, in the deade of the nyght fyred the sayd towne, & departed wher they had done. But the French men went shortly in to the towne and quenched the fyre, & after the kynge had manned and bytailed it, he the went into a towne named Gozon, and layd hys siege there aboute, where he laye longe after



Ye haue hard in the prece dyng peare, howe Charles kynge of Sicryll laye in the playnes of saynte Martyne, there abyding the comyng of hys sonne the pryncce of Salerne. Whiche lastly came vnto hym hys sayde sonne, the duke of Burgoyne, the Earle of Blanson, &c.

ter brother to kynge Phylippe, Roberte Earle of Artoys the Earles of Dap martyne, and Bolgoyne, with the lozde of Mounte Joynce, and many other nobles of Fraunce and Burgoyne. After the comyng of whych lozdes, Charles with baner displayed sped hym towarde hys enemies, & so passed the lande of Calesye with out fyght, and sente his sonne to Naples with a parte of hys host, and hym selfe kept on hys iourney tyll he came vnto Brounce. Where he beyng of the great purueyance that Peter kynge of Aragon had made of Myppes, to saile towarde the land of Naples, sent certayne letters vnto the pryncce hys sonne, that in nowyse he shuld set vpon his enemies, but kepe hym within the cytee of Naples, tyll he sente vnto hym such Myppes and galapes as he then had redymmed to be sent vnto hym frome the haven of Marcell. Whiche messenger and letters were taken with the Dragons by reason whereof they knewe much of kynge Charles counsaile.

It was not long after of the nauy of the kynge of Aragon with greate triumph & pryde came vnto Naples and prouoked so the French men to fyght, that lastely the pryncce with such Myppes & company as he myght make, made out vpon them & fought with theym a long fyght. But in the end the French men were betyn and overcome, & the pryncce with the more party of hys Myppes taken, and sent to Constance queene of Aragon, and remayned not longe after vnderpyered with manye other pryncers. Within a short season after this dyscōpture Charles came vnto Naples by whiche tyme muche of the towne was tourned agayn hym, so that the moost part of the French souldiours were

The seventh parte.

111

were slayne and fled the towne. Wher
fo; after that Charles was entred he
punished them ryghte cruelly, by dy
uers maner of tourmentes. And whē
he had doone there hys will, he retur
ned into Calchye, wher met with him
Robert Earle of Artoys. Wher they
toke they; counsaill how they myght
passe the water of Phaar, and to late
they; seige vnto the cytee of Hessele.
But fo; dyuers causes he was coun
sailed to the contrary, so that he toke
shyppinge at an haueu called Bjan
dysse. But o; hys people were all ship
ped, such a syckenes tooke hym, that
he was hadde agayne to land and dy
ed shortly after, not wpythout suspec
cion of venym.

Whose corpes was then conueyed
to Naples, and there buried, in the
yeare of our Lorde. M. two hundred
and. lxxiii. and the. xiii. yeare of the
reygne of Philippe hys neuewe the
kyng of Fraunce. Of whych tydings
Peter kyng of Aragon reioysed not
a lytle, when worde thereof to hym
was broughte, the whych befoze that
tyme had betake the rule of the land
of Sicyll to Constaunce hys wyfe
then beyng in the cytee of Palermo.
And he hym selfe wpyth a stronge na
me sayled into Aragon fo; to rescow
the cytee of Geron, whych was besie
ged of kyng Philippe as he befoze
haue harde. And when he wpyth hys
people were there landed, he toke his
counsaill howe he myght most greue
the frenche hooste. fynallye he con
cluded that he wolde make a buche
mente with a certayne number of his
knyghtes, and lye in a weyghte to
take the vytayle that was broughte
to the hooste frome the pozte of Russi
lyan, whych pozte was foure myles
from the frenche hoost. vpon which
concluson so take, he wpyth two thou

sande chosenne menne, lodged theym
where the pyay shuld passe, and was
espyed of the frenchemenne. Wher
of beyng warned the Constable of
Fraunce, and sy; John Harcourt,
then Marshall of the hooste tooke
wpyth theym the Earle of Marches
wpyth dyuerse other knyghtes to the
number of fyue hundred speares,
wpyth a certayne of footmenne and
went towarde they; enemyes. But
when they came neare vnto theym,
and sawe they were so many in nom
ber, they feared to set forthwarde, tyl
they were comforted by the wordes
of a knyghte in they; companie cal
led Mathewe de Ropa sayinge as fo
loweth.

O ye noble knyghtes, beholde in
poure syghtes the enemyes whych
ye haue farre soughte. Let vs nowe
remember that this is the day of the
Assumpcion of oure blessed Ladye
and trust we in her that she wyl help
vs agayne theym that bene put oute
of holpe church by cursyng. fo; lyke
mercyte shall to vs growe to reuenge
the iniuries doone vnto the church
as though we soughte agayn the ene
myes of Chyestes sayth.

By meane of whych wordes they
were so encouraged, that wpythoute
fear they sette vpon they; enemyes,
so that betwene them was comensed
a soze and cruell fyght, continuing a
longe season o; it mighte be knowne
whych parte had the aduantage
of the other. At the last the kyng was
drawen from his horse, and constray
ned to fyghte wpyth the other on fote
so that he was in greate leoparde to
haue bene taken. But by hys owne
knyghthod & good helpe of hys men
he recouered hys horse agayn. When
the french men wer ware of the kyng
was there in hys owne persone they
were

hh.ii,

were the moze egree bypon the Aragons, to the entente to haue taken oʒ slayne they? kynge. So that fynally they compelled them to forsake the felde, and to saue the selves by flyght by reason wherof the kynge wth the moze parte of hys knyghtes were saued from the daunger of they? enemyes. But in thys flyght Peter kynge of Aragon was so hurte that he dyed shortly after. When these forsayd knyghtes wth they? prissoners were returned vnto the frenche kynge and had shewed vnto hym of that byctory, he reioysed therof greatly, & moze wolde haue done, yf he had knowene howe soze his enemy Peter was woued. But to bynge to spene hys purpose, he dayly moze and moze assaured the towne.

In the tyme that Seronde oʒ Eyrōde was thus besieged of the frenche kynge, the Earle of Foyz, that to the capytayne of the towne oughte greates fauour, many times by licence of the kynge yode into the towne, and had dyuers communycacions wth hym so that he lastly knowynge the sayd towne to be bare of bytaye, shewed to the kynge that he wolde labour the sayd capytayne named sy? Raymond de Cerdon, & the towne myght be geue by into the knynges handes, so that sone after the sayd capytayne despyed a respite of .viii. dayes, to sed vnto the kynge of Aragon to knowe whether he wolde rescowe the towne oʒ not. Upon whiche graunte made the messengers were sente, and returned wth a certentye of the knynges deathe. Upon whiche knowledge had the sayd capytayne agreed to deliuer the towne, vpon condycyon to haue with them such mouables as he with the cytezens and souldours had with in the towne. Al whiche condycyons

assured, the king receaued the towne of Seronde into hys possession. The whiche whan he hadde manned wth knyghtes of his owne, he then by coucel, whiche turned after to hys harme dyuyded hys nauy, and sente a parte of them into Fraunce, and the other in to Choulouse, where the kynge entended to tary the winter folowing. But so soone as hys nauy was thus deuuyded, the Aragons met with them that rested in the hauen of Ruffilian, and gaue to them such battayle, that they tooke manye of them, and slewe the knynges admiral, and many other noble menne of Fraunce, and helde the Frenchmen so short, that for so much as they wolde not that so good shippes shuld come to the handes of they? enemyes, they set fyre vpon the remnaunte and byente them, and after resorted vnto the kynge.

When kynge Philippe was ascertayned of the losse of the nauy, he toke it greauously, in so much, that for that, and other thynges that he might not bynge to hys purpose, he fell into a feuer, and was therewith greatly annoyed. Than for strength of hys enemyes, whiche kepte the passage of the mountaynes called in latyn Montes Pitent, and for wekyng of hym self by reason of hys sykkenesse, he passed by the streyght places, tyll he came to Darpynian, where hys sykkenesse increased so soze, that he dyed in shortly tyme of hys thyther coumynge in the moneth of October, whā he had reigned .xv. yeres lackyng certayn dayes whose bowelles were buried at Aradon, and hys bodye at Saynt Denis.

Thys Philippe had two wyues. By the fyrst Isabel by name, and daughter of the kynge of Aragon, Jaques oʒ James by name, he had .iii. sonnes. The eldest whiche was paysoned, Philippe

The death of
Philippe king
of France

The seventh parte.

113.

lyppe whych for his betwix and sayre
shappe was named Phylp le Beau
or Phylppe the sayre, and Charles
the Valois. And by Mary his wyfe
and daughter of the duke of Braban
he hadde Lewis, Margarete, and
Blanche, whiche Margarete was
after married to Edward the fyrste,
than kynge of Englande.

Thus endeth Phylp the
iii of Fraunce.

Anglia.



Edward the first
of that name, sonne of Henry
the thyrde, surnamed long Shank
began his regne
ouer Englande,
in the moneth of
November, and seventene day of the

same, and the yere of oure Lord. M.
two hundred. lxxii. and seconde yere
of the thyrde Phylppe than kynge
of Fraunce

Thys Edward as befoze is shew
ed in the .v. and fyfte yere of his
father, was in the holpe lande whan
his father dyed, and there at the cy-
ter of Acon or Acriys, he dyd manye
feates of warre, whereof the cronicle
maketh certayne mencyon. Wher he
beyng so exersysed in Marryall ac-
tes tidings was brought vnto him
that his father was deade. Where-
foze in all hast he sped hym into En-
glande, so that he came to London
the seconde daye of August, and was
crowned at Westmynstre the .xiii.
daye of December folowinge, which
was in the begynnyng of the second
yere of his regne.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxii.

By Walter Herp

Thon Hoyme

Walter Potter.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxiii.

Anno primo.



As in the fyrst yere
of kynge Edward
the fyrst, vpon the
daye of Symon
and Jude, wer cer-
tayne attemptes
made by some of
the Cyteyns, to haue made suche a
Maye as they hadde lysted, but for
they wer desappointed of theyr acces-
saries, they let for that tyme, which
in the yere folowing vpon the same

daye toke further effecte, as in the be-
gynnyng of the nexte yere shalbe
touched. In the end of this yere and
seconde daye of August, kynge Ed-
ward came to London frome his
great iourney of the holy land wher
of the cyteyns he was receaued with
al tope and honour, and so conueyed
vnto Westmynstre, where he kepte
greate obseruaunces for his father
by a certayne tyme after.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxiii

Henry Wales

Nicholas Wynchester

Henry Couentre

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxiiii

Anno. ii.

xx. iii.

In

Edward the fyrste



At this seconde yere of this kyng, and day of Symō and Jude, whā Whyllyppe le Tayloure whych befoze was chosen to be mayze, shulde as that daye haue taken his charge in the Gyrd hall of London, byuerse cytezens put hym beside the mayzes seat, and sette theri by Walter Herup, that the yere befoze had ben mayze. For the whych great rumoure and grudge arose amonge the cytezens, wherfoze the matter was after broughte befoze the kyng the whych hearyng the reasonnes of both parties, for somuch, as he could not agre them, he put both the sayde by Walter and the sayde Whyllyppe asyde, and chace Henry Forwyke for custos of the cytee, the which so contynued tyll candelmas after. At whych tyme by dyscrete and wyle peaspable meanes, the fornamed by Walter Herup was set in authorite as mayze, and so contynued the ful of the yere after.

This yere vpon the .xiii. daye of December, was the kyng crowned at Westmynster, of maister Roberte Kylwarby than archebyshop of Caisterburpe. For Boniface his pzedicel

four dyed the yere that kyng Henry the dyed. At this coronacyō was present Alexander kyng of Scottes, the whiche vpon the morowe folowinge dyd homage to kyng Edward for the kyngedome of Scotlande.

After the solempnytie of the coronacyō was ended, the kyng hearyng of the rebellyō of Llewellyn pynce of Wales, that dysdained to come to his coronacyō, anone gathered a strong powze, and wente into the poynt and subdued the sayde Llewellyn. And after returned, and ordered certayne newe lawes for the welth of the realme, whych are to longe to rehece. Amonge the whiche, one was that bakens makynge byade lackynge the weyghte assigned after the pzece of coine, shulde fyrste be punished by losse of his byade, and the seconde tyme by pypsonmente, and thyrdispe, by the correccion of the pylloze, and millners for stelyng of coine to be chastysed by the tumbzell.

And this to be put in execucion, he gaue auctorite to all mayzes, baylyffes, and other offycers throughe Englande, and specially to the mayze of London.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxiii.

Gregory Rokkisse

Lucas Batencourt.

Henry Forwyke

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxv.

Anno. iii.



At the .iii. yere, the kyng confirmed the libertyes of the cytee of London, and graunted to them some newe. And this yere he helde his greate court of parlyamēt at Westmynster, and gaue monyshon to Llewellyn pynce of Wales to come vnto the same, the which pzeispyously that denyed. Wherfoze the

kyng after Ester cōtrede again into Wales, and so warred vnto Lewellyn, the he was constrained to submit him vnto the kynges grace, and optayned it wth greate difficultie. The kyng Edward bylded the castel of Flint, and strengthened the castel of Rutland and other with English men, to kepe the Welshmen in due obediēce, and toke of the pynce a great summe of monye, whiche of some

The seventh parte.

116.

some wynters is named. l. M. ii. and of some. l. M. marke, & of some other lesse, and so returned into England.

In thys yere one Water Harup, whiche the fyfthe yere of thys kyng, after longe contrauersye and strepe he had kept with the aldermen of London, at a folkemote kepte at Poules crosse was made Mayre of London, and so continued to the hurte of the cytie that yere, this yere was he accu-

sed of dyuers perjurys & other detestable dedes contrary his oth. For the whiche, and for making of assemblies of the commons whiche fauoured hym in hys euell dedes, he was depriued of his aldermanshyppe and counsell of the cytie for ever, and founde suetye of twelue honeste persones, that he shulde be good of bearyng, for keepinge of the kynges peace within the cytie for twayne of his lyfe after.

Anno domini. xii. C. lxxv.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxvi.

Gregory Rokkysle.

John Hoyme.

Anno. llii.

Raufe Blount.

In thys. liii. yere of kyng Edwarde Wyche the thyrde in tyme of warre had with the Walshemen demeaned hym otherwys then stode with his trouthe and allegeaunce, was accused of treason, and therof arrepynd, iudged, & dampned, & after was drownd, hanged, and quartered.

And thys yere was the statute of Mortmaine enacted fyfthe, whiche is to meane that no man shulde geue into the church, any landes or tentes withoute a specyall lycence of the kyng whiche acte since that tyme hath bene more strongly enacted, and deupled with many addycions therunto augmented or annexed.

The Statute of Mortmaine

Anno domini. xii. C. lxxvi.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxvii.

Gregory Rokkysle.

Robert Bassy.

Anno. v.

Raufe Fenour.

In this. v. yere of the reigne of kyng Edwarde, Nicholas the thyrde of that name bishop of Rome, made doctour Robert Kilwar by then beyng archebishop of Canturbury a cardynal of Rome, and admitted to that see a freer named doctour John Bekham.

And in thys yere the kyng gaue vnto Dauid brother vnto Lewelyn

Prince of Wales, the lordeshyppe of Froddesham. The whiche Dauid dwelled in the kynges courte, and did vnto hym pleasaunte seruyce, to the entente to spy the kynges secret counsell. And yf anye thyng were spoken or doone to the hurte of hys brother, that he therof myghte geue vnto hym warnyng, as after by his dede appered.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxviii.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxviii.

Gregory Rokkysle.

John Adyan.

Anno. vi.

Walter Langeley.

The. vi. yere.

1176.

Edward the fyrste.

Whiche was
terme kept at
Shrewsbury
eye.

In this. vi. yere the king com-
maunded þe courtes of hys
lawes, as þe kinges benche
the chauncery, þe comō place
and the exchequer, to be remoued vnto
Shrewsbury, where Wyghelmas
tearme was holden and kepte, but a-
gaine Wylliam tearme, the boke and
offycers was contermoued agayne
Anno domini. M. CC. lxxvi.

vnto Westminster to be there holden
In whiche carpyng of the recorde
to and fro, they by reason of grete
plentye of rayne whiche in that sea-
son fell, caught great hurte and were
soze defaced, in so muche that the bo-
kes were greatly imperyshed, and the
clerkes had grete labour to bypunge
them to theyr former state.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxv.

Roberte Balyngge,

Gregory Rokkysle.

Anno. vii.

Wylliam Wazerer.

The. vii. yere.

In this. vii. yere, þe kyng helde
his parlyamente at London,
whiche was chesely set for the
refozmacyon of the kynges coyne,
which was clipped in suche wise, that
it was therby wonderfully minyshed
and empayred.

In the season of this parlyament
many of the Jewes of London and o-
ther places were taken and putte in
holde for money clippynge. And in
December folowing certeyne enque-
stes were charged in London to en-
quyre of the sayde Jewes and other
that so hadde blyemished the kynges
coyne. By the whiche enquestes the
Jewes of the cytie with dyuerse gold
synthes that kepte exchange of syl-
uer, were indycted.

Anno domini. xii. C. lxxix.

And the mondaye folowynge the
Purification of our Lady, the maire
with dyuers Justices of the lande sat
at London, where befoze theym was
caste two hundred. lxx. and. xviij. per-
sones. Of the whiche but. xiiij. englysh
menne, and all the other were Jewes
and Jewes bozne, all be it that many
of theym were bozne in Englande,
and therfoze of some wynters they be
named Englyshe Jewes, the whiche
were all at sondre tymes and places
put in execucion.

In this yere also began the founda-
cion of the church of the frete pry-
choure, o; blacke freres by Ludgate,
by theyr founder.

And in this yere þe towne, of Bosten
was greatly blemysched with fyre.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxx.

Thomas Box.

Gregory Rokkysle.

Anno. viii.

Raufe Hoze.

The. viii. yere

In this. viii. yere, the kyng cau-
sed in syluer the halfe peny to be
copned, wheare befoze tyme o-
ther copnes of metalle ranne amonge
the people, to theyr grete nopaunce
and losse, a farthynges of syluer were

Anno domini. xii. C. lxxx.

also copned the selfe tyme.

And the winter folowing, aboute
the dape of saynte Denys, o; the. ix.
dape of October, fell suche plentye
of snowe, that thereof ensued muche
harme.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxxi.

Wylliam Faringdon.

Gregory Rokkysle.

Anno. ix.

Nicholas Winchester.

In this

The seventh parte.

117.

In this .x. yere of king Edward, Dauid the brother of Lewellin prince of Wallis, the whiche as ye befoze haue hard dwelled in þe kynges court to knowe the kynges counceyl, & therof enformed his brother, when he had that he waited for, he secretly gat him into Walys to his brother, & hym excepted agayne the kyng in all that he might, and caused his brother to man and bytyle dyuers castelles wythin Walys, and specyallye the castell of Swandon, wherin he muche trusted and gathered vnto hym the Walyshe

men by gyftes and other meanes, so that he was very stronge.

Wherof when the kyng was informed, he wolde therunto geue no credence, tyll he had sent thither & receiued from thence the certainte. But for so muche as wynter was towarde and he myght not conueniently goo thither with anye power, he therfore provided to sende men and bytyle, to strength the castelles of Flynt & Rutlande, & other holdes, whiche he there had, & with prouysio made to war vpon them in the beginning of þe nexte yere, suftered that wynter to passe.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxxi.

Henry Walys.

William Mazeret.

Nicholas Winchester.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxxi.

Anno. i.

In this .x. yere, the kyng hearyng moze and moze of the vntreustines of the Walysmen for to lette theym of theyr purpose to greue hys holdes befoze named, he sente thither wyth a crewe of sowdours, the earles of Northumberland and of Surrey. With whom among other went sir Roger Clyfforde, sir William Lindsey, sir Richard Canyn, and many other noble knightes & squyres. The whiche with greate courage entred into Walys, & made with the Walysmen many skirmyshes, tyl lastly vpon Palme sondaye, Dauid wyth a greate power of Walysmen met with the saide lordes and knightes at a place nere to a towne called Hanardyne, where betwene this was

a sore fyght. But in the ende the losse fell to þe Englyshmen. For there were slaine sir William Lindsey, sir Richard Canyn, with many other, and sir Roger Clyfforde was taken.

After which ouerthrowe of þe Englyshmen, the sayde Dauid layde syege vnto the castelles of Flynt and of Rutlande. And his brother in that season warred and occupied the landes of sir Edmund Boztymer, and wanne the towne called Lambattebaure, and theare threwe the walles therof downe to the grounde. This towne is also called Abzelswyth. It was not longe after of the byute of this ouerthrowe of the Englyshmen came vnto þe towne. Wherfore he sped hym the faster thitherwarde.

The Englyshmen discomfyted.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxxi.

Henry Walys.

Raufe Blunt.

Hawlyn Betnell.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxxi.

Anno. xi.

In this .xi. yere, vpon the daye of saynte Leonarde of the spyte

daye of Nouember, whyle that kyng Edward was thus occupied in rescowynge

folowynge of his menne, whiche were besyged of Daupd, by Roger Clif forde with other, whiche intended to make a reysynge vpon the Walthe-menne, was drownded by foly vpon a byrge made of bargys & planks to haue passed a water, betwene Snowdon and Anglysey.

And the thyrde day of December folowynge, was Lewelyne pryncce of Walys slayne by by Edmund de Mortimer and his company, and his hed sent vnto the kyng then beyng at Rutlande. The whiche he sent vnto London, charginge that it be set vpon the towre of London. Of this Lewelyne a Walthe metrician made these foure verses folowynge.

*Hic iacet anglorum tortor, tutor uenedorum,
Princeps Wallorum, Llewelynus regula morū,
Gemma cenorum, flos regum preteritorum,
Forma futurorum, dux, laus, lex, lux populorū.*

20 Which verses are thus to meane as foloweth.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxiii.

Henry Waleys.

Jordan Goodchepe.

Wattyn Bor.

20 Of Englyshmen the scourge, of Walthe the protectour.

Lewelyn the pryncce, rule of all vertue,
Gemme of all lyuers, and of all other the flour
Whiche vnto death hath payde his bette due,
Of whiche a mirrour that after him shall sue,
Duke and prayse, and of the laste the ryght,
Here in this graue, of people lyeth the light.

20 But an Englysh metrician wrote other. iiii. verses in dyspraysynge of the sayde Lewelyne as foloweth.

*Hic iacet errorum princeps, ac predo uirorum,
Proditor Anglorum, sax linida secta reorum,
Namen Wallorum, trux, dux, homicida priorū,
Fex troianorum, stirps, mendax, causa malorū.*

20 The whiche maie in this wyse be Enlyghed.

Here lyeth of error the pryncce yf ye wyl len,
These and robbery, & traytoure to Englyshmen
A bym bynde, a secte of doers euyl.
God of Walthe men, cruell withoute fayll,
In slepyng the good, and leader of the badde,
Lastly rewarded as he deserved hadde,
Of Troyans blode the drafter, and not sere,
A rote of falshode, and cause of many euyl dedes.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxiii.

Anno. xii.

The. xii. yere.

In this. xii. yere, the kyng beyng styll in Walis, pursued Daupd the brother of Lewelyne from towne to towne, so that lastely he was taken and brought vnto the kyng aboute the natyuite of saynt John, and so holden in warde tyll the king had there sped his nedes. Then the kyng had all the countree at his wyl and gaue vnto Englysh lordes townes in the myddes of Walys, and deuided the countree into shyres, and ordeined there shyreffes and other officers as then were vsed in Englande. At Aberconowe he made a stronge ca

stell, wheate befoze was a house of white monkes. The whiche he remouyd thens, and ordeyned for them in some other place. He also made then the castell of Canatuā fast by Snowdon, and repayred agayne the towne of Lambatte or Abzelswith which Lewelyn had befoze beaten downe. Also he garnysshed the castelles and holdes standyng vpon the sea syde with Englyshmen, and made Englyshmenne lordes of the groundes belonyng to the same. And when the kyng had set the countree in rule, then aboute Wychemmasse he retourned to Wycheburpe

The senenth parte.

121.

Wysbury, where he set a parliament. In the tyme wherof the fo; sayde Dauid as chiefe stirrer & begynner of all this war, was there deim'd to be drawn, hanged, & quartered, & so he was shortly after at þe said towne of Wykebury, & hys hed sent to London, & set by the hed of his brother Llewelyn.

And this yere was the fyrst sonne of kynge Edward bozne, whyle the king was in Walis at þe castel of Carnaruan. By reason wherof he was after named Edward of Carnaruan. He was bozne vpon the daye of saynt Marke o; the .xxv. day of April. This yere also one Laurence Duket a citizen of Londō, was found deed & hanged within saint Mary bowe church of chepe. For þe whiche enqueres were made, & lastly for þe dede were attaynted these, vii. persons folowynge, þe is to say, Reynold of Lancaster, Robert

Binnot, Paule of Stepinhith, Thomas Copdwyner, John Colanson, Thomas Russel, & Robert Scotte, þe which were all for that dede drawn & hanged. And a woman for the same dede was also byent. And Rauffe Creppyn, Jourdan Good chepe, Spilberte Clerke, & Gessrey Clerke, were also attaint for the same cause. But they were repyred and sent vnto the towne of Lodon, where they remayned long after and lastly deliuered. And in this yere the greates conduyte standynge agayne the church of Ares in Chepe, was begon to be made. In this yere also stryfe and vnkynndenes beganne to kyndle betwene the kynge and the earle of Leicester, whiche after grewe to the greates disturbaunce of dyuerse townes of Englande, and speciallye of the cytie of London, as after some beile Hall appere.

The founda-
cion of the
greates con-
duyte in
Chepe.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxviii.

Stephen Cornhyll.

Gregory Rokkelle.

Roberte Rokelsby.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxv.

Anno. xiii.

In this. xiii. yere vpon the day of þe conuersion of saint Paule o; the .xxv. daye of Januarie, þe kynge seased the fraunchise and liberties into his handes, and dyscharged the maiere of London then beinge Grego; Rokkille, and admytted for custos o; gardein of the cytie Stephan Sandewiche. The whiche continued in that offyce tyll þe monday folowing the purifycacyon of oure Ladye. At whiche season þe sayde Stephan was dyscharged, and for Johan Byeton knyght charged for the resydue of the yere. The cause of this dyspleasure that the kynge hadde vnto the cytie is not shewed of no certayntie. But in an olde panflete it appereth, that the

sayde Grego; Rokkille toke certayne byrdes of the bakers, and suffred them to sell breade lackynge syre ounces, o; vii. o; in a peny lose, for þe whiche the kynge shulde be soze dyspleased. But yet to me it semeth no conueniente cause, to sease the liberties of the cytie for the offence of one man. Wherfoze it is to presuppse, þe it was for a moze greuous cause.

And in this yere was fully syn-
shed and ended the newe werke of the church of Westminster to the ende of the quere, begon as before is shewed, in the thyrde yere of the .iii. Henry. By whiche reason it shuld appere, þe this church shulde be wedyfenge vpon lxxvi. yeres. Of the fyrste foundacyon of

The newe
werke of
Westminster
church.

Edwarde the fyrste.

of this church are divers opinions, for as before is shewed in the thyrde Chapter of the Royle of Carre, and b. parte of thys werke, thys church was fyrste founded by a cytyzene of London, and after redysed by saint Edwarde, and lastly by kynge Henry the.iii. But in þ same abbey of Westminster, where of lybelihode the most certaynte is to be had, it is regestred that this saide church was a temple of the Bytones longe o; they receyued the fayth of Chyste. And in the tyme of they; chrysten kynge Lucius it was hallowed of Augustyne & hys

selowes. And secundarily it was redysed by Sebertus then kynge of Eastsaxons o; Essex, aboute the tyme when Ethelbert kynge of Kente buylded saint Pauls church of London. Whiche was after the tyme that Augustus receyued the faythe of Chyste, vpon foure. C. yeres. Then thyrde it was buylded by saint Edwarde the confessor, whiche reigned vpon.iii. hundred & forty yeres after the sayde Sebertus. And fourthly o; lastly by the foysesayde Henry the thyrde, which began hys regne after the deathe of saint Edwarde. C.l.yeres.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxv.

Raufe Sandewyche.

Water Blount.

John Wade.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxvi.

Anno. xliii.

The. xliii. yere

In þ. xliii. yere of kynge Edwarde, at a parliament holden at Westminster were made þ statutes called Additamenta Gloucestre, whiche is to meane addicions of statutes, made & put to such as before tyme were made at the parliament holden at Glouceter. The whiche statutes were made to reforme suche persons as misused the landes & tenementes comyng to them by reason of the dower o; landes of they; wyues, so that the chyldren of þ seconde husbände putte by the ryght full inherytours, o; suche as were nexte alped vnto the fyrste donours. By reason of whiche statutes and addicions now in thys Parlyamente made, suche misorder was reformed.

In this yere o; nere there aboute, in a towne of Almayne called Tractete, many men and women (as wytnesseth þ authoure of Cronica cronica) were daunsyng vpon a bydge, which lape ouer a ryuer called Boose. In

whiche tyme of they; dyspoyte & daunsyng, came by a p;easte bearynge the sacrament toward a seke man, wher of the sayde men and women beynge in reuell toke no regarde vnto the sacrament, no; dyd to it any honoure & reuerence. But were it by the wyche of god o; otherwyse, shortly after the p;easte was passed ouer, the bypoge byake, by meanes wherof, nere vnto the number of two. C. persones were drownd. And aboute this same season in the countee called in Englyshe the Swetesers, a woman was deliuered of a chyld, that frome the nauyll vpwarde had.ii. complete bodpes, as liii. armes, and two hedres, wryth two bodpes to the waste, and done warde, but two legges, the whiche the foysesayde armes be clippyd epyther others bodpe. And an other woman bare a chyld o; a monster, wherof the heade and þ face was lyke vnto a man, and all the bodpe lyke vnto a Lyon, wryth taylor and fete and all other fetures,

accor.

The seventh parte.

121.

In this yere also a citezen of London named Thomas Wypleston, the whiche in the tyme of the barons warre befoze in þe story of kyng Henry thewed, had been a capitaine, and a greate stirrer of the commons of the said citee, for to mainteine the barons partie againe the kyng, was newly accused, that he with other of euill disposicion, should make conuenticles and assbles to the newe distourbaunce of the citee. Wherof repozte was made vnto the kyng, the whiche remitted the enquiry therof vnto sir Rauffe Sandewiche then custos or gardeine of the citee. Then the said Thomas with other was putte in sure keepng till the mater were duly enquired of. After whiche inquisicio made and founde, repozte was made vnto the kyng. Then the kyng sent downe a writte, and commaunded it to bee proclaimed shortly after with in the boundes of þe citee, wherof the effecte was thus, that the said Thomas Wypleston, wylliam de Heywoode Rycharde de Coundis, Rycharde le Cofferre, Robert de Derby, Albnye de Darby, wylliam Mayo Mercer, and Iuo L yng Draper, with diuers other to the noubre of .i. persones, should bee banished out of the citee for euer. And if any of the said. lviij. persones were at that tyme of þe proclamation voided the citee for fere or otherwise, that thei should so remaine, and not to retourne vnto the citee vpon paine of life losyng.

In this yere also, where as of olde tyme long befoze this seaso, the marchauntes straungers commyng with their marchaundise, were lodged in citezens of the citee of London, and sold all their marchaundises by the procuryng of his host, for the whiche his said host had a certaine of euery .li: by meanes of þe said marchauntes straungers it was at this daye brought to passe, that thei might hire to them houses for to dwell in, & for stowage of their wares so that no citezeine should entermidle hym with the said straungers nor yet their wares, by meane wherof thei vsed many deceptes, bothe in vtteraunce of false wares, & also by their weightes which thei vsed in their owne houses, to þe greate hurte of þe hole realme of England. Wherfoze sodainly serche was made, & their weightes founde & proued false. And ouer þe all suche wares as thei should haue weighed at the kynges beame, thei weighed muche therof in their said houses, to the henderaunce of þe kynges custome for whiche offences againe theim proued, to the nombre of .xx. of þe said straungers were arrested, & sent to the toure of London, & their weightes bzent and consumed in westchepe of London, the thursdape befoze þe feast of Symon & Jude. And finally the said marchauntes were deliuered by fine makyng to the kyng of a thousande.li. when thei had suffered by a season harde and vile prisonement.

A liberte geuen to straungers to hire houses to sell their wares in.

The weightes of þe straungers founde false.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxvi.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxviij.

Thomas Crosse.

Sir John Wyton.

Anno. xv.

Wylliam Habteyn.

This yere.

I A this. xv. yere, the Jewes of England were selled at greate

summes of mony whiche thei paid vnto the kyng: But of one other
ll. i. autout

Edward the first.

auctour it is said, that the commons of England graunted to the kyng the .v. parte of their mouables for to haue the Jewes banished out the land. For whiche cause the said Jewes to putte the commons from their purpose, gaue of their free willes greate summes of money to þe kyng. Whiche sayng appeareth to be trewe, for the said Jewes were exiled within few yeres after.

Howe kyng Edward say-
led into Bur-
deauz.

This yere about þe beegynnyng of Maie the kyng sailed to Burdeauz, and from thens he rode into Fraunce where as witnesseth the freche boke he was honourably receiued of Phi-
lip le Beau or Philip the fayre then

kyng of Fraunce, and after receiued homage of the said Edward for the duchy of Guyan. And when kyng Edward had taried a season in Fraunce, he retourned vnto Burdeauz, whither came vnto hym certayne ambassadours fro the kyng of Spaine with the whiche he helde long dalliance. Wherfore of þe frenche kyng he was suspected, that he should allie hym with þe kyng of Spaine agains the frenche kyng.

And this yere as testifieth Pol-
tronicon, the somer was so excedyng hote, þe menne died for hete. And this yere whete was so plētuous, þe it was sold at London for .xl. d. a quarter.

Whete sold
for .xl. d. a
quarter.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxviii.

Wylliam

Raiffe Sandewiche.

Thomas Stanis.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxviii.

Herforde.

Anno. xvi.

The. xvi. yere.



In this. xvi. yere of kyng Edward, fill distaunce betwene sir Paine Typtoft wardein of certayne castels in walis, and a walsh knight called sir Ries ap Iordek. So that sundry skirmishes were foughten betwene thein, and mene slaine vpon bothe sides, to the greate distourbaunce of all þe countre. This yere vpon saint Margaretes

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxviii.

Wylliam

Raiffe Sandewiche.

John of Caunterbury.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxix.

Betain.

Anno. xvii.

The. xvii. yere.



In this. xvii. yere, the warre beefore in þe yere laste paste, betwene sir Payn Typtoft and sir Ries cōtinuyng, to the entent that the said Ries might re-
venge his cause againe the said sir

euin, on þe .xix. dape of Juli, fill won-
drefull greate haile, þe the like therof was not of menne then liuyng seen. And after þe ensued continuall raine, whiche distēperid þe ground in suche wise, þe the yere solowpnyng whete was sold for. xviii. d. a bushell, & this yere for. xlii. d. And so encreased perely after durpnyng þe reigne of the kyng, & after in his lonnes dates, till it was lastly sold for. xl. s. a quarter & aboue.

W. Grant.

Paine, he accreted a greate multitude of walshmen & bent & wasted di-
uers towne in walis, so þe kyng then beyng in Roymond, sent vnto the erle of Cornewail the beyng the kynges liue tēaunte in England, that he should send thither an armie of

The seventh parte.

of knightes to withstand the malice of the wallshienne. The whiche prepared shortly an armie, and rode wth them into the borders of Northw^{al}lis. Where he with his compaignie

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxix.

Fulke of saint Edmund.

Rauke Sandewyche.

Salamon Langford.



A this .xliij. yere bp^o our Ladye in Assumpcion, kyng Edward was honorably receiued of the citezeins of London, and so coueted vnto westminster, where shortly after were brought beefore hym many greuous complaintes of dyuers of

bare hym so knightly, that in shende the said wyfe was take and brought vnto Poike, where he was after dw^{en}, hanged, and quartered.

Anno domini. M. CC. cc.

Anno. xliij.

his iustices, as sir Thomas weplad Adam Stretto and other. The whiche the kyng caused streightly to be examined, & lastly were founde gilty of suche trespasses and causes as they were accused of. Wherfore some of them were outlawed and loste suche goodes as they hadde, & the other punished by long enprissonm^{ete}, & lastly deliuered by payng of greate fines.

Anno domini. M. CC. cc.

Thomas Romayn.

Rauke Sandewyche.

Wyllm de Lyze.

Anno domini. M. CC. ccj.

Anno. xli.



A this .xli. yere, the kyng ordeined that all w^{oll} whiche shoulde be sold vnto straungers, shoulde be brought vnto Sandewyche, where the staple therof long after was, as it is now at þ^e towne of Caleis. And this yere were the Jewes banished the land, for the whiche cause the commons gaue vnto the kyng a quindecim o^r

fistene.

This yere also sir Gilbert de Clare erle of Glocester, married dame Jane daughter of kyng Edward. This was called Johanne of Acris for she was borne at Acris, when kyng Edward was there bp^o his greate iourney. And soone there after in þ^e same yere, the duke of Braban his sonne wedded Margaret the sister of the said Johanne.

Anno domini. CC. ccj.

Rauke Blount.

Rauke Sandewyche.

Hamonde Bore

Anno domini. M. CC. ccj.

Anno. xli.



A this .xli. yere and begynnyng of þ^e mayres yere, & also of the kynges .xli. yere, þ^e is to meane vpon þ^e euil of saint Andrew^e the .xxix. date of Nouemb^{er}, died queene Eliano^r the kynges wife, and

was buride at westminster in þ^e chapel of saint Edward at the fete of Hen^{ry} the thyrde. This gentyll woman as beefore is towded in the .xxliij. yere of kyng Hen^{ry} the thyrde, was sister vnto the kyng of Spaine

L. ij. B.

Edward the first.

By whom kyng Edward had four
 soones, that is to saie, John, Henry
 Alphons, and Edward. Whiche Ed-
 ward succeeded his father, by reason
 that the other thre died befoze their
 father. Also he had by his .v. dought-
 ers. The first Elpanoz, was married
 vnto wyllyam erle of Barre, the se-
 conde Johan of Acre, was married
 as befoze is saied vnto the erle of
 Glouceter, the thyrde Margarete,
 was married to the dukes soonne of

Byabant, p. lxxx. Mary by name, was
 made a mechon at Ambysbury, and
 the .v. named Elizabeth, was married
 vnto the erle of Holand, and after
 his deth she was married vnto Hum-
 frey Boherum erle of Hereforde.

And this yere dyed also the olde
 quene Elpanoze wife vnto Henry the
 thyrde and mother to this kyng Ed-
 ward, whose herte was buried at the
 grate steres in Londo, and his bodie
 at Ambysbury in p. hous of nunnes.

Anno domini. M. CC. xcij.

Anno domini. M. CC. xcij.

Henry Bale.

Raiffe Sandewyche.

Anno. xcj.

Elys Russell.

The. xcj. yere.



In this. xcj. yere, p. kyng
 helde his greate court
 of parlyament at Lon-
 don, to the whiche with
 diuers lordes of p. pro-
 uince came p. kyng of Scottes. And
 after he had continued there a con-
 ueniente season, he was conueighed
 by diuers lordes ferre vpon his iour-
 ney toward his olde countree.

And in this yere, as one Rycharde
 Bagle officer of p. sheryffes of Londo
 was ledyng a prysoner toward the
 gayole, the whiche he befoze had ar-
 rested. iii. mene rescowed the said prys-
 oner, & toke hym from p. officer. The
 whiche were pursued & take, and by
 iudgement & lawe the bled brought
 into westchepe, and there had their
 right handes smiten of by p. wretches.

Anno domini. M. CC. xcij.

Anno domini. M. CC. xcij.

Robert Rokillep

Raiffe Sandewyche.

Anno. xcij.

Martyn Iwby.

The. xcij. yere.



In p. xcij. yere of kyng
 Edward, vnto the daye
 of saynt Cyburce and
 Valerian, o. the. xiiij.
 daye of Maye, fell a
 woonderfull snow and therewith an
 excedyng wynde. By violence wherof
 greate harme was dooen in sundry
 places of England.

In this yere also about the ende
 of the moneth of July, dyed freer
 Bekham then archebysshop of Caun-
 terry. In whose sea was after stal-
 led maister Robert of Wynchester.

And about the middes of Septe-
 bre folowynge, the erle of Barre a
 frenche manne, married Eliano, the
 kynges doughter in p. towne of Wy-
 stowe. And about p. ende of this yere
 died Alexander kyng of Scottes, where
 soone after ensued greate warre and
 trouble for the enheritaunce of p. land
 as in some parte shall after appere.

In this yere whete was soulede at
 London for. ii. s. a bushell. In this
 yere also as witnesseth the frenche
 cronicle Philip le Beaue then kyng
 of Fraunce made warre in Gascopne
 and

and Guyan, so; the cause as there is shewed, saying that kyng Edward vnder colour to haue made a biage into the holy lande, gathered a great armie, and sodainly entred into Normandy bothe by lāde and water, and did muche harme in spoyling and takyng diuerse shippes of Fraunce, and byrnyng and spoyling diuers townes of thesame, and after came vnto the towne of Rochell, where to it the Englyshemenne made diuers assautes, wherby the dwellers and also þe towne susteined muche harme.

Wherof the kyng of Fraunce being enfourmed, sent vnto kyng Edward, monishyng hym to come vnto his parlamente, and also to make satisfaction for suche harmes as his people had dooen within his domi-

nion of Fraunce and Normandy. But so; that kyng Edward refused that to dooe, therfore the said Philip le Beave sent Raulfe de Acell then constable of Fraunce into Gasconne with a greate and mighty power, the whiche made sharpe warre vpon the Gasconnes. But þe Gasconnes with helpe of the Englyshemenne defended theim in suche wyse, that greate hurte was dooen vpon bothe parties. Then finally as testifieth the said frenche cronicle, to the entent þe kyng Edward might make the better clayme to all the hole duchy of Normandy, he sent the frenche kyng word, that he would geue ouer into his handes the duchie of Guyan and hold no lande of þe kyng of Fraunce.

Anno domini. M. CC. xciiij.

Anno domini. M. CC. xcib.

Henry Boze.

Sir John Byton.

Anno. xciiij.

Richard Gloucestre.



At this .xciiij. yere, the walshmen by stirryng of one named Madok, rebelled againe the kyng. Wherfore he in all haste spedde hym vnto westchester, and about the feast of sainte Archolus, wan fro the walshmenne the Isle called Anglesea or the Isle of Manne, and buylded newe þe citee & castell of Beau Marple, & brought the vnstedfast walshmenne to newe reclayme, and then caused þe woodes of the countree to bee betwyn downe, wherein befoze tymes thei vled to hyde theim as a cony dooeth in his claper, and repaired so the castelles and strong holdes with building of some newe, that he caused the walshmenne to thyrue againe their wylles. For by the strengthe of those castel-

les, thei were kepte from their olde accustomed rauyns and stelynges and put so in execucio by the rulers of the saied castelles and strong holdes, that thei fill vnto occupacion & to byyng and sellyng and gathered treasour, and beganne to liue after the maner of Englyshemenne, so that moze and moze that countree grewe to moze restefulnesse and peace.

In this yere also the frenchemene arrived at Douer with a certain of shippes, beeyng vnder the rule of sir Mathew de mounte mozeney and of sir John Harcourte knyghtes, and spoyled that towne, and byente a parte of it.

In whiche skirmishe was slaine Thomas of Douer. And in this one yere as testifieth þe frenche cronicle, Charles de Walops brother vnto
ll. iij. kyng

On mill.
m.

where þe wal.
men were
summed from
wygh.

Edward the first.

kyng Philip of Fraunce, was set by his said brother into Gascoyne with a greute hooste. The which Charles laied his siege vnto þe castell of Ryon, wherein at that time where sir John

Seign John, and John de Britains þe whiche manfully and bygozously defendid the said castell againe the Frenchmenne all that yere and moze as in the next yere shall appere.

Anno domini. M.C.C.ccb.

Anno domini. M.C.C.ccb.

Sir John Byron.

John Dunstable.

Anno. xciii.

Adam Halyngbery.

The xciii.
yere.

A greute sub-
sidie.



At this .xciii. yere, the kyng for þe greute warre þe he had with þe freche kyng and els where, comaunded a new subsidie to bee liued vpon all the sarplers of wolles goyng out of Englande, with all fellys and hydes in like maner. And ouer that, all suche money as be fore was graunted by the clergy of Englande toward the defence of the holy lande, the kyng then for reposit that he hadde from Rome of the bishoppe of Romes maners than Boniface the .viij. comaunded it to bee brought vnto his tresoury. And by a conuocation made of the said clergy, he had graunted toward his nedes halfe of their spirytuall and tempozall landes, beegynnyng at .xx. marke benefice, and so ascodyng bywarde, the whiche was not payd in one yere, but by deuided porcions in thre yeres ensuyng. And of þe layfee or tempozall menne of England, he had graunted to him þe .x. peny of their mouables, the whiche was payd in twoo yeres next ensuyng. And this yere in the moneth of Marche, was drawen and hanged at London for treason dooen in Fraunce, a knight called sir Thomas Turbeuple. And aboute þe tyme of Easter whan Charlys de Valoys as ye beefore in that other yere haue harde, had lyeu log at the castell of Ryon, and might no-

thyng winne vpon the Englyshmen but daily losse of þe best of his knyghtes, he sent for moze ayde & socoure. At whiche tyme came vnto him sir Raoulfe Aile counstable of Fraunce with a freshe compaignie, and thā assawted it of newe. But when thei had lyeu there a seaso, and sawe thei preualled nothyng agayn their enemies, thei yode vnto an holde there by named Boudency, and it assuted for so muche as the moze nombze of þe souldyours there, were Normans and after eight dayes by appointement or otherwys gat the said holde so that all the Englyshmen had their libertie and goodes, and þe Normans taken as prysoners, the whiche thei brought after vnto þe castell of Ryon and there in sight of the souldyours hanged all or the moze partie of the said Normans. Whē the Gascones beeyng within the towne and castell of Ryon, sawe then their counsels & countrei menne hanged beefore their yien, thei caste in their myndes that it was dooen by treaso of þe Englyshmenne, and that thei would at legth deale with them in like maner. By reason wherof strife and varyaunce arose beetweene the Englyshmenne and the Gascones, so that either of them fered the treason of the other. For the whiche cause, sir John Seign John, sir John de Britain, sir Robert Typtoft, sir Raoulfe Tanny sir Hugh

Crutest.

Hugh Bardolke, and Sir Idame Cre-
tyng, with dyuers other fledde by sea
and in that maner saued them self,
and soone after the said towne and
castell of Ryons was wonne by the
Frenchemen, & the enhabytautes of
thesame sworne vnto þe frēch kyng.

Þe haue harde beefore in the .xxi.
pere of this kyng, howe after þe dethe
of Alexander kyng of Scottes many
questyons fell enōg the said Scot-
tes, who by right of enherytaunce
shoulde bee kyng of that lande, consi-
dering that the said Alexander had
left after hym thre doughters, the
whiche leuyng their father were ma-
ryed. The first to Sir John Bayloll,
the seconde to Robert le Bruze, and
the thyrde to one named Hastynge.
Many of the lordes of Scotlande
would haue crowned Sir John Bay-
loll, by reason þe he married the eldest
doughter. But the frendes of Robert
le Bruze withstode it with all their
power. And other there were þe helde
with Hastynge, so that after greate
strife and long variaunce, the mater
was brought beefore kyng Edward
as chief lord and souerain of that
lade, promysing to hym to abyde all
suche determinaciō and iudgemente
as he shoulde sette therein. The kyng
Edward to thend that the Scottes
shoulde knowe perfectly, þe the kyng
of Englande ought of right to bee
there chief hed and souerain, shewed
vnto them suche old wrytynges as
he litle tofore had caused to bee ser-
ched and foude, in the whiche it was
conteyned by þe auctoritie of old cro-
nicles and wryters, as Morianus þe
scotte, wyllyam of Walmesbury, Ro-
ger of Hentyngdon, and other that
in the pere of our lord .ix. C. .xx. kyng
Edward the elder made subiect vn-
to hym the kynges of Cumbris and

Scottes.

Also in the pere of grace .ix. C. and
.xxi. the foresaid Scottes and Cumbris
chause þe said Edward the elder to
bee their chief lord and patron. And
in pere of our lord .ix. C. .xxi. Ethel-
stane the kyng of England subdued
Constantyne then kyng of Scottes
and after admytted the said Consta-
ntyne to reigne as kyng vnder hym,
by other obeysaunce, with feaute and
homage. And Edward brother to
the said Ethelstane, subdued of newe
the Scottes with the Northumbrys
and receiued of them again othe &
homage. And ouer that it is founde
in þe said cronicles, that Edgar ouer-
came Alphuntius the soone of kyn-
adus kyng Scottes, and receiued of
hym feawty and homage, and helde
hym vnder his obeysaunce as he had
doen his father kynadus beefore
tyme. Moreover it is there witnes-
sed, that Canutus in the .xvi. pere of
hys reigne, subdued Malcolpne the
kyng of Scottes, and receiued of
hym feawty and homage. Further-
more wyllyam Conquerour in the
vi. pere of his reigne, subdued Mal-
colpne kyng of Scotlād, the whiche
beefore tymes had receiued the said
kyngdome of the gifte of Edward
kyng and confessor. And wyllyam
the rede did in likewise vnto the said
Malcolpne, and vnto his twoo soon-
nes that reigned in Scotlande the
one after þe other. Also David kyng
of Scottes did homage vnto Ste-
phane then kyng of Englande.

And wyllyam kyng of Scottes
did homage vnto Henry the thyrde,
at the tyme of his coronacion, and
after came vnto his father Henry the
seconde, when the forenamed Henry
was deed in Normandy, and made
his homage to hym again.

This

Howe þe Scottes
haue been
made subiect
to England
& dooen their
homage for þe
whole lande.

This Henry that was sooone vn-
to Henry the seconde is of many wy-
ters named Henry the thyrde, for so
muche as he was þe thyrde kyng that
was crowned of that name. But for
he dyed befoze his father, his dedes
been litle spoken of, so that of some
wyters he is nothyng mynded. And
it foloweth in the story, howe þe Ale-
xander kyng of Scottes in the. cxxv.
yere of Henry the thyrde, or sooone of
kyng John, maryed at York the Mar-
garete daughter of the said Henry,
and did vnto hym homage for the
realme of Scotlande, and bounde
hym & his heires kynges of Scot-
lande by his letters patentes, to bee
trewe vnto the said Henry, and vnto
his heires kynges of England, like
as befoze tyme wyllyam kyng of
Scottes had oblyged hym vnto the
second Henry, as befoze in the. cxij.
yere of his reigne is moze manifest-
ly shewed.

And moze, to theim was shewed
the byshop of Romes bulles, þe whi-
che were set befoze tymes into Scot-
lande, by auctorite wherof, þe kynges
of Scotlande wer accursed for thei
would not bee obedyent to their loz-
des kynges of Englande.



When all these pcedentes
were sene by the Scot-
tes, a daye was assy-
gned of metyng at Nor-
ham in þe marches be-
twene Englande and
Scotlande, whether vnto the kyng,
came the chief rulers of the Scottes.
Where thei excused theim to bee
bound vnto the kyng for the obser-
uyng of the kynges ordenaunce, for
so muche as thei lacked a kyng and
an hed, by who all suche ordenaunces
should bee mainteined and holden.
But after by aduice of bothe parties

agrement was made by þe Scottes
that thei should bee bound to obey þe
kynges iudgement. Wherupon bon-
des were made vpon bothe parties,
that is to meane þe kyng was boude
to theim in an hundred thousande
poude, that within twoo monethes
after he had receiued the possessiõ of
þe lande, he should geue it vnto hym
that was thought most rightfull en-
heritour. And þe Scottes were again
boude vnto hym, þe thei should holde
ferme and stable all suche decre and
iudgement as the kyng should geue
in that mater, & also that thei should
bphold & maynteine for their kyng
and ruler, hym that the kyng should
admitte & chose, and none other. Af-
ter whiche bondes made and deliue-
red vpon bothe sydes, the Scottes
sealed kyng Edward, and deliuered
vnto hym by their chartours þe pos-
session of Scotlande, with castelles,
with rightes, with customes, and all
other appertinaunces to that kyng-
dome beelongyng, and sette wardei-
nes in the towne, maniers, and
castelles, þe should saue to hym that
the kyng admitted, all aduantages
and profitis, of the said towne and
other in that meane whyle growyng.

And when all assurance was made
and finished to the agrement of bothe
parties, the kyng called befoze hym
and his counsaill all those parties þe
made claime vnto the kyngdome of
Scotlande. And after their reasons
were well & sufficiently argued and
debated vpon all sides, by aduice al-
well of some of þe lordes of Scotlande
as by his owne counsaill he finally
admitted for kyng sir John Bapoll
as moste rightfull enheritour to the
croune of Scotlande. The whiche
receiued it of hym thankefully, & for
the same in pcesence of the barony of
Englande

Howe Alexan-
der kyng of
Scottes did ho-
mage to Henry
the. iii. for the
realme of Scot-
lande & bounde
his heires
kynges to
doe likewise

The seventh parte.

129.

England and of Scotland did vnto the said kyng Edward his homage, and swate vnto hym feawty. And þe doorn the Scottes with their newe kyng retourned into Scotland.

Anno domini. M. CC. xxvj.

Thomas de Suff.

Sir John Bilton.

Adam de fullam.

Anno domini. M. CC. xxvij.

Anno. xxv.



In this .xxv. yere the kyng commaunded in diuers shires of England, great quantite of whete to bee gathered, & sent into Gascoyne and Guyan, to þe nombze of an .C. M. quarters after some wyters, & soone after set thither sir Edmund his brother erle of Lan castre, sir Hery Lacy erle of Lincolne and sir wyllyam Uespy baron, with diuers other lordes and knyghtes, to strength suche people as he there had redy, whyle he prepared an other army to haue against the Scottes.

Ye haue herde in þe preceding chapter, how sir John Bapoll kyng of Scottes made othe & homage vnto kyng Edward for the kyngdome of Scotland. Of þe whiche othe he shortly repented hym after, by meane of counsell of the abbot of Wencro as saith Policroicon. All bee it that it should seme to bee as well by þe counsaill of the kyng of Fraunce, by woordes þe been wytten in the frenche cronicle. But how so it was by one or by bothe, full intrewly he forsoke his former othe and promise, & armed warre agayne the kyng. Wherefore kyng Edward sped hym thither wth a greate hoost, and in processe laye his siege vnto þe towne of Berwyke. But þe Scottes defeded it egrely, & bete the Englysh me backe, & byent some of þe

And this yere was taken the forenamed Wabok or Weredok, whiche as ye beefore haue herde in the .xxiiij. yere, caused the walschmene to rebell & was drawen & hanged at London.

Englysh shippes. With the whiche entrepryse thei were so enflamed with pride, that in derisio of the kyng thei made this mockische rime folowynge.

What wenys kyng Edward wth his long shankes,
To haue wonne Berwyke, all our ynthankes.

Gaas pykes hym
And when he hath it
Gaas dykes hym.



Whe kyng Edward herd of the pryde of the Scottes, and knewe of their scornefull rime, he was somdeale amoured, and encouraged his knyghtes in suche wise, that thei wanne the dicke of the towne, & after in processe with greate labour and daunger, the Bulwerkes so that thei came vnto the gates and made thei so strong assaute, that in the ende thei wanne the towne, and slewe of the Scottes as witnesseth diuers wyters ouer the nombze of .xxv. M. and tooke prisoners sir wyllyam Douglas, sir Symond de freysell, the erle Batryk, and sir Roberte Bruce, with diuers other, & in shorte tyme after the wardens of the castell of Berwyke sepyng that to hym was sent no socoure, yelded by the said castell by appointement. And when the kyng had possession of the towne and castell of Berwyke, he the streng thed

ched theim w Englishemene. And after wane the holdes of Cyndall of Egham, of wyerbyrd, and of Lamerstoke, with diuers other.

And while þ kyng Edward was thus busied about the winnyng of these foresaid holdes, he sent sir Hugh Spencer, with sir Hugh Percy and other noble mene, with a part of his hoost, to laye siege vnto Dunbarre. Where whē thei had laine a certain of tyme, an hoost of Scottes came thither to reinoue the siege, w whom the Englishe menne had a fiers and cruell batell. But in the ende by help of god & saint George, the Englishe menne had the victorie, and slewe of the Scottes aboue the nombze of, xx. A lost of þ Englishe compaignie a verate fewe in nombze. Wherfoze the Englishe menne in reproche of þ Scottes, made this rime folowynge.

These scaterand Scottes
Holde wee for sottes
Of wyenches vnware
Ely in a moynynge
In an euill tymynge
Came thei to Dunbarre.



And after this victorie þ towne and castell of Dunbarre was wone in þ whiche were take prisoners thre erles, seven barons, and. xxviii. knyghtes, with diuers menne of the church.

Anno domini. M. CC. xxviii.

John de Stortford.

Sir John Byton.

William de Stortford.



In this. xxviii. yere, kyng Edward w a pusaunte armie in the moneth of August, toke shippynge at douer, and sailed in to Flaunders, to aied and helpe Guy

Then the kyng sped hym to Edenborough, and in processe of tyme wane the towne with þ castell. In whiche were sold the regalies of Scotland that is to meane the crowne with the septer and clothe of estate, the whiche after were offered by kyng Edward at the Myne of saint Edward vpon the morowe after the feast of saint Botholfe, on the. xviii. daye of June, in the yere folowynge. And when the kyng had thus subdued þ Scottes, and sette the countree in a reule, he retourned with many prisoners into England. In whiche tyme and seasō the Englishe menne susteyned many hard shoures in Gascopne and Spayn. Among the whiche one is remembred in the frenche cronicle, sayng that Edmund duke of Lancastre, died at Bayon. After whose dethe whyle the towne and other strong holdes prepared theim to withstand the frenche menne Robert erle of Artois, whiche a litle tofoze had encountred with sir John, & had been of hym ouerset, resembled his copaignie, and made hym an other skirmishe. In the whiche he slewe vpon an hundred Englishe menne and Gascopnes, & toke prisoners the fozenamed sir John, Sein John, sir William Mortimer, and other, to the noumbze of. lxx. the whiche were sent into Fraunce vnto diuers prisiones.

Anno domini. M. CC. xxviii.

Anno. xxviii.

then erle of Flaunders againe the frenche kyng. The whiche at þ tyme was soze warried of þ frenche kyng, in somuche that he hadde wonne the towne of Margquet and the coōstre ther aboute. And for to putte þ said Guy

Scotland is
gaine taken
by kyng
Edward.

The seventh parte

171

Guy vnto the moze trouble, the said
Frenche kyng caused Robert erle of
Artois to invade þe countre of Flan-
dres toward Dycardp, & encountred
with þe same Guy nere vnto a towne
called Furnes. Wher atwene þe said
twoo erles was foughten a sharpe
bataill, so þe many menne were slaine
vpon bothe parties. After whiche
fight the erle of Flaunders spedde
hym toward Gaunt, where as kyng
Edward the solourned, and the erle
of Artois dytwe hym towarde the
Frenche kyng, þe whiche shortly after
was receiued into the towne of Bru-
ges. In whiche tyme & season while
the said twoo kynges laie thus at
either towne, a meane of peace was
there treated of, so þe finally a peace
was cōcluded atwene þe twoo kynges
and atwene the Frenche kyng and
Guy erle of Flaunders, vnto þe feste
of all saintes the next ensuyng. And
from that daie, vnto the feast of all
saintes then twoo yeres folowynge.
After whiche peace so stablished,
kyng Edward departed from the
towne of Gaunte & yode to Burde-
aut. And þe Frenche kyng retourned
into Fraunce. And prisioners were
deliuered on bothe parties.

þe frenche
mark

In this tyme and season whyle
kyng Edward was thus occupied
in Flaunders, the Scottes by the
entisement of the Frenche kyng, to
the entent to cause kyng Edward to
kepe his countre, and that he should
not ayde the erle of Flaunders, bee-
ganne to make warre vpon the kynges
souldiours, whiche the kyng had
lefte there in diuers holdes. And al-
so entred vpon þe bordes of North-
berland, & made sharpe warre vpon
the inhabitauntes of that countree.
And for that sir John Bapoll their
kyng, after some wyters, was at that

tyme prisioner in the towne of London
or els voided the countre for fere
of the kyng of England: therfore
the said Scottes made thein a capi-
taine, the whiche was named Wylly-
am waleis a manne of vnknewen
or lowe byrth, to whō thei obried ag
vnto their kyng. Anone as the kyng
herde of the rebellion of the Scot-
tes, whiche to hym was no greate
wonder considerynge their greate vn-
stedfastnesse, he wrote his letters vnto
sir Henry Percy erle of Northum-
berlande, to sir Wyllyam Latimer,
and to sir Hugh Cressingham then
tresourer of England, and to other,
that thei in all goodly haste should
make prouision to withstande the
Scottes. The whiche persones af-
ter receite of þe kynges letters, spedde
thein all in speddy maner, so that thei
entred Scotland shortly after, and
compelled the Scottes to retorne
backe vnto a towne named Streue-
lyn, wher in a skyrmyllhe foughten
atwene the Englishe and the Scot-
tes, sir Hugh Cressingham for ena-
med with diuers Englishe menne
was slaine. But yet þe Scottes were
holden so straitte of the Englishe
hoost, that after that skyrmyllhe thei
would not of a certaine tyme come
in plaine felde, but kepte thein with
in their castelles and strong holdes.
And this yere atwene Easter & wit-
sontide certaine persones of London
broke by the tunne in the warde of
Coznehill, and toke out certaine per-
sones that thither were committed
by sir John Byton, then custos or
gardien of þe citee, for night walkynge
for the whiche riot, the said persōes
that is to meane Thomas Romaine
and. viii. other, were afterward gre-
uously punished, as first by prision-
ment, & after by fynes. And this yere
the

the kyng in the moneth of October came into England, and so to Wyndchester, where the citezens of London made suche labour vnto his grace, & shortly after thei obtained graunte of their liberties and fraunchyses, that had in some parte be kepte fro them by the terme of twelke yeres and moze. So that vpon the daye of the translation of saint Edward kyng and confessor next folowynge thei chase them a maye of them self, where by all þe foresaid tyme their custos or garden was appointed by the kyng, or by suche as the kyng would assigne. But ye shall vnderstande þat this was not redeemed with

out greate summes of mony. For after some wynters the citezens paid for it to the kyng thre. M. marke.

And this yere kyng Edward put out of his protection certayne Alpauntes, whiche were tyche benyficed in England. The cause was for the said alpauntes would not aide the kyng with their goodes, as the other of his land did, but purchaced an inhibicion of Boniface the eight, that thei and their goodes shoulde bee free from all the kynges dimes or taskis. Therefore, the kyng ceased their tēporalties, and suffered them with their spiritualties till thei were agreed with the kyng.

Anno Domini. M. CC. xcviij.

Richard Bessham.

Henry waleis.

Thomas Selp.

Anno Domini. M. CC. xcix.

Anno. xxviij.

The. xxviij.
year.



At this. xxviij. yere after Christmasse, certayne persones made a dygging and a sercheing in the churche of saint Martines le graunde in London, for certayne tresour þat there shoulde bee hidde, as it was reported of a gardiner. But their labour was in vaine, for nothyng was their found. For þe whiche dede the deane of Douglas the second soundaye of lent folowynge, denounced all theim accursed þe were at that dede dooyng, or consentynge to the same.

In this yere aboute the beegynnyng of Aprill, þe kyng rode toward Scotland, and appointed his lordes with thre compaignies to mete with hym at York. Where w hym mette a greate hoost, the whiche he ladde into Scotland, and bent and spoiled the countree as he wente, and tarried a season at Barwike. And from

thes he spedde hym in winnyng of þe townes & castelles as he went till he came to a towne named Faukyrk or Fakirk. Where w þe daye of mary Magdeline, or the. xxiiij. daie of July, mette w hym þe power of Scotland, & gaue vnto hym a sore fight. But in the ende þe victorie fell vnto the Englishmenne, so þe of the Scottes were slaine in the felde as affirme diuers wyters, ouer þe nombre of. xxxij. M. of Englishmen but barely. xxviij. persons. After whiche discōfiture þe Scottes yelded to the kyng the moze partie of the strong holdes and castelles that thei tofore had holden againe hym, & made vnto hym newe othe & promise, and yelded theim self vnto his grace and mercy. And when he had sette that countree in an ordere & rule, he then retourned into Englad, & so to London. Where by þe aduice of some of his counsaill, he sodenly dāpned certayn copnes of mony cal-

ed
and homage
made by the
Scottes.

led
Certaine cop-
nes of mony
dāpned.

The seventh parte.

led pollardes, crocades, & rosaryes, and caused the to be brought to newe coppage to his great aduantage.

Ye haue before herde in that other pte, howe that a truce or a peace was stablyshed betwene the kynge and the kynge of Fraunce, for the space of .ii. yeres and moze, the whiche synallye was concluded this yere, that kynge Edward for a peace to be hadde betwene both regyons, shulde take vnto wyfe Margarete the suster of Phylippe Beawe, then kynge of Fraunce.

Anno domini. M. CC. xxiij.

Elys Russell.

John Amenter.

Henry Feyngeryth.

237

The whiche Margarete whyle the king was in Scotland was brought vnto Douer, and so vnto Canterburie, where the kynge spoused her in the moneth of September, as wittenesseth the frenche cronycle, and receiued of her in processe of time folowynge twoo sonnes named Thomas and Edmund, and a doughter named Margarete. The fyrrst of the sonnes was surnamed Thomas of Brotherton, and the second Edmund Mowdestoke.

Anno domini. M. CCC.

Anno. xxviii.

Chaptil
in.

Chaptil. vop.
made by
kynge Ed.
made into
Bostons.

In this. xxviii. yere, þe kynge hearing of the vntrowth & rebellyon of þe Scottes, made the.iii. voyage into Scotlande, & bare him so knightly, that in short processe after his coming he subdued the moze parte of the land. And after he sped hym vnto the castell of Estryuelin, wherin were many of the greate lordes of Scotland, and enuironed the saide castell with a stronge spege. But he laye there somewhat of tyme withoute winning of any great aduantage, or hurte doyng vnto þe Scottes. Wherfoze of policy he caused to be made.ii. payre of galowes in the syghte of the castell, & after commaunded proclamacions to be cryed, that if the Scottes by a certayne dape wolde yelde that castell vnto the kinge, they shulde haue lyfe & lymme. And yf not but that he wanne it by strengthe, as many as were within the sayde castell shuld be hanged vpon those gibettes none estate nor persone to be excepted. In processe of tyme when the Scottes had well dysgested thys proclama-

cyon, and sawe the strengthe of theyr enemyes, & consydered theyr owne feblenes & lak of socoure, they assented synally to yelde them and their castell vnto the kynge, whiche shortly after was done. Wherof kynge Edward being possessed, stuffed it with Englysh knyghtes, and after toke a newe othe of the Lordes and Capytaynes, the whiche he founde closed wpythin that castell, of trewe and fapthfull allegaunce, and after suffered them to go where they lyked.

And when William Malys, which as before is sayde pretended the rule and gouernaunce of Scotland, hard tell that the stronge castell of Estryuelyn was yelde vnto kynge Edward, and that lordes and knyghtes therein founden in whiche he muche assayed, were sworne to the kynges allegaunce, he feared soze lesse þe sayde company wolde betraye him, & byng hym vnto þe kynge. Wherfoze he with his adherentes withdreyue him into þe marishes and other daungerous places, where he thought he was in suer

mm.i. tye

eye for purfuyng of the kinges hoſte.

Then the poore commons of the lande preſented theſe by greate compaignes, and putte theſe holpe in the kynes grace and merces, ſo that the kyng thoughte then that he was in peayſble poſſeſſion, or in a greate ſuccette of the lande. Wherefoze after he hadde cauſed to be ſworne vnto hym the rulers of dyuers bozoughes, cyties, and townes, with other officers of the lande, he returned vnto Berkeſhire and ſo into Englande, and laſtely vnto Weſtmynſter.

In theſe tyme and ſeaſon that the kyng was thus occupied aboute his warres in Scotlande, the quene was conueyed vnto London. Againe whiche the cytezens vpon the number of. vij. rode in one ſyuer of read & white, with the conſaunce of dyuers myſtreyes bzodered vpon theſe ſleues, and receiued her foure myles without the cytie, and ſo conueyed her thozoughe the cytee, whiche then was garniſhed and behanged with tapets and arras and other clothes of ſylke and ryches in moſte goodly wyſe, vnto Weſtmynſter, and there lodged.

When the kyng this yere was returned out of Scotlande, he cauſed hoſtely after an inquiſycion to be made thozough his lande, the whiche after was named Troilbaſton. This was made vpon all officers, as mayors, iuſtices, baylyſſes, exchequers, & many other that had myſborne theim in theſe ſayde officers, and had extor-

cyoned or miſtreated the kinges liege people otherwiſe then was accordyng with the good order of theſe ſayde officers. By meane of whiche inquiſycion manie were accuſed, and redeemed theſe officers by greuous ſynes to the kynes greate lucre and aduantage. Other meanes were founden alſo, as forſaites againſt crowne the whiche bzoughte greate ſummes of money to the kynes cooſers, towarde the greate charge of theſe warres the ſuſtained in Wallis, Fraunce and Scotlande, as befoze is ſhewed, this yere alſo the kyng for complaint that was bzought vnto hym by maſter walter Langton biſhop of Cheſter, of theſe Edward theſe eldeſt ſonne, for that he with Wyers of Gaueſtone and other insolent perſones had bzoken the ſayde parke of the ſayde biſhoppe, and vtouſlye deſtroyed the game wythin it: he therfoze impriſoned the ſayde theſe Edward his ſonne with his complices. And in proceſſe of tyme after, when the kyng was thozoughlye enſourmed of the laſſyuous and wanton diſpoſicions of the ſaide Wyers of Gaueſtone, for that he ſhulde not enduce the ſaydenamed theſe Edward to be of lyke depoſicion: he therfoze baniſhed the ſaide Wyers of Gaueſton out of Englande for euer. But after the death of king Edward the baniſhment was ſoone denulled by Edward his ſonne, wherof enſued muche harme and trouble, as after ſhalbe ſhewed.

Anno domini. M. CCC.

Anno domini. m. CCC. l.

Elys Russell.

Luke Hauerynge.

Anno. m. c. x.

Rycharde Champets.

The. x. p.

In this. xxix. yere of kyng Edward, dyed Edmund earle of

Cornewale, the ſonne of Rycharde ſomtime earle of the ſayde countree & kyng

The cytezens
clothed in
whye & red.

Inquiſycion
de Troilbaſton.

The seventh parte.

kyng of Almayne, withoute pssue.
Wherfoze that earldome retourned
agayne to the crowne of Englande.
And in thys yere, the kyng gaue

vnto sy Edward hys sonne the p^{ri}ncipate and hed of Wales, and taryned
therunto the sayd earldom of Coyne
wale.

Anno domini. M. CCC. i.

John Blount.

Robert Caller.

Peter Bolham.

Anno domini. M. CCC. ii.

Anno. xxx.

In thys thyrtye yere, the kyng
helde his great counceyl of par-

lyamente at hys Cytie of Caunter-
burie.

Anno domini. M. CCC. iii.

John Blount.

Hugh Pourt.

Symon Darys.

Anno domini. M. CCC. iiii.

Anno. xxxi.

Anno domini. xlii. C. iiii.

John Blount.

Willpam Combmartyn.

Anno domini. xlii. C. iiii.

Anno. xxxii.

Anno domini. M. CCC. liii.

John de Burfforde.

Anno domini. M. CCC. v.

John Blount.

Rogger Darys.

Anno. xxxiii.

John Lyncolne.



At this xxxiii. yere, Wyl-
lam Wales that vn-
to the kyng had doone
so manye dyspleasures
and treasons, agayne
the trouthe and alleg-
aunce of hys othe, as some deale be-
foze is shewed, was taken at þe towne
named saint Dominys in Scotland
and sent vnto London, and there ar-
rayned, and vpon the euen of saynt
Bartholmewe, dya wen, hanged, and
quartered, and hys hedde sette vpon
London byrde, and his foure quar-
ters sent into Scotlande, & there han-
ged vpon the gates of certayne tow-
nes of the lande. And at Wychemas
folowynge, the kyng holdynge hys
parlyament at Westmynster, thether

came oute of Scotlande the byshop
of saynt Andrews, Robert le Buzze,
sy Symon de Frysell earle of Dun-
barre, sy John of Cambryes earle of
Ayles, and sy John Comyn wth o-
ther, the whiche voluntaryly were
sworne in p^{re}sence of the kyng and
hys lordes, that they shulde be trewe
vnto the kyng of England, and kepe
the lande of Scotlande to hys vse a-
gayne all other persones. And yf any
rebell or other malycious persone dis-
turbeth the lande, or b^{re}ake the kin-
ges peace, they shoulde cause hym to
be taken, and sente vnto the kyng,
with many other articles concerning
ther allegaunce, the which full fal-
sely they b^{re}ake and contraryed Woz-
teyl after.

The Scottes
ret agayne
thre truthe
and alleg-
aunce to the
kyng of En-
glande.

mm. ii. Anno

The xxxiii.
part.

The falsed &
deceyte of the
Scottes.

In this. xxxiii. yere, Robert le Buzze contrary hys othe to kyng Edward befoze made, assembled the lordes of Scotland, & by the counsell of the abbot of Stone & other that fauored his vntrowth, he sente vnto Clement the. v. for a dyspensacion of hys othe befoze made vnto kyng Edward, and surmysed to hym that kyng Edward vered and greued the realme of Scotland wronfully. Wherupon the byshop of Rome wrote vnto king Edward to leaue of suche doynge.

And whyle thys matter was thus complayned on vnto the byshoppe of Rome, he sayde Robert le Buzze made all the labour he might vnto he lordes of Scotlande he were admitted for king of that region, so he vpon he dave of the conception of our Ladie, on the viii. day of December, a great assemble of the lordes was made at the abbey of Stone. And vpon he day folowynge, by the meanes of the abbot of he place many of the said lordes assented to the wyll of he sayde Robert, excepte he John Comyn only. The which in defence of his trowth and othe befoze swozne vnto kyng Edward, manye reasons and excuses made, & fynally sayde that he wolde not false hys othe for no man. For thys, the sayde he John Comyn had greute maugre of he Robert le Buzze, & many of the nobles of Scotland. But he helde his opynyon so fermely, that other begane to take hys parte, that in that counsell rose suche contrarpytie of opynyons and reasons, that the saide counsell was dyscolued, and a newe sette

at the grape fettes of Dunfrye after Candelmas nexte ensuyng. At which dave of assemble whenne the cause of their meting was by Robert le Buzze denounced and shewed, & many of the great lordes of he lande had graunted to hym the he apdes and assistance, the forrenamed he John Comyn & other sat still and saide no word. Which Robert le Buzze marked well, and to hym sayde: And you he John I trust for defence and weale of thys realme pe wyll not be behinde. Wherunto he answered, he I wolde that pe and all my lordes here presente knowe well, that for the weale and defence in the ryghte of thys lande, I wolde stande with it to the vttermost of my power. But for I se that pe entende rather he subuerpyon than the weale thereof, I wyll therfore pe know, I shall nother ayde you with counsaile nor yet with strength. Some other also there were whole names the auctoure myndeth not, whiche allowed the sayenge of the sayde he John, and in some wordes admytted hys sadde and trewe answer. For the whiche Robert le Buzze was so amoued, that when he John Comyn wyth he Roger hys brother was departed from the counsell, and was comen into the church of the fettes, Robert le Buzze hym folowed and wounded to the deth wyth his swerde, and after slewe sir Roger hys brother, whiche wolde haue defended the forsaide he John. After whose deth lytell or no respytence was made againe the vntrewe meane and dedes of the sayde Robert le Buzze, so that he at Saynte Johns towne was crowe.

The seventh parte.

177.

crowned hyngz shortly after.

It was not longe after that kyng Edward was monyshed of all thys vntowthe of the scottes, wherfoze he prepared hym to wende thither. And at Penherosse he helde a great feast of his Barons at Westminster, & despyng that feast made a great number of knyghtes ouer. ii. C. after most wytcys. And þe feast ended, he sente with a fayre company of knyghtes sir Symon de Valaunce earle of Penbroke, and sir Henry Percy earle of Northumberland into Scotland, and sped him selfe with his hoste sone after.

Then about the feast of þe assumpcion of our Lady, the kyngz foughte with the sayde Robert le Bruce & all the power of Scotlande, in a playne nere vnto saynte Johns towne. And after longe fight and great slaughter of the scottes to the nuber of. vii. M. he chased the scottes. In which chase sir Symon de Feple earle of Dunbarre was taken, with also þe byshoppes of saint Idrys and of Baskone, the abbot of Scoon or Scoon, & sir John Chibbes earle of Isles. Which byshoppes and abbot kyng Edward sent after vnto innocent p. v. then byshop of Rome, to repore of theyr per

jury, & he to they were taken armed in the felde to shedde the bloude of chryste men. And the temporal lordes he sent into England, & so vnto the towne of London. And Robert le Bruce after this discomfytur & losse of his chyrche frendes, fearing least the scottes with such Englyshmen as kyng Edward left there wolde arise agayne him, all comforytes fledde vnto the kyng of Norway, and there abode duringe whyle kyng Edward lyued.

When this noble pryncce Edward had thus subdued the scottes, he pelled thanks to God of his victorie. And when he was ascertayned of the auoidyng of Robert le Bruce, & had sette the lande in a quiet and order, he retourned into Englande.

In this passetyme were the foprenamed lordes of Scotland arcygnd at London, & vpon the euen of þe Natyuite of our Lady put to death, & their heddes after set vpon Londons brydge. And shortly after was John Walleys brother to willa Walleys (which for lyke treason was put to death in the pcedyng fere) taken & hanged & quartered. And some scottes that were taken as prysoners, remained longe in Englad or they might acquite their fyuanee.

Carle of Scotland
of Scotland
deposed.

Anno domini. m. lxxi. C. xl.

John Blount.

Symon Bolet.

Anno domini. m. lxxi. C. xl.

Anno. m. lxxi.

Godfrey de la Conduyt.

In this. m. lxxi. fere, þe kyng for certayne causes him moving, retourned agayne into Scotlande. & after some wyters he tarried at Berwyke, and helde his Chrysmasse and Easter in those parties, & came not into Englande after he had discomfyt the scottes. In the season of somer as he was retournyng into Englande, a spheynesse toke hym

so feruently, that he knewe well he shoulde dye. Wherfoze he beyng at Brughth vpon the lande beyond Carlepyl, called to hym sir Symon de Valaunce earle of Penbroke, sir Henry Percy earle of Northumberland, sir Henry Lacy earle of Lincoln, & sir Robert Cliffozde baron, & caused them to be swozne before hym, that they shoulde crowne his sone Edward in as conuenient.

mm. iii. apent

Anno domini. xlii. C. v.

John Blount.

Edward the fyrste.

Raynolde Doderell.

Wylliam Can yn.

Anno domini. xlii. C. vi.

Anno. xlii.

The xxxiii.
pers.The fallow
deceit of the
Scottes.

In this. xxxiii. yere, Robert le Buzze contrary hys othe to kynge Edward befoze made, assembled the lordes of Scotland, & by the counsell of the abbot of Stone & other that fauored his vntrowth, he sente vnto Clement the. v. for a dyspensacion of hys othe befoze made vnto kynge Edward, and surmpled to hym that kynge Edward vered and greued the realme of Scotland wronkfully. Wherupon the byshop of Rome wrote vnto king Edward to leaue of suche doinges.

And whyle thys matter was thus complayned on vnto the byshoppe of Rome, he sayde Robert le Buzze made all the labour he might vnto he lordes of Scotlande he were admitted for king of that region, so he vpon he dave of the conception of our Ladie, or the viii. day of December, a great assemble of the lordes was made at the abbey of Stone. And vpon he day folowynge, by the meares of the abbot of he place many of the said lordes assented to the wpll of he sayde Robert, excepte sy John Comyn only. The which in defence of his trowth and othe befoze swoyne vnto kynge Edward, manpe reasons and excuses made, & synally sayde that he wolde not false hys othe for no man. For thys, the sayde sy John Comyn had greate maugre of sy Robert le Buzze, & many of the nobles of Scotland. But he helde his opynyon so fermely, that other begane to take hys parte, that in that counsell rose suche contraryette of opynnyons and reasons, that the saide counsell was dyscolued, and a newe sette

at the grape stetes of Dunfrye after Candelmas nexte ensupng. At which dave of assemble whenne the cause of their meting was by Robert le Buzze denounced and shewed, & many of the great lordes of he lande had graunted to hym theyr aydes and assistance, the forrenamed sy John Comyn & other sat still and saide no woorde. Which Robert le Buzze marked well, and to hym sayde: And you sy John I trust for defence and weale of thys realme ye wpll not be behinde. Wherunto he answered, sy I wolde that ye and all my lordes here ptesente knowe well, that for the weale and defence in the ryghte of thys lande, I wolde stande with it to the vttermost of my power. But for I se that ye entende rather he subuersion than the weale thereof, I wpll therfore ye know, I shall norther ayde you with counsaile nor yet with strength. Some other also there were whose names the auctoure myndeth not, whiche allowed the sayenge of the sayde sy John, and in some woordes admytted hys sadde and trewe answer. For the whiche Robert le Buzze was so amoued, that when sy John Comyn wpyth sy Rogger hys brother was departed from the counsell, and was comen into the church of the stetes, Robert le Buzze hym solowed and wounded to the deth wpyth his swerde, and after slewe sir Rogger hys brother, whiche wolde haue defended the forsaide sy John. After whose deth ytell or no respyllence was made agaynst the vntrewe meane and dedes of the sayde Robert le Buzze, so that he at Saynte Johns towne was crow-

The seventh parte.

crowned kynge shortly after.

It was not longe after that kynge Edward was mournful of all this vntrouthe of the scottes, wherfore he prepared hym to wende thither. And at Penbroke he helde a great feast of his Barons at Westminster, & during that feast made a great number of knyghtes over. ii. C. after most winters. And þe feaste ended, he sente with a fayre company of knyghtes sir Symon de Valaunce earle of Penbroke, and sir Henry Percy earle of Northumberland into Scotland, and sped him selfe with his hoste sone after.

Then about the feaste of þe assumpcion of our Lady, the kynge foughte with the sayde Robert le Bruce & all the power of Scotlande, in a playne nere vnto saynte Johns towne. And after longe fight and great slaughter of the scottes to the nuber of. vii. M. he chased the scottes. In which chase sir Symon de Fyfe earle of Dunbarre was taken, with also þe byshoppes of saint Andrews and of Baskone, the abbot of Scoon or Scoon, & sir John Chabres earle of Isles. Which byshoppes and abbot kynge Edward sent after vnto innocent p. b. then byshop of Rome, to repoynt of theyr per

jury, & how they were taken armed in the feilde to wrede the bloude of christen men. And the temporal lordes he sent into England, & so vnto the towne of London. And Robert le Bruce after this discomfytur & losse of his chiefe frendes, fearing least the scottes with suche Englyshmen as kynge Edward left there wolde arise agayne him, all comfoteles fledde vnto the kynge of Frowayre, and there abode duringe whyle kynge Edward lyued.

When this noble pryncce Edward had thus suboued the scottes, he pelled thankes to God of his victorie. And when he was ascertainment of the auoidynge of Robert le Bruce, & had sette the lande in a quiet and order, he retourned into Englande.

In this pascetyme were the forenamed lordes of Scotland arcygned at London, & vpon the euen of þe flaturte of our Lady put to deth, & their heddes after set vpon Londons bridge. And shortly after was John Waleis brother to willa Walleis (which for lyke treason was put to deathe in the preece dig gere) taken & hanged & quartered. And some scottes that were taken as prissoners, remained longe in Englad or they might acquite their sijnance.

These lordes of Scotlande beheaded.

Anno domini. m. l. C. vi.

John Blount.

Symon Bolet.

Anno domini. m. l. C. vii.

Anno. m. l. b.

Godfrey de la Conduyt.

In this. m. l. b. yere, þe kynge for certayne causes him moving, retourned againe into Scotlande. Or after some winters he tarried at Berwyke, and helde his Chyrmasse and Easter in those parties, & came not into Englande after he had discomfited the scottes. In the season of somer as he was retournynge into Englande, a spemelle toke hym

so feruentlye, that he knewe well he shoulde dye. Wherfore he beyng at Berugh vpon the sande beyond Carlepyll, called to hym sir Symon de Valaunce earle of Penbroke, sir Henry Percy erle of Northumberland, sir Henry Lacy earle of Lincoln, & sir Robert Clifforde baron, & caused them to be swoyne before hym, that they shoulde crowne his sone Edward in as conue

m. iii. apend

Edward the fyrste.

upente tyme after hys deathe as they myght, and kepe the lande to his vse, tyll he were crowned.

And that othe by þe sayde Barons taken, he called befoze hym his sonne Edward, and charged hym with dyuers poyntes vpon the charge of hys blessinge. Amonge the whiche one spectall was, þe shulde neuer after that daye suffer dyers of Gaueslon, to retourne into Englande, & so lye a good chrysten prynce dyed shortly after, vpon the vii. daye of þe moneth of Julie, when he had reigned. xciii. yeres. vii. monethes & odde dayes, & after with great solēnitye conuoked vnto Westminster, & there buried in the chapel of saint Edward vpon þe south syde, in a plaine tombe of marble at þe hed of his father. This noble mā had ii. wyues, by þe which as befoze is shewed in þe .xx. & .xxvii. yere of his reigne he had issue as in the sayd yeres appeareth. Of this noble prynce a versifyer made these. ii. verses folowynge.

*Dum uiuit Rex, et ualuit sua magna potestas,
Fraus latuit, pax magna fuit, regnauit honestas*

Which verses maye be englyshed in this maner folowynge.

While lyued this kyng,

By his power all thyng
was in good plyghte.

For gyle was hydde,

Greate peace was kydde,

And honeste had myghte.

An other versifyer also of hym made these verses folowynge, and caused them to be hanged ouer the place of his sepulture.

*Mors ē mesta nimis, magnos qui iugit in imis,
Maxima mors minimis, coniungēs ultima primis
Nullus in orbe fuit homo uiuēs, nec ualet esse,
Qui non morte tuit, est hinc exire necesse.*

*Mobilis et fortis, tibi tu considerare noli,
Omnia sunt mortis, sibi subdit singula soli,
De mundi medio, magnum mors impia mouit,
Anglia pro tedio satis anxie plangere nouit,
Cortuius Edwardus uario uenit atus honore,
Rex nuper et nardus fragans uirtutis odore,
Corde leopardus, iunctus et absque pauore,
Ad rixam tardus, discretus et eucharis ore,
Viribus armorum quasi gygas, ardua gessit,
Colla superbiorum prudens per prelia preffa,
Inter Flandrenses fortuna sibi bene sauit,
Ut quoque wallenses, et scotos subpedauit,
Rex bonus absque parte, strenue sua regna regebat
Quod natura dare potuit bonitatis habebat,
Actio iusticie, pax regni, sanctio legis,
Et fuga nequicie, premunt preconia regis,
Gloria tota ruit, regem caput hec modo fossa
Rex quandoque fuit, nunc nil nisi puluis et ossa,
Filius ipse dei, quem corde colebat et ore,
Gaudia donet ei, nullo per mixta dolore.*

The which verses, to the entent þe they shulde be had in mynde, & also þe the reader myghte haue the moze desyre to ouer rede the, I haue therfoze set theym out in baladde copall, after my rude makynge as foloweth.

This sorrowfull deeth which bringeth grente fill
And moste and leaste he topneth into one clow
This man to whome his yere was not knowe
Bath nowe subdued, not sparenge him alone,
Whiche of all other thyng wolde to ouergone,
None was to be spared, of so grente equyte,
As he, if any, for nobleste spared shulde be.

Therfoze þe noble or mighty, trust none other
But þe shalt pay to deeth thy natural det (grace,
And lye as he from this worlde dyd chace,
This mighty prynce, & from his frendes sette,
For whome all Englande loude mourned and
So shalt thou & other in deches snare fall (gret
None shall escape, to rehen kyndes all.

Edward with many & diuers graces endowed,
And lye as Narcissus moste sweetest of odour
In synellyng passeth, and moste be is allowed,
Of all sweete odours, so dyd this knyghtly floure
By vertuous actes surmount in honour,

All other pynnes, whose harte was lybared by
And without feare, were he hole of spe

Thys pynne was slowe to all maner of styffe
Dyscreete, and wyse, and trewe of hys worde
In armes a Spawnte, terme of all hys lyfe,
Excellynge actes doyngs by dynt of the sword
Subdued the proud, of prudence he bare þe harte
Of flounders by fate he had great amptye
And Walch, & Scottes, by strength subdued he

Thys good kynge perles, hys landes firmlye
guyded,
What nature myght geue, he sayled it nothing
No parte of bounte from hys was dyscrede
He was iustice and peace, & of lawe stablyshynge
And chafer of iniquyte by his vertuous luyng
In whom these graces woth innumerable mo,
firmly were roted, that death hath tane vs fro

That whylom was a kynge, nowe is but dust
and bone
All glorie is fallen, and thys pytte depeth the
kynge
But he that peldeth all thyng by hys owne,
The sonne of God, to whom aboute all thyngs
Woth bette and mouth he byd due worshyppe
That losse of hys tope perdurable to laste,
Graunte hym sozowles euermore to taste



Rhyllippe the .iiii.
of that name &
sonne of the .iii.
Rhyllippe which
was surnamed
Rhyllippe le Be
aue or Rhyllippe
the fayre, began

his reigne ouer the realme of France
in the yere of grace, M. CC. lxxvi.
and þ. viii. yere of the fyrst Edward
than kynge of Englande. Thys for
warre that he had woth the duke of
Gelderlande, arreyed greute impossy
ons throughe hys lande, both of the
spyrityualty and also of the tēporalty

Aboute the .iiii. yere of hys reygne
the pynce of Salerne, that long had
bene holden in pylson by the kynge of
Aragon, was deliuered vpon a hard
condycion as foloweth, fynde that he

shulde to the bittermost of his power
laboure a contoyd and peace betwene
the church of Rome and the Aragons
and that done to set a peace betwene
the frenche kynge and hym

And ouer that, to paye in the end
of .xv. monethes next ensuyng, an. C.
M. floppys for hys ransom. A flo
ppyn is in value after sterlyng mony
M. s. l. s. so he shuld pay after the va
lue of Englysh mony. xvi. M. v. C. l.
And that after that daye he shuld ne
uer beate armes agayne the kynge of
Aragons. And yf within the terme of
iii. yeres next ensuyng, he myghte
not conclude the foresayde peace, he
shulde then retourne and yelde hym
selte pylsoner as he before was. All
whiche couenauntes fermyly to be
holden, he fynde made solempne oth,
and deliuered to the kynge certayne
hostages and so departed.

But thys composycion or agrement
was thoughte so vnfaysonable vnto
hys frendes, that he was counsayled
by them that he shuld sue vnto the. b.
of Rome for a dyspensacyon of hys
oth, and that hadde, they wolde helpe
him to recouer his foresayd hostages
After whose counsaile he the yere
folowynge made suche laboure vnto
Honorius the .iiii. of that name than
byschoppe of Rome, that he a lonely
optayned not absolycion of hys oth,
but also by hym he was declared big
of Seyceyl, and of Archolus the .iiii.
successoure of the foresayd Honorius
after confirmed. Thys pynce of Sa
lerne as before ye haue harde in the
storye of Rhyllippe the thyrde, and .iii.
and .iiii. Chapters of the same, was
sonne vnto Charles brother of saynt
Lewys and kynge of Seyceyl. And
the fore named kynge of Arago that
he vpon the abouelapde condycions
thus deliuered, was sonne vnto Pe

ter kyng of Aragon, which as befoze in the storye of the foze sayde thynge Phylip, held warre wth hym and wth the sayd Charles. Thys prync of Salerne was also named Charles, after the name of hys father, the whych after his admyssion of the .v. of Rome was crowned kyng of Sicyle in the cite of Palermo some after, and dede the land knyghtrly agayne the Aragons, wth helpe of the Frenchme by the terme of .v. yeres after. At the whiche tyme ende Alphons than kyng of Aragon dyed, and Jaques o James, to whome the foze sayde Alphons had be taken þ rule of Sicyle & held war wth the foze named Charles, was as brother, & next heyr vnto the crowne of Aragon admytted hig of that regyon. After the whiche admyssion, he shortly after concluded a peace wth the sayde Charles, and redeliuered vnto hym al such hostages and pledges as his brother Alphons had befoze tyme of him receaued, for keepynge of the foze mer conuenconys And for the moore stabllyshement of the same peace, the sayd James toke to wyfe one of the daughters of the sayd Charles.

About the .vi. yere of the reigne of thys Phylip, certayne sowdoyours of Fraunce to the number of .v. hundred, whych were sent by the procurement of Nicholas the .iii. byshop of Rome vnto Acre, to fortify þ towne contrary the truce betwene the chypstien and the Sowdan befoze concluded for the terme of .ii. yeres, brake out of the towne & castels adioynant & spoiled and robbed such Sarayns as to that towne were dwelling nere and dyd vnto them al the sorow and shame that they myght. Wherof the Sowdan haupnge knowledge was therewith greuously amoued. But yet

or he wolde assent any warre agayne the chypstien, he sent vnto the captayn of the cite of Acon and willed hym to sende vnto hym suche persones as had broken the peace, and done that iniurie to hys people. And yf he refused, he sent them word he shulde not blyp tyl he had destroyed the, as lastly befoze he had done the inhabitants of the cite of Triple. But they sette hys manace at naught, for so much, as they thoughte them habile to wythstande hys malice. Upon whych answer, the Sowdan made great preparation to besiege the sayde cite.

In whiche passetyme in Fraunce was bozne of dame Johane o Jane than quene of Fraunce, Lewys the kynges eldest sonne, that after hys father was kyng of Fraunce.

When the Sowdan had prepared all thyng necessary for that iourney he spedde hym wth an innumerable multitude of the Sarayns toward the cite of Acon o Acre. In whych iourney he was taken wth so greuous sykenes, that he knewe wel he shulde shortly dye. Wherfoze he callynge befoze hym hys Admyrall, charged a certayne of them to kepe for the thei iourney toward Acon, whyle the remmaunte retourned into Egypte, and there to creat hys sonne Sowdan. After whiche creatyon he charged them that they shulde cause hys sayd sonne to hast hym vnto the sayde syege, and soone after dyed.

Then all thynges wer ordained as he befoze had deuysed, and þ cite was besieged with a strong host of Sarayns, the whych assauted it cruelly by the space of syre weekes. In whych season the chypstien defended it so manfully, that the Sarayns myght thereof get none aduantage. At the ende of thys syre weekes, came the

the yonge Soudan wyth a freshe
hoost, the whych made suche a dynne
and noyse wyth theyr tabours & ho-
rnes and other mynstrelse that they
at those dayes bled, that it was by do-
us and fearefull to heare. And after
they had rested thym two dayes, and
prepared for the rynginge of theyr o-
benaunce, they assauted the cite. xlii
dayes continually. In which season
much people was slayne vpon both
partes, but the moze number of the
cite. For by the violence of theyr o-
benaunce they ouer theyr much hou-
singe wythin the cite, where wyth
much people were oppressed, & slayne
aswell man as woman and chyld.

At the ende of thys. xlii. dayes, whē
the rulers of the cite hadde sene the
harne that they had receaued by this
fearce and cruel assaut, aswel in losse
of theyr souldyers, as of the greate
enpayng of theyr walles and other
defences of theyr cite, they fered soze
for the whiche they of one assent con-
descended and sent soone after by the
shyppes, a great number of olde men
and women and chyldren vnapt for
the warre, wyth the relques and tre-
sours of the cite in to Sicil. It was
not longe after o; p. Sarayns made
a newe assaute that contynued. liii.
dayes by meane wherof the cite was
soze defaced. Then the kynge of Cy-
prus, whiche at that daye was there
as one of the chiefe rulers in the cite
saped hym lyke. Wherefore in the
nyghte folowng despyng a knight
of the cite to kepe hys watch, he co-
wardly and shamefully wyth. liii. M.
men toke shyping, & sapled thence
leupng the cite in all daunger. Vp-
pon the moztyme whan the certentye
of thys was knowne, the Patriarke
of Jerusalem wyth other there lefts
to the nomber of. v. M. o; thereupon

sent vnto the Soudan for a trewce
for two moonethes. But none they
myghte purchase, and therefore they
defended them in the best maner they
myghte. But shortly after for lacke
of defence vpon the walles, the Sa-
razyns fylled the dytches, and soone
after vpon the. xlv. daye of May per-
force entred in the cite, & slewe suche
people therein as they therein founde
Then the Soudan gaue the pray of
the cite vnto hys knyghtes, and af-
ter spolyng of the same, caused the
walles and towres to be rased vnto
the grounde, and the houses, aswell
churches, temples and al other, were
clearely byente and destroyed.

And thus was the noble cite of A-
cris, which is also called Cholomay-
da, subuerted, the whych was p. chiefe
port o; haue towne for chrystien mē
to lande at, when anye hoost o; pow-
er of theym wolde enter into the ho-
lye lande, and had contynued for the
moze part in the possession of chry-
stien men, by the terme of an hundred
and. lx. yeares and aboue.



At the. vii. yere of thys
kynge Philip, the Erle of
Armenack was accused
of certayn popntes of tre-
son, by sy. Raymōd Bar-
nade Earle of Forz. Whereupon, a
daye of battayle betwene these. ii. Er-
les was apointed to be foughten at
Gysours, in the kinges presence and
of his barony. But after by the great
instaunce and labour made by sy.
Robertte Earle of Artoys, that bat-
taye was so; done.

In the. viii. yere of hys regne,
he gathered a greate taske of hys co-
mons. And in the. yere afoze sayde,
at a feaste holden at Compeyne, he
made aboue. vi. scoze knyghtes

In

The cite of
Acrys destroy-
ed.

In the. xi. yere of hys reygne, sy Roberte of Artoys entred the towne of saynt Omers, and toke therein many Burgoyons and other as prysoners, and soone after met wyth Guy duke of Burgoyne at a towne called Furnes where betwene them was foughten a stronge fyght, and many men slayne vpon ether syde. But last by the byctorye fell to sy Robert of Artois, so that he put the duke to flyght and toke there prysoners Henry Erle of Dabencourt, and sy Guiltam de Wyllers, and other. After which byctorye by hym thus obtayned, the sayd towne of Furnes was yelden vnto hym, and a greate part of the bale of Cassle.

In this yere also the warre betwene this kyng Phylippe and Edward the fyrste than kyng of Englande, was put in bye, for so much, as the sayde Edward toke partye wyth the sayde Duke of Flaunders, as it is at length set oute in the xxii. xliii. z. xlv. yeres of the sayde Edward, wherfoze here now I passe it ouer.

In the. xlii. yere of this Phylippe, whan the trefwe befoze set betwene kyng Edward and hym and s Erle of Flaunders was expyed, he sente sy Charles de Walops hys brother wyth greate power into Flaunders, the whych made sharpe warre vpon the Flemmynges, and toke fro them the townes of Douay and Bethune, and after yode towarde the haueu towne of Dam or Dan, wher he was encountred of Robert sonne vn to the Erle, where betwene them was foughten a cruel fyghte, to the great scathe of bothe parties, for ether departed frome other wythoute greate auantage or boost. Than the sayd Robert wyth hys compagne dyewe to

arde Gaunte, and the sayde sy Charles after the departyng of the sayde Robert, laped his spege vnto the foze sayde towne of Dam.

In this passe tyme the Archebysshoppe of Dyleunce was slayne by a knyghte called sy Gautier, for so muche as the sayde byshoppe, as the same than wente, had dyskoyshed a mayden and daughter of the sayde sy Gautier. And for hym was chosen to that bygnyte master Bartholomew doctoure of dyuinite.

Than to retorne where we last of the foresayd warre of Flaunders, the sayde Charles so Harpelye assauted the towne of Dam, that in thort yeres after it was yolden vnto hym. And than he prepared hym to lay his spege aboute the fozenamed towne of Gaunte. Whereof whan Guy Erle of Flaunders was ware, considering he myght not thortely be ayded of the kyng of England, which than warred vpon the Scottes, as in the. xlvii. yere of Edward the fyrst it doth apere, he than made meanes vnto the sayd sy Charles de Walops, that he wolde be a meane to the kyng, that he myght be accepted vnto hys grace and mercy. So that by hys meanes, the sayde sy Guy wyth Roberte hys sonne, vpon certayn conuencionys in thort tyme after was reconcyled vnto the frenche kyng. But whyle these conuencionys were persourmed, the sayde Erle wyth hys sonne Robert were kepte in a lyberal prysoun. And the countie of flaunders by the assygment of the kyng, for the whyle was commytted vnto the rule of Jaques de saynte Paule knyghte the whych entreated the commons of that lande sternlye, and oppressed them wyth imposycions and taxes in so muche that in the. xvi. yere of s kyng

The seventh parte

246

kyng, a certayne of the towne of Courtray in Flaunders after certayne saymynges and loue dape made, the common people in a night slewe the foysayde Jaques, & as many French menne as they myghte fynde within the towne. After whych murder was knowne in Byrges and in other townes of Flaunders, anone by euil consaie they also chased al such French menne as by the foysayde Jaques were put in dyuers offices wpyth in the sayde townes, and made them stronge to make defence agayns the French kyng.

Wherof whē the French kyng was ascertayned, he sente thither wpyth a stronge companie, the Earle of saint Poule, the Earle of Boligne, sy Robert Earle of Artois, and Robertte the sonne of the Earle of Cleremoante, w diuers other noble men of France. The whych sped them towarde Byrges, and in the playnes attwene Courtray and Byrges pyghte they pauplyons and tentes for they myght not come no neare vnto Byrges, for so much a the Flemynge had broken the byrge ouer the ryuer that there runneth, the whych lastlye not wpythoute greate slaughter of men so boch partyes was by the Frenchmen redyfyed and made, so that the French hoost passed the ryuer, and layd thei ordynaunce nere to the towne of Byrges. But the Flemynge had so garnyshe thei towne wpyth defence of souldiours, & they fered the Frenchme lytle o; nothinge. And of one thyng they bare them & boldet, for so much, as they had wpyth in the towne one of the sonnes of Guy thei Earle, whych befoze was scaped frome the French kynges pyson.

Thus the Frenchemen lpyng befoze the towne, many frapes and bly-

kepynges were made attwene the Flemynge and them, to thei boch paynes. Lastly a dape of battayle by the prouocacyon and dysputeous wordes of the Frenchmen was appoynted to be holde attwene them, vpon the wednesday beyng than the vii. day of the month of July. At whych dape the Flemynge beyng confessed and reconcyled to God, as they shuld forth w haue departed out of this worlde in sober wyle, groundyng them vpon a ryghtful and good quarell, the dape to lyue and dye for the defence and ryghte of thei countrey, pssued out of the towne in good order.

Anone as the nobles of France behelde the countenaunce of thei enemyes, dysdaynyng thei as bylannes and artycers, trustyng so much in thei strengthes, that they thought shortly to ouer ryde thei, and beate them downe wpyth strength of thei horses, and wpythout order rāne wpyth greate pye vpon thei enemyes, thynkyng to haue oppresed them at the fyrst bynte. But the Flemynge w thei arbalasters and thei long moyses pykes, set a slope befoze them woude so thei horses, that they lay tumblyng one in others neck, so that they were the letters of & other which were on foote, that they myghte not exerce thei feat of armes. And also the shotte, that was shotte on the French partye dyd asmuch harme to those hoysen as it dyd vnto thei enemyes. So that in short whyle the selbe was all spred wpyth slayne hoyses and cleane armed men. Wherof sy Robertte Earle of Artois beyng ware and sepyng these noble spertes thus slaine vpon the selbe, auanced hym wpyth thei companie, and slewe & wounded of the Flemynge a gret number, so that they fled befoze hym

as

as wepe before the wolf, and put fur
ther backe that host of Flemmynges
than they by the fyrste metynge had
avaunced theym selves. And yf ayde
of Guy de Namour sone vnto þe erle
of Flaunders, had not the soner bene
commen vnto theim, the sayde Earle
of Artoys had that daye wonne the
renowne of the feld. Than the sayd
Guy wth a freshe companie of Al-
maynes and other bolde souldpours
cozagroullye entred the feld, and bet
downe the Frenchemen egerly. Than
was the medle newe begone, in so fer
wente wyse that menne and hoyle spyl
downe the ground wonderously thich.
And euer the Earle of Artoys where
so euer he wente he slewe muche peo-
ple before hym. But the Flemmynges
kept them so whole to gether, that he
myght neuer dysseuer them, and slew
of the nobles of fraunce great plen-
tye. Whycher moztaplyte thus conty-
nynge, the streames of bloud ranne
wonderous to behold. And alway the
frenche partye weked moze & moze.
Lastly the Carles of saynte Paule &
of Bolepne, wth Robertte the sonne
of ths Earle of Cleremounte, and o-
ther, wth the number of two thou-
sande hoyle men, seynge the rage and
woodnes of the Flemmynges, which
so cruelllye slewe and bete downe the
Frenchmen, settynge apart al honour
and knyghthode, shamefulllye fledde
out of the feld, leuynge þe Erle of Arto
is in the mydel of hys enemyss whych
lyke vnto the Lyon rampaunte con-
tynued in one, sleynge and kyllynge
the Flemmynges wythoute mercy o-
ppre. But the Flemmynges like wod-
tygres wer so enraged wpo þe French
men, that they wold neuer leue them
till they by pure force dyaue them, in
to theyr tentes, where they slew of the
a greate multitude.

In thys battayle were slayne the
fozefayde Earle of Artoys, Godfray
de Byaban next kynnesmanne to the
sayde Earle and Loyd of Wysson, A-
dam the Earle of Dadenmale, John
the sonne of the Earle of Henaute,
Rauf de Ael Constable of fraunce
Guy hys brother Marshall of þe host
Renold de Tre, Esmer chamberlain
of Caruyl, Jaques the sonne of God-
frey de Byaban, Wyers foot, a John
Bzullis mayster of the Arbalasters
knyghtes, a manye mo men of name
to the number of. CC. and aboue, be-
syde esquyres and other men of lowe
degrees, as yomen, gromes, pages,
to the number of. xii. W. The whych
after the vyctorye the Flemmynges
dyspoyled, and suffered the carryng
of them to lye in the feld, that al wylde
beastes and foules myghte theym pe-
rlye and deuoure.

Whan thys ponge knyght sp; Guy
hadde thus optayned vyctorye of the
Frenchmen, he retorsed not a lytle,
and soone thereafter layde sege vn-
to the Isle of a castell so named, and
gat it also wcre it by trechery o-
ther wyse. Then the townes of Spar, of
Gaunt, of Douay, and dyuers other
of that countrey, obeyed to hym, and
condescended and agreed to take par-
tye eyther of them wth other agayn
the French kynge.

Then kynge Phylippe herynge of
the greate dyscomfytur of hys men
made countenaunce of mounynge
and specially for hys true knyght the
Earle of Artoys.



Ynge Phylipp then af-
ter for to reuenge the
fozefayde dyspleasure
to him done by the fle-
mynges, assembled by
oure Lady Dage Assup
cyon nexte ensuyng, an exceedyng no-
ber

The seventh parte.

145.

entending to have entred Flaunders
and better to have destroyed a great
part of that countree, & so drew to-
warde his enemies, so he pyghte the
centes of his batwarde within .xl. my-
les of his enemies, & there laye to his
excedynge charge, consyderynge the
great multitude of hys hoste by all
moneth of September. Of the nōber
of this hoste I have doubt to wyte.
For maister Sagwin saith, & number
was so greates it may not be beleued
and he sheweth wel by the expellemen-
t of the number made by the French cro-
nycle. For he saith, they were an hun-
dredth time an. C. D. .xl. times. xl. D.
By which sayeng it somdele apereth,
howe the Frenchmen can make men-
so unge. But howe it was for all this
great & exceding number of French-
men, the Fleminges lay styll unhurte
or assauted. And finally vpon a great
substancyall cause, as ye after shall
heare, this great hoste was dysolued
or retourned every man to hys owne,
and kynge Whilyp with small honour
into Fraunce, whereof the Frenchme
sape the occasyon or cause was thus.

Kynge Edward of England which
to the Fleminges bare great affectyō
consyderyng the greates daunger they
were in, & he at that time myghte not the
ayd nor locout, of a pollicy cast in his
mind, & with an heup or moyning cou-
tenaunce, shewed vnto the quene & sp-
ker vnto kynge Whilyp, & he was very
heup and sorowfull for hys brother &
hers the kynge of Fraunce. Whereof,
when & wherfore she had frapned the
cause, he answered & saide that he had
certain knowlege & at such tyme as
Fleminges & he shuld mete in batall
that his lordes & company shuld lene
him amonge his enemies, for he was
solde vnto the before hande. Wherof
when the quene was thus ascertayned,

anone in all possyble hast he sent let-
ters & messengers vnto the French
king, counselling him to be wel ware
of that treason and daunger. To the
which he geuing credence, shortly af-
ter sent from him a great compa-
ny of people, & he with a certayne as a
boue is said retourned into Fraunce.

After whiche departynge, the fle-
mynges were so bolde, that shortly
they entred into Picardy & the coun-
tre of Artops, and spoyled & bent dy-
uers townes of the same. But in the
pere folowynge as testifyeth the sayde
french cronycle, the Fleminges of Bru-
ges were foughten wyth the Otthom
then duke of Burgoyne, to whome by
reason of maryage the French kynge
had geuen the earldome of Artots, &
he of them slewe wyth the ayde of the
frenchmen. xv. thousande.

In this. xvii. yere aboute mydsom-
mer, Whilyp an other sonne of the earle
of Flaunders, which had by a certain
terme passed ben in the court of Char-
les de Valois, & by him put in trust to
receyue certayne summes of money
in Sicill to the vse of Boniface by-
shop of Rome & .viii. sodeynly depar-
ted, and wyth a stronge compaignie of
Almaynes came into Flaunders, to
aide & assiste his brother. Whome the
Fleminges or Brabanders receyued
wyth greates ioye, & by the comforte of
him invaded the borders & landes of
the French kynge, & boldly assauted the
castell of saynt Omers. But for they
there gat none aduantage, but losse
many of theyr men, they forsoke that
and yode vnto a towne belongynge to
the French kynge called Thozouan
Doyne, the whiche in processe they
wanne and spoyled. About this tyme
died Boniface the .viii. of that name
then byshoppe of Rome, a man of ex-
cell name and fame, the which by his

m. l. treche.

The craftie
ambition of
Boniface by
hop of Rome

trechery caused bys predecessoure Celestine the. v. that was a good and holy man, to resigne and leaue his byshoppe. And by this meane, when this saide Celestine had bene byshop of Rome a small tyme, this Boniface espenged his innocency, whiche was all sette to the scrupre of God, as he befoze had vled hym in leadyng of an ankers lyfe, thought howe he myght bypunge hym in mynde to resigne his byghe offyce vnto hym.

And it to bypunge aboute, he fyrste made hym frendes secretly, and after byped one of the cubyclets of the byshop of Rome þe in the dead nyght shulde speake in a rede, and sape, Celestine þe thou wylte be saued and be partner of blysse, renounce this pope of the world, and serue me as thou befoze didest. And after the latyn story, if Celestine wyl be saued, let him cleerly þe papal dignyte resigne. Which voyce this gostly man sundry tymes hearyng, thought verely it had ben a dreymyng mocyon, wherfoze in all that he myghte, he laboured to be discharged, so þe at the ende of. v. monethes he resigned. And shortly after was þe for saide Boniface admitted. The which not being contented with his synyste opteyning of this high dignyte, but þe he for fere lest þe saide Celestine shuld repent hym of his insolente dede, and by strengthe of some prynces be restored agayne to his former bygnitie, he therfoze wolde not suffer the sayd Celestine to retourne to wildernes there to contynue his olde accustomed lyfe but helde hym in a castell as pryncer where for sorowe and enyll keepyng, he dyed shortly after.

For the which this Boniface was not unpunished. For ouer the sorowe and trouble that he durynge the terme of his papacy suffred, which was not

a lytell, in the ende of eyghter peres he was taken by strengthe and putte in pryncer, where so miserably and cruelly he was entreated, that oþ he dyed, what for madnesse oþ for hunger, he ate his owne handes, & so in myser ended bys lyfe within. xlii. dayes of his imprisonment.

Then to retourne where I leste, & to shewe you further of the warre betweene France and Flaundres, truth it is that the Frenchmen with þe aid of the Henaubours, made sondry and many tymes assautes vpon the Flemmynges. In the which diuers chaunces of þe warre fell, so that yf that one had the better at one tyme, that other had as muche aduantage the nexte tyme. For the refozmacyon of whiche warre, þe Guy with his sonne befoze named earle of Flaundres, that by al this season had cotynued in þe French kynges pryncer, were suffred to go in to Flaundres, vpon condycyon that yf they myght pacifie the countree to the kynges pleasure, that then they shulde styl eniope they lybertye and go at large, oþ els to retourne agayne as pryncers. The whiche earle with his sayde sonne did what they coulde to reconcyle the sayde Flemmynges. But all they traualle was in vayne so that by the dape to them appointed they retourned to theyre former pryncer. Wherfoze the kyng in the. xviij. yere of his reygne, assembled a mesurable hoste of people. In the whiche were accompted for noble Capytaynes vnder the kyng, þe Charles de Walops brother to the kyng, Lewis earle of Curour that other brother to the kyng, Guy earle of saint Daule, John earle of Danymartyn. Which noble men with many other met with the kyng at a towne called Mount. And when they hadde a season rested there

The miserie
ble and wretched
ende of
Boniface.

The seventh parte.

1476

there, by meane of messengers going
atwene kyng Philyp and the Flemyn-
ges, a day of batayle was appoynted,
to be foughten vpon the
xix. daye of Auguste in the aboue
saide. xviii. pere. At which daye þe Fle-
mynges of Brugys and þe other tow-
nes set forth theiꝝ ordynaunce, and
made them a stronge felde, and enba-
tayed theiꝝ in suche wyse, that the
Frenchmen made daungerous to set
vpon them. Then meanes of treatye
were offered, so that the daye passed
without stroke stryking.

But in the euenyng, the Flemyn-
ges thynkyng to take aduantage
vpon theiꝝ enemyes, came so sodenly
vpon the Frenchmen, that hardly
the kyng myghte be armed, oꝝ they
had slayne two men within his tente.
Wherfoꝝe haste speede was made, so
that the kyng was gotten to horse-
backe, and forthwith by his marcy-
all power made waye thowghe his
enemyes, and slewe theiꝝ withoute
mercy. And by the knightly example
of hym, the remenaunte of his lordes
quyte theiꝝ so honorablye, that the
poore Flemynges were layde in the
felde bathyng in theiꝝ owne bloude
to a great nombꝛ, and lastly constrain-
ed to flee shamefullye, and to leaue
theiꝝ ordynaunce behynde them. And
yf nyght hadde not fallen on, it is to
deme that many mo of theiꝝ shulde
haue bene slayne, consydeyng the
greate spersenelle of theiꝝ enemyes,
and the excpyng rancoure of malice
that the Frenchmen to theiꝝ bare.
But yet the Frenchmen escaped not
without losse of some noble men. For
in that batayle was slaine the earle of
Ancerre, and dyuers other knyghtes
and men of fame. After whiche discor-
dure and chalyng of the Flemyn-
ges, the kynges so darbenelle was set

vnto his tentis wth forth the nyghte.
Wher after he hadde buryed þe dead
bodies slayne in that felde, and also
garnysshedde some stronge castelles
wth his knyghtes, to the ende that
the Flemynges shulde not breake to
farre abyode, knowyng that with his
enemyes he shulde that pere haue no
mo playne batayles, he retourned a-
gayne into Fraunce.



LA þe. xix. pere of kyng Phil-
ipp, by meanes of Enguer-
ram a man in especial fa-
uoure w the kyng, a peace
betwene Fraunce & Flaunders was
concluded, the which as ye shall after
here dured but short whyle. Forwth
standyng by the reason of this peace
Roberte de Bethune & Wyllyam his
brother, which by all this season with
theiꝝ father wy; Guy erle of Flaunders
had cotinued in plesaunt oꝝ ely pꝛsō
were now deliuered. But the father
was dead in the moneth of February
befoꝝe þe conclusyon of this peace pas-
sed, & by lycence of the French kyng
caried to Harquet a towne in Flaun-
ders, and there buryed.

In the. xx. pere of this kyng Phil-
ipp, a great discencion and stryfe fell
betwene the rich men oꝝ gouernours
of Paris, & the compnaltie of þe same
foꝝe beithing of the rent of diuers hou-
ses appertaynyng to þe saide cominal-
tye. Wherfoꝝe þe saide commons secret-
ly accompaned them in great nombꝛ,
and rode vnto the hous of Stephan
Barbet that was accused to be occa-
sioner of that dede, & spoyled it. And
after that they rode to a maner of his
in the countree named Courtyl Bar-
bet, and it in lyke maner spoyled, and
that done set in fyꝛe, and byente it.
And the orcharde of the same, whiche
was passyng commodious and ples-
ant. saunt

Wherby
of rears.

saunt^r, they defaced and utterly de-
stroyed.

And not yet with this being con-
sent they returned agayne vnto the
house of the sayde Stephan, and all
suche wyne as were within hys sel-
lers, dranke of theim till they were
wood drunken. And what they might
not in that wyse deuoure, they bette
out the heddes and let the wine runne
in the strete. And all formys, solys, &
other vtenylls in the house, by theim
founded all to brake in peces, and of
fetherbeddes ripped the tickis, & helde
theim in the wynde, that the fethers
might be blowne awaye and losse for-
euer, and brenned the house in dy-
uers places, that the rayne and other
wethering myghte enter, as then fell
about þe tyme soone after Christmas.
And thus contynuyng in theyr fury
and rage, after the dyspopyng and
defacyng of these foresayd houses, as
menne not knowinge what they then
dyd, yode streyghte in greate nombre
vnto the place of the templers theate-
re, where at that season kyng Phyl-
ippe with a certayn of his barons was
then lodged, & there kepte the entrees
of that place in suche wyse, that no
man myghte passe nor enter but at
theyr pleasures, and suche meates as
were broughte thither to the kynges
vse and his householde, they cast it in
the myre and fylth of the strete. The
kyng and his lordes seeing the rage
of this rude and vnreasonable people
sent vnto theim the prouost of þe cytie
with some of hys lordes, the whiche
gaue vnto them so pleasaunt and co-
fortable wordes, that at length he re-
turned theim in peasyble maner to
theyr houses. But vpon the morowe
folowynge, the kyng not forgettynge
this rage and rote of the people, co-
maunded many of the sayde commons

to be attached, and to be sent vnto dy-
uers pylons.

And vpon Candelmasse euen fol-
lowynge for þe same rote. xxviii. of the
were hanged at.iiii. entrees of þe cytie
of Paris, & to save. vii. at Louure,
vii. toward the parties of saynt An-
toyne. vii. at a place toward the route
& other. vii. in a place toward nostre
Dame o; noty; Dame. Which execu-
cion caused the comynalty of the citee
to lyue longe after in greate feare.

In the. xxi. yere of the regne of
kyng Phylippe, which maketh the yere
of our Loyde. ciii. C. and. vii. all be it
that other wyters asyrmeth it to be
in the yere of grace. ciii. C. and. xi. all
the templers in Fraunce were destroy-
ed, & theyr goodes & possessyons tho-
rough churche of Rome geuen (by autho-
ryte of a synode kepte by Clement the
v. then bishop of Rome at the cytie of
Narbon in Fraunce) vnto the religy-
on of knyghtes of saynt John Bap-
tiste. This order of templers was de-
stroyed for theyr detestable heresye,
wherof they were conuicted in. x. arty-
cles expressed in the frenche cronicle
at length, which here I passe ouer for
lengthe of the matter, & also for that
the rehearsal therof is not frutefull to
all hearers o; readers.

In the. xxiii. yere of his reigne, this
kyng Phylippe, for asmuche as he by
some of the electours of the Emperre
was chosen Emperoure, he therfore
with a great army sped him toward
Rome, and passed thorough Almanne
till he came vnto the duchye of Qua-
rantayne. Of whiche duchye the peo-
ple receyued him with all honoure.
And after he passed the mountaynes
and so came vnto Padua, where also
he was topoulyse receyued, where he
taryng a season, receyued from Phyl-
ippe ambassadours, the whiche of-
fered

all the tem-
plers becom-
e. and they
goodes geue
to other

ofered to him that cytie with all couenable scrupce. And after hys people was to hym moze plenarly assembled he then departed from Padua & rode vnto Mylaine. Whome the lordes of the cytie met vpon the waye, and conueyed hym vnto the mayster palayes of the cytie, and there lodged him, and within fewe dayes after brought him wth greate solempnyte vnto the cathedraill church, and there crowned hym kyng of Lombardy & called him Augustus.

Then he departed from Mylaine, and spedde him vnto the cytie of Cremona, & laide siege to the same. But it was to hym shortly yelded. From thence he passed to the cytie of Bresse, where he was holde out a long while. Whither to his ayde came many souldours of the towne of Wyse, & made theare manye sharpe assaures. In which assaures Guy de Namour that was marshal of the kynges hoste dyed, of hurties & he there toke. In processe of tyme shortly folowynge, the rulers of Bress offered meanes of treaty. But the kyng was so amoued with the death of his marshal, & he wold graunt to them no condicionall peace, but to stand at his grace & mercy. Wherefore they synally leing no better meane, of fered vnto him the keys of the cytie.

Then kyng Whilpp for othe before made, & for some other excellency, caused anone the parte of the towne by the fore agayne his paullyon to be fylled and the walle of the cytie, wth as many houses as stode betwene the walle & the mayster palayes of the cytie to be thowen downe, that he wth his host might entre the straight waye, & so to go & ryde vnto the sayd palays. And when all thing was ordered to his purpose, he entred by the waye the cytie of Cremona, & therein caried a certayn sea

son, and toke his counsell whith the Sebellings, howe he myghte the cytie of Rome to wyne. And when he had syned that counsell, he toke certayne hostages of the cytie of Cremona, the which he sent vnto Wyse to be kept, & so sped him toward Rome, & gettyng many cyties & other holdes by the way lastely he came vnto the cytie named Bolognia Brasile, whither came vnto him a cardynal or legate sent from Clement the. v. to treat of the state of the empire. But howe it was, & continuance of the of this tourney tourned not to the honour & pleasure of the Frenchmen. For after the meetynge of the kyng & this legate, the matter is no moze touched for the French kyng was agayne in Fraunce, & the legate myghte bring vnto him any answer from Clement. Also it is the moze susperte, for of this matter spekketh nothing mayster Robert Sagwyne, whiche leaueth nothing out of his booke the maye sounde to the auancement of the French nation. In the. xxiii. yere of the reygne of kyng Whilpp, was byent in dyuers places of Fraunce vpon. lx. templers for the heresye before reherfed.

And in the yere folowynge, a newe rebellyon beganne in Flaundres. Of the which Robert earle of Flaundres was accused, but he acquyt hym selfe & after Guy hys sonne was attached for the same and sente to pryson. Fro the whiche he after escaped, for feare of poyse to haue ben tustified agayne hym, & returned vnto Gaunt. Where he was defended fro his aduersaries, so that the Holanders & Brabanders helde their partye agaynst the French kyng, & also agayne their owne earle, whiche so continued without any notable batayle, tyll the. xxvi. yere of the reygne of kyng Whilpp. In the which yere, vpon the cunyn of maye Mag-

The Tenth
templers by the
for heresye.

daleyne at the towne of Coucray in
 Byabande, was by the byllshops and
 other spirytual men of Fraunce and
 Flaundres a peace concluded. Wher
 of the condicions were, þ the Flemin
 ges shuld haue pardon & forgiuenes
 of all theyr former rebellyon, aswell
 agayne the kynge, as theyr naturall
 Duke. And for this they shulde paye a
 certayne summe of syluer, wherof the
 summe is not expessed, and ouer that
 they shoulde at theyr proper costes &
 expenses, bete downe certayne streng
 thes & holdes as the Frenche kynges
 depute wold to them assigne, begyn
 nyng at Saint, & so to Byuges, & o
 ther places, and moze ouer they shuld
 peld vnto Robert their earle þ astel
 of Courtay, with all abplementes of
 warre & other necessities therunto be
 longyng. All whiche condicions to ob
 terue, they shuld deliuer vnto þ king
 of Fraunce good hostages. But al this
 came to small effecte, as after shall ap
 pears.

In the. cxlii. yere of this Phyl
 lipp, Jacob þ mapster of the tē
 ples, with an other greute ru
 ler of þ saide order which was named
 bysptout of the same, after longe pry
 sonment were byent at Paris.

And in the same yere kynge Phyl
 lipp altered a tace thozugh Fraunce,
 whiche before that dayes was neuer
 hearde nor spoken of. Thys was so
 greuous, þ all Normandy, Picardy,
 and Champeigne, allyed them togy
 ther and bettelly denayde the paymēt
 therof. Wherof hearinge other coun
 trees, toke the same opinyon, so that
 a greute rumour and murmour was
 rased thozughe oute the realme of
 Fraunce, in suche wyse that the king
 for pacifyenge of þ people was faine
 to repeale the sayde tace.

In the. cxlii. yere of the reigne of
 kynge Phylipp, in þ weke of Easter, the
 iii. wykes of the. iii. sonnes of kynge
 Phylipp, that is to saye Margaret the
 wyfe of Lewis his eldeste sonne and
 kynge of Hauerne, Johanne, the
 wyfe of his seconde sonne Phylipp
 earle of Doffers, and Blanche the
 wyfe of his thyrde sonne Charles and
 Earle of Barthes, were accused of
 spouse byekyng, and sente fro a place
 of nunnes wher they laye, and con
 ueyed vnto moze strepghter keepyng,
 the which. iii. wykes wer all. iii. dought
 ters vnto the duke of Burgoyne. The
 vpon strepghter examinacion made,
 Margaret and Johanne were gilty
 of that cyme founde. Wherfore they
 were sent vnto the castell of Saplard
 in Normandy, there to be kept as pry
 soners terme of theyr lyues. And the
 fornamed Blanche, for so muche as
 she was founden gilty, was againe
 restored vnto her loyde Charles earle
 of the Barthes.

And in mozte tyme after, the two
 paramours of the sayde Margaret &
 Johanne, that is to saye Phylipp Dan
 nop, and Gautier Dannop, or Walter
 Dannop knyghtes, men of fame and
 goodlye personage & byethen, at the
 kynges commaundement were fyrste
 byent in the visage with hote pyons, &
 after drawe to the gybet at Montoise,
 and there hanged. Whiche misfo
 tune the kyng toke greuously, that he
 reioysed neuer after.

About the feaste of saint Peter, or
 the begynnyng of Auguste, the kyng
 heatyng of the rebellyon of the Flem
 mynges, by Enguerram his mooste
 secret counsaillour made an assemble
 of the cytyzens of Paris, and by the
 mouthe of the saide Enguerram deli
 uered a subspde of the sayde cytyzens,
 to mayntayne his warre agayne the
 Flem.

The seventh part

151.

Anglia.

England.

Edward the
second



Edward the se-
cond of that na-
me, and sonne of
Edward the first
boyn at Calmar
uan in a towne
of Wales, bega
hys reigne ouer

England, in the moneth of July the viii
day of the sayd moneth, in the yere of
our Lord. M. CCC. x. vii. and the. xxi
yere of the. iiii. Philippe than kyng
of Fraunce. The whiche was crow-
ned at Westminster, the. xxi. daye of
December, after the oppnyon of dy-
uerse wyters

But Ranulph Donke of Chester
in hys booke of Polycronicon sayeth
that he was crowned in the foresayd
monastery of the byshoppe of Wyn-
chester, the sondaye in quinquagesi-
ma, whiche is the. xliii. daye after the
closynge of Alleyn, of the byshop
of Winchester, so; so muche, as Ro-
berte than Archebyshoppe of Caun-
terburie was than oute of England
Thys Edward was sayre of bodye
and greate of strengthe but vnstead-
fast of maners, and vyle in condyci-
ons. For he wolde refuse the company
of lordes and menne of honoure, and
haunte hym wyth bylains and vyle
persones. He also gaue hym to great
dryncke, and lyghtly he wolde dysco-
uer thynges of greate counsaile.
Wyth these and manye other dysla-
tomable condycions he was extor-
sed, whych tourned hym to great dis-
honoure, and hys lordes to great vn-
rest as by the sequels of thys hys sto-
ry shal apere

Anone as hys father was buryed,
and hys exequy scanthe fynished, he
forgettyng the hygh and chargeable
commaundement of hys sayd father
sente

The descrey-
cion of Ed-
ward the. ii.

Flemynge, the whiche by Stephan
Barbet in the name of the hole cyter
was graunted. By pcedence wherof,
all the great citiees & good townes of
Fraunce wer charged in like maner
whiche caused greate unkindnes and
grudge of the people towarde the sayd
Enguetram. In prouysyon was
made for a new iourney into Flaun-
ders, so that the kyng sente hys two
sones and many other nobles of his
lande in the moneth of September
folowynge, into the sayde countree of
Flaunders. The whiche made good
spedde, and laped first they spege to
the castell of the Isle and wanne it, &
after the entred towarde other stronge
holdes. But the Flemynge put the
of, and gaue vnto the French host so
sharpe assautes, that in pcesse they
were constreyned to retourne into
Fraunce wyth small honoure. Wher
of the greate defaute was layd vpon
Enguetram, and vpon one of the son-
nes of the Erie of Flaunders, whych
lytle to foze by meanes of the sayde
Enguetram was made Earle of Ne-
uers. In the moneth of Nouember fo-
lowynge, kyng Philippe beyng at
Fountayn Belvaunt in the prouince
of Gaslenoy, was taken wyth suche
spkenesse and dyed shortly after,
when he had reigned eyght and twe-
tye yeres and moze, and hys bodye
after caried vnto saynt Dyonise, and
there buryed leuynge after hym the
thre fornamed sonnes, Lewis,
Philippe, and Charles, and
a daughter named Isa-
bel, whiche before
time was ma-
ried vnto
the se-
conde Edward than
king of England

Edward the II

sent in all haste for his old compere
Piers of Gauestone. The which he
receaved with all ioye and gladnesse
and aduauised him to much honour

And thus passed the season of the
olde maye and Whyskes of London,
so that at the feastes of Pychelmas

and Symon and Jude solowynge,
the olde Maye and Whyskes, that
is to meane say John Blounte, Symon
Bolet and Godfray as the con-
durt were dyscharged, and the newe
as vnder soloweth admytted:

Anno domini. M. CCC. vii.

Anno domini. M. CCC. viii

Archolas Pygotte.

Syr John Blount

Anno primo

Michael Dury.



The first year

Howe kynge
Edwarde mar-
ryed his daugh-
ter of Whylp-
le Beaw king
of Fraunce.

As in the beginning
of this Mayes yere
and first yere of the
kynge, the sayde king
Edwarde in the mo-
neth of December say-
led into Fraunce, and the xv. daye of
Januarie solowynge, at Boleyn in
Bacardie married Isabell the daugh-
ter of Whylpelle Beaw than kynge
of Fraunce, and soone after retour-
ned with his into Englands, and so
vnto London, where of the cytyzens
they were ioyously receaved, and so
conueyed vnto Westmynster, where

as before is shewed vpon the sonday
in quinquagesima, they were solemp-
ny crowned.

At which coronacyon was so exce-
dyng pynce, that a knyghte called
say John Bakewell was chysed to
deathe. Than the kynge gaue hys
lye after vnto Piers of Gauestone
the Carledome of Cornewayle and
the Loydeshippe of Walynfoerde, and
was ruled all by his wanton coun-
saile, and folowed the appetyte and
pleasure of his bodye, nothyng or-
derynge by sadnesse, nor yet by or-
der of the lawe or iustyce.

Anno domini. M. CCC. viii.

Anno domini. M. CCC. ix.

William Basyngge

Archolas Faryngdone.

Anno. ii.

John Buteler.



The first year

Piers Gaue-
ston was gra-
tely favoured
of kynge Ed-
warde

As in the. ii. yere, king
Edwarde callynge to
mynde the dyspleasure
done vnto hym and to
his samylpat Piers
of Gaueston, by the by-
shoppe of Chester Mayster Walter
Lanton, as before is touched in the
xviii. yere of the reygne of Edwarde
his father, commaunded hym vnto
the towne of London, where he was
cruelly kepte many daies after
Than the lordes of the lande, and

specyally say Henry Lacpe, say Guy
and say Symon de Ualance Earle of
Lyncolne, of Warwiche, and Denbroke
to whom the noble pynce Edwarde
the first had geuen so great charge
that Piers of Gauestone shulde no-
more come into Englad, saw the rule
of the land, and howe the kynge tre-
sourye by meane of the sayde Piers
was wasted, assembled them in coun-
saile, and of one assent with ayde of
other Lordes of the realme spake so
with the kynge, that contrary his ple-
sure

The seventh part

sure he was aduoyded the lande, and banished into Irelande for that yere. But the kynge sente vnto hym often tymes secret messaungers, and com
Anno domini. M. CCC. ix.

foxed hym with many reche gyftes or made hym hys chiefe ruler of the countrey.

James of saynte Edmund

Anno domini. M. CCC. x.

Thomas Romayne

Anno. llii

Roger Palmer



And in the thyrde yere, dyuers grudges bega to moue a spyrng betwene the kynge and hys loydes, for the exilunge of Dyers

Gauelstone. Wherfore to contente a myte betwene hym and the, the sayde Dyers aboute the feast of the natiuite of our Lady was set home agayne & so continued to the moze mychese of the realme.

About this tyme as testifyeth Cronica Cronicarum & other, the knyghtes of the order of saynte Ihon Baptyst called saynt Iohn of Ierusalem by knyghtly manhode put out of the

yle of Rodes or Rodhys the Turkes and infydelis, that to that daye occupied the sayd yle, and after that wanne vpon the sayde Turkes dayly and yearly, so that at this day they haue in theyr domynion much of the landes, whych at that daye and long after, was in the powres of the sayde Turkes. This relygion also was greatly preferred by the fall of the temples, whose possessyons and landes were to them geuen, as it is befoze expressed in the iii. chapter, and. xli. yere of Whyllyp the sayge. This peare also after some wynters the crowched scyres came fyrst into Englande (the moze ppyte.)

The fyrst coming of the crowched scyres into Englande.

The first coming of the crowched scyres into Englande.

Anno domini. M. CCC. x.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xi

Simon Croppe.

Rycharde Rolham

Anno. liii

Peter Blacnap.



And in the. liii. yere & rule and powre of Dyers Gauelstone moze & moze encreasynge, in so muche, & he hauinge the gupding of al the kiges

sewels & treasure, pde vpon a daye to Westmynster, and thre out of the kynges sewel house, toke a table and a payre of tressels of golde, and conueyed them with other sewels out of

Anno domini. M. CCC. xi.

the land, to the great inpowering of the same, & ouer & brought & kyng by mene of his wanton condicions to manfolds byres, as aduouty & other. Wherfore the forsayde loydes seinge the mychese that dayly encreased by occasion of this vnhappy man, toke theyr counsayl together at Lyncolne and there concluded to vopde hym & gayne out of Englad, so that shortly after he was exiled into Flaunders to the kynges greate dyspleasure.

The seconde auoyding of Dyers Gauelstone.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xii

Symon Werwode

John Spilouts

Anno. v.

Rycharde Wylfoude.

The birth of
Edward the
third.



And in the. v. yere by
pon the daye of saynte
Byce. o. the. xiii. daye
of Nouēber. was boꝝ-
ne at Wynsoꝝe p̄ syt
o. eldest sonne of king
Edward. that after hys father was
kyng of Englande. and named Ed-
warde the. iii. And thys yere was a
gayne reuoked by the kyng p̄pers
Gauestone out of Flaunders. whych
after hys agayne comynge. deme-
ned hym worse than he befoꝝe dyd.

In somuch. that he dysdayned the
loꝝdes of Englande. and of them had
many dyspyteous and flaunterous
woꝝdes. Whereof the Loꝝdes. of one
mynde assented to put this p̄pers to
death. and sone after assembled they
powꝝes. and besyged hym in the ca-
stell of Scarburgh. & in pꝛoces wan
that castell. & toke hym and brought
hym vnto Gauesede besyde War-
wyke. and there the. xix. day of Juny

smote of hys heade. Whereof whan
the kyng hadde knowledge. he was
greauouslye dyspleased agaynst the
sayde Loꝝdes. and made hys auow
that hys deathe shulde be reuenged.
By meane of thys the rancoure that
befoꝝe betwene the kyng & hys Loꝝ-
des was kyngled. nowe beganne fur-
ther to spꝛede. so that after thys daye
the kyng sought occasyon agayn his
loꝝdes. howe he myghte put them to
greaunce and dyspleasure. In thys
whyle dyed sy. Henry Lacy Earle of
Lyncolne. the whych lyng vpon hys
deathe bedde. requyred sy. Thomas
Earle of Lancaster that had mary-
ed hys daughter. that he wold stande
wth the other Loꝝdes in the defence
foꝝ the weale of Englande.

The whiche request the sayd earle
graunted. and so fermelye kept o. ob-
serued it. that at length he wth many
other losse they. lyues. as after in the
stoye shalbe shewed.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xlii.

John Pontenay.

Thon Lambyn

Anno domini. M. CCC. xlii

Adam Lutken.

Anno. vi

The. vi. yere



And in the. vi. yere. the
kyng helde hys great
courte o. counsaile of
parlyaments wth the
loꝝdes spꝛytual and te-
poral at Londo. wher
by the aduices of them manye good
ordynaunces and statutes wer made
to oppꝛesse p̄potouse and other mys-
cheues that at those dayes were vled
Than the kyng was sworne to kepe
those ordynaunces. and after all hys
loꝝdes to they. powꝝes.

It was not longe after that woꝝde
was broughte vnto the kyng. howe
Roberte le Bruze was returned into

Scotlād. & had caused the Scottes
to rebel of newe. Ye haue befoꝝe hard
in the. xxxiii. yere of Edward p̄ syt
how p̄ sayd Edward chased p̄ foꝝena-
med Roberte le Bruze out of Scotlād
into Roymādy But whē he had hard
of the mysgubdinge of the realme of
England. & specially of the deuision
betwene p̄ kyng and his Loꝝdes he a-
non with a smal ayde of the Roymās
o. Roymāles returned into Scotlād
where he demeaned hym in suche
wyse to the loꝝdes of Scotland. that
he in short pꝛocesse was agayne ma-
de kyng of that realme. and warred
strongelye vpon the kynges fren-
des

The rebellys
of p̄ Scottes.

The seventh parte

des, and wanne frome theyn castels
and stronge holdes, and wrought by

to Englyshmenne much sojow and
tyme.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xlii

Anno domini. M. CCC. xlii

Archolus Farpyndon

Adam Burden.

Anno. vii.

Hughe Capton.



A the. vii. yere, for to
opprelle the malice of
the Scottes, the kyng
assembled a great pow
er, and by water entred

the realme of Scotland, and destruy
ed such bylages and towne as laye
oʒ stode in hys way. Wherof herpyng
Roberte le Buzze, with the poʒwe of
Scotlande coasted towarde the En
glyshmen, and vpon the dape of the
Natiuite of S. John the Baptist, met
with kyng Edward and hys hoost
at a place called Estruelin, nere by
to a French ryuer that than was cal
led Bannoocksbourne, wher atwene
the Englysh and the Scottes that dape
was foughten a cruell battayle. But
in the ende the Englysh men were co
strayned to forsake the felde

Than the Scottes chased so egerly
the Englyshe men that many of them
were drownded in the fozenamed ry
uer, and many a noble man of Eng
lande that day was slayne in that ba
taye, as sp; Gilbert de Clare erle of
Glouceter, sp; Robert Clyfforde, sp;
Comund of Hauke the kynges stew
arde, with other lordes and barons
to the nomber, as wytnesse the Sup
plico de Columna, of. xlii. and of knygh
tes and batonettes to the nomber of
li. vii. ouer. xlii. men of name whych
that dape, of the Scottes were taken

pysoners. And the kyng hym selfe
from that battaille scaped with great
daunger, and so with a fewe of hys
hoost that to hym escaped came vnto
Berwyke, and there rested hym a sea
son. Than the Scottes enflamed to
pyde. in derpyson of the Englyshme
made thys ryme as foloweth.

Maydens of Englande soze may pe
moze

For your lemans pe haue lost at Ba
nocksbourne.

With heue a lowe.

What weneth the kyng of England
So soone to haue wone Scotlande,
With rumbplove.



Hys songe was af
ter many daies sog
in daunces in the ca
rols of the maydes
and mynstrelles of
Scotland, to the re
prouse and disdayne

of Englyshe men, with byuers other
whych I ouer passe. And whan kyng
Edward, had a season tarped in Ber
wyke, and set that towne in suretye
as he than myghte, he returned with
small honoure into Englande, and
came secretly to Westmynstre vpon
the dape of saynte Magne oʒ the. xij.
dape of Auguste.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xliii

Anno domini. xlii. CCC. xlv.

John Gylours

Stephan of Byngdone.

Ramonde Chykwell

Anno. viii

And

Edward the seconde

Trayters presumption
of a bylaine



And in the .viii. yere
of kyng Edward
a bylaine called John
Canner rode about
in dyuerse places of
Englande, and na-
med hym selfe to be
the sonne of Edward the fyrste, and
sayde that by meane of a false noyce
he was stolne out of hys cradell, and
Edward which was a carters sonne
was layd in the same cradell for hym
and he him selfe was after hardly so-
ffered and brought vp in the North
pattre of Wales. But when thys by-
laine was layd for to be take, for fere
he fled to the church of the freer Car-
mes of the whyte freers of Drenford
Where he thynkyng to haue be sure
because kyng Edward the fyrst was
theyr founder, reherled agayne & for
sayng, adding moze therunto, & it a-
pered wel & the kyng was a carters
sonne, for his condicions were accor-
ding to the same, as by familiar ex-
amples & customes wer in him dayly ap-

perant. When he had thus continu-
ed a selson not without some rumours
in the land, lastely he was taken ouer
of that place, & carped as a felon vnto
Northampton, and there arraigned
& iudged for hys fallenes, & so drawe
and hanged. The whych at the houre
of death confessed, that he had a syn-
d in hys house in & symilitude of a cas-
the which among other promyses to
him made, he had assured hym that he
shuld be kyng of Englad. And Guido
sawth & he confessed that he had serued
the synde .iii. yeres before, to byrge
hys perverser purpose aboute. Thus
kyng Edward beset wth many ad-
uersities, kept a counsaill at London
for & for mayson of & warre in Scot-
lande, and other thynges for the wel-
fare of Englande. Then was sp; Pe-
ter Spalding knight sent vnto War-
wyke wth a crewe of souldiers, for
to fortifie that towne, for so much as
the kyng had certayn vnderstanding
that Robert le Bruze entented hastily
to laye hys spege to that towne.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xv.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xvi.

Damonde Goodchepe

Stephan Abyndon

Anno. ix.

Wylliam Redynge.

Ch. ix. p. 171

Barwyk lost



And in the .ix. yere
vpon midlent son-
day, was & towne
and castell of War-
wyk yelden o; lost
by treasone of the
fozenamed Peter
Spalding as the comen fame went
vnto Robert le Bruze kyng of Scot-
tes. Thys yere also the derth of coyne
that had increased yearly moze and
moze, from the .xvi. yere of Edward
the fyrste, was thys yere at London
solde for .iiii. s. a bushell. And ther-
w

also fil such a moyayne of bestes, that
al bytail wared scant & dere, as after
Walbe shewed. In this yere also .ii.
cardynals & wer sent into Englande
fro the .b. Clement then .b. of Rome,
to sett an vnion & a peace atwene the
kinges of Englande and of Scottes
were met with vpo the mooze of wy-
gylsdone in yorke shyre, & ther robbed
of suche stufte & trelure as they with
thē brought. For whych robbery gret
enquerie was made so that lastely a
knyghte called sp; Robert Gylberte
Spiddelton was accused, and sent to
pyrson

The seventh parte.

for that felonie, and after at London
drawen and hanged for the same, and
his heade sette vpon London byrde
But the cardynals crepyed of the
kyng double the value of the; har-
mes.

In this yere also fell so exceeding
rayne in the monethes of Iulie and

Anno domini. M. CCC. xvi.

John Wentgraue.

William Coston;

Raufe Palmer.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xvii.

Anno. xliii.

In this yere the Scottes en-
tered the borders of Northū
berlande, a robbed & byente
the countrey moste cruelly,
in so much that they byent the houses
that women at that tyme laye in child
bed, and spared nother man, woman,
no; chyld, nother religious no; ocher
and byd so great harme to the countree
by it was greatly impoueryshed. To
this myschefe was ioined an ocher mi-
serye. For as befoze is sayde, bytaye
by reason of the moynne was so scante
and dere, and wheate & ocher grayne
so hygh pryced, that the poore people
eate hoyle fleshe and doggues fleshe,

and many other byle beastes, whiche
wonder is to beleue. And yet for de-
saute dyed greute multitude of peo-
ple in sundry places of the lande. And
whete was solde this yere and pnexte
folowynge, at London for. iiii. marke
a quarter and aboue. And after this
derthe & scarsytie of bytaye, ensued
mortalitie of men by goddes hande &
punishment, so that what with warre
of the Scottes, and for hunger, and
death by mortalytie and synkelle, the
people of the lande was wonderfyll
wasted & perished. But all those mo-
nitions amended not the kyng of his
moynnate lyvinge.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xvii.

John Wentgraue.

John Wyoure.

William Furzeur.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xlviii.

Anno. xl.

In this. xl. yere, the kyng assem-
bled a newe hoste & wente in-
to Northumberland, to resyst
the malice of the Scottes, which day
he made assautes vpon the borders
and entered far within the land. Where-
foze for great distresse & nede of sigh-
tyng men, the kyng had much people
out of the south & east parties of En-
glande. Amonge the whiche contrary

to the; libertie, the cytie of London
was constrained to fynde at the; co-
stes and charge two. C. menne, and so
sent them to Wyke. When the kyng
at Wyke hadde receyved his people
frome sondry countreies and good
toynes of Englande, he with a con-
uenient number rode towarde Ber-
wyke, and so sped his tournayes that
at lengthe he came nere vnto Ber-
wyke

The cytie of
London com-
pelled to fynd
the kyng two
hundred men

oo. i. wyke

wyke, and layde his siege aboute the same.

But whyle the kynge was busyed in assaulyng of the towne, & Scottes brake ouer the water of Swale in greate number, and leaupng the coste whete the kynges people laye, in secrete wyse came downe into the marchys of Poike Myre, and there slewe the people and robbed them in moost cruell wyse. Wherfoze the archbysshop of Poike constrayned of pure necessity to defend that countree, gathered vnto hym an vnredy and dispurueyed hoste for the warre, as ppyours clerkes, chanons, and other spirytual men of the churche, wth husbandmen and other vnapte people, and so wth greate number of men and fewe warly or discrete cheuetaynes, yode a gayne & Scottes, and them encountered at a place called Wynton vpon Swale, the xii. daye of the moneth of October, & gaue vnto them batayle. But for lacke of wyse and warly ppyson, the Englyshmen were beset of theyr enemyes vpon euery syde, so

that of them was slayne a great multitude, & the remenaunt shamefullye put to flyghte, by reason wherof the sayde archbysshop wth the abbot of Selby, and other were preserued. And for so many spirytual men were slayne in this batayle, therfoze it was after named of many writers & white batayle. When the kynge was enfourmed of this ouerthrow of & Rothen men, and for it dyue towards winter, he therfoze brake by his sieg and returned vnto Poike & soone after further into England. Then was nothyng done without the aduyces & counsellis of & Hugh the Spensers the father & the sonne. By whose entisement many thynges were done in England, to the great grudge as wel of the noble men of the realme as of & commons of the same, so that they were had in as great hatred and indignacion, as before tymes was Peters Gastellon. And many euill reportes and great extorcion were of them reported, as lightly men shall do & ben out of the fauoure of the comon people.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xliii.

John Wengraue.

John Pontenay.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xli.

John Dallynge.

Anno. xli.

The xii. yere.

In this. xli. yere, the king helde his great counceyll at Poike, where contrary the minde of & lordes, & Hugh the Spenser the sonne was made hygh chamberlaine of England. By reason wherof he bare him so hawtely & so ppyoude, that no lord of this lande myght gainsaye him in any thyng that he thought good. Wherof grewe the occasion of the barons war as after foloweth. In this pastyme for as muche as the foresayd cardinales might nothing do conser

ninge the peace betwene Englande & Scotlande, the kynge purchased a curse of the. xlii. John then byshop of Rome, to accurse Robert le B;me and all suche as wth hym helde or maynteyned, and it for to stande so in strength, tyll the sayd Robert had recompensed kynge Edward for all suche harmys as his lande hadde by hym receyued, & also tyll he had redemped the Monasteries and churches by hym and his caste downe in Englande, and restored to them such spirytual

rituall goodes as the Scottes hadde
 reuied and taken from them. But all
 thys auayled nothyng, but putte the
 kyng and the realme to great coste &
 charge, so that p̄comons were vexed
 and troubled many maner of wayes,
 and they; possyons and moueable
 goodes taken from theym, vpon sur-
 mised & fapned causes, so that many
 were bitterly vndone, and a fewe syn-
 guler & mysghyded persones auan-
 ced. When the moze partye of the ba-
 rones of Englande behelde thys mys-
 serye of the people, howe they were pu-
 nysshed by the hande of God, and al-
 so by the ygnorance of the kyng,
 they in secrete maner assembled them
 together at a towne called Shireborne
 in , and there condescended for
 a refoymacyon of this myschefe, to re-
 moue from the kyng the saide Spen-
 sers bothe the father and the sonne.
 And this to bypunge aboute, s; Tho-
 mas earle of Lancaster, s; Humfrey
 Bohun earle of Hereforde, s; John
 Moubray baron, s; Roger Clyfforde
 baron, s; Goselyn Dapfel baron, s; Sir
 Roger Coker, Roger Beneseelde, s; Sir
 Roger Mortimer, s; william Sul-
 lande, s; william Elmbyrdge, s;
 John Gylforde, and s; John Cyers
 barones and knyghtes, wth dyuerse
 other swaie eache of theym to stande
 by other, tyll they hadde amended the
 state of the realme. And soone after
 by they; aduice and agrements, s;
 Johan Moubraye, s; Roger Clyf-
 forde, and s; Goselyn Dapell, with
 a stronge compaigne entred vpon the
 manours and castelles of the sayde
 Spensers standynge in the marche
 of Wales, and thein spoyled and de-
 stroyed. Of the whiche spot the spen-
 sers complayned them to the kyng.
 In punishment wherof, the kyng cal-
 lyng to hym dyuerse of his counsell

at Wyndesore, there determyned that
 the sayde s; Johan Moubraye, s;
 Roger Clyfforde, & s; Goselyn Da-
 pwell, wth other they; assentes,
 shoulde appeare before the kynges
 counsaile shortly after, and there to
 make answer vpon that spotte. And
 yf they refused that to dooe, that then
 they shoulde auoyde the lande shortly
 after as banished men. But no daye
 of apperance by theym was kepte.
 Wherfore proclamacions was made
 in dyuerse places of the realme, and
 at London the. xvi. daye of Marche
 that the sayde s; Johan Moubraye,
 s; Roger Clyfforde and other, shuld
 auoyde the lande wthin. x. dayes so-
 lowynge vpon paine of death. Wher
 of hearing the lordes and barons be-
 fore named, resembled theym a moze
 stronger power, and vpon that sent a
 messenger vnto the kyng, besechyng
 hym humblye to retourne frome hys
 persone and counsell of p̄ Spensers,
 the whiche dayly dyd vnto him great
 dishonoure, and to the comune weale
 of the realme greates hynderaunce.
 The kyng heying this humble request,
 nothyng wth yf beyng contente,
 but fearynge greatly the destruccyon
 of hys owne persone, assembled hys
 counsaile for refoymacyon of this ma-
 ter. Where it was concluded that the
 kyng shoulde call a parlyamente at
 London, there to be holden in the
 solowynge. And that conclusyon so
 there taken by the sayde counsell, the
 kyng sent his letters vnto the sayde
 Barones, commaundyng theym to
 come vnto the sayde parlyamente.
 The whiche at the daye aboue sayde
 with a great hoste of menne of armes
 came vnto London, in a sute of taker-
 tes of cotes of demy parye of pelowe
 and grene, with a bande of white cast
 ouerthwaite,

The parlia-
ment of whete
bandes.

The watche
kepte in the ci-
tye of London

For this kyll that parliament longe
after of the comune people was cal-
led the parliament of whete bandes.

Then for to se the kynges peace
were substantiallyl kepte wythin the
citty of London, the Maye caused
daylye a thousande men well harnes-
sed to watche in dyuers wardes, and
at dyuers gates of the citty, & whiche
beganne at foure of the clocke in the
mornyng, and so contynued tyll syre
at nyghte. At whiche season as ma-
ny were ordeyned for to take then the
charge of the nyghte watche, and so
to contynue kyll the houre of syue in
the mornyng. And for this nyghte
watche shulde be surely kepte, two al-
dermen nightly were assigned to ryde
aboute the citty wyth certayne offi-
cers of the towne, to se the watchmen
well and dyscretly gupded. And the
gates were shyt at. ix. of the clocke, &
opened agayne at. vii. on the moztowe
and every citezen warned to haue his
harneys by hym, that he might be re-
dy with mozte warnyng, when so e-
uer he were called.

Thus in the citty the saide watche
continuyng, the foresaid parliament
was holden at Westmynster, where
amonge other thynges for the weale

of the lande, as that counceille than
coude thynke determynd, one was
that sye Hugh Spenser the father &
sye Hugh the sonne, shulde be banys-
shed oute of the realme of Englande
for tearnme of lyfe. And soone after &
banysment was putte in executy-
on, so that they both were brought vnto
Douer, there to take shyppyng. Where
sye Hugh the father made wo-
derfull greute moone when he shulde
take hys shyp, and cursed hys sonne
in pylence of suche as hadde the gup-
ding of them, sayng that by his mea-
nes he was banysed from the flour
of all landes chrystened. Then & king
dissolued the parlyamente, and every
man retourned to his owne. But it
was not longe after that woide was
broughte vnto the kyng, & sye Hugh
Spenser the sonne, bouyd vpon the
cooste of Englande, and toke prayes
of all marchautes that passed by hys
course.

But the kyng let as he had knowe
of no suche thyng, and suffered that
with many mo euill dedes to go vn-
punysed, the whiche at lengthe he re-
pented full soore, & toke therof great
remoye in conspece, as it appereth
in the ende of his reygne.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xix.

Ramonde Chyphwell.

Symon Abingdon.

John Dynton.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xx.

Anno. xiii.

In this. xiii. yere, the kyng re-
uoked the actes, & withstoode
them which were made at Lon-
don in the laste parliament, and cal-
led agayne into Englande the Spen-
sers both the father & sonne, contrary
the wyl of the barons, and set them in
lyke authorite as they befoze had ben
to the greute distourbaunce of all the

realme. And soone after vnder colure
of a tyele made by the quene vnto the
castell of Ledys in Kent, whiche then
belonged vnto sye Barthen de Bla-
dymore knyghte then beyng on the
barons partye, the kyng besyged
the sayde castel, and by helpe of the cy-
tezens of London lastely wanne it by
strengthe, and spoyled the monables
therof

The seventh parte.

therof, whiche was to a greate value after the sayeng of some wyters. In this passetyme that the kyng hadde thus called agayne the Spensers, & ruled many thynges after hys sensuall apetyte and pleasure, nothyng regardyng the common weale of the realme, the barons consyderyng well that the Spensers shulde in pprocess bypunge the lande in great ruine, & the kyng to great dishonoure, intending to resourne the myschefe that therof myghte ensue, gathered vnto theym great power. And while sir Thomas earle of Lancastre was gathering of his people, the .ii. Mortimers, & is to

save sy; Roger Mortimer of Werke and sy; Roger of Wymmoore with other, pde into the marche of Wales, and toke by strengthe certayne cyties and townes belongyng to the Spensers, and pursued also some of the kynges seruauntes. Wherefore the kyng hearpyng of the rebellyon of hys lordes, made hasty spede, and wpyth a greate hoste came about by Shrewsbury, and was nere vnto them othey were ware, so that for feare the sayde Mortimers yelded them vnto the kynges grace and mercie the which forth with were conueyed as prysoners vnto the towre of London.

Anno domini. M. CCC. x.

Reynold at Conduyt.

Hamonde Chykwell.

William Dordham.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xii.

Anno. xliii.

the .ii. yere

In this. xliii. yere, when the kyng had ordered the countree of the marche forsaide after his mynd, and had to him gathered moze strengthe aboute saint Chaddys day of begynnyng of Marche, the kyng w his people came downe to Gloucestre, where with him met the Spensers with theyr people. And from thence he pde vnto Lychesfelde, at whiche season the earles of Lancaster and of Hereford were at, and the remenaunt of theyr hoste at Burton vpon Trente, and fortifyed the byrdge that the kyng might not wpyn ouer the saide ryuer. Then the kyng was broughte vnto a foorde, & began to set ouer his knyghtes, wherof hearing the saide earles, forsoke the said towne of, and pde toward the towne of cytie of. But othey myghte passe safe vpon theyr journey, they were encountred of sy; Mortimer de Walsace earle of Denbroke,

with the Spensers, and other of the kynges hoste, vpon the. xii. daye of Marche, and of them ouerfet and constrained to fle, and so pde in pprocess of tyme to Dounstret. In this meane season, the earle Thomas had sente a knight of his, named Robert Holland into Lancastshyre, for to arere hys tenants. But when the sayde sy; Robertte hearde of that skymyshe, and howe his maister was fledde, he then dyeme hym to the kyng, and presented hym wpyth suche companye as he had then gathered. And thus the kynges power dayly encreased, & the barons discrealed. Then the barons hearing of the goyng of sy; Robert Holland vnto the kynges partte, were w it sumdeale abashed, and toke theyr counsell in the freces of Dounstret. Where after many opinions and reasons amonge them debated & argued it was finally by theim concluded, the they shulde go vnto the castel of Winton. Stando.

Stanborough, & there to holde them til they myght purchase þe kynges grace And so spedynge they tournaþ thetherwarde wþ such people as they then had they came in processe of time to a towne called Burgh bypoge.

Where they were encountred of sp; Andzewe of Harkelap knyghte, wþ other that were come oute of þe North wþ a stronge company. The which there nere vnto the sayde towne sette vpon the barones, and in the ende discomfyted them & chased theyr people. In the whiche fyghte was slayne the earle of Hereford, sp; Roger Benefeld and sp; william Sullande and other and there was taken the earle of Lancaster, sp; Roger Clifforde, sp; John Houbzape, sp; Roger Tuckettes, sir william ffrizwilliam, with dyuerse other, and ladde vnto Poyke. And this felde was foughten as wytneseth Policronycon the xvjene dape of Marche, in the ende of the yere of oure Lozde a thousand thye hundred and twentye.

It was not long after þe sp; Hugh Daniell and sp; Barthew de Bladismooze were taken. And sp; Thomas erle of Lancaster was brought again to his owne towne of Poultret, where he was brought in iudgement befoze sp; Hymer de Walaunce earle of Denbroke, sp; John Britaine erle of Richmunde, sp; Edmund of Woodstoke earle of Kent, sp; Hughe Spenser the father, and sp; Robert Dalmestroke sustyce with other, and befoze them fynally adiuged to haue his hedde stryken of. Whereof execucion was done the twelfe dape of Appell, in the beginninge of the yere of grace after the rehenyng of the church of Englande a thousande. llii. C. xxi.

From this tyme forthwarde by þe terme of. b. yeres ensuynge, þe fortune

of the Spensers hougely increased, And as faste the Durnes decreased, tyll she was releued by the kyng of Fraunce then Charles the xvj of the name, and brother vnto her, as after Halbe Metwed.

Then to retourne vnto our former mater, vpon the foresayde dape that earle Thomas was thus put to execucion, sp; Roger Tuckettes, sp; william ffrizwilliam, sir Waren of Aulse o; Ael, sp; Henry of Babbome, and sir william Cheyny Barons & knyghtes, were drawen & hanged, and their heddes smytten of and sent vnto London. Whiche all were put to death at Pountfretre foresaid, with an esquyre called John Page. And at Poyke soone after was drawen & headed sp; Roger Clifforde, sp; John Houbzape and sp; Gosepne Banpell Barons. And at Byrskowe sp; Henry womington, & sp; Henry Montoide Banarettes, & at Glouceter sp; John Giffard and sir william Elmyngham knyghtes, and at London sp; John Cyers o; Cyers baron, and at Winchellesp; Thomas Culpepyr knyghte, and at Wyndesore sp; Frauncels Waldenham baron, and at Caunterbury sp; Barthewe de Bladismooze, & sp; Bartholl de Aboznehame barons. And at Cardesse in Walsys, was putte to lyke execucion sir william Fleming knyghte, vpon whose soules and all chylden Iesus haue mercy. When the kyng had thus subdued hys barons, he soone after aboute the feaste of the Assenyon of oure Lozde, kepte hys parlyamente at Poyke. Duringe whiche parlyament sp; Hugh Spenser the father was made erle of Winchester, and sp; Andzewe of Harkelap earle of Charleple, o; after some wyters Cardopile, and dyspersed all suche as befoze hadde holden wþ the

The discomfyte of the barons.

The seventh part

the Earles of Lancaster and of Her
forde, excepte sy; Hugh Daniell and
fewe other, the whiche sy; Hugh was
recreased to grace by reasons that he
hadde married a kynneswomanne of
the kynges.

There was also ordained o; soone
after, that Master Robert Baldoche
a man of euil fame shulde be chaun-
celour of Englande. Than forsaytes

and synes, were gathered vnto the
kynges treasury, wpythout sparing
of p;tyleged places o; other, so that
what myght be founde, all was seled
for the kyng. By reason wherof much
treasour was broughte vnto the kyn-
ges coffers, besyde gret thynges that
were byped and spoled by the offi-
cers of dyners thynges.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xxi

Rycharde Constantyne

Hamonde Chykwell

Rychard Hakency

Anno domini. M. CCC. xxii

Anno. xv



At this. xv. yere the kyng
gathered the. vi. penne
of tempozall inennes
goodes through Eng-
lande, Irelande, and
Wales, that to hym was graunted
at the forsayde parlyamente, for the
defence of the Scottes. Whych was
payed wpyth greate murmoure and
grudge, consyderynge the manyfold
myseryes that the common people at
those dayes were wypped in. Thys
peare also the sunne aperted to mang
syghte as bloude, and so contynued
by the space of. vi. houres, that is to
meane in the moneth of October and
laste dayes of the sayde moneth, from

vi. of the clocke in the mornynge tyl
one of the same day. After some wy-
ters about this tyme the Scottes en-
tendynge to wyne and enterpryse in
Irelande, and for to wyne that cou-
try to they; obeyssaunce, entered it w
a stronge hoost vnder they; captayne
Edward le Buzze brother to the Scot-
tysh kyng. But howe it was by ayde
of Englyshmen o; of them selves, the
Iryshe quyte them so well, and bare
them so manfully that they vanquy-
shed the Scottes, and chased theym
out of that countrey. In which chase
a syghte the sayd Edward le Buzze
and many of the noble men of Scot-
lande were slayne.

Howe the Scot-
tes enterpris-
sed to haue
subdued Ire-
lande

Anno domini. M. CCC. xxii

John Gyantham

Hamonde Chykwell

Rycharde of Ely.

Anno domini. xlii. CCC. xxiii

Anno. xvi



And in the. xvi. yere the
kyng made great pro-
uysyon for to make a
votage into Scotland
so that aboute the be-
gynnyng of August he entered that
countrey. But the Scottes consyde-

ryng the greate multytude of hys
hooste, dyue them into mountaines
and other places where as the Eng-
lyshe men myghte not wyne to the
and all to the entene for to werpe and
tye the kiges greate hooste. Than dy-
uers malpoyes fell amonge the En-
glysh

glyshemen, so that many of them dyed and wer lost in that iourney, as wel for lacke of bytaye as by in sympte and sykenesse, so that the kynge for these causes and other, was constrained to retorne into Englande about the natyvyte of our Ladye. Wherof, the Scottes beyng entoured, by James Douglas with other captaynes of the Scottes, with a strong host folowed or cosed the kynge, in such wyse that aboute the feast of Saynt Luke, they had almost take the king at dynet at an abbaye called Bella Launde or Berghlande. Than the kynge of pure constraynte defended hym, and withstode the Scottes as he myghte.

But after thys and weke fyghte the kynge was compelled to fle, and by that meane to save hym selfe.

In thys sympte he was taken by John Bytayne Earle of Rychembode and the kynges treasoure was there spoyled and boyned awaye, and the ordynance belongynge to the hooste, greute part of it was by the Scottes conveyed into Scotlande. Than the Scottes in thys retournynge homeward wanne the castell of Rotheham, and robbed the towne of Rothehamton and other. Of thys losse and harmes was by Andrew of Herkeles put in wyte by mysledynge of the kinges hoost, as in the nexte peare shal be shewed.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xlii.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xlii.

Symon frauncys

Adam Saleburge

John of Orenford

Anno. xlii

Cherill. yere



As in the. xlii. yere the kynge beyng entoured thache and his people were put vnto dishonoure (as in the pcedynge yere is touched) of the Scottes, by the vntrowth and treasoun of the fornamed by Andrew earle of Carlele or Cardoyle, sente a knyghte named by Antony Lucy, for to arrest the sayde earle, & to bring hym safely vnto the kynges presence. Wherby Antony sped hym in such wyse, & vpon the day of L. Chad, or the. ii. day of March, the sayde earle was taken and so kepte in pryson long after, tyl October folowynge, at which season as affirmeth Geste of Monimourthe at Cardoyle in Wales the sayde by Andrew was arreygned, & conuicted that he hadde taken moneye of the

Scottes to betraye the kynge bys naturall Loyde. For the whiche treason he was there, or after other at Westchester or at Wykeburye drawne and hanged, and bys heade sente after to London and set vpon the byrdge.

In thys peare the warre begane to quychen in Gupan betwene the Englyshemenne and Frenchemenne. Wherof, the occasyon was as sayth the french booke, for a bastyle or for tresse made by the Loyde of Mount Desayne or Desarte a Loyde of Gascopne, vpon the frenche kynges ground as the frenchmen sayd. But the Gascopnes and Englysh menne iustified it to be within the terytoye of Gupan. For thys syde beganne greute woyses, and after manasses But lastly mortall warre. So that the Gascopnes with ayde of the kynges

Steward

The seventh parte

167

Edwarde of Englande, slew manie Frenchmen that came to ouertourne the sayd bastyle. Whan Charles the v. of Charles the saye, which at that tyme was kynge of Fraunce, hearde of the ouerthrowe of the Frenchmen and howe the Gascones forstye the sayd bastyle wthin hys tyme, as was enfourmed, he sent in all spede wth a stronge host his vnckle Charles de Valois, whiche made sharp and cruel warre vpon the Gascones, and wanne from the towne of Angou and Ampas wth other, & in processe came vnto the towne of cytee of Royll, and laped hys syege vnto the same. But the Englysh wth the Gascones issued out of the towne, and gaue battayle vnto the Frenchmen, and put them to þe worse and slewe. xlii. C. of theym. Amonge the whych a lord called the lord of saynte Florentyne wth other noble men of Fraunce were slayne, and the other constrained to lye further from the towne. Howbeit, in conclusyon the sayd towne by apoyntment was yelded to the Frenchmen, vpon condycyon that all such Englyshmen as were wthin that towne, shoulde go freely wth theyr goodes to Burdeaur, or if they wold remayne there shoulde, then to be swoyne vnto the frenche kynge and to dwell there as frechmen. After whych towne so yelde, þe Edmund of Woodstoke the kinges brother thā beyng at Burdeaur as the kynges

deputye, made suche resistance agayne the sayde Charles de Valois that a trefwe was taken for that tyme. Than aboute myddent the kynge had kynge knowledge of this warre in Guyan, and howe the frenche kynge intended to lease all Gascoyne and Guyan, for by the kynge of certayne couenauntes before tyme betwene them made, & not by kynge Edwarde fourmed, sent ouer þe quene his wyfe the frenche kynges syster, to entreate a concoorde and peace betwene theym.

And in the begynnynge of August folowynge, þe Roger Mortimer of Wygmore, by mene of a sleeping person of dyynche, that he gaue vnto his keepers as the common fame wente, escaped out of the towne of London, and went vnto the quene of Fraunce

And soone after were taken wthin the castel of Walynghorde, þe John Goldyngton, and þe Edmund of Beche, the wyche þe John was sent vnto þe Wyche & there hanged and drawen for the Barons quarrell, and hys head sette vnto London by þe way. And about the fest of the Natyuite of our lady the king sent ouer þe Edwardes hys sonne into Fraunce, for to do homage vnto the frenche kynge for the duchy of Guyan. Whom the frenche kynge Phylippe le Beaue receaued ioyously, and caused hym to tary wth the quene hys mother in the countrey of Montpen lenger than kynge Edward was pleased.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xliii

Anno domini. M. CCC. xlv.

Hamonde Chykwell

Benet of Fulhā

Anno. xlviii.

John Calton



At this xviii. yere kynge Edwarde beyng enfourmed that the frenche kynge had

geuen vnto þe Edwardes hys sonne the duchy of Guyan contrarie hys mynde and pleasure, and that also þe quene

Edwarde the seconde

quene hys wyfe, nor the the sayde sy Edwarde made no speche into Eng-
lande, not wythstandynge hys often
sendynge for the, was wyth hys sayde
wyfe and sonne greuouslye dysplea-
sed, in so much, that a proclamacyon
was made at London in the moneth
of December, that yf the quene and
her sonne entred not the lande by the
Octaups of the Epheany of our lord
nexte folowynge in peasyable wyse,
that they shuld be taken for enemies
to the kyng and hys realme of Eng-
lande. But for the quene feared the
trecherye of the Spensers and other
that were nere vnto the kyng, she a
boode styll in fraunce. Wherefore,
kyng Edward after the expyacion
of the forsayde daye, caused to be sea-
led all suche landes as to hys sayde
wyfe and sone belonged, and the pro-
pyttes of them toke to hys owne vse.
When thys rumoure was knowene
throughe the moze parte of Englad,
dyuers men of name of the landes,
as sy Wylliam Trussell, sy John
Cromwel, wyth dyuers other, depa-
ted secretly out of England, and say-
led vnto the quene.

When kyng Edward was ware
of this, he sent vnto the French kyng
so sharpe and soze letters, that he mo-
nyshed the quene oute of hys lande,
and wolde nother ayde her nor her co-
panye, but as sayth John Froysarde
that made a compendious worke in
French of the hole lyfe or stoye of the
thyrde Edward, and therwyth expres-
sed many other stoyes and cronycles
of fraunce, flaunders, and other re-
gyons, at thys tyme when the quene
was thus monyshed to aduopde out
of fraunce, sy John de Henawde bro-
ther to the Erle of Henawde a man
of gret fame, was then in the French
kynges court. The whych haupnge

compassyon on the quene and of her
pouge sonne, requyred her to go wyth
hym vnto hys brothers court soze-
sayde. Whereof the quene bring sayne
graunted vnto hys request and sped
her thither shortly after, where she
wyth her company was ioyously and
honorably receaued. In the time and
season that the quene wyth her sonne
laye thus in the court or countrey
of the erle of Henawde, by meanes of
such as wer abought her, a marriage
was concluded betwene sy Edward
her sonne, and Phyllip the sayde ear-
les daughter, vpon certayne condy-
cyons. Whereof one was that the sayde
earle shulde at hys proper costes set
ouer into Englande the sayde sy Ed-
ward wyth a crewe of. CCC. me of
armes. For the whiche prouysyon
was made wyth al dysligence. Of thys
the same sprang shortly in England.
Wherefore the kyng in al hast made
prouysyon to haue the hauens and the
porte of hys lande surely kepte, for to
resyst the landynge of hys enemyes
for suretye whereof, the cytyzens of
London were constrayned to fynde
at theyr proper costes an hundred me
of armes, the which contrary they ly-
bertyes, wyth a condycyon that after
that daye it shulde be no presydente
they sente vnto Dortchester. In thys
season and passe tyme the quene with
sy Edward her sonne wyth a smale
companye of Englyshemenne, and a
crewe of Henawders, of the whych sy
John Henawde her erles brother was
captayne, tooke shippynge in those
partyes, and had the wind so fauourable
vnto them, that they landed in Eng-
lande at a port called Orewel belyde
Harwyche in Suffolke the. xxv. day
of September, without any resistence
of men of warre agayne her made
To whom after her landynge, the peo-
ple

sy John
Froysarde

The landynge
of the quene
with sy Edward

The seventh part

107

the kynge
and the
of the

ple of the country dyem by great com-
panys, & so sped her toward Londo.
At thys tyme of the quenes landyng
the kyng was at hys cytee of Londo.
But when he harde of the great peo-
ple that dyem to her out of all coun-
tries, he feared. Wherfore in safegar-
dyng of hym self he fled wth a smal
compane toward Wales, and lefte
maister Walter Stapeld byshop of
Exeter behynd hym, to have the rule
of þe cytee of Londo. It was not long
after the kynges departyng, that the
quene sente a letter vnto the Maye,
and commynalte of the citee, and re-
quyred of hym ayde to subdue the op-
pyssour of the common weale of the
realme. But to that letter was made
none aunswere. Therfore she wrote
vnto hym the seconde tyme, aduertly
synge them of theyr landyng, and of
the entente that she had to resourme
the enoynties and mys gouernance
of the lande, in admoneshyng theym
of theyr ayde and socoure, as by the
tenoure of the sayd letter moze plapn-
ly appereth. Wherof the circumstaun-
ce I haue lefte out of thys booke, for
so much, as I fynde varpence in the
contentes therof, and also for the co-
ppes therof are set oute in the cron-
icles of Englande and dyuers other
bookes. Than thys sayde letter was
tacked vpon þe crosse in Chepe, which
at that day was called the new crosse.
In the nyghte befoze the daye of St.
Denys or the .x. daye of October.
And other coppes of the same were
fastened in dyuers other places of þe
cyte, wherof one was fastened vpon
the Mayes gate. After whych letter
thus publyshed in the cytee, the bys-
hop of Exeter, to whom as befoze is
sayde the kyng commytted the rule
of the cytee, sente vnto the Maye to
haue the keyes of the gates of the cy-

tee by vertue of hys commissyon. By
the whych he stode so securely, and
bled so sharpe wordes in the kynges
name, that variaunce grew betwene
hym and the cyteyns, so ferfourth
that the commōs of the cytee in their
rage toke the sayde byshop, the .xiii.
daye of October, and hym wth two
of hys householdes esquyres behedded
vnrueently at the stadard in West
Chepe. And the same day was taken
for a tyte a cyteyn called John Mar-
shall, whych fauoured the Spensers
partye, and in the same place also be-
hedded without processe of the lawe.
And then the corpes of the sayde bys-
hoppe wth hys .ii. seruantes, were
haryed to þe Chamis side wher þe sayd
byshop had begone to corse a towre
and there in the rubbysh and sande
of the same they buryed or conyered
these .iiii. bodies. Whych despyte to
hym was done after some authorites,
for so much as he had vnturped of the
comon good of the cytee in settinge
of the said towre. But for what cause
he was thus vngoodly and vnrue-
ently delt wth no mencion is made.
In thys passetyme the quene casly &
a foote pace folowed the kyng, which
by thys season was comen to Wy-
stowe hauntyng wth hym the Spen-
sers, and hys dysfamed chanceloure
Maister Roberte Baldocke, and sy-
John Carse of Brunwell and other.
Wherby theyr counsailes it was a-
greed, that sy Hugh Spenser the fa-
ther shulde remayne there and haue
the rule of the towne and castel, while
the kyng wth the other tooke shyp-
pyng and sayled frome thence into
Wales to rapte the Wallshmen. And
so the kyng wth sy Hugh Spenser
the sonne and the other, tooke shyp-
pyng at Wystowe and sayled into
Wales. When certente therof came
vnto

The byshop
of Exeter to
whom þe kyng
had commyt-
ted the cytee
of Londen be-
hedded.

Spenser & son
taken in
Bristol.

unto the queene anon she sent to Bristol the erle of Kent the kinges brother, & John of Henawde with divers other, for to take sp. Hugh & his father. The which put them in such deuoure, & they toke the sayd sp. Hugh, and left a certayne to hold the towne and castel tyl the queene with her power came thither.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xxi.

Sylbert Wooddon.

Richard Betayne,

John Contton

Anno domini. M. CCC. xxi.

Anno. xix

The. xix. yere.



In this. xix. yere and beginning of this Mayes charge, upon the morowe folowynge the feast of Simon and Jude the same daye that the Maye rode to Westmynster to take his charge, the same daye at Bristol was sp. Hugh Spenser the father put to death and after buried at Wynechester. And upon saynt Hughys day folowynge, on the. xviii. day of November, was sp. Hughe his sonne drawne hanged, and quartered at Hereforde, and his head sente to London and set amonge other upon the hydage. The comen fame of hym wente, that after he was taken he wold take no maner sustenance. Wherefore he was the soner put vnto death. Of this hugh a versifyer made these two verses folowynge.

*Tunis cum lignis a te miser ensu et ignis.
Hugo secutus equus abstulit omne decus.*

Whiche verses to them that understand no latyn, maye in this wyse be expounded on Englyshed.

With ropes were thou bounde,
and on the galowe honge

In the which tyme they sped them into Wales, and in processe toke the hynge, his chancelour, the Earle of Arundel, and sp. Hugh Spenser the sonne, and broughte them all to the towne of Hereford. And in this while the cytyzens of London wanne the towne of London and kepte it vnto the queens vs.

And from thy bodye, thine head with
swearde was hytte.
Thy bowels in the spye, were thowt
and burned longe
Thy bodye in. iiii. peces, eke with an
axe was hytte
With hysse befoze drawen, fewe me
pyttinge it,
Thus with these tormentes, for thy
synnes sake,
From the wretched hugh, all worldly
welth was take

In this mene tyme and season & hynge was chueped vnto the castel of Kenelworth, & there kepte vnder the gard of sp. Henry of Lancaster, on by other vnto the erle Thomas of Lancaster & was beheaded at Pouceter. And master Robert Baldoke the hynge's chancelour was sent vnto London, & put into prison of Newgate, wher after he died miserably. The erle John of Arundel was also put to death at Hereford, within. iiii. dayes of sp. Hugh the yonger Spenser. The queene with sp. Edward her sonne, & with a good company of lordes & gentelme returned vnto London, & there of the cytyzens with great honour and ioy was receaued, upon the day of St. Barbara

the
taken a
on hold
gurne
wys

The seventh parte

172.

On the fourthe daie of December, so comynge vnto Westmyster, wher in the octaues of the Epiphanye of our Lorde, a parlyament was holden during the which certain solempne messengers wer sent vnto the kynge to the castell of Kenelworth, that is to saye, thre byshoppes, thre erles, two abbotes. ii. barons, & two iustices, with the procuratour of þe parlyament, s^r William Trussell, to depose hym of all kyngly dignytie, as before was agreed by all the lordes spirituell & temporal & comons of þe sayd parlyamente, & they to resygne vnto the kynge, al homages & fealties to him before made in the name of all the barony of Englande. The the fornamed s^r William Trussell vpon the daie of the conuersion of saynt Poule o^r the .xxv. daie of January, by the autho^rtye of hys office in the presence of the forsayd lordes had these woordes solowynge vnto the kynge. I William Trussell, in þe name of all men of this lande of Englande, & procuratoure of thys parlyament, resygne to the Edward, the homage that was made to the somtyme, and from thys tyme forth, depriue the of all kynglye power. And I shall neuer be attendaunt vnto the as kynge after thys tyme. And thus was Edward the secounde deposed and his sonne made kynge, when he had reigned full. xliij. yeres, syre monethes & odde daies. Than Edward thus remaynyng in pylson, as first in the castell of Kenelworth, and after in þe castell of Barkle, toke greate repetaunce of hys former lyfe, and made a lamentable complaynte for that he had so greuously offended God. Wherof a parte I haue after set out, but not all, lest in shulde be tedious to the readers o^r hearers.

*Dampnum mihi contulit tempore brumali,
Fortuna satis aspera nebulentis mali.
Nullus est tam sapiens, mitis, aut formosus,
Tam prudens uirtutibus, ceterisq; famosus,
Quin stultus reputabitur, & satis despectus,
Si fortuna prosperos auertat effectus.*

These with many other after the same makynge I haue seen, whyche are reported to bee of his owne makynge in the tyme of hys enpysonment. The which for length of tyme I haue lefte out of thys worke, and shewed þe effecte of them in Englysh as foloweth.

What Saturne with his colde sp face, whyte,
The growld with his frostes turneth þe grene to
The tyme wynter, whiche trees doth deface,
And causeth al verduce to auoyde quyte, (sayte
The fortune, which sharpe was wth stormes not
Wath me assaured, with hir frowarde wyll,
And me decclypped with daungers rpyght yll.

What man in this worlde, is so wyse o^r sayre,
So prude, so vertuous, o^r famous vnder chayne
But that for a foole, and for a man dyspyed,
Shalbe take, what fortune is fets hym deuidebe

Alas now I crye, but no man doth me moone,
For I sue to the, that p^rtye of me haue none.
Manyis great honours I dyd wthplom auallise
That now wyth byhonoure booen me styng
and launce.

And suche as somtyme dyd me greatly fere,
De dyspyse, & let not wth sclauder me to dere.

O mercifull god, what loue thei did me shewe,
And wth detraction thei do me haue and hewe
Alas moste synfull wretche, why should I thus
complayne,

If God be pleased, that I shulde thus susteyne
for the greates offence before by me doone,
Wherfore to the good Lorde, I wyl retourne
este soone,

And hooly comette me, the great mercy wthtyl,
And take in patience, all that maye be the wyl
And all onely the serue with all dylligence,
Alas that before this tyme, I had not þe fence.

But now good Lorde, whiche art omnipotent,
Behold me moste wretched, & greatly penitent,
And of my trespassse, forgyueneesse þe me graunt.
And by what sorowe, my carkes is now daunt.

Graunte it maye be to my soule remede,
 That the sooner I maye attayne it by.
 For to the sweete Iesu I yelde me soze huppynge,
 And aske of þe parad for my gruous spynnyng.

Moste blessed Iesu,
 Roote of all vertue,
 Graunte I maye the sue,
 In all humylyte.

Ben thou for our good
 Lyke to shedde thy blood
 And stretche the body the rood
 For our iniquyte.

I the beseeche,
 Moste hollesome leche
 That thou wylt seche
 For me suche grace.

That when my body byle
 My soule shall exyle,
 Thou bynge in most whyle,
 It in rest and peace.

Fraunce.

Fraucia.

Lewis the .xi.



Lewis the .xi. of þe name, and sonne vnto Philippe le Beawe, oꝝ þe .iiii. Philippe, began his reigne ouer þe realme of Fraunce in the yere of our Lorde. M.iii. hundredeth and .xv. and the .viii. yere of the seconde Edward then kyng of Englande. Anone as this Lewis was crowned, Engueram, whiche as ye haue herde, was chiefe and mooste secrete counceyloure wyth Philippe the fourth last kyng of Fraunce, was called to account by the meane of Charles de Valois vncle vnto this kyng. And so; so muche as the sayd Engueram had gyue sharpe and hastye wordes vnto the said Charles, in assymyng that muche of the kynges treasoure remainned in the handes of the sayd Charles, so; this he toke so great dis-

pleasure agayne the sayd Engueram and bare towarde hym such rancoure and malice, that he leste not tell he had betrayd hym of his lyfe, so that in processe he was accused of .xxvii. articles concerning treason & iniury done vnto kyng Philippe forefayd, & vnto the realme of Fraunce, & whiche articles in oꝝde are set out in þe ffrich cronicle whiche I here ouerpass. By force wherof this Engueram was lastly conuyct & iudged vnto death and so; the same in the even of assencion of our Lorde hanged vpon the gybet of Paris. This yere also fell grete scarcitye of corne and frute in Fraunce, by meane of vnseasonable wederynge, as was in Englande in the .ix. and .x. yeres, & before & after of the regne of Edward the second at this day & then kyng of Englad. By reason wherof great famyn and death of poore people fell in Fraunce, as it then byd in Englande.

Ye haue before in the .xxviii. yere of Philippe father vnto this Lewis hard howe the Flemynge agayne rebelled, and how by þe meane of Engueram, the frenche hoste was then retourned with dishonour into Fraunce for reuengement wherof, this Lewis assembled a ryght stronge armye of the more partye of all the noble men of Fraunce, & in the moneth of Septembꝛe entred the countrey of Flaunders & so came vnto þe towne oꝝ nere there vnto called Courtray, & lodged bys people nere vnto the ryuer of Lis oꝝ Ayle, so; so muche as þe byrdes ouer that ryuer by þe Flemynge were broken. Where the kyng with his hoste so lyge, the Flemynge by þe other syde laye in hohge nombꝛe so; to defende the passage of the frenchmen. In whiche tyme & season fell suche plenty of rapne, that þe wayes wared

nopous

The seventh parte.

177.

noyous & foule in all that countrey. By reason whereof bytappil. whyche thā was as aboue is said scant, was than moze scarce.

And ouer þ, the feride where the hoste laye was so wette & myxy, that men and beastes were to greuoulye noyed. Wherfore in cōclusiō þ kyng consydering those great hynderaunces & harmes to his lordes & comōs and þ he myght in no maner wyne ouer to hys enemyes, he retourned as other before times had done, with lytel honour into fraunce, to þ great losse of þ kynges ordinaūce & other stuffe that myght not be carped thēs by reason of depenes of the way. For whych cause & causes, the kyng was so sooze displeased, þ he made then a great othe, that yf he might lyue tyll the yere solowpnyng, þ he shuld besette so the Flemyngeþ þ they shoulde not escape his daſtigter, & that he shulde neuer take treatie nō ende with thē except they would fully & holy putte thē in his grace & mercy. But in the yere solowpnyng aboute the feaste of Pentecoste whē the sayd Lewis had scantly reygned. ii. yeres, he dyed at Bops in Wyndēt, & the .viij. day of Julie honorably was buryed at saynte Denyse, leuyng after him none issue male, wherfore his brother Philip succeeded hym in the kyngdome.

Wyle of kyng Lewis was left of her sayd husbāde w childe. The which in processe of tyme was deliuered of a man chylde named John, that dyed shortly after. After whose death þ sayd Philip was forthwith proclaymed kyng of fraunce, and crowned at Parys aboute Christmas solowpnyng, albeit that þ duke of Burgoyne with other, for a while withsāid that coronacion, and would haue preferred the doughter of Lewis last dead. But other of the lordes and nobles of fraunce wolde not be agreable, þ a woman shoulde enheryte so great a kyngdome. By meane wherof vnkynndnes kyndled attwene the kyng and the sayd duke. But by wyle medyatoures they were after accorded, in suche wyle that the said duke married the eldest doughter of þ kyng.

In this passe tyme suche meanes were made by the Flemyngeþ, that an vnytee and accorde was stablyshed attwene fraunce and them for þ tyme that it helde. Whiche peace as testifyeth the frenche cronycle, was laboured & ended by a cardynal named Josselyn, and sente from þ. cxiij. John thā B. of Rome, so that by medyatiō of the sayd cardynall, the erle of Flaūdyres was receiued vnto the kynges grace, and at Parys dyd vn to the frenche kyng his homage, & sware vnto hym feawtye.

In the thyrde yere of the regne of this Philip, the prouost of Parys haupnyng in his pryson a Prycarde a mā of great rychesse, whiche for felonye or like cryme was iudged to be hanged. The sayd prouost for great benefyte to hym dooen, and paymēt of great summes by þ sayd Prycarde toke an other pooze innocent man, & put hym to death in stede of the sayd Prycarde. Of the which offence whā

pp ii due

France.

the .v.



Philip .p. of that name and brother of the forer named Lewis, whyche for his heygth was surnamed Philip the lōge, began his regne ouer the frechme in the yere of our Lorde. M. CCC. & xliij. and the .x. yere of Edward the seconde then kyng of England. But fyrste he reygned but as regente of fraunce, so, so muche as Clemence þ

due proofe of it was made before the kynges counceyll, the sayd piousste for thesame dede was put vnto lyke iudgement.

In the fyfth yere of thesayd Whyllyp, all the Lazzarres of the countrey of Langedocke were byente, for so muche as they were accused of their owne confessyon proued, that they had popsoned and entended to haue popsoned all the welles of that countrey. And for many Jewes wer vnto them counsentyng, therfore many of them suffered lyke iudgement. In this yere also for somuch as in those dayes in dyuers places of Fraunce, a sonde prophece was brought by amōg the comune people, that shepherdes and herdes shuld wyne the holy lande. Than they assembled the selfe in dyuers places and companyes, & lastely came together at Darys. Wher they were so many in nōbye, by reason of other of the comune people that fell vnto them, that the prouost of Darys was not of power to withstande the, so that they brake prysons and toke out suche persons as theym pleased, and from thens wente beggyng and robbynge tyll they came into Langedocke. Where they fell vpon the Jewes, and robbed theym of all such mouables as they myght fynde, and slewe of theym also. Wherfore the other of the Jewes feryng the sayd comunes gathered them with their wyues & chyldren to the nouē of .v. C. into a towne, and thought to defende them & their wyues and chyldren from the sayd herdes. But anon as they had wytyng therof, they assaulted the sayd towne so egerly, that in the ende seynge they myght not escape, for veraye despyte they threwe theyr chyldren downe at theyr heades, and after slewe either

other, for they shulde not fall in the handes of theyr enemyes, or elles to auoyde the paynes of the fyre, which the herdes had begonne to fasten vpon the sayd towne. Whan the said herdes had thus robbed & slayn the Jewes of Langedocke, they departed thens and yode toward a countrey called Carcasson, entredyng lyke robbery as they before had dyd. Wher of the countrey beyng warned, stoped and kepte so the passages, and withstode them with suche power & strengthe, that they dyscoured them selues by small companyes, so many of them wer taken and hanged, & the other fled in sauegardyng them selfe, and so this foolyshe prophece was ended with synne and shame.

Kyng Whyllyp by meane of euill counseyle sette a great taske vpon his comunes, that is to meane the fyfth parte of theyr mouable goodes. For the whyche, consyderyng he had no charge of warres in no place, they murmured & grudged wonder soze. But how it was or this tare was leuyed, he fell in a feuer quarterne & a great syr. Which sicknesse fell vpon hym by prayer of the comunes after the frenche boke, for leuyng of the sayd greuous tare. Than for hym was made many solene processions and other prayers. Powbeit in long processe he dyed, whan he had languished from the begynnyng of August tyll the .viij. daye of Januarie. Vpon whiche daye he dyed, when he had reygned .liij. yeres, and .viij. monethes and odde dayes, leuyng after hym none heyre male, wherfore the crowne dyscended vnto his brother Charles erle of the Marches.

Francia.

Charles the fyfth.

Carolus

Francia.

The wyched
purpos of
Lazars.

The assemble
of shepherdes
and other her
des.



Carolus the fifth
or Charles the
youngest of the
three brethren
or sons of Phi-
lippe le Beave
beganne his re-
igne ouer f^ren-
che in the moneth of Januari
and yere of our lord .M. CCC. and
.xxii. and the .xv. yere of the seconde
Edward yet kyng of England, and
was crowned at Rames the twelwe
daie of Februari next ensuyng. After
whiche solempnite finisshed and en-
ded, he in short proces of tyme after
sent vnto the .xxii. John then bishop
of Rome, and ascertained hym of the
gossiprede that was betwene hym &
Blanche his wife. Wherfore the ex-
amination by f^r said bishop of Rome
was committed vnto the bishoppes
of Paris and of Beauuais, and mat-
ter Godfrei de Blessys prothono-
tary of the countree of Rome. The
whiche after due and perfecte exami-
nation in that mater made, thei found
that Hawde countesse of Artois and
mother to f^r soze named quene Blach
was godmother vnto kyng Charles
his husbnde. Of the whiche when
thei had made reporte vnto the bis-
hoppe of Rome, he gaue sentence f^r
the said matrimony was not legitti-
mat, and commaunded a deuoyce and
a seperacio to bee made atwene those
twoo psones. The whiche was short-
ly after executed. In the second yere
of this Charles, died Robert erle of
Flanders without issue. Wherfore
the said erldome fell into f^r frenche
kynges handes, so that of it he was
in processe by thagrement of the lordes
of the same, putte in peassible pos-
session, all besyde the erle of Nevers
made therunto a pretence and title,

And in this yere kyng Charles
about the feast of saint Mathewe in
Septembre, married his second wife
named Maye the sister of the kyng
of Bohemy or Breme, & daughter to
Henry erle of Lucen bough and late
Emperour of almayne, named in f^r
line of f^r Emperours Henry the .viii.
or after some writers the .vii. Also in
the said yere one named Jourdan of
the Isle, a Gascoyne boyme, & vile of
condicions to whome the foresaid John
bishop of Rome in mariage hadde
giuen his niece for reuerence of his
birth, this leasid by the meane of his
vile condicions and suche dishonest
compaignie as he dydw vntill hym,
he fell into many slanderous vices
so f^r lastly he was accused of rape &
murder & of felony. Of f^r whiche he
was at length in .xviii. articles by due
prose made couicte by the lawe, and
iudged to bee hanged. But the kyng
at the request of f^r bishop of Rome
& for the honour of his blode, graun-
ted to hym a charter, & perdoned hym
of all former trasgressiōs. But f^r not
withstandyng he in processe of tyme
fell or retourned vnto his olde accu-
stomed condicions. And among other
greate crimes, by hym executed, he
slew a sergeant of armes belōgyng
to f^r kyng, f^r to hym was sent in mes-
sage. For whiche murder & other de-
testable dedes, he was newly acused,
& hpo that somonid to appere at Pa-
ris before f^r kyng & his counsaill. At
whiche daye of apperace he came to
the said citee in a greate cōpaignie,
& some noble menne whiche were to
hym nere of kinne, and excused hym
to the bittermoste of their powers.
But agayne hym and to accuse
hym came many other lordes and
barons. Of whiche the marques
of Impton or Dampton with his
pp. lii. soonne

soone were chief, that putte causes of complaint agayne hym. The whiche made suche pious and declaracions agayne þe said Jourdan, that he was committed to the chastelet of Paris, and there to remaine as a prisoner. And in pprocess of tyme suche matters and trespasses were pround vpon hym, that he by auctoritee of a parliament holden at Compeyng was lastly iudged to die. And soone after that is to meane the seuenth daye of Maye, he was drawin to the gibbet of Paris and there hanged. In the thirde yere of his reigne, this Charles gaue vnto the erle of Nevers þe beefore tyme hadde made claime to the erledome of Flaunders, the said erledome, the whiche of the Flemynghes and inhabitauntes of that countree was well and ioyously receiued. Then he in shorte whyle after gaue vnto þe townes of Gaunte, Bruges, Ippe, and other, diuers priuileges and grauntes to their greate auantage and profite. But it was not long after þe he wanne of them as muche grudge and hatred as he to fore had loue and good will. And all for a taxe that he set vpon the dwellers of Bruges and the countree nere there vnto, and specially of them that dwelled in the countree. For thei thought that their charge exceeded farre the charge of the dwellers within the towne. Wherefore by secreete meanes thei appoynted a daye of assemble among them self, and sodainly well armed entered the towne of Bruges, and slew therin diuerse of the erles seruantes, and some of the borough maisters of the said towne, suche as thei suspected to bee of counsaill of þe leuyng of the said taxe. In þe.iii. yere of his reigne, this Charles after the death of Mary his second wife, by

dispensacion of the bishop of Rome the. xii. John he married Jane his cousin Germane the daughter of Lewis erle of Eurour, and vncle vnto this kyng Charles, or brother to his father Philippe le Beave.



And this aboute said. iiii. yere, the quene of England and sister to Charles of France, to treaten an vnite and peace betwene hir lord and hir brother, for þe warre made in Gasconie, as beefore is toouched in the. xv. yere of Edward the second hir lord and husbandde, and thei taried, and retourned, as aboue in the said yere is expessed.

In this yere also the erle of Flaunders fornamed, for suspencion that he hadde to Robert of Flaunders his vncle, lest he for his singuler auantage would supplat hym of that erledome, he made letters vnto the gouernours of þe towne, where the said Robert was resident and abyding, that thei shoulde putte hym to death. But by the warnyng of his olde and trusty frende the erles chauncellour, he was warned and so auoyded that towne. For this, greate malice and rancour arose betwene this Robert and the erle, whiche was not shortly pacified. But it was not long after that a nother taxe or imposition was liued of the townes of Gaunt, Bruges, Ippe, and other townes of Flaunders. The whiche taxe was liued in recompensemēt of suche warres made vpon Flaunders by Philippe le Beave or moze directly for payment of. xii. thousande pounde awarded by Thomas the cardinall, as beefore is shewed in the second yere of the. v. Philippe, that the Flemynghes shoulde paye to the frenche kyng for byyng of their peace. Of this taxe to bee le-
uies

The seventh parte

170.

uiers oꝝ gatherers was assigned the principall menne of the said towne, the whiche by their demeanure in þ leuynge therof demeaned them in suche wise, that thei ranne in greete hatred of the common people. In so muche that thei accused them and said that thei hadde leuied oꝝ gathered muche moze then the said tax amounted. Wherefoze thei desired of the erles counsaill, that the said persones might bee called to accompt. But this requeste might not bee obtained, whiche caused the commons to runne in further grudge and murmur. And other thynge also caused suspencion, foꝝ the erles counsaill and the said collectours hadde so many secreete assemblies. At lengthe when the erles counsaill apperceiued the murmure of the commons, thei with the collectours condescended foꝝ a traine, to haue taken certeine capitaines of the said commons, and said that at Turnaye at a daye assigned, the said collectours should peld by their accompt. At whiche daye the erle in proper persone came vnto the said towne of Turnaye. And there when the erle with þ other of his counsaill should haue executed their putposed entet, how it was by some warnyng oꝝ monicion that the commons had, thei withstode the erle and his compaignie, and in the ende slew many of their enemies, and tooke the erle and putte hym in sure keepyng within the towne of Bruges. But in this skirmishe by meane of the erles party, a greete parte of þ foresaide towne was byt. Wherefoze the towne toke partie w the Flemynge, and were a greete cause that the erle was taken and putte frome his entent. Then the foresaid commons to the moze dis-

pleasure of þ erle, admitted foꝝ their lord and capitaine Robert the uncle of the erle foresaid, and among them reputed hym foꝝ erle of Flaunders. The whiche foꝝ takyng vpon hym deliuered from prison his frende the erles chauncellour, whiche as aboue is said had deliuered hym from former daunger, and made hym chiefe of his counsaill. But to all this was the towne of Gaunt repugnaunt, in so muche that mortall warre beganne to soude betwene the said towne and the towne of Burges and other. And so farfourth continued, that shortly after the people of Gaunt and of the other towne, met with them of Bruges in plaine battail, and fought cruelly. But in the ende, thei of Gaunt chased them of Bruges, and slew of them beyonde fye hundred menne. But yet the erle was neuer the rather deliuered. After this the frenche kyng set vnto them of Bruges, requyryng them in courteouse maner that thei would sette their erle at libertie. But thei sent the messangeres againe without speede of their message.

In this while dyed Charles de Valoys brother vnto Philippe le Beau, and vncle vnto this kyng Charles, the whiche languished long in a consumption oꝝ he died, in so muche that the opinion of the people was, that he was so punished foꝝ þ iniury and malice that he bare toward Enguerram, the whiche as ye haue befoze harde in þ first yere of this kyng, was putte vnto death. And the rather this same ranne by the said Charles, foꝝ so muche as in the tyme of his sicknesse, he gaue greete almesse. And to suche persones as he gaue oꝝ sente his almesse vnto, he willed them as well to praye

pray for the soule of the said Eng-
ueram as for his owne bele. This
Charles de Valoyes left after hym
a sonne named Philipe for so muche
as this Charles now kyng of Fraunce
died without issue, he by fauour of
the lordes of that regyon was made
kyng of Fraunce, and putte by the
right and title of Edward the thyrde
then kyng of England, the sonne
of Isabell and doughter of Philipe
le Beave. Whiche Isabell by dysset
was rightful enheritour of þe crowne
of Fraunce. For whiche title was
after cruell warre bettwene the said
Edward and Philipe, as in the story
of þe said Edward after shall appere.
In þe fiftth yere of kyng Charles the
Burghmaisters and sheppys, that
is to meane the rulers of the towne
of Bruges, deliuered their erle and
sette hym at large vpon certayne con-
ditions folowynge the whiche to bee
obserued thei caused hym to bee so-
lemly swoyne. First that after that
daye he should not punishe nor hurt
any of the lande of Flaunders, for
any displeasure to hym dooen or any
of his seruantes or counsaill, senne
þe tyme that he was erle, concernynge
any cause of their rebellion. Secun-
darily that he should not abydgē
nor minishe any of their liberties þe
thei of olde tyme haue had, or by hym
newly to theim graunted. Thyrde
that in all grosse maters that concer-
ned the gouernance of his realme,
suche as he knewe well diuerse of
theim to be expert therein, þe he should
nothyng conclude or dooe without
their aduises & assētes. And fourthly
that after that daye he should neuer
use the counsaill of the abbot of Uer-
sellay, whiche thei knewe for their
bedely enemy, for so muche as thei
before tyme had slaine his father

named Peter Floce or Floze in the
bataill of Couetray as in the sixtene
yere of Philippe le Beave is before
shewed, howe bee it the name of the
said Peter is not there expessed. Af-
ter whiche articles with other fer-
mely by the erle promysed to bee kept
and holden, he was deliuered and
sette at large.

In the syxte yere of the reigne of
this Charles, a greate dissencion and
variance arose betwene the Dol-
phyn of Alien and the duke of Bra-
uoy, so that mortall bataill ensued
vpon the same. In whiche muche
people were slaine vpon bothe par-
ties. But in the ende the Dolphyn
of Alien had the better, and toke as
prisoners in the feelde the duke of
Burgoyne and the erle of Ancerne,
with other noble mēne. In this yere
also þe Gascones with the Englyshe
mēne made warre vpon the borders
of Fraunce. Againe whō kyng Char-
les sent a colyn of his, named sir Al-
phons de Spaine. But he spent the
kyng greate good, and retourned w-
litle worshippe into Fraunce, where
he died shortly after. The the kyng
sent againe the said Gascones the
erle of Cwe, and sir Robert Brathay
then marshall of Fraunce, with di-
uerse other noble mēne. In whiche
season the Gascones with the said
Englyshemenne had gotten the cas-
tell of a towne standynge in the coun-
tree of Poytew or Poytivers na-
med saint Dyrng, whyn whiche towne
the said erle and other the nobles of
Fraunce were lodged, so that betwene
theim dayly cruell assautes were ex-
ercised, to the greate hurte of bothe
parties. Lastly betwene theim was
a daye of bataill in plaine feelde ac-
corded, where the frenche mēne to
the entent to haue the aduantage
of

The seventh parte

174.

of the said feild and there to embatall them self to their moost awauntage, the daye of the said appointement issued of the towne, and yode to the place assigned, whiche was a good distaunce frome the foresayde towne, & there taried their enemies. But the Gasconnes entendyng an other purpose, yode streight vnto the foresaid towne, and knowyng it to bee without greate defence, assaulted and shortly gatte it and sette it on fyre not sparyng churches nor other places of religyon, as assermeth the frenche booke, and that dooen retourned vnto the foresaid castell, and in processe of tyme after retourned againe into Guye. Whe kyng Charles was ascertained of this delusion, he was greuously discōtented againe the Gasconnes, and manessed them very soye. But in the moneth of December shortly ensuyng, he was take with a greuous sicknesse, so that he died vpon Candelmas euen folowynge at Boys in Vincent, and was enterred at saint Denise whe he had reigned fye yerres and odde dayes, leuyng after hym none herre of his body, excepte that the quene was the with childe. Whiche childe died sone after the birthe. Wherfore some questions for that kyngdome were moued as before touched in the ende of the fourth yere of this Charles, and after shalbe farther expelied.

Anglia.

Edward the thyrde.

Edwarde the thyrde of that name, and soonne of Edward the second, and of Isabell the onely doughter & childe of Philip le Beau or Philippe the sayre, father to Char-

les laste kyng of Fraunce, beganne his reigne as kyng of England his father yet liuyng, the six and twenty daye of January, in the ende of the yere of grace a thousande thre hundredeth and six and twenty, and the fourth yere of Charles the fifth laste kyng of Fraunce, and was crowned at Westminster vpon the daye of the purification of our Lady next ensuyng.

In his begynnyng came forth plenty and gracious happes, for the tooke plentye, the ayre temper, the sea quietnesse, and to the church grewe peace.

In his first yere he confirmed the liberties and franchises of the citee of London, and ordeined that the mayre for the tyme beeyng should sitte in all places of iudgement with in the liberty of the same for chief iustice, & kynges persone onely excepte and that euery alderman that hadde ben mayre should be iustice of peace in all London and Middelsex, and eueryche alderman that hadde not ben mayre should be iustice of peace within his owne ward. And also he graunted to the citezens & fee ferme of London for thre hundred pounde and that they should not bee constrained to goo out of the citee to fight or defend the land for any neede. Also that after that daye the franchises of the citee should not bee sealed in to the kynges handes, but onely for treason and rebellion dooen by the whole citee. And Southwerke was admitted to bee vnder the correccion and rule of the citee, and the mayre of London to bee bailiffe of Southwerke, and the mayre to chose and ordeine suche a bailiffe of the borough as hym liked, whiche ordinaunce endureth to this daye. In the moneth of

The libertie of the citee of London confirmed.

Southwerke under the correccion & rule of the citee.

Edward the
Seconde, mis-
erably slaine.

of Wyll, for so muche as meanes
were made by the frere prechours of
the blacke freres, for the deliuerie of
kyng Edward the seconde out prisō
therfoze he was hadde out of the ca-
stell of Kenelworth, and conueighed
vnto the castell of Berkeley. Where
after aboute saint Mathewis tye he
said Edward by he meanes of sir Ro-
ger mortimer was miserably slaine.
Of this Edward are like opinions
as were of Thomas of Lancaster,
whiche I referre to god his iudge-
ment. For certayne it is that for his
former wyld and insolent liuyng he
tooke greate repentaunce. And so he
hadde greate cause, for buryng his
reigne there was heved and putte to
deth by iudgement, vpon eight and
twenty barons and knightes, ouer
the noble menne that were slaine in
Scotland by his infortunitee.

Kyng Edward as yet beeyng of
tendze age, not passyng fiftene yeres
heryng of the greate pryde and pre-
sumpcion of the Scottes, and howe
thei dayly warred vpon the borders
and entred the lād in brennyng and
spoylyng his people, assembled his
people about Easter, & so sped hym

toward Scotland. In whiche meane
tyme the Scottes were entred the
land, and were comen as farre as
Stanhop in Cliridale, and had lod-
ged them in the woddess of Stan-
hop parke in diuers bushementes.
Wherof he kyng beeyng enfourmed
made suche prouision that he besette
them rounde about, and trusted well
to haue brought them vnder his
subiection. But whē he kyng thought
to bee of them moost sure, by treasō
of some of his hoost he Scottes were
clene escaped & retourned into Scot-
land. Wherof the same ranne vpon
sir Roger Mortimer. But how so it
was the kyng losse that tournaye,
and retourned into England with
litle woozshipp. And here ye shall vn-
derstand that to this daye the olde
maye and shryffes, that is to meane
Hamunde Chyckwell, Benet Fulhā
and John Canstō, stode in office till
the daye folowynge of Symond and
Jude, which was almost the ful of he
first yere of the said Edward the .iii.
And then for the residue of the first
yere, and for the moze party of the
second yere, were electe and charged
the maye and shryffes folowynge.

Edward the
Seconde
Sped hym to
ward Scotland

Anno domini. M. CCC. xxvi.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xxvii.

Henry Darcy.

Rychard Betayne.

Anno. i.

John Hawteyne.



At the ende of the first
yere of this kyng Ed-
ward, and beegynnyng
of this mayes yere, he
kyng after Chytemas
maried dame Philip he erles dought-
ter of Henawde in the citee of Porke
in he euin of the conuersaciō of saint
Paule, on he .xxiiii. daye of January.

And soone after the kyng aboute
the feast of Pentecost, held his parly-

ament at Northampton. At he whiche
parlyament by euill counsaill, wher
of sir Robert Mortimer and he olde
quene bare the blame, he kyng made
with the Scottes an vnprofitable
and a dishonorable peace. For firste
he released to them their feauty and
homage. Also he deliuered vnto the
olde aunciēt wytynges sealed with
the seales of the kyng of Scottes,
and of diuerse lordes of that lande

The parly-
ament of North-
ampton

Edward the
Seconde
the first
year of his
reigne

bothe

The seventh parte

bothe spiritual and temporall, with many other charters and patentes, by the whiche the kynges of Scottes obliged them to bee feodaries vnto the crowne of Englande. At whiche season also was deliuered certain iselles, whiche before tymes had been wonne from the Scottes by kynges of Englande. Among the whiche the blake crosse of Scotland is specially named. And not alonely the kyng by his sinitre counsaill lost his title and right that he had to the realme of Scotlande, as farre

as the said counsaill might helpe it, but also all lordes and barones and all other menne of Englande had any landes or rentes within Scotlande, lost their right in like maner, except they would dwell vpon the landes and become the kyng of Scottes lyege menne. And soone after was concluded a marriage betwene Dauid le Buzze sonne of Robert le Buzze, and Jane the kyng his sister, whiche of diuerse wyters is surnamed Jane of the towre or Johan of towres.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xxviii.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xxviii.

Simon fraunces.

Hamonde Chychevell.

Anno. ii.

Henry Combmartyn.



In this yere, whiche at this daye was the seconde yere of the kyng Dauid soze said the sonne of Robert le Buzze the kyng of Scottes maryed vpon the daye of mary Magdeleine at the towne then of Berwyke, the fornamed Jane sister vnto the kyng of Englande. But it was not long or the Scottes in despite of the English menne, called hir Jane make peace. And also to their more detest, they made diuerse trusses, roundes, and songes, of the whiche one is specially remembred as foloweth.

Long beerd is hartles
Daynted hoodes wytes
Cap cottis gracelis
Waketh Englande thyrsteles,

Whiche tyme as saith Guydo was made by the Scottes, principally for the desoynte of clothyng that at those dayes was vsed by En-

glish menne. The the kyng at his parliament holden at Salysbury, made sir Roger Mortimer erle of Marche, and sir John of Eltham his vniuersal brother he made erle of Cornewapill. Where after the said sir Roger toke muche more vpon hym then other lordes were contented with, so that by the kynges mother and hym, all thyng was ruled and guyded. And suche lordes as before tyme were assigned to haue the rule and guyding of the kyng, as the erle of Kent, sir Edmund of Wodestoke the kynges vncle, the erle of Lancaster, the erle of marshall with diuers byshoppes and barons and knyghtes to the nymbre of twelue in short proces of tyme for the more party were sette by, so that the alonely rule of the lande rested in the quene and the said Roger. By meane wherof many a greate thynges of the realme grewe out of ordre, whiche were tedious to rehearse.

Anno

Anno domini .M. CCC. xlii.

Anno domini .M. CCC. xlii.

Richard Lazar.

John Crauntham.

Anno .lii.

Henry gylours.

The .iii. yere.



In this thyrde yere, the
aboue said sir Edmūd
of wodestoke erle of
hente entending p re-
formation of the misse
orde of the realme, beeyng enlour-
med p his brother sir Edward was
in life, deuilled certain letters to-
chynge p deliuey of his said brother
and sent theim to his said brother, of
whiche dede he was shortly after ac-
cused, & by auctorite of a parlyament
holden at westminster aboute Pen-
thecost folowynge, he for p dede was
iudged to haue his hede smitten of
wherof executio was dooen p five
and twenty daye of May folowynge
in p foresaid citee of winchester. And
soone after kyng Edward sapled in-
to fraunce, & did homage vnto Phi-
lippe de Valoyes then newly made
kyng of fraunce, for p duchy of Guy-
in the towne of Amias. After whiche
homag so dooen he was rychele fea-
sted of the freche kyng, and solaced
in diuers maner of iourneys, an by
iustes, hūtyng, hawkyng, and many
other pleasures, and then in lounge
maner toke his leue of the kyng, and
so retourned into Englande. The
fifteenth daye of June folowynge,
was bozne the kyng his first sonne,
& at wodestoke christened & named

Edward, whiche in proces of tyme
did growe to a noble and famous
manne, and is most comunely called
in all cronicles prince Edward. Of
whome in this story some excellent
dedes shall bee exprest.

In the moneth of Octobrye vpon
the xlii. daye of p eum of saint Luke
sir Roger mortimer beefore named,
by meanes of sir willia Mountague
sir Rafe Staforde, sir John Aculle
and other, by a copaced meane was
taken in the castell of Notyngham,
not withstādyng that the keies of the
said castell were dayly and nightly
vnder his ward and keepynge, p kyng
the quene, p olde quene, with diuerse
other nobles, then beeyng in p same
castell lodged. The maner of the ta-
kyng of this erle sir Roger Morty-
mer I passe ouer, for the diuersyte p
I haue seen therof of soundy wy-
ters. But many agreeen that he with
sir Symond of Bedforde and other
were in that night taken and after
sent vnto the towne of London, and
there putte in strait keepynge. Then
the kyng in processe after called a
parlyament at London for the refor-
macion of many thynges misorde-
red in the realme, by meane of the
foresaid sir Roger, as the comune
same went then.

Anno domini .M. CCC. xlii.

Anno domini .M. CCC. xlii.

Robert of Cly.

Symon Swalond.

Anno .liii.

Thomas Harworde.

The .iiii. yere.



And in this fourth yere & ende
of the thyrde yere of this kyng
durynge p foresaid parlyament

as aboue is touched at Londō p fore-
said sir Roger mortimer was accu-
sed beefore p lordes of the parlyament
of

The seventh parte.

131.

of these articles wth other, whereof
 syue I fynd exp^{re}ssed. And firste was
 layde vnto hys charge, that by hys
 meanes sy^r Edward of Carnaruan
 by moste ty^rannous deathe in the ca-
 stell of Barkley was murdered. Se-
 cundaryly, that to the kynges greates
 dy^shonoure and damage, the Scot-
 tes by hys meanes & treason escaped
 from sy^r kyng at sy^r parken on Wythhope
 whiche then shulde haue fallen in the
 kynges danger, ne had ben sy^r fauour
 of the saide Roger to the then sheweb
 Thysdely to hym was layde, that he
 for execution of the saide treason, re-
 ceuyed of the capytayne of the saide
 Scottes named sir James Dowglas
 greates summes of money. And also
 for lyke mede, he hadde to the kynges
 greates dy^shonoure and hurte of hys
 realme, concluded a peace betwene sy^r
 kyng and the Scottes, and caused to
 be deliuered vnto theym the charter
 of end^ure called Ragman, with ma-
 ny othe^r thynges vnto the Scottes
 greates aduantage & inpoweryng
 of this realme of England. Fourthly
 was layde to hym, that where by syn-
 stre and vnlesfull meanes contrarye sy^r
 kynges pleasure & w^{ll}, or assente of
 the lordes of the kynges counsell, he
 had gotten into his possessyon mu-
 che of the kynges treasure, he vnkyllful-
 ly wasted and mispent it. By reason
 wherof the kyng was in necessity, &
 dy^suen partyce to assaye his frendes
 sy^rthly, that he also had enpyopeted

vnto hym dyuers wardes belonging
 to the kyng, to his great lucre and sy^r
 kynges great hurte, and that he was
 moze secreete wth Quene Isabell the
 kynges mother, then was to goddes
 pleasure or the kynges honoure. The
 whyche articles wth other agayne
 hym proued, he was by auctorytie of
 the saide parliament iudged to death
 And vpon saint And^{re}wes euen next
 ensuyng, at London he was byawen
 and hanged. About the beginning of
 August folowynge, sy^r Edward Bay-
 loll the sonne of sy^r Johan Bayloll:
 some tyme kyng of Scottes, by mea-
 nes befoze purchased, opteyned suche
 fauoure that wth the aide of sy^r Hen-
 ry Beaumont, sy^r Dauid of Stro-
 ley, sy^r Gessert Houbzay, and wth
 the ayde of two. M. Englyshmen en-
 tred into Scotlande by water, where
 in short space drew to them such mul-
 titude of Scottes, sy^r the saide Edward
 was lord of a greates hoste, & so kepte
 on his way t^{ill} he came to a place cal-
 led Gledismore, or after some wyters
 Crakismoor. Where he was encount-
 tred of the power of Scotlande, and
 fought there a cruel bataill, in sy^r which
 were slayn a greates multitude of Scot-
 tes. By reason of whiche victo^rye, he
 was crowned kyng of Scottes at the
 towne of Stone Hoxely after. And
 shortely after he met wth kyng Ed-
 ward at the towne of New castel, and
 there vnto hym made hys homage &
 fealty for the lande of Scotlande.

sy^r Roger
 was byawen
 and hanged.

sy^r Edward
 Bayloll kyng
 of Scotlande
 dyd his ho-
 mage to kyng
 Edward the
 thyrde.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxx.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxi.

John Dountnap.

John Hockynge.

Anno. v.

And^{re}wes Thobzay.

In this sy^r the mapes p^{er}ce and
 sy^r p^{er}ce of the kyng in the mo-
 nth of July, for so mu^{ch}e as the scot

tes had busped theym to haue slayue
 Edward Bayloll the kyng, and
 hym had constrayned to auoyde hys
 qq. l. lande

lande, or elles to kepe hym in some stronge holde, tyll he myghte by hys frendes or lyeges be socoured, kyng Edwarde for the same entente with a stronge power pearled the realme of Scotlande, and after sayde his spege vnto the towne of Berwyke.

Upon the .xii. daye of the foresaid moneth of Iulye, the Scottes wyth a greate power, purposynge to remoue the sayde spege, came towarde the sayde towne. Wherof kyng Edwarde beyng enfourmed, made towarde them, and at a place called Halldone hyll, gaue to the sayde Scottes batayle, and of theym had triumphaunce byctoyre, in so muche that he slewe of them as testifeth dyuerse wyrters. viii. c. lxx. hundreth knyghtes and banerettes. iiii. hundreth esquieres, and vpon .xxii. M. of the common people, and of Englyshe menne were slayne but onely .xv. persones.

After whiche victorie thus by þe king opteyned, the capitayne of Berwyke vpon the moztowe folowinge, beyng saynte Margarettes daye, yelded vnto the kinge the sayde towne with the castel. And that done kyng Edwarde betoke the guidynge therof wyth all other castelles and townes wythin þe lande, vnto þe fozenamed sy; Edward Baplol as kyng of Scottes, & moztlye after retourned into Englande.

Then Dauid the sonne of Robert le Bruce beyng as befoze is sayde kyng of Scottes, was constrayned wyth his wyfe secretly to sayle into Fraunce and thither was broughte by a Flemynge named Marcuell, as testifeth the frenche cronycle. Where, of Phylippe de Valoyes then frenche kyng, the sayde Dauid wyth Jane of the towre his wyfe was receyued. And for theyr conforste þe sayd french kyng gaue vnto theym the castell of

Saylarde, tyll fortune to them wolde be moze frendelye.

Thys pere also as wytnesseth the sayde frenche cronycle, the frenche kyng sente vnto the kyng of Englande, the byshoppe of Beauuays, and the byghe constable of Fraunce, whiche shewed vnto kyng Edward that theyr souerayne Lozde intended a voyage into the holy lande, and requyred hym of hys apde and compaignye for persourmaunce of the sayde iourney. Wherunto the kyng gaue answer vnto that request, then when the frenche kyng had persourmed all suche condicions as he befoze tymes hadde promysed to dooe, then he sayde he shoulde be contented to geue suche answer vnto that requeste by them in his name made, as thereunto shulde be conueniente. And moze he added vnto the same, that he maruailed greatly that the sayde frenche kyng intended anye suche voyage, tyll he had clerelye acquyted hym of the sayde promysse & couenaunt. With whiche answer the frenche kyng was nothyng contented, so that malyce and murmour grewe and encreased betwene them dayly after. And on occasion of this sharpe answer was, for so muche as kyng Edward was credibly enfourmed, that the frenche kyng had vitaille & manned. i. greateshippes to haue sailed into Scotland and theare to haue warred, the which by tempeste were wether byuen into Flaunders, and so soze beten with the sea that after they had solde much of theyr stufte at the haven of Sluce, they were compelled of necessity to retorne woute woithpy into Fraunce. This w other kindled suche a dedely hate betwene these .ii. chrysten princes, þe much chryste blod in proces of tyme folowynge was for theyr quarrels shed.

Anno

Victorie ouer
the Scottes.

Anno domini. xlii. C. xxi.

John Pesson.

The seventh parte.

Archolas Pyke.

John Husbände.

Anno domini. xlii. C. xxii.

Anno. vii.

In this. vii. yere in the winter season, & as sayth Guydo in the moneth of November, the kyng rode agayne toward Scotlande and helde his Chyristmasse at York. And after the solempnytie of that hygh feast ended, he spedde him into Scotlande where he layde syege vnto the castell of Rybrydge, and lastely wanne it by strength, and set the countree in some quyetnesse. And after retourned vnto Newe castell vpon Tyne, and tarped there a certayne of tyme, and helde there his feast of Pentecoste wth great royalte. Whypther within short space after came Syr Edward Bayloll

kyng of Scottes, and vpon the day of saynt Geruald & prothast, o. p. xii. day of June, made his homage vnto kyng Edward, and in pylence of many other noble men of both landes swate vnto hym feawtye o. tydelyte. And done he retourned into Scotlande, & king Edward vnto York, & so to Wyndesore. Then were all suche lordes of Englande as befoze tyme were in Edward the secondes dayes disseased of suche landes as they had in Scotland, restoyed agayne to their saide possessyons, and for them made theyr homage vnto the king of Scottes, saupnge theyr alleageaunce vnto theyr naturall soueraigne lord.

Sir Edward Bayloll dyd his homage to kyng Edward for the kyngdome of Scotlande.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xxiii.

John Pontenay.

John Hamonde.

Wylliam Hansarde.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xxiiii.

Anno. viii.

In this. viii. yere, certayne ambassadours were sente fro Whyllyppe de Valoyes kyng of fraunce, as the byshoppe of Thurogne, and the lord of Ferte and Deynguy, for to conclude certayne articles of barpaunce betwene theyr lord and the kyng of Englande.

But theyr purpose take none effecte, excepte that the kyng graunted to sende vnto the frenche kyng shortly after, a certayne of his lordes to haue further communicacyon with him touching the sayde articles. The which promys he fulfilled, as appereth in the nexte yere ensuyng.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xxv.

Reynolde at Cunduyte.

John Hynkstone.

Walter Turke.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xxvi.

Anno. ix.

In this. ix. yere fell exceeding plentie of rayne, & therupon ensued greete moeyne of beastes. And in the moneth of December the kyng

entred agayne into Scotlande, and helde his Chyristmasse at the castell of Roxburgh, the whiche he caused to be newly reparyed. And after
qq. ii. thynges

Edwarde the seconde.

thynges there ordered vnto his pleasure, he returned into Englande. And soone after he sent the archbyschoppe of Caunterburge, & the bishopp of Poitague, & the Gesser Scrope vnto the frenche kynge, vnto the entent to haue concluded an amptie betwene hym and the frenche kynge, which befoze was moued by the frenche ambassade, as befoze is shewed in the epyghte yere of his reygne. But when these sayde Lordes were landed in Fraunce, they were longe delayed of they myghte come to the kynges presence, in so muche that they saide playnly vnto suche Lordes of Fraunce as were assygned by the frenche kynge to passe the tyme with them, that they supposed that it was not the kynges pleasure to speake with them.

By meane of whiche wordes they were shortly after broughte vnto the kynges presence, of whome they were receyued with ioyous countenaunce and so contynued by a certayne of tyme in furtheryng of theyr ambas-

sade, so that in processe of tyme a conclusyon of peace to be hadde betwene Englande and Fraunce was accorded, and so set fourth speede, that proclamation therof shoulde haue bene made in Parys, and the countre there aboute vpon the moztowe solowynge. But howe it came in the kynges minde the Englyshe Ambassadors were scantly returned vnto theyr lodgings, when they were agayne sent for, and further enfourmed then, that the kynges pleasure and mynde was to haue Dauid late kynge of Scottes to be included within the same peace, and that he shoulde agayne be restored vnto his kyngdome.

Wherunto it was answered by the Englyshe ambassadors, that theyr commissyon stretched not so farre, nor that theyr prince had geue vnto them anye suche auctoritie. Wherfore all the former comunycacyon was reuoked and adnulled, and they returned into Englande withoute any conclusyon takynge.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xxxiii.

Walter Hopden.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xxxv.

Reynolde at Cundupte.

Richard de Winton.

Anno. r.

Chr. p. p. r.

Warre p. p. r.

In this. x. yere. for so muche as no conclusion of unite & peas might be had betwene the kynges of Englande & of Fraunce, thefoze warre was proclaimed vpon both parties. The which war was greatly procured by the mean of sir Robert of Artois, as in the story of Philip de Valotes shalbe after shewed. Then eyther prince sought the wayes and meanes howe eyther of theym myghte discontente other, in so muche that the frenche kynge sente soone after into Scotlande a crewe of frenche menne, to ayde suche ene-

mies as kynge Edwarde there had. By reason wherof the sayde Scottes made sharpe warre vpon the kynges seruauntes and frendes, and put the lande to great heracyon and trouble in so muche that the kynge was forced to assemble his power, & to speede hym agayne thither.

Then about midsummer the king entered Scotland by the sea, & warred vpon the Scottes & Frenchmen. Of which no notary batayle is specified excepte in that iournay the kyng subdued his enemyes, and toke there byrres pylsoners. Amonge the whiche
one

The seventh parte.

175.

one called earle of Mortet a frenche man was chiefe, & after was wth other in pzoesse of tyme there deliuered in exchaunge for the earle of Hamur an other frenche lord, which then was taken by gyle of Scottes, as he was compynge towarde saynt Johns towne for to apde the partye of kynge Edward. When kynge Edward had agayne pacified the Scottes, & taken homage of such as befoze rebelled, he then as testifeth the frenche cronicle stablyshed the foze named Edward Bayloll as kynge of Scottes, & committed the rule of the lande vnto him as he befoze tymes had done. Then the Scottes for the great kyndenesse whiche they had founde in the kynge and in recompensment of the greates charge whiche he by sondre tymes had had in the defendynge of theyr enemies, graunted and bounde theim vnto hym and to hys heires kynges of Englande, that they shulde apde & assiste hym agayne all pynces. And

when so euer he hadde warre, or any kynge of Englande bynge tyghful enherytour, agayne any pynce other within his land or without, the Scottes at theyr proper costes and expences shulde fynde.iii. C. horsemen well armed, and a.iiij. fote men well & sufficiente arrayed for the warre, the which.iii. C. men the Scottes shuld wage for an hole yere. And yf the kynge of Englande ended not his war within the yere then he to hyre and wage the sayde Scottes as he doth the other of his souldoyers. After whiche grauntes made and bondes for the suertie therof receyued by the kynge, as wopeneth the frenche cronicle, the king leauynge at Edenborough a certayne of his knightes to strength the Scottes agaynste the frenchemen, whiche compassed all the wayes they myghte to bynge Dauid the soune of Robert le Bruce, in possession of that lande, he shortly after returned into Englande.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xxxv.

John Pontnap.

William Bybellworth.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xxxvi.

Anno. xi.

John Northall.

In this. xi. yere, the king remembryng the great charge that he had with the warre in Scotlande, & also for the charge he dayly had in Gulan, and moze continually shuld haue in defending of the frenchemen & winning of his right, he therfore gathered treasure vpon euery spde, & by diuers sundrye waies, wherof the maner is not exprest. But so greates plenty came to his vse, that it was scant thowout the realme. By reason of which scarcite, vitaille & muche other mercymones were excedynge good chepe. For at London a quarter of wheate was sold for.ii.s. &

fat ore for. vi. s. viii. d., a fat shepe for. vi. d. & viii. d., a. vi. pions for. i. d., a fat gosse for. ii. d., a pig for. i. d., & so all other vitaille after the rate. This yere also vpon holy Rode day or the. xiiii. day of Septembre died sir John of Eltham earle of Cornewale, & brother to the king without issue, wherfore the sayd erldom fell into the kinges hand. This man lyeth buried at westminster vnder the right hand of the high altar. In this yere also apered *Stella cometa* in english named the blasynge star, in an huge streaming maner, wherof many & diuers constructions were had amonge the common people, whiche I passe ouer.

qq.iii. Anno

Anno domini. M. CCC. xxi.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xxi.

Henry Darcey.

Walter Asele.

Archolas Crane.

Anno. xli.

The. xli. year.

In thes. xli. yere the kyng
helde his parlyamente, at
Westminster, aboute the
tyme of lent. Durynge the
whiche he made of the Earledome of
Coynewayle a duchye, & gaue it with
the erledom of Chester vnto Edward
his sonne. And at thes parlyamente
were made. vi. earles, that is to say of
Derby, of Northampton, of Hunting-
don, of Salysburpe, of Glouceter, &
of Suff. as Henry of Lancastre was
created earle of Derby, or after some
wytyers of Lynceter, William de Bo-
thum earle of Northampton, William
de Clynton earle of Huntingdon, Wil-
liam de Mountague earle of Salys-
burp, Hugh of Audely earle of Glou-
ceter, and Robert of Ufforde earle of
Suffolke. And in this parlyamente
was an acte enacted, & no man shuld
were no maner of silke in gowne, cote
or doublet, but yf he myght spende of
good rente an hundredth. li. by yere,
whiche acte was not longe holden.

The acte of
arape.The acte of
the cy-
tes.

In this yere also & kyng amonge
dyuerse pryvileges graunted vnto &
cytezens of London, that the offyces
of the mayres & sheryfes, shulde from
that tyme forthward vse mayors of spi-
rit parcell gylte.

The kyng of Fraunce thes yere
for so muche as he was crediblye en-
fourned, that kyng Edward wolde
enter the lande of Fraunce, & to make
warre vpon & same, he therfore made
greate purueyance to resiste hym.
For the common fame ranne then in
Fraunce, & kyng Edward entended
not only to claime Gascoigne & Guya,
but also all Fraunce as his proper &

ryghtfull inherytaunce in the ryghte
of his mother. Wherfore the frenche
kyng assembled an huge hoste, and
committred the rule of it vnto & kyng
of Nauerne, and vnto the earle of A-
lenson brother vnto the sayde frenche
kyng. Whiche sayde Capytaynes
with theyr people awaited dayly the
kyng of Englandes coming, which
theym for that yere dyspoynted. But
as testifyeth the same frenche croni-
cle, kyng Edward in thes whyle
sent into Flaunders a knyght called
by Barnarde de Brette, for to treate
of an ampte betwene hym and the
Flemynge.

For this cause, the earle of Flaun-
ders whiche was very faste with the
frenche kyng, called his counsell to
hym, to haue theyr aduyce howe he
myght beste order hym selfe and his
people. In which counsell were dy-
uers opinions, so that many thoughte
it better for dyuerse consyderacions,
whiche were longe to rehearse, that
the earle shoulde rather pferre the
ampte of the kyng of Englande then
of the kyng of Fraunce. Of whiche
opynion was a grete furtherer or
promoter a knyght of Flaunders,
called Countesspe. With whome the
earle being for that cause discontent
sent hym to pryson. And soone after
at the requeste of the frenche kyng,
whiche he layde vnto his charge, that
he hadde receyued grete summes of
moneys of the kyngs of Englande, for
to procure and styre the Flemynge
agayne hym, he was behedded, for
whiche dede the dwellers of Gaunte
and of Buges were so myscontente,
that

A great
garrison
the fren-
che kyng.

Qu.

The seventh parte

177

The same and
 more that
 the flemynge
 were to
 by Edward.

that they utterly refused the erle and
 hys counsaile, & made them stronge
 to wythstande hys dyspleasure. Then
 the earle was constrained to gather
 hys lordes, & knyghtes, for the more
 parte of the commons were agayne
 hym. And in shortly processe after met
 in a playne battayle in a place called
 Marchye, where after longe fyghte
 the Earle and hys hooſte was put to
 flyghte, and forced for hys safeguard
 to take a castell named Mall o' Wal-
 let. In whych season kinge Edward
 beyng enfourmed of the ampte that
 the flemynge bare toward hym a
 none sente unto them a knyghte cal-
 led sy: Galtor o' Walter de Hagup,
 wth a goodlye company of archers
 wel appoynted, the whiche arryued
 in an yle called then Cazanter. Who
 the Erle of Flaunders wth certayn
 of hys knyghtes encountered, & gaue
 unto the Englishemen battayl. But
 in the ende the Earle was shameful-
 ly chased, and many of hys gentelme
 slayne and taken, as sy: John Rodes
 sy: Wyllyam Gynlle, sy: Archolus
 Chauncy, wth manye other slayne.
 And sy: Guy bastarde brother unto
 the Earle, wth dyuerſe other taken
 of the whiche some were sente as pry-
 soners into Englad.

When the frenche kinge had vn-
 derstandynge of the deupſon he was

betwene the Earle and hys subiectes
 and howe saythful the Earle was vn-
 to hym, entending to wyne by say-
 meanes the fauoure of the flemyn-
 ges, whiche he knewe wel he myghte
 not wyne by rigoure. Then he sent
 unto Gaunte the byshoppe of saynte
 Denys wth other, whiche made vn-
 to the rulers of the towne and of Bru-
 ges and other townes there asssembled,
 manye saye behestes & promyses. A-
 mong which one was, that the frenche
 kinge wolde acqyre unto them, and
 deliuer unto theyr vse, all such lord-
 shippes and seignories as he than held
 of theyr, & hys progenitours be-
 fore hym. But al was in vayne. For
 kynge Edward had so sped hys ne-
 des wth them, by the meanes of one
 named Jaques de arpuelle a man of
 Gaunte, whiche was of greate sub-
 stance, and passynge other in bold-
 nes and capacite of wytte and discre-
 cyon that the sayde towne of Gaunte
 wth Bruges, Ipze, Courtray o' Cour-
 tray, Cassle, and other therabout, co-
 descended and promysed ioyntly and
 holp, to refuse the frenche kynge, & to
 take the kynge of Englandes parte, &
 the rather for the warre which before
 tyme Philip de Valoies made vpon
 them in the beginning of hys reygne
 as in the fyrst peare of the story of the
 sayd Philip shall after appeare.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xxxviii

Anno domini. M. CCC. xxxviii.

Wyllyam of Mountcrist

Henry Darce

Anno. xlii.

Hugo Harbye



And in thys. xlii. peare,
 kynge Edward wth
 quene Phylippe hys
 wyfe, for more assured
 stablyement of am-
 pte to be hadde betwene
 hym and the Polanders, Delanders

and Brabanders, passed the sea in the
 begynnynge of the moneth of Junye
 and sayled wth a goodlye companye
 into the country of Brabant, & quene
 than beyng great wth chylde, wher
 of the Erle of Brabant he was hono-
 rably receaued. In whych season of
 his

In. xlii. peare

Edwarde the seconde

hys there begynne, kinge Edwarde, gat vnto him many frendes. Amonge which Lewis of Baupere, whych thā toke vpon hym as Emperour, all be that befoze that tyme he was of the xxi. Yhon than. b. of Rome accursed, was one. Thys Lewis had such fauoure vnto kyng Edwarde, that he assigned and ordayned hym for by- ray; of the Emppre, by reso of which offyce kyng Edwarde, made out his commaundementes, and dyd manye thinges to his aduauntage & ppyfite

In thys season quene Whyllype lyng at Antwarpe, was deliuered of a man chyld, that was named Lpnel. And Whyllyp de Tialops haupng knowledge of al thys demeanour of kyng Edwarde gathered vnto hym greate strength, so that he had about hym innumerable people, and tarped wth thē at Amys and there aboute from the end of August tyl the begynnyng of October. And whan he saw that kyng Edwarde came not, he deuyded the great hooſte, in returnyng many of them into they; owne countreyes, & the other he sent vnto strong holdes and castels for to let the passage of kyng Edwarde and his host into the lande of Fraunce. And in thys passe tyme, the frenche kyng had sent dyuers shippes vnto the sea wth mē of warre, for to take the Englyshe marchauntes and other that cam in they; course. And so befel that they encountred wth two great shippes of Englande, called the Edward and the Chyfftofer the whych as tes-

tyfyeth þ French cronycle were frefte wth great rychesse, and also wel mēned. Anone as eyther was ware of other, gonnes and shot of long bowes arblastres wer not spared on nother shyp, so that betwen them was a cruel fyght but not egal. For of the French men were. xlii. sayles great and smal and of the Englyshmen but. v. that is to meane these two foresayd great shippes, two barches, and a caruell, the whych. iii. smale shippes escaped by they; deliuer saylinge, and the. ii. abode and fought beyond. ix. houres in so much, that there was slayne vpon bothe partyes about. vi. C. men But in the ende the sayde. ii. shippes were takenne and broughte into the French kynges streames, & many of the Englyshmen that were soze woudded were cast into þ sea. In this yere also the sayde Frenchemen of þ nauy landed at Southampton sodenly, and spoled the towne, and byente a greate parte therof. And ouer thys the French kyng made warre in Gascoyn, and wanne there dyuers smale pylles and one strong castel standing in the country of Gascoyne called Agenoys, whych castell was named Dentre. But al thys season was king Edward in Almayne, and made allyaunce wth dyuers pynces of that country and other, and toke assurances of them that they shuld ayde and assyst hym to wyn hys right and title þ he hadde to the crowne of Fraunce and after returned into Flaunders, wher he tarped al this mayes yere.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xxxviii.

Wylliam Thorne

Andrewe Abbot

Roger Forham.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xxxix.

Anno. xliii.

In thys. xliii. yere kyng Edwarde spedynge hys busynesse

in Almayn and Flaunders, as in the pcedynge yere is touched, returned

The seventh part

ned into Englande, and called hys
hygh court of parlyamente at West
mynstre, aboute the tyme of lent. In
whych parlyamente, the kyng asked
of hys comons for the mayntenaunce
of hys warre, & to recouer hys ryghts
in fraunce, the .v. parte of the; mo-
ueable goodes, the customes of wol-
les for .ii. yeres to be payed afoze had
and the .ii. shene of euery mans coine
the whiche at length was graunted
And for the leuynge therof, he caused
the lordes of euery shyre throughe his
land to aunswer to hym, euery lord
for the cyrcyte he dwelled nereunto.

But of all thys graunte were ga-
thered and paid, the loue of the poore
people turned into hatred, and pray-
er into cursyng. And for the kyng,
shulde nede and occuppe for hys pro-
uysions much mony of thys graunt
myghte be leused, he therfore, boiow-
ed many notable summes of dyuerse
cytees and partycular parsons of this
lande. Amonge the whych he than bo-
rowed of the cytee of London .xx. M.
marke, to be repayed of the monye co-
mynge of the foresayde graunte, the
whych besoylaid .xx. M. marke was
leuped in the wardes of the cytees in
fozme as foloweth

The towre warde was selled at
iii. C. lxx. ponde, wherof Wyllyam
of Bybleworth lent .C. pound, and
the resydue leuped of .xli. persons of
that warde.

Byllyngysgate warde was selled
at .vii. C. lxx. ponde, wherof John
de Cawston lent .ii. C. ponde, and
Alyen Gyll .ii. C. ponde, and the re-
sydue was lent by .xxvi. persons of
that warde.

The bypge was selled at .vii. C.
lxx. ponde, .vi. s. viii. d, wherof John
Lowebyne bare .ii. C. ponde, John
Walwayn, and Rauffe de Lenone .ii.

C. ponde, and the residue was boiow-
ed by .xxviii. persons of that warde.

The warde of Dowgate was sel-
led at .vi. C. lxx. ponde, .x. s. of whiche
Henry Pycard lent .ii. C. marke, Bar-
tholomewe Freslyng, and Wyllyam
Lenglysh .ii. C. marke, and the resy-
due leuped of .xxv. persons of that warde

Langbourne ward was selled at
iii. c. lxx. ponde, .vi. s. viii. d, wherof
Thomas Harwolde lent .c. ponde,
John Berch .c. marke, and the rest was
lent by .xx. dwellers of that warde.

Walbyke warde was selled at .ix.
c. x. ponde, wherof, John Adam lent
ii. c. pound, John Bery and Symon
Bystoure peperer .ii. ponde, and A-
dam de Bery & John Aot .ii. c. mark
and the rest was leuped of .xiii. per-
sons of that warde.

Bishoppesgate warde was selled
at .v. c. lxx. ponde, .v. s. viii. d, wherof
Adam Fraunceise lent .ii. c. ponde, &
Symonde Bytome and John de. S.
Albone .ii. C. ponde, and the residue
was leuped of .x. parsons of that warde

Lymestrate warde was sealed at
c. x. ponde, wherof Augustyne Wa-
les lent .c. ponde, and .x. pound was
leuped of .iii. persons of that warde.

Coynhyll warde was selled at .ii.
c. xv. ponde, wherof John Colynge
and Robert Manhale dyapers bare
that one .c. ponde, & the last .c. mark,
and the rest was leuped, of .xx. perso-
nes of the sayde warde.

Chepe warde was selled at .v. c.
xvii. ponde .x. s. wherof Barthel-
mewe Thomasyn metter lent .ii. C.
ponde, Stephan Caundrysh dyaper
Wyllyam Holbech & John Harward
eether of theym .c. marke, and John
Dolloby goldsmith .cc. mark & John
Fawkes and James Ratware eether
of them .c. ponde, and the rest was
leused of .lxi. persons of the same ward

Bredstrets

Babstrete warde was selled at. v. C. lxxx. s. viii. ponde, wherof Thomas Legge knyght lent. iii. C. poud John Harwarde Stoke. ii. C. marke, & the resydue was leuped of. viii. persons of that warde.

Wyntre warde was selled at. v. c. xxxiii. ponde. xvi. s. viii. d, wherof Walter Turcke fyshmonger lent. ii. C. marke John Stodap wyntener. c. ponde Symond Bollsely, and John Rothpynge. cc. marke, and the rest was leuped of. xliiii. persons of that ward

The warde of Byedstrete was selled at. cccc. lxi. ponde. xvi. s. viii. d, wherof Adam Byabesone lente. CC and the rest was leuped of. xxx. persons of that warde.

The ward of Quene byth was selled at. cccc. xxxv. ponde. xiii. s. iiii. d, wherof Rycharde of Ryssyngbury lei. cc. ponde, and John of Glouceter. c. marke, and the resydue was leuped of. xviij. personnes of that warde.

Cordwayner strete was selled at. ii. M. C. lxxx. xv. ponde. iii. s. iiii. d, wherof Andzewe Ambry grocer lente viii. C. mark, Wyllyam de Calwston cc. ponde, James Andzew and Thomas Byandon eyther of the. ii. C. marke, Wyllyam of Worcester. ii. C. marke, Johan Bechampe & the wyfe of John Hal ether of them. c. ponde and John Bul, John Wardby, and Wyllyam Hampstede eche of them. c. mark, and the rest whychis. vi. c. lxi. xvi. s. viii. d. was lente by. xliiii. persons of that ward.

The warde of faryngdone wythin was selled at. vii. c. xxx. ponde. xvi. s. viii. d. wherof Sylberte Staynedrop lent. cc. ponde, & the reste was leuped of. lxxv. persons of that ward

Faryngdone wythout the walles was selled at. c. xliiii. poud. xiii. s. iiii. d. whych sume was leuped of. xxi. per

sons of that warde

Creeplegate warde was selled at. iiii. C. lxxi. ii. s. i. d, wherof Rycharde Layat metter lente. cc. marke, Symonde de bedpugton, a hysed mark and the resydue was leuted of. xxxvii persons of the sayde warde.

Colmansstrete ward was selled at. M. li. ponde. xvi. s. viii. d, wherof Symon de fraunces lent. viii. hundred ponde, Henry of warre & John Denys. cc. marke. & the resydue was lent by. vi. persons of that warde.

Candelwyke strete warde was selled at. c. xxxiii. poud. vi. s. viii. d, the whiche sayde summe was leuped of. xlii. persons of the sayde warde.

The warde of Algate was stinted o; selled at. xxx. ponde, and leuped of. vi. enhabytantes of that warde.

Doxtsohl ward was selled at. xxvii ponde. r. s. and was leuped of. vii. personnes of that warde.

Castell Barnarde warde was selled at. lxxii. ponde. vi. s. viii. d. and lent by. xii. persons of that warde

Bassingeshawe warde was selled at. lxxix. poud. xiii. s. iiii. d. and leuped of. vi. persons.

Alwythgate warde was set o; selled at. lvi. poud. x s. and layde oute o; lente by. v. persons of that warde. Whych summe totall of the foresayd xxv. wardes, amounteth to the summe of. xlii. thousande thye hundred. lxxx. and spue poud, xii. shyllinges, and xiii. pence. Whych summe exceedeth the summe of twente thousand mark li. ponde, vi. shyllinges and eyght pence. And pe Hal vnderstand that he paped lest to warde this lowne payed fyfte shyllinges, and so ascending to the sumes aboue reherced. Where of many were selled at. xi. ponde. l. poud & lxx. ponde, and many other at dyvers meane summes,

The senenth parte

101

In thys yere also the kyng chaunged hys coyne, and made the noble & the halfe noble of the value of. vi. s. viii. d. x. s. d. o. r. d. and the halfe noble after the rate of they kepe the trewe weyghte, and prouyded diuers other thynges for the weale of hys realme and sped hys iourney into Fraunce.



Whā kyng Edward had set hys lande in order, & had all thyng metely prouyded for his nede he than about Xl. melle, sayled into Braban, and there

helde hys counsaile wth hys frendes, & by theyr aduices made clayme to the hole crowne of Fraunce as his ryghtful inherytaunce, and for moze authoryte of the same entemedeled the armes of Englande wth the armes of Fraunce, as ye se theym thys daye. Then kyng Philippe beyng of these thynges warned, gathered an howge hooste, and came wth the to a towne called Vermendons. And kyng Edward wth hys people entered the country called Therelle, and byente and wasted the country befoze hym. Than kyng Philippe byrwe towarde the Englysh host, and came

unto a place or towne called in frenche Buryon fosse, where he entended as sayth the frenche booke to haue set upon the Englyshmen. But by counsaile of hys lordes, for diuers causes he was let to hys dyspleasure. For after 5 day he myght fynd no conuenyente tyme for to assaile hys enemyes so that in conclusyon epyther hoost departed from other wthout battaile or fyghte, and kyng Edward toke hys waye towarde Gaunt, and kyng Philippe retourned into Fraunce. Than kyng Edward by meanes of hys frende Jaques de Artpuele, had all hys pleasure in Gaunte, and receaued of theym othe, and homage. And after diuers conclusyons wth theym and other eakenne, he leuynge there the quene after the testymony of some wyters, retourned agayn into England, and left wth the quene whiche than was great wth chylde the Earles of Salisbury and of Devonshyre, whiche in the kynges absente ayded well the flemynge agaynst the frenche kyng, and dyd dyuerse marcyall actes, whiche I here passe ouer. But in pprocess the Erle of Salisbury was taken prysoner, and diuers Englyshmen slayne at the assault of a towne called the isle in Flaunders.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xxxi.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xl.

Indicte Iobyp

Adam Lucas

Anno. xv

Barthelmew Harres

last year.



At this xv. yere, whyle the kyng was busied in Englande to make prouysyon for meat & money to wythstande the frenche kyng, as wel for the war that the sayde frenche kyng made

by the flemynge and other being the kynges frendes, as for hys owne pertyculer causes, the quene as befoze is sayde beinge at the towne of Gaunt was deliuered of a sonne, whiche after was named Ihon. aboute Chyristmas in the begynnynge of thys may

res

res peate, and ende of thys. xiii. pere
 Thys chyldre whan he came to mans
 estate, was surnamed John of Gaste
 and was fyrst Earle of Rychemount
 and after duke of Lancaster, and also
 as fast as kyng Edwarde prouyded
 for ablymentes of warre in England
 so fast and hasty prouision made the
 frenche kyng to wythstande kyng
 Edwarde bothe by lande and by wa-
 ter, so that he had a great and strong
 nauy vpon the sea. Kyng Edwarde
 than in the moneth of June, wyth. ii.
 hundred sayles tooke wyppynge, and
 sayled towarde Flaunders, and vpon
 the sea met or came vnto him sy
 Roberte Hoyley wyth the North na-
 uy of England, so that he had in al a
 bout. iii. hundred sayles. And at myd-
 somer vpon Sante Johns euen he
 foughte wyth the frenche kynges
 nauy, whiche laye in wayte for hym
 nere to the towne called the Bluse.
 Of thys nauy whiche were in nom-
 ber by the reporte of the frenche boke
 vpon foure hundred sayles, wherof,
 wer these admyralles sy: Hugu Qu-
 eret, and sy: Nicholas Buchette, and
 one named Barbe Royle or in Eng-
 lysh the Blacke berde, the whiche cap-
 taines or admyralles, anone as they
 espyed the Englyshe flote they made
 to warde them to begynne the fyght
 foure galles set vpon a wyppye of ad-
 uantage which sailed befor other
 named the rych oluer, the whiche. iii.
 galles the foze named Barbe Royle
 had the conduyt of, and assailed this
 sayde wyppye on euery parte, and bet
 her wyth gunneshot and her men id
 hayl shot exceedynge, so that of the
 men wythin her were manye slayne
 and mo wounded, and likely to haue
 bene shortly wonne had not bene the
 rescous of her companie, than were
 the sayde foure galles soone beclipp-

ped wyth the Englyshe nauy, and so
 cruelly assailed, that they wer boyled
 or they myghte be rescowed.

Than appoched the hole flote vpon
 both sydes, wyth hideous and ferful
 dyn and noyse of gunnes, wyth terri-
 ble stamping of wilde fyre, and other
 wyth thicke shot of quarels & arrow-
 es, and crushyng of shipes, that hyde-
 ous & wonderfull was to behold, so
 that many a soule was ther expelled
 frome theyre bodys in shortly whyle.
 This mortall and cruel fyght conty-
 nued as sayth the frenche booke by the
 space of. viii. houres or more, in such
 wyse that hard it was to know whe-
 ther part had the better, and so many
 dead and wounded men were cast in
 to the sea, & the water which was in cir-
 cuite about the was couloured or dy-
 ed red. But in the end by grace & great
 manhode of the kyng, which there was
 soze wounded. And by his great com-
 fort, the frenchemen were chased, & ma-
 ny of theyr wyppes bowged & taken
 with many prysoners in the. Among
 which, the soynamed admyrals or cap-
 taines, sy: Nicholas Buchet and sy:
 Hugu Queret wer. ii. whiche in dys-
 pite of the frenchemen were hanged
 vpon the sayles of theyr wyppes, which
 they were take in. And among the shi-
 pes that wer at this selson taken, were re-
 couered the. ii. sayd shipes named
 the Edward & the Christofer, whiche
 befor were taken by the frenchemen,
 as it befor is shewed in the. iii. pere
 of this kyng. In this batel, also as is
 testyfied of manye & dyuers wyters,
 wer slayn vpon the nobel of. xii. fren-
 chmen, albeit, the frenche booke
 nameth so manye to be slayne vpon
 both parties, & excuseth this myssor-
 tune by the negligence of sy: Nicho-
 las Buchet, which kepte the frenche
 nauy so long wythin the haven, that
 they

Whiche the na-
 uy of France
 set vpon the
 nauy of Eng-
 lande.

The fren-
 che booke
 and the
 make of kyng
 Edwarde the
 iii.

The number
 of the fren-
 chmen that
 were slayne
 in this
 bataglie

they were so closed in with the English nauy, & a great noyse of them inght neuer stryke stroke nor shote they: ordenaunce, but to the hurte of they: owne company. Whan kynge Edward had optayned this triumphant victorie of his enemies, he yel- ded great thākes vnto God. Now be it he was faine to tary a season with in his shyppe, by reason of a wounde the whiche he hadde receaued in his thighe. In whiche season the queene his wyfe came to vpyte hym, and re- turned agayne vnto Gaunte. And after a fewe dayes passed, the kynge departed from Wyppne, & rode vn- to our lady of Ardenbourghe, & sent his nauy in the nexte hauen to Bu- ges, and muche of his people vnto þe towne of Gaunte. And whan he had accomplished his pylgrymage, he rode vnto Buges, and from thense vnto Gaunte, where, of the dwellers he was topouly receaued. The king Edward there called a greate coun- sayll, by the whiche it was determy- ned that he should prepare .ii. hostes wherof that one shulde be of the me of Gaunt and of the townes there a- bout, of the which certayn lordes of Almayne shulde haue the rule, & the other hoste shulde be of men of Bu- ges and of English archers, and of that hoste was ordeyned by Robert of Artoys to be leder and capitain. Whan the sayd .ii. hostes wer al gar- nished with all thyng for the nede- full, the fyrst of them was sente vnto the towne of Courney, & the other vnto þe towne of saynt Omers. The whiche .ii. townes at that tyme were lyke strength vnto France, as Calys is now vnto Englande. Wherfore þe Freche kynge, for the more suretie of them, sent vnto Courney the erle of Fops & by Barthā than marshall of

France, with .liii. M. me of armes, & vnto saynt Omers he sent þe duke of Burgoyne with a greate company of lordes & other. Whā sir Robert of Ar- toys had lyen a certain tyme befoze saynt Omers, & many sharpe assautes by hym & his people had ben genen to it, in the whiche dyuerse fortunes fell & chaunces of warre, which wer tedpous and longe to wyte, fynally vpon the morowe after saint James day, or the .xxvi. day of Julie, þe duke of Burgoyne with his retynue yll- ed out of the towne, & foughte w the sayde by Robert & his people a lōge season. In the which fight was slain of the dukes partye the lord of Hamelcourte, by Fropard de Beaford the lord of saynte Aran, a lord of Spayne, & a Burgoyne lord cal- led the lord of Branges, with other dyuerse knyghtes and gentylmen to the nouber of .liii. as sayth þe Freche cronycle, and of the comune people vpon .iii. M. But in short tyme after the power of the duke encreased in suche wyse, that by Robert with his company was fayne to departe thense and so yode into Apre, & there helde hym. Then as aboue is sayde when kynge Edward had sent forth þe fore named .ii. hostes, he with the rest of his people yode vnto a place within .ii. Englyshe myles of Courney, cal- led in French le Pount de pree, and there lodged hym & his people. And Whyllyp de Alloys þe Freche kynge, came with his people vnto an house of relygion, whiche then was called þe priory of saint Andrywe. At which two places these two sayde prynces thus lyenge with greate strengthes vpon eyther syde, kynge Edward by counsayll of his lordes sent vnto the Freche kynge a letter, conteynyng as foloweth.

cc Edward

The saynge
of Edward
with
his lordes
in France.

res peate, and ende of thys. xliiii. yere
 Thys chyld whan he came to man-
 estate, was surnamed John of Gault
 and was fyrst Earle of Rychemount
 and after duke of Lancaster, and also
 as fast as kyng Edwarde prouided
 for ablymentes of warre in England
 so fast and hasty prouision made the
 frenche kyng to withstande kyng
 Edwarde bothe by lande and by wa-
 ter, so that he had a great and strong
 nauy vpon the sea. Kyng Edwarde
 than in the moneth of June, with .ii.
 hundred sayles tooke shippinge, and
 sayled towarde Flaunders, and vpon
 the sea met or came vnto him sy;
 Roberte Hoyley with the North na-
 uy of England, so that he had in al a
 bout. iii. hundred sayles. And at myd-
 somer vpon Saynt Johns euen he
 foughte with the frenche kynges
 nauy, whiche laye in wayte for hym
 nere to the towne called the Sluse.
 Of thys nauy whiche were in nom-
 ber by the reporte of the frenche boke
 vpon foure hundred sayles, wherof,
 wer these admyrallles sy; Hugu Quet-
 ret, and sy; Archolus Buchette, and
 one named Barbe Roys or in Eng-
 lysh the Blacke berde, the whiche cap-
 taines or admyrallles, anone as they
 espyed the Englyshe flote they made
 to warde them to begynne the fyght
 foure galys set vpon a myppe of ad-
 uantage which sailed befor; other
 named the rych oluet, the whiche. iiii.
 galys the foze named Barbe Roys
 had the conduyt of, and assailed this
 sayde myppe on euery parte, and bet
 her with gunneshot and her men wha-
 pyl shot exceedinglye, so that of the
 men withyn her were manye slayne
 and mo wounded, and likely to haue
 bene shortly wonne had not bene the
 rescous of her companie, than were
 the sayde foure galys soone be clipp-

ped with the Englyshe nauy, and so
 cruelly assailed, that they wer boyled
 or they myghte be rescowed.

Than appoched the hole flote vpon
 both sydes, with hideous and ferful
 dyn and noyse of gunnes, with terri-
 ble stamping of wilde fyre, and other
 with thicke shot of quarels & arrow-
 es, and crushing of shipes, that hyde-
 ous & wonderfull was to behold, so
 that many a soule was ther expelled
 frome theyre bodys in shortly whyle.
 This mortall and cruel fyght conty-
 nued as sayth the frenche booke by the
 space of. viii. houres or more, in such
 wyse that hard it was to know whe-
 ther part had the better, and so many
 dead and wounded men were cast in
 to the sea, & the water which was in cir-
 cuite about the was couloured or dy-
 ed red. But in the end by grace & great
 manhode of the kyng, which there was
 soze wounded. And by his great com-
 fort, the frenchemen were chased, & ma-
 ny of theyr myppes bowged & taken
 with many prysoners in the. Among
 which, the fornamed admyrallles or cap-
 taines, sy; Archolus Buchet and sy;
 Hugu Quetret wer. ii. whiche in dys-
 pite of the frenchemen were hanged
 vpon the sayles of theyr myppes, which
 they were take in. And among the shi-
 pes that wer at this selson taken, were re-
 couered the. ii. forsayd shipes named
 the Edward & the Christofer, whiche
 befor were taken by the frenchemen,
 as it befor is shewed in the. iii. yere
 of this king. In this batel, also as is
 testyfyed of manye & dyuers wryters,
 wer slayn vpon the nobel of. xxx. French-
 men, albeir, the frenche booke
 nameth so manye to be slayne vpon
 both parties, & excuseth this mysfor-
 tune by the negligence of sy; Archolus
 Buchet, which kept the frenche
 nauy so long withyn the haven, that
 they

Howe the na-
 uy of France
 set vpon the
 nauy of Eng-
 lande.

The frenche
 booke maketh
 Edwarde the
 iii.

The number
 of the frenche
 men that wer
 slayn in this
 batel.

A letter sente
by kyng Ed-
warde to the
Frenche kyng.



Edwarde by the grace of
God kyng of Englade
and of Fraunce, lord of
Irelande. To Philip
de Valoys, by long tyme
we haue exhorted by messaungers &
other manyfolde maner of wayes, to
the ende þe shulde ressoze vnto vs,
and do to vs reason of our rightfull
enheritaunce of the realme of Fraunce
the whiche ye haue longe occupped
with great wrong. And so; that, that
we se well that ye entende to perse-
uer in your iniurpous witholdynge
without to do vnto vs reaso, so; our
ryght to demaunde, we are entred in-
to our lade of Flaunders as souerain
lord of thesame, and passe by that
countrie, doyng you ferther to vnder-
stande, that we haue taken, with the
helpe of our Lorde Jesu Christe the
right, with the power of the said cos-
tyre, & with oure people them allyed
beholdyng the ryght, which we haue
in the heretage that ye witholde fro
vs wpyth greute wronge, and dyaue
vs toward you to make a shoyt ende
vpon our ryghtfull demaunde and
challenge, þe ye wpyll towarde vs ap-
proche. And forsomuch that so great
power of me of armes that came v-
pon our partyes, may not lōge hold
the togythers without great destruc-
cion of þe people. Which euery good
christen mā ought to eschewe, & spe-
cially a pryncce or other that haue þe
gouernaunce of people. Wetherfor
muche desyre, þe in shoyte dapes they
may mete. And so; to eschewe þe more
mortaltee of the people, so that the
quarell apparente attwene vs, to the
destruccyon of oure challenge, maye
stāde in tryall attwene vs two, which
thyng we offre vnto you so; the cau-
ses aboue said. Nowbeit, that we re-
membze well the noblenesse of poure

persone, and your great wysedome &
aduysement. And in case that ye wpyll
not therof, that then in our challenge
be set to afferme the battayl of your
selfe wpyth an hundredth persones of
your party of the moste sufficiente, &
we in lyke wyse with as many. And
þe ye will that one way no; the other
that then ye wpyll assygne a certayne
dape before the cytie of Courmay to
fyght with strength agaynst strength
withyn .x. dapes after þe sight of these
letters. And we woulde that all the
woylde knowe, that these thynges a-
boue sayd in this oure desyre is not
so; pryde no; so; great presumption
but so; that that our Lorde myghte
set the more rest and peace amonge
the chryste, and so; that that the ene-
myes of God myght be respysted, and
chrystendome enhauced. And þe waye
þe ye wpyll chose of the offers aboue-
sayd, wpyte agayn to vs by the byn-
ger of these letters, to hym makynge
hasty delyueraunce. Gyuen vnder
our great seale at Eschin sur le scaut
nere vnto the cytie of Courmay, the
xv. dape of the moneth of Iule. Upō
recept of whiche letters the Frenche
kyng by the aduice of his counsaill
wrote agayn vnto kyng Edwarde
in maner and fourme as foloweth.

The Frenche kynges letter.



Philip by þe grace of God
kyng of Fraunce, to Ed-
warde kyng of Englad
We haue lene a letter
set to Philip de Valoys
brought to our court, in þe which let-
ter wer certain requestes. And so; so
much as the sayd letter came not to
vs, the sayd requestes wer not made
to vs, like as it appeareth by the te-
noure of the sayd letter. We therfor
to you make none aunswer. Acuer-
thelesse so; that that we vnderstande
by

The seventh parte

175

by the said letter & otherwile þe are
 enbatelled in our realme of Fraunce
 dooing great damage to vs & oure
 sayd realme & to the people, moued
 of wyl wout reason, not regardyng
 that which a lpege man ought to re-
 garde to his lpege & soueraigne lord
 for ye are entred into our homage in
 your selfe, acknowlegyng as reason
 is to the kyng of Fraunce, & promp-
 sed obersaunce suche as a lpege man
 oughte vnto his soueraygne lord,
 lyke as it appeareth by your letters
 patentes sealed with your great seale,
 the whiche we haue by vs, and for
 that shoulde you bee obediende vnto
 vs. Our entente is suche, that whan
 we shal thynk it good, we shal chase
 you out of our realme to our honour
 and mageste royall, & to the profyte
 of oure people. And in this dooynge
 we haue faythfull hope in our Lord
 Jesu Christe, from whome all good
 to vs cometh. For by poure enter-
 pryse whiche is of wyl not reasona-
 ble, hath bene lette the holy voyage
 ouer the see, and greate quantytee of
 christe people put to deth, & the holy
 scrupce of God left, and holy church
 vnworshipped & vnhonoured, wth
 many great enymities. And in that
 that ye thynke to haue the Flemyn-
 ges in poure ayde, we thynke vs to
 bee assured, that þ good townes and
 the commons wll behaue theym in
 suche wyse agayne vs, and agayne
 our colyn the erle of Flaunders, that
 they wll saue they honoure and
 trouthe. And in that that they haue
 myse done tyll now, hath bene by
 euell counsaill of suche people which
 regarde not the commen weale of
 the people, but for their owne profite
 onely. Given in the feilde of the
 pypp of saint Andrie we besyde Tre
 vnder the seale of our secrete sygnes

in abiection of our great seale, the thir-
 tie daye of the moneth of Iule.

It was not longe after that the
 frenche kyng had thus rescribied vn-
 to kyng Edward, but that a mes-
 senger came vnto hym from Tour-
 ney for hasty rescouie, for the towne
 was dayly and sharply assauted of
 the Englyshe hoste. Wherefore in
 all haste he sente thither the duke of
 Athenesse, the bycount of Thonart,
 the bycounte of Danuay, with dy-
 uerse other to the nombere of .xv. men
 of name, w great nombere of people.
 The which sped them streight vnto
 þ mount of Cassile. But or they came
 the sayd mount was gotten by þ Fle-
 mynges, so that of they lodgyng
 they were dyspoynted. By reason
 wherof they sered to set vpon þ En-
 glyshe hoste, or yet to traual for the
 remouyng of the sayd siege of Tour-
 ney, but toke they counsaill & swar-
 ued from Cassile, and entred þ land
 of the erle of Barry, and dyd muche
 harme therein. And when they had
 there executed they pleasures, they
 retourned vnto the frenche kyng.

In this meane whyle, kyng Phi-
 lip counsailld with his lordes, whe-
 ther it were better for hym to drawe
 towarde Courney to remoue þ siege
 or to go into Flaunders and to make
 warre vpon the towne that helde
 with kyng Edward. By which cou-
 saill it was thought mooste honora-
 ble, that he shuld endeuour hym self
 to remoue þ sayd lpege. After which
 conclusion so take, he with his hoste
 drew towarde Courney, and in the
 ende lodged hym and his people, at
 a place or towne called at that daye
 Bowyns, within .iii. myles of Tour-
 ney, in whose company was þ kyng of
 Flaurne, the kyng of Bohemy or
 Beame, the dukes of Normandy, &

of Lozayne, and of Athenes, of Athens, the erles of Gloucestre, of Flauders, and of Dauoye, with other to the noubre of. xiiij. erles, besyde bycountes, baronettes and knyghtes to a great noubre. And with kynge Edwarde were these lordes folowynge, the erle of Hereforde, the erles of Northampton, of Derby, of Southampton, of Dyrnforde, of Henaude of Hartete and of Irondele. Also of Straungers, the duke of Geldre, and of Sclauonye, and Brabant, with many other bycountes, baronettes, and knyghtes whiche I passe ouer. And thus laye these twoo prynces with twoo greate and myghtie hostes wythin fyue myles, wythoute great batayll or fyght a certayne of tyme. But euer in þe meane whyle, þe towne of Courney was assailed of the Englyshemen and Flemynge, the whiche defended them manfully and well. In the whiche passe tyme the countesse of Henaude, which was mother vnto the quene of Englade, and as testyfyeth the frenche cronicle sister vnto the frenche kynge, a woman of passynge dyscrecyon and eloquencye, with the ayde of other prynces as the kynge of Beame and other laboured such a meane of treatie, that a daye of dyet was betwene the twoo kynges appoynted, albeest that dyuerse of kynge Edwardes counsaill were soze agayne it, and specially Iakes de Artyuele. Than for kynge Edwardes partie was assigned the byshoppe of Lyncolne, for Gestepe Scrope, for John of Henaude brother to the erle, and for Wyllyam Cheyny with other. And for the frenche kynge, was assigned the kynge of Beame, the erles of Armenake and of Dauoye, for Lewis de Dauoye and other. And to the

ende that thys appoyntment might take the better effecte, a daye of truce was concluded til mydsomer folowynge. But mooste wyrters testyfyen that kynge Edwarde lefte the syege before Courney, for defaute of moneye and neglygence of his shewe procuratours in Englade, that sped not hys nedes there as they shoulde. For that one cause and for that other the kynge with his hoste departed thence vnto Gaunte, and taried there a certayne of tyme. In whiche season, the forenamed lordes, and knyghtes mette at Courney, and there debated the maters of challege of kynge Edwarde, and certayne articles concernynge the countrey of Flaunders. In whiche counsaill, it was graunted by the frenche kynges partie, that the frenche kynge shoulde frelye departe towarde the marpage of kynge Edwardes chyldren, with the hole seignories of Gascon and Guyan, and the erldome of Doytys, in so free maner that no offycer of the frenche kynge shoulde medle or haue to dooe with in any parte of those lordshippes. And for Flaunders, it was by the said lordes graunted, that the commons of that countrey in al customes and lawes shoulde be iudged and ruled as they of olde tymes had vsed, and also that all bondes and oblygacyons that in tymes passed the chiefe townes hadde made to the frenche kynge for any cause, shoulde be cancelled and dyspured. And of theyr erle they shoulde be acquyted in like wyse, for all offences dooen before þe daye. Also all censures or curles that they before were whapped in, shoulde be clerelye admylled and reuoked, with other conclusions and offers, whych I passe ouer.

The seventh parte.

Anno domini. M. CCC. li.

Anno domini. M. CCC. li.

1271

Richarde Berkepyng.

John Dyrnfoorde.

Anno. xli.

John Rokyslee.



Ad in the. xli. yere
kyng Edward be
pon saynte Andre-
wes euen came to þ
toure of London, &
sent for such lordes
as befoze he hadde

made his procuratours to leuue his
monere in his absence, and for they
negligence and mysdemeanure cast
them in pylson. But in this voyage
that the kyng passed from that other
syde of the see into England, he had
excedyng tempest of wether, so that
he passed with great fere & daunger
whiche tempeste after the opynion of
some wyters, was cetered by the ne-
gromauncers of the frenche kyng, to
the ende to haue perysched the kyng
or els to geue hym the lesse courage
to take the see agayne. In thys yere
also wer sent from þ. xij. Benet than
bysshop of Roome two cardynalles,
to treate of a peace betwene the kyn-
ges of Englande and of fraunce.
The whiche concluded a peace be-
twene the sayde two kynges, aswell
for them as for other countreys whi-
che to them wer allyed, for the terme
of. iii. yeres and moze. In whiche
tyme it was agreed, that bothe the
sayde kynges by theyr proctours
shoulde publyshe & declare befoze the
B. of Roome theyr claymes and cau-
ses, to the ende that by hym and his
counsaill a synall dyrection & cōcorde
might be set betwene them. Whiche
agrement of the sayde cardynalles
was thus concluded in the towne
called Malestrete, aboute the feaste

of saynte Gregoie in lente, beeryng
there present for the kyng of Eng-
lande, the erles of Berkepyng and of
Northampton wth other, and for
the frenche kyng, the dukes of
Burbon & of Burgoyne, with other
for his partye. But thys agremente
stode to lytle effecte. For it not with
standyng the warre betwene these
two kynges was contynued, so that
eether fortyfyed theyr frendes and
allies. And soone after happened
that where John duke of Brytayne
dyed without issue, variaunce fell be-
twene Charles de Bloys and John
erle of Mountfoorde, for the tytle of
that dukedome, so that betwene the
mortall warre was exerceysed, as in
the stoye of Phylippe de Valoyes
shall after moze playnly be declar-
ed. Whiche warre so contynuyng,
the kyng of England ayded the par-
tie of the erle of Mountfoorde, and þ
frenche kyng ayded Charles de
Bloys. And ouer that, durynge
the terme of the sayde truce, the
frenche kyng made warre vpon
the Gascopnes, as here after shall
appeare. And in Scotlande some
stryng was made thys yere by
excytyng of the frenche kyng,
in so muche that the kyng was
fayne to sende thither a crewe of
soudpoures to strengthe suche hol-
des as he there helde. And in thys
yere was the quene deliuered of a
manne chyld at the towne of Lan-
geley, the whiche after was named
Edmunde, and surnamed Edmunde
of Langley.

Part taking

Cross byrds

Edmunde of
of Langley &
iii. toons of
Edwards.

et iii. Anno

Edward the .iii.

And dñi. M. CCC. xli.

Anno dñi. M. CCC. xlii.

John Luskyn.

Symond Fraunces

Anno. xlii.

Rycharde Kyngbury.

The. xlii.
p. 112.

In this. xlii. yere, kyng Edward at request of divers of his yong lordes and knyghtes, suffered to be executed certayne poyntes & feactes of warre, as iustes, turnamentes & other. Which were executed at Wistable, where þe kyng & the quene wer present, w the moze partie of the lordes and ladyes of the lande.

Thys yere dyed the fozenamed John duke of Byrtayne, by reason of whose deth the warre as in the preceding yere is touched, grewe betwene the sayde Charles de Bloyes

and the erle of Mountford. Thys Charles de Bloyes made his claym to that duchery, by tytle of his wyfe, that was doughter of Guy bycount of Lymogys, and seconde brother of the foresaid John duke of Byrtayne. And John erle of Mountford claymed by the title þe he was thys de brother vnto the fozenamed duke. But of this mater I entēde to shew moze plainly, and of the ende thereof in the story of Phillip de Valoys as befoze I haue sayd, & rather there then here because þe facte thereof was not done in Englande but in Byrtayne, wher of the sayd Phillippe pretended rule and chiefe sygnoyre.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xlii.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xliii.

John Stewarde.

John Hamonde.

Anno. xliii.

John Aplesham.

The. xliii.
p. 113.

And in the. xliii. yere the kyng shortly after Easter called a parlyament at Westmynster. In tyme wherof Edward his eldest sone was created prince of wales. And many ordynances for the weale of þe land ther were enacted, whiche for lengthe I passe ouer. In this yere also clement the. vi. of þe name, whiche newly was made B. of Rome, toke vpon him to gyue dyuers byshopryches & benefices whiche then fell voyde in Englande. Wherwith þe kyng was nothyng contented, in so muche that he sente out comyssions & straye commaundementes, that no mā in tyme

folowynge shulde present or inducte any such persone or persones. þe so by the B. of Rome were promoted with out the agrement of þe kyng, as farre as touched bys prerogatyue. The sayd Clemente was fyrste archbishoppe of Roan, and munke of saynt Benettes order, a frenchemanne of byrth, and befoze called Peter, a mā of excellent cunnyng, but a waster of goddes patrymony, & promoted to that dignite, by instat labour of the frenche kyng, which sent bys soune John duke of Normandy & the duke of Burgoyne vnto the cytie of Aynon or Aynon, to procure and furthre the eleccio. By meane wherof he was there chosen B. of Rome. about the. vii. day of May, & troybled in þe sayd

The seventh parte.

199

said moneth of Maye, in the begyn-
nyng of the yere of grace after that
acompte of the churche of Englade
M.CCC.xliiii. By meanes and fa-
uour of whiche bishoppe of Rome, the
frenche kynges causes and maters
betwene kyng Edward & hym were
some deale promoted. For as testifi-
eth þe frenche boke, þe frenche kyng
this yere putte to deth one maister
Henry de Halescrete, a garduat mā
& brother unto sir Godfrey de Ha-
lescrete knight, lately also putte to
deth by the said frenche kyng, for
cheir fidelite which thei bare toward
kyng Edward, as his feodaries.
Wherfoze kyng Edward made his

complaynt unto the bishop of Rome
of this & other thynges to bee dooen
contrary the conspyrations of þe for-
mer peace concluded by the twoo car-
dinalles, and had therof no remedie.
In this yere also kyng Edward ma-
de a copne of fyne golde, and named
it the scorpne, that is to saie, the peny
of the value of fyre £. viii. s. the half
peny of the value of thre £. iiii. s. &
the farthpyng of the value. xx. s. whi-
che copne was ordeyned for his war-
res in fraunce, for the golde therof
was not fyne as was the noble, whi-
che he befoze in his fourthen yere of
his reigne had caused to bee copned.

Kyngs Co-
ward's his fls
179.

Anno domine. M.CCC.xliiii.

Geoffrey Wychevingham,

John Hamonde.

Thomas Legge.

Anno. xix.

C. 179.



AD in this .xix.
yere, þe kyng held
a solempne feasts
at his castell of
Wyndesore, wher
betwene Candel
masse & lent were

holden o; executed many marcyall
actes, as iustes, tournaymentes with
diuerse other, at the whiche were pre-
sent many straungers of other lades.
And in the ende therof, he there deu-
ised the order of the garter, and after
stablished it as at this daye it is con-
tynued. In this yere about midso-
mer, kyng Edward w a strong armie
sailed into Spaine, and so into ytle
Brytain. But for he was disappointed
of þe ayde of the Flemynghes, by rea-
son of þe deth of his trusty frend Ja-
ques de Artycle, whiche then was
flain of the Flemynghes of Gasit, by
a conspyracy that thei made agayne
hym by suche as favoured the partie

of þe frenche kyng, he tourned home
into Englande again the same yere,
leaving behynd hym the erle of Sal-
isbury with a strong compaignie, to
ayde John erle of Mountforde agayn
sir Charles de Blois. The whiche
John by the ayde of the Englyshe
menne wanne diuerse townes and
holdes in Brytain, vpon the said sir
Charles & his frenche menne. But
in þe ende of this yere he was take w
suche sikenes þe dyed in a towne
called Copentyne. After whose deth
the said Charles possessed the moze
parte of the duchie of Brytain.

This yere the kyng sent þe erle of
Derby w a strong armie into Guya
for to ayde the erle of Northampton
whom þe kyng befoze had left there at
Burdenur, to strength þe countree a-
gainst þe frenche men. To who after
þe deth of þe foze named sir John of
Mountforde, dyed many of the soul
dyours that were on his partie.

Anno

C. 179.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xliii.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xlv.

Comunde Hemyngale.

Richard Lacer.

Anno. xx.

John Cloucter.

The. xx. pte.



At this. xx. pte. of later
ende of p. xli. pte. that
is witte, about saint Ri-
cholas tye in the bee-
gynnyng of this maers
pere, p. foresaid erles of Darby and
Northampton had wonne the towne
& castell of Bergarat in Gascogne,
and steme there the erle of Valentyn-
noys chief capitain therof, and toke
there a noble mane called the erle of
p. Isles, with many other tyche pry-
soners. And about Apryll p. said erles
wane a strong towne called p. Ryall.
Wherof heryng Whilip de Walors,
in all hast sent his soone John duke
of Normandy to withstande and to
gyue bataill vnto the said erles. But
when the said duke was nere vnto p.
Englishe menne, he had suche tydyn-
ges of their strength that he retour-
ned vnto his father again. For the
Anno domini. M. CCC. xlv.

whiche dede his father w. hym was
greuously discontented, in so muche
that by the ocrasion to auoyd his fa-
thers displeasure, he tourned into
Gascogne, and layed siege vnto the
castell of Aguylls, & there remained
till the moneth of August solowyn-
g without gettyng of it any hauntage
at whiche seaso he retourned againe
to his father. After whose departure
the erle of Northampton w. his com-
paignie gatte a strong towne called
in Freche la Roche Darien, whiche
is to meane the Roche of Roche of
Arpen. In the tyme of whiche warre
thus continued in Bytaine & Guy-
the France kyng made putrelaunce
to desede his lande again kyng Ed-
ward, for whome he awayed dayly.
And kyng Edward as faste gathe-
red money, & made his dayly putrel-
aunce to prepare hym thitherwarde,
Anno domini. M. CCC. xlv.

John Cropdon.

Gestrey whychynghame.

Anno. xxi.

William Clopton.

The. xxi. pte.



At in this. xxi.
pere, kyng Ed-
ward held his par-
liament at west-
mynster about p.
tyme of lent. And
in the moneth of
July solowyn-
g, he toke shippyn-
g & sayled into Normandy, and landed
as witnesseth the Freche cronicle at
a place in that prouince named in
Freche la Hougne sent Vast, with
.xi. sayles greate and small, the. xxi.
daye of the foresaid moneth of July.
And anone as he was landed, he co-

maunded his people to waste p. coun-
tree before theim. And by the ledyn-
g of a knight called sir Godfrey Har-
corte, he was brought vnto a
towne called Welly, and frome thes
vnto Mountboure, where the kyng
w. all his people rested hym a season.

In the whiche tyme p. said sir God-
frey had byent & spoyled the countre
of Constatpne there nere adioynnyng
The kyng Edward departed frome
the foresaid towne, and went vnto a
stroge towne called Harenten or Ha-
renton, the whiche he gate with the
castell to the same belongyn-
g. And
so

so continued his journey, that vpon the .xx. daye of þe said moneth of Iuli he layed siege befoze þe citee of towe of Caen. Wherin were at that daye chief capitaines, þe bishop of Bayen, the erle of Ewe, þe lord of Turnebu, with other diuerse knightes & men of name. Then kyng Edward commaunded that the said towne should bee assailed, the whiche was dooen with so greate force, and specially wth suche strong and continuall shot, that the frenche menne forsoke þe wallis and drewe theim toward the castell. And in processe, after long and cruel fight, the Englishe menne entred the towne, & there toke prisoners. Emog the whiche there was taken the constable of fraunce and the kyng his chaüberlein. Then þe Englishe menne spoled and pilled the towne of Caen, and bare the pillage to their shippes whiche after was conueyed by them into Englade. W^{he} kyng Edward had thus spoled and byt a parte of the towne of Caen, & forced þe bishop of Bayen & other capitains to take þe castell for their refuge, cōsidering the strength of the same, he departed thens, & so sped hym toward the citee of Roan the chief & principal citee of Normadie. But the french kyng wth a great power was in this whyle comen vnto Roan, and had broken the byddges and stopped þe passages in suche wise, that kyng Edward was fayne to leue the waye, so that he co- sted toward Paris & came to a strōg towne called Vernon, and from thēs to a towne named Ampleue, at whiche townes he was resisted and losse some of his souldiers. And þe .xii. day of August he came to a towne called Dorsy, and tarped there sixe dayes, & frome thens rode vnto saint Germain. And euer sir Godfrey de Har-

court beeing in the batward, bent þe townes and spoled the countree as he went.

And lyke as kyng Edward with his hooſte thus passed the countree toward Paris, so in lyke maner the freche kyng with his power, passed o^r helde his waye toward þe said citee beeing so nere sundry tymes, þe either hoſte had sight of other. But þe ryuer of Seyne was euer betwene thē, so þe they mighte not ioyne in bataill. When kyng Edward was comen to a towne called saint Clowe, he sette fyre therin, whiche was sene vnto Paris. Whiche putte the citezens in great fere, in so muche as witnesſeth þe frenche cronicle, that if the frech kyng had not been there present, the citee should haue been yelden vnto kyng Edward. Then kyng Edward seeing he might not passe the ryuer of Seyn toward the citee of Paris, occupied all the chief palaycis and royall manours, where the frenche kynges wer accustomed for to soug- iourne & lie at, and branke the wyne and occupied suche stufte and neces- saries as he there fande. And at his departyng sette fyre vpoⁿ theim, and consumed þe moze party of theim. As at Dorsy one, at saint Germain an other, and at Mount Joy the thyrde, and bent the towne of Dorsy, refer- uing an hous of nūnes, whiche was founded by Philip le Beawe father vnto kyng Edward his wife. Here ye shall vnderstand that þe auctours o^r wyters fauoured their owne na- tyon. for the Englishe wyters saie, that the freche kyng fledde, & brake the byddges as he went, to the ende þe Englishe hooſt should not wyne to the frenche menne to giue vnto theim bataill. And the frenche boke saith, þe kyng Edward fled, & would not

affection of
historiogra-
phers.

not abyde batayll with the frenche
menne, wherfore the frenche kyng
broke the byrdes to the entent that
the Englyshe menne should not escape
his daunger. But howe it was as
saith an other wyter called John
froylard, the commons of fraunce
thought it agreate dishonour vnto
all the lande, that the Englysh hoost
should so passe thorough the harte of
myddell of fraunce, and to occupie
the kynges chief lodgynges, and not
to bee foughten with, al that season.
Whiche might not bee after the opi-
nion of the said comon people, with-
out greate treason of suche as were
nere about the kyng. The kyng Ed-
ward was so closed by reason of byr-
des, that he was forced
to drawe back, & to recedise the byrde
of Doyze. The whiche was repaired
in so strong wise, that he & his hooste
passed there ouer wout parell. Howe
be it, that in the tyme of reparyng of
it, the frenche kyng sent thither two
thousen menne to lette the said werke. But
the archers kept them of with their
shotte, in so sharpe maner, that the moze
parte of them was slaine, and the
werke perfighted as aboue is said.
Then kyng Edward entred the coun-
trei of Picardy, & the frenche kyng
remoued fro saint Denis vnto saint
Germaine, & from thens to a towne
called Aubeuple in Doyteu, & from
thens to Antoygne. In this whyle
kyng Edward with baner displayed
came vnto the citee of Beauuayse, &
assailed the towne. But the towne was
well garnished wth souldyours which
defended their enemies bigourously.
Wherfore kyng Edward conside-
ryng, he might not lightly wyne the
towne, sette the bulwerkes on fyre, &
so departed thens, & yode vnto a place
called in frenche Doygnouille of

Blanke Tache. Where he passed the
water of Som vnto a fedyng daye the .xxv.
daye of August, and lodged hym &
his people nere vnto a foze called
Cressy or Crecy. Wherof when the
frenche kyng was ware, anon he
sped hym frome the foze named towne
of Antoygne vnto Aubeuple agayne.
Where after he had refreshed hym
& his people, he rode vnto an abbey
faste by the fozenamed towne of Cressy.

In this passe tyme, John duke of
Normandy and soonne of Philip de
Valois, whiche as in the pcedyng
yere is touched, laied his spege vnto
the castell of Augupello, heryng the
father was thus warred with the
kyng of Englade, broke by his siege
and came with his strenght vnto his
father.



These two hoostes thus
lodged within litle com-
passe, nere vnto the foze
named towne of Cressy
the .xviij. daye of
August, the feast of saint Bartholomew
beeyng the .xxvi. daye of the moneth of
August, epyther cruelly assailed other
and fought there a mortall & sharpe
batayll. Wherof in the ende kyng
Edward gloriously was victoure
and chased the frenche kyng, and
slewe in that fyght after the sayng
of mozte wyters, the kyng of Bohe-
mye or Beame soonne of Henry the
Emperoure, vii. of the .viii. the duke
of Loreyne, the erle of Alencon brother
vnto the frenche kyng, Charles erle
of Bloys, the erles of Flaunders, of
Dancer, of Harcourt, and of fren-
nes, with dyuerse other to the num-
ber of eyght hundredes and erles, &
xvi. lordes of name, and of banere-
tes, knyghtes, and esquyers, beyode
the number of .xvi. hundred, so that
as concludeth the frenche bystoire,

It was the
castell.

Whiche of
kyng Ed-
ward was
the first
march.

The seventh parte.

107.

In that batayll was slayne the flour
of the Chyualrye of Fraunce, and of
the commons vpo. bill. Men, & that
the realme of Fraunce & dape sustey-
ned such confusio, that the lyke ther-
of had not be sene many yeres passed
and & by people and men of no repu-
tacion, as archers, by the violence
of theyr importune shot, which horse
nor man might stande agayne. The
the frenche kyng with a small com-
pany fledde soze hurte vnto a towne
called Wyop, & lodged there & nyght
folowynge. And kyng Edward be-
ynge warned that an other hoste of
enemyes was commynge towarde
hym, abode styll in the same feilde, &
set good watches, & made great fires
thorowgh the hoste, and so cōtynued
tyll the mondaye folowynge. Upon
whiche day in the moornynge apered
to them a new hoste of frenche men
to the whych they gaue batayll, and
slew of them moze in nōumbe then
was slayne vpo the saterday befoze.
But of capptaynes or men of name
the auctoz reherfeth none.

Then kyng Edward gaue great
thankes vnto God, of his tryūphāt
victory, and after departed fro that
towne of Cressye, and toke his waye
towarde Monstreuell, and from thēs
to Wolepne, and lastlye to Caleys.
Wherof then was capitayn vnder &
frenche kyng a Burgonyō knyght
named syr John de Upene, to whom
kyng Edward sent that he shuld de-
liuer vnto hym the sayde towne of
Caleys. But for the kyng receyued
from hym no comfōrtable answer, he
immediatly layde his siege vnto
the sayd towne, which was vpon the
thyrde day of the moneth of Septē-
bre, & there abode a certayn of tyme
in makynge of assautes to the same.
In whiche tyme and season the erle

of Derby lyng at Burdeant, and
hauing the rule of Gascoyne & Guy-
an, wanne byuerse townes and hol-
des from the frenchemenne, as the
townes called Sainctes in Poytray
saynt John de Angely, and & towne
of Poytters. In the whiche he had
exceedyng treasoure and rychesse, soo
that he & his souldoyours were great-
ly enryched, by the pylage that thei
wanne at those townes and countre
to theim adiopnaut. And when the
said erle had spoyled the said townes
and byent a greate parte of the foze-
said citee of Poytters, and the kyng
his palais within thesame, he then
at his pleasure retourned vnto Bur-
deaur.

In this passe tyme also, the frenche
kyng to the entent to haue kyng Ed-
warde into Englande, sent Dauid
le Bruze some tyme kyng of Scot-
tes, into the lāde with a strong army
The whiche gathered vnto hym such
lordes and knyghtes of Scotlande
as beefore tymes fauoured his par-
tie and with theim entred the boun-
des of Northumberlande, & spoyled
that countree without ppte. But it
shall apere by other auctozes, that
this Dauid le Bruze at this dape
had recouered the crowne of Scot-
lande, and that Edward de Bayloll
was then dede, whiche beefore was
kyng. The it foloweth when & arche-
bishop of York & other lordes then
left in Englande, herde tell that the
Scottes were thus entred the lande
anone the said archebishop, with sir
Henry Percy, syr Rasse Beuple, and
sy Gilbert Umfrevyle knyghtes, and
other gentylmenne aswel spytuall
as other, apparayled theim in their
best maner and sped thē toward the
Scottes, so that thei mette w theim
and gaue vnto theim batayll vpon &
cūn

In the booke
of the frenche
kyngs the
seventh parte.

The pollice
of the frenche
menne.

The first
part of the
seventh.

Howe the lay
des of Eng-
lande gave the
scottes a bat-
tall, (p kyng
being sooth
of p realme)
and had vic-
toys of them

evin of saynt Luke o: the .xvii. daye
of Octobze in a place faste by Dur-
ham called at p daye Neuples crosse.
Where god shewed to the Englyshe
menne suche grace, that thei discom-
fited the Scottes, and slew of them
greate foysen, and toke prysoners p
said Dauid le Buz, sir wylliam
Dobglas p: Thomlyn fowhys, &
other of the nobles of Scotlande, p
whiche shortly after were surely con-
uined vnto the towne of Londō, and
there kepte as prysoners.

Howe kyng
Edward con-
quered the ci-
tye of Caleis

When kyng Edward frome the
thyrty daye of Septembze as befoze

is said, had by sondry tymes assailed
the towne of Caleys, and sawe well
he might not shortly wyne it, he pro-
vyded for hym and his people to lye
there all p wynter solowng, so that
for p lodgng of hym and his hoste,
he made so many houses & lodges p
it seined another Caleys. Wherefoze
in proces of tyme duryng that spege
of the bytelers and suche as dayly
resorted vnto the kyng his hooſte, it
was named newe Caleys. Where p
kyng in proper persone abode all the
wynter solowng, & the moze parte of
the next somer as after Mall apere.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lvi.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lvi.

Adam Bramson.

Thomas Legge.

Anno. xxi.

Richard Basingstoke.

The. xxi. yere



His. xxi. yere, kyng Ed-
ward after p stormy win-
ter was ouer passed, com-
maunded certayne ship-
pes to bee ioynd mo in
noubmze vnto suche as befoze had
kept the sea, p no vitail should come
to the inhabitauntes of Caleis, so p
p said towne was faine to holde the
content with suche olde stoz as thei
had for any newe p to them mighte
bee conueighed o: sent. And p kyng
his hooſte was plenteously bytaled
by the Flemynge, & by other vitail-
lers dayly comyng out of Englade.

Kyng Philip haupng dayly word
of the strength of his enemies and p
encrese of them, as by Esterlynges
& other nacions that kyng Edward
had to hym allied, & sawe well that
without the said towne were shortly
rescowed, it should shortly bee peld
into the handes of his enemies, to p
greate hurte of all p realme of fraunce:
wherefoze after a greate counsaill hol-

den at Baris, he chaiged his mony
to his great auantage, and ouer p
sette an inposicion vpon his comons
to thei greate grudge & murmure.
that dooen he toke his leue of saint
Denys aboute the quyndene of Pas-
che, and so pde vnto a towne called
Heldorn where he tarped the gathe-
ryng of his hooſte, so long p it was
nere vnto the feast of mary Magde-
lein o: his people were all assembled.
At whiche season he sette forthwarde
to the towne of Caleis, to remoue p
kyng of Englande frome that spege
and so sped hym, that about the ende
of the moneth of July, he dzeue nere
vnto Caleis. The whiche befoze his
comyng was pelden vnto kyng Ed-
ward, so that p frenche cronicle sheweth
nothyng of the frenche kyng
his shamefull departyng, like as it
is reherſed in the English cronicle, &
of other wyters p wytte of thesame

The after moſte wyters, p towne
of Caleys was pelden to kyng Ed-
ward

ward about the ende of September after the kynge had contynued there his syege an hole pere and some deale moze. After receyte wherof he tarped in the towne vpon a moneth, and voyded cleane all the olde inhabytauntes and frenche men, and flozed it wth Englyshe menne, and specially wth Kentyshe men. And when he had sette that towne in a sure order and gyardynge, and graunted a pease for nyne monethes at the requeste of two cardynalles, sente frome the fozenamed Clemente the fyrste, to beholde betwene hym and the frenche kynge, he sayled wth greate tryumphe into Englande, and came vnto London aboute the feaste of Saynte Romaine the .xxiii. daye of October, where he was topoussly receiued of the cytezens and so conueyed vnto Westmynster.

In thys pere also, an Englyshe knyghte called syr Thomas Argoine capitaine of the roche of Actian befoze spoken of in the .xx. pere of this kynge was spersly warred of syr Charles de

Bloys. But after many bykerfinges and shyppmythes, a day of batayl was set betwene the sayde Charles & Thomas. And after the frenche bokes declaration, the sayde Charles assaulyng that towne vpon one partye, the sayde sir Thomas with a company of stalworth archers and lowdpoures, issued oute at an other parte of the towne, and beset the sayde syr Charles and his company aboute, & assailed them in suche wyse, that in the ende the moze partye of his company was taken and slayne, & the sayde syr Charles there taken amonge other. And of men of name were there slayne, the Vicount of Roan, the lord Derrall, the lord of Quintine, with sir William his sonne, the lord of the castell of Bzer, the lord of the roche, & sir Gesefrey Turnew, with many other me of honoure, whiche I passe ouer. And after the sayd Charles was healed of suche woundes as he had receyued in that fyght, he was conueyed into Englande, and there kept as a prysoner.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xlvii.

John Luskyn.

Henry Ppcarde.

Symonde Dolfeley.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xlviii.

Anno. xliii.



And in this. xliii. pere, fell great continuall rayne fro midsommer vnto chrystmas, wherof ensued exceedynge floddes. By reason wherof the ground was soze corrupted, so that dyuers in conueniences ensued vpon the same, as syknesse and other, as in the yeres folowynge shall apere. And in Fraunce this yere the people dyed wonderfully in dyuers places of the realme, so vehemently, that in the cytie of Paris dyed in thys yere of lyttell moze, fyfte. M. people, and at saint Denis

beyonde. xliii. M. And in Italie and many other countrees, this mortalyte about this season reigned also in portuncly, and that in Hethennes as well as in chrystendome.

And in the ende of this yere about the ende of Auguste, this mortalyte began in dyuers places of Englande and specially at London, and so continued to the saide moneth of August nexte ensuing. And vpon that ensued sterlyte of baraines, aswel of the sea as of the land, so that vitayl and corne was moze scante then it was befoze.

fi. Anno

places of
Fraunce.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxvii.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxviii.

William Turbe,

Adam Bury.

Anno. xliiii.

Rauke Lynne.

The. xliiii.
year.

Treason.

John Calys
had lyke to
have bene be-
trayed.The faithful-
tye of a Jan-
nary.

In this. xliiii. yere, the mo-
talitye befoze saide in En-
glande & specially in Lon-
do most feruently raygning
a treason, as after apereth was conspi-
red, to haue brought the towne of Ca-
leis againe to the frenche kinges pos-
sesson. kynge Edwarde befoze tyme
had committed one of the towres of Ca-
leis vnto a Januay to whom he much
trusted. With the whiche Januay a
knyght of Burgoyne named sir God-
frey de Charney, was very famyler,
in so much that the sayde sir Godfrey
at conueniente leyser brake vnto the
sayde Januay, for the betrayenge of
the towne of Caleis. The whiche gaue
vnto hym lykynge aunswere, so that
the saide Januay agreed for a certayne
some of money to be payde in hande,
to deliuer vnto the sayde sir Godfrey
and suche other as he then shoulde
byngge wyth hym, the towne that he
then hadde in keepynge. By meane
whereof, he shoulde shortly after haue
the rule of the towne. In tyme of by-
uyngge and of apoyntyngge of whiche
bargayne as sayeth the frenche cro-
nycle, this Januay sent secreete worde
vnto the kynge of Englande, requy-
ryngge hym in secreete wyse to come vnto
Caleis. The whiche then holdyng
his Chyrtmas at Haueryng Bower
in Essex, vpon the moztowe after new
yeres dape toke his shypynge, & lan-
ded that nyght at Caleis, in so secreete
maner that fewe of the towne knewe
of his there beynge.

When the date of appointment of
deliuerie of this foresayde towne was
comen, and thys Januay had recey-

ued his paymente, at an houre assy-
ned betwene the sayde sir Godfrey &
hym, a token was geuen by this sayd
Januay, that the frenche men shoulde
brake nere vnto the sayde towne, to
wyne theyr praye.

Then the sayde sir Godfrey with
a certayne noubre came within the
daunger of the towne of Caleis, war-
nyng the residue of his companie that
they shoulde tary there tyll he were en-
ter the towne, and then at his sending
to come in all speddy wise. But so sone
as the saide sir Godfrey was nere vnto
the towne, a busshement of sowdy-
ours were sent oute at a posterne, the
whiche closed hym and his frenche-
men vpon all sydes, & slawe of them
many. Amonge the whiche sir Henry
de Bops knyght, with sir Gautier de
Valence, and sir Robert of Beauvais
knyghtes were slain. And the saide sir
Godfrey taken was soze wounded, &
the lord of Mountmoency escaped
with great daunger, the whiche gaue
warnyng vnto the other companie &
returned them into Fraunce. Then
the sayde Godfrey de Charney was layd
vpon a boorde, and so presented vnto
kynge Edwarde the whiche had such
pytie of hym, that he comaunded his
owne surgions to loke vnto hym, and
to cure hym in his beste maner. And
when he was somdeale cured, he was
sente as a prysoner wyth other into
Englande.

In thys yere also, the kynge cau-
sed to be copied grottes and halfe gro-
tes, the whiche lacked of the weyghte
of his former copie. It is. vi. d. in a. li.
Croy. + And aboute the ende of Ju-

guste

In London.

gust felled the mortallite of death in London, & whiche was so vehemente and sharpe within & sayde cytie, that ouer the bodys buried in churches, and church yerdes, monasteries and other accustomed burpunge places, wer buried that same yere in the charter house yerde of London. l. 9. per-sones and aboue.

This yere also was & yere of Jubyle of cleane remission, whiche is kept at Rome at euery .l. wynter ende lyke as the yere of Jubyle of grace is continued at Caunterbury.

And thys yere by the laboure of two cardynalles sente from Clement the fyrte, was a peace concluded be-

tweene the two kynges of Englande & of fraunce for a yere, nere vnto the towne of Calys. Where, for the stablyshynge of the sayde peace for the sayde yere, assembled the two said cardynalles. And for the kynge of Englande, the byshop of Roxyche the tresourer and chiefe chaunceller of & kynge, wyth other vnto hym by the kynge assigned. And for the frenche kynge, was there the byshop of Laone and & abbot of saynt Denis w other.

And the .xxiii. daye of the moneth of Auguste. In thys yere and yere of oure lord, .ciii. hundredeth and fyfthtyr, dyed Phylippe de Valoyes kynge of fraunce.

The death of Phylippe de Valoyes.

Anno domini. 9. CCC. xlii.

Anno domini. 9. CCC. l.

Rycharde Kyllingbury.

John Rotte.

Anno. xrb.

Wylliam Woxcestre.

On .xii. yere

In this .xrb. yere about & feast of the decolacion of S. Baptiste in & later ende of Auguste, a noble man of Spayne called & Thomas, to whome kynge John of fraunce had newely geuen the Earldome of Angoulesme, entended ynge to wyne some honoure vpon the Englyshemen, with a stronge name of Spaynarde entered the Englysh stremps, and dyd much harme vnto kynge Edwardes frendes. So that the king about the season aboue sayde, met with the sayde naup vpon the cooste of Wynchellsee, where betwene the kyng and them was a long and mortall fyghte, to the greate losse of muche people vpon bothe parties. But in the ende, God sente vnto the kynge victorie, so that he chased hys enemyes, and wanne from them. .xxii. of theyr shippes after mooste wyrters with many prysoners.

Wylliam Woxcestre

And thys yere & Thomas of Argoine, whiche as in the .xxii. yere of this kynges reigne, toke prysoner & Charles de Bloys & other, was slaine by chaunce medle, of a knyghte of fraunce of Brittain called & Rauffe de Caouts.

And thys yere were solempne messengers sente vnto Rome, for to conclude and perfyte the peace betwene the two kynges of Englande and of fraunce. So that kynge Edwarde shoulde resygne and geue by all hys tytle and clayme that he made vnto the crowne of fraunce, & the frenche kynge shoulde clerep geue vnto hym all the Duchye of Guyan, wyth all suche landes as at anye tyme before were taken by anye of hys progenytours frome it. And that kynge Edward and his heyyes kynges shoulde freeholde and occuppe the sayde duchye, withoute doyng of homage

ll.ii. to

Edwarde the thyrde.

Delays of
the court of
Rome.

to any frenche kyng after that dape.
But the conclusiō of this mater was
so ppylonged and deferred by the by-
shop of Rome, & suche delays as day
ly bene vsed in the court of Rome, &

the erle of Derby & other which were
apointed for þe kyng of Englands retur-
ned wout speede of thre cause. Wher
fore kyng Edward made new ppyssi-
ons to war wth kyng John of France

Anno domini. M. CCC. l.

Anno domini. M. CCC. li.

Andyeve Iwbyp.

John Wroth.

Anno. xxvi.

Gybbon Stayndjope.

The. xxvi.
pere.

The castell of
Gurnes wher
it was pelden

In this. xxvi. pere, the castel
of Guinis was pelden vn-
to the Englyshemen dwel-
lyng in Calers, whiche as
testifieth þe frenche cronicle was done
by treason of a frenche man named
Guilliā de Beaucontroy. For þe which
treason þe sayde Guyllyam was hox-
lye after put in execucyon in þe towne
of Ampas.

And about the middell of August
vpon the euen of our Lady assumpcy-
on, sy; Guy de Sale then marshal of
France, with a stronge cōpany gaue
batayle vnto þe Englyshmen then be-
ing in Bytayne in the which the sayd
sy; Guy with the lord of Wykeber &
the Chastelerne of Beauuays, wth
many other noble men were slayne, &
many taken ppysoners.

Anno domini. M. CCC. li.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lii.

Adam fraunceys.

John Beeche.

Anno. xxvii.

John Stodener.

The. xxvii.
pere.

The dyke for
mure.

The somer of thys. xxvii.
pere was so dyke, that it
was many peres after cal-
led the dyke somer. For
frome the latter ende of
Marche, tpyl the latter ende of July,
fpyl lytel raine or none, by reaso wher
of many inconuenyences ensued.

And one thyng which is specially no-
ted, cozne the pere folowing was scat,
wherof þe pyper this pere began to en-
hance greatly, and beups and mot-
tons were also dere: for scantenelle of
grasse and pasture, and þe aswell was
exerte in France, as in the Ile of
Englande.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lii.

Anno domini. M. CCC. liii.

Adam fraunceys.

John Welde.

Anno. xxviii.

John Aptell.

The. xxviii.
pere.

Ad in thys. xxviii. pere,
kyng Edwarde holdyng
his parlyament at West-
mynster, amonge other
thynges theare enacted, soone after

Pentecoste created the Earle of Der-
by, Duke of Lancastre, & sy; Rauffe
Stafforde was created earle of Staf-
forde. Then this Duke of Lancastre
was sente agayne ouer the sea, wher-
in

The senenth parte.

269

John of
Lancaster
was appeale
d by the Duke of
Burgundy.

In the ende of this yere, as wytnesseth
John frolande, he was appealed of
the Duke of Burgundy a duke of the
countree of Almayne, of certayne wo-
des contrayre hys honoure, for the
whiche he waged batayle with the
saide duke in the court of the frenche
kyng.

John of
Lancaster
was appeale
d by the Duke of
Burgundy.

Then this Henry whiche of some
wyters is named Henry Boling-
broke, duke of Lancaster, purchaseth
hys sauete conduyte of the frenche
kyng, and kepte hys daye appoynt-
ed for that battayle, in a felde called
in frenche, La pieur clers. Where
for theym was ordeyned a place spe-
red and closed in goodly wyse, kyng
John beyng presente with the moze
partte of hys nobles of fraunce. And
there came in spyte into that felde the
fozenamed Duke Appellaunte, and
after this noble duke of Lancaster, to
the greate honoure of all Englande.
And soone after, by puerle obseruaun-
ces, accordyng vnto the lawe of ar-
mis done, and solempne othes taken
eether sette in the reste to haue wonne
the spyte course.

But kyng John of hys specpall
grace ceased the matter, and tooke the
quarrell into hys handes, so that ep-

ther of theym departed the felde with-
oute any stroke strykyng, and pacy-
fyed the appeale, vnto the honoure of
the Duke of Lancaster, as wytnes-
seth the frenche booke, not withstan-
dyng: he was the frenche kynges
enemye.

And soone after the sayde Duke
of Lancaster with other nobles assig-
ned vnto hym by the kyng of En-
glande, went vnto Aumyon, with the
archebishoppe of Roan then chaun-
celler of fraunce, and the Duke of
Bourbon and other appoynted for the
kyng of fraunce, to conclude este a
peace betwene they two princes. The
whiche at the cytie befoze sayde were
hearde at length, befoze the newe bys-
hoppe of Rome then named Inno-
cent the fyrte, whiche also lyke to his
predecessour was a frencheman, and
cardynall of Lymosyne in Royma-
nye, called by hys proper name Ste-
phan Aubette. In conclusyon, after
greate argument made on eether par-
ty befoze the byshoppe of Rome and
hys counsell, fynallye it was agreed,
that the peace betwene the two kin-
ges shulde be kepte and holden
inupolate, tyll mydsomer
nexte folowynge.

Anno domini. M. CCC. liti.

William Contyngham.

Thomas Legge.

Richard Smert.

Anno domini. M. CCC. liti.

Anno. xxix.

On the
year.

In this. xxix. yere, kyng Ed-
ward by p aduocet of his coun-
cell, for so muche as p towines
of Flaunders brake they promise be
foze tyme made, & helde not the ban-
des of amite by them promysed by the
lyfe of Jaques de Arpuete, but fau-
ored the frenche kynges partye, ther-
foze he withdyete from them the mac

kettes and staples of wolles, that in
sundry townes of Flaunders had the
lately by the prouisyon of p foze sayde
Jaques, to they greate aduantage
vnto be kepte, and ordeyned then p
sayde staples to be holden in sondry
good townes of Englande, as well
wyth, Chycheester, Lyncolne, By-
rowe, and Caunterburge.

The staple of
Wales & Eng-
land.

And

And shortly after Easter, the frenche kyng sente his eldest sonne Charles. Dolphin of Wyenne into Normandy, for to take the rule of the countre, and specially for to lease certayne landes & castelles, whiche at that tyme belonged vnto the kyng of France, whiche then was oute of the frenche kynges fauoure, for the death of the Charles of Spayne constable lately of France, the he had by his meanes murdered in a towne called the Apple in Normandy, by the .ii. yeres before passed. And while the sayde dolphin was thus busied in Normandy he made such meanes to the rulers thereof, that they graunted vnto hym aide of .iii. myll. for .iii. monethes, at their proper costes and charges.

Of this soone after sprang such tidynge, that the kyng of England was enformed that the frenche kyng had geuen vnto his sonne Charles the Duchye of Normandy with all Gascoigne and Guyan, and howe the Normannes had graunted vnto the sayde Charles thye thousande menne for thye monethes, to warre at theyr costes vpon the Englyshmen, whiche

as the frenche booke testifieth, was graunted to him only to defende the kyng of France the he came to Constantine shortly after, for to repossesse all suche landes as the sayde dolphin of his had there leased, and for the with a byg armie made war vpon the sayde dolphin.

But were it thus or otherwise, trouth it is as dyuers wyters agree, in the moneth of October & ende of this yere, Prince Edwarde with a greate hoste entered Gascoigne, and passed by Tholouse, and passed the ciuer of Geround or Giron, and so passed by Carcasson, and byent the bulwerkes of that citee, and from thence he rode to Aerdon, in pillaging & spoiling the countre as he went.

And in the same yere, kyng Edwarde with his power landed at his towne of Calys, where he rested him by all the tyme of this maires yere.

And in this yere was the house of the freeres Augustynes of London synished, whiche was reedified by the Humfrey Bohun earle of Hereford and Essex, whose body lyeth buried in the quere of the saide house or church befoze the hygh aulter.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lliii.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lv.

Thomas Forster.

Symon Frauncys.

Anno. xxx.

Thomas Brandon.

Ch. xxx. yere

In this .xxx. yere, the kyng as he befoze haue herde being at Calys, shortly after the feast of Michaelmas toke his tournaye toward the frenche kyng, & continued his tournaye tyll he came to a towne named Helden, and brake there the frenche kynges parkes, & toke suche pleasures as hym there lyked. In the whiche season of his there beinge, tydynge was brought vnto him, that

the Scottes had gotten the towne of Berwyke, and howe they made dayly assautes to wyne the castell. Wherefoze the kyng made the moze hastye speede, and returned to Calys, and so into Englands. For whiche cause sayeth the frenche cronycle, the kyng Edward fled from the frenche kyng, & then with a stronge power cam from Antas vnto Saynt Omers.

Then kyng Edward sped hym into

into Scotland, so that in the moneth of January and begynnyng of the xxx. yere of his reigne, and. xxvii. day of the said moneth, he layed his siege to the towne of Barwyke, and had it yelden unto hym in shorte p[ro]cess of tyme after. And that doone he entred fether into the lande, and subdued þe chiefe towne and holdes as he went and pursued the Scottishe kyng so narrowly, that in the end he was fayne to submytte hym to the kynges grace as pyloner, and resigned his power into the kynges hande. And whan kyng Edward had set that countre in a rule, he returned w[ith] the Scottishe kyng agayne into Englande, and called hys court of parlyament at Westminster. In the which among other thynges to the kynges aduantage, was graunted to the mayntenance of hys warres fyfteen myllyns of a sacke of wol, for the terme of fyve yeres. But it continued lenger though þe marchauntes staplers therat grudged.

Then let vs now retourne vnto that noble p[rin]ce Edward, the fyfth begotten sonne of the kyng, whiche all this tyme warred vpon the frenche menne, as in the p[re]cedynge yere is touched. So that lastly he retourned to Burdeaux w[ith] manie rich pyloners and pylages, to the greate honour of hym selfe, and the great aduancement of hys souldoyers.

And albeit, that in that countrey whiche he then passed, where the Carles of Armenache, & of Foy, of Doytours, and of Cleremounte, w[ith] sy James de Burbon, and many other knyghtes, the whiche had dowble the people, as testifyeth the frenche cronycle, that the p[rin]ce had, yet passed he from Tholous to Aierb[ur]g, and fro Aierdon to Burdeaux w[ith]out batel

And after the p[rin]ce had there a while rested hym and his people, and sente dyuerse of hys pyloners into Englande, he w[ith] hys host entred the p[ro]vince of countrey of Berry in the moneth of July, & made therin sharpe and cruel warre. In whiche season also the duke of Lancaster w[ith] the ayde of Philippe brother vnto the kyng of Flaumr, was entred þe countrey of Constantyn, and so w[ith] a companye of.iiii. my. men came vnto a place called Ament v[er]s. viii. weekes & after reparyed the sayde castell.

Whan kyng John had leued manie greate summes of monye, to the great grudge of the commons, as in the storye of kyng John shalbe touched, and p[re]pared hys host, he fyfth made to warde the duke of Lancaster. But the sayde duke had so forsyfped the passage, that he myghte not w[yn] to hym w[ith]out great leopardy and daunger. Wherfore, he left that way and yode to a castell named B[er]etnel and layed hys syege thereunto, and wanne it in the ende of. viii. weekes by apoynement. Then he yode to the castell of Chartres, and tarped there a certayne tyme for more people, and from thence toke hys iourney toward p[rin]ce Edward. The whiche p[rin]ce in this season was passed the ryuer of Loye or Ley, and so by the towne of Romuigyn, where he was escorted of diuers nobles of Fraunce and had w[ith] them a sharpe conflict. But in the ende God sente vnto hym the v[ic]toyre, so that he slewe manie of hys enemyes, and tooke of theim many pyloners. Amonge the whiche were taken the lord of Craon, and a knyghte called sy Boucquante, w[ith] dyuers other to the nomber as sayth the frenche booke of. lxxx. personnes. And when he had sente the sayde pyloners

soners under safe keepinge to Burde
aur, and led hym towards Comys.

And the duke of Lancaster with
hys company, after he had repayred
the foresayde castel of Lisle, and be
stowed such ordonaunce as þe french
men for haste leste behynde theym at
the sayd spege, he than toke hys way
towards Bertney, and from thence
vnto Eitour, in bycynnyng and was-
tinge the countrey and townes as he
went, and from thence to Alernepil,
in Berch, and tooke by strength both
the townes and the castell. And when
he had done much of hys wyl in that
countrey, he returned into Bytayne
and held hym ther.

Kyng John than as about is
sayde, holdynge hys wape towards
pryncce Edward, came to the citee of
Comys to foxytpe the sayde towne
agaynst the sayde pryncce Edward.
Wherof betyng the pryncce tooke
hys way towards Dopters. In hol-
dyng of whiche way, as testyfyeth
the frenche boke, a parte of hys host
met with an host of frenchemen, and
gaue vnto them battayl, and at length
chased the multitude of them, and slew
an. C. souldyours, and toke vpon. lx.
pyrsoners. Amonge the whiche were
taken þe Erie of Sauncer, the Earle
of Jurrygny, the lord Chastellin ma-
ster of the kinges palays, and a knyght
named þe Gailliam de Dineham, þe
whiche pyrsoners wer also sent vnto
Burdeaur. And soone after pryncce
Edward lodged hym and hys host
nere vnto Dopters. And shortly af-
ter that came the frenche kyng and
lodged hym in a place called in french
Changny, nere also vnto Dopters
so that the frontes of both hostes lay
withyn a quarter of a myle. Than þe
cardynall of Bernygouet, sent frome
Innocente the. vi. byshope of Rome

ode between the kyng and the pryncce
soudyours to haue agreed some
treaty and peace betwene them, yf it
myght by hys labour haue be opra-
ned. But when he sawe hys labours
myghte not pyncple, he departed to
Dopters, and camped there the ende of
the battayl. Whiche was foughten
vpon a monday, the xii. day of Sep-
tember, in the yere of our Lord. M.
CCC. lvi. and begynnyng of the
vi. yere of the sayde kyng John
reigne, as after shalbe shewed.



han as before is
sayde, for so muche,
as the foresayde car-
dynall myghte not
purchase anye trea-
ty or mean of peace
betwene these two
prynces, prouysyon was made vpon
both sides to try theyr matter by mo-
tall battayl, so that about the houre
of two at after none of the foresayde
mondaye, the duke of Athenes and
Athenes with such other nobles as wer
with him in the frenche kinges va-
warde set vpon þe Englysh host. The
whiche was myghtely fenced with
wood and trees, in such wyse that the
french speeres myght not wyne vnto
them. And therewith the shot of the
Englyshemen was so fyere and sharpe
that it turned ouer hoise and manne,

And whyle the sayde duke of Athe-
nes, with þe John de Cleremounce
than Marshall of Fraunce, with
other, thus assayled the pryncce and
hys people vpon one parte, the duke
of Normounde kyng Johnnes el-
dest sonne, and the duke of Oylest
the kynges brother, assayled hym vpon
another parte.

The whiche two dukes were leaders
of two strong hostes. But as sayth þe
french

French cronycle, these thre battayles
byd lytle scathe vnto the Englyshmen
But by reason of theyr shot they were
so wounded and manye slayne, that
the resydue fled to the greates dyscom-
forte of the French kynges people.

Then kynge John in all that he
myght comforted his people, and wth
a frethe company set vpon the Eng-
lyshmen, that all wayes kepte them
whole together, & receaued the French
men vpon theyr weapons popetes,
wyth so great force that in the ende
Frenchemen gaue backe, and were
vanquished by the helpe of God, and
slayne as witnesseth the sayd French
cronycle to the number of. viii. hun-
dred men of armes, besyd other mene
soudpours. Amonge the which of no-
ble men were slaine, the duke of Bur-
bone, the duke of Athenes, & John
de Cleremounte marshal of Fraunce
& Regnold Campan Baneret, the
whyche that day bare the oyl flambe
a specyall relike that the French kin-
ges vse to bere before them in all bat-
tayles, and the byshoppe of Chalons
wyth dyuers other to the number of
liiii. banerettes, besyd knyghtes and
other. And of prisoners taken at that
battayle, was John kynge of Fraunce
Whyllyp his iiii. sonne, & Jaques of
Burbon Earle of Poiteau and byo-

ther to the duke of Burbone before
slayne, & John of Artois Earle of
Eu, & Charles his brother Earle
of Longeuple, & Wyllard robyn ger-
mayn vnto the French kynge, & John
his sonne and heyr, & doctour Wylly-
am archbishoppe of Sens, & Symon
Melon brother vnto the Earle
of Cantuarpe, and Earle of Wanda-
surt, the Ecles of Dampmartyne, of
Wendosme, of Salysburie, of Wor-
son, the Marthall of Denham, and
many other, as banerettes, knyghtes
and men of name, to the number as
sayth the French cronycle of. xv. hun-
dred and aboue. And from this bat-
taye escaped by flyghte, Charles el-
dest sonne of kynge John and duke
of Normandy, the duke of Oyleaunce
and the duke Aniole, wyth few other
of great fame, & whych yode streyght
vnto Paris. Where Hostelpe after
was called a great counsayl, for mat-
ters whych in the story of kynge Jho-
hal after be shewed.

Whā the felde was thus fynnyshed
prynces Edward after due thanckes
and louynges geuen to God for this
trumpthante vyctorye, he wyth his
sayde prisoners sped hym towarde
Bordeaux where the sayd kynge was
kept till Easter after.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lv

Rycharde Rotyngham.

Hentye Rycharde

Thomas Dofell.

Anno domini. xlii. CCC. lvi

Anno. xlii



Ad in the. xlii. yere,
that is to say, xvi. day
of the mooneth of Ap-
ryl, the noble prynces
Edward than vpon
the age of xxviii. yea-
res, toke shippynge wyth his priso-

ners at Bordeaux, & arriued in En-
gland Wylly after And. p. xliii. day
of Maye, he was wyth great honour
and gladnes receaued of the citeizens
of London, and so conueted vnto the
kynges palaces at Westmynster
Where the king sittyn in his estate

The returne
of prynces Ed-
warde wyth
his prisoners
into England

in Westmynster hall, receaved hym
w due honour, and after conuected, to
lodgyng for hym prouided; where
he laye a certayne season. And after
was the sayde frenche kyng bad vn
to a place called the Swanow, whiche
than was a pleasaunt Palays & sayd
lodgyng, belonging at that tyme vn
to the duk of Lancaster, and after
brent and destroyed by Jak Straw
and hys sawtours, in the.iii. yere of
Rycharde the seconde nexte kyng of
Englād, as in the sayd yere after shal
be shewed. In whych place the sayde

frenche kyng laye longe after.
And in the wynter folowynge were
royalle iustes holden in Smithfelde
of London, and manye and goodlye
knyghtes seates of armys doone
to the greate honour of the kyng,
and al hys realme, and gladdynge of
all beholders. At the whiche dysport
was present, the kyng of Englande,
the french kyng, and the kyng of
Scottes, wth manye noble estates
of all thre prouynces or kyngdomes,
whereof the moze partye of the strai
gers were than pysoners.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lvi

John Stodp

Stephan Caundyshe.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lvii

Anno. xxiii.

Barthelmewe froshelpng

In thys. xxiii. yere, In
nocente the spte of that
name, then byshop of Ro
me, sente into Englande
two cardynalles, to treat
of peace betwene the two kynges.
The whych two cardynalles tarped
the moze parte of a yere in London
and other places of the land, to byng

they; purpose to some effect, but they
yped lytle of they; cause.

And in thys yere after most wy
ters, Dauid le Bruye kyng of Scot
tes was deliuered frome the castell
of Dodyme at hys lyberty, whan he
had put kyng Edward in a suretye
of an hundred thousande markes for
hys ransom.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lviii.

John Luffyn

John Barnes.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lvi.

John Burys.

Anno. xxiiii

In thys. xxiiii. yere, as
wytnesseth þ french cro
nycle, by Robert Knol
lys, by James Pyper, w
other of they; retynew,
warred in Bytayne. And as testyfy
eth þ french cronycle, in the moneth
of March, x. day of þ sayd moneth
the sayd captaynes w one whych the
french boke nameth Chölyn fowh
came earlye in the moynynge vnto a
towne that was neare vnto Ancerre

called Regennes beyng in the rule of
Englyshemen, were the sayd captay
nes takinge w them moze strength,
pode streight vnto the fozsayd town
of Ancerre being within. ii. Englyshe
myles, & scalled the walles wth sad
ders, and quyt them so malfully, that
they had the rule of the town of the
sonne tpsyng. And in that castel was
taken pysoner by Guilliam de Cha
lyn the sonne of the Cytle of Ancerre
hys wyfe, and many other.

In

The. xxiii.
yere

The. xxiiii.
yere

The taking
of Ancerre

The seventh part.

275

In takinge of whych towne and castell, fewe folkes were slayne, howbeit, there were of armed men a boue ii. M. as souldiours to defende the towne. Then the Englishmen searched so nere, & as the comon fame wente, they founde iewels as they had bene prynces to the hiding of them, and of great value. Among whych as sayth the sayd cronicle, they founde certayn skynnes, which were valued at. v. M. motons of gold. Ye shall vnderstand & a moton is a copie dled in Fraunce and Wyttayn, and is of value after the rate of sterlyng monye vpon. v. M. ppyllynges of thereabout.

When the Englishmen had pylled and spoyled the towne by the space of. viii. dayes, and ransomed suche as were of any substance, then they shewed vnto the rulers of the towne that they wold set it on a fyre, excepte that they wold geue vnto them a certayne some of mony. For the whiche after long treaty of this matter, the rulers of the towne to haue the possestyon therof, and to haue it preserued fro fyre, agreed to geue vnto the Englishmen captaynes. xl. M. motons, and li. perles, valued at. x. M. motons, & whych. l. M. motons shuld a mounte after the rate of sterlyng mony to. xlii. M. and. v. C pounde of nere aboute. So that what they founde wythin the towne of any value, they bare it with them, excepte the iewels and ornaments of the church of s. Germaine, the whych goodes and iewels they toke for pledge of such money as was by payed of the forsayd. xl. M. motons of gold, for the ransome of the towne for the whiche goodes, the towne of Ancerre was bounde vnto the heires of the church to pay for, or to redeme the sayde goodes by the feast of midsummer nexte folowing, or elles

to paye yearly in perpetuall of the sayde church in maner of quyre rent iii. M. motons, wherof the value is shewed in the xxiij. chapter of Whyllyam the. iiii. And ouer al this the dwellers of the towne agreed, that the Englishmen shuld byene the gates of the towne, & in dyuers partes of the towne, throw the walles to the grounde.

Upon. iiii. dayes folowing the end of the sayde agremente, the forsayd s. James Wyke, and s. Wytham of Holande, and other to the number of xvi. or. xviii. Englishmen, intending to haue wonne some enterpryse, were layde for by s. souldiours of a place called the great Semyre, and by the taken and holden as prynces.

And in the moneth of Aprill nexte ensuyng, a towne called in frenche Dabynny sur le Petre, was by the Englishmen gotten in lyke maner & fourme as was the forsayd towne of Ancerre. And the. ii. daye of Maye was wonne by s. Robert knolles & his company, a towne called Chastelain sur Louuain, and pylled it as they dyd the other. And after, wyth theyr pylage and prynces, among the whych were many womanne and chyldren of. iiii. and. v. yerres of age, the sayd Englishmenne poded to the newe castell vpon Loyre.

And ye shall vnderstande, that the partye of the Englishmenne was greatly strenghted by the helpe of the kynge of Flaunde, and of s. Wytham Wyke his brother and other, as more plainly shalbe shewed in the French chronycle, or story of kyng John folowing.

And thus the sayde s. Roberts knolles, wyth ayde of the kynges men of Flaunde, daylye wanne many townes and strong holdes in Wyttayn.

Inno

Symond Wymondham.

Symond Doffelde

Anno. m. cccc.

John Chycheester.

The xxxiii.
yearThe landyng
of kynge Ed-
ward and the
prync.

Ad in the. xxxiii. year
oz moze betwylve in the
moneth of November
and the end of p. xxxiii
yere of kynge Edwardes
repgne, he wylth
prync Edward and the duke of Lancaster wylth a puplaunte armye landed at Caleys, and frome thence passed the land vnto Artois, and by Wemendours to the citee of Reynes, and layed hys spege about that citee, and beclpped it in suche wyse, that no man myghte enter oz go oute of the ctee, wylthoute lycence of the Englyshme

Whan kynge Edward had lyen xl. dayes at thys sige of Reines, with out great dere oz hurte vnto it doing he remoued hys spege and passed by the countre of Champayne, tyll he came to a towne called Gupllo, wher p. king rested him a season. In whych tyme came vnto hym certayne me of the duchye of Burgoyne, as Loydes of dyuers holdes & townes wylthin p. duchery, & gaue vnto him, to p. entete he shuld not molest oz hurt p. country ii. C. M. florens of gold, whiche is to the value of sterlyng mony. xxxv. M. pound. And ouer that the sayd Burgoyngs couenaunted wylth hym, that they wold mynysster to hym and hys hoost, al such vytayles as was in the country plenteouslye for hys monye. And p. done he departed from thence & yode vnto Reuers, & passed there p. ryuer of Dion oz Josn, & yode to Clages vpon Jon. And fro thence in the moneth of March & begynnynge of hys. xxxiii. yere of his repgne, he yode by the country of Gaslenois toward the citee of Paris. And prync Edward

Wylth his copany passed by Rojet, til he came to an hold whiche Englyshmen tha kept called Cournelles oz Cournelles, bes oz whiche towne oz hold lay at that seson certayne frechmen in a strong bastille, & assailed the Englyshmen dayly & remoued not there, albe it, they wer monished of p. prynces cōmynge. They trusted so much in the strength of their bastille, whiche the dyscreued, for wylth. v. dayes of p. prynces cōmynge, their bastille was gottē, & many of the slaine, and to the nomber of xliii. persons of p. company taken pryncers. Among whych were. iiii. men of name, p. is to say the lord of Boule oz Bonile, p. lord of Dagrenle oz of Bygreuple, sy. John de Barres, & sy. Willia de Blallies. Thus king Edward wylth his people spedig his tourney toward Paris, vpon the tynsday being p. last day of March in p. weke befoze Easter, came vnto a place called the hostell of Chastelon, betwene Montlehery & Chastles, & lodged hym wylth a certayn of his people ther. And p. prync with other lordes of his hoost were lodged in the townes therabout from thence vnto the towne of Cozueil, & an other towne called log Jumel Chan Charles eldest sonne of kynge John, and p. day regent of Fraunce, made menes of treaty, whiche was laboured by a freer called Symond de Langres, prouincial of the freers Jacobins, & legat of the. b. of Rome. By whose menes a day of treaty was appointed to be holden vpon good fryday, in p. maledery of le longe Jumel wher at the same day a place aperted for kynge Edwardes party, p. duke of Lancaster, the cries of Warwik and of

of Northampton, with Sir John de Chandre, Sir Walter de Marney, and William Cheyne knights. And for the regent aperted there, the lord of Fies constable of France, the lord Boquart then marshal of France, the lord of Baranciers, the lord of Angnay of the countie of Vienne, Sir Raymond Buys, and Sir Guichard of Angiers knights, whiche treatie came to none effecte.

Wherfore kynge Edward upon the tuesday folowing Easter day removed from the sayde hostell, and lodged by him nere unto Paris at a place named Chastellone nere unto Hostell rouge. And the residue of his host was lodged at Mauniz, at Vaugerart, at Gentilly, and other townes there about. Then upon friday folowing, being the .x. day of April, by meanes of the abbot of Clugny, whiche newly was sent from the bishop of Rome Innocent the .vi. the foresayd lordes and knights again assembled at a place called the Banlien, to treatie of an accord betweene the kynge and the regent. But they labour was spent in vaine as it before had bene.

Upon the sodaye next folowing a parte of the kynges hoste came before the towne of Paris, and enbatailled the in a felde faste by saynt Marcellen, and taried there from the morning till the of the cloche at after noone, to abyde bataile of the Frenchmen. The which made none issue out of the cytie, notwithstanding that as testifieth the French booke, within Paris at that day were great plenty of shottpowrs, over and besyde the great forson of the inhabitants of the same.

When the Englishmen perceived that they shoulde have no batayle of the Parisians, they aboute the after noone departed the felde, and toke

they waye toward Chaitres and so to Bonnenale nere unto Chateaudon. Then king Edward was lodged at a place called Dons. To the whiche place came unto him out of Paris the bishop of Beannaples then chancelour of Normandy with other, and so he haue them unto the king, and a new day of treaty was aperted to be holden at Dyttinguy, within a mile or lytel more of Chaitres foresayde, upon the fyfthe day of May next ensowing.



Whiche daye of appointment, the foresayde dukes of Lancaster, with the sayde Earles of Warwyke and Northampton, and other, at the sayde place aperted for kynge Edward. And for the regent aperted there the foresayd bishop, with many other lordes and knights and spiritual men, to the number of .xxii. persons, whose names I overpasse for lengthinge of tyme. The whiche so diligently behaved hym, and in the space of .viii. dayes they agreed upon an unite and peace, the which was comprised in .xii. articles, as at length is rehearsed in the French cronicle, wherof the effecte is this.

Firste the kynge of Englande and his heyres kynges, with all the landes as he then had in Gascoyne and Guyan shoulde have unto hym and his heyres for ever, the cytie and castell of Poytyers with all the appertenaunces unto that lordshyppe belonging.

Also the cytie of Limoges, with all the landes of Limosine and all other their appertenaunces. The cytie and castell of Perygoire, with all the landes and revenues to that lordshyppe belonging. The earldome of Burgoyne, with all thynges to that lordshyppe belonging. The earldome of

The forme of
peace be-
tweene En-
glande and
France.

et. l. Poytyau

Portpau, with all the appartenaunces. The synnoye of Deleuple. The lordshyppe of Crancys, Craudeure, and Crancone. The cyte of Agen, the cyte of Agenors, the cyte of Caours, and lordshyppe of Caours. The cyte of Carbe, the cyte and countre of Coire, Angoulesme, of Rhodes, and of Rancene. The lordshyppe of Mostreull, with all reuenues therunto belongynge. The synnoye of Calys, of Marquell, of Sandgate, and Colpne. The lordshyppe of Hammitis, of Wallis, and of Dupe. And the earldome of Guines, with all profits therunto belonging. All whiche lordshippes, honours, castelles, towres, cities, and townes, the kyng of Englande then Edward the thirde and his heyres kynges of Englande, shulde haue & holde for evermore, in as roiall wyse and lyke manner as done the kynges of Fraunce, without doyng for them any homage feawty, or other duetye.

And kyng Edward, after that daye for hym and his heyres kynges of Englande, shulde clerely renounce and geue ouer all hys tyle, ryghte, & interest, that he had vnto the crowne of Fraunce, and specyallye the name of the kyng of Fraunce.

Also all hys ryghte and tyle that he had vnto the duchye of Normandy, of Thoyayne, of Aniole, of Birtayne, and of the souerayntye of the Earldome of Flaunders, and of all other lordshippes, cyties, castelles, honours, towres, towres, manyoures, that any kyng of Englande befoze that daye had any ryght vnto, wrythin the realme of Fraunce, and to holde hym content with the aboue named lordshippes, wpythoute anye further claime.

Forthermore it was agreed, that

the frenche kyng shoulde paye for his ransom the myllions of scutes of gold, wherof. x. shuld alway make a noble English. Ye shal vnderstand that a myllion of scutes is. x. C. thousande of scutes, whiche extende after the value of sterlyng money, vnto the summe of two. C. l. sh. marke. And so the myllions amount vnto. vii. hundredth & l. sh. marke, whiche maketh iust. v. hundredth thousande poundes of sterlyng money. Of the which. iiii. myllions of scutes. x. C. sh. to be paid at Calys by the fyfte daye of Juny nexte folowynge the sayd treaty, & an other. x. C. thousande or myllion to be payde at the sayde towne of Calys, wpythin. viii. monethes after þ french kyng was couyn vnto Calys, and the thyrde myllion to be payde at London in two yerres and halfe. That is to saie at Myghelmasse twelue monethes after the agreement made. iiii. C. thousande scutes, & at Myghelmas nexte after ensuyng. iiii. C. sh. scutes and at Easter then nexte folowynge, two. C. thousande scutes, in full paymente of the the myllions or. x. C. thousande scutes.

And further it was agreed, that after the frenche kyng was comen vnto Calys, he shulde rest hym there iiii. monethes. Wherof þ first moneth shuld be at þ charge of kyng Edward and the other. iii. monethes to be at þ coste and charge of the saide frenche kyng, and to paye for eueryche of the sayde the monethes, yf he so longe tarped there for the persourmaunce of the sayde accorde. x. thousande royalles of Fraunce, whiche at that tyme were in value after þ rate of sterlyng money, euerye royall. xxi. d. o. iiii. sous parys, and so he shulde pay for a monethes charge, epyghte hundredth lxxv. pounde.

And

The seventh parte.

217

And ouer that, it was accorded, þe the frenche kynge John for the tyme beyng, no; no kyng of Fraunce after him shulde aide o; assyste the Scottes agayne kynge Edward, no; agayne his heires kynges of Englande. No; kynge Edward no; his heires kynges, shall allpe theym wth the Fleminges, no; ayde no; assyste theym agayne the sayde kyng John, no; his heires kynges of Fraunce.

And for the tyele o; cyghte of the Duchye of Birtayne, whiche was in question betwene the earles of Blots and of Mountfoerde, it was accorded that both kynges beyng at Calys, the sayde parties shulde be called before theym. And yf a peace betwene theym by the two kynges myghte not be set, then the sayde kynges to assigne certayne indifferent perions to agree the sayde earles, & they to haue halfe a pere of respyte for to quyet the matter. And yf the sayde persones so by the. ii. kynges assigned myghte not agree the sayde earles, by þe terme, that then eyther of þe sayde earles to make the beste purueyaunce for hym selfe þe eyther of them coulde make, with the helpe of his frendes o; otherwyle, wherby they myghte attayne to theyr cyght and clayme of the sayde Duchy. Prouyded allwape, that nother of the sayde kynges no; any of theyr sonnes shulde ayde o; assyste any of the sayde earles, by reason wherof the peace betwene theym accorded, myght be low sed o; broken. Also prouyded, that to whether of the sayde. ii. earles the sayde duchye shulde falle by sentence of man o; otherwyle, that the homage for it shall alway be done to the kyng of Fraunce.

All which ordinaunces and agree- mentes, wth many moo, that wolde aske longe leysoure to wyte, were ca-

typed and confirmed by the instru- mentes & seales of the pryncer of Wa- lis upon the party of kyng Edward for Englandes partye, & by Charles regent of Fraunce for that partye, as by theyr letters patentos then sealed asered, beyng date that one at Lou- uers in Normandy, the. xvi. daye of May in the pere of grace. xiii. C. & lxx. and that other at Paris the. x. day of the sayde moneth and pere.

And ouer that eyther of the sayde ii. prynces, that is to saye Edward pryncer of Walys was sworne in pre- sence of. vi. frenche knyghtes, upon the sacramente of the aulter after the thynde Agnus was saide in tyme of a lowe masse, at the foresayde Louuers songe, o; sayde, þe to the vttermoste of his power shulde vpholde & kepe the foresayde peace in euerye poynte, as farre as in hym was. And in lyke maner was Charles then Regente of Fraunce sworne, in the presence of. vi. Englyshe knyghtes, to persourme the same.

After which treaty thus fynished and ended, kyng Edward w his son- nes & nobles of England, toke shyp- ping at Dunestete in Normandy vpon the. xx. day of May, & sailed into En- glande leauing behinde him þe earle of Warwike for to guide the Englyshe men that remained in Guian & other places, and to se þe peace which the was proclaymed thowgh Fraunce were kept & not broken by the, which endured not longe without violacyd as sayth the frenche boke.

The returne
of kyng Ed-
ward with
his sonnes into
Englande.



For I leue aparte the great retoyling & honourable recei- uing of þe kyng by the cytyes of London, & other ceremonies, which at this season I spare, to the entent I maye the more substantiailpe shewe
it, ii. vnto

unto pou the synall ende of thys accorde. Then trouthe it is that in this season of the kynges being in France kyng John for his moze consolation was remoued from Banoy vnto the towne of London, where after þ kynges retourne, he fested the kyng and his Lordes vpon the. xliii. daye of the moneth of Juny. And the. viii. daye of the moneth of July nexte ensuyng the frenche kyng in the moynynge landed at Caleys, and was lodged in the castell, and there abode the comynge of kyng Edwarde.

Vpon þ. ix. daye of October, kyng Edwarde attyued at Caleys, & went streyght vnto the castell for to visyte kyng John, the whiche welcomed him in a lounge and frendly countenance. And when the kyng shulde departe to his lodgyng into þ towne, the frenche kyng requyred him, that he with his sonnes shulde dyne with hym vpon the mozoze folowynge, whiche of the kyng was graunted to be vpon the mondaye folowynge, the xii. daye of þ moneth. At whiche daye kyng Edwarde was fyrste sette and kepte the estate, and then secundarily the frenche kyng. Thirde the prync of Walys, and fourthly the duke of Lancastre, without moo at the table. In the tyme of whiche dyner came to the castell the erle of Flaunders, who the frenche kyng welcomed in mozte lounge maner. And when the sayde dyner with all honour was ended, ii. of the kynges sonnes of Englande, & ii. of the frenche kynges, tooke leaue of they fathers & rode towarde Boleyn, where at that tyme the regent of France was. The whiche met them in the myd way betwene Caleys and Boleyn, and so conueyed them vnto Boleyn, and rested there with them þ nyght, and vpon the mozoze, left the

there and him selfe came vnto Caleys fyrste to his father, & after his father and he came bothe to the kynges palayes to diner. Which kyng Edward receyued with muche ioye & honoure, and made vnto theym a sumptuous feaste. Vpon the fourtheene daye of October, the sayde regente departed from Caleys, and returned vnto Boleyn, and the two sonnes of kyng Edward returned from Boleyn, vnto Caleys.

And vpon a saterdaye the. xliiii. daye of the moneth of October, both kynges being in. ii. trauctys in one chapell at Caleys, a masse was sayde befoze them to the offeryng of which masse neyther of theym came. But when the par was bozne fyrste to the frenche kyng, and eft to kyng Edward, and eyther refused to kysse it ^{3 p. 141} ^{141.} fyrste, the frenche kyng rose vp and came toward kyng Edward, wher of he beyng ware, rose vp and mette with hym, and refused the par & kysed eyther other. At the whiche masse eyther of them was solemply swozne to mainteyne the artycles of the sayd peace. And for moze assuraunce of the same, manye lordes vpon bothe parties were also swozne, to maynteyne the same to their powers. Ye shal also vnderstande that in thys season that the frenche kyng sojourned thus at Caleys, bothe for the paymente of his raunsome & also for the deliuerie of certayne holdes and townes which as yet were not deliuered, he putte in such suertes as foloweth. The duke of Olyvaunce, the duke of Burgoyne the duke of Burbone, the erles of Angou, of Doyteau, of Bloys, of Melone, of saynte Poule, of Escamps, of Valentynoy, of Bzaine, of Cw, of Longeuple, of Cacarulle, of Ancerre of Dampmartyne, of Vendature, of Salys

The seventh parte.

Walpyng, and of Alendolme, the
 bycountes of Bandemoult, of Beaw-
 mount, and of Auerre, & lordes of
 Craon, of Deruall, of Dabryguy, of
 Couly, of fyers, of Dyeur, of sapte
 Venant, of Saranciers, of Aluerne,
 of Mountmoency, and of Angest, &
 also the lordes & wardens of the for-
 estes, and knyghtes, & William de
 Craon, & Lewis de Harcourt, &
 John de Laguy, and & Galter de
 Donehame. Of the whiche. xxxviii.
 persones, dyuerse of theym as befoze
 is touched were taken prisoners at
 the batayle of Poitiers. For the whiche
 it was agreed, that as many as had
 not payde theyn synaunce befoze the
 thyrde daye of Maye laste past, shuld
 be acquyted by the kynges synaunce
 with diuerse other condicions which
 I passe ouer.

Then vpon the morowe folow-
 yng of the taking of the foresayde othe
 by the two kynges, that is to saye son-
 daye the. xv. daye of October, the
 frenche kyng was frely deliuered,
 the whiche the saide day befoze noone
 departed from Caleys, and rode to-
 ward Boleyn. Whome kyng Ed-
 warde coueyed a myle vpon his waye
 At whychemyles ende, they depar-
 ted with bysnyng and other lounge

maner, and bynce Edward kepte
 on his waye with kyng John, and
 so conueyed hym vnto Boleyn, wher
 he tarped that nyghte. And vpon the
 morowe the sayde prince Edwards, &
 Charles duke of Normandy, with
 the earle of Escamps & other noble men
 there then being present, were againe
 swoyne to maynteyne and holde the
 sayde peace, withoute fraude, colour,
 or discepte. And that doone, the sayde
 bynce takynge his leaue retourned
 that nyghte vnto Caleys. And so is
 now appereth vnto you, that kyng
 John stode as prisoner by the space
 of. lxxi. yeres, and as muche as frome
 the. xix. daye of September, vnto the
 xv. daye of October.

And when kyng Edward had
 sped his nedes at Caleys, he after as
 shalbe shewed in the yere folowynge
 sayled into Englande.

It is also to be nored, & this yere
 whyle the kyng was occupied in his
 warres in Fraunce, as befoze is tou-
 ched, the earle of Seinpoule with an
 army of frenchemen sayled about the
 borders of Kente and Suffer, & lan-
 ded in sundry places, as Rye, Wyn-
 chelsea, and Hastings, & spoyled the
 townes and slew many of the men, &
 did much harme to the poore fyshers.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxx.

John Wozoth.

John Wemy.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxx.

Anno. lxxb.

Walter Bojney.



Vpon the even of Mayntie
 Quintyne, on the. xxi. daye
 of November, in the ende
 of the thyrte and. lxxi. yere
 of kyng Edward and begynnynge
 of this mayes yere, the kyng tooke
 wyppynge at Caleys, and sayled to-
 ward Englande, byngynge with

hym certayne of his hostages. That
 is to saye Lewis the second sonne of
 kyng John newly made Duke of
 Aquitaine & of Mayn, which befoze was
 earle of Angou, & John his brother
 newly made duke of Aluerne and of
 Berry, which befoze was earle of Por-
 tiers, whiche earledome nowe belon-
 geth. lxxi. yere

ged to kynge Edwarde by reason of the foresaide treaty. He also had with him sy: Lewis duke of Sabant, and the earles of Alenson and of Clempes, whiche were nere of the frenche kynges blode, with. viii. other earles and lordes named in the frenche cronicle, with the which the kyng landed at Dover wherely after, and so came to London the .ix. daye of Nouembre.

And in thys. xxxv. yere, men and beastes were perpyshed in Englande in dyuerse places with thondres and lyghtenynge.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lx.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxi.

William Holbeck.

John Deche.

Anno. xxxvi.

James Cane.

The. xxxvi.
yere.

In this. xxxvi. yere, Prynce Edward wedded the countesse of Kent, which before was wyfe vnto sy: Thomas Holande, and before that, wyfe vnto the earle of Salysbury, and deuorced frome hym, and maryed vnto the sayde sy: Thomas.

victorypouse, and lastely ouercomen, and so dysapere.

In this yere also a greates companye of dyuers nacpions assembled the in Wyre and Champayne, wherof leaders or capytaynes were Englyshmenne, the whiche dyd muche harme in Fraunce.

The seconde
mortalitie.

In this yere also was great mortalyte of menne in Englande during the whiche the noble duke Henry of Lancastre dyed. Thys of wyrters is named the seconde mortalitie. For it was the seconde that fell in this kynges dayes.

But after the assymaunce of the french cronicle, this company which there is called the newe company, beganne they assembled in the foresaid countree of Wyre, or kyng John were delpyered frome Calys. And when they were ware of thys delpyeraunce, they departed oute of Wyre, and yode into Champayne, and toke there diuers holdes, and spoyled and robbed dyuers small townes, & ransomed many men. And in this yere as sayth the frenche booke, they toke the byrdge and towne of saynt Spyrtes vpon the daye of the Innocentes or the. xxviii. daye of December. And as affirmeth Polycronicon, aboute the same tyme a nother company in lyke wyse assembled them in Italy, whiche was called the whyte companye, and molessted that countree in lyke maner. And in the monethe of Apryll folowynge, kyng John sente the Earle of Cantaruple, & earles of Waleysburgh of & Marches, of Forestes & of Jornguy

When duke Henry was dead, sy: John of Gaunte the kynges thyrde sonne, whiche had maryed the sayde Dukes doughter, was made duke of that duchye.

In thys yere also were sene two castelles in the aire. Wherof that one appeared in the south east, and that other in the south west, out of & whiche at sondrye tymes as it were aboute & noone tyme, issued of eyther of thie an hoste of armed men to mannes syght. And that hoste whiche issued oute of the castell of the southe east appeared whyte, and that other apere blacke. These two hostes apere as though they fought eche of them with other, and shewed as the whyte was fyrste

guy, the whych earles with they; re-
cynue met with the sayd company at
a place than named Byrbe, nere vn-
to A. to sur Rosne At which place was
foughten a cruel syght But in þ end

the frenchmen were oðer set, & dyscō-
fyted, so þ the sayde earle of Canrat
byle was taken prisoner, and the two
earles of Marches & Foixes slayne
with much of the comon people.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxi.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxi.

Stephan Caundrythe

John of S. Albones

Anno. xxxvii.

James Andrywe



Ad in þ. xxxvii. yere
vpon the day of. S.
Maupce, or the. xv.
daye of Januarpe,
blewe so exceeding
a wind that the like
therof was not sene

manpe yeares passed. Thys began a
boute euen songe in the South, and
contynued with such stozmes that it
blewe downe stronge and myghthe
buyldyng, as towres, steeles, houses
and chymnies, and continued for the
moze part in such stozmes by þ space
of. v. dayes after. And in thys yere &
xxiii. day of þ sayd moneth, of Janu-
ary came John kinge of Fraunce vn-
to Eltham besyd Gzenetowch, and dy-
ned ther that day with the king. And
vpon that after none, he was hono-
rably coueyd through the citee of A.
don vnto Mauoy, as well by the cyte

spns as other, whych he met with him
vpon Blackebeth wel horsed in a ly-
uerpe of one coloure. And whyle the
sayde kyng John laye at the sayde
place of Mauoye aboute the begyn-
nyng of Marche folowynge, a gre-
uous sykenes tooke hym, of whych
he dyed the. viii. daye of Apryl folow-
ynge, in the begynnynge of the yere
of grace. M. CCC. lxi. and after
was carryed into Fraunce and bury-
ed at saynte Denis, the. viii. daye of
Maye folowynge.

The death of
kyng John of
Fraunce.

And in thys yere kyng Edward
created sy; Leonel his sonne duke of
Clarence, and sy; Edmund hys other
sonne Earle of Cambridg. And in
the ende of thys yere, and. xvii. daye
of September, began a great frost, the
whych endured to þ beginnyng of the
moneth of Apryl. By reason wherof
much harme grew & esued of þ same.

A great frost

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxi.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxi.

John Rotte

Rycharde Croydon

Anno. xxxviii.

John Hyltoste.



Ad that yere came
thys kynges into En-
glande for to speake
with kyng Edward
fyrste the kyng of
Fraunce, the kyng of Spayne, and
the kyng of Scottes.



Ad in the. xxxviii. yere,
prynce Edward sayled
to Burdeaut and recea-
ued the posspon of Guy-
an, that kyng Edward
had newly geuen vnto hym. For the
whych he after dyd hys homage to
his

The. xxxviii.
yere.

his father, in lyke wise and maner as
hys father and other kynges of En-
glande were wont to do for the sayde
duchyte unto the kynges of Fraunce.

The battayle
of Danby

And vpon Mychaelmas day being
than vpon a sonday, befoze the castel
of Danby fast by the cytie of Glou-
cestre in Brytayne, met the hostes of
sy: Charles de Bloys and of sy: John
de Mountfort, whiche longe befoze
had stryuen as befoze is shewed for
the sayde duchy of Brytayne, & ther
foughten a cruell battayle. But by
helpe of God and of the Englysh ar-
chbys, the byctoyr felle to sy: John
de Mountfort. And in that syght sy:
Charles de Bloys was slayne & ma-
nye frenchemenne and Brytons that
toke hys parte. After whiche byctoyr
norwytstandynge, that the wyfe of
the sayd sy: Charles lay wythin that
country, there was agayne & sayd sy:
John made no resistance, but & he in-
toyed that country in peaciable wyse

Than Charles the. vi. of that name
newly crowned kyng of Fraunce, in
the ryght of the woman sent the arch-
byschop of Beynes and the Marshall
of Fraunce into Brytayne, for to set
an vntte and a restful peace betwene
the sayd sy: John, and the last wyfe
of sy: Charles. The whiche endeuo-
red the so well, that in the moneth of
April solowynge the sayde battayle
they agreed them, so that the enheri-
taunce of that duchy shulde remayne
to the sayd sy: John and hys heires
for evermore, and the wyfe of sy: Char-
les shulde holde hy: contented wyth
the earldome of Pennture and the bi-
countre of Lymoges, whiche of olde
tyme belongeth to her ancetours.

And aboute thys tyme was an or-
denaunce and statute made, that ser-
geantes and pientys of the lawe
shulde plede ther: ples in ther: mo-
ther toungue. But that stode but a
shorte whyle.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxiii

Symond Wyndon

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxiiii.

Adam of Burgh

Anno. lxxv

John Petford

The. lxxv
years



At thys. lxxv. yere, af-
ter some wyters, king
Edwarde vpon sainte
Stephans daye syn-
ned hys warrtes, wher
fore in the wylthynp
of God and saynte Stephan, he thys

yere after the oppynions of the sayd
authoures, beganne the foundacyon
of saynt Stephans Chapel at West-
minster. The whiche was synned
by Rycharde the seconde, and sonne
of Prynce Edwarde nexte kyng of
Englande, after thys thyrd Edward

The found-
acyon of
saynte
Stephans
chapel
at West-
minster

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxv

John Wyke

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxvi

John Luskyn

Anno. xl

John Wyke

The. xl. yere.

At thys. xl. yere, and moneth of
February, was bozne the fyrst
sonne of Prynce Edwarde, and was
named Edwarde, the whiche dyed

whan he was aboute the age of. viii.
yeres. And in thys yere onenamed
Bartholomew de Clapton a Roymanne,
with an army of frenchemen entred
the

the lande of Castyle, and warred hy-
pon Peter than kinge of that land, &
so behaued him, that in lesse than .xii.
monethes space, he chased the sayde
Peter out of hys owne land, & cro-
ned hys brother named Henry kinge
of Castyle, at a towne called Burges
vpon Easter daye. Wherefor the sayd
Peter constrained of necessitye was
compelled to come to the cyte of Bur-
deaur, for to haue and aske ayde of
prynce Edward. Thys Peter was
eyghtefull heyr vnto the crowne of
Castile, and Henry hys brother after
most wyters was bastarde.
But thys Peter was so hyle of cōdy-
cyons, that hys subiectes had to hym
but lytle fauoure. And so the warre
contynued a season betwene hys bro-
ther and hym, as after shall appeare
in the whych prynce Edward wyth

his archers toke party with this Pe-
ter, and the frenche kinge with hys
speres toke party with Henry.

And in thys yeare at the kinges cō-
maundement, Iohn Bury than may-
or of London was dyscharged þ. xxiij.
day of Januarie, and for hym electe
and chole maye Iohn Louekyn gro-
cer. And as wytnessech Polycronyco
and other, thys yeare was commaun-
ded by the kyngs, that Peter pence
shulde no more be gathered in Eng-
lande, nor payd vnto Rome, as they
of longe tyme had bene vsed & graū-
ted, in the tyme of Iuo of Iewe some
tyme king of Wellfasons, as befoze
in hys story is shewed.

But how so at þ. dayes it was thā by
the king forbode, yet neuerthelesse at
this present tyme & selfe, they begathe-
red in sondrye shyres of Englande.

Restraynt of
Peter pence.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxx.

Iohn Warde.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxi

Iohn Louekyn.

Wylliam Wykman

Anno. lxi

In thys. xli. yeare, was
borne the seconde sonne
of prynce Edward at
Burdeaur named Ry-
charde, in the moneth of
Aprill and the thyrdaye of the sayd
moneth. The sayde prynce Edward
wyth the kyng of Nauerne and the
for sayde Peter kyng of Castyle, met
wyth Henry Bastarde and vsurper
of the sayde kyngedome, nere vnto a
towne called Dompnyng, wher betwene
them was a cruell and longe fyghte
whiche in the ende the victorie fell
vnto the Englyshemen, and Henry
and hys men were chased.

In thys battayle was taken by
Bartham de Glaycon, & by Arnold
Wodenham than marshal of Fraunce
wyth other auncel French as Wyntar

nes, and slayne vpon. v. M. men hy-
pon the partye of the sayde Henry, &
vpon. xvi. C. vpon prynce Edwardes
party.

After whych victorie, the prynce
wyth the sayd Peter, sped them vnto
the cyte of Burges, whych was yel-
ded to them shortly after theyre com-
myng, and after holpe the sayde Pe-
ter to winne other cyties and holdes
so that he tarped there tyll the moneth
of August folowynge. At whych sea-
son as sayth the cronycle of Fraunce,
he returned vnto Burdeaur without
payments of wages for hys sowdy-
ours, that befoze to hym was by the
sayde Peter promysed.

In thys season that prynce Ed-
warde was thus in Spayne, Henry
Bastarde fledde wyth hys wyfe into
Fraunce,

Ca. xl. p. 222.

The death of
Richard the
first.

Fraunce, and abode in a place of countie called Carcasson. But so soon as he was warned that prince Edward was returned unto Bordeaux, he gathered to him a newe compaignie, and passed by the mountaynes of the foires, and so entered the sayde lande of Castyle, the xxviii. daie of the moneth of September folowynge, and had the citee called Calahoz receaved unto him. Where, unto him dyd come much people of that countie, so that his strength encreased hougely. Than from thence he rode unto the citee of Burges, where he was ioyously receaved, and behaved hym in such wyse, that in short whyle after he had the whole rule of the lande of Castyle, and his brother was sayne to auoyde the land, and to seeke ayde of the Sarazyns as assemblyeth the forsayde cronycle.

And in this yere aboute the moneth of June, the compaignie before mynded, in the. xxxvi. yere of this kinge, entered the duchye of Guyan, and there helde them in doyng much harme to that countie, lyke as they before had done in dyverse places of Fraunce, by all that season of. liii. yeres passed. And in the moneth of De

cember, they departed from thence, and rode vnto the countie of Auern and Berry. And in the moneth of February, they passed the river of Loys and toke the waye towardes Martyll, and after entered that countie of Burgoyne. And ever as they passed the countie, they ransomed men, and spoyled many towne as they wente.

And albeit, that the frenche kyng appoynted dyvers of his lordes and knyghtes to go agayne theym, yet at such seasons as they dyd come vnto the, they wolde suffer them to depart without barrail. For they were so many that they were nombred at. xl. M. But of theyre captaynes is none named. Howbeit, there were Englyshe men, Gascones, Pycardes, frenche men, and of Flaumie, and many other naciōs, which the cronicle reberseth not, and continued in their force and strenght long after, to the great damage of the countie which they passed through, as Normandy, Gasconie, Guyan, Burgoyne, and all the chiefe countie in Fraunce, a lyved by rauen and pillage, to the great enpoueryshing of the sayd countie and townes, which they passed by or lodged in

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxi

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxii

James Andzwe

John Cogolde.

Anno. clii.

Wylliam Dykman

Ch. xlii. years



And in the. clii. yere, and moneth of March, appeared Stella cometa, that is a blasynge sterre.

And the moneth of Aprill nexte ensuyng that is to say the xxi. daie of the said moneth, Leonell the sonne of this kyng Edward entered the citee of Baris, where he was of the Dukes

of Berry and Burgoyne honorably receaved, and so by theym conueyed vnto theyre brother the kyng of Fraunce vnto Loure, where he at that season was lodged. Of whome he was also ioyously receaved and lodged withyn the kynges palaces, and dyed and souped with the kyng at his owne table, and vpon the morow folowynge he dyed with the quene at

at a place of the kinges nere to saint
Boule, wher the quene than was lod-
ged. And whan after dyner he had a
whyle daunced and passed the tyme
wth other dysportes, he than wth
the sayde two dukes was agayne co-
ueyed vnto the kyng and louped w
hym agayne that nyghte. And vpon
the moynynge beynge tursdaye, the
sayde dukes felled the sayde sy; Le-
nell at a place of thepy; in Darps na-
med Artols.

And vpon the wenesday he dyed
and louped agayne wth the quene
And vpon the thursdays and moyn-
sfolowynge, the sayd sy; Leonel toke
hys leue of the kyng and quene, the
whiche gaue vnto hym gyftes, and to
suche as were in hys company, to the
value of .xx. M. florenys and aboue
and was conueyed wth noble men
as the erle of Cantuarpe, tyl he was
comon to Hés, and wth knyghtes
tyl he came to the borders of Fraunce

wher he gaue vnto them xij. gyftes
wth greut thanked.

And after he contynued hys jour-
ney tyl he came to the cytee of Wy-
lape, wher shortly after he maryed The marriage
of Leonel
the daughter of Salpate duke of the
sayde cytee and countre, and had by
hes great possessions, by reason that
her sayde father dyed shortly after.

And in the ende of this yere, the
erles of Armentah, of Byet, and of De
rygot, wth dyuerse other nobles of
the duchy of Guyan, apyled þ prince
of Wales in the frenche biges court
that he had broken the peace, & won-
ged them contrarye the peace stably-
shed betwene Englaunde and Fraunce
and requyred the frenche kyng that
the sayde appeale myghte haue due
processe agayne the sayde prynce.

The whiche as sayth the frenche cro-
nycle kyng Charles deferred, for cer-
tayne causes there touched, whiche
were to longe to reherse.

Inno domini. M. CCC. lxxvii

Inno domini. M. CCC. lxxviii

Symon Morison

Adam Wymbenham

Inno. clxiii.

Robert Gydelet



And in this. clxiii. yere
or moze certaynly in
the ende of the yere
ding yere, one Wal-
ter Bernes merter,
was vpon the daye
of the translation of
saynt Edward kyng & confessor of
the. xiii. daye of October, chosen by þ
maye and aldermen maye of the cy-
tee of London. But howe it was, for
lack of substance, or by other imped-
ment, which is not noted, þ sayd Wal-
ter vppon Symon & Iudasdaye fol-
lowinge, whan he shulde haue taken
his oth at guildhal aperted not, wher

foze in hys come by electiō of thes of
sayde maye and aldermen, was ad-
mytted for that yere folowinge Sy-
monde Morison spymonger maye
of that cytee.

And in this yere and moneth of
March, Peter kyng of Castyle, the
whiche by the ayde of the Maragins
dwelling in the borders of Spayne
had wonne and recovered some part
of the launde of Castyle, encountred
wth hys bastarde brother Henry be-
foze sayde, and gaue vnto hym batell
nere to a towne called Wybyl. Wher
after long fyght, the sayd Peter was
dyscomfited and much of hys people
slayne

Wayne, and hym selfe dyuen into a castell, oute of whych he was shortly after by treason gotten, and pressed vnto his brother fornamed, be whose sentence he was immediately beheaded. After whose death the sayde Henrye enioyed the whole lande of Castyle. Whych infortunite and mischaunceful to this Peter after diuers wryters for so muche, as he cruelly slewe his owne wyfe the daughter of the duke of Burbone.

And in this yere and moneth of Maye, the kinge of Fraunce in his hygh courte of parlyamente holden at Baris, proceded in iudgement vpon the appellacions befoze made by the erle of Armenak, the lord of Byt and earle of Beregoze, agayn pryncce Edward, as befoze is touched in the presedyng pte. Wherupon by coyd and harpauce began to take place betwene the two kynges, in so much that by meane of the sayde.iii. lordes notwithstanding, they were befoze sworn to be to the kyng of Englad trew lyege menne, by uers townes of the country of Boyteaw pelded them to the frenche kyng, as Albeuple, Rue, and the moze parte of the sayd townes of the sayde country. Where by ambassades wer sent vpon both parties, and by uerse meanes of treaty were commoned, whiche contyneth a longe werke, with reasonyng made vpon the same. But in conclusion all came to none effect. So that byetch of the peace whiche befoze betwene the two kynges was so substantially concluded was broken, and eether kyng for his party made proupyon for the warre. In so much, that kyng Charles sped hym to Roan in Normandy, and there in the moneth of July ctygged his nauy to set them forwarde to warre vpon Englande.

In whiche tyme and frason that king Charles was thus occupied in Normandy, the duke of Lancaster liued at Calys with a stronge company of archers and other warppours, and from there passed to Chouene and so to Fyze, in wassynge the countrey with yon and fyze as he wente. Wherefoze the frenche kyng in defence of those parties, sente the duke of Burgoyne with a puissant army to withlande the sayde duke of Lancaster. The whiche duke of Burgoyne sped hym in such wise, that about the xxiii. daye of Auguste he lodged his host vpon the mountayn of Turne ha nere vnto Arde. And the Englysh host was lodged betwene Epygoune and Arde so that the frontes of both hostes were wythin a myle. Betwene whome were daylye shymphes and small byckerynges wythout any notary batayl. And whan the sayd duke of Burgoyne had thus kept the sayd mount, fro the. xlii. day of Auguste vnto the. xli. day of September, he remoued his hoste, & rode vnto Helder for which dede he was after blamed of kyng Charles his brother. After whiche departyng of the Frenchmen the duke of Lancaster with his hoste toke the way toward Caus o; Caur and passed the ryuer of Summe and so rode toward Hatfield, entenyng as sayth the french booke to haue spured the french kynges nauy. But at theyre comynge thither, the towne was so strongly mshed, that they did there but litle scath. Wherefoze the said duke departed shortly thence, & sped hym into the countrey of Doitran, & so came vnto the towne of Albeuple. Wher, without the Frenchmen encountered hym and gaue vnto hym battayl. In the whiche was taken Sir Hugh Chastillon knyght with other knyghtes.

The seventh parte

229

knights, esquires, and burgeses
of the towne, and upon .xii. scope
frenchmen slain. Which sayd pri-
soners to the number of fyue & four-

tyne. Anno domini. m. c. lxxviii.

John Chycheester.

John Drell.

Hugh Holdpche.

Anno domini. m. c. lxxviii.

Anno. m. c. lxxviii.



In this. m. c. lxxviii. yere and
moneth of Januarpe,
died the erle of War-
wyke at Calers, after
he was returned fro
the duke of Lancastre, whych was a
man of great fame.

And in þ moneth of August, died
that noble woman quene Phylipp &
wyfe vnto Edward the thyrde. The
wyche was a greate benefactoure
vnto the chanons of saint Stephans
chapell at westmynder.

And sone after died dame Blaunch
sountyme the wyfe of Henry duke of
Lancastre, & was buried at Boules
vpon the northsyde of the hygh au-
ter by her husband. Where she orde-
ned for him and her. iiii. chaütres for
euer, & an annyversarye yerely to be
kept. At the whych, ouer great thyn-
ges be set vnto the deane & chanons
of the church. She ordeyned that the
maye beyng presente at the masse,
shuld offre. i. s. and take bp. xx. s. the
shyppes eyther of them a penpe, and
to receyue eyther of them a marke, &
chäberlajn of the cytie. & the sword
berer. vi. s. viii. s. & euery officer of
the mayes there present. xii. s. and
to euery offycer to the nobye of. viii.
eyther of theym. viii. s. admittid for
the shyppes. The whych obyte at
this daye is holden. But by reason
that the lande is decayed, these fore-
named sumes be greatly mynyshed,
so that the maye at this daye hath

the wer sent into Calers, & the duke
with hys company rode vnto Bur-
deaur, in spoyling of the frenchme
as he went.

but. vi. s. viii. s. both þ shyppes. vi. s.
viii. s. and other after that rate.

In this yere also the kyng helde
hys parliament at westmynder. In
the whiche was graunted vnto him
iii. fyftenes to be payde in. iii. yeres
solowynge. And by a conuocacyō of
the clergye was also graunted vnto
hym. iii. dyssmes, to be payde in lyke
maner.

And in this yere was the. iii. mo-
talitie, whereof died muche people.
And such a moyayne fell also amōg
beastes, that the lyke therof was not
seen many yeres before. And vpon
that ensued such excessiues of rayne,
that come was therewith drowned in
the earth, and so bukked with water
that the yere ensynge whete was at
xl. s. a bushell.

And in þ ende of þ moneth of July
sy; Robert Knolles accompanied with
dyuers noble men & souldyours, en-
tered saint Omers. And whē they had
executed they; pleasures there, they
countre enuyd, they than rode
towards, in wastynge & spoyling þ
tre as they went. And whan they had
bryt the bulwerkes of þ sayde towne
of Arras, they passed by Royh & Ver-
mendons, & byente the houses of all
such as wolde not to them gyue due
raunsome. And thus holdynge they;
waye, they passed the ryuers of Oyse
& of Wyte, & so came vnto the citie of
Raynes, & passed there the ryuer, &
rode towards Tropes, & passed þ ry-
uers

Ch. m. c. lxxviii.

Ch. m. c. lxxviii.

bb uers

ucts of Fube and of layne, and so held they; waye to saynt Florentyne and theer passed the cyuer of Jon, in holdyng they; counse toward Jann gnye, and so to Corbueyl and Ellon o; Ellogn. And vpon a mondaye be ynge the. xxi. daye of September, the sayd Englyshemen lodged them vpon the mounte of saynte Albone, and in the countrie there aboute. And vpon the wednesdaye folowynge, they enbataylled them in a felde betwene the townes of Junye and Whers.

In all whiche season they passed without batayll thorough those foze sayd countres, in spoylynge the and raunsonyng the inhabytautes ther of without resistene o; impedymet. And albeitt that the citie of Parys at that day were. ii. C. menne of armes waged by the frenche kynge, besyde the lowdpours and strengthe of the cytezens of that cytie, yet the sayde hoste of Englyshmen laye as befoze is sayde enbataylled, tyl it was past noone of the foresayd daye. At which tyme forsomuche as they were credibly enfourmed that they shuld there haue not batayle, they brake they; felde and spedde theym to a place o; towne called Antognye, and there lodged that night, and vpon the morowe tooke they; iourneye towarde Normandy.

But after. iiii. dayes laboure, they tourned they; waye towarde Estrampys o; Escamps, by Beause in Gall noys, in pyllynge and domagynge the countrees as they befoze had done contynuyng they; iourneye tyl they came into the erledome of Angeou, where they wanne by strengthe the townes of Uaas and Ruyly, with other stronge holdes thereabout.

But than as p deupli wold, which

is rote of all enyap and dystorde, the lordes of Fytwater and the lord Grauntson, tyll at variance with sy; Robert Knolles and hys compaigne, whiche grewe to so great hatred and displeasure, that sy; Roberte Knolles with the flour of the archers and souldours, departed from the sayd two lordes, leuyng theym in the fo; sayd townes of Uaas & Ruyly, & he than yode into Britayne.

Wherof, whan certayntie was broughte vnto the frenche kynge, anon he commaunded sy; Bartham de Glapconnewly made marshal of Fraunce, with a stronge armie to entre the sayde countre of Angeou, and to make sharpe warre vpon the sayde Englyshmen. The which vpo the twelwe day of Octobre folowynge layde syge vnto the sayde towne of Uaas, wherof issued oute the sayde lordes of Fytwater and Grauntson, and gaue vnto the Marshall batayl. But in the ende the discomfytur tyll vnto the Englyshmenne, so that of theym was slayne. vi. hundred, and the reste put to flyght.

In the which was taken the said lord Grauntson with other. And that done the sayd sy; Bartham yode vnto the towne of Uaas, and gat it by assaute. Where also were slayne vpon thre hundred of Englyshmen, and the other put to flyght, & many taken pylsoners. And after thys the said Bartham pursued the Englyshmen that were fledde, vnto a towne called Uersure. Where in assautyng of the sayd towne, he slew and toke pylsoners vpon. iiii. C. Englyshmen. And thus by streyfe and dissencion amonge theym selfe, those that befoze by amyttee and good accorde wer byctours, now by hatreded and dystorde were slayne and taken pylsoners.

Anno

The seventh parte.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxx.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxx.

Wylliam Wallworth.

John Bernes.

Anno. xlv.

Robert Bayton.

In this, xlv. yere & begyn-
ning of þ moneth of March
the archbishop of Wynche-
ster, than beyng a cardynall, and pre-
sent at Wynpon to Gregore the. xi.
of þ name, then B. of Rome was put
in compyls with the archbishop of
Beauuays to make o; treat a peace
& unittie betwene the two realmes of
Englāde & of Fraunce. Which sayd
cardinal of Wynchester after his de-
parting fro the B. of Rome, came
downe towarde Meleoune, wher, by
the said archbishop & also cardynall
of Beauuays, he was honourabyle
mette, & so conueyed vnto the citie of
Meleon. And whā he had rested him
there hys. iiii. dayes, the two cardy-
nalles ensemble sped them vnto Pa-
rys, wher they to kynge Charles,
had comunicacion touchyng þ sayd
peace. And after his pleasure knowe
the sayd archbishop & cardynal toke
his leue, & was coueyed toward Ca-
leys, wher he toke shyppyng, and so
sayled into England, & shewed vnto
the kynge the B. of Romes pleasure
with the frenche kynges aunswere.

And in this yere folowing þ some-
tyde, in Guyā were made & foughte
many & dyuers skymylles, in the
which for the moze partie the Eng-
lyshmen were put vnto the woyle, so
that many of them were slain & take
prysoners, & diuers holdes & townes
taken fro them, & specially in þ coun-
tre of Lymolyn. For by þ fyrst daye
of þ moneth of July, the citie of Lymolyn
with all the countre of Lymolyn
forseyarde was vnder the obey-
saunce of the frenche kynig, as wyl-
leth the frenche Cronycle.

Wherof the occasiō was, as affir-
meth the Englyshe boke, for so much
as pryncce Edward had lately before
arrested of the inhabytantes of that
cylie and countre, a greate and gre-
uous tax, to they great hurte and
empoueryng, by meanes wherof
he losse the loue of the people.

Whan the frenche kynge hadde
thus opteyned the rule of the countre
of Lymolyn, he immediately after
sente hys Barthiam de Glapcon into
the erledome of Poiteuue o; Dop-
tyers, and wāne there many townes
and castels, & lastly layed hys spege
vnto Rochell, as after in the folow-
yng yere shalbe shewed.

And to the ende that good & me-
cotoyous dedes shuld be holden in
memorie, here is to be noted that the
maye for this yere beeyng John
Bernes merret, gaue vnto þ comu-
naltie of the cylie of London a chest
with thye lockes & keyes, and therein
a thousande marke of redy moneye,
wyllyng the keyes therof to be pety-
ly in þ kepyng of thye sundry persōs,
that is to mene the mayster of þ fel-
shipp of the mercery to haue one, the
mayster of the felshipp of dyapers
the second, & the thyrde to be in þ ke-
pyng of the chamberlayne of that
cylie. And so therein the sayde thou-
sande marke to be kept, to the entent
that at all tymes when any cytesyne
woulde doo towe any money, that he
shuld haue it there for the space of a
yere, to laye for such a summe as he
wold haue plate o; other iewelles to
a suscepte gayge, so that he ex-
ceded not the summe of an hundred
marke. And for the occupying ther-
of

the sayd yere

the maye gife
to the sale of
the commode.

of yf he were learned, to save at hys
pleasure De profundis for the soule
of John Barnys & all Christen sou-
les, as often tymes as in his summe
were compysed .x. markes. So he
that boyled but .x. markes, shoulde
save but ouer that prayer. And yf he
had .xx. markes, then to save it twyes,

and so after the rate. And yf he were
not learned, then to say as often his
Pater noster. But how so thys mo-
ney was lent or gyved, at this daye
the cheste remaineth in the chamber
of London, without money or pled-
ges for the same.

Inno domini. M. CCC. lxx.

John Bernes.

Robert Hatfelde.

Inno domini. M. CCC. lxxi.

Robert Bayton.

Inno. xlii.

The. xlii.
year.



L At this. xlii. yere, &
moneth of februa-
ry, kyng Edwarde
held his parlyamet
at Westmynster: in
the which he asked
of the spiritualtye
l. xx. pound, & as muche of p. laye fee.
The which by the tēporal was graū-
ted, but the clergie kepte the of with
pleasaunt answeres. So p. the kyng
and his counsayl was with them di-
scontented, in so much p. to they? dy-
splesures, dyuers offycers, as the
chaunceler, the pryvysseale, the trea-
sourer, & other, were remoued beyng
spirituall men, & in they? offycers &
places tēporal men set in. And shortly
after the foresayde cardynall of
Beauuays came into Englande, to
treat of the peace betwene p. ii. real-
mes. But he sped nothing to p. effect
therof. Wherefore in the moneth of
July, p. frenche kyng sente into the
countre of Boytea to the fozenamed
sy? Barthram de Clapcon with a
strong army, where he wan dyuers
holdes & fortresses fro the Englysh-
mē. In which season kyng Edward
for strengthnyng of the countre, & spe-
cially to defende p. towne of Rochell
which as aboue in the other yere is

shewed was at this yere besieged by
p. sayd sy? Barthram, sent the erle of
Denbroke with other noble men, to
fortifye the sayd towne, & to remoue
the siege. But or he might wyne to
the sayd towne, he was encountered
wyth a frote of spaywardes, the
which kyng Henry of Castyle had
sent into Fraunce to strength p. french
kynge's partie. Of the which frote af-
ter longe & cruell fyght, the sayd erle
was taken, wyth sy? Gurcharde de
Angle and other, to the nombre of c.
and thye score prysoners, & the moze
partye of hys men slayne and dyen-
ned, wyth the losse of many good
shyppes.

And in the begynnyng of the mo-
neth of Septēbry folowynge, a Gas-
cogne boyne, a man of good fame,
whome the kyng of Englad had ad-
mytted for his lyutenant & gouer-
nour of the countre of Boytea, na-
med le Captall de Buette, laughte
wyth an army of frenchmen before
a towne named Donbyse, where in
conclusion hys men were slayn and
chased, & he with lxx. of his partie ta-
ken prysoners. Than the dukes of
Berry & of Burgoyne upon the vi.
daye of Septēbry, came before Ro-
chell, and had certayne communica-
tions

The senented parte

clōs with þe rulers of the sayd towne
for the deliuey therof. In this passe
time & season, kyng Edward heryng
of the takyng of the erle of Derbyke
& of the losse that he dayly had of his
men in dyuers parties of Fraunce,
with also the iopardie that þe towne
of Rochell and other shode in, made
hasty prouysion, & entended to haue
passed the see. But the wynd was co
traryous, that he might haue no pas
sage, wherfore he retourned as saith

237

Holieronick, agayne into the lande.

Then vpon the .viii. day of Sep
tembre beforesayd, the capytayne of
Rochell, hauynge no cōfōrte of shōrt
rescous, yelded vpon certayne ap
poyntementes the sayd towne vnto
the fozenamed dukes, vnto þe frēche
kynges vse. And shōrtly after were
also yelded to them, the townes of An
golesme, of Exanctes, of saint John
de Angely, wyth dyuerse other.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxi.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxii.

John Wyell.

John Whylpott.

Nicholas Bzember.

Anno. xlv.

Chap. lvi.
p. 238

Ad in the .xlviii. yere, at a
wrestelyng holden vpon
blake Beth besyde Lon
don, was slayne a mercer
of Londō, named John
Northwode. For the whiche greate
dissencion grewe amonge the selfs
Myppes of the cytie, to the hōuge di
stourbaunce of it, and a good season
after oꝝ the rancoure thereof mighte
be duely appeased.

In this yere also the duke of La
castre sꝝ John of Gaunt, & sꝝ Ed
mūde his bꝝother erle of Cambrige
wedded the two doughters of Peter
whych was late kyng of Castyle,
put to death by Henry his bastarde
bꝝother, as befoze I haue sheweb in
the .xliii. yere of this kynges reygne.
Of the whiche two doughters sꝝ
John of Gaunt maryed þe eldest na
med Constance, and his bꝝother the
yonger named Isabell, so þe by these
marriages these two bꝝethzen clai
med to be enherytours of the kyng
dome of Castyle oꝝ Spayne.

And in this yere after the duke of
Brytayne had receyued many exhoꝝ

tacions & requestes fro the frenche
kyng, to haue hym vpon his partye:
he sente for certayne sowdoyours of
Englyshme, & strenghted with them
some of his castels & holdes. Wher
of hearpyng kyng Charles, sent thꝝ
ther id a strong power þe fozenamed
sꝝ Barthzan de Claycon, watnyng
them to make warre vpon them as
an enemye vnto the house of Fraunce
The whych accōdyng to toey; cō
mission entred the land of Brytayne,
in wastpyng it with pyꝝ & fyꝝ, and in
shōrt processe had yelded vnto hym
the moze partye of the chyeft townes,
excepte Brest, Julroy, and Daruall.
Than in the ende of June the sayde
sꝝ Barthzan layd spege vnto Brest,
& the lord of Craon wyth other laye
befoze Daruall. In all whych seā
son the duke of Brytayne was in En
glande. For so soone as he hadde as
befoze is sayd, bestowed the fozesayd
Englyshe sowdoyours, he sayled into
Englande to speke wyth kyng Ed
warde.

In the moneth of July, the duke
of Lacastre with sꝝ John de Mōit
bb iii forde

The arrival
of kyng Ed
ward at Lan
cester.

The journey
of kynge Ed-
warde into
Fraunce.

for the duke of Brytayne & other, with
a myghty pynsaunce landed at Ca-
leys. And after they had rested them
ther a certayn dayes, they rode vnto
Helden, and lodged them within the
parke an other season. And after pas-
sed by Dourlong, by Béquesne, and
so vnto Corbye, where they passed þe
ryuer of Sone, and rode vnto Roy
in Vermendoy, where they rested
themy by the space of. vii. dayes. At
whiche terme ende they set fyre vpon
the towne, & toke theyr waye toward
Lacynoy, and burned & spoyled the
countre as they wēt. And in processe
of tyme passed the ryuers of Osne,
Marne and of Aube, & rode throughe
Chapayn, & by the erledome of Bja-
me streyghte vnto Guy, & passed the
ryuer of Sepn, & so towarde þe ryuer
of Lepy, and vnto Martynghuy þe non-
nery. And when they were passed the
sayd nonnery, they kepte theyr waye
toward the ryuer of Ancherre, and

so vnto Burdeaur. In all whiche
iourney they passed wythout fyghte
or batayll, notwithstanding the great
hurt & domage they did vnto þe tow-
nes & countres as they passed. Except
at a place or towne called Dyche, a
knight of Fraunce called syr John de
Uyenne encountred. I. speres and. xx.
archers that wer strayed from theyr
hoste, and set vpon them, and sturwe
some parte of theim, and toke the re-
sydue of theim prysoners. So that
the frenche boke sayth, for so muche
as for lacke of meate for their hores
and other paynfull thynges, that in
that iourney to them happened, that
though that iourney were vnto the
Englyshemen honorable to ryde so
ferre in the kynges lande vnfough-
ten wyth, yet it was to them verie
paynfull, cōsidering the manyfolde
chaunces fallynge to them, as losse
of hores and other thynges during
that passage.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxii.

Adam of Burp.

John Iwbyp.

John Iwllhyde.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxiii.

Anno. xlviii.

The. xlviii.
year.



In this. xlviii. yere wer
sent fro þe B. of Rome
than being the. xi. Eze-
goz, the archebyschop
of Rauenne, & the by-
shoppe of Carantes, for to treate of
the peace, betwene the two kynges
of Englande & of Fraunce. The whiche
assembled theym at Byuges in
flaunders. Whether also for kyng
Edwardes partye, came the duke of
Nancastre, and the byshoppe of Lon-
don, with other. And for Charles the
frenche kyng, appeared there the
duke of Burgoyne, and the bisshoppe
of Ampens, and other. The whiche

commyssioners, after they had spent
a great parte of the lente in disputa-
cions of this matter, the parties for
the frenche kyng, desired a lycence
of the legates, that they myght ryde
vnto Paris, & thewe vnto the kyng
the offers of the Englyshe partie,
and so to retourne with his pleasur.
Wherupon it was agreed, that a cer-
tayne shulde ryde & to shew vnto the
frenche kyng, & the Englyshemen
abode styll vpon the souerayntie,
that the kyng of Englande and his
heires kynges, shal enioy al the for-
mer landes compyled in the peace
made betwene hym and John than
kyng

The seventh parte.

kyng of fraunce, as beefore is shew-
wed in the .xxiii. yere of this kyng,
without homage or other dupte for
theim dooing. For this matter as
saith þe freche cronicle, kyng Char-
les assembled at Paris a great parte
of the nobles of his realme, to many
other wyse men & doctours of divi-
nitee, to haue that cause sufficiently
argued and debated. In the whiche

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxiii.

Richard Lyons.

Wylliam Walsworth.

Wylliam Wodhewse.



In this yere, that is to
vnderstande in the bee-
gynnyng of this may-
tes yere, and ende of þe
xlviii. yere, of kyng Ed-
warde, a new assemble was appoyne-
ted, for treaty of the foresaid peace, to
be kept at saint Omers, but after at
Bruges. Where for kyng Edward
apered again the duke of Lancastre
and sir Edmund his brother erle of
Cambruge, with diuerse other of his
counsaill. And for the frenche kyng,
þe dukes of Angou & of Burgoyne
with diuerse other of his counsaill.
Where the said lordes with þe other
helde their asselles and courtes, till
it was nere Easter, to þe great charge
and coste of bothe partyes. And in þe
ende departed again without effecte
except þe they prolonged the peace till
þe fyrste daye of Apryll next ensuyng.

And after by labour of the saide
legates, the kyng of Englande his
counsaill being at Caleis, and the
freche kyng his counsaill at Boleine
a longer daye of the said peace was
concluded, till mydsomer next folow-

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxiii.

John Hadley.

John Warde.

Wylliam Actonpoete.

consaill it was pleneely determyned
that the kyng myght not gyue ouer þe
said souerayntie without great peril
of his soule, as there was shewyd by
dyuers reasons. When this reporte
was brought vnto Bruges, the said
treaty was dissolued without any co-
clusiō taking, except the peace was
continued till the feast of all saintes
next ensuyng.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxiii.

Anno. xlii.

In whiche tyme and season þe
two legattes rode from Boleine to
Caleis, and from Caleis to Bolein,
to conclude some treaty betwene the
two realmes. But in conclusiō none
was taken, wherof after þe Englishe
wyrters the frenche menne bare the
wyte. And after þe freche auctours, the
English are putte in the blame. But
were the faulte in þe kyng of Englad
or in the frenche kyng, trouth it is þe
freche kyng during this treaty
wāne many towne & holdes, aswell
in Guyā as in Britain, and in other
places, to his greate aduantage.

This yere also dyed doctour Wyl-
iam Wyttelsey archebishop of Can-
terbury. After whose deeth the monkes
chale to that sea the cardenall of

With whiche election
the kyng was nothyng contented, so
that after greete gooddes spent by
the monkes to optehie their entete,
by the consente of þe bishop of Rome
and the kyng, doctoure Symonde
Dudbury was lastely admytted to
that bygnitie, whiche beefore was
bishop of London.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxb.

Anno. l.

A great dethe.



At this .l. pere, fill many wonderfull sikeneses among þe people, wher of þe people dyed wonderly faste, as well in Italie as in Englande. Among the which dyed sye Edward called þe lord Spenser, a mā of great fame whose body was entered at Teukelbury.

And this pere a greate murmur

and grudge beganne to spryng agayne certayne persones, that were aboute the kyng, as the lord Latimer then the kyng his greate chamberleyn and other.

By whose synyster counsaill, the kyng in his age was mylad, & his treasoure mysended, to his greate dishonoure, and all his trewe subiectes greate hynderaunce.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxb.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxbi.

Adam Staple.

John Northampton.

Robert Launde.

Anno. li.

Ch. li. per.



AD in this .li. pere, the kyng assembled his high courte of parlyament at westminster. In þe whiche was asked a subtype of the commons, for the defece of his enemyes. Wherunto it was answered by the comon hous, that thei might no longer bere suche charges, consydering their manyfolde charges by the boyme in tymes passed. And further thei saied thei knew well þe kyng was ryche inough to defede hym and his lande, if the lande and his treasure were well guyded. But it had been long tyme euill ruled by euill offycers, that the lande might not bee plentuously of chafre, marchandise, or ryche.

By meane wherof, and by the inportune charges, the comynalte was greatly empoueryshed. Whereouer þe said commons complained thein by þe dyuers offycers, causers of this mysorde. Wherof the lord Latimer was noted for pryncipal, & also dame Alis Wyers, þe whiche the kyng had long tyme mylused for his concubine,

& one named sye Rycharde Scutry knight, by whose counsaills and synyster meanes, þe kyng was misguyded and þe rule of the lande mysordered.

Wherfore þe said commons prayed by the mouth of their speaker then sye Wyers Dalamere, that the said persones with other might bee removed from the kyng, and other to be sette in auctorite about his persone as were for his honoure and weale of his realme. Whiche request of the commons by the meanes of the noble pryncce Edward was accepted, so þe said persones were frome þe kyng removed, and other by the aduice of the said pryncce and other wyse lordes of the realme, for the said persones aboute the kyng deputed and ordeined. And shortly after the commons graunted the kyng his pleasure, so that he had of every manne and womā ouer the age of fourtyten yeres. .iiii. s. beggers onely excepted. And by the clergy was graunted, that the kyng shoulde haue of every beneficed manne. .xii. s. and of prestes not beneficed. .iiii. s. the .iiii. orders of freers onely excepted. But of this money were leuied, the kyng was sayne

payne to bozow summes of money in diuers places, among the whiche the citee of London was sent to for. .iii. M. li. But for the maye then Adam Stapulle, was not qup o; for the-
 cping in p matter, he was by p kyng his commaundement dyscharged the .xii. daye of the moneth of Marche, and for hym was then Richard whi-
 tryngton better chosen.

the book of p
 the pynne
 the book.

And upon the eighth daye of Juny beeyng then Cryste sondaye, dyed that noble and famous mane pynce Edward, within the kyng his paleis of Wyndysore, and after w greute solempnyte conuighed to Canter-
 bury, and there honourably buried. After whose deth, the kyng contrary his promysse befoze made, called to hym again all suche persones as he tofoze for his honoure and profite of his realme auoyded out of his courtte, and admitted them again to the same offices that thei befoze oc-
 cupied. By the meanes of whom the foresaid speaker of the parliamente M. Pyers Delamere, was in suche wyse complayned vpon to the kyng

he was thowen into pynson, where he laye many yeres after.

Then kyng Edward created Ry-
 chard sone of pynce Edward pynce of Wales, & gaue vnto hym pcedys of Chester and Cornewall. And also for the kyng waied seble and shelyp, he then betoke the rule of the lande vnto M. John of Gaunt duke of La-
 castre, and ordeined hym as gouer-
 nouer of the lande. whiche so conty-
 nued durynge his fathers life.

In this yere also the tenauntes of menyall seruauntes of p rle of war-
 wick made a ryot vpo the monkes of Cuyshin, & slewe and hurte many of the abbottes tenauntes, and spoled and brake his closures & warrynes, and shewed their pondes & waters, & did vnto them many displeasures, to the better rayne of that monestery, ne had the kyng the sone sente downe to the rle his letters, charging hym to seale and with drawe his menne frome that ryot. whiche afterward was pacified, without any notary punishment of suche psones as were beginners o; epecutors of that ryot.

Anno domini. MCCC. xxi.

Indyolwe Pykman.

Archolag Bembze.

Archolag Cwysode.

Anno domini. MCCC. xxii.

Anno. lli.

the book of p



And in this. lli. yere and .xii. daye of the moneth of April, M. John Wyndesore the knight, for cer-
 tayne treisous, of the whiche he was conuict befoze p maye and other iustices of p kyng in Cuyld halle, was this foresaid daye at tyborne putte in execution, that is to meane, hanged, hewed, and

quartered, and his hed sette after by on London bywge. The cause of whose deth was, for so muche as he beeyng putte in trust by the kyng, re-
 ceaued greute summes of money to paye with the kyng his soulpours, the whiche he kepte to his owne use, and decaued the kyng and his soulpours. And when therof he was to the kyng accused, he feryng punish-
 ment, fledde into France, and there conspired newly again his naturall pynce

prince, and so lastly was taken and receiued his merite.

In this yere also beganne a wonderfull epine in the church of Rome. For after the deith of the .x. Gregore, was chosen twoo bishopes of Rome. Wherof the first was named the .vi. Urban, & that other the seventh Clement, & firste an Italian boine, and that other a frenche manne. Of the whiche ensued suche dyscorde in election of the bishop of Rome, that by & terne of .xxx. yere after, ther was euer twoo bishopes of Rome in suche auctoritee, that harde and doughtfull it was to knowe, whether was indubitat bishop of Rome.

The deith
of kynge
Edward.

And vpon the .xxii. daye of the moneth of Juny, dyed at his manour of Shene now called Rychemond, kynge Edward & thyr of & name, when he had reigned .li. yeres & .v. monethes and odde dayes, leuyng after hym .iiii. sonnes, that is to late Leonell duke of Clarence, John of Saint duke of Lancastre, Edmund of Lyle duke of Yorke, and Thomas of Woodstok erle of Cambridg, Of & which sonnes with other nobles of his realme, he was honourably conueighed frome his said manour of Shene vnto the monestery of westmynster, and there solemnely entered within the chapell of saynt Edward vpon the south syde of & chynne with this Epitaphy or superescricion in a table hangyng vpon his tombe

*Hic decus Anglorum, flos regum preteritorum,
Forma futurorum, rex clement, pax popularum
Tereius Edwardus regni complens iubilum,
Inuictus parus, pollens bellis Machabens.*

The whiche is thus to be vnderstand in our mother toung as folowynge.

Of Englyshe kynge, here lieth the beaute-

uous flower,
Of all bestes passed, & murther to the shell
A marshall kynge, of peace conseruator,
The .iii. Edward. The deith of whiche maye trau
All Englyshmenne, for by his knyghthod lye,
Was lured murther, and by fente & perle
To moethy & wretched in better percell.



Philippe de Valois
erle of Valois, & sonne of Charles de Valois brother vnto & .iiii. Philip was admitted for protectoure of the realme of Fraunce, in the begynnyng of the moneth of february. And vpon Trynite sonday next ensuyng, he with his wife were crowned at Raynes, in the yere of our lord god a. M. CCC. xxviii. and the seconde yere of kynge Edward the thyr then being in possession of the crowne of Englad. Betwene this Philip & the sayd Edward kynge of England as some deale before in the story, & .iiii. yere of Charles & fyfth is towched, great disputacions and argumetes arose betwene their counsailes, for & right & title to the crowne of Fraunce. For it was thought by & counsaill of Englad for so muche as Edward was colyn to Philip le Beave, and sonne of the said doughter, whiche had no mo chyldre but Edwardes mother, that he should rather bee kynge of Fraunce the Philip de Valois, that was but colyn germaine to Philip le Beave, and sonne of his brother Charles. Of whiche dispicions and argumetes the synall conclusion was, that for an olde decre and lawe by auctoryte of parlyament long before made was enacted, that no woman should inheryte the crowne of Fraunce, therefore the title of Edward by might of the frenche menne was putte by, and this

Philip de
Valois.

this Philip admitted to the gouernance of the same. After whiche discrecion thus taken, and specially by the meanes of sir Robet erle of Artoys, this Philip anon was proclaimed regent of Fraunce, vnto suche tyme as the quene wife of Charles the .v. whiche then was with childe were deliuered, & so receiued the rule of the lande as regēt. In tyme wherof, Peter Kemp principall tresorer of kyng Charles laste ded, whiche Peter (spurning the said Charles) was accused of myspryng of the kyng his tresours, and encrechyng of hym selfe contrary to right and reason, so that his goodes shoulde be esteemed at .liti C. M. li. after Paris money, wherof the value is sette out in dyuerse places befoze in this werke was taken out of prison and arreigned at Paris and there couerte and adiudged, and vpon the .xxiii. dawe of Marche dyawen thorough þe citee, and hanged vpon þe common gibet at Paris. And vpon the first dawe of Apryll folowynge the olde quene and wife of Charles last kyng, was lighted of chylde and brought forth a doughter at Bois in Vincē, whiche after was named Blaunche. Wherfoze, where befoze the said Philip de Valoys ruled befoze but as regēt, now he was allowed and taken for kyng, and crowned as befoze is saied at þe citee of Raynes, w the quene his wif vpon Trinite sondaye. And when the solempnite of his coronacion was ended, he then assembled befoze hym and his counsaill Leups the erle of Flaundres, & receiued of hym homage for the said erledom. And that dooen, he besought þe kyng of ayde to oppresse certain townes of his couēte whiche rebelled again hym. Wherunto the kyng graunted, and by counsaill and

exhortaciō of sir Gaaltier or Walter de Crey then counstable of fraunce the kyng sent oute his commissioners, charging his lordes w theire assignes & souldoyours, to mete w hym in dyffessible arrape at þe citee of Arras by mary Magdelein day next ensuynge.

At whiche dawe, the kyng with his lordes and people ther metynge, toke forwarde vpo his tourney, and sped hym toward Cassle a towne of Flaunders. Where within litle space of the towne he pight his pavillions & tentes, and waiked and pylled the countre thet aboute. But the Flemyngees keepynge within the said towne, sered nothyng the frenche kyng, but in dysuis of hym and of his lordes, thet caused a red coke to bee paynted vpon a white cloth, & wrote in great letters in þe said cloth this ryme folowynge, & hanged it out ouer the walles.

Quant ce quocier chantera.

Le roy trone ca entrera.

Whiche is thus to meane in our bulgare speche.

When this coke lo here dooth syng,
Then shall this sonde kyng his host
in byng.



Ne this was redde of the frenche menne, & report was made ther of vnto the kyng, he was therewith sore amoued, and specially for that that thei named hym the fouiden kyng. Therfoze thei assailed the strongly vpon all partyes. But thei of þe towne defended theim manfully so þe their enemies had of theim none aduantage. Then the kyng sent sir Robert de Flaundres a knight of the erles, w certain souldoyours, comaūdyng hym to assaile the Flemyngees toward saint Omers. And the erle he monished,

Philip de
Valois cro
wned kyng
of fraunce.

monished, & he wth his people should assaile the towarde the Isle. Then & commons of Bruges, Ipze, of Turney, of Journeys, and of all Cassle, assembled them, and provided that a certain of them should kepe the mount of Cassle, & another compaignie should kepe & countree toward Courney, and the thyrd hoste should fortifie the countree towarde & Isle.

The whiche people ordered every hoste his lymyt to hym assigned, and dayly skirmished with the frenche menne, so that betwene them, menne were slain vpon bothe parties. Whe the kyng had thus lpen befoze the towne a certain season, & Flemynges not feryng their enemyes, issued out of the towne, and pight their tentes vpon the mounte of Cassle, and thewed them boldly vnto their enemyes. The kyng Philip seing & boldnesse of & Flemynges, and howe lytle they fered hym, toke counsaill of his lordes howe he might cause them to descend the hylle, for so long as they kepe the hylle it was ioperdous and perelous to slye toward them. Last ly it was agreed by & kyng and his lordes, that sir Robert de Flaundres with other, should assaile an hold o^r towne there by, called Terroner de Burgner by meane wherof, & kyng thought & they wold descende & moost, to rescue the said towne. Whiche accordyng to the kyng his minde was dooen, & a bulwerke sette vpo a tyze. But the kyng had neuer the rather his entent, for they kepte them and their gates in so sure wyse, that the frenche kyng for all his great power might to them dooe no leath. In so muche & the kyng consydering their strength, was cōdescended to famishe them by hunger, that they might not wyn by strength, and for that toke the

lesse watche o^r regarde to his people but suffered them to play & dispozte them out of their barnes, eche of them in others tente, thinking hym sure of his enemyes, for any assaile o^r warre by them to bee procured o^r attempted again hym o^r his lordes.

But whether it were that his enemyes of this were warned, o^r that of their owne courage and pryde they would assaile the frenche hoste, vpo the .xliiii. daye of August toward & night, the said hoste of Flemynges assailed & mount in as secreete wyse as meane of warre myght, and dyewe them towarde the frenche menne, whiche then were vnarmed and in their dispoztes of dysyng and playng at the chesse and other games.

Vpo whome the Flemynges came so sodainly, that they slewe many of their enemyes, and forced many to fley towarde saynt Omers for their saue garde. And so the Flemynges helde on their waye tyll they came nere vnto the kyng his tent, whiche then was also vnarmed. But by the noyse & crye he beyng warned, in all hast armed hym. In & whiche season as god would for the frenche hoste, certain Marchalls of the frenche hoste with a strong cōpaignie, retourned frome & assaile of an holde there by, and encountred the Flemynges, & helde with them bataill, whyle the kyng & his lordes made them redy. So that in proccesse the Flemynges were closed with their enemyes and had a sharpe & cruell fighte, wherein they defended them vngozously.

But in the ende the losse of & selde tourned vpo the Flemynges, so that the capitayne named Raunquin was slain, wth many other to the nombze of xliiii. M. and aboue as witnesseth & frenche booke, ouer many whiche were there

there taken prysoners of pooze me & artifycers, for the multitude of the geylmen were vpon þe erles partpe.

After whiche victorie thus opteyned by the kyng, anon he caused þe sayde towne of Cassell to be set vpon a fyre, & after yode vnto Bruges & had it yolden vnto hym. And in lyke wyse was Ippe, Doperynge, Fourmays, Tournaye, Terrouer & many oþer good towne yolden vnto him. Amonge the which Gaüt is not named. Wherefore it is to deme, that it was none of those townes þat at thys season rebelled. The in thys proces folowynge, the kyng had the rule of the whole erledome of Flaunders, & deliuered the possession therof vnto Lowys the foresayd erle of that countre, and after retourned into Fraunce wth pompe, leuyng the erle in hys countre of Flaunders. The whyche dyd after so cruell iustyce vpon hys subiectes, that he put to death by dyuerse tourmentes, as takkyng, heddyng & hangynge, in sondry townes & places of his lordshippes, vnder the nobye of .x. .thous. ouer & aboue many and dyuers which wer banysched, some for fewe peres, some for many & some for euermore.

In the secounde yere of this kyng Philip, lyke as befoze is shewed in þe thyrde yere of kyng Edward, the sayde Edward made his homage vnto þe said Philip in þe towne of Amys, for the duchy of Guyon & county of Doytvers. And sone after this Philip sent into Flaunders dyuers byshoppes and other noble men, by whose meanes þe gates of Bruges, of Ippe, of Courtray and of other townes, were abated and throwen downe, for fere lest the said townes wold oft rebel again hym or theyr erle.

In thys yere also sy Robertte de Artops began his plee in parlyament agayne John countesse of Artops, for that erledome, in clapyng the right therof by certain endentures of couenauntes of maryage, betwene sy Philip de Artops his father, & dame Blaunche of Britayne hys mother, which wytynges had ben by longe tyme kept from hym and now newly founden. And for to haue the better expedition in his matter, he brought vnto the kyng, the erle of Alenson, þe duke of Brytayne, with dyuers nobles, the whyche made requeste for hym to the kyng that he might haue iustyce. And with the countesse came the duke of Burgoyne, Lowys erle of Flaunders, and dyuerse other noble men, makynge like request for her and for her ryght. Than sy Robertte shewed forth a wytyng sealed wth the scale of armes of the erle of Artops, conteynyng that when the maryage was solempnyzed of sy Philip de Artops father to the sayd Robert, & of dame Blaunche daughter vnto the duke of Brytayne and mother vnto the sayd Robert, it was accorded that the sayd sy Philip hys father, gaue vnto þe said dame Blaunche and to her heyres, the erledome of Artops. Which wytynges at the instaunce & prayer of the countesse of Artops, were then deliuered into the court to be kept, sayng that the said wytynges were vntrewe & couiterfeted. Upon the which the sayde countesse brought sufficient proufe, þe the sayd wytynges were falsely made and sealed by a gentyl womā, daughter vnto the lord of Wygnon of the castell of Bethune, þe whyche was so lerned in Astronomy þe she toke vnder to shew thiges to come. Wherin somtyme she happed vpon the soth,

but moze oftener she sayled.

By meanes of whiche woman an olde chartre sealed with the seale of the forenamed sy^r Philip was found, the which she craftely toke of, & set it vpon a new wryting made to þe auantage of þe saide sy^r Robert of Artoys & after presented them vnto the sayd sy^r Robert, sayenge þe she had found the in þe towne of Aras. The which he ioyfully receyued, and made hys tittle and clayme vpon thesame. This matter thus hanging befoze the king and hys lordes, in the .iiii. yere of hys reygne in þe cytie of Paris, after due prouise made vpon thesame, the sentence was gyven agayne sy^r Robert of Artoys to hys great dyspleasure. In so muche that he sayd openly, by me he was made a kyng, and by me he shalbe dysmyssed yf I maye. And so; he fered to be caste in prysoun by þe French kyng, he therfore conueyed his horse and goodes secretely vnto Burdeaur vpon Geroûde, and ther toke shyping & so passed into England his sayd horses and treasure & hym selfe yode vnto his cosyn the duke of Brabant. With whome he bode a certayne of tyme, & after passed into Englande, and excepted kyng Edward hougely so; to make warre vpon the French kyng.

In the .iiii. yere of þe reygne of this Philip, the sayd sy^r Robert was proclaimed open enemy to the crown of Fraunce, and hys landes sealed into the French kynges handes, and he banished the lande so; euer, excepte that he within a moneth after Easter next ensuyng, wold come into þe kynges court, & submyt hym holpe vnto the kynges grace. Which sentence passed agayne hym, so; somuche as he appeared not.

In þe .vi. yere of the reygne of this

Philip, the wyfe of sy^r Robert of Artoys, & which was sister vnto kyng Philip, was accused to be a great occasioner of the offence of her husband so; the which she wth her childre was sent into Gastenops & there holden in strait prysoun.

In þe .viii. yere of his reygne, kyng Philip visited diuers parties of his realme, & in þe doyng, visited many places of pylgrimages which befoze he had promised to seche, so; the restitution of helth to his eldest sone John the duke of Normandy, whiche þe yere befoze by meanes of sickenes was in great jeopardy of lyfe, & conuynge the sayd iourney, rode vnto Augnon & visited there þe B. of Rome the byng Benet the .xii. of that name. And when he had sped his nedes wth hym, he yode into the prouince of Merceles so; to se there his nany, and after returned by Burgoyne, where, of the duke he was royally receyued & feasted. In which season of his there taried a complaint was brought befoze him by þe sayd duke, agayne sy^r John de Chalon, so; clayme of certain landes within that duchy. The whiche variaunce to apese, the kyng took therin some pain. But no direccio he myght set therein, so þe sayd duke and sy^r John departed with wordes of defiaunce. And shortly after þe saide sy^r John accompanied with dyuers noble me of Almayn, entred þe duchy of Burgoyne, and therein did muche harme to the countre and people, and gat certain castels, & the fortified wth Almaynes. Than the duke haung in his ayde the kyng of Flaunders the duke of Normandy, with the erle of Escaps & of Flaunders, assieged the castell of Chaup, & at the ende of .vi. weekes wan thesame, and after yode vnto the cytie of Besenon, and layd
siege

siege to it also. But whā he had lven there a lōge season, he was fayne to cōclude a truce, his host was in such distress of bytail. By reason of which peace oꝝ truce the hostes wer deservēd, & the ende of the warre bypartyt. But in the ende folowynge, by meane of the frenche kyng a dyrectiō was takē betwene þ̄ sayd parties. And this yere kyng Philip sent certayne messēgers vnto kyng Edward, vpo certain demaūdes for þ̄ castel of pāntes & other, for the which, cōtrauērsie first begā to kyndle betwene þ̄ sayd ii. princes as in þ̄ .x. yere of Edward is touchēd wth the other yeres folowynge. In the .ix. yere of this Philip, aspered a blasynge sterre. After þ̄ which ensued greate mortalytie within the realme of fraunce, aswel of men as of bestes. And in this yere another mā of þ̄ pꝛouince of Agedok named Arnolde of Normandy, was heded & hāged vpo þ̄ cōmō gybet of Paris, for asmuch as by his meanes it was pꝛoued, þ̄ the Englyshmen had wonne the castel of Baracoll. And in the .x. yere of kyng Philip, kyng Edward of Englad sent by Barnard de Byet into Flaūdyes, for causes touchēd & shewēd in the .xii. yere of the said Edward. And in the .xi. yere of this Philip, kyng Edward sayled into Brabant, & alped hym wth Loys the Emperour. And whyle the frenche kyng tarped wth his hoste at saint Quyn-tyne in Normadys, kyng Edward entred into fraunce, & spoyled & byete a part of Treterre, not without some note oꝝ of Edwardys arrected to the frenche kyng and his host, of his owne subiectes. And in the same yere, beganne the towne of Gaunte to rebell with other townes of Flaūdyes, by the mocion of Jaques de Artyple, as in the .xiii. yere is shewēd

of kyng Edward the thyrde.

In the .xii. yere of this Philip whiche the frenche boke calleth the yere of confusio, kyng Edward beyng retourned into Englande, the frenche kyng assembled a myghty hoste to go agayne the Henaunders, Flemyn- ges, and Bytons, and cam with the sayd hoste vnto Arras, and sente frothens a part of hys people with hys sonne John than duke of Normandy into Henaude, for to warre vpon the countrey there.

Which went streyght vnto Cambraye, & after layd siege to that castel called Esthandune. And wythin .xv. dayes folowynge the frenche kyng his father came vnto the sayd syege wth innumerable people. The whiche castell at thende of a moneth after the kynges commynge was geue by by apoyntement. And þ̄ done the kyng remoued hys siege to a castell of the byshoppe of Cambray named Thune, standynge vpon the ryuer of Aescant, where the kyng laped longe time without harine doyng vnto the sayd castell. At length the duke of Brabant with the erle of Gelle, with a stronge hoolle of dyuers nacion, cam for to remoue that siege, so that the frenche hoste lay vpon that one syde of the ryuer, & the Brabanders vpo that other. But by meane of .iiii. byddes which were made ouer that ryuer, both hostes at sondrye tymes mette & foughte dyuers sharpe battayles, to the losse of people vpon bothe parties. But in the ende the castell was so beten wth gonnes, & the capytayne therof put al hys mouables in a shyp, and after wth such solowpours as were lefte, entred the sayd shyp, & sette the castell vpon a lyght fyre, wherof when the frenche kyng was ware, in all haste he can-

led the walles to be scaled, and so entered & sacked the cite. And the same night the hoste of Brabanders departed also.

Whan the kyng had thus wonne this castell, he than sente the dukes of Normandy & of Burgoyne, vnto a towne named Quenoy. And when the sayd dukes had burnt a part of the towne & other byllages there about thei retourned again vnto the frenche hoste. And shortly after the kyng returned into France, & there made prouision to sende for the hys nauy to mete with kyng Edward, whych were to the nombze of .iiii. hundred or aboue, the whych as in the .xv. yere of Edward the thyrde is before shewed, mette the Englyshe nauy, and there at a place called the Swyn were ouercomen.

After this great victory thus opteyned by the kyng of Englande, the frenche kyng was a great hoste herpynge comfortable tydynge of the discomfiture of syr Robert de Artoys, before the towne of saynte Omers, as before in the .xv. yere of kyng Edward is also shewed sped hym tyll he cam to the prync of saynte Andrey. Where he tarpyng with his people, certain letters were sent to him by kyng Edward, wherof the tenour with the answer of the same, are set out in the foresayde .xv. yere, wth other maters aperteynyng to the actes of both prynces. Whan the peace was concluded betwene the sayd kynges, as in the sayd .xv. yere is declared, the kyng of France returned to his owne. And in the .xiii. yere of his regne, dyed John duke of Britayne. After whose death Charles de Bloys & John de Mountfort, claymed severally to be enherytours of that duchy. Whiche Charles was

sonne vnto the erle of Bloys, & neuerth vnto the frenche kyng, by reason that Margarete hys syster was mother vnto the sayd Charles. The whiche Charles had married the daughter of Guy de Britayne bycount of Lymoges, secōde brother of the forenamed John duke of Britayne. And the said John de Mountfort was the thyrde brother vnto the foresayd John duke of Britayne now ded. So that this questyon of this clayme rested vpon this poynt, whether the daughter of the secōd brother shuld enheryte the duchy or the yōger brother, cōsideryng that John the eldest brother dyed wthout heyre of hys body, and Guy the secōde brother without heyre male, wherfore the thyrde brother John de Mountfort claymed to be duke of Britayne. Whiche case and questio was brought before the frenche kyng & his lordes, & there debated & argued by a lōge season. But in the ende sentence passed again syr John de Mountfort, & Charles de Bloys was put in possession of that duchy by kyng Philip to whome the sayd Charles dyd hys homage for the same.

For this sentence arose moztall warre betwene the sayd syr Charles & syr John. In the whych the .ii. kynges of Englande & France toke partye, so that kyng Edward ayded syr John de Mountfort, & kyng Philip his newwe syr Charles. Than syr John de Mountfort before the sentence gūen, fearpyng the sequell of the same, departed fro the court, and gat hym into a strōge towne of Britayne, & there held hym. Wherof kyng Philip beyng aduertysed, sente syr John his sonne duke of Normandy, & his brother syr Charles erle of Arden, for to warre wth the sayd syr John de Mountfort. The whiche sped them with

Partiality

with a nobye of people into Brytayne
 & besleged a strong castel stadyng in
 an yle by the ryuer of Loper. And af-
 ter the wynging thereof, they yode into
 the cite of Nantes, the which the kyng
 ynnys yelded vnto the without stroke.
 And sone after as testifieth the frenche
 story, vpon certain condicions and con-
 naites, the sayd lord John de Mount-
 fort yelded him vnto the duke of Nor-
 mandy, the which set him vnto the kyng
 his father to Paris, where by the said
 kyng he was imprysoned in the castell
 of Loure. But howe it was by fa-
 uoure or otherwise, he escaped prys-
 oner after ii. yeres prysouner. And after
 some tyme, he was after ii. yeres
 deliuered vpon certain condicions.
 Wherof one was, that he shuld not
 come into Brytayne nor any thing medle
 or haue to do in the countre. But this
 prysouner of lord John de Mountfort
 notwithstanding, the warre was main-
 teyned in Brytayne by the lordes of the
 sayd lord John, & many towncs & ca-
 stels thereof was holden to the vse of the
 sayd lord John, wherof to shewe vnto
 you the circumstance and processe it
 wold aske a long tyme. But the con-
 clusion & fine of this warre shalbe
 shewed in the story of the vi. Charles
 and sonne of kyng Iohn. In the xv.
 yere of this Philip, the erle of Salis-
 bury accompanied with lord Robert of
 Artoys & other noble men, entred Bry-
 tayne, & ayded the frenches of lord Iohn
 de Mountfort, in doyng greates do-
 mage to the countre, & spent muche of
 the frenche kynges nauy. In assay-
 lyng wherof, lord Robert of Artoys
 was wounded in the thigh with a
 gunne, wherupon he laye sicke, & vpon
 that ensued a flux, & so thereof dyed, &
 after couerped into Englaunde, & there
 buryed. And sone after kyng Ed-
 ward entred France into a stronge ar-

mye. But a peace was affermed him &
 the frenche kyng condescended for a
 certayne tyme by labour of two car-
 dynales, as before in the xvi. yere of
 kyng Edward is declared, & in this
 yere kyng Philip agreed a tace of
 his people called a Gabel in France.
 This was prouyded, that no subject of
 the kynges nor other within his lorde-
 shuld paye any salt but of the kyng &
 at his price. And ouer the he agreed &
 loosed the copes and monneys of his
 lande, to the great auantage of hym
 selfe, and empouerishyng of his said
 subjectes by meane wherof he fell in
 great hatred of his people.

In the xvi. yere of his regne, a
 great discorde growe amonge the no-
 bles of Normandy, by reaso of parties
 takyng, some to John of Harecourt
 and other with lord Robert Barthe-
 lmy then Marshall of France, for coue-
 naites of maryage apolsted betwene
 the sonne of the said lord Robert vpon
 that one partie, & the daughter of lord
 Roger Bac, whose wyfe or maydes
 mother was than maryed vnto lord
 Godfrey de Harecourt, brother of the
 aboue sayd lord John, vpon the other
 partie. For variatice wherof greates
 warre was lykely to haue ensued, yf
 the kyng the soner had not set strykt
 comaundement, that either partie shulde
 kepe his peace, & to appeare before
 hym & his lordes at Paris, & there
 to haue their grevance by hym & his
 lordes determyned. At whiche daye
 of apparance, the sayd lord Godfrey
 appeared not, nor none for hym, but
 contrary the kynges comaundement, as-
 sieged lord Wyllyam Berthyan bishop
 of Bayn & brother to the foresaid lord
 Robert than being in a castell. And
 whan he saw he might not preyuaile
 agayne hym, he than dyde vnto the
 Englyshmen & ayded the against the

the tace called
 in frenche a
 Gabel.

The death of
 lord Robert of
 Artoys.

French kyng.

In this yere also kyng Phillip entredynge to releue the douthte of Burgoyne with whete whiche there than was scat, ordeyned that certain quarters of whete shuld be gathered in the countrees of Ceteronex, of Olenunet & Gassenops, & so sente into Burgoyne. But þe studautes of Olenunce with the burgeses & commons of the cytie toke therewith such grete that of one mynde they went downe vnto the riuier of Loper, where at þe season certayn shippes laye streight wyth bitayll to be had vnto the sayd countree, & there fet out the grayen, & spoyled it in suche wyse, that muche therof came neuer to good. And that done, many of that company beyng neddy and poore, rode vnto byllages there by, and robbed þe people, & dyd much harme. When þe prouost of ruler of Olenunce behelde thys rage & eyot of the people, and consyded the myltitude of theyn, he forbare for a tyme till they were somdele asswaged. And then wyth suche company as he had of his offycers and other, he toke a certayne of theim, and put theym in sondrye prysons, till he knewe farther of the kynges pleasur. But it was not longe after that the other of that assynpte, heryng of the enprysonment of theyr felowes, assbled theym of newe, and lyke woode men rane vnto the prysons, and not alonely deliuered their felowes, but also many other which laye there for great causes & crymes, & some suche as wer cōdemned to death for their transgressions. When noticiō of this great outrage and eyot came vnto þe kyng, anon he set thither. ii. knyghtes of his court with a puyssant army, chargyng them to take all suche as were occasioners and begynners

of thys riot, and as many as were fōde culpable to be put vnto death. The which knyghtes accordyng to theyr commission with aide of þe prouost of Olenunce, toke suche as were dempte gylte of thys cryme, & hāged them vpon the comunō gybet of galous of the cytie, amonge the whiche were dyuers clerkes, and one a deacon & within ordres. And in the same yere and moneth of August, a noble knyght of Byrtayne called syr Olyuer de Clycon, for treason þe he had cōspyred agayne kyng Philip, or for he had fauoured kyng Edwardes partie, was take by a trayne at a iustices of tournamēt holden for þe same cause at Paris, & shortly after iudged to death, as first drawe throughe the cytie vnto the place of iudgemēt & thereupon a scaffold purposely ordeyned was heheded, and after hys body with chaynes hāged vpon the gybet, & hys hed standyng there ouer vpo a stake, or after another autour had vnto þe citie of Auntes in Byrtayne, & there pight vpon a gate of þe cytye. And in the same moneth syr Godfrey de Harcourt, whiche as before is saied, alped him with kyng Edward, & wold not appeare after certayne sommons, was now opely banyshe as traytour & enemye to þe crowne of Fraunce. And in the same moneth was syr John de Moutfort deliuered out of pryson, vpon suche condicions as before is rehered in þe xiii. yere of this kyng. And sone after were putte vnto death at Paris, syr John de Walestreet, syr Godfrey de Walestreet þe father & the sonne, syr John de Moutalbone, syr William de Bruys, syr John de Cablat, & syr John de Walestreet knyghtes, & esquires, John de Walestreet neuch to þe forsaide knyghtes, Guyllam de Bruys.

Robert

Robert de Bloys, Thon de Senne, and Daup de Senne. And shortly after at Paris were putte in execution thye Roman knightes, for assistance of fauour, whiche they had borne toward sir Godfrey de Harcourt & their heddys sent vnto saint Loup in Constantyne a cite of Romania. Whiche said knightes were called sir willis Baro, sir Roulad de la Roche tessone, & sye Richard de Percy.



At the xxiii. yere of this Philip one maister Henry de Malescrete clerk he and deaco, and brother to the aboue named sye Godfrey before putte in execution whiche said maister Henry was maister of the requestes with kyng Philip, for so muche as he after the deith of his said brother, rode vnto kyng Edward and counsailed hym again kyng Philip, and alther by assignement of kyng Edward was sette in greete auctorite within the towne of Hannys in byrtayne, whiche towne was after gotten by the frenchemene and he therein as one of the chief capitaines of the same taken was imprisoned within the castell of Paris. Out of the whiche at this season he was taken thens, and sette in a tumbrell and therunto fastened with chaines of yron, and so coueighed bareheaded with dyne & crye thozugh the hygh stretes of Paris, till he came vnto the bishoppes palais, and there deliuered vnto the bishop. And sonne after by vertue of a comission purchaced by kyng Philip of the bishop of Rome to haue the said maister Henry disgraced, he was depriued of all degrees and ordres of the churche, and then deliuered vnto the executioners. The whiche by thye dayes contynual a-

certain season of the daye, sette hym vpon a ladder in the sight of all people, to the intent that every manne and childe myght thowse at hym all fylth and rebour of the strete, & whiche was dooen without all compassiō and pite, in so cruell wyse, that by the thye dayes ende he was ded, and after buried vntoermently.

In the said seuenthen yere of kyng Philip also, as before is shewed in the nienten yere of kyng Edward the thyrde, Jaques de Arreuele, whiche was especiall promoter of the said kyng Edward his causes, came vnto the towne of Gaunt, and shewed vnto them dyuerse apoyntementes to bee hold betwene them and other townes of flandres. Where vpon the .xv. daye of July, by dyuers conspiratours of the said towne of Gaunt, he was pursued frome one hous to an other, and lastly slaine and murdered by them to the kynges of Englande greete dyspleasure and hurte. Wherefore the said kyng Edward was faine to retourne into Englande without speede of his purpose, lyke as before in the said .xii. yere of his reigne is declared. In this yere also and the monethe of Decembre, died sir John erle of Mountfort, whiche as before is said claimed the duchy of Byrtain, and left after hym a soonne named also sir John and erle of Mountfort, & whiche in like wyse claimed the said duchy of Byrtayne, and maintained the warre agayne sye Charles de Bloys, as his father before had dooen. In the .xxiii. yere of kyng Philip & firste daye of July at Paris was then putte to deith by cruell execution, a citizen of Copeyn named Symonde Poylet, a manne of greete riches. The whiche for he had said in open audience, that the

Jaques de Arreuele murdered.

ryght

right of the crowne of Fraunce belonged moze rightfully vnto kyng Edward the to kyng Philip, he was firste hanged vpon a tree like as an ore is hanged in the bocherp, & there dismembred, as firste the armes, and after the legges cut frome his body, and lastly his hed stricken of, and the trunke of his body hanged by chaynes vpon the comon gybet of Paris. And vnto a later daye beinge .xxviii. yere of kyng Philip, was foughten at Cressy the bataill before expressed in the .xxi. yere of kyng Edward the thyrde, where the floure of chivalry of Fraunce was slain and taken prisoners. Then soone after kyng Philip for defence of the charge of his warres, asked a subsidie of the monkes of saint Denys. And among certain iewelless of that place to bee had he demaunded the great crucifye of gold standyng ouer the high aulter of the monastery. Wherunto the monkes answered that they might not departe with that crucifye, for Eugenius the thyrde of that name bishop of Rome, accursed all them that layed any hande vpon that crucifye, to the entent to remoue it frome that place as it appereth by wytyng sette vnder the fote of the crosse, by whiche answer the kyng was pacified. And in the moneth of Decembre, for Godfrey de Harecourte whiche a towell duble folden about his necke, came vnto the presence of kyng Philip, & yelded hym holy vnto his mercy & grace, the whiche graunted vnto hym his pardon.

And in shortlye whyle after, all the Lombards vsurers within the realme of Fraunce, were taken and sente to vyuers prisons. And all suche persons as stode bounde vnto them, for any bargayne or lone of money by waie of vsury, it was ordeined that

the said persones beinge debtours to the said vsurers should paye the pryncypall debte vnto the kyng at their dayes of payment, and the rest due whiche remaineth to the vsurer for his lucre or gayne for the lone of his money, shoulde bee pardoned to the debtoure. And after the said Lombards vsurers were deliuered fro prison, by payyng of great and greuous synaunce.

In the .xix. yere of this Philippe, for so muche as witnesseth the French cronicle, that the Flemynghes by great manacles and perforce, had constrained their erle to bee assured by bond of assuraunce vnto the daughter of kyng Edward, contrary his volunte and will, the said erle not wyllyng to accomplyshe that mariage, in the Easter weke by a cautele departed out of Flaundres, and came to the French kyng to Paris, of whiche he was honourably and iopoulyly receiued.

And in the same yere, one named Galwyn de Belemount an aduocate of the spirituall lawe, entending to betray the citee of Laon, acquainted hym with a poore manne then dwelling in the citee of Meaus named Colin Temeltn, the whiche before tyme was fled the citee of Laon, & was there for lacke of substance comyn to Meaus & there maintained a poore life, to the whiche this Galwyn resorted & resorted. And lastly when he thoughte he was somele of hym assured, he brake vnto hym his mynde, & said if he would be ruled by hym, he would restore hym to his former prosperite & welth, wherunto this Coliner granted. The anone this Galwyn shewed hym a lettre, & wylled hym to bere it vnto the kyng of Englands, whiche certain reward to hym geuyng, and also promysyng

The answer
of the monkes
to kyng Philip
demaund-
yng a crosse
of golde that
was in the
monastery.

The seventh parte.

249.

mysyng of muche moze, with that he retourned to hym shortly to the cite of Raynes with aunswere of the same. When this pooze & indygent manne had receiued this lettre, he cast many perelles in his mynde. How dee it finally contrary his othe and promise he toke his waye toward the French kyng, and presented hym in the lettre in the whiche was expessed all the manner & ordre how the said citee of Laon should bee betrayed. When the kyng was aduertised of all the circumstance of this treaso, he enfourmed this Colyner how he should behaue hym self in beryng of his aunswere, and prouided his tyme accordyng as though he had been in Englande and by conuenient dape came vnto hym to Raynes accordyng to the former appointment. In whiche season the kyng had sent in secreete maner vnto the prouoste of Raynes, the so sooden as the said Colyner had shewed to the said Gawyn his aunswere, that the said Gawyn should bee attached & had vnto prison, the whiche was accordyngly executed. And in short processe folowynge for so muche as he was in ordres, he was by the prouost sent vnto the citee of Laon, and ther putte to the bishoppes prison. But when the commons of the said citee harde of suche a manne there beryng prysoner, that would haue be traied their citee, they assembled them in great multitude, and would haue broken the prison to the ende to haue slaine hym. But they were so paciently aunswered by the bishoppes officers, that they retourned vnto their houses. Upon the morow folowynge, to cease the rumour of the people, he was brought vnto his iudgement, & there condemned vnto perpetual prison. And moze thereto was added, that for his moze diffamy and

shame, he should bee sette in a tabzell by on high barched, that of al people he might bee seen, and so in most shamefull instrumentes lad through the high stretes of the citee, & brought agayn vnto the bishoppes prison, and there to remaine for terme of life. But he was not ferre in suche maner constrained by the officers fro the gaole, but the commons fill vnto hym with crye, and callynge of myre and stones, that or he were half waye lad of his cyrcuite or progresse, he was stoned to deth, and after his body buried in a maris nere vnto the said citee.

And shortly after at Paris was dooen to cruell dethe a citezen of the said citee, whiche entended to haue betrayed the said citee of Paris. For the whiche treason he was first dismembred of legges & armes, & after hanged by the necke vnto the gibet of Paris.

In the same yere about the feast of saint John Baptist, the Englyshe menne that had holden the towne & castell called the roch of Ais in Brytany, by the terme of twoo yeres passed, at this season they were besyged and fiercely assauted by the Charles de Bloys and his frendes, in so furious maner that they rent with great ordennance dyuers places of the castell walles, and in processe theye downe the roche of a chaumbye where the wife of the capitain of the castell laye in her childebed, and so ferre put in fere, that the rulers of the towne & castell graunted to deliuer the towne and castell to the said Charles, that they might depart in their lifes and goodes, the whiche offer to his payne and charge he refused. For in short tyme after, the Thomas of Igo an Englyshe knight in a strong compaignie of archers & other soldiers, rescowed the said towne and castell

castell. And after lōg fight and great daunger, as by long proces is declared in the frenche story, the said sy Thomas toke the said Charles de Bloys prysoner, and slewe many of his lordes, as beefore is shortly touched in the ende of the. xxi. yere of kyng Edward. After whiche victory thus opteined, & his prysoners putte in suer keppng, he toke þ' ordinaunce of the duke left in the felde wth other pyllage, & putte it within the towne and castell aforesaid. And for the villages and menne of þ' countree there about, had ayde the duke again the towne and the castell, therfore þ' said sy Thomas punished the said villages & ruralles by grevous fynes, & helde them in great seruitude and daunger, and ouer that slewe many of the, & many thei held as byudges & captiues. And thus dooen the Englishemene repayred again the walles and suche other places as were beefore tyme betten downe by force of the said siege and strengthened it in their best maner.

It was not long after that kyng Phylipp at þ' requeste of the countree sent thither the lord of Caron with a stronge army, to whō also great multitudine of the people of þ' countree resorted. With whole aydes the said lord assailed þ' said towne & castell by.ii. dayes continuall. But the Englishemene defended the self vigorously, & therto wth þ' their enemies hote boylng oyles & other gressis, with fire coles and hote asshes, wherewith they greued their enemies painfully.

Thus continuing the siege, meannes of a treaty were offered & condescended to yeld the towne, wth condicions þ' thei might saufely depart wth their

liues & goodes, but the Frenchemene and Byptons would not to it bee agreeable. Then the assaute bee ganne of new. And the lord Caron to encourage his souldoyours, heng a purse and therein .l. scutes of golde vpon a spetes ende, and cryed with a loude voyce, þ' who þ' first entred the towne should haue þ' said. l. scutes, of gold. Whē the ianuyes o^r souldoyours of the citee of Jeane and of the citee of Italpe, hard the promise of their cheuitaine, a certaine of theim with lōg pyrcarres & sharpe approached theim vnto þ' walles, & so demeaned theim þ' in lesse then. b. houres thei minded so the wall, that there fell therof as testifeth the said frenche cronycle the lengthe of ffty fote. By reason whereof entred fyrst the Januyes, and after the hole hoste. The whiche with out compassyon o^r p^{te} slewe manne, womā, and chylde þ' came in their waye, not sparing the chyldezen that souked wth the mothers brestes & spoled & robbed the towne, euery māne gettyng what he might to his owne aduantage. And when the Frenchemene and Byptons had thus miserably slain the Englishemene, and also Byptons & other inhabytantes of the towne, thei then assailed the castell to the whiche was fled wth. ii. C. and. xl. Englyshme. After diuers assautes it was offered by the souldoyours of þ' castell, þ' thei would yeld the castell their liues and goodes sauid. And finally it was agreed, their bodies onely to depart, & to be conueied x. miles wth their waye toward such place as thei would appoint. Wth þ' whiche appoynement. ii. knyghtes Byptons þ' is to late sir Willmet de la Fulle & sir Willm de Stratton receiued theim in their cotes, & conueighed the with great paine & not without losse of

Crucif. lvi
Anit. v. m.
c. lxxv.

The seventh parte.

292

of some. For their enemies of þe hoste cast stones at theim, & bete theim so. And their slaues, that dyuers of theim dyed, & the remenaunt were brought nere vnto the castell then in þe power of Englyshemene, named Quintine.

But whē the comons of the towne there nere, hard of the commyng of suche Englyshemene vnder safe cōduyt, the whiche befoze in the bataill of the roche of Arian where sir Charles de Bloys was taken, had slayne their lord, that is to meane the lord of Mupntyne, anone thei issued oute of the towne, and for thei sonde lytle resystaunce of their guydes, thei slew theim there except one, whiche was capitayne of the Englyshemene, whiche one of þe said knyghtes caused to bee sette vpon his horse, & so fled fro the perill. And when the cruell Byrons had thus shamefully slain the Englyshemē, thei gathered þe cariens vpo an hepe, & suffered theim there so to lye, to thende þe beastes and foules might deuoure theim. And in shortlye tyme after, the erle of Flaundres by meanes of the frenche kyng left the daughter of kyng Edward, and was married vnto the daughter of the duke of Brabant.

In þe .xx. yere of Philip, the towne of Calais was gotten, like as the circumstance therof is declared in the .xxi. yere of kyng Edward the thyrde. And in the same yere the mortallite of spenes, whiche after reigned in Englande reygned nowe feruently in Fraunce, and mooste specially in the citee of Quinion, by force wherof the thyrde part of the people of the citee dyed. And fro this it came vnto saint Denys, & so vnto Paris. In whiche coost it was so feruent, þe there dyed in those .ii. townes ouer þe nobye of .lvi. .xx. within þe space of .xviii. monethes.

And in this yere the doulphine of Vien named sye Pimberte, solde his dolfynage vnto the frenche kyng and became a freere at Lyō vpon the roine of the ordye of the freere prechours of blacke freers.

In the .xxi. yere of this Philippe, Charles the first begotten soonne of John duke of Normandy eldest sone of this Philip, toke possession of the said dolfynage of Vien. And in the moneth of August solowynge, dyed the duchesse of Normandy and mother of the said Charles. And in the moneth of Decembre solowynge, dyed dame Jane quene of Fraunce and daughter of Robert duke of Burgoyne. And in this yere was the treason wrought by sir Godfrey de Charney, to haue again wonne þe towne of Calais, like as I to you befoze haue shewed in the .xxiii. yere of kyng Edward the thyrde. And in the moneth of January next ensuyng & .ii. daye of þe same, kyng Philip spoused his second wife Blaunche, somtyme the daughter of þe quene of Flaunde lastely discesed, whiche was sister vnto the erle of Fosse. Whiche espousalles were secretly dooen in þe mantour of Robert erle of Bray. And so the said kyng Philip was wyddowe from the .xii. daye of Decembre to the .ii. daye of January, whiche was by the space of .xxviii. dayes. And vpon the .ii. daye of the moneth of February, John duke of Normandy eldest soone of this Philip, spoused his seconde wife Johāne Contesse of Bologne, at a towne called Mirtaux next vnto Meulene. And so he mourned for his wife whiche was named þe good Duchesse of Normandy, by the terme of .vi. monethes & .ii. dayes lacking.

In the twoo and twenty yere of kyng Philip and moneth of July,

¶

John kyng of Fraunce:

In the .xxii. yere of kyng Philip & moneth of Iulye, sy Thomas de Argozme befoynamed, was by chaunce medly slayne of a Bytō knight called sy Raufe de Cuours. And vpon the .xxiii. daye of August folowynge, dyed sy Philip de Valoys kyng of Fraunce, whā he had reygued ouer þ Frenchmen in great vexaciō & trouble by the space of .xxii. yere lackynge .v. monethes & odde dayes, and was after enterred at saint Denys by his fyrst wyfe, and left after hym John Duke of Normandy for his heyre.

Of kyng John.

John kyng of
Fraunce.

In the fyrst of þ name and sonne of Philip de Valoys, begā to reygne ouer the Frenchmen, in the moneth of August & yere of our Lord. M. ccc. and .l. & the .xxiiii. yere of Edward the .iii. than kyng of Englande, & was crowned at Raynes the .xxvi. daye of September folowynge with dame John his wyfe. In tyme of the which solepnyte kyng John dubbed his eldest sonne dolphyne of Wyen, and Lowys his seconde sonne erle of Mension, knyghtes, with other noble men.

And vpon the .xvi. daye of Nouēbre folowynge, sy Raufe erle of Cwe and cōstable of Guynes whā it was Frenche, the which was newly comen out of Englande where he had ben longe prysoner, was accused of treason, & so commaunded vnto prysoun at Baris. Within which prysoun he was shortly after byheded in þ presence of the duke of Burgoyne and other nobles.

In the thyrde yere of kyng John & viii. day of January, Charles kyng of Hauerne caused to be slayne with in the towne of Bygle in Normandy

sy Charles de Spayne constable of Fraunce. For the which murdye sowed great warre betwene kyng John and the sayde kyng of Hauerne, whych continued many yeres after notwithstanding that the sayd kyng of Hauerne had maryed the daughter of þ sayd kyng John. Thā by mediaciō of frendes, a peace was bypue betwene theyn, so that kyng John shuld geue vnto þ kyng of Hauerne for cōtentacion of certayne summes of money yet owynge vnto hym for the dower of his wyfe, certayne landes within the duchy of Normandy and ouer that the frēche kyng shuld pardone all suche persones as were consentynge to the deth of the constable befoze murdred. After which treaty thus concluded, the kyng of Hauerne vnder assuraunce of hostage came vnto kyng Johns presence at Baris. And after he had taried there a season, he departed with dyspynulacion on eyther partie vled, as after shall appeare.

In the .iiii. yere of kyng John, sy Godfrey de Harecourt, whych wyth his sonne & other had bene consentynge vnto the deth of the constable of Fraunce, were reconcyled agayne to the kyng. The whiche entened hym agayne the kyng of Hauerne by meanes of their sinister report, so that the peace betwene theyn befoze cōcluded, was dysapoynted & broke. And soone vpon thys, sy Robert de Loppse that was chamberlaine vnto kyng John, auoyded the courte for fere, lest the sayde sy Godfrey had shewed of hym any thyng to þ kyng and so yode vnto the kyng of Hauerne in Normandy. After whose cōmynge, the kyng of Hauerne departed shortly thence and sped hym towardes Iynnyon. It was not longe after

The leuenth parte.

257

after that the kyng of Nauerne was departed out of Normandy but that kyng John sped hym thither, & sealed all the landes that & kyng of Nauerne had within that duchye, & put officers and rulers in his castelles and townes such as hym lyked, and discharged the other, excepte. vi. castelles, & is to saie Eurour le Pount Audemer, Chirebourt, Caneray, Turanches and Martaigne, & whiche were holden by the seruauntes of the kyng of Nauerne, and men of Nauerne bozne.

In the moneth of January folowynge, & Robert de Loxye aboue named, vnder safe conduyte came vnto kyng John to Paris, and ther was to hym in proces reconcyled. And in thys pere were the artycles of peace betwene the kynges of Englade & of Fraunce prolonged, tyll the feast of saynt John Baptyst next ensuyng, as befoze in & ende of the. xxviii. pere of kyng Edward is moze at length declared.

In this. v. pere of kyng John and moneth of April, he sent & Charles his sonne dolphyn of Wyenne into Normandy, to aske aide of the Normans agayne the kyng of Nauerne. The whiche graunted vnto hym. iiii. M. men at the charge for. iiii. monethes. And in & moneth of Auguste folowynge, the kyng of Nauerne accompanied with. ii. M. sowdours, came vnto the castell of Constayne, & there tarped with the sayde people. With whose comynge the sowdiours of the forenamed. vi. castelles wer so well comforted, that thei robbed and pylled all the countree about the. And some of & sayd sowdours came vnto a castel of & frech kynges named Conker, & wan it by strength, & after bytayed & mased it in mozte warly

wyse, & vnd many other thynges to & frech kynges great displeasur. The which warre thus cotinuyng, by mediation of freches & kyng of Nauerne rode vnto & dolphyn to a towne called the Vale de Rueyll, where they metynge & cyther to other. Metynge lounge coutenaunce, by & .xxviii. date of Septebre thei together toke their way toward Paris. Where & kyng of Nauerne was brought vnto the frenche kynges presence. Where he excused hym of al trespasses done agayne the kyng syne & tyme of & last accord, besechynge & kyng to be good and gracious lord vnto hym, and he shuld be vnto hym as a sonne ought to be vnto & father, & as a trew man vnto his soueraygne lord. And after the kyng by the meanes of & duke of Athenesse, forgave vnto hym his offences & promysed to stāde his good and gracious lord, & so cyther departed from other in lounge maner.

And soone after kyng John gaue vnto & dolphyn of Wyen & Charles his eldest sonne & duchy of Normandy, for & which he did vnto his father homage, in & house of maister Martyn Chanon of Paris, in the cloyster of the mynster called Notredā. And by autorite of a parlyament holden in the citee of Paris, was graunted vnto kyng John of the thye estates of his realme, & is to meane the spiritualite, the lordes & nobles, & the hedes of rulers of cyties & good townes of his realme, that he shuld haue. lxx. M. mē waged for a pere, for to defed his auncient enemy the kyng of Englade. For purueyance wherof certain persones of the sayd. iiii. estates asssembled shortly after, to prouide for the leuyng of & great summe of money.

After whiche prouysyon of levyng agreed of & concluded by the sayd

pp per-

persones, and commysponers sente out to dyuers costes and good townes for the leuyng of the sayde money, in the towne of Arras fell a dissencion betwene the riche & the pooze of that towne, the pooze sayng that the riche men had layde all the burden vpon the pooze men, & them selfe bare lytell charge or none. For this first began great alteracion of wordes, and after ensued strokes & stripes, so that of the heades and chylf burgeses of the towne were. xviij. mē slayne. And the daye folowynge, they slewe. iiii. mo, & banysshed dyuers that at that tyme were absent & out of the towne. And so the towne of Arras rested as than in the gudyng of the pooze artificers of that towne.



And in the. vi. yere of the regne of kyng John & moneth of Marche, he beyng accompanied wth a secret meyn, before the daye departed fro the towne of Gauple, & rode streyght, he & his lordes beyng armed, vnto the castel of Roan, & entred sodainly into thesame. Where he fande in the chiefe hall of the castel, sy^r Charles his eldest sone duke of Normandy, Charles kyng of Hauerne, sy^r John erle of Harecourt, the lordes of Breau and of Grauple, & the lordes of Cleremount, sy^r Louys & sy^r Gylliam de Harecourt brethre of the foresayd erle, sy^r Frpquet de Frpquante, the lordes of Cournebu, sy^r Hanbuc de Hainel mares, with Colinet Doubliet and John de Dountalu esquires.

The whiche lordes and knightes the kyng toke at dyner within the said hall, & them toke sodainly, & diuers of them put vnder sure keepynge. And alsoone as the kyng had there taken

a smal and short repaste, he with his sonnes & other nobles in his company toke thei^r horse & rode into a feild vpon a bakside of the castel, whether shortly after wer brought in bandes the foresayd erle of Harecourt, the lordes of Grauple, & foresayd sy^r Hanbuc, and Colinet Doubliet. Whiche iiii. wer there beheded, and after the bodys of them drawen to the gybet of Roan, & there hanged, and thei^r heddes set ouer them vpon thesame gybet. At the whiche tyme of the execution of hedynge of the sayd. iiii. persones, the frenche kyng as before is sayde was present in proper person. After the whiche execution, the kyng vpon the morowe folowynge deliuered many of the other prysoners, so that there remainned no mo as prysoners but. iiii. that is the kyng of Hauerne sy^r Frpquet de Frpquant, & John de Dountalu, the which were sent vnto Paris. Where the kyng was kepte in the castel of Loure, and the other ii. in the chastelet. In which tyme of his imprisonment, sy^r Philip brother to the kyng, wyth sy^r Godfrey de Harecourt vncle to the erle lately hedded, held certain castelles in Normandy, and came with their powers into the countre of Constantine, and helde it in auge the frenche kynges wyll and pleasure.

In the moneth of Aprill, sy^r Arnolde de Denham than Marshal of Fraunce, rode by the kynges soun vnto Arras, & there without great distourbaunce of the towne, toke vpon an hundred of suche as before had made the former rebellion wythin thesame. And vpon the day folowynge, he caused to bee hedded in the market place vpon. lxx. of thesame, & the remnaunt he sent vnto prysen there to abyde the kynges pleasure.

In

The seventh parte.

259.

In this tyme and season was the noble prince Edward at Burdeaur a warred vpon the frenche kynges landes, like as it is befoze to you shewed in the. xxx. yere of king Edward the thyrde.

And in the. vii. yere of kyng John a begynnyng of thesame, was the batayll of Mopters. In þ which kyng John was taken pryncer of pryncce Edward, & many of his lordes take and slayne, as befoze in the. xxx. yere of the foresayd Edward is declared at length. After the which scomfytur the duke of Normandy which hardly escaped from the sayde batayll, entered the cytie of Paris the. xxi. daye of September, & called there a great counsaill of þ thre estates of þ realme and the. xv. daye of October next ensuyng there to be asssembled. At which daye the sayd duke with the sayd. iii. estates of the realme beyng in þ parliament chauncery, Peter de la Forest archebysshop of Roan and chaunceler of Fraunce, declared there the great mysfortune that to the land was lately fallē, by the takyng of thei her and pryncce, and exhorted theim by a longe oracion to ayde & assiste every man after his power, for the redelyuery of their pryncce agayne.

Wherunto it was answered for þ their clergy or spiritual, by þ mouth of master John de Carone than archebysshop of Baynes, and for the nobles of the Cheualry of Fraunce, by the mouth of syr Philip duke of Orleans and brother vnto kyng John, & for the comons of the good towncs of Fraunce, by the mouthe of Stephen Watel burghers of Paris and pryncer of thesame, that euerye of them shuld helpe to the uttermost of thei powers, & prayed that they myght haue couenient leyser to cou-

sayll and common for pryncion of thesame, the whyche to theim was graunted.

Then the sayd thre estates helde their counsaill at the styer mynours or graye styers in Paris, by þ space of. xv. dayes. In whyche season they appoynted amonge theim to the. no. byr of. l. persones, to take a byrwe & make serche of certayne thynges the mysad and euill guyded within the realme. The whyche. l. persones whē they had appoynted. vi. of them selfe to go vnto the duke, thei in þ names of þ other made request vnto þ duke that he wold kepe secrete such thynges as they intended to shewe vnto him: which request he graunted. Thā they shewed vnto the duke that the realme befozetyne hadde ben mys-guyded by offycers, and excepte that remedye for it were shortlye souden it shulde stande in great parell to be lost. Wherfoze thei besought hym to dyscharge all suche as they woulde name vnto hym, & ouer þ to forsaite thei goodes vnto the kynges ble. And first they named master Peter de la Forest archebysshop of Roan & chaunceler of Fraunce, syr Symonde de Bucy chief counselloure of the kyng and chief counselloure of the parliament, syr Robert de Loxye that befoze tyme was chamberlayne vnto the kyng, syr Nicholas Brike knyghte and master of the kynges paleys, Engueram of the Celer Burlois of Paris and vndre tresourer of Fraunce, John Wyll burlois, also Routraygne master of þ money & master of thaccptes of the kyng, and John Channean de Charters tresourer of the kynges warres. All whiche offycers the sayde persones wolde that they shuld be discharged of all copal offyces for ever. Also the

sayd constituted persones, wold that the kynge of Nauerne were deliuered free fro pypson, also that he hym selfe wolde be cōtented to be aduertysed and counceyled by suche as thei wold appointe vnto hym, that is to saye. iiii. p̄lates. xii. knyghtes, and xii. Burioys.

The whych. xxviii. persons shulde haue autorite to rule and ordeyne al thynges necessarpe for the realme, & to set in and put out all offycers apperteynyng to the realme with dyuerse other requestes which vnto the duke were nothyng agreable. Upon the whiche requestes, the duke gaue aunswer that he wold gladly take opinion of his counseyl, & vpon that shape vnto theim some reasonable answer. But firste he desired of the to knowe what ayde the. iii. estates wold geue vnto hym, for the deliuey of his father. Wherunto it was answered that the clergy had graunted a dyne and a half to bee payed in a yere, with that that thei may haue licence of the B. of Rome, & the lordes as muche to be leued of their landes and the comōs p̄. x. peny of their mouable gooddes. The vpon that moztow folowynge within that palays of Louure, that duke assembled his counsail, & there shewed vnto them the desire & request of the. iii. estates. Wherupon wer made many reasons, and many messages sent betwene the duke and them, to refourme some parte of the sayde articles. But it was fermely answered by theim, that excepte he wold refourme the said defautes, and cōferme hym vnto their myndes for the comō welth of all the lande, thei wolde not alde hym with their gooddes, like as thei had to hym shewed. Wherfore that duke by secrete meanes sent letters vnto his father, shewing

vnto hym the circumstance of al his matter, the whiche wrote vnto hym againe, that in no wyse he shoulde be agreable vnto the sayde requestes. The duke to that ende that he wold not that these maters shuld be touched in the open parlyament, sent for suche persones as wer the chiefe rulers of the sayde. iii. estates, so that to hym came for the clergy the archbishoppes of Raynes and of Lys, and the bishop of Laon, & for the lordes came Sir Watayne de Lucenbourgh, Sir John de Comma's Marshal of Champagne, & Sir John de Dugueny then ruler or gouernour of Actops, & for the comōs Stephan Martell than prouost of the marchautes of Paris Charles Cusake, with other of other good townes.

Then the duke shewed vnto them of certayne newes that he had lately receaued from the kynge his father, and that done he asked their aduices whether it were beste that he shoulde shew their requestes openly in the parlyament chambere, or elles to deferre it for that daye. And lastly, after many reasons made, it was agreed, that it shoulde be deferred tyll the. iiii. daye after, at the whiche. iiii. daye that duke with the other assembled in the parlyamente chambere. At which season the duke saide that he might not entende that day to here and argue the sayd requestes, for certain thynges that he had lately receaued from his father, and from his vncle that Emperour of Almanie, of the which he the shewed some opely, and after dyssolued for that daye the counsail.

In the moneth of Octobere, the. iii. estates of the prouince of Languedoche, by the autorite of the erle of Armenake that lieutenant for that kynge assembled for to make an ayde for that kynge

kynges welpuraunce. And first they agreed to puruey at theyr propre costes. b. C. mē of armes, wyth a seturture to eueryche spere, and ouer that a. M. solowpours on horsbacke, and a. M. of arblasters, wyth. ii. M. of other called gaunspers in frenche, al whiche to be waged for an hole yere. The speres to haue for them a theyr culstrun euery daye halfe a flozeyn, & euery solowpoure and arblaster. viii. flozys for a moneth, and the paunlers after thesame rate.

Also it was forther ordeyned by the sayd thye estates of Lāguedoche, that no man shulde were any fures of any greate pyce, and that women shoulde leue the ryche atyre of their heddes, and were nether perle nor golde upon theym, nor syluer upon there gyrdels, so longe as the kyng remained prysoner. Also, that al manner of mynstrelles for þe season shuld be put to sylence, wyth dyuers other thynges for þe weale of that prouince whiche wolde aske a longe leysoure to wyte.



Don Alsoulen daye of the seconde daye of Nouēbre, the duke of Normādye by the adurce of his counceyll dissolued the counceyll of the thye estates assembled at Darys, and comaunded euery man to retourne vnto hys owne, withoute effecte growyng of their lōge counceyll or assemble. Wherwith many of the sayd persones were greuously myscontent, sayeng amonge the selves that they perceyued well, þe this was done by the duke, to the entent that the requestes by them deuysed shuld not take place, but that the olde misgouernance shulde continue like as it beforesomes had done. Wherfore dyuers of the assembled

after againe at the grave freetes, and there made out dyuers coppes of the sayde requestes, to the ende that euery of them myght beare them into theyr countreys, and there to shewe them vnto the good townes. And all beent that the duke after his counceyll thus dissolued, asked ayde of þe cytee of Darys and other good townes to maynteyn his warres, he was playnely answered that they myghte not ayde him without the sayd thye estates were agayne reasssembled, & that the graunte of the ayde myght passe by their autorite, wherunto the duke in no wyse wolde be agreeable.

In the moneth of Nouēbre afore sayde, sy Robert de Cleremout then lyuetenant for the duke in Normādy, fought wyth sy Phylp brother vnto the kyng of Nauerne, and sy Godfrey de Harecourt, þe which then toke party agayn the frenche kyng for the deth of his neuewe befoze put to deth by kyng John. The whiche knyghtes with other helde the moze parte of the countre of Constantyne within Normādy, maugre the dukes power. In this sayde fyghte the byctoyre tourned vnto the frenche partye, so that the sayde sy Phylp was chased, and sy Godfrey de Harecourt slayne, with. viii. hundreth men of that party. And the fourth day of December folowynge, was the castel de la Dount nere vnto Roan, which by a longe season had ben in the rule of the forenamed sy Phylp, geuen by by appoyntement, the whiche by þe dukes solowpours had ben besyged from the moneth of July to that daye, so that than the heoders of the sayd Castell departed with all theyr goodes, and. vi. thousande frankes, for a reward for the yeldyng by of þe sayd castell. A franke is in value af-

ter sterlyng money. ii. s. o. therupon.

Upon s. x. day of December were proclaymed at Darys certayne copyes and values of money newly ordeyned by the duke and his counceyl. With the whych proclamacyon the comons of the cytie were greuously amoued. And for refozmacyon the prouoste of the marchauntes wth other, rode vpon the seconde day folowynge vnto the castell o. palays of Louure, there to treat with s. Le wys erle of Angeou brother vnto s. duke and his lyutenant whyle the sayde duke was gone vnto the cytye of Meaus, there to speke with Charles of Bohemye o. of Beaume then emperour of Almayne & vncle vnto the sayd duke. Where the sayd prouoste wth the other made requeste vnto the erle, that he wolde cease the vse of that money. And yf not, they wolde so demeane them that it shuld not be suffered to be put forth nor taken within s. citie. Wherup. it was answered by the erle, that he woulde take aduice of his counsayl, & vpon the morowe geue to the an. answer. Upon the daye folowynge, the sayd prouost wth a greate company of s. cytie retourned. At which season the erle in curteyse maner, despyed the to retourne that other daye, for as much as yet he had not sufficiently comonied with his counseyl. Upon the morowe the sayd prouost retourned wth a much greater copany. Wher after longe debatynge of the mater, it was agreed by the sayd erle and prouost and his company, that the money shuld be stopped & not to be put forth, tyl they had further knowlage of the dukes pleasure, for knowlage wherof the erle sent forth messengers in all speddy wyse.

And in thys passetyme, Peter de

la Forest archebyschop of Roan, and chaunceller of Fraunce was made & published a cardynal. And the xxiii. daye of the moneth of January, the duke retourned vnto Darys wth s. sayd cardynall in hys company, the whych for reuerence of the cardynall, was sette into the cytie wth procescion and other ceremounes, as well of the clergy as of the cytyens. The xxvi. day of the moneth of January the prouoste of the marchauntes of Darys wth other of s. cytie, appeared before the dukes counceyll at saynte Germainys. Wher it was despyed of the sayd prouoste, that he shulde suffer the forsayde money to conne and be curraut thozough the cytye. The whiche the sayde prouoste wth hys companye bitterly denyed, and after many greate and bolde wordes, departed from the sayde counseyll in greate pye, and after they retourne vnto the cytye, encensed so the compnality, that they set a parte all werkesmanship and occupacis in shyttyng in theyr shoppes, and dyctoe vnto theym theyr armour and harnesse. Whan the duke was enfourmed of thys murmur of the compnaltie of the cytie, he sente vnto the prouoste commaundyng him stragghely that the kynges peace were kepte within the cytie, and ouer that, that he wth a certeyne of the cytyens shuld appeare before hym in the palayes of Louure vpon the morowe folowynge at an houre assigne. At which houre the sayde prouoste wth hys company came vnto Louure, and so were conueyed into the parlyament chamber, where the duke wth hys counseyll was than present. Than s. duke after certayne chalenges made vnto the prouoste for his obduracy in thys mater, and mysledynge of the comp-

compnaltie of the citee, saide vnto hym, that all bee it that the kyng by his prerogatyue might at his pleasure and for his auantage, make his monneys whē he would, and so to suffer them to bee curraunt thorough his realme: yet for the weale and ease of his subiectes, consydering their manifolde and late charges, he was content that at this season this newe money should bee spared, and that þe iii. estates should bee again assēbled, & that thei should depyue all suche persones then beying offices, as thei should thynke prejudyciall to the realme, and ouer that to ordeyne suche money as might bee benefyciall for the lande. Of all whiche grauntes, þe prouost, to the intent þe he might of authority shewe them vnto the compnaltie of the citee desyred wytyng. The whiche the duke to appease the people, though it were some deale contrary his mynde and pleasure, graunted vnto his request. For the whiche graunt, dyuers of the said officers, as the chaunceller or cardynall and other absented them selfe, and came not in Paris by a tracte of tyme after. The .xxx. daye of January ensuyng, the duke at the requeste of the said prouost, sent certein officers vnto the house of syr Symōde de Bucy and of syr Archolus Drake, and of Enguerrā of the Celer, and of John Wyllle, whiche befoze id other were accused of misgouernaunce of the realme, whose houses were by the said officers kepte, & inventuaries made of suche goodes as then remained within the said houses. And þe dooen the duke sent out commissyoners, þe the thre estates should assemble at Paris the fiftēth daye of february next folowyng, whiche was obserued and kepte. Whē the said thre estates

were again assembled in the parliament chaumbre at Paris, in the presence of the duke and his brethren with dyuers other nobles of France maister Robert Coke bishop of Laod, by the comaundement of þe said duke made a long preposicion of the misguyding of the kyng and the lande by meane of euill officers, as well by chaūging of the money as other many vnfayfull excoyses and taxes, to the greate impoueryshyng of the compnaltie of the realme, great disclaider to the kyng, and to the synful entychyng and auancement of the said officers. Wherfoze the thre estates prayen, and specially the poore commons, that all suche officers may bee remoued from their offices, and other that shall bee thought more benefyciall for þe kyng and his realme, to bee admitted. Of the whiche þe cardynall was noted for principall, and other to the nūmber of .xxi. wherof some were right nere vnto the duke.



After whiche preposicio or oracio thus by the said bishop ended, syr John de Wyggeny in þe name of þe thre estates offered that þe said thre estates should giue vnto þe kyng thyrty thousande menne for an hole yere, id that that all thynges might after that daye bee ordered as the bishop had befoze deuyled. All whiche articles were vnto them by the duke graunted. And incontinctly all suche officers as thei befoze had named, were clerely auoyded, and other such as by þe said iii. estates were thought moste necessary, were putte and chosen to their roumes, except þe some of the olde, as maisters of thaccomptes and

and some of the presydentes and mai-
sters of the requestes, were holden in
for a tyme, to practes and shewe un-
to þe new howe thei shoulde orde and
gude the said offyces.

And the .xxvi. daye of the moneth
of Marche was a newe money pro-
claymed thorough Parys, suche as
the said thre estates had newly deu-
ised. Upō the fyrst daye of Apryll was
proclaymed in Paris, that the people
shoulde not paye suche subydes as þe
thre estates had ordeined for the wa-
gynge of .xxx. M. menne aforesaid, or
for the kyng his synaunce, and also
that the said thre estates after þe daye
shoulde no more assemble for any cau-
ses or matters befoze touched, tyll
thei had farther knowlege of the
kyng his pleasure. For þe whiche pro-
clamaciō, the citezens of Paris were
greuously amoued again the bishop
of Sens, the erle of Cle cousin Ger-
mayne to the kyng, and agayne the
erle Cancaruple. By whose meanes
thei said this proclamacion was put
chalyd. And treuth it is that the said
archebishop of Sens with the said
twoo erles, were sent frome the kyng
frome Burdeaur yet there beeyng,
to the entente that thei shoulde se the
said proclamacyon putte in bye. But
so soone as the said proclamacyon
was made, thei herpyng of the mur-
mour of the people of the citee, sped
them thens shortly after. Then by
on this the commons waxed so wild
that thei left their occupacyons and
drew theim to conuenticles and
compaignies, and had many bysyt-
tyng woordes by the kyng and his
counsail. Wherof in auoydyng of
inconueniency, the duke commaun-
ded a wathe to bee kepte within the
citee bothe by daye & by nyght, and
certain gates of the citee kept shytte

& the remmaunt watched with mēne
of armes. Upon the eyght daye of
Apryll then beeyng Easter eyn, a
nother proclamacion was made all
cōtrary to that other, by vertue wher-
of it was charged, that the foresaid
subydie shoulde bee leuped, and that
also the thre estates shoulde reassem-
ble at Parys the fyfteenth daye after
Easter, and there to procede vpon al
suche maters as befoze were by the
begonne. Upon the fyrte daye of A-
pryll the frenche kyng shpypped at
Burdeaur and so was cōueighed in
to Englade, lyke as befoze is shewed
in þe .xxi. yere of kyng Edward. And
about midsomers folowynge, the duke
of Lancaster, whiche by a long sea-
son had lye befoze a towne of By-
tayne named Rolne, brake by his
syege, takynge of theim of that towne
for a synaunce. l. M. scutis of golde.
A scute is wourth .xl. s. sterlynge. A-
bout the feaste of mary Magdalene
in the moneth of July, controuersy &
baryaunce beganne to arys among
the parsones assygned for the thre
estates. Wherof the cause was, for so
muche as þe sellynge whiche thei had
auewed and sessed the .xxx. M. menne
would not extende vnto the same by
large & great summes. So þe cler-
gy answered þe thei would paye no
more then thei were first sessed vnto.
And in like maner answered such as
were apointed for the lordes & for þe
good towne. Wherfoze þe archebis-
hop of Raynes, whiche befoze was
one of þe chief rulers of them, refused
their party & drew hym all to þe duke.
By meanes of which cōtrouersy, ma-
ny of their actes failed: & suche as be-
foze were putte out of thier offyces,
were agayne restored. About þe middel
of August, þe duke set for the prouost
& Charles Cusake, with John de la
Jue

The seventh parte.

291

Also, the whiche bare the pryncypall rule within the citee, and also were great sayers & doers in the assemblies of the thre estates, and had taken vpon them muche rule in the busynesse, so that muche of þe busynesse was ruled by them and their meanes. To whome the duke gaue straight commaundement, that thei should cease of their auctorities, and not to deale any moze with the rule of the realme but onely to the good rule and gouernance of the citee of Paris. And that dooen the duke rode about vnto dyuers good townes, and made request vnto them for ayde, and also to haue the money to bee curraunt emōg them, whiche as befoze is shewed the .x. daye of Decembre was at Paris proclaimed. But he sped lytle of his purpose.

In this meane while, the citezens of Paris sent vnto the duke so pleasant message, that he retourned again vnto the citee, whome thei receiued with all honoꝝ & reuerence. And vpon the morow after his retourne, the prouost with certain other of the citee, shewed vnto the duke that thei would make a greate myste for hym toward the maintenaunce of his warres. And to bypnyng þe matter to good conclusion, thei besought hym that he would assemble at Paris shortly a certain persones of .xx. or .xxx. good townes there next adioynant. The whiche was vnto them graunted, so that shortly after there assembled at Paris, by .lxx. persones, the whiche helde their counsaill to gyther by sundry dayes. Howbeit in the ende thei shewed vnto þe duke, þe nothyng thei might bypnyng to effecte, without assēble of the .iii. estates, & besoughte hym that thei might bee est reassembled, trustyng that by their presence

the dukes mynde should bee contented and satisfied.

Upon whiche request the duke set his commissyons, charging the said thre estates to apere befoze hym at Paris, the wednesdays nexte folowynge the daye of all saintes. And full fayne he was to dooe all thyng that the citezens of Paris hym requyred to dooe, so; as testifyeth the frenche cronicle, he was so bare of money that he had not suffycient to defende his quodidyan charge.



A .viii. yere of kyng John and wednesdays after Alholowen daye, the .iii. estates reassembled at Paris, & helde their counsaill within the blacke freers. During whiche counsaill þe kyng of Flaundeꝝ þe long had been in pryl within the castell of Alleur, was deliuered by meanes of syꝝ John Byquigny, then gouernour of the countrey of Arthoys, & after conueighed by the said John, vnto the towne of Ampas. Whe the kyng of Flaundeꝝ was thus lette at large, anon by his syꝝster and other of his frendes made meanes vnto the duke of Normandy, au vniite and a peace to bee had betwene them, and by theim a meane was founden, that the kyng whiche were in his copaignie, shoulde come vnder saufe conduyt to Paris to comon with the duke. Whe dyuers of the thre estates, as suche as were of Champain and Burgoyne, knewe of the comyng of þe kyng of Flaundeꝝ vnto Paris, thei wout leue takynge departed. And vnto the euen of saint Andrys the said kyng entred Paris with a greate compaignie of menne of armes. Among the whiche was þe bishop of Paris, with many other of the said citee. Upon the morow folowynge

John kyng of Fraunce.

lowyng the daye of saint Andrey, & kyng entending to shewe his mynd vnto the comynalte of the citee, caused an highe scaffold to bee made by the wall of saint Germaine where he was lodged. Where muche people beyng assēbled, he shewed vnto them a long processe of wrongefull empysonement, and of this misguydyng of the lande by meanes of euill officers, with many couert wooordes to the dishonour of the frenche kyng, and iustifycacion of hym self and excusyng of his owne dedes, and so retourned into his lodgyng.

Vpō the thyrde daye of Decembrye, the prouost with other of & citee rode vnto the duke, and in the names of the good townes or comynalties of the same, required of hym that he would dooe vnto & kyng of Nauerne reason and iustice.

To whome it was answered by the bishop of Laō, & the duke should not allonly shewe vnto the kyng reason and iustyce, but he should also shewe vnto hym frendly bothehode with all grace and courtesy. And all bee it that at that season many of the duke his counsaill were present, to whom the groupug of that aunswere had more conveniently apparteined then to the said bishop, yet thei were at that tyme in suche feare, that thei durste not moue any thyng & should sounde cōtrary the displeasure of the kyng of Nauerne or of the prouost and other. Then it was agreed that vpo the saterdaye folowynge, & kyng and the duke whiche as yet had not spoken together, should mete at the place of the syster of the said kyng. Where thei mette with unfrendely countenance, and after thei had communed there a long seaso, thei departed w litle loue or charite. And vpon

the munday folowynge, were shewed vnto the duke and his counsaill, certayne requestes desired by the kyng of Nauerne, the whiche & duke was fofsed to graūt. Wherof & substāce was, that & kyng should haue again and enioye all suche lādes, castelles, and townes, with all mouables to theim belongynge, as he was in possession of & daye that kyng John was taken within the castell of Roā, and ouer & he would bee pardoned of all offences by hym dooen agayne the crowne of Fraunce before & daye, and all other his adherentes, or suche as had taken his partie before & tyme. And soone vpon this, was ordeined & the erle of Harcourt & other, which kyng John had caused to bee beheaded and after to bee hanged vpo the common gybet of Roan, should bee deliuered vnto their fredes, to be buried at their pleasures. After whiche conclusions taken, and assurance made as farre as & dukes auctorite would extēd vnto, sir Almaric knyght Menelene knyght, with thre or foure menne of honoure mo, were sent into Normandy, to repossesse the kyng of Nauerne in all suche lādes, castelles and townes, as he before tyme was in possession of, with all monables vnto the said landes apparteynynge. And then the said kyng and duke helde samplur compaignie, and byned and supped togethet oftē sythes at the mainour or lodgyng of quene Johanna syster vnto the said kyng, and other places.

Also the said kyng deliuered out of prysone, all prysoners as well spiritual as tempozall, suche as were thought anythyng fauourable vnto his cause. Among the whiche some there were, & for their demerites were adiudged to perpetuall prysone.

In this tyme and seasō, tydynges sprange within the citee of Parys, & the kynges of Englade and of Fraunce were agreed, and þe kyng John should shortly retorne into Fraunce. By reason of whiche tydynges, the kyng of Nauerne made þe moze haste to dispatche hym out of Parys, so þe he with his cōpaignie departed fro Parys þe .xx. dawe of Decembre, and rode toward the citee of Hauente in Normandy. Soone after the kyng was thus departed, dyuers enemies to the noumber of .x. or .xii. C. came in in .iiii. or .v. myles of Parys, whiche were demyd to be of the compaignie of þe Philip brother vnto the kyng of Nauerne. These robbed and pylled the countre therabout, in so muche that the people of the countre of Beauraux and Crappes, and other there aboute, were constrained with their mouables to flee vnto Parys. Wherfore þe duke sent out his letters and cōmissyons, for to assēble his knyghtes to withstand the said enemies.

But the said citezens of Parys caste another waye, and thought it to bee dooen to the greuaunce or correction of theim. For dowte wherof, the prouost with other that had the gouernaunce of the citee, caused the gates to bee kepte, and none should entre but suche as lyked theim.

In this pastyme the, kyng of Nauerne being in Normandy, requyred deliuey of the castelles of Bret-nell, of Eutour, and other, the which to hym by the capitaines were denied. Wherfore, he thynkyng that the duke perfoyned not to hym his promesse, gathered vnto hym greates strength to wyne by strength that he might not haue his former bande and promes. Of this was putte in greates wyte the bishoppe of Laon,

whiche was the chief counselloure of the duke, and especiall frende vnto the kyng, so that what thyng was spoken in the duke his counsaill, was shortly after manifested by hym and his meanes vnto the kyng of Nauerne. This also was one of þe chief rulers of the assemble of the .iii. estates, and after left theim and fell by his greates doublenesse and dyspynulacion in the duke his fauoure, and so beecame chief of his counsaill, for the whiche of the common people he was named the beste with twoo mouthes. Then the citezens of Parys hearing of the denyng of the said castelles vnto þe kyng, knewe well that mortall warre should growe between hym and þe duke. And for thei would haue þe citezens knowen frome other straungers, therfore thei ordeined them hoodes parted of red and blew, charging euery māne that he should not passe his lodgyng withoute the hood and cognisaunce.

Vpon the eyght dawe of January the kyng of Nauern entred the citee of Roan with a great compaignie of mē of armes, and drew vnto hym many Englyshe menne, and suche as were enemies vnto the frēche kyng. And vpon the twelue dawe of January the said kyng assembled the people of that citee, and made a lyke sermon vnto theim as befoze he had dooen vnto the commynaltie of Parys, and did a solempne obsequy to bee dooen for the erle of Harcourte and þe other with hym putte to death as aboue is said by kyng John. In this whyle the duke of Normandy þe long whyle had tarped in Parys, in hope and ayde of the citezens, was euer by the prouost and other driuen of frome dawe to dawe. It was aduised hym by his counsaill, þe he should shewe

shewed his mynde vnto the commonaltye of the citee.

Wherof when the bishop of Laon and þe prouost were ware, anone they shewed vnto hym many doubtes & impedymentes and also parcelles, for to treate with a commynaltie. Not withstanding he refused their counsaill, and caused the people to bee assembled at their common hall. Whither he with a small cōpaignie came, the xi. daye of January aboute. ix. of the clocke in the moorning, where he shewed vnto the commons a longe and a pleasaunt oracyō. Wherof the effect was, that he bare very faithfull mynd vnto the citee, and for the weale therof he would putte his life in ioperdy. And wheras by his ciuil wyllers he was reported, þe he should gather menne of armes to greue the citee, he said and sware it was neuer his entencion, but onely to auoyde suche enemyes as dayly pylled and robbed their neighbours and freedes. And where he also knewe well, that great lummies of money were gathered of the people towarde the kynge his synaunce, he lette theim vnderstande that no peny therof was comyng vnto his handes.

But his mynde was, that suche persones as had receiued that money, should with their assystaunce be called to a due accompte. Whiche oracyō, with many kynde and louyng wordes ended, the people w^{ch} it were very well contented, so that of theim he was well comyned and alowed. Upon the morowe beyng frydaye & twelfe daye of January, the prouost and other of his affinite, heryng of the fauour þe many of the commons bare vnto the duke, and feryng lesse þe duke should by hys meanes turne the commons vpo theim, assembled

a greate parte of the citee at a place called saint James hospitall, and specyallye suche as they knewe well fauoured their partie. When þe duke was ware of their assemble, anone he sped hym thither, hauryng with hym the bishop of Laon. Where by the mouth of his chaunceller, he caused to bee shewed a parte of the matter whiche he hym self shewed the daye before vnto the commonaltye, with moze, that were suche as ought vnto hym no good will, reported hym þe he kepte not promise made with the kynge of Fraunce, he shewed there þe contrary. And if any thyng were not to hym perfourmed, it was contrary to his mynde and pleasure, and that þe in his power lay not to fulfyl. And so soone as the chaunceller had ended his tale, Charles Cusake stode vp to the entent to haue shewed his mynd. But there was such a rumoure and noyse among þe people, that he might not bee harde, so that then the duke parted with suche compaignie as he brought, excepte the bishop of Laon whiche taried there with the prouost and other. And when the duke was departed, Charles Cusake beganne his tale, and spake boldly againe the kynge his officers, and by couerte wordes somewhat againe the duke. After whiche tale synphed, one named John de saint Ounde, whiche by auctoryte of the thre estates was newly made one of the generall gouernours of þe subsidy, stode vp and said, that the prouoste nor no other person of the thre estates, had no peny of that subsidie in their handes the whiche sayng the prouoste also assymed.

Furthermoze he shewed the there þe said John, that certayne knyghtes whiche he there named sent from the Duke

Duke, had receyued of the sayde sub-
spye to the summe of .l. o. s. .xl. s. mo-
cons of golde, the which were employ-
ed to no good vse. After whiche pro-
cesses ended by the sayde John, Char-
les Cusake agayne began to speake,
and made a longe commendacyon of
the prouidence and good disposicion
of the prouost, which had taken vpon
hym greatre payne and dyspleasure, &
spente largely of his owne for the co-
mon welth of the cytee. Wherfoze if
he myght knowe that the compnaite
wolde not abyde and stande by him for
the furtheraunce of the same, he wolde
be content to leaue of, & get him there
as he shulde be quyte of all trouble, &
also out of the daunger of all his ene-
mies. Wherunto was anone made a
great exclamacyon by the people, say-
enge, they wolde lyue and dye wyth
hym in that quarrell.



Vpon the .xiii. day of Janua-
ry, the duke sent for diuers
persones of the thre estates
and exhorted the by good-
ly and amiable wordes, & they wolde
demeane them agayne his father and
hym, as saythefull and lounge sub-
iectes, and he shulde so reposer them
vnto the kyng, that they of him shuld
haue greate thanks.

And as touchynge hym selfe, he
wolde be so good Lord vnto them,
that they shoulde thynke they kyn-
denesse and spelytie well bestowed.
The whiche he graunte vnto hym
theye trouthe and serupce vnto the
bittermooste of theye powers, adu-
synge hym to take vpon hym the go-
uertraunce of the said realme, for they
thought he tarped to longe or he toke
the rule thereof. Then soone vpon
this, the sayde thre estates ordeyned a
more seable money: then they before

had made, to the aduantage of the
duke, to the ende that he shulde wyth-
stande the enemyes sozenamed, which
as yet remayneth in þe countre about
Barps, and pylled the byllages and
tooke prysoners, the whiche they con-
ueyed vnto suche holdes as they then
helde in that countree. Thus durynge
these manifolde aduersytees amonge
the frenchemen, vpon the .xxiii. daye
of the said moneth of January, John
Baylet treasurer to the Duke, was
slayne at Barps of a poman or Mac-
lette, of the chaunge called Percyne
Marke. The whiche Percyne after
that curshed dede doone, fledde vnto
saynt Mary church. But at nyghte
the duke sente for John de Shalous
his marshall, with the prouost of the
cytee named Gylliam Scaple and
other, the whiche brake by the church
dores, and toke the sayde Percyne out
by force, and ladde hym vnto prysone
called the Chastelette. Date of the
whiche vpon the moine he was taken
and hys handes smytten of, and so
drawen vnto the gibet of Barps, and
there hanged. But vpon the thyrde
daye folowynge, by meanes of the by-
shop of Barps he was taken downe
and buryed within the sayde church
of oure Ladye, with greate reuerence
and solempnyte. At whiche obsequye
was present the prouost of the mar-
chauntes with many other burgesys
of the cytee. The fyrste daye of the
moneth of Februarye, for John de
Pyquiny came vnto Barps from the
kyng of Flaueyne, and made request
vnto the duke, of dyuers conuauites
by hym to be perfourmed toward the
kyng, whiche as yet were not accom-
plished. Whiche requeste the Duke
toke vnpatiently, and gaue vnto the
sayde for John many high & displea-
sant wordes. Howe be it in þe ende the
byshop

byshop of Laon sayde, that the duke shuld be aduised vpon the answer of the kinges demaund. Upon þ.iii. day of february, þ. prouost of þ. marchantes, with certayne of the vniuersites of Barres & other Burgeyses, rode vnto the duke vnto Louure. Where it was requyred by the sayde persones, that he wolde fulfill vnto the kynge of Flauntrie, all suche couenauntes as were lately made with hym, and speciallye that the castelles of Coutour & other befoze named, myghte be deliuered vnto hym accordyng to his appoyntment. And furthermoze, it was shewed vnto the duke by a doctoure of dyuinitie, that yf he of the kynge of Flauntrie wolde swaue from any point of article of the sayde former agreemente, that the .iii. estates had byterlye determined for to ayde and assiste hym, that wolde kepe the sayde agreemente, & to withstande the other that wolde not obey of vpholde the sayde concord & agreement. Wherunto the duke was well agreeable, sayeng þe he had perfourmed all hys promesse, except the deliuerie of certayne castelles which the capytaynes withelde contrary his mind & pleasure, laieng for theyr excuses, þe by the king his father to them they were deliuered, & to hym and none other they wyl deliuer the a gaine. Upon the .xi. day of february, certayne of the .iii. estates being at coulpyll in theyr place accustomed, þ. prouost of þ. marchantes asssembled theyr craftes of þ. cytie at a place called saint Clowe of Clop in harnesse.

In whiche tyme of his with them there being an aduocate of the partyment called maister Reynolde Dap, as he was going from the dukes palays toward his owne house, he was slayne by men of the towne.

And soone thereafter, the saide prouost

with a great company of armed men entred the palays of Louure, & so with a certayne complices entred the dukes chaumber, & there without salutinge of the duke sayde vnto him Wy: dismay pou nothing what soueruer ye se vs dooe, for we entende to pour persone no harme. And of these wordes were fully ended, hys company fell vpon a knyght called Wy: Archolas de Conflans the marshal of Champaigne, and vpon sir Robert de Cleremount leaping vpon the dukes bed, and slewe them out of hand. When þ. Duke behelde this horrible dede, he was in metuelous feare of hys owne persone, and praiide the prouost with his cappe in his hande, that he wolde sauegarde his persone, the which the prouost graunted, with that he wolde by hym be aduertysed.

Then the saide .ii. dead corpes were drawen downe the steyers wythoute pytpe, and layde in the courte that all men myghte beholde that miferable spectacle. And for the Dukes sauegarde, the prouost toke vnto his partye a hode of redde & blew, the which he put vpon his hed, and the prouost receyued the dukes hode beyng of burnet & garnysed with a stenge of golde, & so eyther ware others hode all that daye. And that done, the prouost with hys companye wente vnto theyr common halle, where he shewed vnto the comynalty that the .ii. persones were especyall enemyes vnto the comon weale, and false traytours to god & to the crowne of Fraunce, and that he and hys adherentes intended the preseruacion of the comon weale of the realme, and the cytie, and wold vnderstande of them, whether they wolde stande by hym in that doyng or not. The whiche cryed with one voyce oup, oup, that is to say, yee, yee.

And

The prouost
upon and
all murder
done by the
prouost of
Barres & his
complices.

And when he had receyued this comforte of þe people, he returned agayne vnto the duke. Then he recomforted hym and sayde, that all þe was doone, was doone by the assent of þe people, & so to auoyd þe greater inconuenience for these that were slayne were great enemyes vnto the common welthe, & traytours vnto þe crowne. Wherefore he willed þe duke to allowe that dede, and yf any pardon were requysite for that dede or any other to be had, þe shulde lyberrally graunt it. All which thynges the Duke was sayne to saye yee vnto, and prayde hym & the other then also of the cytezens to be his frendes, & he wolde in lykewyse be theyrs. And after this agreement, the prouost sent for .ii. clothes one of redde, and þe other of blewe, and willed the Duke to make hodes of the same for all his seruauntes. And so the duke and his seruauntes were clothed in the livery of the towne, the blewe sette vpon the right syde. Then agayne night when the saide .ii. corpsys had lyen all daye vpon the stones of the palays, þe prouost comaunded them to be layde in a carte, and so without pryest or other reuerence to be conueied vnto a place of saint Katherine there to be buried. And when the sayd corpsys were thus brought vnto the saide place, the carter tooke one of theyr garmentes for his labour, and so departed.

It was not longe after that a messenger came from the byshop of Darys, whiche warned the brethren of that house to spare the burpence of syr Robert de Cleremont, for as much as the byshoppe noted hym, accused for byeking vp of saint Mary church whiche by force set out Derine Marke as befoze is shewed. But after, they & also the aduocat maister Reinold Dary were buried secretly. Upon þe moone

folowing the prouost assembled at the scote Augustines a great company of the cyte, with all suche as then were there of the good townes by reason of the foresaid counsell. To which assemble, by the mouth of mayster Roberte de Corby a man of þe cyte, was shewed a potestacyon of all the cyrcumstaunce of the foresaid mater, & howe that by þe dukes counsell & also by the the estates, many good thynges were concluded for the deliuerie of the king and shulde of þe tyme haue comen to good effecte, ne had bene the enpechement of .iiii. persones, the whiche at þe season were not named.

This busynes thus continuing, the kyng of Nauarne came to Paris the .xxvi. daye of February, in a good company of armed men, and was conueied by the cytezens vnto a place of the dukes called the Acel, & there lodged. To whome the prouost with his coplyces made request, that he wolde make allpauce with theim, & to support them in that þe they had done, the whiche by hym was graunted. Then the quene his syster & other, made instant labour to agree hym & the duke. Which in conclusyon toke such effect that the king shuld haue in recompence ment of his wronges, the erledome of Bigorre and the vinery of Ramer, in the erledom of Gascon, & other landes to the extent of .x. M. li. of Darys money by yere. And ouer þe his syster called quene Blanch shuld haue the lordshipp of Mortre for her dowry. After whiche accord thus concluded, the kyng and the Duke kepte together very frendly and louyng familiarite dynd and souped cyther wth other by many and sundry tymes, & cyther vnto other gaue riche giftes. Among the whiche one was, that the Duke gaue vnto the king the saide place of
3. li. Acel

The duke of
Normandy
proclaimed
regent of
France.

Well whiche he then lodged in.

Upon the twelue daye of Marche the duke of Normandy was proclaimed regent of France thorough the cite of Paris, and after thorough all France. And soone after he departed from Paris, and rode into the countree of Champayne, where he tarped a season. And the kyng of Nauerne retourned to Hauente in Normandy. Then the regent dyre vnto him the nobles of Champayne and of Prouince, and beganne to manace the prouost and other of Paris, that before had putte hym to dyshonoure, and sayne so vylaynouslye hys trewe counceyllours. And after ppointe taken of the earle of Byene and other nobles of that countree, & they shulde ayde hym agayne hys fathers rebelles and hys enemies, he then roode vnto the abbaye of Pontey in Monsstruell, and after rode vnto a castell whiche belonged vnto quene Blanch sister vnto the king of Nauerne, and willed the Capytayne named Tannepne to deliuer vnto hym that castell. The whiche after dyuerse denayes, opened the gates, and receyued in the regente, and lodged hym therein that nyght. Upon the whiche the regente caused the sayde Tannepne to sweare vnto hym, that he shulde kepe that castell vnto his dle, and after made him styl wardene of the same, and so departed thence and rode vnto Meaur where his wyfe laye.

In thys tyme and season the prouost of the marchauntes of Paris, hearyng of the regentes doyng, and of the assynye that he made with the of Champayne, feared the sequel therof. Wherfoze by & aduise of suche as fauoured hys cause, he rode into the castell of Louure, and there toke out attylet, gunnes, and other abylyme.

tes of war, and put them in the floze house of the cite, to be redy when time required. The regent spending his tyme retourned againe to Conpeigne. And where as before was apointed, & the .iii. estates shulde the fyrst daye of May assemble at Paris, the regente then sent out his commissions, and charged the sayde .iii. estates to assemble & the date of & sayd moneth of May at Conpeigne aforesaid, wherewith & sayde citizens of Paris were greatly amoured. At this assemble was graunted vnto the regent, a subsidy both of the clergy and also of the laye fee, so & the regente waxed daily stronger and stronger. Wherof heying the king of Nauerne, remoued from a towne called Perlo, & with a stronge company came to a place of towne named Romage, purposely for to treat wth the regent for & citizens of Paris. Wher in the beginning of May the sayde .ii. pynces mette, cyther haupng greates strength of men of armys.

When the king of Nauerne had by .ii. daies continual made rebuest to the regent for the citizens of Paris & might not speede of his request, he departed the third day and rode to Paris. Wher he was honorably receiued & felled by the space of .x. or .xii. daies. In which seaso he warned them of the great dysplesure that the regent bare toward the cite, & aduysed them to make them as stronge as they myght. In this passetyme the byshoppe of Laon beyng wth the regent at Conpeigne, was lyke to haue bene dylonyed by some of the regentes counsaile. Wherfoze in secreete wyse he departed vnto saynt Denys, and from thens he was set by the kynges seruauntes of Nauerne vnto Paris in

in whome was put greete faute of all this trouble.

About the myddell of Maye, one named Gylliam Calley, gathered to hym a company in the prouynce of Beaunaisyn, as of the townes of Certeux, Roysel, Cramoysy, & other ther aboute. The which being euyl disposed, sliue dyuers knyghtes and esquieres of þe countree, and theyr wyues & seruauntes, and pylled & spoyled the countrie as they went, & theyr downe certayne piles and other strengthes, & a part of the castel of Beaulmout, & forced þe duchesse of Oyleauce to forsaue þe castel, þe then was there lodged and for her lauegard to go to Paris.

Vpon the .xxx. daye of Maye, the prouost and other gouernours of the cytee of Paris, caused John Daret, mapster of the byrdege of Paris, and the mapster carpenter of the kynges workes, to be dysa'wen, hanged, heded and quartered. For it was put vpon them, that they shulde haue brought into the cytee a certayne noubre of the regentes sobiours, and so to haue betrayed the cytee. And the foresayde people of Beaunaisyn gathered vnto them daylye moze people, as labourers and bylannes, the whiche came into the countree of Mountmerencie, and sliue and robbed there the gentylmen of þe countree as they had done of other, and so passed the countree without resistance. And the regent in thys whyle came vnto the cytee of Sens in languedocke, where he was honozablye receyued, albeit that the commons of that cytee and gentyles of that countree, were greatly lenyng vnto the cytezens of Paris, and there taried a season to expresse to them his mynde. In whiche meane tyme a spicer or grocer named Gylle of Paris, with one John Mayllaunte prouost

of þe kynges money, with a compaignie of .viii. C. men in harnesse rode vnto the citee of Meaur, wher, of þe mayre of that cytee they were ioyfully receyued contrary his promes befoze made vnto þe regent. Where, with assistance of the saide mayre & other of that cytee they intended to haue taken the wyfe of the saide regent, wyth other noble women then there sojourninge with her, and so to haue conueyed them vnto Paris, there to haue kept them tyll the cytezens myghte purchase the fauoure and grace of the regent.

But when þe earle of Foyle, which then had the rule of the sayde gentylwomen, knewe their entent, anone he gathered vnto hym hys compaignie, & with assistance also of some of þe saide citee, he made vpon .vi. or .vii. C. men in harnesse, and p'sued boldly agayne the foresayde persones and skynnyshed, with them. In whiche skirmyshe in the ende, þe men of Paris were discomfited and chased, and the mayre of Meaus named John Moulas taken wyth other, whiche after for theyr rebellyon were put in execucion. And after this victorie thus opteyned, and in reuengement of þe deth of a knyght called syr Lewys de Chambly theare slaine with other gentylmen, & for the vntrouthe of the cytee: the foresayde earle set fyre vpon a syde of the cytee, and byent a great parte thereof, as wel churches as other, whiche fyre was scantly stynched in .viii. dayes.

In thys whyle the kynge of Auverne hearyng of the greete harme & distrucyon þe compaignie of Gylliam Calley made of gentylmenne in Mountmerency & other places, lyke as befoze is shewed, rode agayn hym, and nere to a place called Cleremouit encountered hym and his people, and gaue vnto them battayle, and sliue

much of his people, and toke him on lyue, and caused his hed to be stricken of. And soone after, the ctyzens of Paris sente vnto hym, requyringe him to dyawe toward them. At whose requeste, he sped hym thitherwarde, and entred the cytee vpon the .xv. day of Juny, & was conueyed vnto saynt Germaine in Parys, and there lodged. And vpon the moyn he went vnto the comon halle of the cytee, where the commons being assembled, he made vnto them a longe & pleasaunt oracion, of the great kindenesse, & he had founde in many of the good townes of Fraunce and specially in the cytie of Paris. For the whiche they had bounde hym to take theyre partye agayne all other, making none exceptyon. After which tale by hym ended, Charles Cusake stode vp, and shewed vnto the people what cupynous popute the lande stode in for lacke of a wyle hed and gouernour. Wherfore he exhorted the people to chosse the kyng for theyr gouernour. Whiche then was so done, & he there toke vpon him the rule, and promysed with them to lyue and dye. Upon the xxii. day of the saide moneth of Juny, the kyng of Nauerne with a company of .vi. M. souldiers of the cytie & other departed from Paris, and rode vnto a towne called Connesse, where another company of the cytee taryed for hym, & from thens rode toward Melys. But when the gentylmen of his hoste vnderstod that he had taken vpon hym to be capytayne of the comynalte, where agayne the moze party of the nobles of Fraunce were of the contrary partye, they lefte him many of them, & specially suche as were of the Duchye of Burgoyne, and with congy of him take, resorted into their countrees. When the Regent hadde dyspited diuers countrees, and wonne

vnto him the beneuolence of the same and had also gathered to hym greates strength, he sped him toward Paris and lodged hym in the ende of the moeth of Juny, in a place called in frenche Pount de Charenton faste by Bop es in Wyncent. In whose companye were nymbred vpon .xxx. M. horsemen, so that the countre thereabout was pylled & wasted with that hoste.

Wherof hearing the kyng of Nauerne, returned backe agayne, and came with his hoste vnto saynt Denys within .ii. myles of Paris. And the cytee of Paris was kepte dape & nyghte, that no man myghte entre or go out, without licence of the prynces & other rulers therof. In this meane whyle that the sayde two prynces lay thus with theyr two hostes about the cytee, Quene Johan wyfe vnto the kyng, made an instant labour vnto the regent for grace for the ctyzens. By whose meanes a conuocation was appoynted to be holden betwene the kyng and the regent, the eight day of July, at a place called the windemill faste by the house of saynt Anthony. At whiche meetinge it was lastely accorded betwene the saide prynces, that the kyng of Nauerne shoulde doo his best to bypunge the ctyzens of Paris vnto due obediens. And yf he sawe in them suche obstynacye, that they wolde not do theyr dutie, and to geue for theyr rebellyon suche sommes of money as by hym & the regent shoulde be thought accordyng, that then the kyng shoulde betterly refuse theyr partye, and turne vnto the regent with all his power.

And ouer that, the king for all demaundes that he coulde aske of the regent for any cause, ouer the agremente betwene them laste made, shoulde haue iii. C. M. florins of golde. Wherof an

C. to be payed that day. xii. monethes, and yearly after. l. sh. tyl the full were payed. And forther it was accorded, that the king after that day shoulde take partye wth the regente agayne all persons, except onely the king of France. And to the end that this accord shoulde be sturme holden vpon both sydes, the byshop of Lisieux there beyng presente, wth many other lordes, saunge the Masse wth in the tence where this accord was concluded, and after Agnus dei, sware the two princes vpon the Sacrament that wthout collusion or fraud they shoulde obserue and kepe euery article of the sayde accord.

After whych conclusion thus taken, the regente repayred vnto hys booste, and the king vnto St. Denis. Than vpon the morow the king entered Paris, and conueyed thither wth hym but a certayne, & so tarped there all that day, wthout anye repoze sendyng vnto the regente.

And the seconde daye for the more strenghenynge of the towne, he sente for certayne Englyshe souldiours, as archers and other, and let the in the towne wages, and nother sent nor returned vnto the regente wth any answer. Than towarde the nyght how it was assaute was made by some of the regentes people vpon a parte of the towne, so that dyuerse men were slayne vpon both sydes, but the mo vpon the partye of the cytee.

Than the king of Nauerne vpon the morow returned vnto St. Denis leupinge wth in the cytee the foyslawd strength of Englyshemen wth other. When the regente was ware of the kinges beyng at saynte Denys, he sente vnto hym, and him requyred of perfectmaunce of suche accord as lately betwene them was condesten-

ded, & synce by his meanes he myghte not endure the cyteens to doe obedyence, that he wolde accorde to his promesse take partye wth hym, wher by they and other enemyes to the common welch, myghte be reconcyled.

Wherunto, the king answered and sayde that the regente had broken & sayde accorde. For wher he by hys diligence and laboure, had brought the cyteens to a nere poynce of reconlyfacyon and submyssion, the regente by the meane of that assaute whiche he made vnto the towne, caused the sayde cyteens to renounce all theyre fojmer graunt, and to bynd them by po theyre fojmer wylfulnes. After the whych answer thus geuen by the king the regente caused his people to passe the river of Mayne by a bypoge made of dotes, and so to byen the towne of Vittry & diuers other townes, & robbed & pillled the country thereabout.

Vpon the xxiij. daye of July, dyuers of the towne of Paris issued oute of the towne, and with ayd of the Englyshemen endeouored them to haue locouted the sayde towne of Vittry wth alse to haue destroyed the bypoge. At whych touny they bare them so well, that wth theyre shot they wounde many of theyre enemyes, and toke prisoner the regentes Marshall named syr Reynolde de Fontaynes w dyuerse other, and after returned vnto theyre cytee.

Vpon the xviij. day of July, the quene Johan syster vnto the king of Nauern wth the Archebyschoppe of Lyons the byshoppe of Paris, wth certayne other temporall persons of the cytee, rode vnto a place assigned wthout the towne, where wth the met the regente and certayne of hys counsaill, and at length concluded an vnrye and conoord betwene the said regent

regent and cyprians, without further payne or exaccyon to be put vnto the excepte that the sayde cyprians shuld humbly submyt them vnto the regent in ac knowleggynge, theyr offence, and askynge of hym mercy and grace for the same, and ouer that to be ordered forther as the kynge of Flauerne, the sayde quene Johan, with the duke of Orleans and the Earle of Crampes, wold deme and aduise, and that graunted, that the regent to open all wates & passages as wel by lande as by water, that all marchauntes may passe as they befor tyme vsed, and in lyke wyse they of the cyte to open the gates of the towne, and to receaue al straungers.



fter whiche agremente thus concluded and agreed, with al other befor made betwene the kynge and the regent to be maintained and by holden, the regente sente frome hym muche of hys people, and appoynted the sayd byshoppes and the other for the towne, to mete with hym the .xiiij. Daje folowynge at a place called Laiguy by Parne. Wher he wold haue also the kynge of Flauerne and the other, to persyghte and clerely synnys the sayde agremente, and vpon thys made proclamacyons throughe the hoost that a good and perfecte peace was agreed. Wherfoze, many of the host for dyuers causes them mounyng yode toward the cyte, trustyng they gladly and louyngly to be receaued. But vpon the mozne whā they came vnto the gates, they fande them watched with barnelled men, whych wold none suffer to entre but such as they lyked, among the whych, one named Spacequet a seruaunte of the regent

tes was mysse entreated. And notwithstanding standynge that accord, yet the movable goodes of such as were with the regent, and had houses within the cyte, were dysperkled and destroyed. Vpon the .xiiij. daje of July and euen of Mary Magdaleyn, a fyre begā to kyndle within the cite, so that the cyprians complayned them vpon the Englyshemen, surmysyng agayne them diuers causes. By meane wher of the comont in a fury yode vnto the palays of Arel, wher at that tyme many of the capteynes of the Englyshemen dnyed with the kynge of Flauerne, vpon whom they fel sodenly, and slewe of them vpon .xxiiij. and after in diuers places of the cyte, toke the other deale to the number of .iiii. C. or thereupon, and closed them in dyuers pylons. With whiche doing the kynge of Flauerne, with also the prouost and other the gouernours of the cyte were ryghte sore dysconted. Wherfoze vpon the daje folowynge, the kynge assembled the communalte at theyr comon hal, entending by pleasaunt wordes to haue caused them to haue bene repentaunt of the murder of the foresayde capteynes, & also to haue gotten the remnaunte oute of pylon.

But the moze the kynge spake for the Englyshemen, the moze woder were they disposed agayne them, sayyng, that those whiche were within the cyte shulde not alonely be put to death, but also such as were at saynt Denys, the whiche there spoyled that towne and country enuiston, and had suche wordes vnto the kynge, that in the ende he with the prouost and the other gouernours, wer fain to graunt vnto them, that they wolde go with them for to helpe to dystresse the sayd Englyshemen. And so the same daje agayne

agayne myghte, the commons pssued by the gate of saynte Honoure, and þe kynge of Flaunders wth the prouost and they; company went oute by the wyndemyll, so that in the sayd assemblies of the kynge & the commons were nombred vpon xvi. C. speres, and so foote men vpon. viii. M. When the kynge wth hys company was come into the feild where the sayde wyndemyll standeth, he houghed there wel by þo half an hour, to se what the other companie wolde do. The which sent out. iii. speres to espye where the Englyshemen were, and espyed of them vpon. xl. o. l. that asered by a woddes syde nere vnto saynte Clow, and weyng that the sayde Englyshemen, there had bene no mo, retourned and shewed what they had sene. Whereupon the sayde commons in hast sped them thither. And when they were in the daunger of they; shot, the Englyshemen issued out of dyuers parties of the wodde, and wounded and slewe many of them. Wherewith the other beynge feared fled incontynent lye, whome the Englyshemen pursued so cruelly, þe they slewe of the foote men vpon. vi. C. in all.

Wherby season the kynge of Flaunders and also þe prouost wth they; people rode sylle and neuer moued towarde them for they; defence o; ayde. After this dyscomfiture thus sustained by the Parisians, the king lefte þe cyte & rode vnto saynte Denys, and the prouost wth hys company returned vnto Paris. Where he was receaued wth hydyous nople and crye, as well of women as men, so; þe he so cowardlye had suffered hys neyghbours to be wounded and slayne. By reason of this þe murmure of the people encreased dayly moze and moze agayne the prouost, so that in maner a party was

taken betwene the prouost and the other gouernours of the cyte and the commynalte. For the commons wold haue put to death many of the prisoners of the Englyshemen, but the prouost wth hys assynpte let theim, and ppeferued the fro their fury & malyce.

And vpon the. xxvii. daye of July beinge frydaye, the sayde prouost beinge accompanied wth. viii. scoze o; cc. men in harnesse, rode vnto Loure and other prysous, and toke oute the sayd Englyshemen, and conueyed the vnto the gate of saynte Honoure, and so sente theim vnto they; other selfe hypp than beynge at saynte Denys.

Of whom they were ioyously receaued and welcomed, and specially of the kynge of Flaunders, at whose request as the common fame wente, the prouost wth the other rulers of the towne theim deliuered. Thus moze and moze cruyle dyscorde, begane to encrease wthin the cyte, so that the rulers of the cyte were now in as great dought and fere of their neyghbours, as befo; time they were of the regente and hys knyghtes.

So that vpon the tuesday folowinge beinge the last daye of July, the prouost wth other of his companie beynge in harnesse as dayly they were bled, wente to dyner vnto the bassyle of saynte Denys. And there beynge at dyner, the prouost commaunded to suche as than kepte the keyes of that bassyle, that they shulde deliuer them vnto Gestepe de Passo than treasurer of the warre of the kynge of Flaunders. But the porters denayed that commaundemente, and sayd pprecysely that they wold not deliuer the keyes to hym no; yet to anye straunger for which answere many haute wordes were blowne on eyther partye, so þe people gathered about them. Whether

of

John the French Kyng

of herpynge one named John Maylart, to whome belonged the watche of a quarter of the cytee, wherein and in þe whych quarter the sayde bastyle stode; & we nere and gaue eare vnto the wordes, and shortly after in bold maner sayde vnto the prouost, that the keyes shulde remayne styll wth the sayde keyers, and not to be take oute of theyr possession. By meane of whych wordes the prouost wth his company were encensed wth moze malpce, and vttered in any hygh and dysdaynous wordes to fere the sayd John Maylart and the other. When fore the sayd John Maylart serpyng the prouost, lest he shulde shortly call hys strengthe to hym, and by meane therof put hym and other to an after dele, sodenly gat hym on hys backe and beringe a baner of the frenche kynges in hys hande, cryed wth a loude voyce, Mon toyre saynte Denis au Roy et a duke. When the people sawe hym thus ryde aboute, and crye toyre to the kyng and the duke anone much people folowed hym, & cryed in the same wyse. And in lyke wyse dyd the prouost and hys company which toke the waye toward the bastyle of s. Anthoune. And the sayde Maylart rod toward þe market place & ther houed wth his companye. In which time & seson one called Peppyn de Essars, not knowing of the feat of John Maylart, in like maner gat hi on hys back, & baryng a baner of þe armes of Fraunce, rode aboute crying the fozsayd cry, & so lastly came vnto the other. While the commons where thus asssembled in the market place, the prouost came vnto þe fozsayd bastyle of s. Anthoune, where it was reported to the keyers of þe bastyle, that the prouost had lately receaued letters from the king of Flaunde which they desp

red to se, wherof the prouost denayed the sight, & specially one named Guilfard. Wherfor, after some wordes of displeasure, one strake at the said Guilfard, and throught hys harnes wounded hym. Wherewith the prouost being amoued, made resistence agayn the sayd keyers, so that ether cane at other wth theyr weapons. In whiche stryfe the sayd Guilfarde was by the slaine, and after the prouost wth one of his copiers named Edmond Palmer. Wherof heryng the fozsayd John Maylart & his company, in all haste sped them thither & puerued vpon o-ther that than were fled for fere, & so streightly serched, þe they founde one called John of the ylle, & Giles Marcel clarche vnder the prouost of marchantes, whych also they slew wth out ppye. And after at the bastyle of s. Martyne, they founde one called John Barret the ponger to whome they slewe also. And sone were they spoyled of al that they had, and layed naked in the ope strete for al mē to loke vpon. And when they vi. cozpis had lven by a certayn tyme, they were thā put in a cart & drawne vnto a house of s. Katheryne, and there buried vnteuently. And vpon the morowe following, wer taken Charles Cusake and Jolleron of Gessy Hallon, and put into the chastelet, and there kept in strepghte pyson. And thus sealed thys ryot wthyn the cyte of Warys, that had continued for the moze part by the space of a peate, and .ix. moonethes, as frome the begynnynge of the moneth of Noumber in the .viii. peate of kyng John, vnto the ende of the mooneth of Iulye, in the .viii. peate of thys sayde kyng, and from the takinge of the duke in hys chamber, to the death of the prouost by the the space of, vi. monethes.

After

After which persons thus slayne, the sayde John Caplarte sent vnto the regente, requyring hym that he wold speede hym vnto the cytee, and in the meane whyle to sende some noble man to haue the rule of the same. And in þe whyle the commons made stretch, and tooke manye of the former rulers, as Peter Spil grocer, whiche as befoze is sayde was captain vnto them that were sente vnto Meaus. And wyth hym was taken sye Peters Caplarte knyghts and wardayne of the castell of Laour. Also one called John Pyronst, wyth Peter Blount also a aduocate named master Dupflour, and se lower of hys named master John Godarde. All whiche persons wer shortly after put to death by sondry tymes and thei bodies cast into a riuer called Bone Mopine. And vpon the xiiij daye of August, the regent was receued in Paris wyth all honoure and gladnes. Wherof hearynge the king of Flaunde, & of the puttyng to deth of Josseran his tresourer, sent vnto the regent wordes of dyspauce, lettynge hym to vnderstande þe he wold be reuenged of þe wrong done & other

vnto Wyloen, where they by fauour and strength occupied the yle, and þe country whych stretched toward Wyer, and warred vpon the country toward Gaslenois and did therein much harme aswell by fyre as other wyse. And shortly after sye John Pyquegnyn and sir Robert hys brother, which were captaynes vnder the kynge of Flaunde, made warre vnto the towne of Turney and other townes of Picardy, and slewe manye of the comon people, and toke prisoners of the gentelmen of that country to the number of an. C. and aboue. Among whych þe byshoppe of Royn was taken, & wyth þe other led vnto a castle or towne called Crepi, wherof the foresayde sye Robert was captayn, & so continued in doyng damage in diuers places, aswell nere vnto Paris as elles wher. Duryng whych warre thus made by the kynge of Flaunde & his accessaries, in the moneth of September and begynnyng of the. x. yere of kynge John, þe foresayde sye John de Pyquegnyn layd his spege vnto the cytee of Ambras, & wane within þe bulwerkes of the same, so that the citee was lyke to haue ben yelden vnto hym, ne hadde ben the rescous of the erle of F. Doule which dyaue the sayd John and hys people backe. But the sayd sye John wyth ayde of the Englishmen quyte hym so manfully, that he had the domynion of all that country of Beawaise, so that wyne, nor no marchaundysle myght passe to Courney nor other townes there aboute, wythoute hys safe conduyte or lycence. And in lyke maner sye Roberte Anolles captayne of the Englyshe men in Wyrcapn, gat there many holdes and townes, whych I passe ouer.

Upon the. xv. daye of October, dyuers of the burgesys and rulers of the



Vpon the. xiiij. daye of August, the regente caused to be assembled wythin the common halle of Paris the cytezens, to whome he made a longe declaracyon of the treasons and trotes done by these persons put to death, and by the. b. of Laon & other yet lyuyng, which entended as he sayd to haue made the king of Flaunde kinge of Fraunce, and to haue yelde the cytee of Paris into the power of Englishmen. Then the kynge of Flaunde with the Englishmen yode

the cytee of Paris, as Jho Guffard
Nicholas Dozet, and other to the nu-
ber of. xij. persons, by the commaun-
dement of the regent were arrested
and sente vnto pryson, and so remay-
ned by the space of. iiii. dayes. Wher-
of the frendes of the sayde prysoners
pode vnto the prouost of p marchan-
tes than named John Culdoe, and re-
quyed hym to make labour wth o-
ther vnto the regente than beynge at
Louur, for the deliuerie of theyr fren-
des, or at the least to know the cause
of theyr imprysonment, whych request
p prouost and other executed. It was
answered to them by the regent, that
vpon the morowe he wold be at their
common hall, where before the com-
naltie the cause of theyr imprysone-
ment shulde be shewed. And if than
the cyteyns thoughte good to haue
them set at large, he wold therewith
holde hym contented. At whych hour
appointed, the regent came vnto the
sayde hal, and therewith shewed that
one named John Dampens, whiche
had maryed the daughter of Jho
Restable one of the sayde prysoners
had caused his sayde father and the
other, that they had allied them with
the kynge of Flaunerie contrary theyr
allegeaunce, wherfore he thoughte
they had deserued to dye. But for the
fauoure that he owed vnto the cytee,
and to theym, for they were of good
substaunce, he woulde not dooe anye
thyng to them till they were enqui-
red of by theyr neighbours. After the
whiche declaracyon thus made by p
regente, euerye man feared to speake
anye moze for them, but suffered the
lawe to haue his course. Howbeit, in
the ende they wer acquitted of that tre-
son, and synally deliuered by the end
of the nexte moneth.

Upon the. iiii. daye of December,

entred into Paris the cardynales of
Dyepgozte & Megell, to treate a con-
corde and peace betwene the regente
and the kynge of Flaunerie. But in co-
clusyon, nothyng they sped that they
came for, wherfore they returned vn-
to Bynnon. In whych returne they
wer robbed of great substaunce, wher-
of Englyshemen bare the dysclaun-
der. And thus this grudge hanging
betwene the kynge and the regent, ma-
ny robberies and other harmes were
done vnto dyuers townes in Fraunce
to the greate empoueryng of the
people of that land, and to the great
enrichyng of such Englyshemen as
than were there abydinge in daylys
warres, both wth the kynge of Fla-
unerie, and also in Bytayne.

For shortly after this, the forsaide
sy Robert Knolles and other Eng-
lyshemen wanne the towne of Ancer
and other, lyke as in the. xxxiii. yere
of kynge Edward is before moze at
length decayed.

In the moneth of May, and. xij. day
of the same, the regente for tydynges
whiche he had receaued from his fa-
ther oute of Englande, by the report
of the archbishop of Sens and other
assembled many of the good townes
at Paris. But the wayes wer so stop-
ped by men of warre he was fayne to
tarye till the. xvj. day of the sayd mo-
neth folowynge. At whych seson was
shewed to the people there assembled
that the kynge of Englande to haue
a synall concord wth the kynge of
Fraunce, wold haue ouer and aboue
his raunsome, the duchy of Royma-
dy, the duchy of Guyan, the duchy of
Crancres, the cytee of Igeu, the cyte
of Carbe, the cyte of Dierregot, the cy-
tee of Lymoges, the cytee of Caouts
wth all dyoces of the sayd cytees be-
longynge, the earldome of Dygozte
of

domes of Bygoire, of Doytters, of Angrou, and of Maine, of Thozaine of Bouloine, of Gynys, of Bountefles, of Bountieu, the townes of Poussuwell, of Calays, and of Marquet, with all appurtenaunces to the sayde duchys, earledomes, cyties and townes belongynge, them to enioye and holde wythout feawte or homage for them doyng, with many other thynge to the kyng of Englandes great aduantage. Whiche thynges were ryght displeasaunt vnto all that compayn, in so muche that they answered that the sayde treaty was neyther honozable nor ppyfyttable. And rather then the kyng shulde bynde him & his lande to suche inconuenience, they wolde pypare to make sharpe warre agayne Englande. Wpith whiche answer the sayde assemble was dys-solued.

Vpon the xxviii. day of May, the regente reassembled the sayde people where it was condiscended that the nobles of the realme wpth a certayne persones euery man after hys estate, shulde serue the regent in his warres by the space of a moneth at theyr owne ppyper costes. And the cytee of Paris graunted to fynde to him at theyr charge. vi. C. speeres. iiii. C. archers, & a. M. of other sowdours. And for so muche as the other good townes wolde not graunt any subsidie till they had spoken with theyr cominalties, therfore they were licenced to depte home and to bynge reposite agayne within xiii. dayes. At whiche season they shewd vnto the regent, that theyr countreys were so pylled & wasted by the kyng of Nauerne and Englyshemen, that the people myghte nothing apde hym as they thought to haue done. Wherfore with muche payne, they graunted to him, viii. M. men for. iiii. monethes.

In the begynnyng of the moneth of Juny, the regent with a stronge power sped hym towarde Melon where the kyng of Nauerne laye with hys people, so that the kyng occupied the countre towarde Dietr, and the regent the countre towarde Wyte. Where both hostes thus lyeng, without notable feate of warre, a treaty of accord was yet agayne moued at length, by agement of the Parisiens, accorded muche lyke vnto the former accord concluded at Paris. So the by mediation of certayne tempozall lordes of both hostes, the sayde pynces agreed to mete at Henlane, and there to conclude the sayde peace. Where about the xx. day of August, with hostage deliuered vpon both parties, the sayde pynces met, & after rode vnto Bountoise where they were both lodged wpthin the castell, where both theyr counsayls were assigned to mete for the perspyghtynge of thys accord. But so it was that for suche landes as shuld be assigned vnto the kyng, they could not agree. Wherfore the regent in conclusion sent vnto the erle of Stamps or Escamps, charging him to saue, that he to the intent to haue his good wyl, had offered vnto hym reasonable offers.

Whiche yf he wolde accepte, he wolde be fayne therof, and yf not, he let hym vnderstand, that he shulde haue no peace with hym whyle he lyued. By reason of whiche message, the counsayles on bothe parties conceyued none other, but that this treaty shuld haue concluded no ampte nor peace. But howe it was, by counsell of his owne lybertalte, when the kyng had digested this mater in his minde by all that nyght folowynge, he on the morowe sente for the counsell of the regent, & wylled them to shewe vnto the regent, that he considered well in

John Kyng of Fraunce.

his mynde the greates daunger & amperye whiche the realme of Fraunce stode in. Wherfore he being of the naturall house of Fraunce, & one of the flourdelyce, oughte to se the mayntenaunce of the honoure of the same.

And for that that no tynne of the sayde realme shoulde to hym (yf anse fell) after be erected, therfore he was contented to set aparte all suche great offers and promyses, as to hym befoze tyme had ben offered & promysed, and to holde hym onely contented wth his owne ryghte as he befoze tymes had enioyed. And to the end that this his wyl & pleasure myght to the people be knowen, he wylled the regente that þ people of that towne of Dountopie shoulde be assembled in the court of that castell, that he myghte declate it vnto theym in proper persone.

The whiche accordyng to his mynde was doone. All whiche reherfall he made befoze the regēt and comynalte of the towne, promysynge there to deliuer oute of his possessyon all suche Townes, castelles and holdes, as he had wonne syn he stode enemye to the crowne of Fraunce, & to become true subiecte vnto the kyng, & lounynge newe & frende vnto the regent from þ day forwarde. Wherof þ regent & al the comons were very glad & ioyfull all be it that some trusted lytle to this accorde, no; yet to the contynuaunce therof, considering the manifold accordes whiche befoze tymes had bene betwene them concluded. After which accorde thus ended, the kyng wth his people returned to Denlant, and the regent to Paris, appointynge betwene them to mete at Paris þ fyrste day of September next folowing.

Accordyng to the appoyntmēt made at Dountopie, betwene

the kyng and the regent, vpon þ fyrste daye of September & beginning of þ x. yere of kyng John, the sayde kyng and regēt met at Paris, where atween them was holden familer company, and greates kyndenesse shewed vpon eyther partye. There also they counceyled howe they shoulde withstande þ kyng of England, which entended to entre Fraunce hostely after wth a stronge power. And after many amysces and frendely dealynges betwene them executed, þ kyng rode to Meles to deliuer that towne and castell into the regentes possessyon as the Roysse sheweth. But when he was comen thither, were it wth his wyl or contrary, the soldours toke greuous tolles of all wynges and other marchaundyces that passed that waye, whiche after was knowen to be for the wage and lowde of the Aquatois and Englyshmen, which helde þ sayde towne and castell. And so þ Frenchmen were constrainyd for to paye the wages of theyr enemyes, whiche greued them verie soze, consyderynge that many folde harmes and pylages of theym befoze were receyued. And after the kyng had auoyded the sayde soldours, he departed & rode vnto Paris leuyng Crepel in the possession of Englyshmen & other. And ouer these many folde mysertes and myschepes thus fallynge in the realme of Fraunce there fell so greates habundaunce of water in the harvest season, that þ corne was losse, so that it rose to an hygh price to the greates damage of the comon people.

And in the moneth of Nouember folowynge, the kyng of Englande, wth Prynce Edwards & other many lordes wth a stronge power laded at Calays, & so perced Fraunce by Acetops in Picardy & Vermandoy, and subdued

the town of
of ragn.

The army
of the
was
great
at Calais

subdued the countrees befoze him tyl he came to Reynes, lpe as befoze is shewed in the .xxxiii. & .xxxv. yerres of kyng Edward, where all this matter wpyth the tenoure of the peace betwene the sayde kynges of Englande and of fraunce is moze at length declared.

The laste daye of the monethe of Decembze, one Warr of Wyldoburges of Warrs, was bytween vnto a place of iudgement, and there vpon a scaffold, had fyrste hys armes cutte of, & after hys legges by a chys, and lastly his hed, & then he was quartered, and his .iiii. quarters sette vpon .iiii. pryncypall gates of the cytee, and his hedde sette vpon the pylloze. The cause of this iudgemente was, for so much as one called Denysot Palmer vnto whome he had byscouered hys counsell, and caused hym to be as an accessory in all his wykes, had accused hym that the sayde Warrten had agreed & couenaunted wyth certayne officers and capitaynes of a kyng of Flaunde, that they at a tyme apoynted Wuld haue entred the cytee of Paris, and to haue slaine the regent & other, and to haue had the citee at their rule and pleasure. And so the season then of a .x. yere tyll the moneth of July, passed in a warrs & treatye befoze touched, so that the .viii. daye of July the frenche king landed at Calays, & there tarped as prysoner tyll the .xxv. daye of October folowynge, as befoze in a .xxxiii. yere of king Edward is moze playnly shewed.

Then vpon the .xxix. daye of Decembze, and begynnynge of this .xi. yere, kyng John came to saynte Omers, where he tarped tyll the fourth daye of Nouember. And the .xi. daye of Decembze he came vnto saynte Denys, where vnto hym vpon a .xii. daye came

the kyng of Flaunde, whiche had not sene hym sence he was deliuered from prysion, & brought wyth hym certayne hostages whiche the frenche kyng had sente vnto hym for hys sauegarde, puttyng hym hols in the frenche kynges grace and mercy. And vpon the moze folowynge, he was newly sworne vnto the kyng to be his trewe & faithfull sonne & subiecte, and the kyng agayne vnto hym, to be his kind father & good and gracious soueraygne lord. And forthe wpyth were sworne the duke of Normandy and Philip brother to the sayde king of Flaunde, to mapnteyne all conuauentes made & to be made betwene the sayde .ii. kynges, so that they were fynished & concluded by a .xviii. daye of Januarie nexte folowynge. And soone after retourned the sayde kyng of Flaunde vnto Warrt. And kyng John vpon the .xiii. daye of Decembze with greete tryumphy was receyued into Warrs.

And when he was comen vnto his palays, the pryncesse of marchantes wyth certayne burgeyses of the cytee, in the name of the comynalte of the same, presented hym wyth a present to the value of a .M. marke sterlyng.

Vpon a tuesday beyng the fyrste daye of July, was foughten a batayle at Warrs betwene two knyghtes, wherof the appellaunte was named syr Foukes Bozpat, and the defendour sir Waugot Hawbert. Which appellaunt was soze vexed wyth a feuer quarteyne, by reason wherof and of the great heat that daye appered, after longe fyghe the sayde appellaunt lyghte from hys horse for hys refreshment, wherfoze his frendes of hym were in great doute. But his enemye was also so soze trauapled, that what for heate & labour, he was also ouer-

Ja. ii. come

Warrt of Wyldoburges
of Warrs
of Warrs

A batayle be-
tweene two
knyghtes.

Warrt of Wyldoburges
of Warrs
of Warrs

come, and was lykely to haue fallen from hys hoyle, & ere he myghte be taken downe, he swoyned and dyed.

When sy: Fowkes was ware of þe feblenesse of hys enemye anone as he might he dyelled him on foote toward his aduersary, and fande hym sturke deade, whiche by lycence of the kynge was after had out of the felde, and secretly buried, and the sayde sir Fowkes for feblenesse was by his frendes ladde vnto hys lodgynge.

In the. xii. yere of kynge John & xxi. dape of Nouembre, Whyllyp duke of Burgoyne, earle of Artoys, of Aluerne, and of Boloyng, a chyld of the age of. xiiii. yeres or lesse, dyed at a towne nere vnto Rome called Cupon. By reason of whose deathe kynge John as nexte heyre had after possession of all the sayd landes, & toke possession thereof shortly after.

In the. xiiii. yere of the regne of kyng John & thyrde day of January he for specyall causes hym mournege, as for the enlargynge of his sonne the duke of Oyleaunce & other yet pledges for his raunsome, toke wyppynge at Boloyne, & so sailed into England and arrived at Douer the. vi. dape of the sayde monethe, and after rode to Eltham, & from thens was conueyed vnto London, as befoze is shewed in the. xxxvii. yere of kyng Edward. In tyme of whose there beynge, sy: Barthzaym de Glapcon made warre vpon the kyng of Flaunde, and wan from him the towne of Maunt in Roymandy. And by þe duke of Roymandy sone after was wonne from the sayd kyng the towne of Menlence. Withyn the whiche were taken dyuers Parisiens that shortly after for theyr infydelyte were put in execucion at Paris. And thus the warre betwene þe kynges of Fraunce & Flaunde was newly bego

Then kynge John beynge as befoze is sayde in Englande, a greuous maladye toke hym in the begynnyng of Marche, of the which he dyed at London vpon the. viii. dape of Apryll following, & so with great honoure and solempnyte conueyed to the sees side, and there wypped, & then in processe caried into Fraunce.

Where vpon the. vii. dape of May and yere of our lord god. M. CCC. lxxiii. he was solempnely enterred in þe monastery of saynt Denys, when he had reigned. xiii. yeres. vii. monethes and odde dayes, leauynge after hym thre sonnes, that is to saye Charles whiche was kynge after hym, Lewis and Whyllyppe.



Charles or Charles the. vi. of that name

vi. after some wyters, the eldest sonne of kynge John, beganne his regne ouer the Realme of

Fraunce, the nynt daye of Apryll, in the begynnyng of the yere of our Lord god a thousand thre hundredth lxxiii. and the. xxviii. yere of Edward the. iii. then kynge of Englande, and was crowned wyth Dame Jane hys wyfe at Raines the. xix. dape of May folowynge.

In thys fyrste yere, sy: Barthzaym de Glapcon lyuetenaunt of the sayde Charles in Roymandy, fought wyth a capytayne of the kynge of Flaunde named le Captal de Buelfre, nere vnto a place called Cocherell, nere vnto the crosse of Sayncte Lpestrop, in whiche fyght the sayde Captall was discomfited & a great noubmer of his people taken and slaine, him selfe chased and taken, for whome the French kynge gaue after vnto the sayde sy: Bar-

The death of John king of France.

Charles the. vi.

Barthram the earledome of Longeuple. And when he had receyued hym he sent him vnto a stronge prisson called the Herch in Meaur.

At Wyghelmalle folowynge, the Duke of Birtayne, & Charles de Bloes and & John de Mountfort sonne and heyre to the fozenamed & John Mountford befoze dead, which by a longe season, bothe father and the sonne had holden warre wth the sayde & Charles, met in playne battayle, in þe whiche as befoze is shewed in the. lxxviii. yere of kyng Edward the sayde & Charles was slayne and diuers noble menne of Fraunce with hym. In the moneth of June and seconde yere of thys Charles an other accorde was yet concluded: atwene thys Charles and the kyng of Flauienne. By reason of whiche accorde, the Captal of Buette was clerely deliuered, and Mauntes and Henlens agayne also vnto the kyng restored. And ouer that vnto the kyng of Flauienne was geuen for a recompensment, the Earledome of Longeuple, whiche as aboue is sayde the frenche kyng had geuen vnto & Barthram de Clapton, for to haue the Captall to his prissoner. And also to the sayde kyng of Flauienne was geuen the lordshyppe of Mountpyller. And in the moneth of February beganne the warre in Spayne, where pryncce Edward apded Peter kyng of that land as befoze is shewed in the. xl. and xlii. yeres of kyng Edward.

In the. iii. yere, the peace atwene the kynges of Englande & of Fraunce began to breake, by meanes of þe earle of Armenake and other, as in the. xlii. yere of kyng Edward is befoze shewed. And in the moneth of December and the sayde yere, the Quene was lygheted of a man chyld in the Hodet

of saynte Paule, the whiche was after chrystened with exceedyng solempnytie ouer other befoze passed, in the church of Saynte Paule in Paris, the. vi. daye of December of the cardynall of Paris. To whome were godfathers the earles of Mountmerency and of Dampmaryn, and godmother Jane quene of Curour, and bare the name of Charles after the earle of Mountmerency.

In the. v. yere of this Charles, he called his counsell of parlamente at Paris. Duryng the whiche, the appellacions of the earle of Armenake and other purposed agayne pryncce Edward, were published and red, & the answeres of the sayde pryncce vpon the sayde appellacions made, whiche I ouerpasse for lengthe of the mater. But the conclusyon was, that the pryncce had broken the peace and couenauntes of þe same as they there demed. Wherefore all suche townes & holdes as the frenche kyng had gotten, he shuld them retayne, and make warre vpon the kyng of Englande, for the retouery of the other. Where vpon kyng Charles in the moneth of July folowynge, rode vnto Roan, and there rygged hys nauye, entendinge as sayth the frenche hystorie, to haue made warre vpon Englande and to haue sent thither his yongeste brother Phylippe then duke of Burgoyne wth a stronge armie. But while he was there busied about hys purpose, the duke of Lancastre arrayued wth a stronge power at Calys, and so passed to Curwyn, & so vnto Arde. Wherefore kyng Charles then chaunged his purpose, and sente his said brother into those parties. Then by that season that þe sayde duke was prepared with his people, þe Englyshmenne were comen vnto Arde.

¶ Aa, iii. And

And the frenche menne sped theym in suche wise, that they lodged theim the xliii. daye of August vpon the mountaine of Cournehay nere vnto Arde so that both hostes were lodged wpyth in an englyshe myle. Atwene whome were dayre bykerpynges; and small knyghtes. All whiche season the frenche kynge tarped styll aboute Rowan.

Then þe kyng of Flaunde, which by a longe season had dwelled in Flaunde, came by shyppe into Constantyne, and sente vnto kynge Charles: that yf he were so pleased, he wolde gladlye come vnto hym for to shewe to him his mynde. Wherfoze þe kyng sent vnto hym as hostages, the earle of Salebrugge, the Deane of Warps, wpyth ii. other noble men, the whiche the kynge of Flaunde wolde not accepte. In the moneth of September and vpon the. xii. daye, when þe Duke of Burgoyne hadde lpen as befoze is sayde nere vnto the Englyshe hooſte, he that daye remoued his people, and so wente vnto Helden. And the Englyshe hooſte remoued to Caur and other places, as befoze I haue shewed to you in the. xliii. yere of kynge Edwardes, wpyth other thynges apperteynyng vnto the same matter. And in the sayde moneth of September, kynge Charles manned and bytaylorled certayne galeys & other shippes, and sent theim into Walys, and so to haue entred into England. But they retourned with lytle worshyppe, not wpythstandynge that he had. ii. noble menne of Walys named Dwan and James wyne, whiche made to hym faste promesse of greate thynges, by reason that they were enemyes vnto the kynge of Englande. For this and for other charges, the kynge called a conuocacyon of the temporalte and

spiritualte at Paris. Where to main- tayne hys warres, was graunted vnto hym of all thyng boughte & solde, excepte bytaylor, the. iiii. peny, so that all thyng that was solde by retaylor, the seller shoulde paye the exaccyon & that whiche was solde by greute, the byer shulde paye the sayde exaccyon.

And the spiritualte graunted a dyne to be payde in two halfe yeres, and the Lordes and gentylmen were synted at a certaynte, after the value of theyr landes. In the moneth of February, the kynge sent vnto the kynge of Flaunde than beyuge at Chyrbourgh certayne messengers, to persyte an amytie atwene theym, lest he toke partye agayne hym with the Englyshe menne. But this treatye continued a longe season, so that in the. vi. yere and moneth of June, the kynge of Flaunde hauyng suffy- cyente hostages, came to the frenche kynge to Vernon. Where in conclu- sion the kynge of Flaunde made his homage vnto the frenche kynge, and became there his feodary, wherof the frenchemenne made muche ioye. After whiche accorde, the sayde kynge of Flaunde the. iiii. daye folowynge, tooke hys leaue of the kynge, and so rode vnto Curreux. All whiche season the warre was continued by Englysh men wpythin the realme of Fraunce & prouynce of Bytayne, as befoze is expessed in the. xliii. xlv. xlv. yeres of kynge Edwardes.

In the. vii. yere and moneth of Auguste, the Duke of Braban wpyth manye nobles of Fraunce, mette in playne batayle with the duke of Juliers & the duke of Gueldre. In which batayle, after cruell fyghte, the duke of Braban was chased, and vpon his syde slayne the earle of saynte Poule, with many other noble men, whiche the

the stoye nameth not. And vpon the other syde was also slayn the duke of Guelle, wth many other vpon that partte.



At the .xli. yeare of kyng Charles and mooneth of Maye, he assembled hys great counsaile of parlamente at Paris

where among manye actes made for the weale of hys realme, he wth assente of hys lordes and commonnes there assembled, enacted for a law after that daye to be contynued, that all heyres to the crowne of Fraunce theyr fathers beyng dead, maye be crowned as kinges of Fraunce so sone as they attayned vnto þ age of .xiii. yeres. And in this yere was the tresp of peace laboured by the two cardynalles sent from the bishop of Rome as befoze is shewed in the .xlii. yeare of kyng Edward. After whych tresp not concluded, the kyng of Englande losse daylye of hys landes in Fraunce. For in þ moneth of August folowynge, the duke of Berry, the duke of Angeo, and many other lordes to the assigned in diuers places, as in Guyan, Angeo, & Mayne, gate and wanne from the Englyshmenne many countries, townes, and castels as Pyteregort, Rouerge, Caoursyn, Bygoire, Baspndas, Berregart, Daimet, wth manye other townes and holdes, whych wolde aske a longe ley soure to reherse, to the number of .vi. scoze & .xiii. what of townes, casteles and other holdes, whych in shorte whyle were wonne from the Englyshmen, in the parttes of Fraunce and Brytayne.

In the .xlii. yeare of thys Charles the Emperour of Rome & Almayne, named Charles the .iiii. of that name came into Fraunce, by Cambray, to do

certaine pylgrymagis at saynt Denys and elles where, and so was conueyed wth honourable men, as the lord of Cousy and other, vnto saynt Dymptne, wher he taried chrystmas daye. And after he was conueyed to a towne called En of Ewe, and from thence to Rozen, & than to Compegne, where he was met wth the duke of Burbone and other nobles. Than he rood to Senlis, where he was met wth þ dukes of Berry and of Burbone, brethren of the franche kyng and manye other, as byshoppes and other lordes. And ye shal vnderstand that all such as rode in the companyes of these forsaide dukes, excepte byshoppes and prestes, rode in theyr lyuerres. As the compaignie syt of the duke of Burbon brother vnto the quene, to the number of .CCC. men, wer al clad in whyte and blew. The compaignie of the two other dukes, the number of .v. C. men, in blacke & russet, that is to meane the earles and other lordes in cloth of gold, & knyghtes in velvet, & gentelme in damaske and satin, & the pemen in cloth. Than from Senlis he was broughte vnto Louurys, where mette wth hym the duke of Barre, wth a compaignie of CC. horse, and hys compaignie clad in grene and redde. And from thence he was had vnto saynt Denis vpon the .iii. day of January, whither the king sente to hym a chayne richly garnished, for somuch, as he was vexed w the goutte. And the quene sent to him an horse lptter wth two whyte palfreys: where he was also met wth a greate compaignie of byshoppes and other spiritual men, as abbotes, priours, and other, and taried there two dayes.

Vpon the .v. daye of January, beinge mondaye, he roode toward Paris

At what age
the heyre to
the crowne of
fraunce shuld
be crowned.

The reccornig
of Charles
the Emperour
into Fraunce
made to þ a
174

rys. But o; he was halfe a myle from saynte Denys, he was met wth the prouost of the marchauntes, wth a company of .xv. C. horse, the cyrcyns beyng cladde in whyte and byoletts and so rode befoze hym tyll he came to Parys.

When the kynge, was war ned that he was nere the cytee, he lepte vpon a whyte palfrey, and accompanied wth many lordes and other to the number of a thousand men, al his householdes seruauntes beyng cladde in one lyuerpe of browne blew and darcke tawny, and the seruauntes of the Dolphyn of Vpen in blew and crymsyne every manne after hys degree, and so the kynge wth hys company met wth the Emperoure at þe myle wythoute the towne called the wynde myle. Where after due salutes made ether vnto other, þe frenche kynge put the Emperoure vpon his ryghte hande, and tooke the kyng of Romans sonne vnto the Emperour vpon his left hand. And so the frenche kynge rydyng in the myddes, passed throughe the hygh streetes of Parys, tyll they came to the kynges palaces. Where he was lodged wth all honour, and after fested wth the kyng & the quene by the space of .xvi. daies. Whiche terme ended, lyke as wth al honour he was conueyed into the lande, so wth great honour & ryche giftes he was agayne conueyed oute of the lande.

In the mooneth of februarye following and the .vi. day, died þe quene of Fraunce in the hostell of s. Poule in Parys, and after buried wth great solempnyte and honoure in the monastary of saynte Denys. In the moneth of Marche the kynge receaued letters frome certayne lordes of hys lande, in the whyche was contayned

that the kyng of Nauerne had imagined and conspyred wth one Jaket þe was than commen into Fraunce to execute hys cursed purpose. Wherefoze the frenche kynge layd such wayt for hym, that he was taken, and they founde vpon hym a byll of certayne instruccions, howe he shuld behaue hym selfe in accomplishinge hys euell purpose.

Then he was broughte vnto the kynges pcesence, to whome he confessed the cyrcumstaunce of all hys treason to be doone at the commaundemente and counsaile of the kynge of Nauerne. Soone after the eldest sonne of the kyng of Nauerne whych was newly commen into Roymande, sente vnto the kynge Charles, shewyng vnto hym yf it were his pleasure, he wold gladly come vnto hys pcesence for to speake wth hym with that he myghte haue a sure safe conduyte for hym, and all such as he shulde tynge wth him. The which to hym was graunted, and vpon the same came vnto Senlys where the kyng than was. And after he had comoned a selfe wth the king, he made to hym request for the deluery of the sayde Jaket de Rue, laynge for hym sondye excuses. But when the kynge had caused the sayde Jaket to be broughte forthe befoze the sayde sonne of the kynge of Nauerne named sy Charles, he auouched suche thinges befoze him that he could not denaye, but that hys father hadde comytted manye and sondye treasons aswell agayne kyng John as nowe agaynst kyng Charles hys sonne.

Wherefoze, after dyuers assemblies & counsels had by þis matter, þe king and the sayd sy Charles agreed that all suche townes and holdes as the sayde

sayde kinge of Nauerne had tophin
 Rozmandye, whilke he deliuered vnto
 to þe duke of Burgoyne to the french
 kynges vse. And for þe promise shuld
 be truly perfourmed, the kyng first
 sware the sayde sy Charles, and af-
 ter many of the captaynes which had
 the rule of the sayde towncs and ca-
 stels. And for so muche as the sayde
 sy Charles had there presente wyth
 hym a captayne named sy fernand
 de Oyence, in whose gubdyng many
 of the sayd holdes than were, and sus-
 pected him that he wold not perfour-
 me the sayd promise, therfore he cau-
 sed hym to be arrested, and to be had
 vnto prysyn, tyl the holdes being vnder
 his gubdyng were clearely deli-
 uered. Upon whiche agremente thus
 concluded & sworne the duke of Bur-
 goyne with the sayd sy Charles and
 the sayde sy fernande as a prysoner
 was sente into Rozmandy, wyth a co-
 uenient army. Wher, wyth alwe and
 fauoure the duke in processe of tyme
 had to hym deliuered, all suche tow-
 nes and holdes as the kyng of Na-
 uerne there had, except the towne and
 castell of Chyrbourgh. In whiche
 passe tyme and season was also taken
 in a towne called Bzetnel, a secretary
 to the hig of Nauerne, with certayne
 wytynges beynge in a cofer wythin
 the chamber. By reson of which wy-
 tynges, and also by the confessyon of
 the partye, many mo thynges concer-
 nyng the confessyon of Jaket de Rue
 was than manifested and proued,
 whiche secretary was named master
 Peter de Tertre a frenchman borne
 But he had serued the kyng of Na-
 uerne by the moze tyme of his lyfe.
 Upon this confessyon made and wy-
 ten by the sayde secretarye, the kyng
 called his counte of parlyament. Du-
 ringe whiche, both the sayde mayster

Peter and also the sayde Jaket, were
 brought befoze the lordes and com-
 mons. Wher theyr confessyons were
 red, and they examyned vpon euery
 artycle of the same, and assyrmmed all
 theyr former sayynges. Wherfore,
 shortly after by authoptye of þe court,
 they wer demed to dye for theyr trea-
 sons, and so were hanged and heded
 and theyr viii. quarters haged at son-
 dyr gates and places of Darys. And
 whan the king had receaued into his
 possessyon the forsayd holdes belon-
 gyng vnto the kyng of Nauerne, þe
 whiche had so often rebelled agayne
 his father and hym, he was coun-
 celled by his lordes þe shuld thome
 to grounde diuers of the sayd castels
 lest the kyng of Nauerne the recou-
 red again, & by meane of theyr for-
 ces wyke vnto hym & his realme newe
 dysplesures. By reaso of whiche coun-
 cel the kyng made euen w the ground
 these fortrells folowynge. First the
 castel of Bzetnel, of Dozlet, of Beau-
 mounte le Roger, of Dacy Dampet,
 and cloysters of the same, the towne &
 castell of Nogent le roy, the castel of
 Curour, the castel of Pount Ande-
 mer, the castel of Mortaygne, and of
 Sancerre; Sancerre, wyth other in
 the countrey of Constantyn. But the
 towne of Chyrbourgh remained stil
 in the possessyon of the Nauaroy, þe
 whiche wyth ayde of the Englishmen
 was kepte from the french kyng.
 And the fornamed sy fernand was
 contermanded to prysyn, for so much
 as he was captayne of þe same towne
 thynkyng in hym defaute that the
 sayde towne was not deliuered with
 the other.

In the xiiii. yere of thys Char-
 les and moneth of August, ty-
 dynges came vnto him of the
 scisme

scisme whiche was begonne in the church of Rome. For after the death of the. xi. Gregore whiche dyed in the moneth of April forpassed, by meane of the frenche Cardynalles whiche were a. xi. in number, after the other Italyen cardynalles wyth other of theyr assynite had elected and chosen a Napolytayne and archebysshoppe of Barre, the frenche Cardynalles wyth the electyon not beinge contented, wyth such as fauoured theyr partye, denounsed and published one named Robertte cardynall of Basyle, & named hym Clement the. vii. Where the fyrst was named Urban the. lxi. Of the maner of thys scisme somewhat I haue shewed vnto you in the lii. yere of Edward the. iii. But to expresse the certaynty of thys scisme, truth it is that after the death of the forenamed. xi. Gregore, the cardynalles beinge in the conclaue of counsell chamber whete the byshop of Rome is accustomed to be chosen, the Romans beinge in harnes made suche exclamacions vpon the cardynalles beinge in the conclaue for to haue an Italyen byshoppe of Rome, the cardynalles for fere to be slayne elected and chace one named Bartholomew a Napolytan and archebysshoppe of Barre, & named Urban the. vi. But thys after he was admytted was so proude and so combzous, that he ruled al by wyl and nothyng by ryght or goodly orde of reson or cōscience. Wherfore the cardynalles beinge repentaunt of that they had done, a certayne of them in the cytee of Foudes the. xx. daye of September, elected & chose another named Robertte cardynal of Basyle, & named hym Clement the. vii. and by theyr authoryties published hym for the byshop of Rome and dysallowed that other befoze cho

sen. But the Romans wolde not ther to be agreable, but helde theym vnto theyr former byshoppe of Rome, with whome helde the prouynces of Germany and Fannon, wyth the moze partye of Italye. And wyth the laste chosen byshop of Rome, helde Fraunce Spayne, Catalopne, and Englande. And thus began the scisme, which continued by þe tyme of. xxxi. yere after.

In the. xv. yere of kynge Charles he for so much as sy John de Hout forde duke of Byrtayne, toke partye wyth the Englyshmen agayne hym and wolde not appere at suche dayes as to him were assygned, therfore the sayde kynge Charles sente in to the duchye of Byrtayn to lease the lande into the kynges handes, the duke of Burbon, sy Lewis de Sancer marchall of Fraunce, sy John de Wren, admyral of Fraunce, and sy Bryan de Reuper hys chamberlayne, wyth other men of name, with a great companye of men of armes, the whiche at theyr commyng into Byrtayne fand the countrey all otherwysse dysposed thā they supposed. For whete as they at theyr commyng thought to haue the possession of the townes & castels in peasible wyse, they were denayed, and playnlye answered, that they were sworne to theyr duke to bere to him true fidelite and seruyce, whiche they entended to obserue and kepe, whiche answere the sayde duke and his company were sayne to retourne vnto the frenche kynge. The whiche shortlye after sent thither þe duke of Angou wyth a stronge army to warre vpon the countrey. In whiche season sy John de Mounteforde hering of the frenche kynges entente, arrayed in Byrtayne wyth a company of Englysh archers. To whom dyewe such multitude of Byrtons, that the duke of

The seventh part.

225

of Angrou was sayne to retorne into Fraunce without worshyp there than wynnynge.

In the moneth of October, the Flemynghes of Gaunt and other, for greuous exaccions vpon them set, rebelled agayne the; Earle, and slew his bailiffe and offycer assigned by the Earle to gather hys tolles and after besyged other townes whych tooke partye wth the Earle agayne theim as Audenarde, Terremonde and other. Whereof hearynge the duke of Burbon, whose daughter the sayde duke had married, assembled his Burgonions, and sped hym into the marches of Flaunders, and so layde hys syege vnto Courney. But the Flemynghes defended the duke in suche wyse, that the duke was agreable to fall to a treatie. In the whych, it was fyrste accorded and agreed, that the Earle at the request of the duke, shuld pardon and forgeue clerly to hys subiectes, all offences by theim to hym doone before that daye, and also that he shulde graunte vnto them al the; former lybertyes and pryuyleges, in as ample and large wyse as they had theim graunted as hys fyrste comynge in, and mayntayn and vphold the; auncient customes, and to rule theim after the same. Secundarely, if anye letters haue bene made and sealed contrarie the; pryuyleges in the tyme of thys rebellyon, that the Earle shall reuoke them and cancell them for euer. Thyrde, that al suche captaynes of Almayne as at thys tyme haue bene in the dukes or Earles wages agayne the Flemynghes, shalbe solemly swoyne, that for any hurt or harme by them in thys warre receued, they nor none of theyre nacions as farre as they myghte lette it, shall not hurte nor harme anye man of the

countre of Flaunders at anye tyme here after in reuengements of thys warre. And so fourthly, that of all, of the beste townes of Flaunders. xxb. men to be chosen by the burghers of the same, the whych shall haue correction of all defaultes not touchynge lyfe and death done by the Flemynghes, and also to haue powe to correct al suche as be founde culpable of the Earles counsaile, in complaintes or offences crymynal. Fyftlye, that the sayde. xxb. persons shall haue auctorite and powe to make inquisycion from yeare to yeare of the gouernance of the land, and what fautes be to them presented, as often as. xiiij. of theim be sittyng together in one counsaile, they shall haue full powe to geue sentece to be obeyed without interrupcion. And what by them is sentensed, the Earle to vpholde and mayntayne wth all hys myght and powe. Sixtly, it was desired but not concluded, that for so muche as the towne of Audenarde and of Terremonde tooke partye agayne the; neighbours, that the walles of them in certayne places shulde be euened wth the grounde, in token of theyre vniuersall helynge. And seventhlye, and lastlye it was concluded that the prouost of Bruges shulde after that daye be put out of the Earles counsaile, and after therunto not to be admittted withoute consente of the foze named. xxb. persons. All whych articles were agreed vnto by the Earle, and passed and authorysed by his letter and seale, albeit, thys accorde continued no whyle, as here after shall appeare.

In the. xvi. yeare and moneth of October, the inhabytauntes of the cytee or towne of Mountpyller, in the countre of Languedoke, for an im

posycion

scisme whiche was begonne in the church of Rome. For after the death of the. xi. Gregore whych dyed in the moneth of April forpassed, by meane of the frenche Cardynalles whiche were a. xi. in number, after the other Italyen cardynalles wth other of theyr assynite had elected and chosen a Napolytayne and archebyschoppe of Barre, the frenche Cardynalles wth the electyon not beinge contented, wth such as fauoured theyr partye, denounsed and published one named Roberte cardynall of Basyle, & named hym Clement the. vii. Wherof the fyrst was named Urban the. xxi. Of the matter of this scisme somewhat I haue shewed vnto you in the lii. yere of Edward the. iii. But to expresse the certaynty of this scisme, truth it is that after the death of the fornamed. xi. Gregore, the cardynalles beinge in the conclaue or counsel chamber whete the byshop of Rome is accustomed to be chosen, the Romans beinge in harnes made suche exclamacions vpon the cardynalles beinge in the conclaue for to haue an Italyen byshoppe of Rome, the cardynalles for fere to be slayne elected and chace one named Bartholomew a Napolytan and archebyschoppe of Barre, & named Urban the. vi. But this after he was admytted was so proude and so combous, that he ruled al by wyl and nothyng by ryght or goodly ordre of reson or conscience. Wherfore the cardynalles beinge repentaunt of that they had done, a certayne of them in the cytee of Fondes the. xx. daye of September, elected & chose another named Roberte cardynal of Basyle, & named him Clement the. vii. and by theyr authoryties published hym for the byshop of Rome and dysallowed that other befoze cho

sen. But the Romans wolde not ther to be agreable, but helde them vnto theyr former byshoppe of Rome, with whome helde the prouynces of Germany and Daunony, wth the moze partye of Italye. And wth the lasse chosen byshop of Rome, held France Spayne, Cataloyne, and Englande. And thus began the scisme, which continued by p. terme of. xxxi. yere after.

In the. xv. yere of kynge Charles he for so much as sy. John de Mountford duke of Byrtayne, took partye wth the Englyshemen agayne hym and wolde not appere at suche dayes as to him were assygned, therfore the sayde kynge Charles sente in to the duchye of Byrtayn to sease the lande into the kynges handes, the duke of Burbon, sy. Lewis de Sancer marshall of Fraunce, sy. John de Uyen, admyral of Fraunce, and sy. Bryan de Reuper hys chamberlayne, wth other men of name, with a great companye of men of armes, the whych at theyr commyng into Byrtayne fand the countrey all otherwysse dysposed than they supposed. For where as they at theyr commyng thought to haue the possession of the towncs & castels in peaslyble wyse, they were denyed, and playnlye answered, that they were swozne to theyr duke to bere to him true fidelite and seruyce, whiche they intended to obserue and kepe, whiche answer the sayde duke and his company were sayne to retourne vnto the frenche kynge. The whych shortlye after sent thither p. duke of Angrou wth a stronge army to warre vpon the countrey. In whiche season sy. John de Mountford beinge of the frenche kynges entente, arryued in Byrtayne wth a company of Englysh archers. To whom dyewe such multitude of Byrtons, that the duke of

of Angou was sayne to retorne into Fraunce wthout wthshyp there than wthynnyng.

In the moneth of October, the Flemynghes of Gaunt and other, for greuous exaccyons vpon them set, rebelled agayne the^r Carle, and slew his baylliffe and offycer assigned by the Carle to gather hys tolles and after besyged other townes whych tooke partye wth the Carle agayne theim as Audenarde, Terremonde and other. Wherof hearynge the duke of Burbon, whose daughter the sayde duke had married, assembled his Burgonyons, and sped hym into the marches of Flaunders, and so sayde hys speege vnto Courney. But the Flemynghes defended the duke in suche wyse, that the duke was agreable to fall to a treatie. In the whych, it was fyrste accorded and agreed, that the Carle at the request of the duke, shuld pardon and forgyue clerly to hys subiectes, all offences by theim to hym doone befoze that daye, and also that he shulde graunte vnto them al the^r former lybertyes and pryuyleges, in as ample and large wyse as they had theim graunted at hys fyrste comynge in, and mayntayn and vpholde the^r auncient customes, and to rule theim after the same. Secondarely, if anye letters haue bene made and sealed contrarie the^r pryuyleges in the tyme of thys rebellyon, that the Carle shall reuoke them and cancell them for euer. Thyrddly, that al suche captaynes of Almayne as at thys tyme haue bene in the dukes of Carles wages agayne the Flemynghes, shalbe solemple sworne, that for any hurt or harme by them in thys warre receued, they no^r none of the^r nacyns as farre as they myghte lette it, shall not hurte no^r harme anye man of the

countrye of Flaunders at anye tyme here after in reuengements of thys warre. And so fourthly, that of .iij. of the beste townes of Flaunders .xxb. men to be chosen by the burgessys of the same, the whych shall haue correction of all defaults not touchynge lyfe and death done by the Flemynghes, and also to haue pow^r to correct al suche as be founde culpable of the Carles counsaile, in complaints of offences crymynal. Fyftly, that the sayde .xxb. persons shall haue auctorite and pow^r to make inquisycyon from yeare to yeare of the gouernance of the land, and what fautes be to them presented, as often as .xiiij. of theim be sittyng together in one counsaile, they shall haue full pow^r to geue sentece to be obeyed wthout interrupcyon. And what by them is sentensed, the Carle to vpholde and mayntayne wth all hys myght and pow^r. Sixtly, it was desired but not concluded, that for so muche as the towne of Audenarde and of Terremonde tooke partye agayne the^r neighbours, that the walles of them in certayne places shulde be euened wth the grounde, in token of the^r vniuersall helynge. And seuenthyly, and lastly it was concluded that the prouost of Bruges shulde after that daye be put out of the Carles counsaile, and after therunto not to be admitted wthoute consente of the foze named .xxb. persons. All whych articles were agreed vnto by the Carle, and passed and authorysed by his letter and seale, albeit, thys accorde continued no whyle, as here after shall appeare.

In the .xviij. yeare and moneth of October, the inhabytauntes of the cyttye of towne of Mountpyller, in the countrye of Languedoke, for an im
posycyon

scysme whiche was begonne in the church of Rome. for after the death of the. xi. Gregoꝝ whych dyed in the moneth of Aprill forpassed, by meane of the frenche Cardynalles whiche were a. xi. in number, after the other Italyen cardynalles wyth other of theyꝝ assente had elected and chosen a Rapolytayne and archebyschoppe of Barre, the frenche Cardynalles wyth the electyon not beinge contented, wyth such as fauoured theyꝝ partye, denounsed and published one named Roberte cardynall of Basyle, & named hym Clement the. vii. wherethe. xxi. was named Urban the. xxi. Of the matter of thys scysme somewhat I haue shewed vnto you in the lii. yere of Edward the. iii. But to expresse the certaynty of thys scysme, truth it is that after the death of the fornamed. xi. Gregoꝝ, the cardynalles beinge in the conclaue oꝝ council chamber whete the byshop of Rome is accustomed to be chosen, the Romans beinge in harnes made suche exclamacions vpon the cardynalles beinge in the conclaue for to haue an Italyen byshoppe of Rome, the cardynalles for fere to be slayne elected and chace one named Bartholomew a Rapolytan and archebyschoppe of Barre, & named Urban the. vi. But thys after he was admytted was so proude and so combyous, that he ruled al by wyl and nothyng by ryght oꝝ goodly oꝝdye of reson oꝝ conscience wherfore the cardynalles beinge repentaunt of that they had done, a certayne of them in the cytee of Fonde the. xx. daye of September, elected & chose another named Roberte cardynal of Basyle, & named hym Clement the. vii. and by theyꝝ authoryties published hym for the byshop of Rome and dysallowed that other before cho-

sen. But the Romans wolde not thet to be agreable, but helde theym vnto theyꝝ former byshoppe of Rome, wyth whome helde the prouinces of Germany and Dannon, wyth the moze partye of Italpe. And wyth the lasse chosen byshop of Rome, held France Spayne, Cataloyne, and Englande And thus began the scysme, which continued by p. terme of xxxi. yere after.

In the. xv. yere of kynge Charles he for so much as sy. John de Gout forde duke of Byrtayne, toke partye wyth the Englyshmen agayne hym and wolde not appere at suche dayes as to hym were assygned, therfore the sayde kynge Charles sente in to the duchye of Byrtayn to sease the lande into the kynes handes, the duke of Burbon, sy. Lewis de Sancer marshall of Fraunce, sy. John de Wren, admyral of Fraunce, and sy. Bryan de Reuper hys chamberlayne, wyth other men of name, wyth a great compaigny of men of armes, the whych at theyꝝ comyng into Byrtayne fand the countrey all otherwysse dysposed than they supposed. for whete as they at theyꝝ comyng thought to haue the possession of the towne & castels in peasyble wyse, they were denyed, and playnlye answered, that they were sworne to theyꝝ duke to bere to him true fidelite and seruyce, whiche they entended to obserue and kepe, whiche answer the sayde duke and his compaigny were fayne to retourne vnto the frenche kynge. The whych shortlye after sent thither p. duke of Angou wyth a stronge army to warre vpon the countrey. In whiche season sy. John de Gout forde heryng of the frenche kynes entente, arryued in Byrtayne wyth a compaigny of Englysh archers. To whom dyewe such multitude of Byrtons, that the duke of

of Angrou was sayne to retorne into Fraunce wpythout worshyp there than wyppynge.

In the moneth of October, the Flemmynges of Gaunt and other, for greuous exaccyons vpon them set, rebelled agayne the; Earle, and slew his baylliffe and offycer assigned by the Earle to gather hys tolles and after besyged other townes whych tooke pattyte wpyth the Earle agayne theim as Audenarde, Terremonde and other. Whereof hearynge the duke of Burbon, whose daughter the sayde duke had married, assembled his Burgonyons, and sped hym into the marches of Flaunders, and so sayde hys speege vnto Courney. But the Flemmynges defended the duke in suche wyse, that the duke was agreable to fall to a treatie. In the whych, it was fyrste accorded and agreed, that the Earle at the request of the duke, shulde pardon and forgyue clerly to hys subiectes, all offences by theim to hym doone befoze that daye, and also that he shulde graunte vnto them al they; former lybertyes and pryvylegys, in as ample and large wyse as they had theim graunted at hys fyrste comyng in, and mayntayn and vpholde they; auncyent customes, and to tuler theim after the same. Secundarely, if anye letters haue bene made and sealed contrarie they; pryvyleges in the tyme of thys rebellyon, that the Earle shall reuoke them and cancell them for euer. Thyrde, that al suche captaynes of Almayne as at thys tyme haue bene in the dukes of Earles wages agayne the Flemmynges, shalbe solemly sworne, that for any hurt or harme by them in thys warre receyued, they nor none of theye nacyns as farre as they myghte lette it, shall not hurte nor harme anye man of the

countrye of Flaunders at anye tyme here after in reuengement of thys warre. And so fourthly, that of .iij. of the beste townes of Flaunders. xxb. men to be chosen by the burgesys of the same, the whych shall haue correction of all defaultes not touchynge lyfe and death done by the Flemmynges, and also to haue powre to correct al suche as be founde culpable of the Earles counsaile, in complaintes of offences crymynal. fyftly, that the sayde. xxb. persons shall haue auctorite and powre to make inquisycyon from yeare to yeare of the gouernance of the land, and what fautes be to them presented, as often as. xij. of theym be syttinge together in one counsaile, they shall haue full powre to geue sentece to be obeyed wpythout interrupcyon. And what by theim is sentensed, the Earle to vpholde and mayntayne wpyth all hys myght and powre. Sixtly, it was desired but not concluded, that for so muche as the towne of Audenarde and of Terremonde tooke pattyte agayne theye neyghbours, that the walles of them in certayne places shulde be euened wpyth the grounde, in token of theye vniuersall delynge. And seventhly, and lastlye it was concluded that the prouost of Bruges shulde after that daye be put out of the Earles counsaile, and after therunto not to be admytted wpythoute consente of the foze named. xxb. persons. All whych articles were agred vnto by the Earle, and passed and authorysed by his letter and seale, albeit, thys accorde continued no whyle, as here after shall appeare.

In the. xxi. yeare and moneth of October, the inhabytauntes of the cytee of towne of Mountpyller, in the countrye of Languedoke, for an insurpocyon

possession of ayde that was put to the
by the duke of Angou, arose by one
accorde agaynst the mynisters and
councillours of þe duke (whych duke
was lpuetepaunt general vnder hys
brother the frenche kynge) and with
oute dyscrecion. in theye surpe and
rage snewe s^r Gullia^m Doncel knight
and chaunceler to the duke: s^r Guy
Desseryke shuarde of Rouarge, may
ster Arnold gouernoure of Mount-
pyller, mayster James de Chasny se-
cretary to the duke, and manye other
officers and seruauntes of the sayde
duke, to the number of. lxxx. persons
And whan they had theym slayne, as
tyrauntes not beinge contented with
that cruelines, they threwe the deade
bodies into dyuers foule and synne-
lynge pyttes, not sufferinge them to
be buryed as Chyristen men shulde.

Wherof whan knowledge was
broughte vnto the duke, he was ther
wth greauously amoued, and made
hys othe that he shulde punyssh them
to the feare and example of al other,
and therupon gathered hys people for
to reuenge thys cruel dede. Whan þe
rumoure of thys myscheuouse dede
was some deale appeased, and þe wyse
men and auncient of the towne had
degested thys hastye and cruel dede,
and loked vpon the ende thereof, thā
they were appalled in theyr myndes,
and were very repetaunt of the dede
that they had doone. And whan they
had considered all thynges, as the
dede detestable of it selfe, the greate
myght of the duke, and ouer that the
ayde whiche shulde to hym begeben
of the kynge, they conceaued wel ther
was no nother remedye but to seche
for meanes of mercy and grace, for
optaynyng wherof they made dy-
uers wates to þe duke, but none wold
be accepted Lastly, in the moneth of

Januarye, whan the duke had prepa-
red all thynges necessary to the warre
he toke hys iourney toward the said
towne of Mountpyller, ledyng wth
him a stronge hooste of menne of ar-
mes vttelyrly entendinge to subuer-
te that towne, and to destroye the moze
partye of the people. Wherof hea-
ryng the people of the towne tooke
theyr aduyce and ordered them as fo-
loweth.

Fyrste they sente oute agayne him
dyuers officers of the kinges suche
as they knewe were in hys fauoure,
and ordayned them to be in a place, &
ther knelyng to aske grace & mercy
for the towne. Secondly they sent
the cardynall of Albany, and thyrde
all the collages of men of relygion
as wel Runnes as other, and fourth
ly they sent the studyntes of þe lawe
cannon and cyple, and also of me-
dycine or physyke, all beyng set vp-
pon ether syde of the waye where the
duke shulde passe, and knelyng bp-
pon theyr knees, shulde crye without
ceasyng mercy gracious prynce mer-
cie. Than after these were set the con-
suls or rulers of þe towne, in gownes
wth out theyr clokes brygged, euery
man wth a corde aboute hys necke,
haupinge wth them the keyes of the
cytee. And at the entre of the cytee,
stoode the women wth the maydes
of the same, & al men chyldren whych
wer vnder the age of. xlii. yeres. And
betwene that age and. vi. yeres, wer
set next after the studyntes aforesayd
whā thys innumerable people was
thus ordered, and eueryche taughte
in what wyse they shulde be haue the
vpon the. x. daye of January about
the houre of thye, the duke wth hys
people approached the towne, and be-
holdyng the multytude and the la-
mentable crye, was somewhat moued
wth

Whan the
had praye
of Mount-
pyller
ry of the
of Angou
theyr than
full number

with compassyon, and so holdyng his waye, met with the sayde cardynall. The whiche after conuenient saluta- cyon vnto him made, shewed h̄ as a le- gate and messenger he was sent vnto him from h̄ bishop of Rome Clement the. vii. requyring of him pardon for h̄ towne & people of Mountpyller, ad- monestynge him further in the sayde bi- shop of Romes behalte, h̄ whatsoeuer punishment he dyd vnto the towne, h̄ he shulde absteyne hym from the shed- dyng of chrysten blode, & specially of suche as he myght knowe was inno- cent of the dede. To whiche message h̄ Duke gaue none answer, but toke the cardynall vpon his ryght hande, & so rode forth togyther. Where euer h̄ peo- ple kneled on either syde of the way, & cryed lamentably, merce gracepouse p̄ynce merce, & so passed tyll he came where the consuls stode, whiche kne- linge offered vnto hym the keyes of h̄ towne. But he as though he regarded the not, cast his loke from them & com- maunded the senethal of Beaucare to receyue the sayde keyes, & so passed on tyll he came to the company of womē which relented his stony hert to se the great lamenctacyon they made w̄ they; wofull crye. Wherfoze to be rydde of them, he called vpo his foze ryders to passe on moze faster, so that lastely he came to his lodgyng.

When the duke was comen to his lodgyng, anone he comāunded all the offy- cers of the towne with the consulat or rulers of that same vnto a place called L. Germaine and the gates of h̄ place he toke to be watched with men of armes, and vpo the moztowe folowynge, comāunded al the armour & artillerie belonginge to the towne, to be bryought to a place by

him assigned, & there to be kept by his officers. Then h̄ cardynall came a- gain to the duke, & bryought with him dyuers doctours of diuynite & other, which made to hym assidueate labour for merce to be shewed to the towne & to the inhabitants of the same. But all they coude get no graunt of him, but h̄ as vpon the moztowe they shuld know the sentence h̄ he wolde geue v- pon the towne & inhabitants of the same. And for that sentence myght be well vnderstanden of h̄ people, he comāunded h̄ at after noone a scaffolde shulde be made in the chiefe place or strete of the towne. Wher, vpon h̄ mo- ztowe being the. xxvii. day of January diuers of the dukes councei betw vpo the sayde scaffolde, & the people of the towne being there p̄esent as well p̄- soners as other, after a longe oracion made by h̄ dukes chaunceler of h̄ great and heynouse dede lately there doone by the inhabitants of h̄ towne, for h̄ which, correction tempozal might not be so greuous, all be it h̄ the duke at h̄ comāndemēt of the bishop of Rome and requeste of his legat & cardynall there p̄esent, had mitigate or lessed h̄ punishment, as after shuld wel apere by declaration of the sentence folow- ing, after which p̄otestacyon, the sen- tence was p̄oclined as foloweth.

Fyrt the cominaltie of the towne for they; rebellpon & dysobedience a- gayne they; p̄ynce done, shulde paye vnto the king. vi. scoze. iii. frankes, & a franke is worth. ii. s. ster. And so the towne shulde be charged with. lx. iii. And ouer h̄ to pay all suche costes and charges, as the duke had spente by occasyon of this iournay. Secun- darily. vi. hundzeth persones of the towne such as might be tried most cul- pable in thys offence, shuld suffre deeth. That is to wytte. ii. C. to be hanged

A terrible and
loze indgement

Bbb. i. wryth

with chapues. ii. C. to be heded & their hedes to be sente vnto dyuerse good townes of fraunce, & the other. ii. C. such as of p. vi. C. shalbe found most guiltye of the beginning of that spor, shuld be byent, and p. they and also the other. ii. C. whiche shulde be hanged, shuld be caried vnto diuers good townes of fraunce, & there to haue they; execution, to the better feare & terrout of all other, and all their goodes to be forsafted to the kyng. Thirde. ii. gates of the towne such as p. duke wold apoynte, with the walles and towres standyng betwene the sayde gates, to be made playne wth the grounde, & the dyke of p. towne to be fylled wth the same. Fourthly all maner of ordenaunce & abylymentes for warre belonging to the towne, to be forsafted vnto the kyng. Fiftely, the cominalty of the cytee to buylde a chapel, & to endowe it with so much lande as myghte fynde. vi. prestes there in, to syng for euer, and to pray for the soules of the persons befoze slaine. And the bodys which they had thowen befoze into p. foule and stinkyng pyttes, the counsell and chiefe rulers of the towne, shuld vpon their proper backs bying them vnto the sayde chappell, & there cause them solemply to be entered.

Sextly, that all suche goodes as the sayde persons so slayne had wthyn p. towne, or elles were spoyled by p. sayd cytezens, that it shulde be restozed vnto the wyues or nere kynnesfolkes of them so dead. When the proclamacion of thys sentence was ended, there was an exclamacion & crieng of mercy, and such sorow & lamenting made of the people, p. the noyse therof sounded to the heuens. But to byng this tragedie to conclusyon, spynally, suche labour was made vnto the duke, as wel by exhortacion of sermons and o-

ther, that all thynges were pardoned excepte the foundation of the chappell and execution of certayne persones, whiche were accused to be the occasyoners of thys myschefe, and also the costes of that iourney, the which were celled at. xliii. M. frankis or. xliii. C. li. sterlynges. After whiche ende thus made, the consulates of p. towne were restozed agayne to they; habyte & rule and to them was admitted all former offyces and rule of the towne, excepte the offyce of Baylywke.

In the moneth of July began the inhabitautes of Gaunt in Flaunders, to rebell agayn they; earle of newe, p. cause wherof is not shewed. But they wth ayde whiche they had of Jpre, Courtray, and other townes, made a great holte, and rode streyght vnto a towne in Flaunders called Dyrmeu entendyng to haue taken it. But the earle being warned therof, with ayde of Bjuges & of Franke & other, maned out a company agayne the other and met with them in a plaine felde, & after a sharpe skymyshe, put theym of Gaunt to flyght, & slewe of them diuers, & tooke of them certayne prysoners, & pursued them vnto the towne of Jpre, and layde spege to the same. When the heddes of the towne knew that the earle was there in proper pacione, vnder a certayne appointement they opened the gates, and receyued hym in. But manye of hys enemyes were fled vnto Courtray. And when the earle had rested him in p. towne. ii. daies, & done there some execution, he departed thence & rode vnto Bjuges and helde hym there. In whiche season the other whiche as about is said were fled vnto Courtray, fell at bayraunce within theim selfe, and slewe they; capitayn, & after fled the towne and wyfted euery man for hym selfe.

Then

The rebelle
of the towne
Gaunt

The leuenth parte.

191.

Then a knyghte called Syr Roger of Gaunt, came vnto þe towne of Courtray, and so exhorted the rulers of the towne, þe they promysed hym to take his part. Wherupon he gate a baner of the earles armes in his hande, and so rydyng aboute that towne cryed, who that wolde take the earles party and his, lette hym folowe that baner, whome the people folowed in greute nounder. And when the earle was ascertayned of that dede, and howe the towne of Courtray was tourned vnto his party, anon he assembled of oþer townes, and also of that, and of Frys, so muche that his hoste was esteemed at .lx. M. men. With the which he sped hym vnto Gaunt, and laide a stronge spege there about. But by the death of the frenche kyng which dyed shortly after, the earle was fayne to chaunge his mynde, & to remoue his spege o; elles, as some wyrters report for strength of the sayd towne, which myghte not lyghly be gotte, for lacke of good vpon þe earles partie to main tayne that spege. Then in the moneth of September and. xvi. dayes of the same, kyng Charles dyed at his manour called Plaisance sur Marne, & was buried by his wyfe in the monastery of sayncte Denys, when he had

reigned. xv. yeres and vi. monethes, with odde dayes, leauinge after hym iii sonnes, Charles which was kyng after hym, and Lewis that he hadde made earle of Maloys and after duke of Angroue, and Phylippe Earle of Poitiers.

Anglia.

Englands.



Richarde the seconde of þe name, and sonne of Wyntze Edward eldeste sonne of Edward the thyrde, a chyld of the age of a. xi. yeres, beganne his reygne ouer the realme of Englande, the. xxi. daye of Juny, in the yere of oure Lorde a thousande. iii. C. xxi. and the. xii. yere of þ. vi. Charles then kyng of Fraunce. This Rycharde was borne at Burdesou, of whose byrthe some wyrters tell wouiders, the which I passe ouer.

Richarde the seconde.

And vpon the. xv. daye of July in the yere aboue sayde he was crowned at Westminster being the daye of the translacon of sayncte Symthyn. In whiche time and season stode Maye and Myues of þe cytee of London these persones folwyng.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxviii.

Roger.

And yetwe Pytman.

Archolias Byembye.

Archolias Chyfforde.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxviii.

Anno. i.

The whiche dyd contynue so in theyr offyces, that is to say the Wyntzes till Whigheymas, and

the Maye, tyll the feast of Symon and Jude. At whiche season were chosen and admitted newe offycers.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxviii.

Roger.

John Boleham.

John Phylpot.

Thomas Cornwaleys.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxix.

Anno. ii.

Wbb. ii. Jo

The death of Charles.

The death of Charles.

Rycharde the seconde.

Eyr. ii. p. 11.



In the moneth of August and beginnyngs of the.ii. yere of kyng Richard, for variaunce whych was betwene þe lord Latimer & sir Rafe Ferrers vpon þe one part, & sir Robert Hall & Whakerley esquier vpon that other part, for a prysoner taken beyonde the see in Spayne, called the lord of Dene, whome þe sayde esquier helde in theyr possessyon con-

trary the wylles of þe foresayd knyghtes, for the sayd cause the sayd knyghtes entred þe church of saint Peter in London, & there finding the sayd sir Robert kneling at masse, wpythout reuerence of the sacrament or place, slew him in the church at þe hygh masse season, and after þe other named Whakerley was by their meanes arrested and had to the towre of London, where he was kepte as prysoner longe after.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxii.

Grocer.

John Hadley.

John Hephysdone.

William Baret.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxii.

Anno. iiii.

Eyr. iii. p. 11.



In the moneth of May and the latter end of the.ii. yere of king Richard, certayne Galys and other shippes sent by Charles the fyrste then kyng of Fraunce, of the whiche was chefe patron or capytayne a knyght named sir Olyver de Clycon, landed in dyuers places of Englande & dyd much harme, and lastly entred the ryuer of Chamis, and so came to Graulende where he spoiled the towne and byent a parte thereof, and retourned into Fraunce wpyth muche rychesse as aftermeth the frenche cronycle. In this yere also was holden a parliament at Westmynster, in the whiche was graunted that all menne and women beyng of the age of. xiiii. yeres and aboue, shulde paye vnto the kyng. iiii. d. By reason wherof, great grudge & murmure grewe amonge the commons, as after shall appere. Then with that money an armie was prepared, and thereof was made chiefe gouernoure sir Thomas of Woodstoke Earle of Cambridge and vncle vnto the kyng. The whiche with a compaign of. vii. or. vyghe thousande, as testifeth the

frenche cronycle, passed the water of Summe, in the begynnyng of August, and also the begynnyng of the thyrde yere of kyng Richard, and so came vnto Dorsons, and passed the riuers of Ouse and of Hamme and other, and so went befoze Crops and wanne it, and after lodged them a twene Awe towne and Dens.

And euer as they passed þe countrees, other they toke greete synaunces, or elles fyrde the townes as they wente. And all be it, that the frenche kyng hadde sente agayne them an armie of frenchemen to withstande them, they letted them nothyng of theyr purpose, but and they had any shympylshes with them, the frenchemen were putte vnto the wooste, so that they bette them and tooke of them dyuerse prysoners, and ransomed them at theyr pleasures.

And thus holdyng theyr iourne, they passed by the countrey of Gasynopes, and so into Byrtayne, where they were iopoulyse receyued of sir John de Mountfoide, duke of that prouynce whiche then was newlye compn thpyther,

Anno

The seventh parte.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxx.

fr. Wemonger.

Walter Duket.

William wallworth.

William knyghthode.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxx.

Anno. iiii.

In this maner yere & ende of the thyrde yere of kinge Richard, towards þe somer season in dyuers places of the land the commons arose sodainly, & ordeyned to them rulers and capitaynes, and specially in Kent and Essex. The which named their leders, Jacke strawe, William Wat Tyler, Jacke Shepeherde, Thomas Miller, & Hob Carter. These entruled compaigne gathered vnto theym greete multytude of the commons, & after spedde them towarde the cytee of London, and assembled theym vpon Blakhe heathe in Kent, within. iiii. myles of London. And vpon Corpus Chyristi daye beyng then the eleuenth daye of June, they entered the Towre of London, and there the kynge beyng then lodged, toke from thence parloze, maister Hubberte then Archebysshoppe of Caunterburie, by Roberte Hals lozde or pryoute of saynte Johannes and a whete frete confessoure vnto the kynge. Whiche. iiii. persones with houghe nople and crye they ladde vnto the hylle of the sayde Towre and smote of theyr beddes. And when they had so done, they retourned into Southwarke by botes and barges, and there slewe and robbed all straungers that they myghte fynde. And that doone, they wente vnto Westmynstre, and toke with theym all maner of weynwarpe men, and so came vnto þe duke of Lancasters place standing without the Temple barre called Swanope, and spoiled þe was therein, and after sette it vpon a fyre, and byente it. And from thence they rode

vnto the heu place of saynt Johns in Smythfelde, & dyspoyled that place in lyke wyse. Then they entered the cytee, and serched the temple & other Innes of courte, and spoyled theyr places & byente theyr booke of lawe, and slewe as many men of lawe and questmongers as they myghte fynde. And that done, they wente to saynte Martyns the Graunde, & toke with them all saynewarpe men, and the prysoners of Newgate, Ludgate, and of bothe countres, and destroyed theyr registers and booke, and in lyke maner they dyd wth the prysoners of the Marshalse and hinges benche in Southwerke.

When Jacke strawe had thus done all thing at his wyll, and sawe þe no resistance was made agayns hym, he was smytten wth so houghe a presumption, that he thoughte no man mysdare. And so beyng enflamed wth the presumption and pryde, he rode vnto the Towre where þe kynge was, beyng smally accompanied of hys lozdes, and caused hym to ryde about some parte of the cytee, and so conueyed hym into Smythfelde. Where in the kynges presence, he caused a proclamacyon to bee made, and dyd full small reuerence vnto the kynge. Whiche misorder & presumption wher William wallworthe then Mayre of London behelde, of verie pure dysdayne that he had of hys pryde, ranne to him sodainly with his swerde, and wounded hym to deathe, & forthwith strake of his hed, and arreynd it vpon a spere poynnt, and therewith cryed kynge Rycharde, kynge Rycharde.

Wbb. iiii. When

Jacke strawe
slayne.

Rycharde the seconde.

when the rebelles behelde theyr cappytynes hedde, anone they fledde as shepe. Howbeit, many were taken & many were slaine, and the remenaunt chased, that the cytee and suburbs of the same was cleane voyded of the that nyght, whiche was monday and the .xv. daye of June.

When the king had beholden the great manhode of the maye, and assistance of his brethren the Aldermen anone in rewarde of that dede he dubbed the sayde William Walworth, Nicholas Brembre, John Dhyllpot, Nicholas Twysford, Robert Laundre, and Robert Gayton, Aldermen,

knights.

And in this season also called the hurlyng tyme, the commons of Kent, Essex and Suffolke came vnto the abbey of Burze, and there slew one of the kinges Justices called John Candyshe, and the prioure of the place with other, and after spoiled & bare awaye muche thyng out of the sayde place. But after this, aswell the one as the other of these rebelles were taken in diuers and sondry places, and putte in execucion by .x. by .xii. by .xv. and .xx. so that one of them accused the other, to destruction of a great number of them.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxi.

John Northampton.

John Kote.

John Hynde.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxii.

Anno. v.

Ch. v. p. 100.



In this mayes pere & moneth of Aprill, landed in Kent, dame Anne daughter of Charles the. iiii. late emperor of Almanie lately dead, & sister vnto Wenslaus at that tyme emperor, & which of the Maye & cytees of London was honorable met vpon blacke heth, and conueyed with

greate triumph vnto Westminster the viii. day of the moneth of Maye, and shortly after there solemnly married vnto kynge Rycharde. And aboute the same season, or after some wyters in the latter ende of June, was an earthquake in England, that the lyke thereof was neuer sene in Englands before that tyme nor sen.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxiii.

John Northampton.

Adam Bame.

John Dely.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxiiii.

Anno. vi.

Ch. vi. p. 100.



In this pere mayster Henty Spencer bishop of Norwiche with a great power of spirituall men and other, crossed by the commaundement of the bishop of Rome then Clement the. vii. enduring & some before touched in the last chapter of Charles the. vi. then king of France. This said bishop of Rome gaue this

authorite to the said bishop, to make war vpon the king of Spaine as some wyters haue, so much as he contrary the said bishop of Romes commaundement, withheld certayn possessions belongynge of right vnto the duke of Lancastre, by John of Gaunte, and specially vnto Dame Constance his wyfe. In perfourmance of which

Howe the bishop of Norwiche

by the king of Spaine as some wyters haue, so much as he contrary the said bishop of Romes commaundement, withheld certayn possessions belongynge of right vnto the duke of Lancastre, by John of Gaunte, and specially vnto Dame Constance his wyfe. In perfourmance of which

The seventh parte

526

acte, the sayde byshoppe entringe the
countre of Flaunders, and there the
Flemmynges wryth diuers myscrean-
tes suche as the foysesayde bynne of þ
countre of Spayne had thether sent
makynge respycence agaynst hym,
Wherfoze, he made to theym sharpe
warre, and wanne vpo them certayn
townes, as Braxelinge, Burchughe
and Dunkyrk, and wanne great and
rych pylage, so that he and hys soul-
dours stuffed and freyghte wryth it
as testyfyeth Wolperton, Eli. Ship-
pes. But sone after the Flemmynges
assembled wryth such strength, that a
boute Dunkyrk they gaue, vnto hym
suche assaute, that he was constrey-
ned to geue backe.

And for the sayde Shippes and
goodes shulde not come vnto the pos-
selspon of hys enemyes, he set theym
on fyre wrythin the hauen, and so was

wasted bothe Shippes and goodes.
And albeitt, that after thys mysshap
he recouered hys strength, and layde
spege vnto the towne of Fyze, and
wroughte the Flemmynges much care
and trouble, Moztly after, suche sych-
nesses fell amonge hys people, as the
flyre and other, that hys souldours
dyled of them in greate number, for
which he was compelled to leaue his
tourneye and to retourne into Eng-
land. In this yere also, was a battel
of feates of armes done in þ kynges
palayes of Westmynster, atwene
one called Garcon Appellaunte, and
sy John Inslye knyght defendaunt
of whych fyght at length the knyght
was byctoure, and caused his enemy
to yeld vnto hym. For the whych, the
sayd Garcon was from þ place dyan-
en vnto Tiburne, and ther haged for
hys false accusacyon and surmyse.

A battayle of
armes.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxviii

Grocet
Archolas Bymbze

Symond Wynchecombe

John Hoze

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxviii.

Anno. vii

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxviii

Archolas Bymbze

Nicholas Ecton

John Frenche

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxv

Anno. viii.



his yere kyng Ry-
charde holdyng his
Chrylmas at El-
tham, thither came
vnto hym the kyng
of Ermony, whych
was chased oute of

hys lande by the Insydels and Tur-
kes, and requyred ayde of the kyng
to be restoyed vnto hys domynyon.
The kyng fested and comforted him
accoydynge to his honoure, and after

counsayle taken wryth hys lordes con-
cernynge that mater, he gaue vnto
hym great sommes of money and o-
ther ryche gyftes. Wryth the whych
after he had tarped in Englande vpo
ii. monethes, he departed wryth glad
countenaunce.

And soone after Easter the kyng
wryth a greate armye yode towarde
Scotland. But whan he dytwe were
vnto the borders, such meanes were
soughte by the Scottes, that a peace
was

was concluded betwene both realmes
for a certayne tyme. After whych con-
clusyon so taken, the kynge returned
vnto Poyke and there rested hym a
season, in whych tyme barpaunce fell
betwene John Hollande brother to
the Earle of Kente, and the Carles
sonne of Stafforde, by reason of the

whych barpaunce, in conclusion the
sayde sonne of the Earle was slayne
of the hand of the same sy; John Ho-
lande, for the whych dede the kynge
was greuouslie amoued, and depar-
ted shortly after wth hys company
towards London.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxxv

Grocer
Nicholas Bembze

John Dyan

John Chychman

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxxvi

Anno. ix

the .ix. years.



Forthys yere kyng Ry-
chard asssembled at West-
minster his hygh court
of Parlyamente. Du-
rtyng the whych emog
other manye actes in the same coun-
saile concluded, he created two du-
kes, a Marques, and. v. Carles. Of
the whych sy; Edmund of Lan-
gley the kynges vncle and Earle of
Carydage was created duke of poyke
sy; Thomas of woodstoke hys other
vncle Earle of Buckyngham was
create duke of Gloucestre, sy; Lyonel
Tiere that was Earle of Drenforde,
was made Marques of Deuelin, sic
Henry Bolynbroke sonne and hey-
er of John of Gaunte duke of Lanca-
stre was made Earle of Warby, sy;
Edward sonne and heyre vnto the
duke of Poyke was made Earle of
Rutlande, sy; John Holand brother
to the Earle of Kente was made erle
of Hunteyngdone, sy; Thomas Mon-
braye was made Earle of Notinghā
and Marshall of Englande, and sy;
Michael de la Poole was made erle
of Suffolke, and chauncelloure of
Englande. And by authoryte of the
same parlyamente, sy; Roger Mo-
tymer Earle of Marche, and sonne
and heyre vnto sy; Edmund Mo-
-

tymer and of dame Phylippe eldest
daughter and heyre vnto sy; Lyo-
nell the seconde sonne of Edward
the thyrde, was soone after proclay-
med heyre paraunte vnto the crowne
of Englande. The whiche sy; Roger
shortly after sayled into Irelande,
there to pacfyre hys Lordshyppe of
Wulster, whych he was lord of by
hys foresayde mother. But whyle he
was there occupied aboute the same
the wyldre Jyrme came vpon hym in
nomber, and slewe hym and much of
hys companye. Thys sy; Roger had
issue, Edmund, and Roger, Anne, A-
lys, and Elianoure that was made a
nunne. The two foresayde sonnes
dyed wthout yssue, and Anne eldest
daughter was maryed to Rycharde
Erle of Cambridge, whych Richard
was sonne vnto sy; Edmund of La-
gly befoynamed. The whiche Richard
had issue by the sayde Anne Isabell
ladye Boucher, Rycharde that was
after duke of Poyke and father to
kyng Edward the fourth the whych
sayde Rycharde Earle of Cambridge
was put to death by Henry the fyfte,
as after shall appere. In this yere
also sy; Henry Bolynbroke Earle
of Warby, maryed the Countesse
daughter of Stafforde, by whom he
was

The seventh part.

was lord of that countre. And by her
he had yllue Henrpe that after hym
was kynge of Blaunche duchess of
Barre, and Phylippe that was wed

ded to the kynge of Denmarke. Also
Thomas duke of Clarence, John
duke of Bedforde, a Humfrey duke
of Gloucestre.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxvii

Goldesmyth
Archoblas Exton

Wyllam Stondon

Wylliam Poze

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxviii

Anno. x



Ad in this. x. years the
earle of Arundell was
sente into the duchy of
Guyan, for to strength
such souldiours as the
kynge at that time had
in those parties, or after some wyt-
ters to scour the sea of rousers and
enempes. The whych earle in keping
hys course or passage, encountred a
myghty flete of Flemmynges laden

wyth Rochell wyne, & set vpon them
and dystressed them & theyr wyppes,
and so broughte theym vnto dyuers
portes of England. By reason wher
of the sayde wyne was so plenteous
in England, that a tonne therof was
sold for a marke and. x. s. the chopse
And emonge other, in that flete was
taken the Sompylle of Flaunders,
whych remayned here long after as
pysoner.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxviii.

Archoblas Exton

Wylliam Wenour

Hughe fofstalle.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxviii

Anno. xi



Hys. xi. years of kynge
Rycharde, sy Thomas
of Woodstocke duke of
Gloucestre, the Earle of
Arundell, wyth the Ear-
les of Warwyk. of War-
by, & of Notingham, consydering how
the kynge & hys lande was myse led
bysa fewe persons about the kynge, en-
tendyng refozmacyon of the same, as-
sembled them to haue a counsaile at
Kadecoke bypge, and after attured
grete people, and so wyth a stronge
powre came to London, and ther cau-
sed the kynge to call a parlyamente.
Wherof herynge master Alexander
Beuple than archbishoppe of pozk
sy Lyonel Miere Marques of Deue-
lyn, & sy Michael de la Doole Chai-
celloure and Earle of Suffolke, sea-

ynge punishmente fled the lande,
and so dyed in straunge countres.
Than the kynge by counsaile of the
other aboue named lordes, durynge
the parlyamente caused to be taken
sy Roberte Trepallian chiefe Justice
of Englande, sy Nicholas Bjembye
late mayre of the cytee of London, sy
John Balybure knyghte of house-
holde, sy John Beuchampe steward
also of the kinges house, sy Symon
Burly knyghte, sy James Bernes
and sy Roberte Belknappe knygh-
tes, and a sergeant of armes called
John Wike, the whych by anthowpte
of the sayde parlyamente were con-
uicte of treason, and for the same put
to execucion at Tybourne and at the
towre hill. And John Holt, John Loc-
ton, Rychard Gay, Wylliam Burgh
and

and Roberte Fulthorpe iustice, with
the other foze sayde lordes, whych as
befoze is sayd voyded the land, were

by authoitye of the sayde counte of
parliament banysed and exyled the
lande for ever.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxviii

Goldesmyth

Sy: Rycharde Wyke

Adam Cathyl

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxix

Thomas Jullyne

Anno. xlii

The .xlii. year



Tales and
tournements.

As in the .xlii. yere
and moneth of No-
uember yet durynge
the parlyament, was
executed in Smyth
felde of London a
marciall Justes and
tournement, where as al such person-
nes as came in vpon the kynges par-
tye, they: armoure & apparayle was
garnysed wth whyte hartes and
crownes of golde about they: neckes

And of that soyte were. xliiii. wth
xliiii. lades also aparyled as aboue
is sayd, ladde wth. xliiii. cheynes of
golde the hoxles of them, and so con-
ueyed them throughe the cytee vnto
Smythfeld from the Towre of Lon-
don. Where the king, the quene, and
manye other great estates beyng pre-
sente, after proclamacions by the her

robber made, many goodly and mar-
ciall actes of warre were there put in
bye, to the great recreacion and com-
fote of the kyng and the quene and
all other beholders of the same. To
thys dysposyt came many straungers
Among whiche the earle of C. Boule,
the lord Dstreuaunt sonne and heire
vnto the duke of Hollande, & a yong
sonne of the Earle of Westmarche, were
greatly commended. And whan thys
Justes had contynued by sondry ty-
mes by the space of. xliiii. dayes, to
greate comfote and recreacion of ma-
ny yonge and lustye bachelliers desy-
rous to wyne wo:shipp, and to the
kynges greate honoure, that by al
season kepte open household for al ho-
nest commers, it was synysed, and
the straungers returned to they: cou-
ntres wth many tyche gyftes.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxx.

Grotter

Wylliam Wenoure.

John Walcot

John Loueney

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxx.

Anno. xlii

The .xlii. year



As in the .xlii. yere
of kyng Rycharde
an esquier of the
prounce of Nor-
uerne by fraunce
accused a English
esquier called Jho
Welche of certayne poyntes of trea-
son. For the trpall wherof a daye of
fyghte was betwene theym taken, to

be foughte in the kynges palaces at
Westmynster, where eyther of theym
kept hys daye and foughte there a
stronge fyghte. But in the end John
Welche was vntoure, and constray-
ned that other to yeld hym. Wher af-
ter he was dyspoiled of his armoure
and daryen to Tiburne, and ther hys
ged for hys vntrowth.

Anno

Anno domini. M. CCC. cc

Anno domini. M. CCC. cxi

Adam Bammie

John Fraunces

Anno. cxi

Thomas Wyuente.



At this. cxi. per off king
 Rycharde, Jho of Gauc
 duke of Lancastre, with
 a goodly compaigne of
 men of armes sayled in
 to Spayne, to clayme there such lan-
 des as he ther shuld haue in pryghee
 of dame Constance his wyfe, which
 was the daughter of Peter ryghtful
 kynge of Spayne, as in the. xl. peate
 of kynge Edward the thyrde is moze
 playnely declared. Whan the sayde
 duke was vpon that other side of the
 sea, there came vnto hym the king of
 Portyngeale wth a stronge armye, &
 so entred the terrytope of Spayne.
 But whether it were of the Englysh-
 men or longe of the Portyngealeys,
 muche harme was done to the Span-
 yardes, in robbynge and pyllynge the
 country, whych was cause of grudge
 betwene the king of Portyngeale and
 the duke, and caused manye Span-
 yardes whych oughte to them good
 wyll to withdraue and departe from
 them. In refozmacyon of whych euell
 certayne persons aswel Englyshe as
 Portyngealeys that were founde gyl-
 ty of suche robberye, were putte vn-
 to death, by meane whereof the other
 fered so, that wher by that meane the
 kynge and the duke were befoze put
 to greate afterdeale, by reason of re-
 fozmacyon of that euell they gat day-
 ly vpo theyr enemyes, so that in pro-
 cesse of tyme folowynge, the kyng of
 Spayne was dyuen of necessitye to
 create wth the duke of a peace and
 concoide. Of the which peace as wyl-
 nellith Polycronyde in hys last boke

and. vii. chapter, the condycyon was,
 that shoulde for synal concoide the king
 of Spayne shulde marye the dukes
 eldest daughter named Constance,
 and that doone he shulde geue vnto
 the duke in recompensacyon of hys
 costes, so manye wedges of golde as
 shuld charge or lade. viii. charreries
 and ouer that peatelye durynge the
 lyues of the sayd duke and hys wyfe
 he shulde at hys proper cost & charge
 deliuer to the dukes assygneys, &
 thousande marke of gold wythin the
 towne of Bayon.

And after thys peace was stably-
 shed, and suretyes taken for the per-
 fourmaunce of the same, the duke de-
 parted wth the king of Portyngeale
 to whome shortly after he maryed
 hys seconde daughter named dame
 Anne.

In thys yere also for cruel warre
 whych the Turkes made agayne
 the Januayes or men of Jeane, they
 requyred ayde of the kynges of Eng-
 lande and Fraunce. For the whych
 cause oute of Englande was sente a
 noble warrioure called earle of Alby
 wth two thousand archers, and out
 of Fraunce the duke of Burbon and
 erle of Ewe, with. x. v. speares. The
 whych kepte theyr iournay tyll they
 came vnto the cytie in Barbary na-
 med Chumys and some tyme belon-
 gynge to the sayde Januays. Wher
 the sayde Englyshe and Frenchmen
 bare them so manfully wth the ayde
 of the Januays, that in procelle of
 tyme they wane the sayde cytie from
 the Turkes, and put the Januays
 agayne

agayne in possellion therof, and toke of them many prysoners, the whiche were exchaunged for chrysten prysoners befoze taken, and ouer that forsed the sayd Sarazyns to yelde vnto the Januayes. .x. M. dukates of gold for confymacyō of a peace for a certayne tyme. But the frenche cronycle sayeth, that for so much, as the duke of Burbon had vnderstandinge that the duke of Lancaster made warre vpon kynge John of Spayne, he therfore left this iourney and ayded him

agayne the sayde duke of Lancaster to his lytle honoure.

But howe so euer it was, many of the Englyshemen were losse in those countreies by reason of the fyre and other sikenneses. Also Antoninus saith that the Sarazyns at this tournaye were not dyspossessed of the cytee of Chinis, but for a trence to be hadde for two yeaeres, they graunted vnto the Chrysten men a certayne summe of monye, and restytucion of manye Chrysten prysoners.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xli.

Dyaper
John He ende

Thon Cadworth

Anno domini. M. CCC. xlii.

Anno. xv.

Hentze Namers

Ch. xv. page



Forthis. xv. yere of king Rycharde, he keppinge his Chyrtlemas at his manpoute of Woodstocke the Earle of Penbroke beynge yonge of age was desyrouse to learne to wike, and requyred a knyght named by John saynt Johan, to renne wyth hym certayne courses. At whose request the sayde knyght ranne wyth hym in Woodstocke parcke certayne courses. In the whiche, were it wyth strooke or other myshap, the sayde earle receaued ther his dethes wound & dyed shortly after. In this yere also and moneth of Iune, a bakers man bearyng a basket ful of hoylebied to serue his masters customers in fletestrete, whan he came for agayne the byshop of Walpburys place standynge in Walpburay alep, a seruaunte of the byshoppes starte vnto the basket and tooke out one of the lones. And for the baker woulde agayne haue recouered his hoyle lose, the byshoppes seruaunte wyth his dagger brake the bakers head. Than came the inhabitauntes

of the strete, & wolde haue broughte the poman vnto warde for brykynge of the kynges peace. But he was rescolued by his felowes, & so had vnto the byshoppes palaces, whiche that day stode treasourer of Englande.

For this rescous the people beynge in a furie, in greate multytud gathered about the palaces, & wold haue entered perforce to haue set out the poma. Agaynst whome the byshoppes seruantes made resstence, so that the rumoure grew more and more. And the people of the cytee, aswel such as were of euil disposicion as other, entered into a great number. Faine of this doing than sprang to the maye which in al hast with diuers alderme & the shyffes, sped them thether to se the peace kepte, & dyd that he coude to withdrowe the people. But after the maye & the offycers of the cytee wer comen thether, the comons out of all parties of the cytee dreyue thither, in muche more multytud than they had befoze, so that the more they were in number the worse they were to rule. In so much that they woulde not be satysfied

The seventh parte

302.

Wed, thei might haue þ poman deli-
uered, whose name was Walter Ro-
mayne. And for to byng about thei
folly, thei made many assautes at the
gates of þ said palays, the byshoppe
hymselfe beyng then at Wyndesore.
Lastly after many shoutes & lyttes
at the gates made, by discrecion of þ
maye & alberne with other discrete
comoners of þ cytie, the people was
mynyshed and sent again euery man
to his dwelling, and al was sette in
quyet and rest. When worde of this
came vnto the bishop, in much worse
maner then the thynge was in deede,
he geuyng light credence without ex-
amination made in the mater, asso-
cyat vnto hym mayster Trundel the
archebishop of York & chaunceler of
Englode, & so greuously enfourmed
the kyng, þ he toke agayne the cytie
righte greuously dyspleasure, so that
in all hast the maye was sent for, to
the kyng. At whose comynge was
laid vnto his charge great and heu-
nous matters, þ he none otherwyle
ruled the cytie, but suffered the cyte-
zens to make suche assautes vpon þ
kynges hed offycers, to the kynges
great dishonour, & iopardy of suche
greate treasoure as he then had of þ
kynges i his custody & keepng. And
after brought vnto þ kyng his pre-
sence, of whõ notwithstandynge hys
reasonable excuse befoze made, he
was of the kyng right soze blamed &
greuously sayd vnto. Then was the
maye & the Sheryffes discharged of
the rule of þ cytie, & the liberties of þ
same sealed into þ kynges hãdes, & a
knight of þ court called sy Edward

Dalyngrigg, a good man & fauou-
rable to þ cytezens, was made gouer-
noure of þ cytie the .xxi. day of June
and continued in þ offyce to the first
day of July next ensuyng. At which
dave beyng in the begynnyng of the
kynges .xvi. yere of his reygne, he
was discharged, & sy Baldewyn Ra-
dyngton knight put in his roome, &
so continued tyl þ feast of Symon &
Jude folowynge. And for the moze di-
spleasure of the cytezens, all ples &
sutes kept befozetyme in Westmyn-
ster hall, were then remoued & holde
at York, to the greate nopaunce of al
the lande, whych so continued tyll
Christmas. And in this mayes yere
also, was a great trãllaciõ of bishop-
pes. Thys displeasure thus hãgng
towards the cytie, the cytezens made
contynual labour vnto the kynges
grace, by meanes of þ quene and of
doctour Grausende then byshop of
London, which ought thei especial
fauoures vnto the cytie. By whose
meanes the cytezens were restored
vnto their lyberties, & had licence to
chose of them selfe a maye and two
sheryffes, so þ vpo saynt Mathewes
dave folowynge, thei chose for sheryf-
fes Gilberte Hanfolyde & Han-
felde & Thomas Newington, and
vpon saynt Edwardes dave kyng &
confessour, thei chose for their maye
Wylliam Stondon Grocer, whych
by þ lyutenante of the towre were
at that tyme admytted and swozne.
But yet the kynges displeasure was
not reconcyled, nor the cytezens ad-
mytted vnto his grace and fauour.

The terms
remoued to
york.

The lyberties
restored agayn.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xcii.

Grocer.

Wylliam Stondon.

Gilberte Hanfolyde.

Thomas Newington.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xciii.

Anno. xli.

Ccc

In



In this mayes yere and xvi. yere of kyng Rycharde, this new maye with the worthiest men of the cytie, made assyduat & dayly meanes vnto the kynges grace, for to haue his moste boote oule pardon & his especial fauour vnto þe citie. The which at length by meanes of suche frendes as thei purchased about þe kyng, & specially by labour of þe good quene Anne, & the forenamed byshop of London, they were put in good cōfōrme vnto their de meanour & submissiō at the kynges cōmynge to Londō. Upon which cōfōrte the cytyzens made royall & costlyous purueyaunce to receyue the kyng in their best maner, & haupng monishion that þe kyng intended to come vnto his palays of Westmynster, appareled the in one luyery, & to the nobylte of. iiii. C. horsemen wel be seen, mette wth hym vpon the heth on thys halfe his manour of Sheene. Where in moste lowlye wyse accōrdynge to their dutyes they submytted them vnto hys grace, besechyng hym of hys special grace and pardo in all such thynges as they before tymes had offended agayne hys hyghnesse. And to þe entent that hys grace myght se the cōfympte of all hys othyr subiectes, the recorder made instaūce to hym, that he woulde of hys great bounte take so great payne vpon hym, as to ryde thorough the hys chaumber of London.

The whych request he graciously accepted, & so helde on hys iourname tyll he came at Londō byrdege, wher he was presētēd wth. ii. fayre stedes trapped in ryche cloth of golde parted of redde and whyte. The whych present he thākeful receyued, & after helde on his waye tyl he came at the

standarde in chepe, the cytyzens of þe cytie stādynge vnto eyther syde of the stretes in their luyerys, and cryeng kyng Rycharde kyng Rycharde, and at their backes, þe wyndowes & walles hanged wth al ryche tapettes & clothes of arasse in moste goodlye & shewyng wyse. And at the sayd standarde in chepe, was ordeyned a sumptuous stage, in the which wer sette diuerse personages in riche apparel. Amonge þe which an Aūgell was ordeyned, whiche set a ryche crowne of golde garnyshed wth stone & perle vpon the kynges head as he passed by. And that done he rode to Paules and there offered, and so rode vnto Westmynster, wher the maye and hys company takynge theyr leue returned vnto London.

Upon the morowe whych was the fyftene daye of the moneth of the sayde maye and hys brethren rode vnto Westmynster, and presented there the kyng wth two gyrlt basyns, and in them two thousande nobles of golde, besechyng hym in moste humble wyse to be good and graciouslye lord vnto the cytie. The which he accepted right fauorably, and gaue vnto them many cōfōrtable wordes.

And the thyrde daye folowynge, they receyued a newe cōfymacion of all theyr olde fraunchyses and liberties. Wherfore by counsaill of theyr frendes, they ordeyned an aulter table of syluer and ouer gyfte, & therein ymagery gauen & enameled moste curiously of the story of saynte Edward, the which was valued at a. iii. marke, & presented that also, & gaue it vnto the kyng, the which he shortly after offered to the shyrne of saynte Edward within the abbay. And so the great zeale & loue whych the

Howe the cytyzens of London entred the kyng Rycharde, comynge thorough the cytye.

Howe the cytyzens of London entred the kyng Rycharde.

Howe the cytyzens of London entred the kyng Rycharde.

The seventh parte.

31.

the counte p
the maye and
the go to
the counte
the counte

the foresayd bishop of London ought
vnto the cytie, & that by hys meanes
their liberties were agayne restored
thei therfore of their owne goodly di
spolycion, after his decease accusto
med them, & yet at this daye done, to
go perely vpo the feastfull dayes fo
lowynge, & is to say, fyrst the morow
after Symō & Jude which daye the
maye taketh hys charge at West
mynster, to Daules, & there to sape in
the west ende of the churche wher he
lyeth graue (De profundis) for his soule
and all chrysten, & in like maner vpo
Alhalowen daye, Chystmasse day, &
ii. the next days folowynge, Anewe
res daye, Twelfday, and Chadelmas

daye, wyth also the morowe after
Myghelmasse day, vpon the whiche
the Mayes perely take their charge
at Westmynster. All which .iij. dayes
not all onely the maye and hys bre
thren vse thys pprocess and kepe his
obsequy, but also all the craftes of
the cytie in theyr hyerces vse psume
perely.

And whē the kyng had wythdrawn
en as aboue is sayde, hys dysplea
sure from the cytie, then at Hyllarpe
terme folowynge & feast of Chystmasse
all the kynges courtes and ples of
the crowne with other retourned fro
Pozke to Westmynster.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xciii.

Grocer.

John Habley.

Dyete Barentyne.

Richarde Whptyngton.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xciiii.

Anno. xviij.

the counte

In this mayes begynnynge
& xvij. yere of kyng Richard
that is to meane the moneth
of Nouembre, certayn gentylmen of
Scotlande entendynge to wyne ho
noure, chalenged certain pointes of
armes. As fyrst the lord Hopyl cha
lenged the erle of Northyngham and
marshal of Englad, sy Wyllyam Da
rel knight chalenged sy Peter Court
naye knight, and Cokbozne esquier
chalenged sy Archolus Hawberke
knight. Which feates of armes wer
done in synthfelde of London. But
Harse was so frendly vnto the En
glyshmen, & the honoure of & iour
ney went with the, in so much that &
erle marshall ouerthetwe his appel
launte, & so byused hym, & in hys re
turne towarde Scotland he dyed at
Pozke. And sy Wyllyam Darel re
fused his appellaunt, ere they hadde
conne theyr ful courses. And & thirde

of the, that is to wyte Cokbozne, was
thzowen at the secounde copynge to
grounde horse and man.

And vpo the. viij. daye of Juny fo
lowynge, dyed & gracpouse woman
quene Anne, & lieth nowe buried at
Westmynster by hyr lord kyng Ry
charde, vpo & southsyde of saynt Ed
wardes chynne, to whose soule and al
chryste our lord be merciful. And this
yere in the moneth of Septembre, as
wytnelleth the frenche cronicle, by
meanes of & erle of Derby & other,
whiche then were in Fraunce for the
kyng of Englandes partie, and the
duke of Burbone & the erle of Ewe
vpo & frech partie id other, a truce
was concluded at saynt Omers for
iiii. yeres. But notwithstanding that
peace, the frenchmen and Englysh
men ran together sundry tymes, whē
the one espyed to haue any auan
tage vpon that other.

Ccc ii Anno

Rycharde the .ii.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xciii.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xc.

Heret.

Wylliam Bampton.

John Frenshe.

Anno. xciii.

Thomas knolles.

The. xciii.
pere.

This. xciii. pere of kyng Ry-
chard. he shortly after Christ-
mas with a strong army say-
led into Irelande. The which tour-
nap was moze to his charge then ho-
noure. For the maner whereof, syn it
souded to no honoure of the prynce,
myne auto; therfore lyke not in hys
booke to make any longe processe of
the mater. In this pere also o; about
this tyme, began the heresy of John
Wycliffe to spryng in Englande, &
whyche was greately auauanced by
meane of the scylme in the churche
hangynge at those dayes betwene
two byshoppes of Roine sittynge at
ones, the whiche began as befoze is
shewed in the. xciii. pere of Charles

the. vi. then kyng of Fraunce, Urban
the. vi. and Clement the. ix. and co-
tynued vnder Boniface the. ix. and
Benet the. xiii. Of which erronouse
opynions of the sayd heresy, whoso
is desirouse the contentes of the, let
them serche cronica cronicarum, and
there he shall se them bysely set out.

In thys pere also was wonderfull
tepest of wynde, by the space of July,
August & specially Septebr by vio-
lence wherof in sondry places of this
lande, greate and wonderfull hurte
was done both of churches and hou-
ses. This pere dyed Constance secod
wyfe to John duke of Lancaster, and
lyeth buried at Lynceter.

John Wre-
stle.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xc.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xc.

Wyntener.

Roger Elys.

Wylliam moze.

Anno. xc.

Wylliam Sheryngham.

The. xix. pere.

Ad in þ begynnynge of this
mayes pere, and. xix. pere of
kyng Rycharde. & xciii. daye
of Nouembre as affirmeth þ Freche
cronycle, kyng Rycharde, beyng the
at Calays, spowled o; tooke to wyfe
wythin the churche of saynt Archy-
las, Isabel the doughter of Charles
the. vi. then kyng of Fraunce. Which
lady Isabel as wytnesseth the sayde
Frenche stoze, at the day of hyr ma-
ryage was within. viii. peres of age.
And as it is registred in one of þ bo-
kes of gyldehalle of London, the
Frenche kyng in propre personne
came downe wyth a goodly compa-
nye of lordes and knyghtes, vnto a

towne called Arde, whyche standeth
bypon the vtter border of Wyrcorde,
where wythin hys owne domynion
a ryche and sumptuose pauplyon
was pyght. And in like maner a litle
beyonde Gynys within the englysh
pale, was another lyke pauplyon
pyghte for kyng Rycharde, so that
betwene the twoo sayde pauplyons,
was a distaunce of. lxx. pace. And in
the mydwape atwene bothe, was o;-
deryned the thyrde pauplyon, at the
whiche bothe kynges comynge fro
eyther of theyr tentes sondry tymes
there met, and had communicacion
eyther with other, the wayes o; di-
staunce atwene set with certayn per-
sons

sons appoynted standynge in arme two and two, the one syde beyng set with Englyshemen, and that other with Freche. And a certeyne distaunce from eyther of the two first sayd paupylons, stode bothe hostes of bothe prynces, or suche compaynes as before eyther of theim was appoynted to byng. Here if I should byng in the dyuers metynges of þe said prynces, and the curyous seruices that eyther caused other to be fed and served within eyther of their tentes, or of their dalyaunce or pastymes continyng the season of their metynges, and the dyuerserie of the many folde spices and wynges whiche there was mynistred at the sayd seoson, w all the riche apparell of the sayd paupylons and cupbordes garnysshed with plate & rich iewels, it wold aske a longe tracte of tyme. But who þe is desirous to knowe or here of the circumstaunce of al þe pemysses, let hym rede þe woꝝke of maister John Froysarde made in frenche, and there he shall se euery thyng touched in an ordre. And here I shall shortly touch the giftes that wer geue of eyther of þe prynces & of their lordes. And fyrst kyng Richard gaue vnto þe frenche kyng, an hanap or basyn of golde with an ewer to þe same. The agaynwarde þe Frech kyng gaue vnto him iii. standyng cuppes of golde, with couers garnysshed with perle & stone, & a shippe of gold set wþ a bere richely garnysshed wþ perle and stone. Then at their second metyng kyng Rycharde gaue vnto hym an ouche set with so fyne stones, þe it was valued at .v. C. marke sterlyng. Where agayn the frenche kyng gaue vnto hym .ii. flaggons of golde, a tablet of golde, and therein an ymage of saint Mychaell richely garnysshed. Also a

tablet of gold with a crucifixe therein well and richely dyght. Also a tablet of golde with an ymage of the Trinite, richely set with perle and stone. Also a tablet of gold with an ymage of saint George, in likewise set with perle and stone. Whiche al were valued at the summe of .xv. C. marke. Then kyng Richard seying þe bouite of the frenche kyng, gaue to hym a bauderpeke or coler of golde set with greate dyamantes, rubyes, and balesys, beyng valued at .v. M. mark, the whiche for the preciosytee therof, that it was of such an excellency and fynesse of stuffe, the frenche kyng therfore ware it aboute his necke as often as the kyng and he mette together. Then the frenche kyng gaue vnto hym an ouche, a spyce plate of golde of greate weyght, and valued at .ii. M. marke. Many were the ryche gyftes that were receyued of lordes and laddes of bothe prynces. Amonge the whiche specially are noted .iii. giftes, whiche kyng Rycharde gaue vnto the duke of Oyleaunce, for the which he receyued agayne of the duke trebyll the value. For where his were valued at a .M. marke, the dukes were valued at thre thousande marke. Finally when þe sayd prynces had thus eyther solased wþ other, and concluded all matters concerning the abouesayde maryage, the frenche kyng deliuered vnto kyng Rycharde dame Isabell his doughter, sayenge these woordes folowynge.

Right dere beloued sonne, I deliuer here to you þe creature þe I moste loue in this world next my wife & my sonne, beseechyng þe father in heuen, that it may be to his pleasure, and of the weale of you and youre realme, and that the ampte atwene the .ii. re-

Ecce iii almes

Howe kyng
Rycharde re-
ceaued the
doughter of þe
Frech kyng.

almes in auoydynge of effulson of
christen mens blode, maye be kepte
inuyolat for the terme attwene vs co
cluded, whiche terme was .xxx. wynter
as expyelleth the frenche Cronicle.
After whiche wordes with many
thankes geuen vpon cyther parties
preparacio was made of departyng.
And after kyng Richard had conueyed
the frenche kyng towarde
Arde, he toke his leaue & retourned
vnto his wyfe. The whiche was im
mediatlye with greate honoure conueyed
vnto Calys, and there after
to the king spoused, as befoze to you
I haue shewed. After the whiche so
lempnificacion with al honour ended,
the kyng with his yonge wyfe toke
shypppyng, and so within short while
landed at Douer, and from thence
sped hym toward London. Wherof
the cytezens beeynge warned, made
out certayne horsemen well appoin
ted in one lycure of coloure, with a
conspauce bodered vpon theyr fleues,
whereby euery felyshyppe was
knowe from other. The whych with
the Maye and his brethren clothed
in scarlet, met the kyng & the quene
vpon the Blacke heth, and after due
salutacion and reuerente welcomes

vnto them made by the mouth of the
recorder, the sayd cytezens conueyed
the kyng vpon his way tyll he came
to Newyngton: where the kyng com
maunded the Maye with his com
pany to retorne to the cytie, for he w
his lordes & ladyes was appointed
that night to lye at Kenyngton. It
was not long after but that she was
from Kenyngton, brought with great
pompe vnto the Towre of London.
At which season was so excreadyng
preece at London byrde, that by rea
son thereof certayne persones were
thrust to deth, amonge the which the
prioure of Typtre a place in Essex
was one. And vpon the morowe fo
lowyng, she was conueyed throughe
the cytie with all honour that might
bee deuised vnto Westmynster, and
there crowned quene vpon s sonday
beyng then the .viii. day of January.
In the somer folowynge the kyng by
synistre counsell deluyered vp by a
poyntemente the towne of Breste in
Bytayne to the duke, whiche was
occalpon of dyspleasure attwene the
kyng and s duke of Gloucestre his
uncle, as in the yere folowynge shal
be moze clerely shewed.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xcvi.

Goldesmythe.

Adam Baine.

Thomas Wylford.

Wylliam Parker.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xcvi.

Anno. xx.

Char. xx.

In this .xx. yere of kyng Ry
charde & moneth of februa
ry, the kyng holdyng a sum
ptuous feast in Westmynster halle,
many of the soudyours whiche were
newely comen fro the towne of Breste
foresayd, pzed into the hall, & kepte
a roime together. Whiche companye
whan the duke of Gloucestre hadde

beholden, and frayed and knowen
what men they were, and howe the
sayde towne was gyuen vyppre, con
trary hys knowlage, was therewith
in his mynde soze discomforted. In
so muche that when the kyng was
entred his chaimbze, and setwe nere
vnto hym, he sayde vnto the kyng:
Wy haue pe not sene the felowes s
latte

The seventh parte.

308.

satte in so greate noumbre to dape in your halle at suche a table. And the kyng aunswered yes, and asked of þe duke what compaignie it was. To whome the duke aunswered and said, Sy; these been the souldiours come frome Breste, and as nowe haue nothing to take to, nor knowe not how to mytte for their lyving, and the rather for that as I am enfourmed, thei haue been before tyme euill payed. The said the kyng, it is not my will but that thei should bee well payed. And if any haue cause to complain, lette them shewe it vnto oure tresourer, and thei shalbee resonably aunswered. In resonynge of this matter farther, the duke said vnto the kyng, Sy; ye ought to putte your body to pain for to wyne a stronge hold or towne by feacte of warre, or ye toke vpon you to sell or deliuer any towne or strong holde gotten w great difficulte, by manhode of your noble progenitours. To this þe kyng w chaunged countenance aunswered & said, Uncle how saie ye those wordes. Then the duke boldely recited þe fore said wordes. Wherunto the kyng beyng moze discontented said, wene ye that I bee a marchaunt or sole to sell my lande, by saint John Baptiste nay. But trouth it is, that our colyn the duke of Brytain hath redyed vnto vs all suche summes of money as our progenitours lente vnto hym or his auncetours, vpon the said towne of Brest. For the whiche, reason and good consience will that he haue his towne restored again. By meane of whiche wordes thus vttered by the duke, suche rancoure and malice kindled atwene the kyng and hym, that it ceased not tyll the said duke was putte to death by murdre vnlesfully. Then the duke apperceyvinge the

kyng his misledyng by certain persones about hym, entendynge therof reformation for the weale of the kyng and his realme, called vnto hym the abbot of saint Albons, & the abbot & priour of westminster, and shewed to them his secrete mynde. By whose counselles he made assemble shortly after at Arundell, to whiche assemble came at the dape appointed, dyuers lordes bothe spirituall and tēporall, as hym self, the erle of Arundell and other. Also thither came þe erle of Notyngham then marshall of Englade, the erle of warwike, and of spirituall lordes, the archebishop of Caunterbury, the abbottes of saint Albones and of westminster with other.

After whiche assemble thus made and eueriche of them to other sworn within the castell of Arundell, the eyght dape of August thei toke there their counsaill, and cōdescended that dyuers lordes about the kyng, as þe duke of Lancaster, the duke of York and other, should bee putte frome suche auctorite and rule of the lande as thei then bare, and other offycers suche as were thought p̄iudycyall vnto the weale of the lande, should bee dyscharged & punished for their demerptes. When this with many other thynges was emonge them concluded, eueriche of them departed tyll the tyme of an other metyng atwene them appointed. But the erle of Notyngham contrarie his othe and promyse fearyng the sequel of the matter, yode shortly after vnto the kyng, and discovered vnto hym all the p̄misses. Wherfore the kyng in all haste called a secrete counsaill at Londo in the said erle of Notyngham his place, or after some at the place of the erle of Hūtyngdone. Where it was concluded that the

said

The counsaill
of monkes &c.

The cause of
this business
is kyng Ry-
chard and the
duke of Glo-
cestre.

A counsaill cal-
led by þe kyng

Howe kyng
Rycharde in
proue pson
arrested hys
uncle & duke
of Glocestre.

said erle of Huntynghdon and other,
shoulde by strengthe fetch vnto the
kyng the erles of Arundell and of
Warwyke. And in the meane while,
the kyng in proue persone arrested his
uncle sy Thomas of Woodestoke at
Blakby in Essex as saith the Eng-
lish cronicle. All bee it an other wy-
ter in latyne saith, the kyng Rycharde
in proue persone rode vnto the mai-
nour of Grenewyche in the nyght
tyme, and there toke hym in his bed,
& commaunded hym vnto the towre
of London, whiche shortly after was
conueighed vnto Caleys and there
prouously murderid. And soone after
were the foresaid erles of Arundell
& Warwyke brought vnto the towre
of London, with also sy John Cob-
hain and sy John Cheyne knygh-
tes. But the erle of Arundell was ta-
ken to bayle and wente at large vn-
der suertie, tyll the begynnynge of the
parlyament. In whiche season diuers
other were brought to sondry prys-
ones. Then the kyng sent out his com-
missioners vnto the lordes of his re-
alme, for to come vnto his parlyament
whiche beganne after the .xviii.
daye of Septembre, in the begyn-
nyng of the .xxi. yere of the kyng, and
later ende of this mayes yere.

Here it is to bee noted, that Adam
Bame maye dyed in the begynnynge
of the moneth of June. For whome
was after chosen and admytted the
.viii. daye of the said moneth for maire
Rycharde Whytynghton, to occupie the
full of that yere, that is to meane till
the feast of Symond and Jude. But
vpon saint Edwardes daye folow-
ynge when the newe maye is accusto-
med to bee chosen. The was he elect
agayne for that yere folowynge.
And so he stode in the offyce of may-
raltie an hoolle yere, and fyue mone-

thes. Then to retorne to oure fyrste
mater, wher the kyng had assembled
his lordes, the whiche came with so
stronge and myghtie compaignes,
that the citee suffred not to lodge
the people, but were fayne to bee lod-
ged in small townes and byllages
nere vnto the same, within shortlye tyme
after the said parlyamente was bee-
gonne, the erles of Arundell and of
Warwyke were brought befoze the
lordes of the parlyamente holden at
Westmynster, and there fynally iud-
ged as foloweth, the erle of Arundell
to bee ladde on fote frome Westmin-
ster & place of his iudgemente thow-
ght the hygh stretes of the citee vn-
to the towre hille, where his hede to
bee stryken of, and the erle of War-
wyke was also iudged to deathe.

But for his greate age, by meane
of his frendes his iudgemente was
pardoned and altered to perpetuall
prysone, where as the kyng woulde
commaund hym. Whiche after was
had vnto the Isle of Manne in Lan-
castre, where he consumed the re-
sidue of his olde dayes.

And the erle of Arundell accor-
dyng to the sentence vpon hym ge-
uen, vpon the morowe folowynge the
feaste of saynte Mathewe beynge
laterdaye and the .xxi. daye of Sep-
tembre, was ladde on fote vnto the
towre hille beynge accompayned with
great strength of mene, for so muche
as it was demed that he shoulde haue
been rescued by the waye, how bee it
none suche was attempted, but peas-
ably he was brought vnto the said
place of execucion, & there paciently
& mekely toke his deth. Whose body
after was by the freres Augustynes
borne vnto their place within the
warde of Bydestrete of London, and
there in the northe syde of the quere
solemply

The erle
Arundell
Warwyke
demynd
dearly.

¶ parlyament

The seventh parte

310

solempnely buried, and after vpon his graue a sumptuous tounbe of marble stone sette and edified. And by auctoryte of the said parlyament, the archbishop of Caüterbury was exiled the realme. And vpo the mon- daye folowynge beyng the .xxiii. daye of September, sy; John lord Cob- ham, and sy; John Chepny knyght, were iudged to bee drawen, hanged and quartered. But by instaunce and labour of their frendes, that iudge- ment was chaunged vnto perpetual pryson. And this dooen, the kynge ordained a royall feast, & helde open housholde for all honest comers, for as affirmeth Peter Wyntouen a wyter of histories, this prynce kyng Rycharde passed all other of his pro- genitours in lyberalite and bountie. The whiche feast & also parlyament yet holdyng, the kyng created fyue dukes, a marques, & fyue erles. As first the erle of Darby sy; Henry of

Bolyghbrooke, soonne and heyre of John of Gaunte duke of Lancastre, was created duke of Herforde. The ii. whiche was erle of Rutlāde, was created duke of Innerle. The thyrde beyng erle of Hēt, was created duke of Surrey. The fourth beyng erle of Notyngham, was created duke of Norfolk. And the fyfte was the erle Hūtyngdon, the whiche the was crea- ted duke of Exeter. Also of þ erle of Somerset was made a marques of Dorset. And for the erles, first þ lord of Westmerlāde named Dane Raby Aeuill, was made erle of Westmer- land, the lord Tresorer sir William, Scrope, was made erle of Wylshire and sir Mountague was erle of Sal- esbury. And when this busines was synpshed, the parlyament was remo- ued vnto Shrewsbury vnto Hilla- rye terme, where it was synpshed to many mennes dyspleasures, and dys- heretyng of many trewe heyres.

The parties
mēt remoued

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxxviii.

Herce.

Rycharde Whyttyngton.

Wylliam Askeham.

John Wodecote.

Anno. xxi.

In this .xxi. yere of kyng Rycharde, the people of the lāde murmured and grud- ged soze again the kyng and his counsaill, for so muche as the goodes belongyng vnto the crowne were disperbled and giuen to vntwo; thy persones, by occasiō whereof dy- uerse charges and exactions were putte vpon the people. Also for that the chief rulers aboute the prynce, were of lowe byrthe and of small re- putacion, and the menne of honoure were kepte out of fauoure. Also for that the duke of Gloucestre was secre- tely murdred without processe of the

lawe, and many thynges els misor- dered by the laste parlyament, where of the wyte and blame was layed vnto the kyng and other persones af- ter named, as well for wrongfull dys- heretyng of sounde persones at þ said parlyamente, suche as were me- nyall seruautes of the foresaid duke of Gloucestre and of the erles of Arun- dell and of Warwyke contrary his owne proclamacions made concer- nyng suche matters. Also that where dyuers patentis and grauntes pas- syd the kyng his greate seale, as well for pardons and other matters, yet for the kyng his synguler aduauun- tage

tage and suche fewe personnes as bare the rule aboute hym, many of them were called agayn. Also where for Sheryffes and other offycers of all Shyres of Englande, were wonte to be named four by discrete personnes as iudges and other, of the whiche the kyng shoulde assygne two for the yere folowinge, he of hys owne wyll and pleasure wold refuse them and chose suche two as hym lyked, & which he knewe wel wold lene more to hys weale, then to the common weale of this lande or of his subiectes. Also that where befoze tynes & kynges of Englande used to sende out commissyons vnto burgeses of cyties and townes, to chose of theyr free libertie suche knyghtes of the shyre as they thought mooste weale full for the comen weale of the sayde shyre & lande, now kyng Rycharde woulde appoynte the personnes, and wyll them for to chose suche as then he named, wherby his singuler causes were preferred, and the common causes put by. Also kyng Rycharde throughe euill counsell, commaunded by his letters vnto the Sheryffes of all Shyres fewe excepted, that all personnes of honoure wythin theyr countyes as well spirytual as temporal, shoulde make certayne othes in generall wordes, and ouer that to wyte and seale certayne bondes for perfourmaunce of the sayde othes, and also for blanke chartour, which many me of substance wer constrained to seale to theyr greate charges. And as Hardyng saith, he was veraye prodigall, ambycious and lecherous. For there resorted to hys courte at theyr pleasures aboute the nymbre of ten thousande persones that had theyr desyes and commassementes. And that in his kytchyn

were thre hundred scrupytours and in euery office a great nobylte. And ouer, of ladyes, chaumberers and iuenders there were aboute the nymbre of thre hundred, and they all excelled in gorgeous and costely apparel, farre aboute theyr degrees. Women & groines were clothed in sylke as luten and damaske bothe dobles & gounes, with clothe of grayne and skarlette ouer sumptuous, and had theyr garmentes cutte bothe in the courte and townes, farre otherwyse then it had bene befoze his dayes, wyth byodery woork, ryche fures and goldsmithes woork, deuyng euery dape a newe fasson, to the great ruyne & decaye of & welthe of Englande. Also & kyng Rycharde dyd preferre suche byshoppes to byshoprickes as neyther coude teache nor preache, ner knew any thyng of the scripture of God, but only to call for their tythes & dutyes & to helpe to serue his lustes & pleasures, which in dede wer not worthye the name of byshoppes, but rather of naughty packes disguised in byshoppes apparel. In this tyme reigned also plentie of the fylthy synne of lechery and fornicacion, with the abhominable synne of aduoltry, specyallye in the kyng, but mooste chiefly in the prelacy, wherby the whole realme was so infect that it cryed for the wrath and vengeance of God. And as for taxyng and exactyng of the commons it was a vsuall thyng with hym & therfore was he hated in maner of all his whole realme, so & the people continually murmured & grudged, for these iniuries & many mo, which at the tyme of his depoynting wer articulated agayn hym in. cxxviii. sondry articles, wyth also the rumoure that ranne vpon hym, that he had letten

The seventh parte.

312

to serue the reueng of the crowne, to Busshey, Bogot, & Grene, which caused as well the noble menne of the realme to grudge again hym as other of the common people. Thus contriuing this unpylder within þe lande, dyed y^e John of Gaunt duke of Lancaster, at the byshop of Elyes place in Holboyne, and frome thens was caried vnto saint Doules, and there vpon þe North syde of the quite honorably buried. At whole enterremente all the chiefe lordes of Englande were present. For whome after was foundyd by dame Blaiche his wife an honorable anniuersary, as before is shewed in the xliiii. yere of Edward the thyrde, whiche of right ought to be sette in this place.

This yere also aboute the feast of saint Bartholomew, fell discencion and discorde betwene the duke of Herforde & the duke of Norfolk. Wherfore the duke of Herforde accused the other that he had taken foure thousande marke of the kynges, of suche money as he shoulde therewith haue waged certain souldiours at Calais whiche he leste vndooen, and toke the same money to his owne vse. But an other wytter saith, that as the said twoo dukes rode vpon a tyme frome the parlyamente toward their lodgynges, þe duke of Norfolk said vnto that other: Sir, se you not how variable the kyng is in his wordes and how shamefully he putteth his lordes and kynnesfolkes to deth, and other exyleth and holdeth in pryson. Wherfore full necessary it is to take hepe, and not for to truste muche in his wordes. For without doubte in tyme to come, he will, by suche lyke meanes bying vs vnto lyke deathe and distruction. Of whiche wordes þe said duke of Herforde accused that

other vnto the kyng, wherfore either waged battaill with other before the kyng. To whome daye of metynge was gyuen to eyther vpon þe eleuenth daye of Septembre, to fight within lystes at Couentree, where all thyng was ordeined for. At whiche place as that daye assygned thither came the said twoo dukes, and appered in the felde before the kyng his presence, redy to dooe their battaill. But the kyng anone forbad that fyght, and forthewith exiled the duke of Herforde for tennie yeres, and the duke of Norfolk for euer, whiche sentence was shortly after putte in execucio. The duke of Herforde sailed into Fraunce and there tarped a season. But for lacke of ayde and comfote he departed thens and came into Brittain. And the duke of Norfolk passed by uers countres, and lastely came vnto the citee of Venyce, and there ended his life. And soone after this, was maister Roger Walden a chapeleyne of the kynges, made archebishop of Caunterbury, the whiche was a speciall louer vnto the citee of London, and made greate labour for theim vnto þe kyng his grace, that greuouly with theim was of newe displeased, for so muche as he was enformed of theim, that thei shoulde counsaill with other sheryffes to withstand certain actes made in the laste parlyament, for the whiche the commonalte of the citee was endited with other sheryffes. In redress whereof, by counsaill of the said archebishop, & of maister Robert Baybroke then bishop of London, the citezens made a lamentable supplicacyon vnto the kyng. Whiche by ayde and fauoure of the said twoo bishoppes and other louers of the citee, the kyng his pry and indygnacion by meane of that

lowly

Rycharde the ii.

lowly supplicacion was some parte
appealed and withdrawe. But yet to
cōtente a part of þe kyng his mynde,
many blake chartours were deuised
& brought into þe citee, whiche, many

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxxviii.

Goldesmythe

John Wade.

Dzewe Barentyne.

John Warner.

of the most substancyall mēte of the
same were faine to seale, to their pain
and charge in conclusion, the whi-
che shortly after was vied thoro-
ughe all countreys in Englande.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxxix

Anno. xxi.

The. xxi.
year.



In this. xxi. yere of
kyng Rychard, the
commō same rāne,
that the kyng had
letten to ferme the
realme of Englāde
vnto sir Wyllyam

Scrope erle of Wilshire & the trea-
sourer of Englāde, to sir John Bul-
shy, sir John Bagot, and sir Henry
Grene knightes, þ which retourned
shortly after to their great cōfusiōs.
This yere also, Thomas the soonne
and heyre of þe erle of Arundell lately
beheaded, the whiche Thomas not all
to his pleasure was kept in the hous
of the duke of Excester, passed the sea
by þe meanes of one William Scot
mercer, and yode vnto his vncle the
archebishop of Caunterbury, and so
continued with hym in þe citee of Co-
laine then beyng. In this pastyme
great purueaunce was made for the
kyng his iourney into Irelande, so
that when all thynges necessarie to
the honoure and nede of the kyng &
his people were redy, he sette forth-
ward vpon his iourney in þe moneth
of Aprill, leuyng for his leutenānt in
Englande sir Edmonde of Langlep
his vncle and duke of Porke, & after
toke shippyng at Brystowe, & sailed
with a mighty and strong hoste into
Irelande. Where he had so prospe-
rous spede, þe in processe of time with
manhode & good polycie he subdued
to hym that countre. In the whiche

voyage, were it for acte þe he did of
the kyng his bounte, Henry soonne
and heyre of the duke of Hereford the
exiled, was of þe kyng made knight.
This Henry was after his father
crowned kyng of Englande, and na-
med Henry the fyfte.

Kyng Richard thus beyng occupi-
ed in Irelande, and receiuyng of the
capitains of þe wylde Irish into his
subieccion, and orderyng of þe coun-
trei to sette in an ordre & rule, Henry
of Bolynghroke duke of Hereford be-
fore exiled, with the archbishop of
Caunterbury and Thomas of Ar-
undell and other, landed with a small
compaignie at Raunyspore in the
North countre. In the moneth of Au-
gust, & vnder coulour of the clayne
of his ryghtfull enheritaunce, rep-
led the people as he wente, to whome in
shorte processe great multytud of the
people dzewe and gathered. Of this
landyng kyng Rychard beyng war-
ned, for hasty spede of retournyng in
to Englāde, left in Irelande behynd
hym muche ordenaunce, and landed
at Wylford hauen in þe begynnyng
of September, and begynnyng also
of the. xxi. yere of his reigne, and so
yode vnto þe castel of Flynte in Wa-
les, & there rested hym & his people
& entended there to gather vnto hym
more strength. In the whiche meane
time the foresaid Henry that the had
proclaymed hym selfe duke of Lan-
caster in the ryght of John of Gaunt
his

The landing
of the duke
of Hereford
at Raunyspore
in the North
countre.

The iourney
of kyng Ry-
chard into I-
relande.

hys father was comyn to Wyllowre, and there withoutt resistance toke the Wylliam Wyrtwylle erle of Wyrtwylle and treasourer of Englande, Wyrtwylle Bushep, and Wyrtwylle Henrye Greene

Also ther was taken Wyrtwylle John Ba got but after he escaped and fled into Irelande. Then were the other iii there iudged and put to execucyon And kynge Rycharde beyng at the castell of Flinte, heyrng of the great strength that was aboute the duke, feared soe of hym selfe. And in lykewyse so dyd all suche as were aboute hym Wherfoze Wyrtwylle Thomas Wyrtwylle Earle of Wyrtwylle and than steward of the kynges houtholde, contrarpe hys alegeaunce, brake openlye the wyhte roode in the hal, and commaunded every man to shpke for hym selfe By reason wherof the people voided and the kynge lefte withoutt comfozt so that he was shortly after take and presented unto the duke. The whych put hym vnder safe keeping, and shortly after sped hym towarde London And when he came nere unto the cyte he sente kynge Rycharde with a secrete company vnto the Towre, ther to be safely kepte tyl hys comynge Wherof manpe euell dysposed persons of the cyte beyng warned, assembled them in greute number, and intended to haue met hym withoute the towre, & there to haue taken hym from such as ledde hym, & so to haue slayne hym for the great cruelty that he before tyme had vsed vnto the cyte. But as God wold, the mayre and rulers of the cyte were enfourmed of theyr malycious purpose, and gathered to them the worshipfull commoners and sadde men, by whose polpces not withoute great dyspculce they were reuoked frome theyr euell purpose, albeir, that lastyng that eu

moure they rode vnto Westminster and there toke mayster John Blake bene of the kynges chapell, and from thence broughte hym vnto Newgate and there cast on hym prons.

Shortly after, the duke came vnto London, and there by the consente of kynge Rycharde, a parliamente was be gonne vpon the xliiij. day of the moneth of September. Enduryng which parlyament, many accusacions and articles of mysrule of the lande, wer layed vnto the charge of thys noble pryncce kynge Rycharde, whych be engroced at length in. xxiij. articles. For the whych, voluntarily as it shulde seme by the copy of an instrument here after shewed, he shuld renounce and wilfully be deposed fro all kyngely magest, the monday beinge the xxix. day of September, and the feast of s. Mychael the archaun- gel, in the yeare of oure lordes incar nacyon of the accompte of the church of England. M. ccc. lxxix. & the xliiij. yeare of the reygne of the sayde Rycharde. The coppe of whych instru- ments here vnder ensueth.

A parlyament
wherein kynge
Richard was
deposed.



This presente instrument made the monday, the xxix. day of September, and feste of s. Mychael, in the yeare of oure lord God. M. CCC. lxxix. and. ix, and the xliij. yeare of hyng Rycharde the se- conde, wytnesseth, that where by the authoyte of the lordes spirytual & tempoal of thys present parliament and commons of the same, the ryght honourable and dyscrete persons here vnder named, were by the sayde au- thoyte assigned to go vnto the towre of London, there to here and testyfy such questyons and answers as thā and there shulde be by the sayde ho-
D D D. I noue

The copye of
the instrument
concernyng
deposicion of
king Rycharde.

nourable and dyscrete parsons hard knowe all men to whome these present letters shal come, that we sye Rycharde Drope archbishop of yorke John bishoppe of Hertforde, Henry Erie of Northumberland, Rafe erle of Westmerland, Thomas Lozde of Barkelepe, Wpylliam abbot of Westmynstre, John ppyour of Caunterbury, Wpylliam Chyngng, and Hugh Burnell knyghtes, and John Warkeha Justyce, Thomas Stowe, and John Burbage doctours of the law Cpytle, Thomas fereby and Denis Lopham notaryes publyke, the daye and yeaere aboue sayde betwene the houres of. viii. and. ix. of the clocke, befoze noone, were present in the chese chamber of the kynges lodgyng in the sayde place of the towne, where was rehersted vnto the kyng by the mouth of the foresayde Earle of Northumberlande, that befoze tyme at Conwey in Northwales the kyng beyng ther at hys pleasure and lyberte, promysed vnto the archebyschoppe of Caunterburye than Thomas Arundell, and vnto the sayde Earle of Northumberlande, that he shoulde be fof insufficiency whiche he knewe hym selfe to be of, to occupye so great a charge as to gouerne thys realme of Englande, he wolde gladly leue of and renounce the ryght and tytyle, aswel of that as of hys tytyle of the crowne of Fraunce and hys mageste, vnto Henry duke of Hertforde, and that to do in suche conueniente wyse, as by the learned men of thys lande it shoulde moost suffyciently be by them deuysed and ordayned.

To the whiche reherstal the kyng in oure sayde presences answered benynglye, and sayde that suche promysse he made, and so to the same he was at that houre in full purpose to per-

fourme and fulfill, sayunge he desyred wysse to haue personall speche wyth the sayde duke and wyth the archebyschoppe of Caunterburye hys colyns. And farthermoze he desyred to haue a byll drawen of the sayde resignacyon, that he myghte be persyghte in the reherfall thereof. After whiche coppe to hym by me the sayde Earle deliuered, we the sayde lozdes and other departed. And vpon the same after noon the kyng desyngng muche of the comynge of the duke of Lancaster, at the laste the sayde duke wyth the archebyschoppe entred the foresayde chaumber, byngynge wyth thein the lozde Roos, the lozde Burgeyn, and the lozde Wpylloughby, wyth dyuerse other.

Wher after due obersaunce done by them vnto the kyng, he samplarylly and wyth a glad countenaunce to vs appetyng, talked wyth the sayde archebyschoppe and duke a good season. And that comunycacyon synned, the kyng wyth a gladde countenaunce in presence of vs and the other aboue rehersted, sayde openly that he was redye to renounce and resigne all hys kynglye maieste in maner and fourme as he befoze seasons had promysed. And al though he had and myghte suffycientlye haue declared hys renouncemente by the redyng of an other meane persone, yet he for the moze suretye of the matter and for the sayde resignacyon shuld haue hys full force and strengthe, he therfoze redde the scrowle of resignacyon hym selfe, in maner and fourme as foloweth.

In the name of God Amen. I Rycharde by the grace of God kyng of Englande and of Fraunce, and lozde of Irelande, acquyte and assople all archebyschoppes, bpschoppes, and o-

ther

other prelates secular or religious, of what dignite, degree, state, or condycion that they be of, and also al dukes Marques, Carles, Barons, lordes, and all myne other lyege menne bothe spyrituall and secular, of what maner of name or degree they be, from theyr oth of feaute and homage, and al other dedes and pypules made vnto me, and from al maner bandes of allegeaunce and regalpe or lordshyppe. In the whiche they were, or be bounden to me, or in any other wyse constrained, and therein theyr heyes and successors for euermore frome the same bandes and othes I release deliuer, acquyte, and let them for fre dissolved, and acquyte, & to be harme lesse, for so much, as logeth to my personne, by anye maner waye or title of ryghte that to me myghte folowe of the foresayde thinges or anye of them. And also I resygne all my knyghtly dignyte, magiste, and crowne, with all the lordshyppes, powre, and pypules to the foresayde kyngely dignyte and crowne belongynge, and all other lordshyppes and possessyons to me in anye maner of wyse pertaynyng, what name and condycion they be of, oute take the landes and possessyons for me and myne obte purchased and boughte.

And I renounce all ryghte and colour of ryghte, and al maner of title of possessyon and lordshyppe, whiche I ever had or haue in the same lordshyppes and possessyons or anye of them or to them, with anye maner of ryghtes belongynge or appetaynyng vnto anye parte of them.

And also the rule and gouernaunce of the same kyngedome and lordshyppes, with all mynistracions of the same, and all thynges and eueryche of theyn, that to the whole Emprye

and suryscriptyon of the same belongeth of ryghte, or in anye wyse maye belonge.

And also I renounce the name, woorthyppe, and regalpe, and kyngly byghnesse, clearye, scelye, synghulerly and holy, in the mooste beste maner, and fourme that I maye, and with dede and woide I leaue of and resygne them and go frome them for euermore, sauyng alwaye to my successors kynges of England, al ryghtes, pypulegys, and appertenaunces to the sayde kyngdome and lordshyppes abouesayde belongynge and appertaynyng. For well I wote and knowledge, and demie, my selfe to be and haue bene vnusuffyciente and vnable, and also vnwythstandyng, and for myne open desertes not vnworthy to be put downe. And I swere vpon the holye Euangelistes here presentely with my handes touched, that I shal neuer repugne to thys resygnacyon by myssyon, or yeloyng by, nor neuer inpugne them in any maner by woide or by dede, by my selfe nor by none other. For I shal not suffer it to be impugned, in as much as in me is praeuelye nor aparte. But I shal haue, holde, and kepe thys renounsyng, by myssyon, and leuyng by, for ferme and stable for euermore in all and in euerye parte thereof, so God me helpe and all sayntes, and by thys holpe Euangelist by me bodely touched and kyssed. And for moze recozd of the same, heare openly I subscribe and spgne thys pcesente resygnacyon with myne owne hande. And for the with in our presences and other subscribed the same, and after deliuered it vnto the archebyschope of Canturbury, saying that if it were in his power or at his assygnemēt, he wold that the duke of Lancaster there pre-

sent, shulde be hys successoure and kyng after hym. And in token therof he toke a ryng of golde from hys finger beynge hys spgnet, and put it vpon the sayd dukes synger, despyng and requyrynge the archebyschoppe of poike, to shewe and make repoyte vnto the lordes of the parliament of hys voluntary respygnacyon, and also of hys entente and good mynde, that he bare towarde hys cosyn the duke of Lancastre, to haue hym hys successoure and kyng after him. And this done, every man tooke theyr leue and returned to theyr owne.



Vpon the morow folowing beynge tuesdaye and the last day of September, al the lordes spyrytuall and tempozall, with also the commons of the sayde parlyamente, assembled at Westmynstre: where in the pzeasence of them, the archebyschoppe of poike accordyng to the kinges despye, shewed vnto them serpously the voluntary renounsynge of the kinge, wpth al so the fauour the which he ought vnto hys cosyn the duke of Lancastre for to haue hym hys successoure. And ouer that shewed vnto them, the sedule or byl of renouncement sygned with kyng Rychardes hand. After which thynges in orde by hym synghed, the questyon was asked fyrst of the lordes, yf they wold admyt and allow the sayde renouncement. The which whan it was of the lordes graunted and confyrmmed, the lyke questio was asked of the commons, and of theym in lyke maner affyrmmed. After which admyssion, it was than declared, that wot wpthstandynge the foresayde renounsynge so by the lordes and commons admytted, it were nedeful vnto the realme, in aduopdynge of all sus-

peccyon and surmyses of euell dysposed persons, to haue in wrytynge and registred, the manyfolde crimes and defaultes befoze doone by the sayde Rycharde late kyng of Englande, to the ende that they myghte fyrst be openly shewed vnto the people, and after to remayne of recoorde amonge the kynges recozdes. The whych were drawne & compyled as befoze is sayd in. xxxviii. artycles, and there shewed redye to be redde. But for other causes than moze nedefull to be pzeferred, the readynge of the sayd artycles at that season were deferred and put off. Whych articles for that that they wolde aske longe tyme to wryte, and also wolde to some reders be but small pleasure to rede, I haue therefore left them out here of this worke whiche at length, are sette oute in the booke of the Mayes, and yeaue of Diewe Barentyne than Maye of London.

Than for so muche as the lordes of the parlyamente had well consydered this voluntary renouncement of kyng Rycharde, and that it was behoufull & necessarpe for the weale of the realme to procede vnto the sentence of hys deposall: they there appointed by authoryte of the states of the sayde parlyamente, the byschoppe of saynte Asse, the abbote of Glasterbury, the Earle of Gloucester, the lord of Barkelap, Wylliam Cypynge iustyce, & Thomas Cypyngham and Thomas Graye knyghtes that they shulde geue and bare open sentence to the kynges deposycyon. Whereupon the sayd commysyoners leynge there theyr heades together, by good delpberacyon, good counceyl and aduysemente, and of one assente agreed emonge them, that the byschop of saynte Asse shulde publyshe the sentence

tence for theyn and in theyr names,
as foloweth.

In the name of God Amen. We
John bisshope of saynte Asse o; Asse
nence, John abbot of Glasseburge,
Rychard the Erie of Glocester, Tho
mas Loyde of Barkelepe, Wylliam
Chyngge Justyce, Thomas Cr
pyngham & Thomas Gape knygh
tes, chosen and deputed specyall com
missaries by the thye estates of thys
pysente parlyamente, representynge
the whole bodye of the realme, for all
suche matters by the sayde estates to
be committed: we understandynge
and consyderynge the manifold cry
mes, hurtes, and harmes done by Ry
charde kyng of Englande, and mys
gouvernaunce of the same by a longe
tyme, to the greute decaye of the sayd
lande, & bitter ruine of the same wher
lye to have bene, ne had the especyall
grace of oure Loyde God therunto
put the soner remedye, and also fur
thermoze aduertysynge the sayd kyng
Rycharde knowynge hys owne in
sufficiencye, hathe of his owne mere
volunte and freewyll, renounced, and
geuen by the rule and gouvernaunce
of thys lande, wth all ryghtes and
honoures, vnto the same belonging,
and bitterly for his merites, hath sub
ged hym selfe not vntoworthie to be de
posed of al kyngly magest and estate
royall: we the pzemysse wel consyde
ryng by good and dyligente delibe
racyon, by the power, name, and au
thoryte to vs as aboue is sayde com
mitted, pronounce, discerne, and de
clare, the same kyng Rychard before
thys to haue be and to be vnprofta
ble, vnable, vnusuffeyent, and vnwo
rthy, to the rule and gouernaunce of
the foresayde realmes and lordshippes,
and all other thappertenaunces

to the same belongynge. And for the
same causes, we proue hym of al kyng
ly dygnitie and worship, of any kyng
ly worshippe in hym selfe.

And we depose hym by our sentence
dyfynytive, forbyddynge expresselye
to all archebyschoppes, byschoppes,
and all other prelates, dukes, Mar
queses, Earles barons, and knygh
tes, and to al other ma of the foresayd
kyngdome and lordshippes, o; of
other places belongynge to the same
realmes and lordshippes, subiectes
and lpeges what so euer they be, that
none of theyn frome thys tyme for
warde, to the foresayde Rycharde as
kyng and lord of the foresayde re
almes and lordshippes, be nyether
obediente nor attendaunte.

After whych sentence thus openlye
declared, the sayde estates admytted
forwyth the same persones for theyre
procuratours, to resygne and peld
by vnto kyng Rycharde, al theyr ho
mage and fealtye whych they haue
made and oughte vnto hym before
tymes, and for to Owne vnto hym yf
nede were, all thynges before doone
that concerned hys deposyng.

The whych resygnacyon at that
tyme was spared, and put in respyte
till the moze nette folowynge.
And anone as thys sentence was in
thys wyle passed, and that by reason
thereof the realme stode voyde wth
oute head o; gouernour for the tyme
the sayde duke of Lancaster respyng
frome the place where he before late,
and standing wher al myghte behold
hym, he mekelye makynge the sygne
of the crosse vpon hys foreheade and
vpon hys breste, after sylene by an
offycer was commaunded, sayde vnto
the people there beyng these wordes
folowynge. In the name of the father

Howe the
duke of Lan-
castre claimed
the crowne of
Englande

and sonne and holpe ghost, I Henry of Lancaster clayme the realme of Englande and the crowne, wpyth all the appoyntementes, as I that am dysce ded by ryght lyne of the bloude com mynge frome that good lord kyng Henry the .iii. and throughe the ryght that God of hys grace hath sente to me, wpyth helpe of my kyn and of my frendes to recouer the same, whych was in poynte to be vndoone for defaulte of good gouernaunce and due iustyce. After whych wordes thus by hym vttered, he returned and set hym downe in þe place, wher he before had sytten. Thā the lordes aperceuyng a herpynge thys clayme thus made by thys noble man, ether of theim frayned of other what he thoughte. And after a distaunce oꝝ pause of tyme, the archebyschoppe of Caunterbury haupynge notcryon of the lordes mynde stode vp and asked the commons, yf they wold assent to the lordes, whych in theyr myndes thoughte the clayme by the duke moze to be ryghtful and necessary, for the welth of the realme and of them al. Wherunto wpyth one voice they cried ye, ye, ye. After which answer, the sayde archebyschoppe goynge vnto the duke, and settinge hym vpon hys knee had vnto hym a fewe wordes. The whych ended, he roase and takynge the duke by the ryghte hande, led hym vnto the kynges seat and wpyth greate reuerence sette him therein, after a cetyne knelynge and oꝝyson made by the sayde duke, oꝝ he were therein sette.

And when the kyng was thus set in hys thron, to the greate reioysing of the people, the archebyschop of Caunterbury beganne there an oꝝacyon, oꝝ colacion in maner as after foloweth.



IR DOMINABI
tar in populo. Primo
Regum, Capitulo .9.
These be the woꝝ
des of the hygh &
most myghty kyng,
speakinge to Da
muell hys pꝛophete, teachynge hym
howe he shulde chose and ordayne a
gouernoure of hys people of Israel
whan the sayde people asked of hym
a kyng to rule them. And not wpyth-
oute cause may these woꝝdes be sayd
here of oure Lorde the kyng that is

For yf they be inwardly conceued, they shall geue to vs matter of consolacion and comfort, whan it is said that a man shall haue lordeshipp and rule of the people & not a chyld. For God thyetneth not vs as he some tyme thyet the people by Clare, sayinge Esai. 3. Et dabo pueros principes eorum, & effeminati dominabuntur eis, I shall sayeth oure Lorde geue chyldren to be theyr rulers and pynces, and weke oꝝ fere full shal haue domynion ouer them.

But of hys greate mercy he hath vpyt vs I trust hys perculper people, and sente vs a man to haue the rule of vs, and put by chyldren that before tyme ruled thys lande after chyldyshe condycions, as by the werkes of them it hath ryghte lately appeared, to the greate dysfourbaunce of all thys realme, and for wante oꝝ lacke of a man.

For as saythe the Apostle Paule ad Corintheos prima. Capitulo. xiii. Cum essem paruulus, sapiebam ut paruulus, & loquebar ut paruulus, et c. Quando autem factus sum uir, euacuaui que erant paruuli. That is to mene, whan I was a chyld, I sa uoured and spake as a chyld. But at the tyme whan I came vnto the state of a man, than I put by all my chyldyshe

Howe the
duke of Lan-
castre ad-
mynistred hys
reigne

of the condicions.

The Apostell sayeth he sauoured and spake as a childe, in whom is no stedfastnesse or constancye. For a chyld wyl lyghtly promyse, and lightlye he wyl breake hys promyse, and doo all thinges that hys appetyte geueth hym vnto, and forgetteth lyghtlye what he hath done. By whiche reason it foloweth, that nedely greates inconuenience muste fall to that people that a childe is ruler & gouernour of. For it is not possible for that kyngdome to stande in felcitye, where such condicions reygne in the hed, and ruler of the same. But nowe we oughte all to reioyse, that all suche defautes bene expelled, and that a man and not a chyld shall haue lordshyp ouer vs. To whome it belongeth to haue a sure rayne vpon hys tounge, that he maye be knowne frome a chyld, or a man vsynge chyldyshe condicions.

Of whome I truste I maye saye as þe wyse man sayeth in hys *Proverbys*, *Proverbiorum tertio capitulo*. *Beatus homo qui inuenit sapientiam, et qui affluit prudentia*. The whiche is to meane, Blessed be the man that hath the sapience or wisdom, and that habundeth in prudence. For that man that is ruled by sapience, muste nedes loue and dreyde oure Lorde God. And who so loveth and dreydeth hym, muste consequentlye folowe that, he muste kepe hys commaundementes.

By force whereof, he shall mynyster trewe iustyce vnto his subiectes, and do no wronge nor injury to any man, so that then shall folowe the wordes of the wyse man the whiche ben reherced, *Proverbiorum decimo*. *Benedictio domini super caput iusti, os autem impiorum operit iniquitatem*, Which is to meane. The blessing of our lorde god shall alwayght vpon the hed of oure kyng, beinge a

iuste & ryghtwyse man, for the tounge of hym worketh equyte and iustyce. But the tounge of wycked and of synners, couereth iniquite. And who that worketh or mispeth iustyce in due order, he not alonly sauegardeth him selfe, but also holdeth the people in a surete of restfulnesse, of the whiche ensueth peace and plentie. And therfore it is sayde of the wyse kyng Salomon, *Ecclesiastes decimo*, *Beata terra cuius rex nobilis est, et cuius principes nesciuntur in tempore suo*. Which is to be vnderstand that blessed and happy is that lande, of the whiche þe kyng or ruler is noble and wyse, and the prynces ben blessed that lyue in his tyme.

As who wolde saye, they may take example of hym to rule & gude theyr subiectes. For by the discrecion of a noble and wise man being in auctoryte, many euylles be sequestred & put aparte, and all dissymulers put vnto silence. For the wise man considereth and noteth well the great inconueniences whiche daily nowe growe of it, where the chyld or insipiente dyneth the swete and delicious wordes vnauldydly, & percepueth not entercappon whyche they bene myngled or myxted wth, till he be mynyoned and wapped in all daunger, as lately the experyence therof hath ben apparent to all our syghtes & knowleges, and not without the greates daunger of all this realme. And all was for lacke of wysdome in the ruler whyche demed and taught as a chyld, geuyng sentence of wilfulnes and not of reason. So that whyle a childe reygned, selfe wyl and luste reigned, & reason wth good conscience were outlawed, with iustyce, stedfastnesse, and many other vertues. But of this perrell and daunger we ben deliuered by the especial helpe & grace of god, *Quia uir dominabitur*

in populo, that is to meane, he that is not a chyldre but perfyte in reason.

For he commeth not to execute his owne wyll, but his wyll that sent him that is to wyt goddes wyll, as a man vnto whome god of his habundaunce grace hath geuen parfyghe reason and discrecyon, to dyscerne and deme as a perfyte man, wherfore not alonlye of thys man we shall saye that he shall dwell in wysdome, but as a perfyte man and not a chyldre, he shall thynke and deme, and haue suche a cyrcumspecte wth hym, that he shall dysgently forloke & se that goddes wyll be done and not his. And therfore now I truste the wordes of the wise man Ecclesiastici decimo shall be verifed in oure kynge, sayeng, *Index sapiens iudicabit populum suum, et principatus sensati stabilis erit*, That is as sayeth the wyse man, A wyse and dyscrete iudge shall now deme his people, & the domynyon of lordeshyppe of a dyscrete wyse man shall stande stedfast. Wher vpon shall than folowe the seconde verse of the same chapyter, sayenge.

Secundus iudicem populi, sic et ministri eius, etc that is. Lyke as the hedde and soueraygne is replenyshed wth all sapience and vertue in guydynge of hys people, admystryng to theim lawe wth due and conueniente iustyce, so shall the subiectes agaynewarde be garnyshe with awe & louynge drede and beate vnto hym nexte God all honoure, trouthe, and allegaunce. So that then it may be concluded wth p respdue of the foresayde verses.

Qualis rector est ciuitatis, tales et inhabitantes in ea, Which is to meane, Suche as p ruler of the cytee is, suche then be the inhabytauntes of the same. So that consequently it folowethe, a good mayster maketh a good dysciple.

And in lyke wyse, an euill kynge of

ruler shall lose his people, and the cytees of his kyngdome shall be leste desolate and vnhabyted.

Wherfore thus I make an ende, in stede of a chyldre wylfullpe doyng hys luste and pleasure wthoute reason, nowe shall a man be lord and ruler, that is replenyshed wth sapience and reason, and shall gouerne the people by skylfull domys, setting aparte all wylfulnesse and pleasure of hym selfe. So that the wordes that I beganne wth, may be verifed of him *Eccē qua uir dominabitur in populo*. The whiche oure Lord graunte, and that he may prosperously regne vnto the pleasure of God, and welthe of hys realme, Amen.

The whiche oracyon beyng thus fynyshe, and the people answerpge wth grete gladnesse, Amen: The kynge standynge vpon his fete, saide vnto the lordes and comons present. Syr, I thanke you my lordes spyrituall and tempozal, and all the states of thys lande, and doo you to vnderstande, that it is not my wyl, that any man thynke, that by the waye of conqueste I wolde dysheryte any man of his herpitage, fraunchyse, or other rightes that hym ought to haue of righte, nor for to put hym oute of that which he now enioyeth, and hath had before tyme by custome of good lawe of this realme, excepte suche priuate persones as haue bene agayns the good purpose and the common profyte of the realme.

And thys speche thus fynyshe, all Sherykes and other offycers were put in theyr auctorytes, whiche lasted for the tyme that the kynges sea was voyde, and after euerye man departed.

And at afternoone were proclamacyōs made in accustomed places of the

of the cytee, in the name of kyng Henry the fourth. And vpon the morow folowynge beynge wednesdays, and the fyrste daye of October, the procuratours aboue named, yode vnto the towne of London and there certified hym of the admissyon of kyng Henry. And the foresayde Justyce Wyllyam Chitynge, in the name of the other, & for all the states of the lande, gaue vp vnto Rycharde, late kyng all homage and fealty vnto hym before tyme due, in like maner & fourme as before I haue shewed to you in the xix. yere of kyng Edward the ii.

And thus was the noble Wyndesore pryued of all kyngly dignyte and honoure, by reason of his euell counsell and suche vnlaful wapes and meanes, as he by his insolence in his realme suffered to be vied, when he had reigned. xxi. yeres, thye monethes, and. viii. dayes.

C Charles the. viii.
Francia.



Colours of Charles the. viii. of his name, of the fyrte after the accompt of his french bystorie, a chyld of xiii. yeres of age, & sonne vnto Charles

the fyrte, beganne his reigne ouer the Frenchemen in the monethe of September, and yere of our Lord a thousande. lli. C. and. lxxx. and the thyrde yere of the seconde Rycharde then beynge kyng of Englande. This Charles was crowned kyng wpythin the age of. xiiii. yeres, contrarie a lawe made in the. xi. yere of his father.

And where by hym he was comytred vnto the rule of Lewys his vncle and duke Angeou, to the tyme of the

full of. xiiii. yeres, yet after his death of the father, such vnkindnesse beganne to sprynge betwene the lordes of the realme, that for the comon welthe of the same, it was agreed by the moze partye, that thys Charles shoulde be crowned at Raynes in all hasty speede. The which was done in wynte season after, and so contynued not withoute dysturbance of malice whiche kyndeled betwene his two vncles, and other inconueniences, by the space of. iii. yeres ensupng. The fourth yere of his reigne, the citizens of Paris mutynge and grudgyng for dyuers impositions and talkes of theim leuyed, sodenly arose in greate multitude, entendynge to haue dystressed some of the kinges housholde seruantes, and suche as were men of persone. But by mediation of one discrete person named John Barysle, with assistance of the prouost of the marchantes, the rumoure was somdeale appeased, in so muche that the greate multitude was wpythdrawen and retourned vnto theyr occupacions. But some euill disposed, which in a suspiciouse congregacion euer vse to exyte and styte his people vnto robbynge and other vnlefull actes, reassocate theim, and sayde, and cryed that they wolde haue the Jewes banished the cytee. To whome it was answered that the kyng shoulde be enfourmed of theyr desyre, and that vpon it, they shoulde haue knowledge of the kynges pleasure. Whereupon in a rage they ranne vnto the houses of the Jewes, and entred them by force in robbynge and spoylynge them, and bare awaye what they myghte carie, in sleynge suche of the Jewes as any resistance and defence made agayne them and neuer after restored his laide gooddes, notwithstanding that the kyng

in that behalfe, gaue soze & strenghte comaundementes. It was not longe after that suche as were of þe kynges secreete counsaile, consyderynge the greate charges and nedes of þe kyng and the weakeneile of hys treasoure, by authozyte of the kynges commissyons called befoze theym the rulers of Barps, of Roan, and other good cytees. The whiche beynge assembled, to theym was shewed the maner and importune charges whiche the kyng dayly had for þe defence of his realme and subiectes. Wherfoze by all wyse and polypke meanes þe they myght vse, they exhorted the saide commons to graunt vnto the kyng in waye of subspyde. xii. d. of the pounde of all warres at that daye curraunte. To the whiche requeste in conclusyon after aduise taken of theyr neyghbours, it was answered that the people were so soze charged in tymes passed, that they myght not susteyne or beare any more charges, tyll theyr necessaryte wer otherwyse releuid, so that in conclusyon at this season the kyng & his counsell were disappointed.

In the. vi. yere of thys Charles, þe Flemynge, whiche by a certayne season had rested theym frome battayle, were it for necessaryte or synguler couetyse of Lewys theyr duke, he asked of theym a greate apde or tace. And for he knewe well that yf he myght wynn the fauoure and graunt of the towne of Gaunte, he shulde the sooner haue hys pleasure of the respydue, therfoze he fyrste beganne by meanes of fayrenesse. And after when therby he sawe he myght take none aduantage, he added thereunto manasses & thretenynges, the whiche not wrythstandynge the Flemynge bode steadfast in one opynion, & denayed styfly theyr dukes requeste. Wherupon he

lastly departynge from Gaunte, wryth greate displeasure sayde, I wil shew my selfe to be lord and soueraigne of this towne & of the obstynate people of the same. And shortly after þe duke made warpe war vpon them of Gaunte and they in lyke wyse defended them vigozously so that their enemies wan of them lytle aduantage. And after this warre had ben a season continued, not without losse of many men vpon bothe parties. The Gaunteners remembryng the obedyence and fadylyte whiche they shoulde beare to theyr soueraygne lord & duke, made meanes that they myght be hearde. After graunte wherof, they sente vnto hym a certayne oratours whiche had vnto hym the wordes in sentence folowynge. Goodle soueraygne next vnto God, we deny not but we accept the for oure pryncce and leader, and to the as thyns it becommeth vs to obey with all reason.

And thou agayne arte bounde to defende vs. If we any thyng by our ouersyght & necligence haue agayne the trespassed, we mekely beseeche the of forgyuenesse. And forther more beseechynge the, that suche fraunchyses and lyberties to vs by thy noble progenytours befoze graunted, thou wylt not from vs withdraue nor abydge, by reason wherof thy people of Gaunte maye not to any tace contrarie theyr volunt be constrained. But & to thy nede of warres thou haue necessaryte of apde of thy commons, they of free wyl all constaynte sette aparte, are redy to apde and helpe the, as fre and as lyberall as thy trewe subiectes. By reason of whiche wordes þe duke was of hys ire towards theym somewhat appeased. But after theyr departynge from the duke or elles presence suche ponge knyghtes as were of the earles

Howe the
towne of
Gaunte
was
besieged

earles hoste, had vnto theym manye
hygh and dishonourous wordes, sayeng
that they were thall vnto theyr earle
and that theyr obstynacye shoulde be
to the vttermoste of theyr reproche &
correccon, and they by occasyon and
constraynt forced to do theyr dute.
By occasyon of whyche wordes, the
Gaunteners returnyng to theyr for-
mer wylfulnesse, kepte still theyr for-
mer opinion, & defended the earle and
his people as they befoze had done.
Wherfoze the earle seyng he myghte
not by strength pzeuayle agayne hys
enempes, studyed the wayes & mea-
nes to samplsh theym by hunger, so
that by that meane he myghte byawe
the towne to his subiection. And that
to byng to effecte he girded the towne
aboute with a stronge spege. Then
the Gaunteners suppysed with moze
obduracyon of harte agayne theyr
Bynce, made theim a capytayne na-
med Whylppe Artpuele, the sonne of
Jakes de Artpuele befoze layne of
Flemynghes, lyke as to you I haue be-
foze shewed in the. xviij. yere of Whylp-
pe de Valoys late kynge of Fraunce.
The whyche furnyschyng hys peo-
ple wth all habylmentes of warre,
made oute of the towne and pight his
felde in a plain toyning vnto it, where
the earles people and they foughte a
harpe fyght & longe. But in the ende
fortune was vnto the earle oze duke so
frowarde that wth losse of. v. M. of
hys souldours he was forced to take
Byuges for his suertye.

By reason of this byctoype, thys
Artpuele beyng not a lytle suppy-
sed wth pryde, exhorted in suche wise
the dwellers within the towne of Gaunt
and all suche as were nere neyghe-
bours vnto theym, to sette a parte
all occupacyon as well husbandrie as
other, and geue theyr hole study vnto

actes and fentes of warre. The earle
thus beyng within the towne of Byu-
ges, a daye of greate solempnyte pe-
relpe holden by theim of Byuges ap-
proched, whyche they wylshpped in
the honour of our Lordes bloode.
To this daye of solempnyte vled pere
lye to come, all the inhabytauntes of
the byllages & countrey there aboute
Whiche daye oze feast Whylp de Arti-
uele callng to mynde, appoynted vn-
to him. ii. M. of his souldours, & war-
ned theim with armoure beyng clad
vnder theyr clothes, to ascende by. ii.
by the, by foute, & lyke small compa-
nyes vnto this feastfull solempnyte,
and at such tyme as he gaue warning
euery man to be redy wth swearde in
hande, to make some amonge the pze-
sents to the ende that they myghte take the
earle then of helpe destytute. Whiche
cautele thus pzepared for, at the daye
comen of thys sayde feast, the towne
beyng replenyshed wth people, the
sayde Artpuele vnsuspecte of any per-
sone, wth his compagne in maner a-
boudesayde entered the towne of Byu-
ges. And when he saue his best tyme,
he sodenly cryed asarimis, asarimis.
With which sodeyne crye the earle be-
yng astonyed, manfully for a whyle,
wylshode hys enempes, and encou-
raged the people agayne theym. But
for that the Gaunteners were in ar-
mour and the other vnarmed, they
of the earles partye fled soone. That
seyng the earle, wth greate dyspulte
fled, and so leppng leopardoysly in-
to the house of an olde woman, esca-
ped and went vnto Sculse, and there
a whyle helde hym.

Then thys Artpuele seyng that
by the ayde of theym of Byuges, he
was dyspoynted of the earles takyng
fell vpon the inhabytauntes of the
towne, and shewe of theym a certayne
and

A cautele
wroughte by
Whylp de Arti-
uele.

and after with greate pompe and pylage retourned vnto Gaunt.



In the. vii. yere of this Charles, by procuringe of his vncle Lewis Duke of Angeou, a tace was eftared of the comons of Fraunce.

The whiche to byng to effecte, many frendes & promoters were made, as well of cytezens as other. But anone as the comons of Paris vnderstode of this, they became wilde, and assembled in thicke companges, not regarding the reasonable allegacions to them layde & shewed by Peter Dilec and John Darsyl, though in the they had great assencion & truste, but toke them to theyr assencion & mynde, and made amonge them certayne capitaynes and rulers, & kepte the watche by nyght as enemies had lyen about the cytee. Which insurreccyon and rebellyon thus begonne within the cyte of Paris, the cytee of Roan takyng therof example, arreared a lyke murmur and fensed þe cytee of Roan with lyke prouisiō, and made theim a mamet of a fatte, and bntweldy as a vilayne of the cytee caried him about the towne in a carte, & named him in dyspion of theyr pryncce, their kyng, & ceased not to fall into many inconueniencences, as robbing of holy places and other, not without shedinge of bloode, wherof þe circumstaunce were longe to tel. But as all operacion of man hath ende, so this foly and rebellyon of frenchemē was ceased, & manye for the trespasse therof caste in harde and darke priso. Of the whiche the kyngge entended to haue taken cruell correccyon, he had bene the great instaunt labour made by the rulers of the vniuersyte of Paris, and other suche as were nere aboute the kyngge. By whose meanes

the multytude was pardoned, and a fewe suche as were the begynners, were putte in execucion. And then as testifeth myne authoure mayster Roberte Bagwyne, for to appease the kynges hyshe dyspleasure, vnto him was graunted an hundred thousande frankes, whiche after sterlyngge money amounteth the summe of. i. thousande pounde.

He haue before hearde howe the earle of Flaunders with great seopar dy escaped þe handes of Philip de Artuele capitayne of Gaunt, & howe he came to Deluse, and there safegarded hym selfe. Where wpyth all dyspoygence he gathered vnto hym his people, & made a newe reyse vpon þe sayde Artuele. The whiche to hym had ascorate as affermeth my sayde auctour, fourtye thousande menne, so that betwene the Earle and hym was foughten a cruell fyghte.

Wherof in þe ende Artuele was a gaine victour, & constrained þe earle to forsake the felde with losse of. i. M. of his knyghtes, & he hym selfe escaped with greate daunger vnto the plende of
and dyuers of hys people as frenchemen & other, in a good nnumber fledde vnto a towne called Andwerpe, where a season they defended them agayne the malice of theyr enemyes. In whiche passetyme thys Artuele coniecturyng in his mynde that the frenche kyngge wolde take the earles partye, sente vnto hym an Ambassade or message wyth letters, beseechyng hym not to extremer of this warre betwene the earle and the Gaunteners, whiche warre the earle had commenced only of tyraunye and not of iustyce, entending vterly to distrope the auncient lybertye & franchise. Shewyng also further, that yf he wolde not at theyr contemplacyon
and

In insurreccyon within Paris.

In insurreccyon in Roan.

Earle of Gaunt

and prayer for here to ayde their said
erle, that the to defende theyr lyberte
and right, they would seke ayde of þ
kyng of Englande. To the whiche
requeste none aunswere was made,
neyther by the kyng nor by his coun
saill. Wherefore this Artyuele made
stronge prouysyon to wythstāde the
frenche kyng, and sette a certain of
his souldours for to kepe the syege
before Andwerpe, while he made pro
uysion for other nedes.

In this meane whyle, the erle wēt
vnto the duke of Burgoyne, & thei to
gether yode after vnto kyng Char
les, shewing to him lamentably what
wyoges þ erle had susteyned of þ ob
stinate Gaūtēers, beseching him of
aide to redres þ said wyoges. Which
cōplaynt the kyng graciously herde,
and benygngly graunted to them their
petyciō. And notwithstanding that
the ded of wynter was commyng, he
in all haste assembled his knyghtes,
and takyng with hym, the Dylābe
with a mightie stronge hooste per
ced the countreie of Flaunders to
warde Marquet in the ende of þ mo
neth of Octobere. Wherof heryng Ar
tyuele, made prouision to stoppe the
wayes, by breakyng of byddges &
other meanes, whereby the frenche
hooste was greatly impeched & let, so
that with greate dyspculyte & daun
ger, they passed the ryuer of Aysse at
a byddge, longe defended by the in
habitautes of the countrey, with ayde
of their capitain named Peter wood
whiche there was slayne with. iiii. M.
of his adherētes. After wyynyng of
whiche byddge, the frenche hooste pas
sed the ryuer, & spoyled the countrey
before them, whiche vnto them was
much auayable, for þ countrey was
inhabited with many rych cloth ma
kers. Then the kyng with hys hooste

made towarde the mounte of Aysse.
Wherof the dwellers of Aysse beyng
ware, set out two syers of the ordy
prechers, to beseeche the kyng to ac
cept that towne & dwellers vnto his
mercy, the whiche retourned with
cōfortable answere. Wherefore, forth
with yode forth. xii. of the notablest
of that towne, & offered the towne &
dwellers to be in the kynges power.
The whiche offer the kyng accepted
and after entred the towne. Of whō
the kyng receyued. xl. M. frākes, &
iiii. M. li. sterlyng towarde the wa
gynge of his knyghtes. And shortlye
after all the byllages there towarde
the see submitted them vnto þ kyng,
byngyng vnto hym certayne cap
taynes whiche belonged vnto Phi
de Artyuele, with also fourty thou
sande frākes towarde theyr costes,
whiche capitaines the kyng com
maunded to be forthwyth beheded.

When kyng Charles had tary
ed syue dayes at Aysse, woorde was
broughte to hym that Philip Arty
uele was commyng towarde hym
wyth. lx. thousande men. Wherefore
the kyng set forwarde his hooste, & fo
lowed after as fast as he might, som
deale to his payne, by reason of rain
& fowle waye that he passed, so that
synally he approached within. iiii. my
les of his enemies. Upō the morowe
folowynge beyng the. v. daye of the
moneth of Decembere, & yere of our

The battail
of Courtray.

lordes incarnaciō. M. CCC. lxxviii
and begynnyng of the. viii. yere of
this Charles, in a playne nere vnto
the towne of Courtray was fough
ten a cruel bataill. Wherof in the be
gynnyng the fleuynges had þ bet
ter, and forced the frenche hooste to
lose place. But in the ende halfe by
myracle as wytneseth myne autour
the frenchmē opteyned victory, and

Ecc put

Widow of the
French kyng
ouer the Flemyn-
ges.

put the Flemynge to flight, & them chased in so cruell wyse, that by deth in the feldde, & drownyng in marcs and other waters, there was of them slayne at that fight vpon. xl. M.

The narrowe serche was made for the capytayn Philippe de Artyuele. And lastly a Flemynge beyng a capytayne of hys soze wounded, sayde that he sawe hym fall in the feldde. Where vpon serche beyng made, his carpen was founden oppressed of hys owne people as they fledde. In none as tydnynges came vnto the Flemynge, that laye about Andwerpe of the lousynge of the feldde, they in al hast leuyng the; ordonaunce behynd the fledde from the spege. That perceyvinge they; enemyes, issued oute of the towne, and slewe of thein many, and many were drownded in fennes and marcs.

When the frenche kyng had obtained thus this glorious victorie he than entred the towne of Courtray, where he so restinge hym, oratours were sente to hym from the towne of Bruges, whyche then hadde newely taken party with Artyuele, and with the payment of an. C. & xx. M. frankes or. xii. M. ponde sterlyng mo-ney, there made a peace for the sayde towne of Bruges.

And when the kyng shuld depart from Courtray, he commaunded his knyghtes to bete downe the gates of thesame, wythoute harme dooyng vnto the people. But the frenchemen bearyng in mynde the rebukes and harmes, whyche they befoze of that towne hadde susteyned, bete downe greate parte of the walles, robbed & slewe much of the people, & sette fyre vpon the towne wher they had done. In robbing of this towne of Courtray, dyuers letters were found of the

towne or cytie of Darys, whyche conteyned the rebellys of the Darys-ces befoze declared, wyth comfort to thein for ayde if they neded. Which letters wher they came vnto the kynges sight, he was with thein of Darys greuously displeased, and for the same, thein by fyre greuously after punished. At such tyme as the kyng had thus repossessed the erle of the lordshipp of Flaunders, Gaunt yet remaining in the; fyrst erroure, held the; towne so strögly, that nother kyng nor erle myght wyne within thein. Albeit, that after the frenche kyng was retourned into Fraunce they sent certain oratours vnto him, the whiche he in no wyse woulde suffer to come in his sight.

In these passed yeres many skymishes and fyghtes were doen betwene the frenchemen and Englyshmen, which some deale are touched in the begynnyng of Richardes regne. But nothyng to the honoure of the frenchemen, as they in the; cronicles bolste and auauce thein selfe. Many mo rebellyons and insurrections of thys people myght I here byng in. But for dyuers consyderacions whiche to wyse men maye appeare, I thynke it better to spare, and also the rehersall of them wolde aske a longe tracte of tyme, wherfoze I passe ouer.



After the appeasyng of these inordinate insurreccions and murmures, and that the lande was some deale sette in a quietnesse, kyng Charles in the begynnyng of the nynte yere of his regne, maryed Isabell the daughter of the duke of Bauary. In thys yere also dyed Charles the kyng of Hauerne a man of great age, and

by a

by a wonderfull happe, as reherſeth myne autoure. For ſo it was, that for his febleneſſe or debyltee of age, he by counſayll of phyſicions was ſoed in a ſhete waſhed with aqua vite, to the ende to cauſe his olde body to catche naturall hete. But howe it was, as thys ſhete was tacked aboute hys bodye, the ſewer takynge his candell to burne of the ende of þe trede, or he were ware the fyre faſtened in the ſhete, and ſo byent his fleſh or it might be lowſed from hym, that he caught therof ſuche dyſeaſe, that he dyed the .iii. day folowynge. Whiche myſhappe fell to hym after þe opinion of myne autour by the wretche of God, as condygne meryte for his vnſtedfaſtneſſe & vntruth by hym befoze vſed, as in ſundry places befoze in the ſtoyes of kyng John & Charles his ſone are manyfeſtly ſhewed.

In this yere alſo a batayll was done at Barrys betwene .ii. knightes of the duke of Alenſon, whereof the cauſe enſueth. This ſayde duke had in his courte two knightes, whereof that one was named John Carogon or Carongyon, & that other Jaquet Gylſee, whiche were bothe in good fauoure of the kyng mayſter.

This Carongon, were it for delite to ſe ſtraunge countreys, or cauſe of other auenture as pylgrymage or other, departed out of Fraunce, leuynge his wyfe in a caſtel or fortreſſe of his owne, whiche wyfe was goodly and fayre.

After whoſe departynge, were it for beautye of the woman or for euil will that he bare towarde his felow, this Jaquet Gylſee entred the caſtel, bearynge his wyfe in hande, that he was comen to ſe that houſe, whiche ſhewed ſo fayre outward. The woman caſtynge no parell, acceptynge

hym for her huſbādes frende & hys, ſhewed to him the cyrcuite of þe place. But he in contrarie awaytynge his praye, whan he ſawe the womā ſatte from companye, ſoſed hys in ſuche maner, that contrary hys wyll he comytted with her aduoutry. At whoſe departynge ſhe gaue vnto him many rebukefull woordes, ſaynge playnly that if hys huſbande euer retourned ſhe wold of that belany be reuenged. This dede was kepte ſecrete tyll the retourne of hys huſbande. At whoſe home comynge, ſhe with lamentable countenance ſhewed to hys huſbande all the demeanure of the ſayd Jaquet.

After whiche complaynte by hys huſbande well vnderſtandē, he yode ſtreghth vnto the duke of Alenſon, requyrynge hym to do correcciō bpō the aduouterer, or els that he myght trye it with him in þe ſelde by fortune of batayll, whereof nother the duke wolde graunt, but brought the quarrell befoze the kyng. By whoſe agreement and commaundemente a daye by the kyng was ſette to fyghte at Barrys. Whā the day of batayll was comen, Carogon broughte his wyfe vnto the place, to ſuſtayne hys former ſapenge. After aſſymacyon whereof, cyther fyrſte ranne at other wyth ſharpe ſperes. At which courſe Jaquet wounded hys enemye in the thyghe wyth hys ſpere. But Carogon beeynge wyth it nothyng dyſmayed, lyghte from hys horſe, and bare hym ſo manfully, that he ouercame his aduerſary, and cauſed him to confeſſe his offence, for the whiche he was ſtreghth drazwen vnto the gybet of Barrys, and there hanged. And to the ſaid Carogon, the kyng gaue in rewarde a thouſande ſtraikes or a hūdyeth poude ſterlynge money, and

Cee ti ouer

ouer that he gaue vnto hym as an annuall fee oꝝ rent two hundred fran- kes, whiche is in value of .xx. poude sterlyng money.

Kyng Charles thus passynge his tyme with great murmur of his comons, and rebellon of the duke of Brytayne, wth many other aduersy- ties whiche were longe to wypte, last ly in the .xiii. yere of his reygne oꝝ nere about, he made warre vpon the people of west fraunce called in la- tyne Cenomanni.

When Charles was entred thys countrey, whiche was in the domy- nyon of the duke of Brytayne, & duke sente vnto hym messengers, sayenge to hym that he shulde not nede to in- uade hys countreie wth so greate strenght, foꝝ he & his shoulde be holy at hys commaundement. But of thys message & kyng toke no regarde, foꝝ as sayeth myne autoure, he was not moste wysest pynce, but was ruled by his housholde seruautes, & bele- ued euery lyght tale & was brought to him, & ouer that he was so lyberal that it was of wyse men accompted moze prodygalyte then lyberalytie. As Charles, notwithstanding this message of & duke helde on his iour- nay, commynge nere vnto a woode, he was sodenly mette of a man lyke vnto a begger which sayd vnto him whither goest thou sy: kyng, beware thou go no farther foꝝ thou arte be- trayed, and into the handes of thynne enemyes thynne owne meyn shall de- lyuer the. Wth thys monyshion of this pooze man, the kyng was asto- nyed, & stode styll, and begā to muse. In whyche study he so beynge, one of hys folowers whiche after him bare his spere, sleped vpon his horse backe & in his so sleppynge let his spere fall vpon the helmet of his felowe. Wth

which stroke the kyng was sodenly fered thynkynge his enemyes had comen vntowarly vpon him. Wher- foze he in anger dꝛawe his swerde & layed about hym at the geynest, and slewe .iiii. of his knyghtes oꝝ he were restrayned, and toke therewith suche an endelpe fere, that he fell therewith dysstraughte.

Wherfoze he was to a place there by broughte, & lay there in popnte of deth a longe season after, in so much that the same ran that he was dead. But by prayes & other great dedes of charyte done foꝝ hym, lastely he re- couered and retourned vnto Paris. And foꝝ he was not yet retourned to his persyghte helthe, his two vnclis then beyng that one duke of Berry & that other duke of Burgoyne, toke vpon them by autoꝝyte of the esta- tes of the land, to rule the realme foꝝ that season, in whiche season dyuers officers were altered & chaunged. The kyng thus contynuyng his sykenes many interludes and games wer de- uysed foꝝ the kynges recreation and comfozte.

And vpon a season he beyng lod- ged in the quenes lodgyng in the suburges of saynte Marcell, dyuers noble men of the courte made a dys- guyssynge, and apparayled them in linnen clothes glewed vnto their na- ked bodys wth pytche, & florished theym wth dyuerse colours & oyles so that they were couered all excepte the faces, and thus apparayled with foꝝche lyghte entred the Chaumbꝛe where as the kyng was, and there in goodly maner shewed theyꝝ dyspozte so that the kyng was therewith well contented.

But were it of rechelesnesse oꝝ of some euyl disposed person, syze was put to the vestures of & dysguyssers, the

Whiche
and strong
thing.

the whiche anonie was vpon suche a flame, that no manne there coulde quēche it. Wherfoze the said disguy-
sers beeing by reason of pytche and oples greuously tourmented, ranne into pyttes and waters whiche thei mighte soneste attayne vnto, and so with greate dyspycultee saued theim selfe.

In meane tyme wherof, the chas-
bye beeing with thesame fyrred, grew in so greate a flame, that in shor-
twhyle the moze parte of that lod-
gyng was consumed, & the greate
feare of the kyng and other estates
then there beeing presente, and aug-
mentyng again of his former syke-
nes, so that certain appoyntementes
to bee holden betwene hym and Ry-
charde kyng of Englande, were for
that tyme put of.

his head and mynistred to hym me-
decyns, the kyng daylye sekeled in
such wyse that he was nye dead. For
whiche consyderacion, thei examined
by phylosophers and doctoures of
physike and funde vncunnyng, wer
degraded of theyr presthode, and af-
ter beheded. To thys folge wer these
syfers broughte, by the exceptyng of
the duke of Burgoyne as the com-
mon fame went.

In the. xix. yere of this Charles
the lande of Fraunce was greuously
bered wth the plague of spydympe,
of whiche sykenesse a greate multy-
tude of people dyed. And that yere
was there also sene a blasynng starre
of wonderfull bygnes, wth streames
appertyng to mennes syght of mozte
feruente brennyng. In thys yere
also Charles hearyng of the subdu-
yng of kyng Rycharde, sente into
Englande twoo of hys housholde
knyghtes, requyryng kyng Henry
the fourth than newly made kyng
to sende home hys doughter Isabel
latelie maryed vnto kyng Rycharde,
wth suche dowar as wth hyr was
promysed.

In doopng of whiche message
kyng Henry toke suche displeasure,
that as sayeth Sagwynus myne
autoure, he threwe the sayde twoo
knyghtes in pylone, where through
one of theim named Blanchet dyed
in Englande, and that other called
Henry, after great sykenesse retour-
ned into Fraunce. And shorthe
after kyng Henry sente the sayde
dame Isabell vnto Calays, where
she was ioyously receyued of the
frenchemen, and so conueyed vnto
hyr sayde father, whiche as yet was
not of hys sykenesse cured. By rea-
son whereof, amonge the lordes of
Fraunce, eueryche of them couertyng

See iii to



In the. xvi. yere of this
Charles, the maryage
of peace betwene bothe
realmes was cōcluded
and finished at Calays
as before I haue shewed to you in
the. xix. yere of kyng Rycharde. And
that tryumphe fynished, Charles at
the contemplacion and prayer of the
kyng of Hungarye, sente vnto hym
Philip erle of Artoys, with dyuerse
other knyghtes in good nōumbze, to
ayde the said kyng again the Tur-
kes. The whiche after thei had there
a season warred, the capytaines and
the moze partie of the frenchemen,
of the Turkes were dystressed and
slain, and many taken pylsoners to
theyr greate charge.

Thys Charles thus contynuyng
his sykenesse, twoo syfers of saynte
Augustynes order beeing desyrous
of money, tooke vpon theim to cure
the kyng. And after thei had shauen

to haue rule, great dissencion & malice began to hendle, and specially betwene the dukes of Oyleaunce, of Burgoyne and of Berry. Than the duke of Oyleaunce entred to promote hys cause, vnknowyng the other lordes, allyed hym with the duke of Geldre, & strengthened hym with .v. C. men of his, & so entred the felde of Barrys. And in like maner the duke of Burgoyne, with a strong company kepte another coaste of the countrey.

Notwithstanding, by meanes of other lordes these twoo dukes were kept asunder, & at length the duke of Oyleaunce by the kynges commaundement that somewhat was than amended, was ordeyned regente of the realme. The whiche anone as he was sette in autoritee, fell to all rapyne, and oppressed the people with cotpuyan taskes and tallages, and spiritual men with dysmes & other exaccyons. Wherefore by reason of the studentes of Barrys, he was at length discharged of that dignite, and the duke of Burgoyne for hym put in autoritee. Then the duke of Oyleaunce beeyng discontented, rode vnto Lucembourg a towne in hyghe Almayne, & so sought agayn agde of the duke of Geldre sozelayd. But by his frendes he was so aduertysed, & with his owne folkes he returned in to fraunce. But yet the malice and stryfe atwene hym and the duke of Burgoyne ceased not.

About this season or soone after, dyed the duke of Bytayne. And as aftermeth the autoure afoze named, kyng Henry the. viii. maryed his wyfe. wherof her yng the duke of Burgoyne with a company of .vi. C. knyghtes entred Bytayne, & there by strength toke from her, her. iii. sonnes named John, Richard & Arthur, and presen

ted the vnto kyng Charles. In the xxi. yere of this Charles, was borne of Isabell hys wyfe a man chyld, which also was named Charles, the which after the deth of his father, vnto the great aduersite of all the realme of fraunce, was kyng of that realme, & contrary the apointment taken atwene Henry the. v. after kyng of Englande, and this Charles the father now kyng of fraunce, as after shall moze appeare in the story of the sayd kyng Henry the. vj.

In this yere also was dame Isabell somtyme wyfe of Rycharde lately kyng of Englande, maryed vnto Charles, eldest sonne of the duke of Oyleaunce. And John the eldest of the thre sozenamed sonnes of the duke of Bytayne lately dead, tooke to wyfe Margarete the daughter of kyng Charles. And Phylippe duke of Burgoyne dyed soone after, leauynge an heyre after hym named John. The whiche, after he was gyde with the swerde of the duchye of Burgoyne, he anone by euill entpyng and counsell, arreterd warre agayne the duke of Oyleaunce, to the great dysurbaunce of all the realme. For the sayde duke of Oyleaunce was a prince of a wonderful high courage, and despyous of great honoure, and after the sayenge of Sagwynus couepte to bee kyng of fraunce. The whiche wente to Bupnguyon, where as than late the xlii. Benet then B. of Rome during the scisme, and admytted by some of the Cardynalles after the deathe of Clemet the. vi. To which Benet the said duke made greute labour, to deprive the Vniuersite of Paris fro the greute autoritee the it at those dayes stode in, whiche was of merueylous autorite then, as sayeth the sozenamed

med auctour. In this wyle thus en-
duryng the lande full of myseryes
and aduersites, & quene whiche that
muche fauoured the duke his partie
accōpainted with the said duke rode
to take hir dispoite of huntynge into
the countree of Weldon. To whiche
place she sente letters vnto the Dol-
phyn by the duke of Bauary hir bro-
ther, & he with his wife whiche was
doughter vnto & duke of Burgoyne
shoulde come for to dyspoite them.
Where of John then duke of Bur-
goyne beyng warned, suspected the
quene that she with ayde of the duke
would conueigh the Dolphyn into
Garmaynie, and there to holde hym
at their pleasures. And to enpeche
that purpose, he in all haste sped hym
toward the Dolphyn, and contrary
to mynde of & duke of Bauary whi-
che then was vpo his waye with the
said Dolphyn toward the quene, re-
toured hym and lodged hym in a
strong castell called Luper. Where-
of herynge the duke of Oylepauce,
assembled to hym a compaignie of
sexe thousande knightes and came
again toward Parys, where as that
tyme & duke of Burgoyne was. And
he herynge of the duke his comynge
made hym strong to receiue him. To
whome the citezens of Parys were
fauourable and apdyng, for the ciuil
will & thei before bare vnto the duke
of Oylepauce, and also for thei ho-
ped by hym to bee desfered fro taxes
and tallages. Thus continuyng the
prouisyon vpo bothe parties to mete
shortely in playne bataill, suche po-
lytyke meanes was founde by a no-
ble manne called Mountague, that
a concoide and vniue was for & tyme
by hym sette atwene the said dukes.
And for that newe occacion shoulde
not by pfecte kyndle atwene them,

therfore the duke of Oylepauce with
his compaignie was sent into Guy-
to warre vpon the Englyshemenne,
and that other vnto Calys to laye
syege vnto that towne. The whiche
besoie had prepared a wondrefull en-
gyne sette vpon whelys, by & strength
wherof he thought to woork the greate
dysurbaunce vnto the said towne,
and as saith myne auctour Sag-
wyne, was in greate hoope to reco-
uer it againe to the subiection of the
hous of Fraunce. But that hope was
soone dyspayred, for it was not long
after of the said duke by & kyng was
countermaided and retourned. And
the duke of Oylepauce, after he
knewe that rescous were comynge
frome Burdeaur, he remoued his si-
ege laid by hym to Burgus a towne
of Guyan, and so retourned into
Fraunce, to his consulyon as after
shall appeare.



At the .xxvii. yere of this
Charles, the former ma-
lyce and enuye contyn-
yng in the brestes of the
said duke of Oylepauce and of Bur-
goyne, as & said duke of Oylepauce
was goyng toward his lodgyng in
the night of & tenth dape of Decem-
bre, full vpon hym certain knightes,
of the whiche one named Raufe Auc-
toule was leder, and slewe hym nere
vnto a gate of the citee of Paris na-
med Barbet gate.

The duke of
Oylepauce
murdered.

The duke of
Oylepauce
murdered.

After whiche murder fynished, the
said & Raufe with his adherentes
fled vnto the place of the erle of Ar-
toys, where the duke of Burgoyne
bled accustomedly to resorte. And &
ded corps was soone after by suche
as came to the exclamacion, with al-
so a seruaunt of his with hym slain,
boye into the next houses. Where the
summe

rumour of this murder was blowen aboute the citee, anone Letops uncle vnto the kyng and the kyng of Sweyde, the dukes of Berry and of Bourbon with other, dreyne thither, and there with lamentacion beholdinge the corpes, commaunded prouision to bee made for the buryng of it within þe monestery of Celestynes, where vpon the seconde daye folowynge, he was buried with greate pompe. Whome emong other lordes folowed to his buryng þe duke of Burgoyne not without greate suspicpon of the said murder. And that enterrement with due obseruaunce finished, auctorite was gyuen vnto twoo knyghtes named Robert Cuyler and Peter Dylheuer, to make enquiry for the murder of this prynce. Wherof the duke of Burgoyne beyng ascertained, boydded the citee, and brake þe byrge of saint Marce after hym, that pursute after hym shoulde not bee made, and so hastily spedde hym that that nyght folowynge he came to Andwarpe, whiche is þe an hundred myle fro Paris. When Charles the kyng harde of the escape of the said duke, feryng lest he woulde accuse hym to bee consentynge vnto that euill dede, sent vnto hym comfortable messages, so that the sayde duke without warre restyd all that wynter, sometyme in Arthoys, and an other whyle in Flaunders at his pleasure. In the whiche passyme he sente into dyuers places of Fraunce sondry accusacions of the duke befoze slain, that he intended to depose the kyng, and to take vpon hym the rule and gouernaunce of the realme and to haue poisoned the said kyng as by dyuers tokens by hym affirmed for perfourmaunce of the same. And also that the said duke of Oyle

aunce was cause of feryng of the dyggers garments befoze shewed, to thende to buryng the kyng in more daunger of sykenes, or els to bee consumed with the same fyre, with sondry other diffamacions, as leuenge of taxes and imposicions of the people, to his singuler awauntage & howgely entychynge, wherby he mighte þe soner attain vnto his said purpose. Thus continyng this great unkindenes atwene the duke of Burgoyne and the soone and other of his blode of the duke of Oyleaunce, the said duke againe the begynnynge of the yere, herynge that the kyng and the quene were departed frome Paris to Charters, assailed to hym a ströge power of holanders and other, and came vnto Paris, in whiche citee he muche trusted, to the ende to cause þe kyng, the quene, and the Dolphyn, to whome he had maryed his daughter, for to retourne vnto Paris. And to strengthe his partie, he broughte with hym Wyllyam erle of Hanster, whiche Wyllyam was a manne of greate strengthe and allyaunce, and had maryed his sister vnto the duke of Burgoyne foresaid, & his daughter and heire vnto one of kyng Charles his soonnes, and was gossyppe vnto the quene. For whiche said consyderacions, the said erle entendynge the weale of that realme of Fraunce, labored suche wayes and meanes, that by hym for that tyme a concord and byttie was dyuen and made atwene the twoo dukes of Oyleaunce and Bourgoyne, with assured othes and necessary actes to that concord belongynge, and the kyng with his retynne was againe retourned vnto Paris. These dukes thus appeased, and the duke of Burgoyne agayne restoyed to the gouernaunce of

of the realme, associate vnto hym the kynge of Nauerne, whiche varied not frome his fathers vnsstable con- dytions, so that by hym newe occasi- ons of stryfe and variaunce were moued attwene the said dukes and their allyes. For firste thei sought oc- casion againe the forenamed Houn- tague, a manne of greates wysedom and honoure in the kynge his courte and especiall frende vnto the duke of Oyleaunce, and by their malice and vntrewie surmises finally put to death. And one named Peter Ellap- er or Saper then prouost of the citee of Darys or gouernoure, thei admitted to the rule of the kynge his treasourer, and other dyuerse officers suche as were anithynge fauoured of the duke of Oyleaunce, thei cle- rely discharged. The which for their relesse and comfort resoyted vnto the said duke, shewyng to hym all the de- measure of their aduancementes, ad- dyng therunto, that all suche conue- cyons concernyng the amite attwene hym and the duke of Burgoyne bee- fore swoyne and enacted, were clerely adnulled and broken. With these tydynges the duke beyng fyled with newe malice, accompaigned to hym the dukes of Berry, of Burbon, and of Alenson, the eyles of Rychemoute, of Alpberte, and of Trimenake, with other nobles not a fewe, by whose counsels he determyned to bee auen- ged vpon the duke of Burgoyne and other his fauours. Wherof the said duke beyng monished, dyewe hym to warde Paris, and strengthened the for- tresses as he yode. To this duke of Burgoyne was brother to the duke of Brabant named Antony, a mane of greates polycye and wysedome, the whiche forecallyng the greates shew- yng of chrysten mannes bloude,

to many other inconueniences likely to haue ensued of this variaunce at- twene these twoo dukes, made suche effectuous labour, that with greates difficultie he pacified thein againe for that tyme, and brought thein to personall communicacio, and lastely to amicable and frendely departyng. After whiche concoorde and amytie thus againe concluded, the duke of Burgoyne departed into Dycardye, leauynge behynde hym the fore named Peter Ellap, to rule the citee of Darys. The whiche shortly after dyewe to hym suche persones, as bee- fore tyme had bered and disturbed the duke of Oyleaunce frendes and seruauntes in that cite. By whose meanes the said Peter sought fyrste occasion againe the knyght named Wemyt Thomey, and by false sugges- syon smote fyrste of his hed, and af- ter dyd his body to bee hanged vpon the common gibbet of Darys, in dis- pite of the said duke as testifieth mine auctoure. Where with the duke bee- yng wonderfully amoued, resembled his knyghtes, and sped hym toward a towne named

And for to strengthe another towne named he sente a certayne nom- bze of his knyghtes, chargyng thein with the dwellers to withstande the force of his enemies. Of this hea- ryng the duke of Burgoyne, anone gathered vnto hym the nymbze of sextene thousande Flemynghes and Dycardes, and sped hym vnto the said towne of

And so with his instrumentes of warre assailed the gate of the said towne, whiche leaderth toward saint Quintine, that in shorte space the said Flemynghes wane the entre of the towne. In whiche meane season the dwellers with other souldoyers by a backe waye

of water, wherof the maner by this auctour is not expresseid, left þe towne & rode vnto the duke of Oylepauce beþng as yet at the foresaid towne of

When the Flemynge were entered the towne, and founde it deserte of people and pillage, were it for that thei lacked their praye, or for other cause here not shewed, thei toke suche vnkynndenes againe the duke, that for prayer not yet for manasses thei would not with hym any lenger tary, but returned theim home in all hastily speede toward their owne countree. So that the duke was fayne to withdraue, and for the more suretie, to aske ayde and helpe of Englyshe-mene, & so was holpen by the prynce his comforte Henry sonne of Henry the fourth, as after shall bee touched in þe twelwe yere of the fourth Henry.



In the .xxxi. yere of this kyng Charles, whiche was þe twelwe yere of þe .iiii. Henry then kyng of Englande, the duke of Oyleiaunce

seþng his enemye was tourned from Paris, caused suche byddges as bee fore by his said enemye wer broke to bee redifyed. By þe which he passed þe ryuer tyll he came to saynt Denys, where as then he founde a capitaine a noble manne named syr John Cabyllo of the dukes of Burgone, there left by hym to strengthe the towne. The whiche syr John, considerynge the wekenes of the said towne, with also his lacke of strength, yelded hym & the towne vnto the duke, swerynge to hym by solempne othe, that after þe daye he should neuer bere armes againe hym. In this pastime an other capitaine of the Burgonyons called

Bancourt, secretly by night wanne vpon the frenche menne the bydge of saint Clodalde. But not longe after the duke of Oylepauce sent thither certain Byptons, the whiche againe recouered the said bydge, and helde it vnto the said duke his yle. In whiche tyme and seaso the duke of Burgoyne recoueryng his strength, passed the bydge of Melit, and so came vnto the citee of Paris, and þe daye folowynge with helpe of the citezens recouered the abovesaid bydge of saint Clodalde, and distressed vpon a thousand Byptons, whiche had the warde of the same. Then the duke of Oylepauce made out of saint Denis ouer Daine bydge toward Paris. Wherof that other duke beþng warned, refused the citee, & with the kyng the there beþng present, remoued to the Dolphyne to the towne called Staps, and sent the erle of Marche named James, to certayne knightes to a towne named to strengthe it againe the duke of Oyleiaunce. The whiche of the said dukes knyghtes was encountred with, and taken, and so sent to pylone. Wherof beþng þe duke of Burgoyne, in shorte processe after retourned vnto Paris with þe kyng and dolphin, and the duke of Oylepauce rode to a towne called Seyntclowe.

And in the .xxxii. yere of this said kyng Charles, by counsaill of þe duke of Berry and other, seþnge that the said citee of Paris was so sette againe hym with also the kyng and þe dolphyne, sent a noble manne of his hoste named Alberte vnto Henry þe fourth yet kyng of Englande, to requyre hym of ayde to withstande the tyrenny of the duke of Burgoyne, that with his complices entendyd to subuerthe the realme of Fraunce

To

To this requeste kyng Henry gaue good care, and lastely graunted to his peticio, and sent thither as saith the frenche cronicle, Thomas his soone duke of Clarence, also the duke of York, with John erle of Cornwalie accompaigned with hym eyght hundred knights and souldyours, and a thousande archers. The whiche compaignie when thei were landed in fraunce, and herde that the frenche lordes were in treatie of peace, and no manne to theim gaue wages as thei tofore were promised, fell vpon a towne called and it thei refused, and therein toke as prisoners the abbot of that monestery with other, and conueighed theim to Burdeaur and after into Englande, wher, for finasice and other money due of olde by the frenche kyng, as assermeth the Sagwine, thei remained many yeres after. And that the Englishmenne were thus departed, albeit that in the English cronicle and thys ten yere of the forenamed kyng Henry, of theim is other reporte made, the lordes of fraunce returned to their olde discordion and continued in long strife wherof the circumstance were long and tedious to tell, and to shewe the vnstableness of theim, howe some whyle the duke of Oylevaunce was fauoured of the kyng & the dolphine & there againe the duke of Burgoyne cleine oute of conceite. The whiche contencion thus enduryng kyng Henry the fourth dyed, and Henry his soonne the fifth Henry, was admitted for kyng of Englande after hym, that shortly after sent his ambasadours vnto the frenche kyng, askyng of hym his doughter Katheryn in marriage as assermeth the frenche booke. But diuers other writers shewe, that he asked the hole landes due to hym

within the realme of fraunce, by reason of the composition made in tyme passed, atwene his progenitour Edward the thyrde, and John the kyng of fraunce. And for he was disbeinously answered, he therfore made vpon theim sharpe warre, as in the fourth yere of the said Henry after some deale dooeth appeare. By reason of whiche warre, the ciuile bataill or strife that long whyle had continued among the frenchemen, then did aswage. For in the fourth yere of this Henry, whiche was the .xxxv. yere of this Charles the said Henry inuaded the realme of fraunce, and had at Egyncourte a triumphat victorie, as in the said thirde yere of Henry the .v. is more at length declared. Then it foloweth in the story after many townes & stronge holdes by the Englishmenne in sondry places of fraunce opteined, in the .xxxviii. yere of this Charles, a frencheman named the lord of the Isle of Adam and John Uyllers in propre name, gatherynge to hym a compaignie of tyrauntes to the nombre of .ccc. or mo, wherof many were olde seruauntes of the kyng his houlholde, & then put oute by the dolphin & other thei then had the rule of the kyng, by treason of a clerke opteined the keyes of one of the gates of Paris, & so entred the citee by night, & by a watche worde among theim deuised, associate to the many Burgonions, & so beyng stronge yode where the kyng was, & gatte the rule of his person. And that dooen, all suche as thei might fynde thei bare any rule, thei slewe by one meane and other, so that vpon the daye folowynge, was nombred of ded corpes within the citee vpon foure thousande. Amonge the whiche, of noble menne was Henry de Marle then Chaunceller of fraunce, & Grauntepre

pre to many other. And for to haue þe moze assyſtaunce of the cōmon people, the said Wyllers sette the kyng vpon an horſe, & ladde hym about the citee as he that had ſmall reaſon to guide hym ſelfe, and ſo ruled all thyng as his compaignie would. Wherefore þe dolphyn ſerpyng to fall in the daūger of ſo wylde a compaignie, rode to Melbune or, and there called to hym ſuche as the were left on liue to withſtande theſe tiraūtes, and the duke of Burgoyne then beyng with in the citee, and compaſſer of all this miſchief as ſome conſtrued & demed. After whiche compaignie to hym gathered he returned to the citee of Paris, and aſſailed one of þe gates. But whē he ſawe the citezens toke partie again hym, he thought his trauayle loſte. Wherefore wout great aſſaute makynge, he called thence his knyghtes, and ſo departed again to þe place whiche he came frome, & frome thes vnto Thuron, in appealyng the coſtreys and townes as he wente, whiche at thoſe dayes were farre out of frame. And then in the twoo & thirte pere of the ſaid Charles, kyng Henry the fifth landed with a ſtrong power at a place called Touke in Normad and after layde ſiege to many ſtrōg holdes and townes and them wāne, as Cane, Whalers, Roan, and other, as in the ſexte pere of the ſaid Henry folowynge is moze at lengthe declared. In tyme of whiche warre thus made by kyng Henry, the dolphyn and the duke of Burgoyne, either of them prouided to defend the malice of the other, in ſo muche that as teſtiſyth the frenche cronicle, the duke was aduysed to haue taken partye with the Engliſhemenne. This ſayng as witneſſeth an auctour named Floure of hystories, which toucheth

in latine many geſtes & dedes dooen by kynges of Englande, ſaith that the frenche menne bynge in that, for to excuſe their infortune and cowardyſe, by reaſon wherof, thei loſte not alonely their lande, but alſo the honoure and name of the ſame. The laſtely the duke beyng of mynde by exhortacion of Whyllyppe Joſquyne and John de Colongun, with alſo a lady called the counteſſe of Brat, the duke was reconſyled vnto the Dolphyn, and a daye of metynge apointed at Monſtruell, where eyther of them ſhould bee accompaigned wtenne lordes onely without mo. At whiche daye the ſaid prynces with their aſſigned lordes beyng aſſembled, many reaſones and argumētes were layde and replied vpo both ſides. By occaſion wherof one of the dolphyn his compaignie ſodainly drew his knife and ſtrake the duke vnto the harte, ſo that he dyed ſoone after. Whiche murder was ſuppoſed to bee dooen by a knight called Tanguide de Chaſtell, which oſtyme paſſed had been ſamplere ſeruaunte w þe duke of Orleans before ſlain, by meanes of þe ſaid duke of Burgoyne.

After whiche murder thus committed, the lande of Fraunce was brought in much moze ſtriſe and variaunce, in ſo muche that Philip the ſonne of the ſaid John duke of Burgoyne beyng then in paris, and hauynge the rule of the kyng & the citee, toke partie with the Engliſhemenne again the dolphine. By reaſon wherof as ſondry wryters agree, kyng Henry his partie was greatly augmented aid holpe, ſo þe ſynally kyng Henry opteined muche of his will, and ſhortely after maryed dame Katherine daughter of Charles kyng in the .xli. pere of his regne, with aſſuraunce

The seventh parte.

assuraunce and promise of the inheri-
taunce of þe realme of Fraunce to him
and his heyres after the deathe of the
saide Charles, as to you moze playn-
ly shall be shewed in the eight yere of
the sayd Henry the fyfte. After which
marriage concluded and synished, yet
the Dolphyn ceased not to make new
motions and stirrings. Durynge the
whiche, kynge Charles dyed in Oc-
tober, and was buryed at saynt De-
nys, when he had reigned in greates
trouble vpon the poynt of .xlii. yeres,
leauynge after hym as is asseymed by
the foynained auctoure Bagwyne, a
sonne & Dolphyn of Wyenne called
Charles, whiche after was kynge of
Frenchemen, and was named Char-
les the seventh or þe eighth after some
wyters.

Henry the .iiii.
Anglia.



Entre the .iiii. of
þe name, & sonne
of John of Gauc-
late duke of Lan-
caster, toke pos-
selspon of the do-
nion of þe realme
of Englande as
befoze in the end

of the stoye of the seconde Rycharde
is shewed, vpon the laste day of Sep-
tember in the yere of oure Loide .M.
iii. C. lxxxix. & in the .xii. yere of Char-
les the .vii. then kynge of Fraunce.
After whiche posselspon so by hym ta-
ken, anon he made newe officers.
As the earle of Northumberlande he
made constable of Englande, the erle
of Westmerlande was made Mar-
shall, by John Berle Chaunceller,
John Newbery Esquier Tresorer,
and by Rycharde Clyfforde knyghte

keeper of þe pryuey signet. And þe done
prouisyon was made for his coronas-
cyon agayne the day of t ranslacyn of
saynte Edward the confessor nerte
then commynge. And the parliament
was prolonged tyll the tursdape fo-
lowynge the sayde dape of coronacyon.
Then vpon the euen of the sayde dape
of coronacyon, the kynge wythin the
towre of London made .xlii. knyghtes
of the bate wherof .iii. were his owne
sonnes, & .iii. earles, & .v. lordes. And
vpon mondape beynge the sayde dape
of saynte Edward & the .xlii. dape of
October, he was crowned at West-
minster of the archebishop of Can-
terbury. After whiche solempnyte sy-
nished an honourable feast was hol-
den within the greates halle of West-
minster. Where the kynge beynge set
in the mydde sea of the table, the arch-
bishop of Cantebury with .iii. othen
prelates were set at the same table v-
pon the ryght hand of the kynge, & the
Archebishoppe of York with othen
iii. prelates was set vpon that othen
hand of the king, & Henry the kinges
eldest sonne stode vpon the ryghte
hande with a poyntelesse swerde hol-
dyng by ryght, & the earle of North-
umberlande newly made constable,
stode vpon the lefts hand w a sharpe
swerd holden by right. And by either
of those swerdes, stode two othen lor-
des holding .ii. scepters. And befoze þe
kynge stode all the dynerwhyle the du-
kes of Innarke of Surrey & of Exce-
ter with othen .ii. lordes. And the earle
of Westmerlande then newly made
Marshall, rode about the halle with
many tipped staves aboute hym, to se
the roume of the halle kepte, that offi-
cers might with ease serue the tables.
Of the whiche tables the chiefe vpon
the ryghte syde of the halle was be-
gonne with the Barones of the tyns
All. i. poytes

The coronas-
cyon of Henry
the seventh

poztes, and at the table next the cup-
borde vpon the lefte hande, satte the
maye and his byethzen the aldermen
of London. Which maye then being
Dietwe Barentyne goldsmith, for
seruyce there by hym that daye done,
as other Mayes at euery kynges &
quenes coronacyon vse for to do, had
there a standing cuppe of golde. The
after the seconde course was serued,
for Thomas Dymmocke knyghte be-
yng armed at all peces, and syttinge
vpon a good stede, rode to the hygher
parte of the halle, & there befoze the
kyng caused an herowde to make pro-
clamacyon, that what man wolde say
that kyng Henry was not ryghtfull
enherytout of the crowne of Englande
and rightfully crowned, he was there
redy to wage with hym batayle then,
or suche tyme as it shoulde please the
kyng to assygne. Whiche proclamaci-
on he caused to be made after in. iiii. li.
dyse places in the halle in Englyshe &
in French, with many mo obseruaun-
ces at his solempnite exercised & done
whiche were longe to reherse.

Then this feaste with all honour
ended, vpon the moyn being tuesday
the parlyament was againe begonne
And vpon wednesday for John Chep-
nye, that befoze that tyme had occu-
pyed as speaker of the parlyamente, by
his owne laboure for cause of such in-
symptyes as he then had, was dys-
charged, and a squyer named Wyl-
lyam Burwarde was electe to that
role for hym.

And then was the Parlyamente
and the actes thereof laste called by
kyng Richard adnulled, and sette
at nought, and the parlyamente hol-
den in the eleuenth yere of his reygne
holden for syyme and stable. And the
same daye Henry the kynges eldeste
sonne was cholen & admytted prynce

of Walys, and duke of Cornewalle,
and Earle of Chester, and heye ap-
paraunte vnto the crowne. Vpon the
thursdays folowynge was putte into
the common house a byll, deuyed by
for John Bagot then prysoner in the
Towre. Wherof the effecte was, that
the sayde for John confessed that he
harde kyng Richard saye dyuerse
tymes and at sondrye parlyamentes
in hys tyme holden, & he wolde haue
his entente and pleasure concernynge
his owne maters, what so euer betyde
of the resydue. And if any withstode
hys wyll or mynde, he wolde by one
meane or an other, bynge hym oute
of hys lyfe.

Also he shewed further, that king
Richard shoulde shewe and saye vnto
hym at Rychelesde, in the. xxi. yere of
hys reygne, that he despyed no lenger
for to lyue, then to see hys lordes and
commons to haue hym in as greate
awe and dyede, as euer they had of a-
ny of hys progenytours, so that it
myghte be cronycled of hym, & none
passed hym of honoure and dygnytie
with condycion that he were deposed
and putte frome hys sayde dygnytie
the nexte moztowe after. And if euer it
came so to, that he shoulde resygne
hys kyngelpe magestye, he sayde hys
mynde was to resygne vnto the duke
of Herforde, as vnto hym that was
moste ableste for to occupye that ho-
noure. But one thyng he feared, lest
he wolde dooe tyrannye agayne the
churche. Wherouer, he shewed by the
sayde byll, that as the sayde for John
Bagot rode behinde the duke of Nor-
folke towarde Westminster, the sayd
Duke layde vnto his charge, that he
with other of the kynges counceyl had
murdred the duke of Glocester, & which
at the tyme to the sayde duke he denied,
and said at the day he was on lyue. But
within

within. iiii. weekes after, the sayde syr John by the kynges comaundement was sent with other persons unto Calais, where for feare of his owne life he sawe the sayd murdye put in execution. And furthermoze he shewed, that there was no man of honoure at that dayes moze in fauoure with kyng Richard, then was the Duke of Anmarle, and that by his counsell he toke the lordes, & wroughte many other thynges after the sayde dukes aduise. Also he shewed, that he harde the kyng being then at Chiltern langlei sweare many great othes, that the Duke of Herford nowe kyng, shulde neuer retourne in to England, and rather then he shuld agayne inheryte his fathers landes, he wolde geue theym vnto the heyres of the Duke of Gloucestre, and of the earles of Arundell, and of Warwike at the laste parliament adyuged. And further he shewed, that of all these matters he sent the sayde duke knowledge into Fraunce, by one named Roger Somerle, admoneshynge hym to proude by his wysdome to withstande the kynges malice, whiche shewed hym to be his mortall enemye.

And lastely he shewed in the sayd byll, that he hearde the Duke of Anmarle saye vnto syr John Bullhey, and to syr Henry Greene, I had leuer then. xx. thousande pounde, that this man were deade. And when they had asked hym whiche man, he sayde the Duke of Herford, not for drede that I haue of his persone, but for sorowe and rumours that he is lykely for to make within this realme. Whiche byll was then bozne vnto the kynges parlyamente chaumber, and there red. After readynge whereof, the sayde Duke of Anmarle stode vp, and sayd as touchynge suche artycles as in the byll were put agayne hym, they were

false and vntrew, and that he wolde proue vpon his bodye, or otherwys as the kyng wolde commaunde him. Upon fridaye, the sayde syr John Bagot was broughte into the sayde parlyamente chaumber, and examyned vpon euery artycle of his byll, all the whiche he there affirmed.

Then it was asked of hym what he coude saye against the duke of Excester. Wherunto he answered and sayd that he coude saye nothyng vnto his charge. But there is he sayde a yoma in Newgate called Halle, that can saye somwhat of you. Then sayd the duke what soeuer he or ye can or lyst to say of me, this is truthe that I shall here expresse. Truthe it is that the last tyme that the king was at Woodstoke, the duke of Northfolke and ye haue had me to you into the chapell, and closed the doze vpon vs. And there ye made me to sweare vpon the sacrament there presente, to kepe suche counsaile as there ye shulde then shewe vnto me.

Wher after ye shewed to me, that ye coude neuer bynge your purpose aboute, whyle syr John of Gaunt late duke of Lancastre lyued. Wherfore ye were aduysed for to haue shortly after a counceill at Wyke, by the whiche ye condiscended that the sayd syr John shuld be arested, in such maner that he shuld haue occasiō to disobey that areste, by reaso wherof by chaunce medley he shuld be there slayn. Wherunto my counsaile then was, that the kyng shulde call his secrett counceill, and if they agreed therunto, I for my parte wolde agree vnto the same. To whiche sayeng sir John Bagot gaue none answer. And vpon saterdaye, the said Bagot & Hal were both broughte into the parlyamente chaumber, and there examyned, & after countermaunded to pylson. And as soone as they

All. ii. were

were departed, the lord Fitz Water stood up and sayde. Forsothe I thought souerayne lord, where as þe duke of Anmarke hath before tymes and nowe lately, excused hym of the death of the duke of Glouceter, I saye and wyl I iustifye it, that he was cause of his deathe, & that I shall proue vpon his bodie yf your grace be so contented. To the contrary wherof the duke with Harpe wordes answered, so that gaugys of battayle were offered of bothe partys, and sealed and deliuered vnto the lord Marshall.

Then partys beganne to be taken amonge the lordes, in so muche that þe duke of Surrey toke partie wth the duke of Anmarke, and sayde þe all that by hym was done, was done by constraint of Richard then king, and he him selfe and other consented par-

force vnto the same.

Where againe the said lord Fitz Water and other replied. Wherfore silence was commaunded, and forthwith the fore named Haille for that he had confessed before the Lordes, that he was one of theym that putte to deathe the Duke of Glouceter as Calais, he therfore was iudged to be drawen frome the towne of London vnto tybourne, and there to be hanged and quartered.

The whiche execucion was done vpon the mondaye folowynge.

Thus with these causes and manye other, this Parlyamente contynued tyll a newe Maye named Thomas Knolles Grocer, was admytted and also sworne, vpon the nexte daye folowynge the feast of Symonde and Jude.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xcix.

Grocer.

Thomas Knolles.

Wylliam walderne.

Wylliam hyde.

Anno domini. M. CCCC.

Anno. i.

The fyfte
yere.

In this fyfte yere of kyng Henry the. iii. yet lastynge the foresayde parlyamente vpon the wednesdaye next folowynge the feast of Symonde & Jude, the lord Hoxley appealed the Earle of Salysburie of treason, and cast his hoode for a gage to trye with hym by battayle. The whiche sayenge he replied, and caste frome hym his gloves for a gauge, for to proue his sayeng false and vntrewe, which were there sealed and deliuered vnto the Lord Marshall. And vpon the mondaye passed an acte, that no lord nor other persone of no degree, shoulde after that daye laye for his excuse any constrainte or coactynge of his wynter, in executynge of anye

wronge iudgemente or other crimpynous and vnlesful dedes, sayeng that for feare they durste none otherwyse dooe, for suche excuse after that daye shall stande hym in none effecte. And also that all theyrffes maye yelde accompte in the Eschequer, vpon theyr othes, and that they be chaunged in all theyr yeres. And also that no lord nor other man of myghte, geue any golwes or lpuetres vnto any of theyr tenauntes or other persones, excepte onely theyr household and meyn all seruauntes. And also then was enacted, that all reppers and other filthys from Rye and Wyntchellsee and other coostes of the sees syde, shoulde sell it them selfe in Coznehill & chepe and other stretes of London, vnto all men

The seventh parte.

men that wolde of theym bye it, excepte fyllowmongers and other that wolde bye the sayde fyllowe, to make sale of it agayne.

And vpon the wednesdape folowynge, was enacted that Rycharde late kynge of Englande, shoulde for hys myse gouernaunce of the realme be holden in suche prysone as the kynge wolde assygne, durynge his naturall lyfe. And then the kyng graunted vnto all persones generall pardones, so that they were sette out of the Chauncery by Alhalowne wyde nexte folowynge, excepte suche persones as were presente at the murder of the Duke of Glouceter. And in this whyle was the archebysshoppe of Caunterburie restored to his church of Caunterburie, and doctoure Roger, which there was sette by kynge Rycharde, was remoued and set in the sea of London, wth the whiche he was ryght well contented. And then was the earle of Arundelles sonne restored to all hys fathers landes, wth dyuerse other befoze by kynge Rycharde dysherited.

And shortly after was the sayde parlyamente dyscolued, and euery man had licence to departe vnto hys owne. And then was Rycharde late kynge had vnto the castell of Ledes in Kente, and there kepte. And prouysyon was made at Wyndesore for the kynge to kepe there hys Chyrmasse. In whiche passyme the dukes of Anmarle, of Surrey, and of Exeter, wth the Earles of Saleburie, and of Glouceter, with other of theyr assynpte, made prouysyon for a dysguyseynge of a mummyng to be shewed vnto the kynge vpon Twelfthe nyghte, at the tyme was nere at hande and all thyngs redde for the same. Vpon the sayde twelue daye came se-

cretly vnto the kynge the Duke of Anmarle, and shewed vnto hym that he wth the other lordes afore named were appoynted to see hym in prison of the foresayde dysguyseynge shewynge, wherfoze he aduysed hym to prouyde for hys owne suretye.

At whose warnynge, the kynge secretly departed frome Wyndesore, and came the same nyghte vnto London. Wherof the sayde lordes beyng ware and that theyr counceill was betrayed, fledde in all the haste westwarde. But the kynge caused hastye pursute to be made after theim, so that shortly after the Duke of Surrey and the erle of Salisbury were taken at Stretet, where they were streyghte beheaded, and theyr heddes sente vnto London, and sette vpon the byrdge.

And at Orenforde were taken sir Thomas Blont and sir Benet Selp knyghtes, and Thomas Wyntercell esquire, the whiche were there headed and quartered, and theyr heddes sente vnto London byrge. And at Wyntwell in Essex was taken sir John Holland Duke of Exeter, and after broughte to Blakby a place faste by, where he was beheaded, and after hys hed was sente to London and sette there wth the other vpon the byrdge pryghte vpon a stake. And nere about the same tyme at byllowe was taken the lord Spenser then Earle of Glouceter & there beheaded, and hys hedde sente vnto London byrdge.

And in the same yere, sir Barnarde Bokers, sir John Selp, sir John Maundely, and sir John Fezeby knyghtes and clerkes, were taken as prysoners in the towne of London, and soone after foriudged, hanged and hedded, and theyr heddes also set vpon London byrdge. In whiche passetyme, Rycharde late kynge was

ff. iii. remoy

remoued from the castell of Leeds in Kent, & sent vnto Dountfret castell.

In this yere also as befoze is touched in the. xii. yere of the. vii. Charlys, kynge Henry sente vnto Calys Isabell late quene of Englande, and wyfe vnto Rycharde lately kynge, and wyth her great treasour and manye ryche Jewelles, as testifyeth the Englyshe cronycle, and there receyued by þe Frenchmen vnder safe conduyte passynge, and by theim conueyed vnto her father into Fraunce, and after maryed vnto Charlys sonne & hepye to the duke of Oyleaunce, as befoze I haue shewed in the. xii. yere of her laide fathers regne.

Then it foloweth in the stoye of kynge Henrye when he had slymely consydered the greate conspiracye agayne hym by the sozenamed Loydes and other persons entended and ymagyned to hys destruccyon, and releuyng of Rycharde late kynge he in auoydynge of lyke daunger, prouyded to putte the sayde Rycharde oute of thys presente lyfe, and shortly, after the oppynyon of mooste wyrters he sente a knyghte named sy: Wyers of Exton, vnto Dountfret castel, where he with eyghte other in his company fell vpon þe sayde Rycharde late kynge and hym miserablie in his chaumber slewe, but not wythout reuengement of hys deathe. For o: he were kelled vnto the grounde, he slewe of the said eyghte, foure menne, wyth an age of theire owne. But lastely he was wounded vnto deathe, by the hande of the sayde sy: Wyers of Exton, and so died.

After execucyon of whiche deadly dede, the sayde sy: Wyers toke greate repentaunce, in so muche that lamentably he sayde, alas, what haue we done, we haue now put to death him that hath ben our soueraigne & deead

Lorde, by the space of. xii. yeres, by reason wherof I shall be reproched of all honoure where soener I after this daye become, and all menne shall redound this dede to my dishonour and shame. Other opynions of the deache of this noble Wyntce are left by wyrters, as by waye of fame and other. But thys of mooste wyrters is testified and alledged.

When þe death of this pryncce was publyshed abrode, he was after open vpsaged layde in the mynster of Dountfret, so þe all men myght knowe and se that he was dead. And the. xii. daye of Marche folowynge, he was wyth greate solempnite brought thorough the cytie of London to Paules, and there layde open vpsaged agayne, to the ende that his deathe might be manifestly knowen. Whiche was doubtfull to many one, & specially to suche as oughte to hym fauoure. And then after a fewe dayes þe sayde corpe was carped vnto the fteres of Langley, & there entered. But after he was remoued by kynge Henry the. v. in the fiftie yere of his reigne, and with great honoure and solempnite conuected vnto the monasterie of Westmynster, and there wylth in the chapell of saynt Edward honourably buried vpon the southe syde of saynte Edwardes Wyntce, wyth his epytaphy vpon hys tounge as foloweth.

*Prudens et mundus Richardus iure secundus
Per fatum nictus, iacet hic sub marmore pictus,
Verax sermone fuit, et plenus ratione,
Corpore procerus, animo prudens ut homerus,
Ecclesiam fuit, elatos subpediuit,
Quemuis prostrauit, regalia qui violauit.*

Whiche verses are thus to be vnderstande in our vulgare & Englyshe tongue as foloweth.

Parfights

The seventh part

344

Defraight and prudente Rycharde by ryghte
the seconde.

Manquished by fortune lyeth here nowe graue
in stone.

True of hys worde, and thereto well resolute.

Remely of person, and lyke to homer as one.

In wordly prudence, and euer the church in one
Uphelde and sauoured, castynge the proude to
grounde.

And all that wolde hys royal state confounde

But yet alas, thoughte that thys mety: or tyme

Thus doth enbelye thys noble prynces fame

And that some clarkes whiche sauoured hym
some tyme

Lyft by hys conynge, thus to enhaunce his name

Yet by hys stoyr appereth in hym some blame.

Wherfore to prynces is surest memorie.

Ther: lyues to cresspe i nverteous constancy

Whan thys mortall pryncce was
thus dead and grauen, kynge Henry
was in quyet possessyō of the realme
and founde greate rycheesse that be-

foze tyme to kynge Rycharde be-
longed.

For as wptnesseth Polycronycon, he
founded in kynge Rychardes tresoury
iii. hundred thousande pounde, of re-
dy copne, besyd iewels and other rich
bessels, whiche were as muche in va-
lue or moze. And ouer that he espyed
in the keepynge of the tresourers han-
des, an hundred and fyfye nobles, &
iewels and other stufte that counter-
uayled þe sayde value. And so it shuld
seme that kynge Rycharde was ryche
whan hys mony and iewels amoun-
ted to seven hundred thousand pound

And in the moneth of October and
ende of this Mayes yere, was byt
in Smythfelde of London a preache
named by William Sawtry, for cer-
tayne popites of heresy.

Anno domini. M. CCCC.

Goldesmyth

John Fraunces

John Wakele

Anno domini. M. CCCC. i.

Anno. ii.

Wplyam Ebot,



Folowynge the seconde yere
of kynge Henry and
moneth of Februarye
were dyaned and han-
ged for tresō a knyght
named by Roger Clarengton at Ty-
burne wth two of hys seruauntes,
the pryour of Lande, and, viii. freers
minours of gray freers, of the which
some were bachelers of dyupnyte.

And in thys yere began a great
dyscencion in Wales, betwene the
lord Graue Ruffyn, and a Welshma-
named Howen of Glendoze. Whych
Howen gathered to bi great strenght
of Welshmen, and dyd much harme
to that country, not sparinge the kyn-
ges loydeshippes nor his people, and
lastly tooke the sayde lord Graue pry-
soner, and helde hym prysoner, tyl co-

trarte hys wyll he hadde maryed the
sayd Howens daughter. After which
matrymonye fynlyshed, he helde the
sayde lord Ruffyn in Wales tyl he dy-
ed, to the kynges great dyspleasure.
Wherfore the kynge wth a stronge
army spedde hym into Wales, for to
subdue the sayde Howen and hys ad-
herentes. But whan the kynge wth
hys power was entred the countrey,
he wth his sawtours fledde into the
mountaynes & helde hym there, so þ
the kynge myghte not winne to them
wythoute destruccyon of hys hooste.
Wherfore fynally by the aduice of
hys Loyses, he retourned into Eng-
lande for that season.

In thys yere also wheate and o-
ther granes beganne to fayle, so that
a quarter of wheate was solde at Lon-
don

don for. xvi. myllinges, and verer
Mulde haue ben had not bene the pro
uision of marthauntes that byonghe

rye and rye floure oute of Spytce,
where wth thys lande was greatye
sustayned and ealed

Anno domini. M. CCCC. i

Anno domini. M. CCCC. ii

Wylliam Wemoure

John Shadworth

Anno. iiii.

John fremyngham

Chr. iiii. yere

The making
of the conduit
in Coynhill

The batayl of
Shrowesbury



And in thys peare
the conduyte stan
dyng vpon coyn
hille in London,
was begone to be
made. And in the
somer folowynge

sp; Thomas Percy Earle of Wo;ce
ter, and sp; Henry Percy sonne and
heyr vnto the Earle of Northumber
land, gathered a great power, abpon
the daye of saynte P;ared the byrgin
o; the. xxi. daye of July, met wth the
kyng nere vnto Shrowesbury, and
there gaue vnto hym a crewell battel
but to they; owne confusyon. For in
that fyght the sayd sp; Thomas Per
cy was taken, and hys neww the for
sayd sp; Hentie with many a strong
man vpon they; partye was slayne.
And vpon h; kinges party, the p;ince
was wounded in the hed, and the earle
of Staffo; with many other slayne

And the. xxv. daye of July folowynge
at Shrowesbury, the sayd sp; Tho
mas Percy was beheaded, and after
hys heade caried to London, & there
set vpon the byrge.

In thys battayle was many a no
ble man slayne vpon eyther partye.
And it was the moze to be noted ben
geable, for ther the father was slaine
of the sonne, and the sonne of the fa
ther, and brother of brother, and ne
uue of neuue. And in the moneth
of August folowynge, the duchesse of
Byrtapn landed at Fulmouth in the
prouynce of Coznewapll, and frome
thence was conueyed to Winchester
where, in shorte tyme after, kyng
Henry maryed her in the cathed; all
churche of the sayd citee. And soone
vnto was the eldest daughter of king
Henry named dame Blanche mary
ed at Colepne to the Dukes sonne of
Bayer

Anno domini. M. CCCC. ii

Anno domini. M. CCCC. iiii.

Rycharde Herlewe

John Walcot D;aper

Anno. iiii

Roberte Chyphyle

Chr. iiii. yere.



A thys peare and. xiiii.
daye of the moneth of
September, was the
foresayd duchesse of
Byrtapne and the wyfe

of the kyng receaued wth great ho
noure into the cytee of London, and
so by the maye and the cyteyns con

ueyed vnto Westmynster. Where, by
pon the moztome folowynge she was
crowned quene of Englande, wth
greate honoure and solempnytie, the
c;cumstaunce wherof I passe ouer.

In this yere also Rupertus which
after the deposyng of Wessenselaus
was by the electours of the Emppre
and

The seventh parte.

436

and by authoꝛyte of Boniface the. ix. than bishope of Rome, admytted for Emperoure of Rome, and came into Englande wth a goodly companie onelye to se the countrey and commo dities of the same. The which of the kyng was honourably receaved and feasted, and lastely conveyed by the kyng towards the sea syde, where eyther departed fro other wth exchanging of rich and precious gyfts. For this Rupertus was named of wynters a man of excellent bounte and largesse And he gaue moze lyberallie, for so much as all the tyme of hys beyng in England, he lay here at the kinges

costes. And whyle he was at Londo he was lodged at the house of sainte Johns in Smythfelde

This yere also vpon saynt Lau rence eyn of the. ix. daye of Auguste a lord of Byrtayne named the lord of Castyle in French, landed wthyn a myle of Plymmouth wth a great companie of Normans and Byrtos and came vnto the sayde towne, and lodged there all nyghte and spoiled and robbed the sayd towne. And vpon the daye folowynge whan they had done what they wold, they retourned agayne to theyr shippes, wth plenty of pillage & prisoners such as they fnde

Anno domini. M. CCCC. liii

Thomas Falconer.

Wylliam Askam

Thomas Dooll

Anno domini. M. CCCC. liii

Anno. b



And praye.

Ad in this yere, so ne after Candelmas the forsayde lord of Castile trustynge to wyne a lyke enterpryse, as in the yere passed he had doone he beyng accompanied wth a strong nauy of Frenchmen and Byrtos, was encountred wth the Englyshe floote wthyn. ii. myles of Dartmouth at a place called Blacke pole. Where after longe and cruell fyght the sayd lord was slayne, wth the moze partye of the people, and dyuers of hys shippes taken, as wytnesse the Englysh cronycle wth dyuers other Englyshe authoures. But the Frenche booke excuseth this dyscomfytur of Frenchmen, and sayth that by treson of a Gasconne named Deryn or Perrot de Languple, whiche shewed vnto the sayde lord Castile that he had espyed certayne Englyshe shippes

in a Creeke lyghtely wthoute respytence to be taken, caused the sayde lord to make sayle towards the sayde towne of Dartmouth. Where, after he had continued a certayne tyme hys course, he espyed the whole floote of Englyshemen whiche made toward hym, and so at the sayde Blake pole encountred and saughte, and lastely escaped the danger of hys enemies as testifyeth the sayde Frenche cronycle, but not vnburte, for he was so wounded in that fyght that he dyed shortly after.

And the moneth of Apryll folowynge, the duke of Clarence wth the Earle of Kent and manie other lordes, tooke shippynge at Heregate, and so sayled vnto Sluce in Flaunders. And after the sayd duke hadde there refreshed hym and hys company, he tooke shippynge agayne, and holdynge hys course toward Swyn he was encountred wth. iii. greate carphes

tykes of Jeane, the whyche assayed,
and after longe bekeryng them toke
beyng laden wyth marchaundysse,
and so wyth that pryce retourned to
Cambrye befoze Wynchelsea, in the
whyche haue the sayde goodes wer
canted and shered. But howe it was
by varyaunce amonge theim selves,
or other wyse, one of the sayde carpe-
kes was sodenly fered and so consu-
med. for respytucion of whych goo-
des and shyppes, the marchauntes
Januence made after great and long
sute to the kynge and hys counsaile
in þ whyche passe tyme they boiowed
clothe, wolle and other marchaundy-
ses, amountynge vnto greate and no-
table sommes of dyuers marchaun-
tes of Englande. And whā they saw
that they myghte haue no hope of re-
courte of theyr losse, they sodenly a-

Henry the. iii

uoyded the lande, and left the foze-
sayde notable summes vnpayed, to
the greate hynderaunce and vtter vi-
boyng of many Englyshe marchaun-
tes.

In thys yeare a yoman named
Wylliam Serle, sometyme yoman
of kynge Rychardes roobes, was ta-
ken in the marches of Scotland and
broughte vnto London, and there in
the Gynlehal aceryned for the mur-
der of the duke of Gloucestre at Cala-
ys. vpon whych murder he was at-
tayne and conuicte, and vpon the xx
day of October he was drawen from
the towre vnto Tybourne, and there
hanged and quartered, and his head
was after set vpon London bypoge,
and hys foure quarters were sent to
iii. sondre good townes.

Anno domini. M. CCC. liii

John Heynde Dyaper

Wylliam Lowste

Stephan Spylman

Anno domini. M. CCCC. v

Anno. vi

The. vi. years



Ad in thys yeare and
moneth of Januarie,
were certayne courtes
of warre ton i Smith
felde, betwene syr Ed-
munde Earle of Kent
and the lord Mowbray a baron of Scot-
lande, vpon the chalenge of þ sayde
Scottyshe lord. But the Earle of
Kente bare hym so valpaultye, that
to hym was geuen the pryce of that
sourney to hys greate honoure. And
in the same yere, syr Rycharde Scrop
than Archebyschoppe of York, and
the lord Mowbray than Marshall

of Englande, wyth other to them al-
yed, for grudge that they bare agayne
the kynge, gathered vnto them great
strength, entendynge to haue putte
downe the kynge as the same than
wente. Whereof the kyng beyng en-
fourmed, in al haste sped toward the
and met wyth the on thys syde porke
Where after a skymyshe by the sayd
lordes made, they were than taken &
after presented vnto þ king at porke
where they were bothe demed to suf-
fer death for theyr rebellyon, & shortly
after they were both beheaded

Anno domini. M. CCCC. v.

John Woodcock Mercer

Henry Berton.

Wylliam Crowner

Anno domini. M. CCCC. vi

Anno. vii

Craytours

The seventh parte.

348



In this yere, dame Lucre the duke of Gloucestre sister came into Englande, and was married vnto s^r Edmund de Holande Earle of Kent, in the church of saint Mary ouer in Southwarke vpon the. xliiii. daye of Januarie, where the kynge was present and gaue her that daye vnto the priest. And after the solempnization of the marriage was spynshed, he was with greate honour conueyed vnto the byshoppe of Wyndchesters palace ther fast by, where that daye for her was holden a sumptuous and pompeous feast. And in the same yere and moneth of Maye, dame Philipp the youngest daughter of kynge Henrie, accompanied with diuerse lordes spirituall and temporall, was shipped in the North, and so conueyed into Denmarke, where in a towne or cite called London she was married vnto s^r kynge of the same countrey.

In this yere also s^r Thomas Ramston than constable of the towne by ouerspyghte of hys botemen as he wold haue passed the byrdege toward the sayde towne, was drowned. And in the same yere, for the greuous complaints that before tyme had bene shewed and euidently proued before the kynges counsaile, and also before the Maye and hys brethren, of the great destruction of fre and young tyme by reason of weyes standynge

in diuers places of the ryuer of Thames, wherby the fish of the sayde ryuer was greatly mynished and wasted, and that also of the sayde weyes so continued, the sayde ryuer shulde in shorte processe be destroyed: wherefore the Maye and hys brethren the aldermen as conseruatours of the ryuer, made suche labour vnto the kynge and hys counsaile, that they obtained commysyon to pul vp all the weyes that stode betwene London and bymptles beyonde kyngston, and in lykewyse for suche other as stode betwene London and Grauesende, as well cokes or seuerall groundes and other, the whiche commysyon by the sayde Maye and hys officers was this yere put in execution.

And in this yere s^r Robert Knolles knyghte, the whiche in Fraunce and Bytayne had before tyme doone so many vicioious actes, as in s. xliii. yere of Edward the thyrde and other yeres of hys regne is some dele touched, made an ende of hys werke at Rochester byrdege and chapell at s^r sayde byrdege foote, and dyed shortly after, whā he had reedysed the body of the whyte freers church standynge in fletestrete, and done to that house many notable benyfytes, where, after he was buried in the body of the sayde church. Whiche church and place was first founded, by the auncetours of the Loyde Graue Cornore.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. vi.

Nicholas Wotton

Richarde Whyrington Secrer

Godfrey Brooke

Anno domini. M. CCCC. vii.

Anno. viii.



And in this yere and moneth of Nouember, one named the Walche clarke approached a

knyghte called s^r Darcyal Sowda of treason, for trial wherof, day was geuen to them to spghte in Smyth felde

It battayle be-
tweene a clark
a knyghte.

feld þ day aboue sayd. At which day
ether appered, & there fought a seale
But in the ende the clark was recei-
unt. Wherefoze immediatly he was
spoyled of hys armour, and layd by
pon an hardell, and so dyaen to Cy-
burne, and there hanged

And in thys yeare also, sp; Henry
Earle of Northumberlande and the
loyde Bardolfe, commynge oute of

Scotlande wth a strange company
to the dyspleasure and hurte of the
kyng as they intended, wer met and
encountred with þ gentelmen and co-
mons of the Roythe, and foughten
wth and distressed, and after strake
of they heades, and sent them to Lo-
don, whych than were pyghte bypon
the bypoge amonge manye other.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. viii

Anno domini. M. CCCC. viii.

Henry Bonastre

Wylliam Stondon Grocer

Anno. ix

Henry Halton

The. ix. yeare



It gerate froth

Ad in thys yeare
& moneth of De-
cember, beganne
a froth, the whych
contynued by the
space of. xii. wea-
kes after oz there

bypon, so that bydes were wonderly
fampshed and distressed by vyolence
of the same.

And in the same yere, sp; Edmund
of Holande Earle of Kents, was by
the kyng made admyrall of the sea.
The whiche scowred and skymmed
the sea ryghte well and manfullye,

and lastelye landed in the coaste of
Bytayne, and besyged there a Ca-
stell named Bypake, and wanne it
by strength. But in the wynnynge
thereof, he was deadlye wounded w
an arrowe in the heade, that he dyed
woytlye after. And than hys corpes
was broughte againe into England
and buryed amonge hys auncestours
And in the begynnyng of thys yeare
was slayne and murdered þ duke of
Dyleaunce in Darps, lyke as before
it is moare at lengthe shewed in the
xxiii. yeare of Charles, the seuenthe
kyng of Fraunce.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. viii

Anno domini. M. CCCC. ix

Thomas Duke

Dywe Barentyne Goldesmyth

Anno. x.

Wylliam Roxtom

The. x. yere.



In thys yeare the Sene-
Hall of Henaude came
into thys lande wth a
goodly company of he-
naubers & other straun-
gers. for to do & perfourme certayne
faytes of armes agayne dyuerse no-
bles & gentelmen of this lande. And
first the said SeneHal chalaged the
erle of Somerset, & other of hys com-
pany other gentelme of thys land, as

after Hall appere. for executinge of
which dyspozt, þ place of Smithfeld
by the kyng was appointed, & barred
& fenced for the same intent, & day set
for euery mā to be redy by the. ix. day
of. At which day the senehal as
challenger entred the seide pōpceously
And after w a goodly cōpany of mē
of honour, was þ erle of Somerset
brought into the same, where they ra-
together certayne courses & executed
other

The seventh parte.

356

other faytes of armes, wherof þe pryse and honour was geuen by the heraldes vnto the earle, so that he wanted þe greates honoure.

Then the seconde daye came in a knyght Henauder as Challengeoure. To whome as defendaunte came sye Rycharde of Arundell knyghte, the whiche ran certayne courses on horse backe, and after went together with axes on foot, where sye Rycharde was putte to the worse, for the Henauder brought him vpon his knee.

Then the thyrde daye came in an other knyght of Henaude Chalenger. To whome as defendaunte came in sye John Coynewaple knyght. and so well bate hym, that he put the straunger to the worse. vpon the.iiii. daye came into the felde an esquier Henauder. Agayne whome ranne the sonne of sye John Chepny. The whiche at the seconde course sette hym stroke so egerly, that he ouerthrewe the Henauder horse and man, for which dede the kynge dubbed hym forthwith knyght. vpon the.v. daye played together an Henauder and a squyre called John Steward, whiche daye also the Cu-

glyshman was the worst. vpon the. vi. daye theymyshed there together an Henauder and an Englyshe esquier named Wyllyam Doyter, the whiche gatte suche worstshyppe of the same Henauder, that the kynge for hym guerdon, made hym strenght knyghte. vpon the. vii. daye in lyke wyse played insemble an Henauder & one John Standyshe Esquier, the whiche semblably for hym promysse & manly denyng, was also of the kynge dubbed knyght. And a Gascoine that the same daye was þe pryce of an other straunger, was tamed patlye made knyght of the kynge. And vpon þe. viii. daye or lasse daye of this chalenger, came into the felde two Henauders. vnto whome came two byethzen being lowdiours of Calais, the which beheted together a longe season, so þe either partie receyued plente of good strokes, tyll peas by the kynge was commaunded. And so this chalenge was fynished, to the greates honoure of the kynge the whiche after feasted these straungers, & with ryche gyftes sente and retourned them agayne to theyr countrees.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. ii.

John Lawe.

Rycharde Parlowe Irenmonger.

Wyllyam Chicheley.

Anno domini. M. CCCC.

Anno. xi.

In this yere and monethe of Marche, a taplour of London named John Badby, was byent in Smithfelde for herely, all be it that by meanes of the prynce & one mayster Courtney then Chauncellof of Orenfoide, he was for a whyle reconcyled, and promysed to leaue þe court. But when the Sacramente of the aulter was brought befoze him he despyled it, and wolde in no wyse

therein beleue, wherfoze he had as he deserued.

In this yere also and monethe of Aprill, within the lystes of Smithfeld was foughte a foze fyght betwene an esquier named Gloucester Appellaunt, & an other esquire called Arthur Defendaunt. The whiche acquitted them eyther partye so manfully, that the kynge of hym especyall

Ggg. i. grace

A battayle betweene two esquires.

grace seynge they were bothe so well
fpghtynge men, toke the quarell into
his handes, and pardoned the offence
to eyther partye.

the making
of the market
house called the
stockes stand-
yng in the end
of the pultry.

And thys pere the market howse
called the Stockes, standynge by the
churche of saynt Mary wolchurch of
London, was begonne to be edifyed.
In this pere also the kyng helde his
parlyamente at Westmynster. Du-
rynge the whiche the commons of this
lande put vp a byll vnto the kyng, to
take the tempozall landes oute from
spyrituall mennes handes or possel-
on. The effecte of whiche byll was the
tempozaltes disordynatly wasted
by men of the churche, myght suffyce
to spnde to the kyng. xv. earles. xv. C.
knyghtes, vi. M. & ii. C. esquires, and
an. C. houses of almes to the releef of
pooze people mo then at the dates were
within Englande. And ouer all these
foresayde charges, the kyng might put
perely in his cofers. xx. M. li. p.roui-
ded the euery earle shulde haue of pere
ly rent. iii. M. marke, euery knyghte
an. C. marke & iii. plough lande, eue-
ry esquire. xl. marke by pere in two
plough land, & euery house of almshouse
an. C. marke, in ouerspyght of. ii. trew
seculers vnto euery house. And also
with prouisyon the euery towne shoulde
shulde kepe all pooze people of theyr
owne dwellers whiche myght not la-
bour for theyr lyuing, with condicion
that if mo fell in a towne the the towne
myght mainteyne, then the sayde almes
houses to releue suche towne shoulde

A byll put vp
into the parly-
ament house
concernynge
the tempozall
landes holden
by the clerge.

And for to beare these charges they
alleged by theyr sayde bylle, the te-
pozalties beyng in the possel-
sion of spyrituall men, amounted to. iii. C. & xlii.
M. marke by pere wherof they asse-
med to be in the see of Caunterbury, in
the abbays of chystes church, of saite
Augustyns, Shyowylbury, Cogge-

Male, & saynt Dunstons. xx. M. marke by
pere. In the see of Durham & other ab-
beys there. xx. M. marke. In the see of
Poyshe & abbays there. xx. M. marke.
In the see of Winchester and abbays
there. xx. M. marke. In the see of Lon-
don, with abbays and other houses
there. xx. M. marke. In the see of Lin-
colne, with the abbays of Peterboure
Ramsey, and other. xx. M. marke. In
the see of Roiswyche, with the abbays
of Bury and other. xx. M. marke. In
the see of Ely, with the abbays of E-
ly, Spaldynge & other. xx. M. marke.
In the see of Bathe, with the abbays
of Olynborne & other. xx. M. marke.
In the see of Worcester, with the abbays
of Eulisham, Abyngdon & other. xx. M.
marke. In the see of Chester with pre-
cinct of the same, with the sees of saynt
Dunstons of Walpburge, and Erceter
with theyr pceptuall. xx. M. marke.
The abbays of Bauens or Beuans,
of fountaynes, of Geruons, and o-
uerle other to the number of. v. mo. xx.
thousand marke. The abbays of Le-
reter, Waltham, Gylbourne, Herton,
Erceter, Olney, and other, vnto the
number of. vi. mo. twenty thousand
marke. The abbays of Douers, Ba-
tell, Lewys, Cowentre, Dauentre, &
Courtney. xx. M. marke. The abbays
of Northampton, Thoytune, Bilsow,
Kelyngworth, Winchecomb, Hayles
Darchyls, Frediswyde, Rotley, and
Gymmsby. xx. M. marke.

The whiche foresaide summes a-
mount to the full of. iii. C. M. marke.
And for the odde. xlii. M. marke, they
appoynted Herlespore, Rochester, Wilt-
yngdon, Wynehedde, Crowlande,
Halmesbury, Burton, Tewkesbury
Dunstable, Shytborne, Taunton, &
Bylande.

And ouer thys they alleged by
the sayde byll, that ouer and aboue the
sayde

The seventh parte.

351

sayde summe of .iii. C. xlii. M. marke
dyuerse houses of religyon in En-
glande, possessed as manye tempo-
ral tyres as myght suffyce to fynde petely
xv. M. p[re]sentes and clerkes, euerie
p[re]sente to be allowed for his styppende

seuen marke by the yere.

To þ which by none answer was
made, but that the king of this mater
wolde take deliberacion & aduycement
and with that answer ended, so that
no fether labour was made.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. x.

John Penne.

Thomas Knolles Grocer.

Thomas Pyke.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. x.

Anno. xii.



Ad in this yere, a squy-
er of Walps, named
Ryze ap der, the which
had longe tyme rebel-
led agayne the kyng,
and fortifyed the par-
tye of Howan of Glendowe, was take
and brought to London, and there b-

pon the .x. daie of December, by a wren
hanged, and quartered, and his head
sette vpon the byrdge amonge the o-
ther. In this yere also was the guilde
halle of London begonns be newe e-
dified and of an olde and lytel corage
made into a fayre and goodlye house
as it nowe appereth.

For the hall
begonne to be
edified.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. x.

John Raynwell.

Robert Chycheley Grocer.

Willpam Cotton.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xi.

Anno. xlii.



Ad in thys yere and y-
pon the twelue daie of
October, were thye flo-
des in Champs, which
thyng no man then ly-
uyng coulde remem-
ber that lyke to be lene.

And in thys yere was the Lorde
Thomas sonne to the kyng, created
duke of Clarence. And in thys yere,
the kyng at the requeste of the Duke
of Dyleaunce, sent ouer the foresayde
duke his sonne to ayde the sayd duke
of Dyleaunce agayne þ duke of Bur-
goyne. Of whose actes and hys com-

panye, I haue befoze made reposte in
the story of Charles the seventh king
of fraunce.

And in this yere, the kyng caused
a newe coyns of nobles to be made,
whiche were of lesse value then þ olds
noble by .iiii. pens in a noble.

A newe coyns
of nobles.

In thys yere also the kyng crea-
ted John his sonne duke of Bedford.
And his other sonne Humfrey Duke
of Glouceter. He made also sy; Tho-
mas Beauforde Earle of Dorsette,
and the Duke of Anmarle he created
duke of York.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xi.

Kaufe Leuenhish.

Willpam Walden Grocer.

Willpam Beuenok.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xii.

Anno. xliii.

699. ii. In

In the. x. day of the moneth of Nouembre, was a greete counsell holden at the whyte stetes of London. By the whiche it was amonge other thynges concluded, that for the kynges greete iournaye that he entended for to take in visyting of the holy sepulchre of oure Loyde, certayne galeys of warre shuld be made and other purueyance concernynge the same iournaye. Whereupon all hastye and possyble speede was made. But after the feast of Chyngmasse, whyle he was makynge hys pappers at Saynte Edwardes shyppe to take there hys leaue, and so to speede hym vpon his iournay, he became so sike, that suche as were aboute him feared that he wolde haue dyed ryght there. Wherfore they for hys comfyrte bare hym into the abbottes place, and lodged him in a chambere, and there vpon a paylette layde hym before the fyre, where he laye in greete agonie a certayne of tyme. At length when he was comyn to hym selfe not knowynge where he was, he prayned of suche as then were about him what place that was. The whiche shewed to hym that it belonged vnto the abbot of Westmynster, and for he felte hym selfe so sike, he commaunded to aske of that chāber had any speccial name. Where vnto it was answered, that it was named Hierusalem. Then sayde he kyng Loouynge be to he father of heuen. For nowe I knowe he I shall dye in this chaumber, accordyng to the prophete of me beforesayd, that I shulde dye in Hierusalem. And so after he made hym selfe redy, & dyed shortly after vpon the. x. daye of saynt Cuthbert of the. x. daye of Marche, when he had reygned. xlii. yerres, v. monethes, & xli. dayes, leauynge after him, liii. sonnes, that is to

meane Henry that was kyng. Thomas he was Duke of Clarence, John duke of Bedford, and Humphrey duke of Gloucestre, and ii. daughters, that one beynge quene of Denmarke, and that other Duchesse of Barre, as befoze is shewed.

When kyng Henry was dead, he was conueyed by water vnto Seuer-Dam, and from thens by lande vnto Caunterbury, and there entered,

Anglia.
Henrici quinti.



Henry the. v. of England, name, and sonne of Henry the. iii. began his reigne ouer this realme of Englands, the. xli. daye of the. ii. moneth of Marche.

In the. x. daye of oure Loyde, and ende of the same, fourtene hundredeth and twelue. And in the thyrtye and two yere of Charles the. vii. per kyng of Fraunce. And the. x. daye of Apryll folowynge, whiche was that yere passyon sondaye, being a daye of excedynge rayne, he was crowned at Westmynster. This man befoze the death of his father, applyed hym vnto all vyce and insolence & dyd vnto hym all vycetours & wilfully dyssolued persones. But after he was admitted to the rule of the lande, anon & sodaynly he became a newe man, & turned all that rage & wildenesse into sobernes and wile sadnes, & the vice into constant vertue. And for he wolde continew he vertue, and not to be reduced therunto by the familiarite of his old nise company, he therfore after rewarde to them geuen, charged them vpon payne of theyr lyues, he none of them

The death of
kyng Henry
the fourth.

The eighth parte.

them were so hardy to come within a myle of such place as he were lodged after a daye by hym assigned.

344

In the beginning of this kyng Henry, the olde maier & shryues continued their offices to the termes accustomed

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xii.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xiii.

Rauke Leupgham.

William bald ern Mercer.

Anno. i.

William Beumenok.



As kyng Henry was crowned, and the solempnytie of the feast of Ester was passed, he sent vnto the shiers of Langley where the corps of kyng Richard was buried, and caused it to be taken oute of the earthe, and so with reuerence and solempnytye to be conueyed vnto Westmynster, and vpon the south syde of saynt Edwardes chynne there honourably for to be buried by quene Anne his wyfe, whiche there he soe tyme was enterrid. And after a solempne termentement there holden, he prouided that foure tapers shulde burne daye and nyghte aboute his

grauie, whyle the world endureth, and one daye in the weeke a solempne Dytyge, and vpon the morowe a masse of Requie songe by note, after whiche masse ended, to be geuen wekelie vnto the poore people a. xi. shyllinges & eyghte pens in pens. And vpon the daye of his annyversary after þe sayd masse of Requiem is songe, to be pere lye distributed for his soule. x. li. in pes. And about heruest tyme, was þe John Oldcastell knyghte appeached for an heretike & committed to prysoun. But howe it was he escaped for that tyme out of the towre of London, and so yode into Walys, where he lyued ouer. iiii. yeres after.

þe John Oldcastell at murther of Henry 6.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xiii.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xiiii.

John Sutton.

William Crowmer Diaper.

Anno. ii.

John Wycol.



At this yere and moneth of January, certayne adherentes of the foresayd sir John Oldcastell, entendinge the destruccyon of this lande and subiection of the same assembled theym in a felde nere vnto saint Gyles in great number. Where of the kyng beinge enformed, toke þe felde befoze them, & so toke a certayne of them. Amonge the whiche was þe Roger Acton knyghte, þe John Beuetley prestre, and a squier called þe John Broun. The whiche with xvi. mo in namber were after con-

uyned of heresy and treason, and for the same hanged and byente wythin þe sayde felde of saynt Gyles.

And in the same yere, John Claydon knyghte and Richard Turmine baker, were for heresy byet in Smith felde.

And this yere the kyng helde his Parlyamente at Leyceter. Where amonge other thynges, the foresayde bylle putte vp by the commons of the lande, for the tempoaltes beyuge in the churche, as it is befoze touched in the eleuenth yere, of þe iii. Henry was Egg. iii. agayne

agayne minded. In feare wherof, lest the kyng wolde therunto geue anye comfortable audience as testifie some wyrters, certayne Bysshoppes and other heade men of the churche, putte the kyng in mynde to clayme his righte in Fraunce. And for the exployte ther of, they offered vnto hym greate and notable summes. By reason wherof the sayd byll was agayne put by, and the kyng set hys mynde for the recovery of the same, so that sone after he sent his letters vnto the French king concernyng that mater, and receyued from hym answer of dyspoun as assermeth the Englyshe booke.

And Sagwynus sayeth in. hys French cronycle, that kyng Henry sente hys oratours vnto Charles the vii. then kyng of Fraunce, for to haue dame Katherine his doughter in marriage, with other requestes touching his ryghte and enherytaunce. Where unto it was answered by the counsell of Fraunce, that the kyng had no leyser to entende suche ydell persones. Wherupon kyng Henry made quick

prouision for to warre vpon the French kyng, as after appereth.

In this yere also, by procurement of Sigismunde then Emperoure, a greate counsell or Synode of byshoppes were assembled at a cytie in bygh Almanie called Constaunce, for the vnioun of the church. And for to auoyde the Scisme, whiche began in the tyme yere of Charles the. vi. as befoze in the sayd. tyme. yere is touched. In the sayd synode or generall counsell, was the xliii. John then byshop of Rome put downe or resigned by hys volunte. And by auctoryte of the same counsell the oppynions and heresye of wycklyffe were vetyerly adnulled and dampned, and. ii. of his discyples there presente named John Hus or Husle, and Jerom the Heretyke, were there byente.

And manye notable actes for the wele of the church there were enacted. And synally, when the sayd counsell had endured nere vpon the terme of xliii. yeres, they there by an hole assent chace a newe bishop of Rome, and named hym the. v. Martyne.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xliii.

John Mychell.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xlv.

Thomas Sawcomer Mercer.

Anno. llii.

Thomas Aley.

The thyrde yere.



In this yere after the kyng had made sufficient provision for all thinges concernyng hys warre to be made vpon the French kyng, he with hys lordes honourabylly accompanied, rode thownghe London, vpon the eyghtene dawe of Juny, towarde the porte of Southhampton, where he hadde appoynted hys hoostr to mete wyth hym. And while the kyng there was shyping of hys people, dyuerse of hys lordes,

that is to saye Sir Rycharde Earle of Cambridge and brother vnto the duke of York, whiche Sir Rycharde bearynge the name of Langley, had wedded dame Anne, the doughter of Sir Roger Mortimer Earle of March and Wolster, by whome he had yssue a labell, whiche after was married vnto the lord Boucher earle of Essex, a Rycharde whiche after was Duke of York and father to kyng Edward the. vi. To whome also was assygning Sir Rycharde Scrop then treasurer of Englande

How the kyng and his lordes cooke shyping at Southampton to passe into Fraunce.

The seventh parte.

334

Englande, and by Thomas Gape knyghte, were there arrested for treason, and agreed, and so examined upon the same, that the .xxix. daie of Julye folowynge they were all three beheaded. After whiche execution so done, the kynge upon the morowe or shortlye after, with his lordes tooke shippynge there, & landed at a place called Wycaus in Normandy. And the .xvi. daie of August he layd siege vnto the towne of Dretfelw, and assailed them by the lande and by water, and continued so his siege vnto the .xxii. daie of September. At which daie as sayth the French Saguinus it was deliuered by Albert than ther captayne, vpon condycion þat kynge Henrye might sauely wyne or passe to Calais, and so he being there, the towne to be yelde vnto hym. But the French wyter Saguinus vpholdeth the honoure of the Frenchmen in all that he may, and booweth of his charynce for sparinge the truthe in report of many thynges. For after most wyters, the sayd towne after sondry appoyntmentes of recourse, was deliuered vnto the kynge without any condycion the day aboue sayd. Wher after the king had ordayned by Thomas Beauforde his vncle and earle of Dorset captayne of that towne, he led hym towarde Calais.

Then the dolphyn with other lordes of Fraunce, whiche at that tyme had the realme of Fraunce in gouernance, for so muche, as the French kynge was vylted with suche malady as befoze I haue shewed, make the byrdge to let the kynge of his passage ouer the water of Summe. Wherfoze he was constrained to draw towarde Picardy, and so passe by the ryuer of Pericon. Wherfor the French men beinge ware, assembled and led

ged them at certayne townes named Agyncourt, Holandcourt, and Blangy, with all the powre of Fraunce.

And when kynge Henry sawe that he was so be set with his enemyes, he in the name of God & S. George prayd his selde in the playn betwene the sayde townes of Agyncourt and Blangy, hauinge in his companye of hoolle men that myghte fyght, not passing þat number of. vii. M. But at those dayes the yowme had theyr limes at lybertye, for theyr hosen were than fastened, with one poynte, and theyr laches longe and easy to shote in, so that they myghte drawe bowes of greate strengthe, and shot arrows of a yerde longe, bysde the head.

Then the kynge consyderynge the great number of his enemyes, & that the acte of Frenchmen standeth much in ouer spyng of theyr aduersaries by force of speeremen, he therfoze charged euery bowman to ordayne hym a sharpe stake, and to pyrch it a slope befoze hym, & whan the speeres came, somdele to drawe backe, & so to shote at the boylsemen. And at the proper request of the duke of York, he ordayned hym to haue the vaward of the felde. And whan kynge Henrye had thus prouydently ordered for his batel ouer nyght vpon þat morow beinge the .xxv. daie of October, and the day of Crispynne and Crispinian, the kyg caused dyuers masses to be songen. And where that nyght befoze, the English hoost was occupped in prayer and confessyon, he than caused þat byshoppes and other spyrytuall men to geue vnto them general absolucyon.

And that done, with a comfortable chere ordered his peple as they shuld fyghte, hauing vnto them good and comfortable wordes and so abode the commynge of his enemyes, whiche of

The battayle of Agyncourt

The commynge of the enemyes of the English

Note that at
this battayle
were. xl. thou-
sands French
men, and but
vii. thousande
Englyshmen

of dyuers wyters were and are re-
membred to be aboute. xl. M. lyghte
ynge men.

The whyche aboute. ix. of the cloke
in the moynge, wth greete pyde
set vpon the Englyshe hooste, thyn-
kyng to haue ouer rydden them shor-
ly. But þe archers lyke as befoze they
were taughte pighte they; sharpe sta-
kes befoze them. And whā they sawe
the french galantes appoche, they
a lytle yode backe and receaued them
as here after ensueth.

22 The battayle of Agyncourt

That is to ment, they shot
at them so feruently, that
what with the shotte, and
goynge of theyre hoyses
wth the sharpe stakes,
they tumbled one vpon another, so þe
of they which ranne foremost, were
the confusyon of hym of them that fo-
lowed, so þe in a shorte whyle a great
multitude of hoise and men were lay-
ed vpon the ground. And after they;
shotte spente, they laide aboute them
wth they; glayues and axes, that by
the greete grace of God and comfor-
table ayde of the kynge, the vyc-toy-
fel that daye to the Englyshemenne,
and wth lytle losse of they; company
fo; after the loppyns of sondrye
wyters, were slayne that daye of En-
glyshmen, the dukes of yorke and of
Suffolke, and not ouer. xxvi. persō-
moo. But of the frenchemen were
slayne that daye after Englyshe wy-
ters, ouer the number of. x. thousande
Albeit the frenche Sagynus sayth
that of the Englysh host were slayne
the duke of yorke and wth hym. iiii.
hundred men. and of the french host
four thousande of men of name be-
syde other whych he numbryeth not.

Also he assymeth to be hoysmen at
that felde vpon the french partye. x.
thousande ouer and besyde the foot-
men, and that the Englysh men were
nōbyed at. xv. C. spere men, and. xviij.
M. of yomen and archers.

At this sayde battayle was taken
pysoners the duke of Oyleaunce, the
duke of Burbon, the Earle of Wen-
dosme, of Cleve, of Rychemounte, and
Burligant than marshal of fraunce
wth manye other knyghtes and es-
quyres, whyche were redous to na-
me, to the nōber of. xxiiii. C. & above,
as wryteth the booke of mapes.

And in this battayle were slayne of
the nobles of fraunce, the dukes of
Barre, of Blanson, and of Dyaban,
viii. Carles, and barons aboute. lxxx.
wth other gentelmenne in coote ar-
mours to the number of thye thousand
and above. By reason of the whyche
pyllage the Englyshemen were great-
lye aduanced. For the frenchemen
were so assuured of the vyc-toy by re-
son of they; greete number, that they
broughte the moze plenty of ryche-
llie wth them, to the end to by pysoners
ether of other, and also after the vyc-
toy by them optayned, to shewe vn-
to Englyshemen they; pyrd and pom-
pous araye. But God whych knew
the presumption and pompe turned
all thyng contrarie to they; myndes
and ententes.

Whan the king by grace and power
of God, moze than by force of mā had
thus gotten this triumphant vyc-toy
& returned his people from the chace
of they; enemies: tidings wer brought
vnto him, þe a newe host of frenchme
were comyng toward him. Wherfo-
he anon comaūded his people to be
enbattayled, and that done made pro-
clamacyons througħ his host, that
euery man shulde see this pysoner.

The tellyphāt
vyc-toy of the
v. the. v. ouer
þe frenchmen

The seventh parte.

354

By reason of whiche proclamacyon, the duke of Oyleaunce and the other lordes of Fraunce were in suche feere that they anone by lycence of þe kyng sente suche woȝde vnto the sayd host

that they wythdrew theym. And the kyng wyth hys prysoners vpon the moȝowe folowynge toke hys waye to ward hys towne of Calays, wher he rested hym during thys mayes tyme

Anno domini. M. CCCC. v

Anno domini. M. CCCC. vi

Archolas Wotten Dyaȝet

William Cambridg

Aleyn Guetarde.

Anno. llii

Thys yere and. xxiiij. daye of Nouember as the maye roode towarde Westmynster for to take hys charge, a putspauante of the kynges came wyth letters vnto the maye groupnge to hym knowledge of þe kynges good speede. Wherfor the bishop of Wyndchester than chauncelour of Englande haupnge lyke wyttynge, came that day to Poules, & ther caused Te Deum to be songe wyth great solempnyte. And in like wyse was lyke obseruaunce done in the parish churches & other religioȝ houses throughe the cytee of London.

And at Poules, by the sayde chauncellor standynge vpon the steppes at the quere doore, were the sayde tpynges denounced vnto the people. And vpon the moȝowe folowynge, þe sayde chauncellor wyth other bishoppes and tpeȝall lordes, wyth a general processyon of the maye and compnaite of the cytee rode frome Poules to Westmynster on fote, and offered at saynte Edwardes Wyne, and so retourned to theȝe owne houses. Than kyng Henry wyth hys prysoners Wypped at Calays, and so landed at Dover, and than sped hym on hys iourneys tyl he came to Eltham, wher he rested hym a season

Upon the. xxiiiij. day of Nouember he was met wyth the maye and hys brythren vpon Blak heth, and so conueyed wyth all honoure throughe the cytee vnto Westmynster. Wher, in dyuers places of the sayde cytee, as þe byrdge and crosse in chepe, wer ordeyned certayne pagentes to the kynges greate comfoȝte. The maner wherof wyth al processions & other ceremonies I passe ouer for lettynge of tyme.

In this yere also Sygismunde, Emperour of Almayn came into Englande. And in the moneth of Maye by þe kynges commaundemente, and viij. daye of the sayde moneth, þe maye and brythren mette hym vpon Blake heth. And at saynt Georges met hym the kyng and his lordes in great nobye and so conueyed hym vnto Westmynster wyth great honoure & lodged hym in hys owne palays. And Moxtly after was the feast of saynte George holden at Wyndesore, whiche before was deferred for hys commynge. In tyme of which solempnyte during the bypne serupce, the kyng kepte the estate. But in lytting at the feast, the Emperoure kepte the estate. The serupce and solempnes of which feast, wyth lytting of the lordes in theȝe degrees I passe ouer. And Moxtly after came the duke of Holande into thys lande for certayne causes concernynge the Emperoure. Whome the kyng honourablye

The receyving of the king by the citizens of London

The receyving of Sygismunde the Emperoure by the citizens of London

nourably receaved, and lodged hym in the byshoppes palays of Ely in Holbourne. And so the kynge entreated and chered the straigers that for the selson that they tarped in Englad they laye here at the kynges cost and charge.

And the Emperoure and he were made knyghtes of the garter, and also a greate duke of the Emperours named duke of Wynga. And whan the Emperoure had tarped vpon. vii. weeks & odde daies in England, which after some wyrters was to the entent to set an vnyte and rest betwene the French kynge, and kynge Henry: he after toke mynde to retorne into Almayne, whom the kynge for hys comferte and nedes that he had to do at Calays, accompanied hym thither, wher ether wth gyftes and thankes departed from other. And the duke of Holland wente wth the Emperoure into Hollande and other countreys.

Whyle the kynge was thus at Calais to hym came thither vnder safe conduite the duke of Burgoyne, and had wth the kynge dyuers commynycacions, and after returned to hys owne. And sone after the kynge returned in to Englande, and came to Westmynster vpon S. Lukes euen of the. xvii. daie of October.

This yere and season whyle the kynge was at Calays, that is to meane vpon the daie of Assumpcion of our blessed lady, the duke of Bedfords accompanied wth the erle of March & other lordes, had a greate conspye and battayle wth dyuers carykkes of Jeane and other Wyppes. Wher after long and soze fyght, the honour fell to hym and hys Englyshmen, to the great losse of the straungers both of theyr men and also of theyr Wyppes, as some drownded, and. iii. of the greatest of theyr carykkes taken.

Anno domini. M. CCC. Cxi

Robert Wodtynghton

Henry Barton Schynner

John Couentre

Anno domini. M. CCC. Cxii

Anno. v.

The. v. yere.



And in this yere the kynge holdyng hys parliament at Westmynster, to hym was graunted by authority of the same assise. And by a conuocation of the clergy was graunted to him a dyme, for the maintenaunce of hys warres. Wherupon newe prouision was made for his seconde viage into fraunce.

By authoryte of this parlyamente also Rycharde whych was sonne and heyr of the erle of Cambridg, which erle was put to death at Southamp

ton, was created duke of York, whych after was married vnto Cecyle the daughter of Daraby erle of Westmerlande, by reason that he boughte hys wardshipp of the kynge. By the whych ladye Cecyle he had Henry that dyed yong, Edward that after was kynge, Edmonde Earle of Rutlande, Anne duchesse of Exeter, Elizabeth duchesse of Suffolke, George duke of Clarence, Rycharde duke of Gloucestre and after kynge, and Margarete duchesse of Burgoyne. And whan all this kynge was redy for the kinges wyage, he ordained John duke of Bedfords hys brother protectoure of this lande in the

tyme of hys absence. And that doone he wyth hys lordes aboute Wylton-
tyde tooke hys shyppe at South
hamptom, and so sayled into Normā
dy, and landed vpon Lammas dape
at a place called Cooke or Cowke.

And after he was wyth hys host ther
landed, so; so muche as he was war-
ned of certayn shippes of warre that
intended to do some harme in Eng-
lande being thā vpon the sea: he ther
foze to wythstand they; malycouse
purpose, sente the earle of Marche,
the erle of Huntingdō, wyth other, to
scowye the sea. The whiche encount-
tered the sayde ennemyes, and after a
longe and cruel fyghte them banqui-
shed and ouercame. Whiche fyghte
was vpon the dape of S. Romayne or
the .ix. dape of Auguste, as hathe the
frenche cronycle. And of the frenche
naup, was chefe captayne the bycouit
of Harbon, which in that fyght was
taken wyth great plenty of treasour
fo; as sayth Saguinus, he with one
Moutney, another captayn, to whō
the soudpours wages was commyt-
ted of one assente of they; spguler lu-
cre wythelde the sayde wages. By re-
son wherof, whan they shulde toyne
in battayle, many of them wyth these
shippes wythdrew, and lefte theye
captaynes in the daunger of they; e-
nemyes. But this is like to be a fained
excuse of the sayde Sagwyn, to saue
the honoure of the frenchemen, as he
many tymes semblably doth in ma-
ny places of hys booke.

Then to retorne vnto kinge Hen-
rye, whan he was thus landed, he let
vnto the rulers of þe towne of Cowk
and had it vnto hym deliuered. But
the castell was defended agayne him
tyll saynte Laurence dape folowynge
the whiche he gaue after vnto hys
brother the duke of Clarence, with al

the sygnory therunto belongynge

And thys done, the kyng sped him
towards Cane, and layde hys spege
therunto vpon the .xviii. dape of þe
sayde moneth of August. The which
contynued tyll the feast of the Naty-
upty of oure ladye, and than won by-
pon the partye that the duke of Cla-
rence assauted. But the castell held by
appoyntment, of no rescowen wer had
tyll the .xiiii. dape folowynge. At which
dape the sayde castell was deliuered
with other .xiiii. strong holdes, which
had befoze taken the same appoynte-
mente. Than the kyng made the for
sayde duke of Clarence captayne of
the sayde towne and castell.

And in thys passertyme were dyuers
other townes and stronge holdes got-
ten, by dyuers of the kynges retinew
as the Earle Marshall, the Earle of
Warwyke and other, the whiche wan
Launders, Falops, Newlin, Cherburg
the, Argentyne and Bayons the cyte
wyth manye other stronge abbayes
& pyles. Than the kyng helde there
S. Georges feast, and dubbed there
xv. knyghtes of the Bath, and after
contynued hys warres durynge this
mayes peare, in wyppynge vpon the
frenchemen by appoyntmentes and
otherwyse, wherof the cyrcumstance
were verie longe to declare in order.

In thys peare also, and vpon the
festfull dape of Easter, spā a chaunce
in London, whiche to the fere of all
good chrysten men is necessary to be
noted. For vpon the high & solempne
dape, by extyrpynge of the deuell and
euel dysposicion of ii. women, that is
to meane the wyfe of þe lord Strange
and the wyfe of sp; John Truesell
knight, such unkyndnes fil bytwene
theye two husbandes, that eyther
wolde haue slayne other wythin the
parische church of saynte Dunstons

3 fayne shew
the dape.

in the Caste. In partyng of whiche
parsons dyuers men were hurte and
soze wounded, and one named Tho-
mas Perwarden slaine out of hande
whiche was a freeman and fishmon-
ger of the cyte. Than lastly both trap-
ers were taken and broughte vnto þe
Counter in the Dultre. And for the
sayde lord Straunge was demed cul-
pable of the begynnyng of thys trap
he therfore vpon the sondaye folow-

nyng, & for suspendyng of the church
was demoured accursed at Poules
crosse, and in all parische churches of
London.

And synally he was demed to open
penaunce and dyd it, and made great
amendes vnto the wyfe of the sayde
Thomas for the death of her husband
And in the ende of thys yere, wher-
at London was solde for two myl-
lynges a bushell.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xlii

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xliii

Henry Kede

Richard Parlowe. Trenchmenger

Anno. li

John Sedney



And in thys yere,
for John Dideca-
stell lord Cobham,
the whiche as be-
fore is shewed in
the end of the fyrst
yere of this king

escaped oute of the Towre of Londo
was in the moneth of sente vn-
to London by the lord Powys oute
of Wales.

The whiche for John for herpse
and treason was conuicted in the mo-
neth of folowynge, and for the
same drawn vnto saynte Gyles feld
where he was hanged vpon a newe
payre of galowes wth chaynes, and
after consumed wth fyre.

And aboute that season, the person
of Woitha in Norfolk, whych longe
tyme had haunted Newmarket heeth,
and there robbed and spoyled many
of the kynges subiectes, was now w
his concubyn broughte vnto Newe
gate where lastly he dyed.

And kynge Henry beinge still in

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xliii

Roymandye, deuyded hys people in
thye partes. Wherof one he referued
vnto hym selfe, the second he commit-
ted to the rule of the duke of Clarence
and the thyrde vnto the erle of War-
wyke, whiche sayde duke and earle
employed theyr armes so wel and va-
lyantly, that eyther of them encoun-
ched soze vpon the Frenchemen, and
wonne frome them many strong hol-
des and pylles. And the kynge after
long speges by him continued about
Argentyne, Cressy, saynte Launde, &
other, he then in the ende of thys yere
that is to saye, vppon the daye of the
translacyon of saynte Edward the
xiii. daye of October, layde hys siege
vnto the cytie of Roan, and contin-
ued the same tyll the xii. daye of Janu-
ary folowynge.

In the whiche passetyme the olde
maye was chaunged to a newe as fo-
loweth. Vpon the. ix. daye of October
dyed John Bryan Weryfe, and for hi
was chosen to that offyce John Pat-
nes Waper

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xlv

John Bryan

Wylliam Seuenoke Gyocer

Raufe Berton

Anno. lvi

John Parnelle.

The. vi. yere

For John
Didecastel
lord Cobham
put to death.

In this yere the foresayd
seyge aboute the cite of
Roan contynuing, vpon
the .xii. daye of Januarie
tozclayde, the frenchemen offered to
treate, which treatie the kyng admit-
ted vnto the erles of Warwike and
Salisbury with other. And for the
frenche partie, was appoynted the
capitain of the cite named syr Guy
de Bocer and other. By reason of
which treaty it was agreed, that the
sayd capitayne vpon the .xii. daye of
the sayd present moneth of January
at such an houre as it shuld please h
kyng to assigne, shuld deliuer vn-
to suche persons as the kyng wold
appoynte, the cite & castell of Roan
in all peasible wyse, excepte the sayd
cite and castell be rescowed by the
dolphyn of Fraunce before the sayd
xii. daye.

And the .xii. daye of the sayd mo-
neth, the inhabytauntes of the sayd
cite to paye vnto the kyng. .xv. C.
scutes of golde, wherof two shoulde
allwaye be worth an englyshe noble.
And other .xv. hundred of lyke scutes,
they shuld paye vpon the .xiii. daye
of february next folowynge. Which
couenauntes with many and diuers
other cōpyssed to .xxv. articles, were
by h assurance of both parties sure-
ly ratified and assured. And for no
rescoue by the sayd dolphyn or any
other frenchman, was made by the
daye aboue lymitted, therfore h said
capitayne accordynge to hys bonde
and promysse, deliuered the sayd cy-
tye and castell, vpon the .xii. daye of
January aforesayde beyng the daye
of saynt Wolstan.

The wyngynge of this cite of
Roan ascribeth Sagwinus, vnto the
ciuple dyscord that was betwene the
cyteyns and their firste capitayne

named erle of Danmale, whom thei
expulsed the cite with a strong power
of Rozmās. But yet as he affirmeth
the citeyns helde h cite till thei were
constrayned for lacke of vitail to eat
horses, dogges, cattes, rattes and
other vermyen.

When kyng Henry had set h cite
of Roan in an order, he then passed h
countrees toward Fraunce, so that
he subdued the cities and townes as
he rode. And the .xx. daye of Maye he
came to Troyes in Chāpayne, where
he was honourably receaued.

In whiche passetyme, John duke
of Burgoyne that before tyme had
ben the occason of the murder of the
duke of Orleans, was nowe slaine
in the presence of the dolphyn, lyke
as before I haue shewed to you in h
xxxix. yere of Charles the .vii. Wher-
fore Phylippe hys soonne and duke
after hym, refused the dolphyns par-
tie and drewe hym vnto kyng Hen-
ry, and deliuered to hym the posses-
sion of Charles the frenche kyng
and dame Katheryne his doughter,
as affirmeth Sagwinus.

Then were meanes of con corde
and vnyte soughte and laboured by
the frenchemen, in so effectuell ma-
ner, that shortlye after for a synall
peace to be had betwene bothe real-
mes, kyng Henry at Troyes in Chā-
payne foresayde by the meanes of the
sayd Phylippe duke of Burgoyne,
maried the forenamed Katheryne
vpon Trinite Sondag then beyng
the .iii. daye of Juny.

Before solempnysacion of which
marriage a treaty and conclusyon of
a peace contynuing .xxvii. articles
betwene bothe kynges was conclu-
ded. Wherof h effect was, that kyng
Henry shoulde be admytted and na-
med regent of Fraunce, & that Char-
les

les shulde be kyng for terme of his life and receaved the issues and profits of the same, and quene Isabell his wyfe to enioye her dower for terme of her life to quenes of Fraunce due and accustomed. And quene Katheryne kyng Henryes wyfe, to haue her dower in Englande to the value of xl. thousand scutes, whiche shuld be in value tenne thousand marke Englyshe. And yf she ouerlyued kyng Henry, then she to haue dower of the realme of Fraunce, to þ value of. xx. thousand frākes yearly to be leuyed of such lordships as Blaūche somtyme wyfe to Whylippe le Beaw helde. And after the deathe and time of the foresayde Charles, þ crowne wyth all ryghtes belongynge to the same of the realme of Fraunce, to remaine vnto kyng Henry and to his heyres kynges.

And for the said Charles was bysytred wyth syknesse, the kyng as regent shoulde haue the hole gouernaunce of the sayde realme and defence of the same, & specyally agayne the dolphyn, whiche entended and dyd his vttermost power to distourbe the sayde peace. And that the lordes and nobles of Fraunce as well spyrituall as tempozall shall make othe vnto kyng Henry, to be obeyent vnto his lesul commaundementes concernynge the foresayd gouernaunce and defence, and they with þ hedes and rulers of cyties, castelles, and townes, to mayntaine & vphold the sayde peace to the vttermoste of theyr powers, and after the deathe of þ sayd Charles, to become his trewe subiectes and lyegemen. And that al suche lordshippes as after that day shoulde be conquered or wonne fro the dolphyn and other dysobedientes, that they should remaine to the

ble of the sayd Charles during his naturall lyfe. Wherbynded that yf any were wonne within þ duchy of Normandy, that they shoulde incontinently remaine to kyng Henryes ble. And that after the dysceale of þ sayde Charles, the duchy of Normandy & all other lordshippes therunto belongynge, to be as one monarchy vnder the crowne of Fraunce. And also that duringe the lyfe of the sayde Charles, kyng Henry shoulde not name or wyte hym selfe kyng of Fraunce. And that the sayd Charles shoulde in all his wytynges name kyng Henry his moſte dearest sonne Henry kyng of England and enherytour of the crowne of Fraunce. And that none impolycie or taske shoulde be put vpon the comons of Fraunce but to the necessary defence & weale of the realme. And that by þ aduice of bothe counsailes of the realmes of Englande and of Fraunce, suche stablyshed ordynaūces myght be deuysed, that when the sayde realme of Fraunce shoulde fall to the possession of kyng Henry or his heyres, that it myght with suche vnyte ioyne vnto the realme of Englad, that one kyng might rule both kyngdomes as one monarchy, reserued alwayes to eyther principate or realme, all ryghtes, lybertyes, frāchyses, and lawes, so that nother realme shoulde be subiecte vnto other. And that perpetual amyttee and frendshipp with al samyltyer conuersacion, aswell by byenge, sellynge, and all other leeffull, to be cōtynued atwene bothe subiectes for euer, all customes and priuileges to eyther realme to be payde and obeyed. And that kyng Charles nor Whyllyp duke of Burgoyne, shuld make any con corde or peace with the Dolphyn of Wyen, wpythout the assente & agrement

Henry the
emherytour
the crowne
Fraunce.

The seventh parte.

364

agrement of kyng Henry. For he in lyke wyse without the consent of the sayde Charles and Philip. And the sayd Charles during his lyfe, shuld honorably be founde and entreated, and to haue in hys householde and aboute hym noble men of his owne nacion, with all other thynges concerning his estate, and to be lodged in notable places of his realme, wher the people to hym shoulde bee moste obedyent.

After which articles, by the consentes of bothe prynces well and nobly ratyfied and confirmed, and solemnyzacion of the foresayd marriage ended, kyng Henry with his people sped hym towarde Barrys, where he was honorably receaued. And whan he had with his newe wyfe re-

sted hym there a season, he then with the duke of Burgoyne and dyuerse other lordes of Fraunce, layde seiges vnto dyuers towne whiche helde vpon the Dolphyns partye, & them wanne by strengthe or by appoyntement, and lastly layde seige and his ordenaunce aboute a stronge towne named Meldune or Melcon, wherof was capytayne a noble warryour named Barbasan, the whiche defended that towne manfully. Then the kyng seynge the foresayde sterresse of p capitayne, beclipped that towne with a stronge seige, lyenge hymself on p syde towarde the wood, and the duke of Burgoyne vpon the other syde agayn the temple of the monastery of saint Peter, which siege so continued during this mayes pere.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xix.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xx.

Robert Whypyngham.

Richarde Whypyngham Mercer.

Anno. viii.

John Butler.

This pere continued styll the former seige aboute Melcon tyll about the myddle of Nouembre. At whiche tyme the fozenamed capytayne soze samysed, sought meanes of treaty. By meane whereof it was agreed, that he wyth all other shoulde lauely auoyde by a dape tympted, excepte all suche persones as befoze tyme had bene consentynge vnto the deathe of John lately duke of Burgoyne. For the whiche crime the fozenamed capytayne named Barbasan was after accused wyth many other, and sente vnto Barrys, and there holde in pryson. And that done kyng Henry layde his seige vnto a towne called Melden. The whiche synallpe was also geuen by by a lyke apopntement.

Wherin were founden certayn persones detected of the foresayde murder, for the whiche after due examination made, they were hanged vpon an elme tree standyng by p way ledyng vnto Barrys. Whan kyng Henry had thus wroughte muche of his wyll in Fraunce, he toke leue of his father the frenche kyng, & with the quene his wyfe sayled into Englande, & landed at Douer vpon Candelmas day, leuyng in Fraunce for his deputye his brother the duke of Clarence. Then the kyng sped on his iournaye towarde London, and came thither on the. xiiii. dape of February. And the quene came thither vpon the. xxi. day of the same moneth. But here for lengthe of tyme I wyll passe ouer the great and curious or-

Whh ii dynaunce

The coronation
of the
quene.

dynaunce prouided by the cyteysng
for the receyvinge of the kynge and
quene, aswell of theyr ordinate me-
tyng with theim vpon horsebacke,
as the sumptuous and honourable
diuyses preparyed within the cytie
to the kynges and quenes greate re-
ioysynge. And for the I wyll procede
to shewe vnto you some parte of the
greate honour that was vsed and ex-
ercysed vpon the daye of the sayde
quenes coronacyon, whiche was af-
ter solempnyshed in saynte Peters
churche of Westmynster, vpon the
daye of saynt Mathy the Apostle or
the foure & twenty day of february.
After which solempnyfacion in that
churche ended, she was conueyed in
to the greate halle of Westmynster,
and there set to dyner. Vpon whose
ryght hande satte at the ende of the
same table the archebysshop of Can-
torbury, and Henry surnamed the
ryche cardynall of wyndchester. And
vpon the lefte hade of the quene
satte the kynge of Scottes in hys
estate, the whiche was serued with
couered messe, like vnto the forena-
med byshoppes, but after them. And
vpon the same hande and syde nere
to the boordes ende, satte the duchesse
of Yorke, and the countesse of Hun-
tyngdon. The erle of Marche hold-
yng a sceptre in hys hande, kneeled
vpon the righte syde. The erle mar-
shall in lyke maner kneeled vpon the
lefte hande of the quene. The coun-
tesse of Kente satte vnder the table
at the ryght foote, and the countesse
Marshall at the left foote. The duke
of Glouceter by Humfrey was that
daye ouerlooker, and stode before the
quene bare headed. By Rycharde Ae-
npl was that daye carner to the quene
the erles brother of Suffolk cupberer
by John Steward Selwar, the lord

Clyfford panterer in stede of the erle
of warwyke, & lord wylughby bote-
ler in stede of the erle of Arundel. The
lord Gray Ruthin or Rissyn naperer
The lord of Audeley ainner in stede
of the erle of Cambrwyge. The erle
of Worcester was that daye erle Marshal,
the whiche rode about the hal vpon
a great courser, with a multitude of
tipped stauers about him to kepe the
roume in the hall. Of the which hall
the barons of the. v. portes began the
table vpon the ryght hande toward
saynt Stephens chapell, & beneth the
at the table sat the bowchpers of the
chauncery. And vpon the left hande
next vnto the cupbord, sat the maye
and his brethren aldermen of Londo.
The byshoppes began the table fore-
again the barons of the. v. portes, &
the ladies the table again the maye.
Of which two tables, for the byshop-
pes began the bishoppe of Londo &
the bishoppe of Durham, and for the
ladies, the countesse of Stafforde, &
the countesse of Marche. And ye shall
vnderstande, that this feast was al
of fysh. And for the orderynge of the
seruyce thereof were dyuers lordes
appoynted for hede offycers, as ste-
warde, controller, surueyour, and o-
ther honourable offycers. For the
whiche were appoynted the erles of
Northumberlande, of Westmerlode
the lord Fitz Hugh, the lord Fur-
neuall, the lord Gray of Wylton, the
lord Ferers of Groby, the lord Wo-
nynges, the lord Hatynghton, & lord
Darcy, the lord Dacre, and the lord
Delaware.

The whiche with other ordered
the seruyce of the feast as foloweth, &
thus for the fyrst course.

Brawnne and mustarde.

Redd ellys in Burnet.

For

The seventh parte

306.

Frument with Balien
Pyke in Erbage
Lamprey powdered
Trought
Codyng
Plaves ftyed
Harlyng ftyed
Crabbys
Leche lumbarde flourished
Tartys.

And a sotyltye called a Bellycane
syttyng on his nest with her bydes,
and an ymage of saynte Katherpne
holdyng a boke and disputyng with
the doctoures, holdynge a reason in
her ryghte hande, saynge: *Madame le
Roynne, & the Bellycan as an answer
Ce est la signe, & du roy, par tenir ioy, & a
tout sa gent, elle mete sa entent.*

The seconde course.

Gely coloured wyth columbyne
floures

White potage or creme of alimades.

Breme of the see

Counger

Solys

Cheuen

Barbll with Roche

Freshe Samon

Halpbut

Gurnarde

Rochet broyled

Smelth ftyed

Creups or lobster

Leche Damask with the kynges
woyde or prouerbe flourished, *Vn
sanz plus.*

Lamprey freshe baken

Flamperne flourished with a
scochon copall, and therein.iii. crow-
nes of golde planted with floure de
lyce & floures of camewyll wrought
of confections.

And a sotyltye named a Panter
with an ymage of saynte Katherpne
with a whele in her hande, & a rolle

wyth a reason in that other hande,
sayeng, *La Roynne ma sile, in ceste ile, per bon
reson, auez remount.*

The thyrde course.

Dates in compost

Creme motle

Carpe deoze.

Turbut

Tenche

Berche with golon

Frythe surgeon with welkes

Dopperis roasted

Hennes ftyed

Creups de eawe douce

Dyanys.

Elys roasted with lamprey

A leche called the whyte leche
flourished with hawthorne le-
ups and redde hawps.

A marche payne garnished wyth
dyuers figures of angelles, among
the which was set an ymage of saint
Katherpne holdynge thys reason,
*Il est escrit, par noir & eil, per mariage pure
cest guerre ne dure.* And lastely a sotyltye
named a Tigre lokynge in a myr-
rour, and a man syttinge on horse
backe clene armed holdyng in his ar-
mes a Tigre whelpe in this reason,
Per force sanz reason ie ay pryse destre bestre.
And in his owne hande makynge a
couテナnce of throyng of myrours
at the great Tigre. The which held
this reaso, *Gile the mirrour ma fete distour.*

And thus with al honour was sy-
nished this solepne coronacio. After
the which the quene solourned in the
palays of Westmynstre tyll Palme
sondaye solowynge. And vpon the
morne she toke her tournay towarde
Wyndesore, wher the kyng and she
helde their Easter. And after þ hygh
feast passed, þ kyng made prouysion
for his warre in Fraunce, durynge the
terme of thys mayes yere.

Hhh iii Anno

Anno dñi. M. CCCC. ii.

Anno dñi. M. CCCC. xxi.

John Boteler.

Wyllpā Cambyrge Grocer.

Anno. ii.

Wyllpam Weston.

The .ii. yere.



His yere vpon Easter
euen, beyng then .p. xxi.
daye of Apryl, the duke
of Clarence brother vn
to the kyng, whome at
his departyng out of fraunce, he had
lefte there for his deputie, was at a
place called in frenche Baugy or
Bauge, ouerset & slayne by a french
capytayne named, by John de la
Croise. And the erles of Huntyn-
gdon and of Somerset with many mo
gentylmen of Englande & Gascopn
take prysoners, to the kynges great

displeasure. Then shortly after the
kyng held his parliament at West-
minster. By autozite whereof & of a
couocacio of p clergy holden at Dou-
les, was graunted to him a systene &
disline. And for p money therof shuld
not be hostely called on of p comons,
p byshop of Wynchester of his owne
fre mynde, lent to the kyng. .xx. M. li.

Some saye
that the by-
shop of Wyn-
chester lent to
the kyng. .xx.
M. li.

And about Pentecost folowynge
kyng Henry shipped at Douer, & say-
led to Calays, & from thence yode the
thyrde tyme into fraunce, where he
warred durynge this mayres yere.

Anno dñi. M. CCCC. xxi.

Anno dñi. M. CCCC. xxii.

Rycharde Gosselyn.

Robert Chycheley Grocer.

Anno. x.

Wyllpam Weston.

The .x. yere.



And in the begynnyng of this
mayres yere and. vi. daye of
Decembry, was kyng Henry
the. vi. bozne at Wyndesore. And in
the. ix. daye of the sayde moneth be-
gan a parliament at Doules. By p
which was graunted to the kyng a
systene and a disline of the clergie.
And for the coyne of golde at those
dayes was greatly mynished wth
clippynge and washyng, to p great
hurte of the commynalte, therfore
at this parliament it was enacted &
agreed, that in the paymente of this
ayde to the kyng graunted, his offi-
cers shoulde receyue all lyght coyne
of golde, so that they wanted not in
weyghte ouer the rate of. xii. s. in the
noble. And yf any noble wated more
then. xii. s. or any other pese of golde
after the rate, the owner to make
vp the value to. vi. s. viii. d. By reaso

of thys also, syluer, as grotes & peng
were geson, for all men put forth the
gold and made stoze of syluer. This
yere also after Easter, p quene tooke
shyppynge at Southampton, & say-
led to the kyng into fraunce, where
she was honourably receyued of her
father and mother, & of the cyties &
good townes. And in the cytie of Pa-
rys vpon whytsonday, the kyng and
she sat downe at dyner, whiche had
not befoze time ben sene of any kyng
of Englande.

In thys mayres yere also, but the
.x. yere of the kyng and. x. day of Au-
gust, a new webecroke was set vpon
the crosse of saynte Paules steple of
London. The kyng Henry beyng styl
occupied in his warres in fraunce,
& dayly wyppynge vpo the frechme
in thys sayd moneth of August and
.x. yere of his regne, he wated sycke

The death
of Henry the.

at

The duke of
Clarence slain.

The byschop of
Henry the. vi.

at Bops in Vincente, and dyed there lyke a good chryste manne vpon the last daye of August, whē he had reigned .ix. yerres. v. monethes & .x. dayes, leuving after him his onely poung sone Henry of the age of epght monethes and odde dayes. And then his body was embawmed and cered, and after brought vnto westminster, as in the begynnyng of the nexte mayyes yere shalbe shewed. And in the moneth of Octobze folowynge, dyed the French kynge father vnto p̄ quene, as in his story before is declared.

Who that would take vpon hym to reherse all the conquestes and triumphaut victories opteined by this molste victorizous pynce, with other laudable dedes, he should to reherse the ceriously make a greate volume. But where tofore I haue shewed to you breuely some parte of p̄ famous dedes of this excellent pynce, touching the actuall dedes of his body nowe I will breuely touche the actes dooen by hym for the merite of his soule. And firste for as muche as he knewe well p̄ his father had laboured the meanes to depose the noble pynce Rycharde the second, and after was consentynge to his death, for the whiche offence his said father had sent to Rome, of that greate crime to bee assayed, and was by the bishoppe of Rome entorned, p̄ lyke as he had becraft hym of his naturall & bodely life for euer in this worlde, that so by continuall prayer and suffragyes of p̄ church, he should cause his soule to liue perpetually in p̄ celestiaall worlde whiche penaunce for that his father by life did not perfourme, this goostly knight in molste habondaunt manner perfourmed it. For firste he builded thre houses of religio, as p̄ Charterhouse of monkes called Whene, p̄

house of close nonnes called Whene, & the thyrde was an house of obseruautes buylded vpon that other syde of thamps, & after lette fall by hym for the skyll that foloweth as testyfyeth the booke of Regyster of mayyes.

Wher it is reported that after this noble pynce had thus founded these said thre houses, and endowed them with competent landes, he of a goostly disposicio w a secrete compaignie for to viset them and to se howe they kepte their diuine seruice, would dyuers tymes goo frome his manour of Whene nowe called Rychemount vnto the said thre places, for the causes abouesaid. At whiche tymes and seasons he euer soude the twoo houses of monkes and nonnes occupied as their statutes required. But the thirde house whiche was of frenche friers, he founde soundy tymes neglygent and slacke in dooynge of their duety. Wherefore he called before hym p̄ father with some other of that place, & reasoned with them sharply why none otherwyle they entended their diuine seruice, and prayed moze specially for hym as they were bounde of duety. Wherunto it was after pardon requyred lastely by p̄ said father answered, that in conuenient wyle they naturally myght not praye for hym and his good speede, considering that he dayly warred vpon their fathers and kynnesmen, and steele of them and spoyled them dayly, and enpouertised that lade, whiche they of very kind ought to loue and praye for. After whiche answer thus by them made, the kynge auoyded the house of them, and turned the lande therof to suchē vse as hym best liked and suffred the house to fall in ruine. And ouer this great acte of foundynge of these twoo religious houses, he ordeined

deined at westminster to byenne perpetually without extinction, four tapers of waxe vpon the sepulture of kynge Rycharde, and ouer that he ordeined therto, to bee continued for euer, one day in the weke a solempne Dirige to bee songe, and vpon the morowe a masse, after whiche masse ended, certain money to bee gguen, as befoze is expressed w other thyn-

ges in the begynnyng of this kyng his reigne. And ouer this his greate businelles warre notwithstanding, this moste christen prince by his life chase his place of sepulture within the foresaid monastery, & there ordeined for hym to be song thre masses euery daye in the weke whyle the world lasteth, in maner & fourme as by these verses folowynge dooeth appere.

Henrici missae quinti sunt hic tabulate.

Quae successiue sunt per monachos celebratae.

¶ Prima fit Assumpta de festo uirginis almae
Poscit postremam Christus de morte resurgens.
¶ Prima salutate de festo uirginis extat,
Nunciat angelicie laudem postrema choris.
¶ Esse deum natum de uirgine prima fatetur,
Commemora natam, sic ultima missa Mariam.
¶ Prima celebretur, ad honore neupmatis almi
Ultima conceptam denunciat esse Mariam.
¶ Semper prima coli, debet de corpore Christi
Ultima sit fata, de uirgine purificata.
¶ Coecedet ut prima, celebretur de cruce sancta
Atque salutate fiet postrema Mariae.
¶ Ois ad sanctos, est prima colenda supernos.
Ultima de requie, pro defunctis petit esse.
¶ Semper erit media, de proprietate dici,

	¶ Missa Assumptionis Mariae.	
Dominica	¶ Missa dominicae resurrectionis.	1
	¶ Missa salutationis Mariae.	
Lune	¶ Missa annunciationis Mariae.	2
	¶ Missa natiuitatis Christi.	
Martis	¶ Missa natiuitatis Mariae.	3
	¶ Missa sancti spiritus.	
Mercurii	¶ Missa conceptionis.	4
	¶ Missa corporis Christi.	
Iouis	¶ Missa purificationis.	5
	¶ Missa sanctae crucis.	
Veneris	¶ Missa salutationis Mariae.	6
	¶ Missa omnium sanctorum.	
Sabata	¶ Missa de requie.	7
Omni die	¶ Missa diei quotidie.	

¶ Whiche verses may thus to the vnlettered bee englisshed

Too here is noted and putte in memory,
That ouer these actes noble and Marciall,
This excellent prince, this fiste kyng Henry,
His soule to endowe he was memoryall.
For with suffrages whiche euer laste shall,
Of masses thre that folowe serially,
At westminster he ordeined to bee said dayly:

Sondye.

Upon sondaye the fiste masse to begynne,
Deuoutly to bee laied, of the assumption,
Of our blessed Lady, and not thereafter blynnne.
But then the latter of the resurrection.

Mondaye.

And on the mondaye, of the Visitation,
The fiste masse after ordeined is.
Of the Annunciacon the latter masse laied is.

Tuesday

The seventh parte.

370

- Tuesdaye.** Upon the tuesdaye, to kepe the cytye full,
The firste to bee saied of christes Natyuite.
Then of our Lady birth the latter solow muste.
Wednesdaye. On wednesdaye, the holy goost halowed to bee,
And of the Conception the third willed be.
Thursdaye. The thursdaye to syng & firste of Corpus christi,
Of the Purification the laste of our Lady.
Fridaye. Upon the fridaye, a masse of christes crosse,
And of the Salutation the latter for to syng.
And for of daye or tyme should bee no losse.
Saterdaye. Upon saterdaye, the firste of that moynynge.
A masse of all saintes to praye for the kyng,
Then masse of requiem to bee laste of all.
Quotidie. And every daye, the daye masse amid these masses
(to fall.

Cenuoy.

O mercifull god, what a pynce was this,
Whiche his short life in martiall actes spent,
In honour of conquest, that wonder to me it is
Howe he might compass such dedes excellent,
And yet for that his mynde nothing detent.
All goostly helpe for his soule to proude,
Out of this worlde or he factall should slide.

So that though I had Tully his eloquence,
Or of Senek the grente moralitee,
Or of Salomon the perfect sapience,
Or the swete ditties of dame Caliope,
Yet might I not in prose or other dpyte,
Accordynghly auance this pynce his fame,
And with due honour to inhaunce the same,

Consideryng his actes, wherof ycell appeare,
In this rude weede, with many mo left out,
The tyme also, whiche was lesse then ten yere,
That he so shortly brought all thyng aboute,
By diuine grace forthred without doubte,
That mightfull lord he helpe his goostly knyght
With grace and honour to passe this worldes
(right

And to haue rewardes doctable and condigne,
And first for martiall actes by hym dooen,
To bee aduanced among the worthys myne,
And for his vertues used by hym eft soone,
With many good dedes whiche he in
earth had dooen,
Aboue the Hierarches he is I truste now stalled
That was on earth, kyng of kynges called.

Anglia.

Henry the fyrte.



Enty the list of
that name, and
onely soonne of
Henry the fifth,
and of quene Ka-
therin doughter
of Charles the
seuenth kyng of
Fraunce, beganne his reigne ouer &
realme of Englande, the first daye of
Septembze, in the yere of our loyde
a thousande foure hundredzeth twenty
and twoo and in the ende of the laste

yere of & reigne of the foresaid seuenth
Charles then kyng of Fraunce.

This Henry for the insufficiencye
of his age, whiche as before is shew-
ed was but of eyght monethes &
ode dayes, was committed vnto the
rule of his vncles, the dukes of Bed-
ford and of Glocester. The whiche
durynge his none age ruled the real-
mes of Englade and of Fraunce ho-
nourably, as & duke of Glocester pro-
tectour of Englade, and the duke of
Bedford regent of Fraunce. Then
vpon

Upon þ. xxi. daye of October during
this mayes yere, Roberte Checeley,
dyed at Warys the aboue named. vii
Charles kyng of Fraunce. By reaso
of whose deth, by force of appointe-
ment befoze made betwene Henry the
fifte and hym, as befoze is toweched
in the seuenth yere of the said Henry

the realme of Fraunce and right ther-
of fill vnto the young kyng Henry.
To whose vse the nobles of Fraunce,
excepte a fewe of suche as helde with
the dolphine, deliuered the possession
therof vnto the duke of Bedforde as
regent therof duringe that nonage
of this kyng.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xxii.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xxiii.

William Estrepyde.

William Walderne.

Anno primo.

Robert Catersale

The first yere



A þ begynnynge of
this mayes yere,
and firste yere of þ
kyng, þ is to save
the seuenth daye of
þ moneth of Aouē
þe, the corps of the

excellent prince kyng Henry the fiste
was with greate solempnite and ho-
nour brought vnto the monestery of
Westminster, and there at the fete of
saint Edward with due reuerence en-
tered, to whose soule Iesus bee mer-
ciful. And vpo the ninth daye of the
said moneth, was a parliamēt called
at Westminster. By reason whereof,
the kyng his gouernaunce duringe
his nonage was prouided for, w all
þ rule of bothe realmes of Englande
and of Fraunce. And by auctozite of
the same, the duke of Gloucestre sy
Humfrey, was ordeined protectoure
of Englade, and duke John of Bed-
forde regēt of Fraunce. And duringe
the parlyament, was graunted vnto
the kyng for a subydie for thre yeres
syue nobles of euery sacke of wolle þ
should passe ouer the lande. And the
fyrste daye of Marche after, was of
his preesthode deregraded an here-
tyke named William Cayllour, and
brent to ashes in smithfelde. Whose

opiniōs for þ hering of them should
bee tedious and vnfutefull, I there-
fore will not w them blot my boke.
In this moneth of March also was
the towne of Pount Melane deliue-
red by apoyntement vnto the regēt
of Fraunce. Of the whiche appointe-
ment one article was, that all hoyses,
abilmetes of warre, harneis, & other
should bee left within the said place,
and also golde and syluer and other
iewelles there to remain hooley. And
if that any persone were within the
holde soude, whiche befoze tyme had
been gylty oꝝ cōsentynge to the death
of the duke of Burgoine, þ he should
bee deliuered to the regent, and not
to take any benefite oꝝ priuilege by
that apoyntement.

In this yere þ west gate of þ cite
called Newgate, was newly builded
and repared by þ executours of Ry-
chard whtyngtō late maye of Lon-
dō. And this yere after midsummer fell
great water oꝝ rain, so þ for the moze
part y every daye atwene the begyn-
ning of July & ende of September,
it rained litell oꝝ muche, and yet that
not withstādynge, that yere was con-
uenient plenty of graine, so þ whete
passed not eyght shyllinges at Lon-
don, and malte fise shyllinges.

Anno

The duke of
Gloucestre p-
tectour of En-
glāde and þ
duke of Bed-
forde regēt of
Fraunce.

An heretike
brent.

The seventh part

Anno dñi. M. CCCC. xliii.

Anno dñi. M. CCCC. xliii.

370.

Archolus James.

Wylliam Crotomer Dyaper.

Anno. ii.

Thomas Wadeforde.



His pere, þ is to meane in þ begynnynge of this mapes pere & xliii. dape of Nouembre, the kyng and þ quene his mother remoued frome Wyndesore towarde London, and came that night vnto Etanes, and on the morowe he was bozne to the chare with glad semblat and mery chere, & so came to kyngeston that night, and vpon the morowe vnto his manour of kyngeston. Up on wednesdape, the quene sittynge in hir chare and he vpon hir lappe, passed with great triumphe thozugh the citee, & so vnto Westmynster, where the was holden his parliament, and there sette in his kyngly maieste id in the parlyament chaumbre among all his lordes. Where the speaker of the parlyament made a famous preposicion, wherof the effecte was, of þ grace þ god had endewed the realme with, for the ptesence of so toward a pynce and soueraygne gouernoure as he was, with many other wordes of commendacion, whiche I passe ouer. The. xlii. dape of the same moneth of Nouembre, the kyng with þ quene remoued from Westmynster vnto Waltham crosse. And after he had there a season sojourned, he remoued vnto Hertford, where he held his Christmalle, & the kyng of Scottes id hym. And þ foresaid parlyament was iourned vnto the twenty dape of Christmalle. In the whiche parlyament among other actes, was ordeined þ what prysoner that for graund or pety treasid was comitted to ward, and after wylfully brake the same, it

should bee demed pety treason, and that the goodes of hym so escappynge, should bee forfeited to the lord of þ soyle that thei were founde in. In þ moneth of february, sy James Stewart kyng of Scottes maryed in þ face of the churche of saint mary oueris in Southwerke, dame Joha the duchesse daughter of Clarence, whiche was daughter vnto the erle of Somerset firste husbände vnto þ said duchesse. And the feest was holden in the bishoppe of Wynchesters place by. And soone after vpon þ. xlii. dape of february, the foresaid parlyament beynge again holden at Westmynster, for brykynge of the foresaid acte of brykynge of prysone, sy John Mortimer was accused by a poman named Wylliam kyng & seruaunt vnto sy Robert Scot knight and keper of the towre of London, of dyuers poyntes of treason as folowen. First he counseiled id the said Wylliam kyng to the ende to bryke out of prysone, and promised to hym for þ same, the pety value of. xl. li. lande, & in processe an erledome. Also þ said Mortimer shoulde saye þ he woulde

kyng of scot
res married in
saint marys
dueris

Mortimer.

And ferthermoze he accused hym, that the said Mortimer shoulde saye, that the erle of Marche shoulde bee kyng by right enherytaunce, and that he hym self was next rightfull heire to

to the sayd crowne after the said erle of Marche, wherfore yf the sayd erle wold not take vpon hym þe crowne & rule of the lāde, he saide that he elles wolde. And ouer this the sayd Wyllyam alledged to the sayde sy? John Mortimer, that he shuld saye that if he sayled of his purpose, and myght not wyne vnto þe erle of Marches, that then he wolde saye vnto þe Dolfyn and ayde and take his partye, where he wylt well he shuld be accepted, and haue good ayde of hym to bypnye about his purpose. Al which maters were duely approued by the sayde Wyllyam agayne the sayd sy? John, befoze the lordes and comons of the said parlyament, for the which treasons he was after drawen and hanged.

In this yere also the duke of Bedforde beyng in Fraunce as regente warred strongly vpon the Dolfyn & wāne from hym many stronge holdes and townes, as Crotey, Balyde, Ryol, Rula, Gyroude, Balye, Hermonde, Mylham, Femel, Seintace, Jenson, Hauron, Duras, Mountluer, La venak, Balogeeu, Cerneys, Roelam, Cusak and Doual with dyuers other, and so contynued tyll he came vnto Verneyll in Berche. The whiche he helde so streyght, that lastly Gyrand the capitayn therof agreed to deliuer it by a certayne day, excepte he were rescowed. After whiche appoyntment so taken, the sayd Gyrande as witnesseth Sagwinus, set worde to Charles the. viii. of þe name or þe. vii. after dyuers wynters, which of his fautoures was then accepted

for kyng of Fraunce. And he in al possible hast, sent thither þe duke of Alençon, þe erle of Turon or of Douglas, of Bowgham or Boucam, of Daumayl, & the vicoit of Harbon, with a strong power of Armenakes, Scottes and Frenchmen, the which host or it might appoche to the said towne to make rescouse, the day expited and it vnto þe duke deliuered. Wher þe duke of Alençon was ascerteyned of þe deliuerie of the towne, he toke his aduise of þe other capitaynes, whether it was better to retourne cōsidering the towne was yelden, or to gyue batayll vnto the Englishmen. But finally for no reproche shuld be to the arected as they had fled for fere, they kept on theyr iournay, & pyght their felde in a playne nere vnto the sayd towne of Verneyll, wher they beyng strongly enbataylled, vpon the. vii. daye of þe moneth of August, þe duke of Bedford with his retinue gaue to theim sharpe and cruell battayle, the which endured longe without knowlage of vyctory.

But finally by goddes ordynance and power, the vyctory fyl to the English partye, to the greate losse of their enemyes. For in the fyght was slayne, as testifieth the French Sagwine, the erles of Turon, and Boucam, of Daumayle, with the vicoit of Harbone, & dyuers other men of name. And of the comons wer slayne to the nōumbe of fyue thousande. And there was take the duke of Alençon, the marshall of Fraunce, and other. But the English wynter alymeth. x. M. to be slayne and mo.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xliii.

John Mychell,

Symonde Seman.

John Wywater,

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xlv.

Anno. iii.

Thys



His yere after Easter, & hyng helde his parliamente at Westmynster, the whiche beganne vpon the daye of Erkenwalde oꝝ the laste daye of Aprill. And twoo dayes befoze, & hyng with the quene his mother came thowgh the citee frome Wyndesore. And whē he came at the west doze of Doulys, the lord protectour toke hym out of the chare, and so was ladde vpo his sere betwene the said lord protectour and the duke of Exeter, vnto the steppes goyng into the quier. Fro whens he was bozne vnto the high aulter, and there kneled in a trauers purueyed for hym. And when he had bee there, he yode to the rode of the north doze and there made his offerynges. And then was he bozne into the churche yerde, & there sette vpon a satre courtser, and so coueighed thowgh chepe, and the other stretes of the citee vnto saint George his barre, & so helde his iournay to his mantour of Kenyngtone. And continuyng the foze said parliamente, the hyng was somtymes conueighed to Westmynster, and within the parliament chamber kept his copall estate. By auctorytee wherof, to hym was graunted a subsidye of twelf pences the pound of all maner marchaundise comyng in oꝝ passyng out of this realme and thre millynges of a tunne of wyne for the terme of thre yeres to bee holdē. And fethermoze it was enacted, that all marchaunt strangers should bee sette to an Englishe hoste within fiftene dayes of their comyng to their pozte sale, and to make no sale of any marchaundise oꝝ thei were so lodged, and then within fourty dayes folowynge to make sale of all that thei brought. And if any remained vnsold at the

said fourty dayes ende, that then all suche marchaundise beyng then vnsould, to bee sozfasted vnto the hyng. Also that all straungers that caried any wolles out of this lande, should pay .xlvi. s. .iiii. d. for a sache custome, where the Englishe marchaunt and deneyen payde but fīue nobles, with many other cōdicions and penalties as well for Englishe as for other marchauntes, whiche should aske longe leysour to shewe, enacted and passed durynge this said parliamente.

And the seconde daye of the monethe of Auguste, was yelden vnto the erle of Salisbury appointed w other by the regent, the citee of Wās vnder appoyntemente comprised in nēn artycles. Wherof one specyall was, that if any persones were founde within the citee whiche had been consentyng vnto & dukes deth John late duke of Burgoyne, that thei should stande at the grace of the said regent.

And this yere the duke of Gloucestre lord protectour, whiche lately befoze had maryed the duchesse of Holande a woman of greates possession for cause of rule wherof, to haue dominion of the same, he with the said duchesse sayled towarde & countree, and thereof hit subiectes was peasily and with honour receiued. But finally he had suche chere, that he was glabbe to retourne into Englande, leuyng his wife there in a towne of hit owne named Mounse. But after his departyng, the duke of Burgoyne so demeaned hym to the rulers of that towne, were it by bat-taill oꝝ otherwise, that thei deliuered hit to the said duke, and he forthe w sente hir vnto Gaunte, there to bee kepte as prysoner. But by the frenshippe of one named syr Jaques de

la Bayll a Burgonpon knyghte, & her owne polecpe, he escaped thence in a mannes clothynge, and came to a towne in Zelande named Typre, and frome thence to another towne in Zeland called Ghwode o; Ghowde, wher the wistode þ dukes power.

Then the duke of Glouceter hearyng of the escape of his wife, and of the malpce of the duke foresayde, in all haste prouped a stronge company of souldpours and archers, & comyted them vnto the rule of þ lozde Fitzwater. The which in pzoesse of tyme landed with them at a place in Zelande called Brewers haue, wher of they enemyes they were encountred and dyuē backe, & so retourned into Englande withoute any greatesete doyng, leuyng the duchesse behynde them for that season.

Thys pere about Wyghelmalle þ prince of Portyngale came into En-

glande, & was honourably receaued and fested of the kynges vncles, and tarped here the tyme of this mayres pere. This pere also began a grudge to kyndle betwene the lozde protectour and hys halfe brother the byshop of Wyndchester, the whyche after grewe to a greatesourbaunce of the cytie of London, as in the next mayres yeare shalbe shewed. And in the ende of this pere, were many honeste men of the citie apetches of treason, by a falsse and malpicious person belongyng vnto the sayde byshoppe and put them vnto greateseracion and trouble. Whiche was dooen by the pzocurement of the sayde byshop as the comon fame then wente. And not alonely menne of the cytie were thus vexed, but also other burgeses of byuers good towne, as Leycester, Caunterburge, Northampton, and other.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xxb.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xxbi.

Wylliam Wyldede.

John Couentre Mercer.

Anno. liii.

John Bzokle.

The. liii. pere.



At this pere the. xxix. day of Octobze, & selfe same daye that the mayze for the pere folowynge perele at Westmynster taketh his charge, at suche tyme as he was holdyng his greatesopner, he was by the lozde protectour sente for in speddy maner. And whē he was comen to his pzesence he gaue to hym streyght comaundement, þ he shulde se that the cytie were surely watched in that night folowynge, & so it was. Then vpon the moztowe folowynge about. ix. of the cloke, certain seruantes of the forenamed byshop woulde haue entred by the bypoge gate. But

the rulers therof wold not suffre the in so great noubze, but kepte thym out by force, like as before they were commaunded. Wherwith they beyng greuously discontented, gathered to them a moze noubze of archers and men of armes, and assauted the gate with shot & other meanes of warre. In so muche that the commons of the cytie hearyng therof, mytte in theyr shoppes & sped the thither in greates noubze. And lykelye it was to haue ensued great effusiō of bloode shortly therupon, ne had ben the dyscrecion of þ mayze and his bzethzen, that exhorted þ people by al politike meane to kepe þ kynges peace. And in this passe

Howe the commons of þ byshoppe of Wyndchester assauted the bypoge gate of London.

The seventh part

374

pasſe tyme, the archebpyſhop of Caſto-
rbury, with the pryncer of Doxtyn-
gale and other, tooke great labour
vpon them to pacifie this varpaſſe
betwene the lord protectour and the
bpyſhoppe, in ſo muche that they rode
betwene them. viii. tymes o; they
might byng them to any reſonable
coſoympte. Then laſtly they agreed
to ſtade to the rule of the regēt, o; of
ſuche as he wold aſſygne. Wherupō
ſ citie was ſet in a moze quete. The
the bpyſhop of Wyndcheſter wrote a
letter vnto the duke of Bedforde o;
lord regēt, wherof ſ tenure enſueth.

Right hyghe & mightye prince
and right noble, & after one le-
ueſt erthly lord, I recommaunde me
vnto your grace wth al myne hert.
And as ye deſyre the welſare of the
kyng our ſoueraygne lord, & of hys
realmes of Englande & of Fraunce,
& pour owne weale wth all yourcs,
haſt pou hyther, for by my trouthe, &
ye tary longe, we ſhall put thys lade
in ſeopardy with a ſelde, ſuche a bzo-
ther ye haue here, God make hym a
good mā. For pour wyſedom know-
eth well that the proſyte of Fraunce
ſtandeth in the welſare of Englande.
Ryght high & mightie prince, I be-
ſeeche pou holde maſter John Est-
court pour coſicellour excuſed of hys
taryng, for it is muche agayne hys
wyl. But the counſayll here hathe
made hym do contrary hys mynde.
And that it may like pou to grue cre-
dence vnto pour chāberlayne ſy; Ro-
bert Butler. And the bleſſed Trinite
kepe pou. Wryten in greate haſte at
London the laſte daye of Octobye.

Upon the .x. day of January next
enſuyng, ſ ſayde duke of Bedforde
wth his wyfe came vnto London.
And wth the came alſo the ſayd bpyſ-

hop of Wyndcheſter. And ſ maye &
the cyteyngs receaued hym at War-
ton, & coueyed hym throughe the citie
vnto Weſtmynſter, wher he was lod-
ged in ſ kynges palays, & the biſhop
of Wyndcheſter was lodged wthin the
abbottes lodgyng.

Then vpon the moztow ſolowpnyng
o; ſ .xii. day of January, ſ maye pre-
ſented the regēt wth a payre of ba-
ſyns of ſyluer & ouer gyfte, & in them
a .v. marke of golde. But the bpyſ-
hop had ſo incenced hym agayn the
cytie, that they receaued but a ſmall
thanke for al their labour and coſte.

Upon ſ .xii. day of February, the be-
gan a great couſayll at ſaint Albonis
and after it was adiourned vnto
Northampton. But for due conclu-
ſions myght not bee dyuen by the
ſayde counſayll, therefore vpon the
xxv. daye of Marche enſuyng, was
called a parlyament at Leyceſter, the
whiche endured tyll the .xv. daye of
Juny ſolowpnyng. This was cleped
of the comon people the parlyament
of battes. The cauſe was, for procla-
macions were made, that men ſhuld
leue they; ſweardes & other weppyns
in they; innes, the people toke great
battes & ſtaues in they; neckes, and
ſo ſolowed their lordes and maiſters
vnto the parlyament. And whā that
wepen was inhybtyed the, then they
toke ſtones and plummettes of lede,
and truſſed them ſecretly in their ſle-
ues & boſomes. Duryng the parlia-
ment, amōge other notable thynges
for the weale of the realme, the bary-
aunce that was betwene the ſayd
lordes was herin debated & argued.

In ſo muche that the duke of Glou-
ceſter put in a byll of cōplaynt, agayn
the bpyſhop contempnyng. vi. actycles.
Wherof the fyrſt was, that wher the
lord protectour wold haue had his
ſit it lodgyng

A couſayll hel-
den at Coynt
Albonis.

The parly-
ment of Wat-
ter.

The cōplaint
of the duke of
Glouceſter ag-
aynſt the bpyſ-
hop of Wynd-
cheſter.

lodgynge wythin the towne of London, he was by the comforte and ayde defended & let of the bishoppe, and of Richard wydeuile esquier the beyng Apuetenaunt of the same. The secōd was, for that that the bishoppe wold haue remoued þe kyng from Eltham, and haue set hym at his gouernaunce withoute the aduyce and counsaile of the lord protectour. The thyrde was, that when the duke was enformed of the byshoppes entent, and he entendynge accordynge to his offyce and duetie, in peasyble wyse to haue ryde to þe kyng to haue geue vnto hym attendaunce: the bishop entendynge þe distruccon of þe duke, assēbled a great multitude of men of armes and archers in Southwarke, & ther bywe the cheyne at the byrdegate fote, and set by pyppes & other engynes to stoppe the kynges hie waye, & ordeyned me to stande in chambres and solers to throwe stones, and by theyr ordenaunces and pollycy, to haue destroyed þe duke and his company. The.iiii. article was, that kyng Henry the fyrst shulde by his life tyme shewe vnto þe sayde duke, that by the openynge of a spaynell, a man was taken behynd a tapet in one of the kynges chambres. The whiche man after examyned by the erle of Arundel, confessed that he was sent thither by the sayd bishop, to the ende to murder kyng Henry the fourth. After which confession, the sayde erle let sache that man, and so cast him into the Chamys. The fyft was, that the sayd Henry the fyrst beyng pryncce and heyr parant to the crowne, the sayd bishop shuld come vnto hym and saye, that for somuche as his father was vexed wth greuous sikenes, & was not apt to come in conuersaciō of þe people, nor myght not conueniently gyde the realme, þe

he therfore shuld take vpon hym the rule & gouernaunce of the same, and put his father fro all kyngly power. The. vi. and last article was, that sediciously the sayd byshop had by his letters sente latelie vnto the duke of Bedforde, wrongfully accused hym, in that he shoulde araye the kynges people, and iouparde this lāde by a felde, contrary to the kynges peace & comon weale of this lande.

All whiche articles were by þe byshop well and sufficientely answered and replied, so that he layde fro hym þe blame. And synally by the prouident counsaill of the lord regent, all the sayd articles and maters of variāunce atwene the saide two lordes hangynge, were put to the examinacion and iudgemente wth the assentence of þe lordes of the parliamēt, of Henry the archebishop of Caunterbury, of Thomas duke of Excester, of John duke of Northfolke, Thomas byshop of Durham, of Philip byshop of Worcester, of John byshop of Bath, of Humfrey the erle of Staforde, of Rauffe lord Cornwell, & of mayster Wylliam Alneuppe the keeper of the prynces seale. The whiche lordes wth assentence of the other lordes of the parlyament, made a decre and a warde, so that eyther partie toke othe by the hande, wth freddy & lounge wordes, none haunyng amēdes of othe, excepte the byshop had wordes of submissiō vnto the duke, in requyrynge hym of his fauoure & good lordshipp. And þe accorde thus synpiled, the parlyamente was adiourned tyll after Easter. Upon Whytsondaye folowynge, was a solempne feast holden at Leicester for sayde, where the regente dubbod kyng Henry knyghte. And then forthewyth the kyng dubbod Richard

The seventh part

376.

charde duke of York, that after was
father to kyng Edward. Also þe dub-
bed knyghtes, the sonne & heyre of þe
duke John duke of Northfolke, and
the erles of Orenforde & Westmer-
lande, with other lordes and gentyl-
men to the noubre of .xxxiii.

Anno dñi. M. CCCC. vi.

John Arnolde.

John Raywell fflymonger.

John Hygthm.

And after that feaste with all ho-
nour was ended, the kyng wyth the
regent and other of his lordes dreyw
towards London. And so the regent
contynued with the kyng in Eng-
lande, by the full terme of this may-
res yeare.

Anno dñi. M. CCCC. vii.

Anno. b.

In the .v. yeare and moneth of
February, the regent with his
wyfe & housholde meyn pas-
sed þe see vnto Calays, & so thorough
Dycard by into Fraunce. But oþ he de-
parted thens, that is to meane vpon
the daye of annunciacion of our La-
dy, the bishop of Wynchester within
the churche of oure Lady of Calays
was created cardynall. And after þe
solempnytee done the regente tooke
hym on his right hand, & so conuey-
ed hym vnto his lodgyng.

This yere was vnreasonable of we-
derpyng, so; it reyned mooste parte con-
tynuallye from Easter to Whghel-
masse, where through hay and coyne
was greately hyndered.

And in this yere the duke of Al-
son, that before was taken prysoner
at the batayll of Uernell in Berche,
was deliuered for a raunson of .ii. C
M. scutes of golde as testifyeth Ga-
gwinus, whiche is lyfye. M. marke
berlyng money.

In this yere also the erle of Sal-
isbury, which of dyuers wyters is
named the good erle, accompanied
wyth the erle of Suffolke, the lord
Salbot, and other, layde a stronge
syege vnto the cite of Orlaunce, &

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xvii.

John Sedney draper.

Henry frowke.

Robert Otley.

helde the citezys very streyght, and
maugre the duke of Orlaunce and
the Marshal of Fraunce then named
Boussaak, the Englyshemen wanne
from theim dyuers stronge holdes
adopyng to the cite, and forced the
to byenne a greate parte of the su-
burbes of the cite.

But sorowe it is to tell and dool-
full to wyte, whyle one day the sayd
good erle by Thomas Mountagu,
rested hym at a bay wyndow, and be-
held the compasse of the cite, and tal-
ked with his familiers, a gonne was
leueyled out of the cite from a place
vnknown, whiche brake the tymbre
of stone of the wyndowe with suche
violence, that the peces therof all to
quashed the face of the noble erle, in
suche wyse that he dyed wythin thre
dayes folowynge. Upon whose soule
& al chrysten Ielu haue mercy. Amē.

This after dyuers wyters was
initium malorum. For after this myshap
the Englyshmen losse rather then
wanne, so that by lytell & lytell they
losse all their possession in Fraunce.
And albeit that somewhat they gate
after, yet for one that they wane thei
losse thre, as after shall appere.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xviii.

Anno. bi.

In iii

The

The death of
the erle of
Salisbury.

Ch. vi. p. 100

In sub. 100.

The. vi. yere a begynnyng
of the same, þe kyng held his
parliamēt at Westmynster
By autozite wherof was graūted to
hym a sublydye in maner as foloweth
fyrst of euery tonne of wyne þe came
into his lande, from þe feast of saynte
Ambrose of the fourth day of Apryll
tyll the ende of that yere, the kyng
shuld haue. iiii. s. belongyng to a de-
nyyn of the kynges lyege man. Also
of all marchaundysse passyng of co-
myng into this lāde, shipped by de-
nyzon, þe kyng to haue of euery. xx. s.
xii. s. excepte woll, fell and clothe.

Also to hym was graūted, þe of all
parishes throughout his realme be-
yng the benefyce of the valewe of. x.
marke, that. x. of the sayd parishes
shuld paye of theyr mouables. vi. s.
and. viii. s. after the rate of. viii. pens
euery mā. And of al benefyces þe wer
of. x. poūde. x. parishes to paye. xiii. s.
and. iiii. s. all cyties & borowes to be
excepted. And so rate & rate lyke fro
the loweste benefyce to the hygheste.
And for the inhabitauntes of cyties
borowhes it was enacted þe euery
man beyng in valewe of. xx. s. aboue
his stufte of household & his aparyl

Anno domini. M. iiii. c. xxviii.

Thomas Dushous.

Henry Barton Skynner.

Rasse Holande.

Anno. vii.

Ch. vii. p. 100.

Ad in this yere vpo the. viii.
daye of Nouembre, the duke
of Norfolke accompanied w
many gentylmen, toke his barge at
saynt mary Quereys, entendyng to
haue passed through the bydye, & so
vnto Gzenewytche. But by the mys-
guydyng of the sterpsmā, he was let
vpo the pyles of the bydye, and the
barge whelmed, so þe all were drow-
ned, except the duke and a fewe per-
sones that lept vpon the pyles, whi-

and his wyfes, shuld paye. iiii. s. and
so after the rate vnto the cychest.

In this yere also and day of saynt
Gyles of the fyrt daye of Septembre,
the cardynal of wynechester was met
by the maye and hys brythzen and
certayn cyteyns on horsebacke with
out the cytie, and so broughte vnto
his palays in southwerke.

About the same tyme, a Wyton þe
a good wydowe & honest womā had
cherished and brought by of almes,
dwellyng in whyte chapell paryshe
without Algate, murdered the sayde
woman in a nyghte slepyng in her
bedde, & after coueyed such icwelles
and stufte as he myght cary. But he
was so pursued vpon, þe for feare he
toke a church in Cister, & there for-
swore the kynges lāde. And þe consta-
bles caused hym be brought to Lon-
don, & so intended to haue coueyed
hym westward. But so soone as he
was comen in the paryshe where
before he had comytted the murther,
the wyfes caste vpon hym so muche
fylthe and ordure of the strete, þe not
withstandyng the resistance made
by the constables, they slewe hym
there out of hande.

Anno domini. M. iiii. c. xxix.

the after wer drowen by with ropes
and so saued. And in the moneth of
Juny folowynge, the cardynall of
wynechester with a warly company
passed the see, entendyng to haue
made warre vpon the Heretikes of
lollers þe inhabyted the countree of
Bage. But howe it was for neede of
men that the regent had in Fraunce
the cardynall chalyged his purpose,
and tarped there a season with the
sayde regent.

After

The seventh parte.

After some wyters it was for to strength and replenishe certain holdes, that weked by reason of a conspycte that the Englisshemenne had with the frenchemenne. At the whiche the lord Talbot was taken prisoner, and the lord Malys with many other to the nombre of thye thousand Englisshemenne were slain and take. But after the opinion of the frenche cronicle, this victorie should bee obtained by Jane or Johan called in frenche la pucele de dieu, in the .xj. yere of this kyng.

Of the foresaid heretikes of Prage

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xxix.

William Ruffe.

William Cusfelde Mercer.

Ruffe Holande.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xxx.

Anno. viii.



At this eyght yere vpon the daye of saint Leonard the syxe daye of Noue-
bre, kyng Henry be-
yng vpon þ age of
nine yeres, was so-
lely crowned in saint Peters chur-
che of Westminster. At whose corona-
cion were made. xxvi. knyghtes of þ
bathe. And after that solempnizaciõ
in the said churche finished, an hono-
rable feast in the great halle of West-
minster was kepte, where the kyng
sittynge in his estate, was serued with
thye courtes as here vnder ensueth.

frumenty with benison.

Up and royall planted losynges
of golde.

Boye hedes in castelles of golde
and enamored.

Bese with motton boyld.

Capon stewed.

Spygnet roasted.

Peppon roasted.

Greate pyke of luce.

Speketh somdeale þ auctour of Cro-
nica Cronicarum, and sheweth that
the chief capitaines of theim were na-
med Morapius, Saplicius, and Lu-
pus a prest, with other bothe lerned
and vnlernd. And Policronicon sheweth
in the neintene chapiter of his
laste boke, that in the twelke yere of
kyng Henry, the foresaid thye ca-
pitaines were slaine, with one mas-
ter Peter clerke beyng an Englishe
manne taken on liue with diuers o-
ther, and of the said heretikes slaine
at twoo iournais ouer two & twenty
thousande.

A rede leche with lions cozurn
therin.

Custarde royall, w a lyoparde
of golde sittynge therin, and holdynge
a flouredelyce.

Frytour of sunne facion, with a
floure delyce therin.

A soculte of saint Edward & saint
Louis armed, & vpon either his cote
armoure, holdynge betwene theim a
figure like vnto kyng Henry stadyng
also in his cote armour, & a scripture
passynge frome theim bothe, sayng
behold. ii. perfecte kynges vnder one
cote armour. And vnder the fete of þ
said saintes was wryten this balade.

Holy saintes, Edward and saint Louis,
Conserue this brache borne of your blisful blode
I am among christe moste soueraigne of prynces,
Emheritour of the flowerdelice so good
This sixt Henry, to reigne and bee wyse,
God graunte he maye to bee your mode.
And that he maye resemble your knyghthode &
Praye ye hartely vnto our lord Iesu. Corvne.

Up and blank batted with gold
Gely party wypten and noted
with

with Te Deum laudamus.

Dygge endozed.

Crane rosted.

Byttoze.

Conpes.

Partriche.

Decok enhakill.

Great Byeme.

A white leche planted with a rede antelop. w a crowne about his necke with a chaine of golde. Flampaine powdered with leopardes and flourc delyce of golde.

A fritour garnished w a leopardes hede and twoo Estrech fethers.

A sotplittie, an emperour & a kyngc arated in mantelles of garters, whiche figured Sigismund p emperour & Henry the. v. And a figure like vnto kyng Henry the sixte knelyng tofore theim w this balade tacked by hym.

A gain miscreantes p emperour Sigismund hath shewed his might, whiche is impertall. And Henry the sixte a noble knight was founde ffor Christe his cause in actes marciail, Cherished the church, to lollers gave a fall, Givng example to kynges that succede, And to their braunche here in speciall, While he dooeth reigne to loue god and beede.

Quinces in composit.

Blaund sure powdered with quarter foyles gyple.

Uenylon.

Egrettes.

Curlew.

Cok and partriche.

Blouer.

Qualles.

Snytes

Great birdes.

Larkis.

Carpe.

Crabbe.

Leche of thre colours.

Henry the. vi.

A bake meate like shiled, quarte rid red & whit, sette w losynges gilt & flours of bozage. A fytour crispid.

A sotplittie of oure Lady scttynge with hir chylde in hir lappe, and she holdyng a crowne in hir had. Saint George and saint Denys knelyng on either syde, presented to hir kyngc Henry his figure beryng in hande this balade as foloweth.

O blessed lady Christe his mother dere, And thou saint George p called art hir knight, Hoys saint Denys o martyr moste entere, The first Henry here present in your sight, Sheweth of your grace on hym your heavenly his tender youth w vertue dooeth auer, Right borne by descent and by title of right, Justly to reigne in Englands and in fraunce.



This solempne coronacion with all honour and loye finished prouisio was made for the kyng his iourname into fraunce. In p whiche pastyme, that is to meane vpon the twenty & thre dave of January an heretike was byt in Smithfelde.

Upon the morowe next folowng was in that felde foughten a strong fight, betwene John Upton Appellant, and John Downe Defendant. But for thei quyte theim bothe so mannefully, the kyng at lengthe released thei quatell, & pardoned theim of thei trespass.

The vpon saint George his dave folowng, or the twenty & thre dave of Aprill, the kyng toke shipping at Dover and landed the same dave at Calais, haupng in his compaignie twoo dukes, of Porke & Northfolke, thre bishoppes, of Bathe, Ely and Rochester, epght erles, p is to meane of Huntynghdon, Stafford, Warwyke

The seventh parte.

310.

wyke, Orenforde, Deninshere Woz
teine, of Cwe, and of Wymund, and
eleuen barons, that is to saie, þe loyde
Bolwchier, Beawmounde, Typtost,
Fitzwater. Roos, Arundell, Audelep,
Fawcunbyrge, Gray, Codnoo, the
loyde Scroope, & the loyde Wellps.

In this tyme and season that the
kyng laye thus at Calais, many skir
mishes were foughten betwene the
Englischemenne & the Frenchemene
in diuerse parties of fraunce. And
greately the Frenchemene preuailed
by the helpe of a woman, whiche thei
as befoze is touched named the Mai
den of god. So that lastly she with
hir compaignie came to a towne cal
led Copeyne, to the entent to remoue
the spege laide therunto by the duke
of Burgoyne, & other of the English
capitaines. And therupon the. xxiij.
daye of Maye, she gaue battaill vn
to the Englischemene & Burgonions
& fought with theim long tyme. But
in the ende, by the manhode of a Bur
gonton knight named sir John Lu
xemburghe, she was taken on liue,
and hir compaignie distressed, and
she carped to the citee of Roan, and
there kept a season, for so muche as
she feined hir with chylde. But when

þe contrary of it was knowe, she was
therfoze iudged and byente.

Of this woman Sagwynus ma
keth a grente processe, of hir parenty
& of hir first takyng bpō hir, whereof
parte I entende to shewe after in the
lire pere of Charles nexte folowynge
kyng of fraunce.

And in this tyme and season, one
Rychard Hounden wolfe packer of
London, was conuicte of heresy and
byent at towre hylle. Then kyng He
ry thus lodgynge at Calais, was as
certeined of the takyng of þe foresaid
woma, by þe letters of þe duke of Bur
goyne. And after he toke his small
iournais till he came into fraunce,
and so vnto Darps. Of whose citee
zens he was honourably receiued, &
taken for the soueraigne and kyng
and there so taried all this mayes
pere. In whiche season as witnesseth
Sagwynus, the Frenchemene wāne
diuers holdes of Englischemene and
Burgonions in the countre of Brie.
And a capitaine named Barbasan
discomfited eyght thousand Englishe
menne and Burgonions at a place
called in latin Cathalamencis, as af
firmeth the foresaid auctour.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xxx.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xxxi.

Water Chesley.

Nicholas Wotton.

Anno. lx.

Robert Large.



His. lx. pere about mid
lent, a preest named sy
Thomas Bagley and
vicar of a village in Es
sex called Manueden a
litell frome Walden, was detect of
heresy. Upon the whiche he was de
graded, and then byent in the place of
Smithfeld. And soone vpon Easter
folowynge, the loyde protectour was

warnid of an assemble of heretikes
at Abyndon. Wherefoze he sent thyr
ther certain persones, or rode thither
hym selfe as some wyters affirme,
and there arrested the baylyf of that
towne named Wyllyam Maunde
uyle a weuer, þe whiche was appoin
ted for a capitaine of the said hereti
kes. And for to drawe the people vn
to hym, he chaunged his name and
called

Jak Sharpe, called hym self Jak Sharpe of wygmozis lande in Walis. But after he was examined, he confessed to haue wrought muche sorowe again preestes, so þ he would haue made their heddes as chepe as shepe hedes, so þ he would haue solde thre for a peny or tenne after some wyters. And the same season wer take many of his coplices, whiche were sent vnto diuers prysones. And the said Jak Sharpe was for his offence, drawen, haged, and hedid, at the fozenamed towne of Abyndon, vpon the tupsdape in wylson weke, & his hede was sent to London, and there pyght vpo the brydge. And the other of his sawtours were putte in execucion in diuers places and coutrees, to the terrour of other. And vpo the. xiiii. daye of July, that yere was one named Rycharde Russell a wolfe manne, drawen, hanged, and quartered at tyborne for treason.

And this yere the kyng beyng still in Fraunce, the erle of Arundell accompaigned with twoo thousand of Englyshe souldyours, sente a certaine of his copaignie vnto a towne

called Beale Mount, to prouoke the towne. Whiche small compaignie when Boslicant & Seyntrales then capitaines beheld, anone thei with their souldiours of þ towne spedde theim forth to take the said Englysh menne. The whiche litell and litell gaue bake, till thei had tolled þ frenchemene a good space frome þ towne and then sette vpon theim w alterne courage, and helde theim on hande till the said erle with his compaignie rescowed theim. The betwene theim was a cruell fight. But in the ende the frenchemenne were chased, and the said Seyntrayle with many fote menne of the said towne were slaine at that iournay. And shortly after þ duke of Burgoyne with ayde of the Englyshemene, at a place called Barre, scomfited a greate compaignie of frenchemenne, and toke twoo capitaines belongyng to þ duke of Barre the whiche were named Renat & Barbazan, for whose raunsome the duke had yelded to hym the Vale of Cassyle in Flaundres.

Anno domini. M. CCC. cxxi.

Anno domini. M. CCC. cxxii.

John Wyllie.

John Welly Grocer.

Anno. r.

Stephen Browne.

Kyng Henry
the sixt crow-
ned in Paris



A this tenth yere & seuen daye of Decembze, kyng Henry the sixt was crowned in Paris of the cardinall of Wynchester. At the whiche coronacion was present the lord Regent, the duke of Burgoyne, and diuers other nobles of Fraunce, whose names Sagwynus puttethe not in his boke, for reproche of the frenchemenne. And after the solempnite of this feste was ended, wherof the circumstances to shewe in order would

aske a long leysour, the kyng departed frome Parys, & so came to Roan where he helde his Chyistmas, and that dooen he sped hym to Calais.

And whē he had soggiourned there a seaso, he toke shippynge & retourned into Englande, & landed at Douer þ. xi. daye of february. Then he was mette vpo Baram Downe o; Barā Holth, þ is betwene Douer & Cauntobury, with a great compaignie of gentyls and commoners of Kent all clad w rede hodes. The whiche acco-
paigned

The rem-
yng of the
the sixt of
retourne of
of fraunce
to Englan

paignied hym till he came to Black
Heth, where he was mette with the
maye and the citezens of Londo by
on a thursdape beynge the .xxi. daie of
february, the citezens beynge cladde
in white, with dyuers werkes of con-
sauntes browderid vpon their sleues
after the facultie of their misteryes
of craftes. And the maire and his bre-
thren were all clothed in scarlet. And
after due obeysaunce and salutynge
of the kyng, thei rode on before hym
toward the citee. When the kyng
was comen to the bridge, there was
devised a mighty Spawnt standynge
with a swerde drawyn, haupng this
speche wyrtten by hym.

All tho that been enemies to the kyng,
I shall theim clothe with confusion.
Make hym mighty by vertuous living,
his mortall foen to oppresse and bere downe.
And hym to encrease as Christe his champion,
All myceues frome hym to abyde,
With grace of god at the entry of this bridge,



And when the kyng was
passed the firste gate, and
was comen to the drawe
bridge, there was orde-
ned a goodly towre hanged and ap-
parailed with silke & clothes of aras
in mooste ryche wise. Out of whiche
sodainly appeared .iii. ladies ryche-
ly cladde in golde & silke, with coronet-
tes vpon their heddes. Wherof the
firste was named dame Nature, the
seconde dame Grace, and the thyrde
dame Fortune, the whiche vnto the
kyng had thus speche.

Wee ladies three all by one consent,
Three goostly giftes humbly and deuote
To the fyr kyng, as nowe wee dooe present.
And to thyn highnes here wee dooe this tyme.
Wittely heere and thern deterraine,
As I Grace, firste at thy comynge,
Endowe the with sence and comynge.

And I Nature, with strength and saynesse,

for to bee lough and brad of every wyght,
And I fortune, prosperite and dycheffe,
The to defende and to gyue the might,
Long to enioye and to holde thy crewe right.
In vertuous life with honour to procede,
That thy two sceptours thou may wel possede.

There was also in the said towre
.iiiii. virgyns all clothed in white.
Wherof seuen stode vpon the right
hande of the said thre ladies, & seuen
vpon the left hand. The seuen vpon
the right had, had bawderikes of sa-
phir colour of blew. And the other .viii.
had their garmentes powdred with
steers of gold. Then the first seuen pre-
sented the kyng the seuen giftes of
the holy gost, as sapience, intellige-
ce good counsaill, strength, cunynge, pyte
and dyede of god. And the other seuen,
gaue vnto hym the seuen gyftes of
grace in maner as foloweth.

God the endowe with crowne of glory,
And with the scepter of clemesse and pytie
And with a swerde of might and victorie,
And with a mantell of prudence clad thou bee,
A shylde of faith for to defende the,
An helme of helthe brought to thyn encrease,
Girt with a gyrdell of loue and perfect peace.

And after thei had thus saluted the
kyng, anone thei beganne this rou-
dell with an heuenly melodie & song,
as foloweth.

Soueraigne lord, welcome to your citee,
Welcome our loye, and hartes pleasure,
Welcome our gladnesse, welde our suffaunce
Welcome welcome, right welcome mout ye bee
Spyngng before thy roiall mageste,
Wee saie with harte withouten varpaunce,
Souveraigne lord, now welcome out of straunge.

The maye & citees with all the cominaltie
Retorse your comynge netyly out of fraunce
Wherby this citee and thei releeved bee,
Of all their sorowes and former greivance,
Wherfore thei saie and syng without greivance
Welcome welcome, welcome our hartes loye,
Welcome you be vnto your owne newe Citee.

Then

Then the kyng rode forth a softe
pase till he came at the entre of Coyn
hille. Where vpo the hille was orde-
ned a tabernacle of curious worke,
in the whiche stode dame Sapience,
and about hir the seuen artes oꝝ scie-
ces liberall, as first, gramer, logike,
rethorpyke, musyke, arithmetike, geo-
metry, and astronomie, eueryche of
theim exercisynge their connyng and
facultie, and þ lady hir self had this
speche to the kyng.

To I chief pryncesse, dame Sapience,
Shewe vnto you this sentence of scripture,
Kynges that been moste of excellence,
By me thei reigne, and moste tope endure.
For through my helpe and my busye cure,
To encrease their glory & their high renowne,
Thei shall of wysedome haue full possession.

Then the kyng passed on till he
came to the conduite in Coynhyll.
Where was sette a pageant made
circle wyse, and in the sumet oꝝ toppe
there was sette a childe of wonderfull
beautie, apparailled like a kyng. Up-
on whose right hand satte lady Mer-
cy, & vpo the left hand lady Trough-
t, & ouer theim stode dame Clennesse
embrasyng the kyng his trone. The
befoze the kyng stode twoo iudges
and eyght sergeauntes of the coffe.
And dame Clennesse had this speche
to the sict Henry the kyng.

To by the sentence of prudent Salomon,
Mercy and right preserue euery kyng,
And I Clennesse obserued by reason,
Kepe his trone frome mischief and fallynge.
And maketh it strong with long abidynge.
So I conclude that wee ladies three,
A kyng preserue in long prosperitee,

And Dauid saied, þ psalme beeth witnessse,
Lorde god thy dome thou to the kyng,
And gyue to hym thy trowth and rightwysnesse
The kyng his soonne here on erth luyng,
And thus declared he by his wyppynge,
That kinges & princes shoulde about the deathe

folke that been foule and well leered in lawe,

After his speche thus declared, þ
kyng rode forth a quicker pase till
he came vnto the conduite in Chepe.
Where were ordeined diuers welles
as the welle of mercy, the welle of
grace, and the welle of pyte. And at
euery welle a lady standynge, that mi-
nistred the water of euery welle to
suche as would aske it, and that wa-
ter was tourned into good wyne.

About these welles were sette by-
uers trees with flourisshynge leues
and fruytes, as orenges, almandes
pomegarnardes, oliues, lymones da-
tes, pepps, quynces, blaunderelles,
peches, and other moze comon fruytes
as costerdes, wardenes pomewardos
rycardons, damisins, and plummeg,
with other fruytes longe to reherse,
þ whiche were so cūnyngly wrought
that to many thei appeared naturall
trees growynge.

In the boꝝdour of this delicious
place whiche was named Paradyse,
stode twoo forgrowen fathers, resem-
blynge Enocke and Help, the whiche
had this sayng to the kyng.

Enocke firste with a benygne chere,
Prayed god to vphoulde his prosperitee,
And that none enemies haue of the powte,
Nor that no chyld of false iniquitee,
Haue power to perterbe thy felicitye.
This olde Enocke to proceffe canst well tell,
Prayed for the kyng as he rode by the welle.

After Helpas with his lockes hore,
Said well deuoutely lohyng on the kyng,
God conserue the and kepe euermore,
And make the blessed here on earth luyng,
And preserue the in all maner thyng,
And specially among kynges all,
In enemies handes that thou neuer fall.

And that speche finished, the kyng
rode forth a lytell forther. And there
was ordeyned a towre garnysshed
with the armys of Englande and of
fraunce

France. This tower was wonder-
full to beholde, for there was shewed
in order the title whiche the king had
vnto the crowne of France.

And vppon by this towre stode two
grene trees artifycallye wth grene
leauys garnished and wrought, that
one bearynge the genealogy of saynte
Edward, and that other of saint Le-
wys, and garnished with leopardes
and flourdelyces. And ouer these .ii.
foyleafde trees, was ordeyned þ third
whiche was made the fourth spyrng
of Jesse, wherein was shewed the gene-
logy of our blessed Lady sette oute in
moste curpouse wyse. And vpon the
front of this tower were wyrtten these
verses folowynge.

By these .ii. trees whiche here grewe vppon
from saynt Edward and also saynt Lewys,
The rote I take, palpable to eche syght.
Conueyed by lyne from hynges of great pryce,
Whiche some bare leopardes, & some flourdelyce,
Strumps excellent of honour haue no lacke
Whiche the .vi. they may notwe bere on his backe

As in degree of iuste successioun,
As olde cronicles truly detempne,
Vnto this hyng is notwe descended bolone.
From epyther partte ryght as any lyne.
Vpon whose hed notwe fresshy doth shyne,
Two rich crownes much soueraign & pleasance
To bring in peate betwene Englands & fraunce

Then from this, the kyng passed
on, till he came at þ conduite at Pauls
gate, where was pyghte a celesty-
all trone, and therein was sette a per-
sonage of the Trinity, wth multy-
tude of aungelles playenge and syn-
gynge vpon all instrumentes of mu-
syke. And vpon the fronte of the sayd
trone, was wyrtten these verses of ba-
lades folowynge, the whiche were spo-
ken by the father vnto the kyng.

To you my aungels this precepte ye assure,
This prynce that is so yonge & tender of age,

That ye entende and do your besyde cure,
To kepe and saue hym from all manner damage
In his lyfe here dyspense all his age,
That his renoune maye speede and shone faure,
And of his .ii. realmes to cause the mortall cure.

And I will further as I shewe to him here,
Fulfil hym with lope & worldly habundance,
And with length of many a holome yere,
I shall comforte & helpe with all pleasure,
And of his lynges to haue fapthfull obeyssaunce,
And also multiply & encrease his lyne,
And cause his nobles thourgh the worlde shyne.



Ad thys done he
entred the churche
parbe, where he
was met wth pro-
cessyon of þ deane
and the Chanons
of Pauls. With
whom also in pon-
tificalibus came the Archebyschoppe
of Caunterburpe and Chaunceloz of
Englande, wth the byshoppe of Lin-
colne, of Bathe, of Salysburpe, of
Roxwiche, of Ely, and of Rochester,
the whiche so conueyed hym into the
churche, and there made hys obla-
cions. And that doone, he toke agayne
his seide at the weste doze of Pauls,
and so rode forth vnto Westmynstre
where agayn he was of the abbot and
couent receyued with processyon and
by them conueyed vnto saint Edwar-
des chynne, and there tarped a while.
Te deum was songe in the quere.
And that synned, he was of his loz-
des conueyed vnto his palays. And
then the maye wth his cytezens re-
turned iopously to London.

Then vpon the laterdaye folow-
ynge beyng the .xxii. daye of Februa-
ry, the maye and aldermen rode vn-
to the kyng, and presented hym with
an hamper of golde, & therein a thou-
sande pounde of sayre nobles, for the
whiche the kyng peldo vnto theym
kkk. l. loupag

lounge thanks.

This yere also by reason of þe sow-
byures of Calays, a restraynte was
made there of þe wolles, for they were
not contente of theyr wages. Where-
fore the regent of Fraunce beyng the
capitayne of Calays, came downe thi-
ther in Easter weke. At whiche tyme
beyng the wednesdape in the sayde
weke, many sowbyours were arrested
and putte into warde. And when he
had so done, he rode to Wyke, and
there by the meanes of the Bisshope
of Wyke, he married þe earle of sal-
Paules doughter, and shortly after

retourned to Calays, and caused the
sayde sowbyours to be enquyed of,
and synallye. iiii. of them were demed
to dye. Whiche. iiii. þe is to saye John
Maddely, John Lundeye, Thomas
Palmer, and Thomas Talbot, were
beheaded at Calays the eleventh dape
of May. And an hundred and. x. sow-
byours were banysshed the towne, o-
uer syre scoze banysshed befoze that
tyme. And upon mydsomer euen fo-
lowynge, the sayde lord regent with
his newe spouse came vnto London,
and so tarped in Englande tyll the la-
ter ende of Auguste.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xxxii.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xxxiii.

John Olney.

John Berneys ffishmonger.

Anno. xi.

John Baddysley.

The. xi. yere.

The consayle
of Basyle.

In this. xi. yere after some wy-
ters, was by the auctorite of þe
byshop of Rome, Martyn the
b. of that name, the counel of Basyle
gathered. During the which, þe herety-
kes of Wyke otherwysse called of Bo-
hemy or Beme were somoned thither
The which vnder a suerte of saufe co-
duite, sent thither for them with other
an Englyshe clerke, named mayster
Peter a renegade. The whiche defen-
ded so stiffly theyr erronious opiniōs
that they returned without reconcy-
lacion. Thus hangyng this counsell
Martyn the byshop of Rome dyed, &
for hym was chosen Eugeny the. iiii.
The whiche beyng admitted, demean-
ed hym so mycelly in the begynnynge,
that he was put out of Rome, and by
uers princes toke partle agayne hym
in such wise, þe he was lykely to be de-

posed. But after he bare hym so sadly
that he recouered such as he had losse
and contynued the see by the space of
xvi. yeres, & ruled so, that of some wy-
ters he is called Eugenyus gloriosus
And that is of relygious menne, for
vnto them he had a specyall zeale and
fauoure. And upon the. viii. day of Ju-
ly, kyng Henry this yere beganne his
parliament at Westminster, & so con-
tinued it tyll it was Lammas, & then
it was adiourned to s. Edwardes day

And this yere in the South weste
appered a starre whyche was lyke to
a blasphemous starre, and of some it is so
named. The earle of Huntynghdon al-
so this yere was sente into Fraunce
with a warly company, and dyd there
greate feates as sayeth the Englyshe
cronycle. But of that is nothyng tou-
ched in the frenche booke.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xxxiii.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xxxiii.

Thomas Chalton.

John Byokley Draper.

Anno. xii.

John Lynge.

In this

Eugeny by-
shop of Rome

The seventh parte.

In this .xii. yers and .ix. day of Nouember, the tennent of the carle of saynt Paule father vnto the duchesse of Bedfozde was solempne holden in Pawles church of London, where the moze partye of the estates of thys realme were pzeent. And the nythe daye of Marche folowynge, the lorde Calbot with a goodly company passed thozough the cytee of London towardes the see into fraunce, where he wozought muche woze vnto þe frenche menne, wherof the partyculers be not towdhed. Continuyng the foze sayde warre in fraunce, the towne of saynt Denys whiche is within .ii. Englysh myles of Parys, was gotten by treason or pryactye of one named Johan Roysce a knyght of Dyleaunce, from Mathewe Gough and Thomas Kypell capytaynes, and hewe there many Englyshe menne, and many they toke prysoners. But soone after the sayde capytaynes wth strengthe taken vnto them of the Parispans and other, dyd lape suche a stronge spege rounde aboute the sayde towne of saynt Denys, that synally they agreed to deliuer the towne, yf they were not rescowed of the frenche kynge within fiftene dayes, so that the saide dayes expyred, it was retourned vnto the Englyshemen. But this notwithstandinge the frenche menne wanne dayly vpon the Englyshe men bothe in those partyes and also in Roymandye. Amonge which games, þe frenche Sagwine bzigeth in a mater of game as he reherseth vnto the mockage of Englyshe menne, and sayeth that in this yere and feaste of Wyghelmaste at a place called Fewgery in Guyan, a stronge fyghte was foughten bytwene the Englyshmen & the frenche men durynge the whiche, one named

Boosappest a frenche knyght, for fere fledde from that fyght & hydde hym in a couert of bushes, and there stode spyll tyll the fyght was ended, and the Englyshmen dyscomfyted and scared Of the whiche, .ii. of aduenture to saue garde theym selfe fledde to the sayde thicke buche, where þe cotward frenche knyghte stode. The whiche when he had espyed and learned of them, that the frenche partie had wonne þe feld he became so cozagrouse, that he fozeed the sayde two Englyshe menne to become hys prysoners, and so wth theym entered the hoste of the frenche men, and bare a countenaunce as he had wonne them in þe foze sayde fyght. But at lengthe when all hys demeanoure was knowne, he was for hys feate had in greate derisyon, and by hys chyef capytayne named Gargylam de sayncte Albyne pryued of hys prysoners.

And in this season also the earle of Arundell, whiche in Roymandye had manly bozne hym, hearpyng that one Hyrus a frenche capytayne had fortifyed a stronge castel named Serborim befoze destroyed of the Englyshe men, toke with hym a certayne of souldyours, and geyde the castell wth a stronge spege, and assawted it by son dytymes manfully, as saith þe frenche cronycle. But Sagwone in his cronycle sayth, that of the spege were fullye laide of the castel were fullye repayred the sayde Hyrus with hys companye issued oute of the castell, and gaue by to the sayde earle a cruell skirmyche, in the whiche the saide earle receyued a deadly wounde, and dyed shortly after. And that victoie so by the frenche men optayned, that castell was to the hurte of the Englyshemen recouered, and a place called Dyepp with ocher also wonne from them.

kkk.ii. Anno

The. xlii.
part.

A great frod.

Ad in thys. xlii. yere and
euen of saint Katherine,
began a froste þe endured
to the feast of saint Nico-
lastica, oꝝ the. x. day of Fe-
bruary, the whiche scale the Thames
so feruently, that ship noꝝ boꝝe might
come with vitayle to London. Wher
foꝝe suche shippes as came this yere
to Champs mouthe frome Burdeur
were dyscharged there, and the wyne
and other marchaundyse by theym
brought, carped by lande to the cytee
And in the latter ende of December,
this yere ended the parlyamente hol-
den at Westminster, begon at Wyg-
helmasse terme befoꝝe passed.

A counsaile.

This yere also by meanes of Eu-
geny þ. iiii. byshop of Rome at Itas
in Bycardy was holden a great coun-
saile, foꝝe to conclude an vnion and
peace atwene the two realmes of En-
glande and Fraunce. To the whiche
counsil, by þe sayde byshop of Romes
comaundement came as a persone in
different, Nicholas cardynall of þe ho-
ly crosse, with. vi. Romayn bishoppes
to hym assigned. And foꝝe the kyng of
Englandes partye was there assy-
gned the cardynall of Wynchester, the
archebishop of Yorke, the earles of
Huntynghdon and of Suffolke, with
dyuerse other. And foꝝe the frenche
kyng was there the Duke of Bur-
bon, the earle of Richemount, þe arch-
bishoppe of Raines chauncelloꝝ then
of Fraunce, the deane of Paris, with
many other, whiche I passe ouer.
There were also as foꝝetherers of the
mater, the cardynall of Cypꝝs. And
foꝝe the duke of Burgoyne, was there

the byshop of Cambay, and Archo-
las Raulyn the sayde dukes chaunce-
loꝝ, with diuers earles and barons of
that duchy. And foꝝe the duke of By-
tapne, were there the earles of Alens
and of Barre with other, ouer and
aboue dyuerse oratoures appoynted
foꝝe þe counsey of Flaundres. At whiche
assemble and counsell thus holden,
as testyfy dyuerse wyters, many
greate offers by meane of the aboue-
named cardynall of holy crosse oꝝ saint
crosse, to the Englyshe Loꝝdes were
offered. But as sayth Sagwinus the
Englyshemen were so obstinately set
on warre, þe reason might not content
By reason of whiche obstinacye, the
counsell was deferred tyll an other
day. At whiche day þe Englyshmen en-
tendynge the continuance of warre,
absented theym selfe. Wherwith the
sayde cardynall beynge dyscontented
made meanes of an entreaty of peace
atwene Charles, that toke vpon hym
as frenche kyng, and Phylpp duke
of Burgoyne. Wherof þe sayde Char-
les was so sayne, that foꝝe stablyshing
of the peace, and to satisfye hym foꝝe
murther of hym father, he gaue vnto
hym all the vtter boundes of Cham-
peyn marching vpon Burgoyne, with
diuerse cytees, as sainte Quentyne,
Cobie, Peron, Abbeuyle, and other,
with the countee of Poytrau a lord-
ship of Bacon. And as witnesseth þe
foꝝesayde Sagwynne, many mo thyng-
ges were vnto the Duke by the sayde
Charles promysed, which after they
bothe deahtes were broken and stode
foꝝe nought. After whiche peace thus
atwene them conspymed and pꝛoclay-
med

The seventh parte.

med, the sayde duke became better ene-
mye to the kynge of Englande, as af-
ter shall appere. And soone after the
sayde duke began his order of the ly-
le and the golden flece, and ordeyned
certayne knyghtes of that order, and
made therunto many statutes and or-
denaunces, wherof byuerse were lyke
vnto the statutes of the garter. And
in the ende of this yere and .xiii. daye

of September, at Roan in Norman-
dye dyed the noble prince John duke
of Bedforde and regente of Fraunce
and was after with greatesolempny-
tie buried within the church of no-
tre Dame of the same cytee, where for
him are founded wonderful thynges
after some mennes reporte. But for
I fynde therof in wytyng nothyng, I
passe it ouer.

Anno domini .M. CCCC. xiiij.

Thomas Catworth,

Henry Frobysh mercer.

Robert Clopton.

Anno domini .M. CCCC. xxiij.

Anno .xliij.

In the .xliij. yere a begin-
nyng of the same, the duke
of Barre, accompanied
with Burgonions & frenche
men, wanne the towne of
Hartlew with byuers other byllages
And in Apryll folowynge, the sayde
duke accompanied with the lordes Ter-
uian and the mayster of the kinges chy-
ualtry, toke the towne of saynt Denis
and slew therein aboute .iiii. C. English
men, and toke prysoner Thomas Be-
leamonde the capitayne with ma-
ny other. And then the frenche men
assaulted a towne therby called Ueuen
and toke it by apoyntment.

Then one named Notice a knight
of Dileasce, with a strength of knigh-
tes dydw hym nere the cytee of Pa-
rys, and there at a house of religyon
of the charterhouse order, lodged him
beyond saynt Denys ouer the water
of Mayn, and confedered with cer-
tayne cytezens of the cytee named Mi-
chael Laylery, John Frountayne,
Thomas Pygacen, John de sayntte
Benoit, Archolus Loueyn, and Ja-
ques Bergeret, for to betraye the cy-
tee, and to byrnyng it out of the English
possession. The whiche persones be-

pyng hedes of the cytee conueyed theyr
purpose in suche wyse, that they tur-
ned the comons of the cytee vpon the
Englishmenne, and sodenly arose
agayne them, and by force slew of
them a great nnumber, and there they
dyd take many prysoners. And as
the Englishmen fledde or foughte
by the stretes, the women and other
feble persones cast vpon them stones
and hote lycours to theyr great con-
fusyon, so that the Englishmen were
in passynge myserye and desolacyon.
In this tyme of persecucion, the bish-
hop of Boxel, whiche then was na-
med chauncelour of Englishmen in
those parties with other, hardly esca-
ped and toke the towne of saynte De-
nys, whiche as yet rested in the En-
glish possession.

Englishmen
damely
persecuted.

Then the other holte of frenche-
men hearinge of this ruynoure in the
cytee, anon dydw nere, & entered by
saynt James gate without muche re-
sistance, and so enioyed the cytee at
theyr pleasure.

Then the Englishmenne beyng
in the towne of saynt Denys, fearing
that they myght not longe holde the
sayde place agayne their enemies, syl

.xliij. to a

Englysh men
marched and
conquered of the
frenche men.

to a treaty, and condescended to passe
fre with theyr lyues. The whiche whē
they shulde passe vpon theyr iourney
were dyspyded and scorned of þe frenche
nacion out of all measure. And when
the cytee of Paris was thus subdu-
ed to the frenche dominion, anon the
Englyshe people that there abode vn-
der tyne and raunsome, were swoyne
to Charles the seuenth then takynge
vpon hym as frenche kynge. And a-
none after were wonne from the En-
glyshe power, the holdes named Tre-
oll and saynt Germaine. In whiche
passetyme and season, for to strength
and haue the guiding of Roymany,
the duke of Poysie accompanied wth
the earle of Salysbury, and the lord
of Sawcounbyrd sailed into Fraunce
And the earle of Morteyne being the
at Calays, made a vyage into Flaun-
dres, and shympled with them that
bozdyed vpon Bycardye, and slewe of
theym ouer. iiii. C. and gate a greate
broue of beastes, and broughte theym
vnto Calays. And so; that certayne
was had that Philyp Duke of Bur-
goyne intended to lay his spege about
Calays, therfore London and all the
good townes of England were char-
ged to sende thither certayne menne
well and sufficiently for the warre ap-
parayled. Wherof London sente at
theyr charge men.

Calays be-
sieged.

Then vpon the. ix. daye of July,
the duke of Burgoyne with a greate
multytude of Burgoyons and Fle-
mynges appered befoze Calays, and
there pyghte hys paullyons and ten-
tes, so that euery towne of Flaundres
had their tentes by the selfe. At which
season was Apenetenaunt of Calays
by John Ratclif knyght, and of the
castell was Apenetenaunt the baron of
Dudley. And so þe syege endured vpo-
n a thye weekes. In which season many

knpyghtly actes were done and exten-
sed vpon both parties, which for leng-
thynge of the tyme I passe.

Then vpon the seconde daye of
August, the duke of Gloucestre & pro-
tectour of England with a company
of. v. C. sayles as some wyrters haue
landed at Calays, and intended vpo-
the thyrde daye folowynge to haue re-
sued out of the towne, and to haue ge-
uen batayle to the Flemmynges. But
as testifyeth all Englyshe wyrters, so
soone as the duke of Burgoyne was
ware of the greate power of the lord
protectour, he toke with hym of his o-
denaunce that he myghte lyghtly ca-
tpe, and the other that were heuy and
combyous, he lefte behynde hym. I-
monge þe whiche one was lefte befoze
Gynnes a greate gunne of brasse na-
med Dygon, ouer dyuerse serpenty-
nes and other great gunnes. And the
Flemmynges lefte behind them a great
quantyte of bere, beside wine & flour
and other vytable.

Chap-
summe

But of this vyage wyrteth other-
wise Sagwynne, a sayth that the duke
well and manfullye, as a valyaunte
knpyghte in hys actes, contynued hys
siege befoze Calais ouer. ii. monethes
and there vpd many noble actes in al-
saylynge of hys enemyes. And after
the Flemmynges by reaso of theyr mur-
mure and rebellyon had refused hym
and in maner lefte hym almoste with-
out companye, yet notwithstandinge
he dayly assayled hys enemyes, and
after wth suche small companye as
was left him, when he sawe he might
not pzeuayle he returned into his cou-
tre. And so thus alway in all the sayd
Sagwynne booke, he wyrteth from the
Englyshemen in all that he maye the
honoure, and excuseth theyr enemyes
vnto his power. When the duke with
his hoste was thus fledde, the Loyde
protector

Henry
wyrteth

The ſeuenty parte.

protectoure wth hys people folow-
ed hym into the countrie by the ſpace
of a .xii. dayes. In whiche ſeaſon he
brente but two towres, whiche were
named and yet be, Doperynge and
Bell, and returned into Calays &
after into Englande.

And in thys yere was the caſtell
of towne of Kokerbozouth in Scot

lande beſieged of the kynge of Scot-
tes. But ſo ſone as he had wyttynge,
that ſy^r Raufe Graue knyghte was
commynge wth a competente nom-
bre ſo; to remoue that ſpege, anon he
departed, leuynge ſome parte of hys
ordynance behynd him, to his great
dyshonoure.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxvi.

John Wycheill

Thomas Woyſted

Wyllam Gregore

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxvii.

Anno. xv.



Folow. xv. yere, and
iii. daye of Ianuaty,
quene Katheryne mo-
ther vnto Henry the. vi.
wyfe of Henry the. v.

died at Bermidille in Southwarke
& after wth due ſolempnyte brought
throughe the cytie, and ſo conueyed to
Weſtmynſter, and there buried in
pymddell of our ladye chapel vnder a
combe of marbel.

But whan oure ſoueraigne ladye
Henry the. vii. than beynge kynge,
cauſed the chapel to be taken downe
and buylded a newe, wythout the lyke
therunto as nowe to men doth apere
than the corpes of the excellent pry-
nces was taken by, & ſet by the tombe
of her ladye and huſbande durynge
tyme of the buyldynge of the ſayde
newe chapell, and after buried by her
ſayde ladye wythin the ſayde chapell.

And the. xlii. daye of the ſayde mo-
neth ſpyll ſoodly the furtheſt gate tow-
arde Southwarke wth the towre
therupon, and two of the furtheſt ar-
ches of the ſayde byrde, but as God
wolde no creature was ther wth pe-
ryſhed, that is to meane of humayne
perſones.

And the. xxi. daye of the ſame moneth

of Ianuaty, the kynge beganne hys
parlyaments at Weſtmynſter, whiche
befo^r was purpoſed to haue bene hol-
den at Cambyrdge. To thys parly-
mente came the byſhoppe of Turin
and the counſayle of the Earle of Ar-
menake, wherof I ſynd not the cauſe
expreſſed. And after eaſter was a day
of dyot holden betwene Grauenynge
and Calays, ſo; matters to wycheynge
the kynge and the duke of Burgoyne,
where, ſo; the kynge appered the car-
dynall of England, the duke of No^r
folk, and the earle of Stafford, wth
diuers other. And ſo; the ſayde dukes
part, appeared there the duchelle hys
wyfe, wth dyuers other of the ſayde
dukess counſayle. Where, by meanes
of the ſayde perſones, an abyſtynce
of warre was taken ſo; a certayne ty-
me in the duchelle name. ſo; the kynge
wolde take none appointement wth
the duke, ſo; ſo much as he had gone
from hys treuth and allegaunce, that
befo^r tyme he hadde made wth the
kynge. And vpon the ſeconde daye of
Julye this yere dyed quene Jane, &
whiche ſometyme had bene the wyfe
of kynge Henry the. vii. and befo^r
that the wyfe of the duke of Brytayne
and was caried from Bermundelleſſe

3 daye of dyot

The kynge of
Scottes mar-
ried.

to Caunterbury, and there buried by
her husband Henry the. iii. And this
yeare fell a chaunce that had not ben
sene many yeres before. For al lions
dyed in the towre, the which had con-
tynued there a longe season.

In this yeare also the kynge of
Scottes was trayterously murde-

red by seruantes of hys owne. Of
the which traytours the captayne of
them was named Roberte Hamre, &
which was with other of hys com-
pany taken and put vnto most payn-
full death. This sayd kynge of Scot-
tes had bene prysoner. xv. yeres in
Englande.

The
Scottes
married
in Eng-

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xxxviii

William Chapman

Wylliam Estfelde Secrer

Wylliam Hayles

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xxxviii

Anno. xvi.

The. xvi. yere.



In this. xvi. yeare & mo-
neth of Nouber, kynge
Henry caused to be kepte
a solempne obyt or ter-
ment within the church
of Paules, for Wygelsmond the Em-
perours and knyghte of the garter.

This was a man of metuculous
great and worthy fame, as by the au-
thour of Cronica cronicarum is ex-
pressed. After whose deathe the gup-
pyng of the Emperre fell to Alberte
that had maryed the onely daughter
of the sayde Wygelsmonde.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xxxviii

Hughe Dyke

Stephan Bowne Secrer

Nicholas Poo

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xxxix

Anno. xvii

The. xvii. yere



In this yeare, by
pon newe yeares
daye in the after
noone, a flake of
wood fell downe
sodenlye at Bay-
nards castell by
pon Chamis syde, and slewe. iii. hun-
dred men and hurt diuers other. And
at Bedforde this yere at the heppng
of a myre daye, by the fallng of a
soper, wet. xlviii. murdered & slayne
besyde many other soze hurte & may-
med. And the laste daye of Aprill, dy-
ed in Roan sye Rycharde Beuchamp
called of fame the good ctle of War-
wyke. This was leutenante of the
kynge in Normandy, and demened
hym there full well and manfullye,

whose bodye was after broughthe by-
to Warwyke, and there in a new cha-
pell buylded bypon the south syde of
the quere, buried full honourablye.

This yere also was great dertyh
of corne in England & also in Fraunce
in so muche that a bushell was solde
at London for. iii. shyllnges, and. iii.
shyllnges and foure pence. And in
Fraunce in Paris, it was at lyke va-
lue. And there also they dyed soze of
the sykness of typhus. For this scar-
cete of wheate in Englande in many
places the people made them byrade
of fetches, pelson, and beanes. And af-
ter some wyters for lacke of these for
sayd graynes, some poze peple made
them byrade of ferne rotes. But yet
by the prouydence of Stephā Bown
this

The seventh parte.

392a

thys yere Maye, manye shypes were streight with the out of France and by charged at London, that eased the people nere to the cytye greatly. Thys of many wynters is named the seconde bere yere.

In thys yere ended the counsaill of synode holden at Basyle, begonne as before is sayde in the .xl. yere of thys kynge. By authoryte of whiche counsaile Eugeny the .iiii. was deposed, and Amedeus a duke and prince of Savoy, was chosen for byshop of Rome in the place of the forenamed Eugeny. But yet he had suche a pde, that he continued in Rome as bishop of Rome all hys lyfe tyme.

And that other whiche was named of his apdres Felix the .v. continued his dignite in other places, so that thā arose a greete scysme in the church, whether of these two was indubitat byshop of Rome. For some countres byhelde the one and some that other so that there were that allowed none of them both, and that was called the neutral pte. Thys scysme continued upon .xx. yeres, the terme whyle Eugeny lived. After whose deathe was chosen a cardynall named Thomas Sarazan, and after was named Archolus the .v. To whom the sayde Felix after that he was admitted for byshoppe of Rome of hys owne good mynde renounced hys dignyte, and summytted hym to the rule and obedience of the .v. sayde Archolus, thā beyng indubitat byshoppe of Ro-

me. And thus seced the scysme in the church, whiche had continued by .ij. terme above specyfied. Thys Felix was a deuoute pynce and sawe the sonnes of hys sonnes, and after lyued a deuoute and holpe lyfe, and lastlye was chosen byshope of Rome as before is shewed, for the whiche he is of dyuers wynters accompted for happy. But as he had not medled wth the tyle of the church, and therwch blotted his olde age, he had after the oppnyon of other wynters, be named of allowed muche moze blessed and happy. And thys yere in .ij. moneth of August in London, were two baudes pynned wth werpynge of ray hodes and after .xl. dayes enpysonmente they were banished the towne & dyuen oute wth most shame.

In thys yere also the conduyte in Fleetstrete was begonne by syr Wyllyam Estfelde knyght and late mayr, and so synysed of hys good dysposycyon wthout cost or charge to the cytye. And he wth syr Lewys & John of Ester were made knyghtes of the Bath in the same yere.

And in thys yere dyed syr Robert Chichely grocer & twies mayr of London, the whiche wylled in hys testament, .ij. upon hys mynde day a good and competent dyner shuld be ordayned for .xxiii. C. poze mē, & .ij. of householders of the cytye yf they myght be founde. And ouer that was, .xx. pound distributed among them, which was to euery man two pence.

The makinge
of the conduyt
in Fleetstrete.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xxxix

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xl

Roberte Large Mercer.

Phylip Palpas

Anno. xl

In thys .xliii. yere vppon the daye of saynte Botolph or .xvii

daye of Juny, a yeaſte after he was degraded of hys prestlye dignyte named

med by Rycharde was byent for he-
terise at the Towre hpyll, howe well in
hys latter daye he tooke greate rep-
taunce, and dyed Goddes man in the
fayth of the churche. Thys soze wo-
des spoken by his lyfe & the posterne
of the towre shulde synke as after it
dyd, and other fantasie call dedes o-
woydes, he of many lewd folkes was
accepted for an holy man. Wherfoze
after hys deth they came to his place
of executyon, & ther made they obla-
cyōs & prayers, & altered a great hepe
of stones, and pyght there a crosse by
nyght, so that by this menes a great
dyclaunder ran vpon the churche, &
specyally vpon such as had put hym
to death. But to cease that rumoure
cōmaundemēt was sent from þe king
to punysh al such as thither went on
pylgremage. By vertue wherof the
mayr & shyffes did such diligence, þe
shortly after al þe seking and offering
was fordone and layde a parte.

Thys yere also þe shyffes of London
fet out of s. Martins le graut. v. per-
sons being ther in saintwary, & ledde
them to the counter in byedstet, wher
they remayned certayne dayes. But
those dayes expyred they were by the
kynges Justyce restoyed vnto saynt
wary. In this passetyme the warre be-
twene England & Fraunce endurynge
in a winter season whan the ground
was couered with a myghty snowe, &
therwithal a great frost had hardned
the poudes & dykes, the Englyshme
which lay in a strōg hold nye vnto a
towne called Bounclarge, arated the
in whyte clothes ouer theyr harnesse,
& so in greate number approched the
dykes, & passed vpon the yse to þe wa-
les and them scaled, and the watch of
the towne slepyng, toke the towne &
dytressed therein much people. From
the whyche daunges escaped syghte

hardelye two captaynes of that tow-
ne named John de Wyllers and Ra-
tabone a knyghte Burgonpon.

The countrey about Paris was
also soze vexed wth the rauenyng
of wolues, that proclamacyon was
made, that every grene o- newe slayn
shynne of a wolfe that was brought
vnto Paris, the p-uous shulde geue
to the byngert twenty shyllinges o-
twenty souce of that countrey mo-
nye, whiche amounteth to two shyl-
lynges, and syxe pence sterlyng. It
was not longe after, o- Charles the
frenche kyng layde vnto the soze-
sayd towne stronglye.

But by the duke of York and the
loyde Talbot it was wel and knyght-
ly defended, in so muche, that one tyme
they put the frenchemenne to re-
buke, and were lykelye to haue taken
theyr kyng, ne had be the soner res-
cous. Lastlye, the duke of York and
the sayde loyde Talbot, for bygent
causes departed thence to Roan, and
be tooke the towne to the rule of sy-
Geruys of Clifton knyghte and o-
ther, haupnge wth them to the nom-
ber of a. M. soulpouys.

But the thyrde daye after the du-
kes departynge the frenche kyng so
specyally assayed the towne, that in
the ende he wanne it by strength, and
slew therein many an Englyshme mā
and toke manye pylsoners. And so-
ne after was the townes Meleon, of
Coibeyll, and of the Ebyrouse, loose
frome the Englyshmen. For ye shal
vnderstande that sondrye and many
tymes the townes and holdes in
Fraunce were losse and after wonne
But ever the maye losse turned to the
Englysh partye, tyll all Normandy
were loose, and all other landes of
Fraunce appartaynyng to the king
of Englande

Inno

The senenth parte.

Inno domini. M. CCCC. xl.

John Sutton

John Dadyley Goldmythe

Wyllam Weynhaile

Inno domini. M. CCCC. xli.

Inno. xli.



At this. xli. yere, begā
murmure and grudge
to bryake at large, that
before had bene kepte
in metwe, betwene per-
sones nere aboute the kyng, and his
uncle the famousse Humfrey duke of
Gloceter and protectoure of the land
Agayne whome dyuers conjectures
were attempted a farr, whiche after
wer set nere to hym, so that they lefte
not tyll they had brought hym to his
confusyon.

And fyrst this yere dame Elya-
noure Cobham, whom he was sam-
lyar wth of she were to hym maried
was arrested of certayne popntes of
treason, and thereupon by examyna-
cyon conuyct, and lastely demed to
dwell as an outlaw in the yle of Wa-
nder the ward of syr Thomas Sta-
lepe knyght. And sone after were a-
rested as ayders and counceylours of
the forsayde duchesse, mayster Tho-
mas Southwell a chanon of sapnte
Stephans chapell at Westmynstre,
John Hum a chaplayne of the sayde
duchesse, and Roger Bolynbroke a
man experie in nygromancye, and a
woma called Margery Jourdemain
surnamed the wyche of Eye besyde
Winchester To whose charge it was
laide that these iiii. persons shuld at
the request of the duchesse, deuyse an
ymage of wate lyke vnto the kyng,
the whych ymage they delte so wth,
that by theyr deupplis incantacions
and sojcerys, they entended to byng
out of lyfe lytle and lytle the kynges
person, as they lytle and lytle consu-
med the ymage. For the whych treason

and other, synally they were conuyct
and adjudged to dye. But Thomas
Southwell dyed in the towre of Lo-
don, the nyght befor he shuld haue
bene iudged on the moyne, as in the
next yere folowynge shalbe shewed.

Ye haue in the pcedynge yere
hard, howe the towne of Dounclarge
was wonne by Charles, that toke vp-
pon hym as kyng, where as manye
Englyshemen were taken prysoners
and sente to a castel named Cozuple.
Where they beyng so in prysen, la-
boured vnto the ruler of that holde, for
one of them myght be set at large to
laboure to theyr frendes for theyr ran-
som. The whych parly whan he was
at his lybertye, went vnto a strength
there by, wherof an aragon knyght
was a captayne vnder the duke of
Poike, and shewed to hym that the ca-
stell of Cozuple was but slenderly ma-
ned, and that it myght be wonne by
polycy and strength. Wherupon the
sayde captayne named Frauncys in
the nyght folowynge, set a bushmet
nere vnto the sayde castel, and in the
daunynge of the moynynge attaped
iiii. of his souldoyers in husbandine
nes arap, and sente them with sackes
fylled wth dyuers frutes to offer to
sell to the occuppers of the castel.

The whiche whan they were comen
to the gate, and by theyr langage ta-
ken for frenchmen, anone wthoute
suspycon were taken in, seynge that
fewe folkes were spyynge, helde the
porter muet whyle one gaue the for-
sayde bushement knowledge, so that
soopty they entred and tooke the cap-
taine in his bed, and after spoyled the
castel

castell, and deliuered the Englyshe prysoners, and conueyed the French menne wyth all the goodes that they myghte carpe oute of the castell vnto Roan.

Upon the daye of the translatyon of saynte Edward the .xii. daye of October, vpon whych daye the maye is named by the maye and hys byethen for the peate solowynge, a day whan the commons of the citee after they auncpente custome had chosen two aldermen such as befor had ben shyffes of London and of Wyddelset, that is to wyt Roberte Clopton, Wyaper and Rauffe Hollande tayloure, and them presented by name vnto the Maye and hys byethen than syttinge in the bitter chamber where the mayes courtes be kepte, to the entent that the sayd maye and hys byethen myght chose one of the sayde, if suche as they thoughte most necessarye and woorthypfull for the same: the sayde maye and hys byethen chace there Roberte Clopton and brought hym after dowayne vpon hys ryghte hande toward the halle.

Whereof, whan certayne taylours

there beynge were ware, and saue Rauffe Holland was not chosen, anon they cryed, nape, nape, not thys but Rauffe Holland. Wherwyth the old maye beynge astonnyed, made syll vpon the stapp, and commaunded the to kepe sylence, and after held on hys waye to the East ende of the hal, and ther set hym downe, and hys byethen aboute hym. In whych meane tyme the sayde taylours hadde contynued they crye, and encensed other of lowe felowshippes of the citee as simple personnes, to take they parte and to crye to as fast as they, and wolde not cease for spech of the maye nor oyes made by the mayes sergeaunte of armes. Wherefore the maye to appease the rumoure, sente downe the shyffes and commaunded them to take the mysdoers, and to sende them vnto prysen.

The whiche precepte obserued and a. xii. of. xvi. of the chefe of them sent vnto Newgate, the sayd rumoure was anone ceased. Of the whych prysoners some were after fyned a some punyshed by long imprysment.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxi

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxi

Roberte Clopton.

Wylliam Cumbys

Anno. xx

Rycharde Ryche.

The. xx. years.



And in this. xx. yere and in the moneth of solowynge the parties befor in that other yere arreasted for treason, were brought vnto the guilde hal of London, and there arraigned of suche poyntes as befor are reherced, and for the same fynally John Hui and Roger Bolin

broke were iudged to be drawen, hanged, and quartered, and the Wyche to be brente. But Thomas Northwel dyed in the towne the nyght befor that he shuldaue bene iudged. That accordyng to the sentence of the court befor passed, master Roger was drawen to Tybourne, and there hanged and quartered, the whiche at that season toke vpon his death, that he was not guiltye of the treason that he was put

The seventh parte.

36.

put to a lured for. And the next day following was þe wyrtch þient in Smith felde, and mayster John Hum was pardoned and sued out his charter.

This yere also þe loyde Calbot laide spege befoze an haven towne in Normandy named Depe, and set his ordynance vpon an hille called Bolet, where amonge other engynes and instruments of warre he had deuised a myghtye towre of tymber oute of the which he shotte his gunnes and other ordynance, and therewith bryled and craled the wallys, & wroughete thereby greate displeasure vnto the towne of Depe.

In this towne was Capteyne Charlys Mareys a frenche knyght the whiche manfully defended the towne, tyll vnto hym with rescoure dyd come John Roysce of Wylesce knyghte with a compaigne of a thousande soldyours. And there after came to the rescous of þe sayde towne ii. other knyghtes named Arthus de Longeuple and sy Thomas Wynton, with. vi. C. men. And after this Charles which named him selfe frech knyng, sent thither the thyrde rescous of. v. C. men of armys and a. M. of other soldyours, vnder. ii. leaders called Theobalde, & Gylliam Ryphayll knyghtes. The whiche rescoure notwithstandinge, the sayde Loyde Calbot wel & manfully continued in eyght cruell maner, so that they were fayne to call for moze ayde. Wherof the loyde Calbot being ware, thynkig that shortly the Frenchmen shulde be constrained to geue ouer þe towne, lest the guiding of the siege vnto sir William Dorton & sy John Rippeland or Crippelande knyght, and after departed. After whose departing with in short whyle, þe Dolphin of Wyenne Lowys by name, and sonne vnto the

fozenamed Charles frenche knyng, accompanied with the earle of Saynt Paule & other to the noubere of. xvi. C. knyghtes, came vnto the rescoure of the sayde towne. And after he had a daye rested him and his soldyours he sente the fozenamed Theobalde with a strength of. iiii. hundred men for to assaile the fozenayde towne of tymber but lytell hurte dyd they therunto.

Then the sayde Dolphyn sente an other strength of. vi. C. men to assaile it, but the Englyshemen quytte them so manfully that they slewe. viii. score Frenchemen, & wounded ouer. iii. C. wherewith the Dolphyn beynge grievously amoued, assembled the bettermoste strength he myght make, aswel of the towne and other, and set vpon the Englyshemen, whiche were sore bryled with dayly fyghte and slewe in nombre, & synally discomfited them, and slewe of them vpon. iiii. hundred & toke the reste pyloners. Amonge the whiche the fozenayde. ii. Englyshe capitaynes were taken, & a kinnesman of the loyde Calbottes or moze berefly one of hys beste sonnes. And thus was Depe rescowed, & the Englyshemen discomfited, after they had manfully mainteyned þe siege by the space of. ix. weekes and odde dayes.

* Also this yere in þe moneth of August was a great affray in Fleetestrete betwene the getters of the pynes of courte, and the inhabytauntes of the same strete, which affray began in þe nyght, and so contynued with assawtes and small bickeringes tyll the next day. In whiche season muche people of the cyte thither was gathered, and diuers men of both parties wer slain and many hurte. But lastly by the presence and discrecion of the maye and shirives this affray was appeled. Of the whiche was chefe occasion a man

A frape in Fleetestrete.

All. i. of

of Cliffozde yune named Herbotell.

In this yere also, by certayne ambassadours þe were sente oute of England into Gutan, a mariage was concluded in the begynnynge of the yere folowynge, atwene the kyng and the earles daughter of Armenak, which conclusyon was after dysallowed and put by, by the meanes of the earle of

Dussolke. Whiche kyndeled a newe byande of burnynge enuy atwene the lozde Drotectour and hym, and toke sye in suche wyse that it leste not tyll bothe partys wpth many other were consumed and slayne, wherof ensued muche myschiese wpythin the realme, and losse of all Roymandys, as after to you shall appere.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xlii.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xlii.

Thomas Beaumont,
John Achpyler Kcenmonger.

Rycharde Roymon.

Anno. xli.

The xli. yere.

In thes. xli. yere, the fozesapde Earle of Dussolke, which as befoze is touched had fozdon the conclusyon of the marpage taken by the ambassadours betwene the kynges the earle of Armenakes daughter, wente over hym selfe with other vnto him assygned, a there in fraunce concluded a mariage betwene the kyng and dame Margaret þe kynges daughter of Cecyle and of Hierusalem as sayeth the Englyshe cronycle. And foz þe marpage to byyng about, to the saide king of Cecyle was deliuered the duchy of Angeou & erledome of Mayne, which are called the keyes of Roymandy:

But the french wypter Sagwene sayth in his latyne cronycle, þe aboute this tyme the earle of Dussolke came

vnto Charles the frenche kyng to a towne in Lozayn named Raunce oꝝ Raunt, & asked of hym his daughter to be quene of Englad, but he geueth to her no name. The whiche requeste of the sayde Charles to the sayd earle was graunted. Also he assureth litel tofoze þe season, a peace betwene bothe realmes was concluded foz the terme of. xlii. monethes, whiche peace endured but a whyle after.

And this yere vpon Candelmasse euyng, þe steple of saynt Poules church in London was set on fyre bytempest of lightening, and lastly quenched by greate dyspygence and laboure of many persones. But of all that there laboured, the moꝝowe masse pzeaste of of bolwe churche in cheape was moste comended and noted.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xliii.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xliii.

Nicholas Wyffoyde,
Thomas Catworth Grocer.
John Royman.

Anno. xlii.

The xlii. yere

In thes. xlii. yere, the Earle of Staffoꝝde was made oꝝ created duke of Bukkingham, the Earle of Warwyke, Duke of Warwyke, the earle of Dorset marques of

Dorset, and the Earle of Dussolke, marquys of Dussolke. The whiche marquys of Dussolke soone after w his wyfe & other honoyable personages as wel of men as of women, with great

The seventh parte.

greate apparell of charyes and other
costyouse ordenaunce for to conueye
the fornamed lady Margarete into
England, sailed into Fraunce, where
they were honorably receyued, & so tar-
ried there all this wynter petye.

In this petye was also an acte
made by auctorite of the comon coun-
saile of London, that vpon the son-
daye shulde no maner of chynge with

in þe fraunchyse of þe cytee be boughte
or solde, neyther bytyle nor other
chynge, nor none attyng to shoulde
byngge hys wate vnto any man to be
woyme or occupied that daye, as tap-
loures garmentes, or cordewayners
shoes, and so in lyke wyse of all other
occupacions.

The whiche ordenaunce helde but a
whyle.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxxxiii.

Stephyn Foster.

Henry Krowpke Mercer.

Hughe Wyche.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xlv.

Anno. xlviii.



hys. xlviii. petye and mo-
neth of the for-
named lady Margarete
came ouer into Englan
and in the moneth

following she was mari-
ed vnto kyng Henry at a towne called
Bolythwiche in the countre of Ham-
pyre. And from thens she was hono-
rably conueyed by the lordes & estates
of this lande, whiche met with her in
sundry places with great retynewe of
men in sundry lyueries, with theyr
uis bowdred and some beaten with
golde smythes wokes in mooste costly
maner. And specially þe duke of Glou-
ceter mette with her with. v. C. men in
one liuerie. And so she was conueyed
vnto Blacke heth, wher vpon þe xlviii
daye of May she was mette with the
Maye, aldermen, and sheryfes of the
cytee, and the craftes of the same, in
byowne blew with byawderyd sleups
That is to meane euerye mysterpe of
craft with comsaunce of hys myste-
rpe, and redde hodes vpon epyther of
their heddes, & so þe same day brought
her vnto London, where for her were
orderyed sumptuous and costly pa-
gentes and ressemblaunce of dyuerse

olde hystories, to the great comforte
of her and such as came with her, the
maner wherof I passe ouer for leng-
thyng of the tyme. And so with great
triumph she was brought vnto West-
minster, where vpon the chyrtye daye
of the moneth of Maye, that was the
sondaye after Trynitye sondaye, she
was solemply crowned.

After whiche feaste, iustices were
there holden by the dayes contynual
within the sayntwary befoze þe abbay
Of this maryage are of dyuers wy-
ters leste dyuerse remembraunces,
sayenge that this maryage was vn-
proffitable for the realme dyuers and
sundry wayes. For fyrste was geuen
by for her oute of the kynges posses-
sion the duchy of Anjou and the erle-
dome of Mayne. And for the costes
of her conueyng into this lande,
was asked in playne parlyamente, a
fyftene and an halfe by the markys
of Suffolke. By reason wherof he
grew in suche hatred of the people,
that finallye it coste hym hys lyfe.

And ouer that it appered that God
was not pleased with that maryage.
For after this daye the fortune of the
worlde beganne to fall from þe kyng.

Al. ii. 19

so þe losse hys frendes in Englande
and hys reuenges in Fraunce.
For shortly after all was ruled by the
quene and her counsell, to the greates
dispyte of the king and his realme
and to the greates maugre & obloquy
of the quene.

The which as syn that tyme hath
ben well prouyd, had many a wronge
and false repoyte made of her, whiche
were to longe to rehearse. All whiche
myserie spyl, for bykyng of the pro-

myse made by the kyng vnto þe earle
of Armenakys daughter, as befoze
in the. xx. yere of the kyng is touchyd
as agreeth moste wyrters. Whych
myserie in this booke shall somdeale
apere, as first by þe losyng of Royma-
by, þe deustyon of þe lordes within this
realme, þe rebellon of þe comynalte
agayn their prynces & soueraigne, & sy-
nally the king deposed, and the quene
with the prynces sayne to fle the lande,
and losse þe rule therof for ever.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xlii.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xlii.

Robert Horne.
John Olney Mercer.

Godfrey Boloyne.

Anno. xrb.

The. xrb.
yere.



Thys. xrb. yere, was a par-
lyament holden at saynte
Edmondes Burgh in
folke. To þe whiche towne
all the commons of that countre were
warned to come in they; moste defen-
cyble arape, to geue attendaunce vnto
the kyng. And so soone as this par-
liament was begonne, and the lordes
assembled, sir Humfrey duke of Glou-
ceter and vncle vnto the king, shortly
after was arrested by the Wycounte
Beaumont then bygh constable of
Englande, whome accompanied the
duke of Bukkingham & other. And af-
ter thys arrest was executed, all hys
owne seruantes were put from hym
and. xxii. of the pryncypall of theym
were also put vnder arrest, & sent vnto
diuers prysons, wherof arose a great
murmour amonge the people.

Then thus contynying this par-
lyamente, within fyve dayes after the
Duke was arrested, he was founde
deade in hys bedde beyng the. xxiij.
daye of February. Of whose murder
dyuers repoytes are made, whiche I
passe ouer.

Then his corpes was laide open þe
all men myght se hym, but no wounde
was founde on hym. Of the honou-
rable fame of thys man, a longe stile
I myght make, of the good rule that
he kepte thys lande in, durynge the
none age of the kyng, and of his ho-
nourable howsholde & lyberte which
passed all other befoze hys tyme, and
trewe of his alleageaunce, that no mā
coude wright accuse him, but maly-
cious perioners whiche his glourous
honoure & fame leste not to malygne
agayne hym, tyll he were putte from
all worldly rule, and spereallye for it
was thought, that durynge hys lyfe
he wolde withstande the deluerye of
Angeou & Mayne befoze promysed.
Thys for hys honourable and lybe-
rall demeanoure was surnamed the
good duke of Glouceter. Then after
he had liden open a season that al men
myghte be assured of hys deathe, the
corpes was honourably prouyd for
and so conueyed vnto saynt Albons
and there buried nere vnto þe chynne
of saynt Albone, to whose soule God
be mercyfull. Amen.

And

A parliament
holden at saynt
Edmondes
Burgh.

The duke of
Glouceter
murdered.

And when this noble pynce was thus entered, fyue persones of hys household, that is to saye, wy Roger Chamberlayne knyght, Wyddelton Herbert, and Arthur esquiers, & one Rycharde Redam yeman, were sente to London, & there arayned and iudged to be drazwen, hanged, and quartered. Of the whiche sentence drazwng & hanging were put in execucyō. But when they were cut downe to be quar

tered, & Marquys of Suffolke there being present, shewed & knynges chartour for them, & so wer deliuered to & great reioysing of & multitude of the people there beyng present. But for this the grudge & murmour of & people ceased not agayne the Marquys of Suffolke, for the deth of the good Duke of Glouceter, of whose murdre he was specially suspected.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xlii.

William Abjahan.

John Sedney Draper.

Thomas Scot.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xliii.

Anno. xxi.

AD this. xxi. yere after concordance of most wyrters or nere there about, & xxi. scisme of & church ceased & before had continued betwene Eugeny & Felix & d. vpon. xli. yeres.

This scisme as before is touched, began by reason of the depoyson of the sayde Eugeny, at the counsell of Basyle, for that that he wolde not obserue the decrees before made in & councyle of Constauce, and other causes to hym layde. But yet that depoyng notwithstanding, perforce he continued byshop of Rome by the terme of xlii. yeres after. And & laide Felix at the sayde counsell admitted in lyke manner continued as byshop of Rome by all that sayd season, lyke as before to you I haue shewed in the. xlii. yere of this kyng. And as now by exhortacion of chrysten pynces, as the kyng of Englande, whose messangers in & be halfe were the byshop of Roiswiche, & the lord of saynt Johns, & other pynces, the sayde Felix to set a persyte bypon in the church, in this yere of his owne volunte resigned, and submytted hym vnto the obedience of Rychol

as the fyfte of that name, notwithstanding that the sayde Felix was a man of greute byrthe, and allyed to & moze partye of all chrysten pynces. And thys Rycholas a man of lowe byrth, and of vnknewen kindred with in the cytee of Ieane.

Then was Felix made legat of Fraunce & cardinall of Sanoie, and lyued after a blessed & holy lyfe and so ended. And as some wyrters testifie, god for him hath shewed diuers miracles syns he dyed. And for this scisme thus graciously was ended, a versifyer made this verse folowynge.

Lux fuisit mundo, cessit Felix Nicholas.

The which verse is thus to meane in Englyshe.

Light into the worlde nowe doeth sprynge and shyne.

For Felix vnto Rycholas all frely doth resigne.

Also as testifieth Bagwine & also some Englyshe wyrters, & trewe betwene Englande & Fraunce continuing, a knight of & Englysh partye named sir Francis Aragonosse, toke a towne vpon & borders of Roymandy

Al. iii. belon:

belongyng vnto the duke of Britayn
for the whiche he complayned him to
Charles the French kyng, & he at the
sayde dukes request sent vnto þe kyng
of Englande John Hanart & Guillelm
Confinot knyghtes, to aske restitucio
of þe harme. The whiche were answer-
ed of the kynges counsell, þe the dede
was ryght displeasunt vnto þe kyng
and þe the saide sic fraunceys had en-
terprised the fayt of his owne presump-
cion and nothing in the kinges mind
of pleasure. Then after thys answer
thus made, it was agreed by the duke
of Somerset then lycutenant vnder
the kyng in Normandy, þe a communica-
cion for this mater shulde be had at a
towne named Louers. To the which
place at the daye assigned, appered &
came certayne persones for both par-
ties, where they so beyng occupied,
a traine was compassed by the french
me to take from þe Englyshme a strong
towne or hold named Pouit all Arche
wherof the maner was this.

¶ carters
brought by
Frenchmen.

A Frenchman or Normandy be-
beyng a cartter, whiche daye used
to enter thys towne with vitayle and
other lodgyng of hys carte, seying the
neglygence of the Englyshmenne,
howe lytell hede they tooke vnto the
watche of the towne, warned a french
Capitayne named Floquet, and sayd
that wth lytell helpe þe towne wolde
be gotten. For expedicion whereof,
thys Floquet wth other couenaun-
ted with the sayde cartter to beyng a-
bout theyr purpose, and ordeyned vn-
to hym. ii. hardy sowdours of french
menne, whiche bare in theyr neckes
two carpenters axes, to shewe þe they
were carpenters. And after agreement
made amonge them, howe they shuld
entre into the towne, and where they
shoulde mete the cartter, whiche after
hys olde custome entered at the gates

withoute suspicyn, and soone after
wth his axe in his necke, cam by one
sowdoure, and in a whyle after that
other, and so wth lytell questyonyng
vnto theym made, passed the gates, &
so lastely vnto the house of the cartter
before appoynted, & there kepte them
secrete tyll nyght was comen, know-
yng well that the hoste of the house
was enemye to Englyshmen, for an
injury vnto hym of an Englyshman
before done, and shewed vnto hym all
theyr counsaile. The whiche promys-
sed to them all the assistance and aide
that he myght make. In this nyght
they passe tyme for the furtheraunce of
this purpose, the lord of Bressy wth
a chosen compaigne of knyghtes lod-
ged hym in a bushment nere vnto the
towne toward the gate of saynt An-
drewwe, & the fozenamed Floquet lod-
ged hym wth an other chosen com-
paigne vnder the parte of the towne,
which is toward Louers, being wth
hym sy. Jamps de Cleremont and o-
ther men of name. These ordeynaun-
ces and prouisions thus ordeyned for
the fozenamed cartter wth his. ii. sow-
dours fozenamed in the spyng of
the moynyng, as in the moneth of Oc-
tober, came early vnto the gate wth
his carte, & called the portier by name
in saye maner to open the gate, & pro-
mised vnto him a rewarde for his la-
boure. The portier knowyng well the
cartter, & takyng lytell regarde to the
other. ii. whiche came wth hym, ope-
ned the gate, and sent an other felowe
of his to open the former gate. When
the fyrste was opened, the cartter sette
hys carte in the selfe gate, & drew to
his purse to geue to the portier his re-
ward before promysed. And as he told
the money into his hand, of a fals hood
he let parte of the money fall vpon þe
ground. The whiche whyle the portier
flou-

The seventh parte.

401

rouped to take by, the carter woth
hys dagger o; other wepin gaue such
a stroke vnto the poxer, þ he nother
spake no; cryed after. And so sone as
thys myschefe was doone, so soone
was the other poxer slayne of the.ii.
souldyours. And that doone one of
them ranne forth of the gates & gaue
a sygne vnto the lord of Bressy, the
whyche forthwith entred the towne,
and tooke and slewe all suche as to
them made resystence, and wanne in
woyt whyle the castell as the towne,
and slewe therein muche people, and
toke manye prysoners. Amonge the
whyche as sayth Sagwine, the lord
Jacoub;pdge as captayne of the sa
me towne was there taken prysoner
Whan thys towne was thus wonne
by the cautele of the frenchemen, and

the terme of the trefwys was not yet
expyred, ther was labour made by
to the frenche kynge so; resystucon
of thys towne & other wronges done
in the wyppynge of þ same. To which
it was answered, that if the Englysh
men wold restore the towne of Fog
ers woth other harmes there doone,
that than þ frenchemen shulde restore
thys towne woth the other harmes.
fo; treatye wherof, a dape of metting
was apoynted at a place called Bou
pozte, where the tyme was spente in
bayne of both partyes, so that of the
metynge came none effecte
Of the takynge of thys sayde towne
of Foggers ensued muche harme to
the Englyshmen, fo; thys was the oc
caspon, by the whyche the frenchemen
after gat all Aymandy.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxxiii

William Cantlowe

Stephyn Browne Broter.

Wylliam Marowe.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxx

Anno. xxviii



Adin the. xxviii. yere
as wptneseth þ En
glyshe Cronycle, a
knyght of fraunce
called by; Aetwys de
Buepil, chaléged an
esquyre of England
named Hauille Chalons of certayne
fetes of warre. The whych to aproue
a dape to them was geuen to mete at
a towne in fraunce named Maunte
o; Maunce where the frenche kyng

at that dape was ptesente. But for
tune to Chalons was so freely, that
he ranne the french knyght through
wth hys spere, wherof the sayde by;
Aetwys Mortelye after dyed. Than
thys Chalons lyke a charitable chy
ren man, mourned so; hys enemye,
and kepte so; hym his obsequy as he
had bene hys carnal brother. fo; the
whyche dedde of the french kyng he
was greatly allowed, albeir, he was
bound so to do by the lawe of armes

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxx

Wylliam Hulin

Thomas Chalton.

Thomas Canynges

Anno domini. M. CCCC. l

Anno. xxviii

In thys. xxviii. yere, the kynge
called a parlyamente at West.

minster, the whyche was adiourned
to the blacke streets at London, and
after

after Chyſtmas to London agayne
In whiche paſſetyme, a ſhyppman of
the Weſt countrey named Robert of
Cane, wth a fewe ſhyppes of warre
tooke an whole ſtete of marchauntes
commynge ſrome the Bay beyng la-
den w ſalte, the which were of Dure
Holande, and Ireland, & other parties
of Flaunders, and ſo broughte them
to Hampton, & there made hys poſte
ſale. For the which pyle the marchaun-
tes goodes of Englande wer areſted
in dpuers places of Flaunders, as
Bruges, Ipze, and other good tow-
nes, and myghte not haue the ſayde
goodes deliuered, tyll they had take
appoyntment for to paye for the ſaid
pyle and theyr hurttes and damages

The duke of
Suffolke are-
ſted and ſente
so p towre.

And contynuyng the forſayde
parlyamente, the duke of Suffolke
was areſted, and ſente as pryſoner
(to contente ſome myndes) vnto the
towre, where he was kepte at hys ple-
ſure a moneth and after deliuered at
large, the which dyſcontented many
mens myndes. For to hym was layd
the charge of the deliuey of Angeou
and Hayne, and the death of the no-
ble prynce Humfrey duke of Glouce-
ter. Than of thys grudge enſued re-
bellyon of the commons, in ſo muche
that they aſſembled in ſondry places
and made of theym ſelfes captaynes
and named them Blewe bearde and
other cōterſayte names, and ſo enten-
ded to haue gathered moze company
But anone as the kynges counſaile
was therof warned, they were layde
for, and taken and put to death.

The rynges
of the commons

The parly-
ment returned
to Leceter

Than the forſayde parlyamente
was adiurned vnto Leceter, whither
came the kyng and wth hym the
duke of Suffolke.

Than the commons of the com-
mon houſe made requere to the kyng
that all ſuche perſonnes as were con-

ſentynge and laboured for the getting
ouer the duchye of Angeou and earl-
dome of Hayn, myghte be puniſhed
Of whych offence to be gylty, they ac-
cuſed the forſayde duke of Suffolke
the lord Haye, the byſhop of Salis-
burie, and one Danyel a gentelman
wth Cyprian and other. Than to
appeale the common houſe, the duke
was exyled for. v. yeares, and the lord
Haye as treaſurer of Englande, &
the other were put a part for a whyle
and were prompyſed to be ſente vnto
the kynges gapoll or warde.

Than the duke in obeyng the ſe-
tence forſayde, ſped hym toward the
ſees ſpde in the moneth of Aprill and
tooke hys ſhyppynge in Northfolke,
entredyng to haue ſayled into Fraunce
In keepynge of whych courſe, he was
met wth a ſhyppe of warre named
Archolaſ of the Towre, the whiche
tooke hys ſhyppe. And whan the cap-
tyn was ware of the duke, anone he
toke hym into hys owne ſhyppe, and
ſo kepte hys courſe toward Douer.
And whan he was comen vnto the
roode, anone he cauſed hym to be co-
feſſed of his owne chaplain, and that
done ſhyppmen put hym in a ſhyppe
boote, and there vpon the ſyde of the
bote, one ſtrake of hys heade, whych
heade wth the bodye, was ſooner af-
ter conueyed to the lande of Douer,
and there leſte vpon the ſandes, and
the ſayd ſhyppmen returned to the ſea
agayne. And thus one myſchefe en-
ſued vpon another, to the deſtruction
of the nobles of thys lāp. And ſo vpon
the fyrſt day of May was thys dead
corps founde vpon Douer ſandes, &
after conueyed to hys reſtyng place
to Thys pere alſo being the pere
of our lordes incarnacion. xlii. c. and
l. was the Jubyle, whych of Engliſh
men is called the pere of grace.

And

The duke
of Suffolke
was
areſted

The Duke
of Suffolke
was
areſted
to
be
co-
feſſed
by
a
chaplain

And in this yere a towne in Norman
dy named Vernepl, was taken by the
treason of a French baker, the manner
whereof were longe to wyte. But
synally it came to the possessiō of Flo
quet before rebetled, to the great dy
struccyon of Englyshemen. For now
was the treuce ended, and a mortal warre
was executed bō both parties, and
the Englyshemen vnto the frenche,
wroughte muche myschefe dyuerse
wayes, whiche were longe to wyte.
But as tofore I haue shewed to you
sondy tymes, the most losse tourned
euer last warde vpon the Englyshe
partye. For thys season also were the
townes of Rogete and Pount An
denere wonne by the earle of Saynt
Poole and other. And in the moneth
of Junye thys yere, the commons of
Kent assembled them in greate mul
titude, and chace to them a captayne
and named hym Morymer and co
syn of the duke of York. But of most
he was named Jak Cade. This kept
the people wonderouslye to gether, &
made such ordynaunces amonge the
that he broughte a greate number of
people of theym vnto Black heeth.
Where he deupled a byll of petecpōs
to the kynge and the counsaile, and
shewed therein what iniuries and op
pressiōns the pooze commons suffe
red, by suche as were aboute the kynge
a fewe persons in number, and all vn
dercolour to come to hys aboue. The
kyngees counsaile seynge thys byll,
disallowed it, and counsailed the kynge
whiche by the. vii. daye of Juny had
gathered to hym a stronge hooste of
people, to go agayn hys rebelles, and
to geue vnto them battayl. Than the
kynge, after the rebelles had holden
theyr felde vpon Black heeth. vii. daye
es, made towarde them. Whereof he
seynge the captayne, dyewe back wyth

hys people to a byllage called Heue
lake, and there embateled them. Tha
it was agreed by the kyngees counce
that sy Humfry Stafford knyght
wyth Wylliam hys brother, & other
certayne gentelmen, shulde folowe &
chase, and the kynge wyth his lordes
shulde retorne vnto Wynewych, be
nyng to them that the rebelles were
fled and gone.

But as before I haue shewed, whan
sy Humfry wyth hys cōpany dyet
ne vnto Heuenok, he was ware of
the captaynes that ther abode wyth
hys people. And whan he had coun
sailed wyth the other gentelmen, like
a manfull knyghte set vpon the re
belles, and fought wyth them longe

But in the ende the captayne flewe
hym & hys brother and many other, &
and caused the rest to geue backe. All
whiche season the kyngees hooste laye
byll vpon Blackheeth, beynge among
them sondy oppyniōns, so that some
and manye fauoured the captayne.
But synally, whan word came of the
ouerthrowe of the Staffordes, they
sayde plainly and boldly, that except
the lord Saye and other before re
betled wer comyng to ward, they
wold take the captaynes partye. For
the appealyng of the whiche rumour
the lord Say was put into the tow
er, but that other as than were not at
hande. Than the king hauyng know
legde of the discomfyture of his men
and also of the rumoure of hys hoost
tyng people, remoued frome Wyne
wych to London, and there wyth his
hoost rested hym a whyle.

And so soone as Jak Cade hadde
thus ouertoine the Staffordes, he a
none apareled hym wyth the knygh
tes apparell, and dyd on him hys by
ganders set with gilt nayle and his
salet and gilt spoytes. And after he
had

The lord Say
sent to the tow
er.

had refreshed his people, he returned agayne to Blakbeth, and ther pyght agayn hys feld as here tofore he had doone, and laye there frome the. xxi. of Junye beyng saynt Peters dape tyll the fyrst dape of July. In whych season came vnto hym the archebysshop of Caunterburpe and the duke of Bukkyngham, wyth whome they had longe communicacion, and found hym tyghte dyscrete in hys answers. Howbeit, they coude not cause hym to laye downe hys people, and to submyt hym vnto the kynges grace.

In thys whyle, the kyng and the quene herynge of the encreasynge of hys rebelles, & also the lordes feryng theyr owne seruauntes lest they wold take the captaynes partye, remoued frome London to Kyllnyngworth, leuynge the cytye wythoute ayde, excepte onelye the lord Scaler, whych was left to kepe the tower, and with hym a manly and watly man named Mathewe fowth. Than the captayne of Kente thus hounge at Blakbeth, to the ende to blynde the moze the people, and so bynge hym in fame that he kepte good iustyce, beheded there a pety captayne of hys named Barrys, for so much as he had offended agayne suche ordynaunce as he had stablyshed in hys hooste, and herynge that the kyng and all hys lordes were thus departed, dreyw him nere vnto the cytee. So that vppon the fyrste dape of July, he entred the borough of Southwarke, beyng thā wenesdape, and lodged him ther that nyghte, for he myghte not be suffered to enter the cytee.

And vpon the same day, the commons of Essex in gret number pyghte them a felde vpon the playne at Myles ende. And vpon the seconde dape of the sayd moneth, the mayre called

a common counsaill at the Gyldehal for to puruey the wythstandynge of these rebelles and other mayres. In whych assemble were dyuerse oppynions, so that some thought good that the sayde rebelles shulde be receaued into the cytee, and some otherwyse. Amonge the whych, Roberte Hoyme strooke fyremonger than beyng an alderman, spake soze agayne theym that wolde haue theim entre. For the whych saynges, the commons were so amoued agayne him, that they sealed not tyll they had hym commytte to warde.

And the same after none about. v. of the clocke, the captayne wyth hys people entred the byrdege. And whan he came vpon the drawe byrdege, he hewed the ropes & dreyw the byrdege, in sonder wyth hys sword, and so passed into the citee, and made in sondry places thereof, proclamacyons in the kynges name, that no man in payne of death shoulde robbe or take anye thyng perforce wythoute payngge therfore. By reason whereof he wan many herres of the commons of the cytee, but al was done to begyle with the people, as after Mall enedentelye apere. For he roade throughe dyuers stretes of the citee, and as he came by London stoone, he strake it wyth hys sword, and sayd, nowe is Mortimer lord of thys cytee. And whan he had thus shewed hymselfe in dyuers places of the cytie, & shewed his mynde to the mayre for the orderynge of his people, he returned into Southwarke and there abode as he before hadde done, hys people commynge and goinge at all lawful houres whan they wolde. Than vpon the moze beyng the. iiii. dape of Julye and frydape, the sayde captayne entred agayne the cytye, and caused the lord Say to be fet frome

Yacke Cade
howe he lod-
ged in South
warke.

frome the Towre and ledde vnto the
guyldhall, wher he was aseygned be
foze the may; and other of þ hynges
iustyce. In whiche passetyme he en-
tended to haue brought befoze þ said
iustyce the sojerslapde Roberte Hoze.

But hys wyfe and frendes made to
him such instaunt labour, that synal-
ly foze. v. c. marke he was set at hys ly-
bertye. Than the lozde Saye helyng
as befoze is sayde at guyldhall, de-
syred that he myght be iudged by his
peeres. Wherof helyng the captayn
sente a company of hys vnto the hall
the whiche parfoze toke hym frome
the officers, and so brought hym vn-
to the standerte in the Chepe, where,
oz he were halfe shynen they strake
of his head, and that doone pyghte it
on a long pole, and so bare it aboute
wyth them.

In thys tyme and season had the
capytayne caused a gentelman to be
taken named Cromer, whych be-
foze had bene shryffe of Kente, and vi-
sed (as they sayde) some extorsions.
For whych cause, oz for he had fauou-
red the lozde Saye, by reason that he
had married hys doughter, he was ha-
ryed to Wykes ende, and there in the
captaynes ptesence beheaded. And þ
same tyme was ther also beheaded a
man called Wally, the cause of whose
death was thys, as I haue herd some
men repoyte. Thys Wally was of the
famylier and olde acquayntaunce of
Jake Cade, wherfoze so sone as he
espyed hym commynge to hymward
he cast in hys mynde that he woulde
dyscouer hys lypynge, & olde maners
and shewe of hys hyle kynne and ly-
nage. Wherfoze knowynge þ the said
Wally vied to bere scrowles and pro-
phesyes aboute hym, shewynge to his
company that he was an enchaunter
and of euill dysposycyon, and þ they

shulde wel knowe by suche boke as
he bare vpon hym, and had the serch
and yf they founde not as he sayde, þ
than they shulde put hym to deathe,
whych al was done accordyng to his
commandemente. Whanne they
hadde thus beheaded these two men
they toke the hed of Cromer & pyghte
it vpon a pole, and so entred the cy-
tee wyth the hedes of the lozde Saye
and Cromer. And as they passed the
streates, they toynd the poles to ge-
ther, and caused ether dead mouth to
kysse the other dyuers & many tymes.
And the captayne the selfe same daye
went vnto the house of Whyllyp Wal-
pas Wyaper and alderman, and rob-
bed and spoyled hys house, and toke
thence a great substance. But he was
befoze warned, and therby conueyed
much of hys monye and plate, oz els
he had bene vndone. At whych spoy-
lynge were ptesent many pooze men
of the cytee, whych at such tymes are
euer redye in all places to do harme,
where suche cyotes are done.

Than towarde nyghte, he returned
into Southwarke, & vpon the mozne
retyred the cytee, and dyed that day
at a place in S. Margarete Patens
parke called Chertles house. And
whan he had dyed, lyke an vncutte
ouse gest he robbed hym as the daye
befoze he had Walpas. For whych, if
robberyes, albeit, that the poeple, &
nedy people dyewe vnto hym, & were
partners of that euil, the honest and
thyrsty comoners cast in theyr myn-
des the sequele of thys matier, and fe-
red lest they shulde be delte wyth in
lyke maner, by meane wherof he lost
the peoples fauoure and hartes. For
it was to be thought, yf he had not ex-
ecuted that robbery, he myghte haue
gone farr, and brought his purpose
to good effecte, yf he hadde intended
wel

foze þ
was

Robbery.

John Day
written by
J. Cade

well. But it is to demie and p[re]suppo-
se, that the entente of hym was not
good, wherfoze it myght not come to
any good conclusiō. Than þe maye
and aldermen wyth assente of the
worshippfull comenys, seyngs thys
mysdemanour of þe capayne, in saue
gardynge of theim selues and of the
citee, toke theyr counsailes how they
myghte dysp[ose] the capayne and hys
adherentes from the cytee. Wherem
their feare was the moze, foze so much
as the kynge and hys lordes id their
powers were farre frome them. But
yet in aduocypnge of apparence pe-
rel, they condiscended, that they wold
wythstande hys any moze enter into
þe cytee. foze the persourmaunce wher
of, the maye sent vnto the lord Sc-
cales and Mathewe Goughe than ha-
upnge the towre in gurdynge, & had
of the assent to persourne the same.

Than vpon the. v. daye of Iulpe þe
capayne beyng in Southwarke,
caused a man to be hedded, foze cause
of hys dyspleasure to hym done as þe
same wente, & so kept hym in South-
warke all þe daye. Howbest, he myght
haue entred the cytee yf he had wold

And when nyghte was commynge
the maye and cytezens wyth Mathew
Gough like vnto theyr former apoin-
tement kept the passage of the byrde
beyng sonday, and defended the kē-
tysh men whych made great foze to
reenter the cytee. Than the capayne
seyng thys byckerynge begon yode
to harnes, & called hys people about
hym, and set so spershe vpon the cyte-
zens, that he dyaue them backe from
the skulpes in Southwarke oze byrde
foote vnto the drawe byrde. In dese-
ding wherof, many a man was drow-
ned and slayne. Amonge the whiche
of men of name was John Sutton,
alderman, Mathewe Goughe gentel

man, and Roger Hyslande cytezen.
And thus contynued this shyppthe
all nyghte tyll. ix. of the clocke vpon
the moze, so that some tyme the cyte-
zens had the better, and thus soone
the Kentishmen were vpon the bet-
ter syde. But euer they kepte the byrde
the byrde, so that the cytezens pas-
sed neuer muche the bulwarke at the
byrde foote, noze the Kentishmenne
muche farther than the drawe byrde.
Thus contynaynge the cruell syghthe
to the destruction of much people on
both sydes, lastly after the Kentish-
men were put to the worse, a truce was
agreed foze certayne houres. During
the whiche truce, the archebyschoppe of
Caunterburie the chancelor of En-
glande, sent a generall pardon to the
capayne foze hym selfe, and other of
his people. By reason wherof, he and
his copany departed the same nyght
out of Southwarke, and so returned
euerye man to hys owne.

But it was not longe after that
the capayne wyth his company was
thus departed, that proclamacions
were made in dyuers places of Kent
of Southeser, and Southere, that
who myghte take the forsayde Iacke
Cade other on lyue oze dead, shold ha-
ue a. M. marke foze hys traunple. Af-
ter whiche proclamation thus publy-
shed, a gentelman of Kente named A-
lexander Iden, awaited foze hys tyme
that he toke hym in a garden in Sout-
ser, Wherem, in the takynge of hym the
sayde Iack was slayne, and so beyng
dead, was brought into Southwarke
the daye of the moneth and
there leste in the kynges benche foze þe
nyghte. And vpon the morowe, the
dead corpe was dyaue through the
hyghe strettes of the cytee vnto New-
gate, and ther hedded and quartered
whose hed was than sent to Londo
byrde

Howe the cite-
zens of Lon-
don resisted
Iacke Cade
wyth hys co-
panye in theyr
entraunce of
the cytee.

Chained
Iacke Cade

The seventh parte.

byrdge, & his .iiii. quarters were sent to .iiii. sondry townes of Kent.

And thys done, the kyng sent bys commissions into Kent, & rode after hym selfe, and caused enquiry to bee made of thys riot in Caunterburge, where for thesame, viii. men wer iudged & put to deth. And in other good townes of Kent & Southseker, dyuers

other were put in execution for the same riot.

In this yere also, in the west countree was slayne the bishop of Walshbury by the commons of that countree. Wherfore after the kyng had sped his busynesse in Kent & Southseker, he rode thither to se also those malefactours punished.

The byshop of Walshbury slain.

Anno domini. M. lxxx. C. l.

Anno domini. M. lxxx. C. li.

John Wyddelton.

Nicholas Wyfforde Grocer.

Anno. cxxix.

Wylliam Were.

In this. cxxix. yere upon saynt Leonardes day or the. vi. day of Aouerye, began the parliament at Westmynster. And the firste day of Decemb: folowynge, the duke of Somersett whiche newly was comen out of Normandy, was put vnder arrest, and his goodes by the commons wer sowly dispoyled & borne away out of the blake fryers. For at this season was muche people in the cytie by reason of the parliamente, & specially of lordes seruautes, whiche were awaytynge vpon theyr lordes & maisters in greate multitude. For ye shal vnderstande, & tempo:all lordes in those dayes kepte other maner of householdes & other maner of retyn-doure of householdes seruautes and other noumbre, ferre exceedynge that the lordes at these days done. Wherfore at parliamente tymes and other great counsailes, the cyties or townes where they assembled, were hougely stuffed with people. Then after this ryot thus comytted, vpon the morowe folowynge, proclamacyon was made throughe the cytie, that no man shoulde spoyle or robbe vpon payne of death. And thesame day at the shadarde in chepe, was a man be-

heded for brekyng of the said proclamacio. And thus bego rumour & malice to spyng betwene & lordes of & lād. And specially & duke of Somerset & other of & quenes counsaill were had in great hatred, for the losynge of Normandy, wherof the chief cytie of Roan was lost or geuen by by apoyntement & yere precedynge, as wyrt nelleth Sagwinus by & condicion & the duke of Somersett with his wife and English soldypours, shuld with such goodes as they might cary, departe frelpe from & cytie. For whiche free passage he shoulde paye vnto the frenche kyng. lvi. M. scutes whiche amoute to. xliii. M. marke sterlyng. And also he was bounde to deliuer into & frenche kynges possession, all townes & castelles that at that daye wer in the possession of Englishmen within the duchy of Normandy. For perfo:maunce of which couenautes the lord Talbot was set for one of the pledges, & so by one floquet befo:renamed all the sayde townes and castelles were by him to the frenche kynges ble receyued, Harlet onely excepted. Wherof & capitaine named Cylon or Curson denyed the deliue:ry, with assistance of one named & Wm Thomas

Rumour and malice among the lordes

Thomas Turpyngham. The whiche in despyte of all the frenche kynges power layde bothe by sea and lande, helde it from the begynnyng of Decembze tyll the moneth of Januarpe and the forlacke of rescoult gaue it vp by appointment in þe begynnyng of this mayes yere. For this pel-dynge by of Roymandy, muche dys-

pleasure grewe vnto the quene and her counsayll, in so much þe duke of Yorkes father vnto kyng Edward the. iiii. with many lordes with hym allyed, tooke partye agayne by; and her counsayll, so that moztall warre therof ensued as here after in thys booke wyl appere.

Anno domini. M. cccc. li.

Skynner.

Mathewe Philp.

Wylliam Gregor.

Christofer Warton.

Anno domini. M. cccc. lii.

Anno. rrr.

The. rrr. yere

In this. rrr. yere. x. xvi. daye of februarpe, the kyng be-ynge accompanied with the duke of Somerset and many other lordes toke theyr iourneye towarde the marches of Wales, for somuche as he was credible ascerteyned, that the duke of yorke assysted wth dyuers other lordes and men of name, had in those partyes gathered great strengthe of people, and with theim was entrynge the lande, & so held on his iourney towarde hym. But whe the duke had wptyng of the kynges greate power, he swarued the waye from the kynges hoste, and toke the waye towarde London. And for he had receyued knowledge from the cytie, that he myghte not there be receaued to refreche hym and his people, he therewith wet ouer kyngstone byrde and so into kente, and there vpon an heth called Bzente heth, he pyght his felde. Whereof the kyng hauynge knowlage, sped hym after, and lastly came vnto Blacke heth, and there pyght his felde. Where bothe hostes beyng thus enbatayled, mediacio was made of peace betwene both hostes. For furtheraunce wherof, to the duke were sente þe by-

shops of Wynchester and of Ely, with the erles of Salpsbury and of Warwike. To whō it was aunswered by the sayde duke, þe he no; none of the company intended none hurte vnto the kynges persone, nor to any of his counsayll beyng louers of the comon weale and of hym and of hys lande, but his entent & purpose was, to remoue from hym a fewe euill disposed persones, by whose meanes þe comon people was greuouly oppresed, and the comynaltie greatly enpo-uerished. Of the whiche he named for principall the duke of Somerset. Of whom it was fynally agreed by the kyng, that he shulde be committed to warde, there to abyde and answer vnto suche artycles as the duke of yorke wolde lay agayne hym. Upon which promesse so made by the kyng the first day of Marche beyng thurs- daye, the duke brake by his felde, & so came vnto the kynges tente, wher contrary the former promyse made, he fāde the duke of Somerset as chese awayter & next vnto the kyng. And the was þe duke of yorke sente before to London, & was holden somedeale in maner as prisioner, & moze strenghter shuld haue ben kepte, ne had ben tydynges

The duke of yorke enba-
sied againt
the kyng on
Blacke heth.

The duke
of Somerset
promysed
to be sente
to warde.

The seventh part

422

edwinges which dayly sprange, that
for Edward his sonne the erle of the
March, was coming toward Lon-
don with a stronge power of welche
men & March me, which sered so the

quene and hyr counsaill, that þe duke
was lyberted to go where he would.
And so after he departed vnto hyr
owne countrey, and peace was dispo-
muled with feyned loue for a whyle.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. llii.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. liii.

Godfrey Feyldynge.

Rycharde Lee.

Anno. xxi.

Rycharde Alley.

In this xxi. yere the kyng
helde a solempne feaste at
Westmynster vpon the. xii.
daye of Chyistmas, where
he created. ii. erles, the which wer his
bryethren vpon þe mothers syde quene
Katheryne, that after the death of
kyng Henry the. v. was maried vnto
a knyghte of Wales named O-
wayne, the which begatte vpon her
these forsaide. ii. sonnes. Wherof that
one this sayd daye was created erle
of Rychmoūt, which was named sire
Edmonde, & the yonger called for Jas-
per was creat the erle of Penbroke.
The which lastly was created duke
of Bedforde by our souerayne lord
kyng Henry the. vii. & so dyed. And in
Marche folowynge as witnesseth
Bagwyne, was þe towne of Hertsewe
townte by the frechmen. And soone
after the cytie of Bayons was geue
by by appoyntment, so that the soul-
dyours shuld leue their armour be-
hynde them. And for every woman
there beyng was graunted an horse to
ryde vpon, & to every horsman. x. scu-
tes to paye for their colles, & to every
fote man. v. withoute moze by them
to be taken. And this yere the kyng
laye longe sycke at Claryngdownte,
and was in greate isopardye of his
life. And in the ende of this mapres
yeare and begynnynge of the. xxii.
yeare of the kyng, that is to meane

vpon the day of translacon of saynt
Edward the. xii. day of Octobze
the quene at Westmynster was deli-
uered of a saye prync.

For the which, greate reioysynge
and gladnesse was made in sundrye
places of Englande, and specyallye
within the cytie of London, where
of the expressement of the circum-
staunce would aske longe leasour to
vtter. This prync beyng wyth all
honoure and reuerence sacred and
christened, was named Edward,
and grewe after to perfyghte and
goodly personage, and lastly of Ed-
warde the fourthe was slayne at
Tewkesburge feilde, as after to you
shalbe shewed.

The birth of
prync Ed-
warde.

Whose noble mother susteyned not
a litle disclaunder & obloquie of the
comō people, sayeng that he was not
the naturall sonne of kyng Henry,
but chaunged in the cradell, to hyr
great dishonour & heynesse, which
I ouer passe.

This yere also which was the yere
of grace. M. lvi. c. liii. Mahumet the
prync of Turkes, in the moneth of
Juny and. liii. daye of the sayde mo-
neth beyng the thyrde yeare of his
emprye or regne, after. l. dayes of co-
tynuall assaunte by hyr innumerable
multytude of Turkes to the cytie of
Constātyne the noble with excedyng
fowce and crueltie made and executy-

Constantino-
ple conquered
of Turkes.

Mmm ii sed

sed, wan and opteyned the dominion
and rule of the same, to the greates
hynderaunce and shame of al christen
doine, and enhansyng of the power
and mighte of the saide Turkes. Of
the exceedyng nombyre of men, wo-
men and childzen that in that citee
at that daye were slaine, I wyl not
speke of, for the greates diuersite that
I haue seen of wyters. Amonge the
whiche the emperour named Maleo-
golus with many other nobles of
citie beyng taken on liue, were then
beheaded, and many a pyste and reli-
gious man put vnto deth by sundrie
cruell tormentes. After which great
crueltie, with many other longe to

reherse put in execucion, a comman-
dement passed from the said Empe-
rour of Turkes, that al childzen be-
yng aboue þ age of vi. yeres as well
me as women, shuld be streight
put vnto deth, the whiche after some
wyters exceeded the nombyre of.iiii.
M. Here for tydeousnesse and lame-
table processe, whiche I might shew
in the rehersall of the abhominacion
of the moste dampnable and accu-
sed Turkes, by the done in the chur-
ches and temples within the citee, I
cease. For paynfull it were to red, &
more paynfull and sozowful to here
that the sayth of Christ shulde in so
byle maner be dispised.

Anno domini. M. llii. C. llii.

Anno domini. M. llii. C. llii.

John Walden.

John Rozman. Draper.

Anno. xxxiii.

Thomas Cooke.

The. xxxii.
yere.



At this. xxxii. yere,
John Rozman fore-
sayde vpon the mo-
rowe of Symon &
Judes daye, the ac-
customed day whē
the newe maye b-

sed yerely to ryde with great pompe
vnto westminster to take his charge
this maye first of all mayes brake
that auncient and olde continued cu-
stome, & was rowed thither by wa-
ter, for the which þ watermen made
of hym a roundell or songe to hys
great prayse, the which began, Rowe
the hote Rozman rowe to thy lemmā,
and so forth with a longe processe.

Ye haue in your remembraunce, how
I befoze in the. xxx. yere of this kyng
shewed to you of the apoyntment ta-
ken betwene þ sayd kyng & the duke
of Yorke at Byt heth, which apoynt-

ment as befoze is sayde, was soone
broken and set at nought. By reason
wherof greates enuye and discencion
grewe betwene þ kyng and dyuers
of his lordes, and moste specially be-
twene the quenes counsaill and the
duke of Yorke and his blode. For al
contrary þ kynges promise, by mea-
nes of the quene, whiche then bare þ
cure and charge of the lāde, the duke
of Somerset was sette at large and
made capitayne of Calys, and had
as great rule about the kyng as he
befoze dayes had. Wherewith not
onely some of the nobles of the land
grudged, but also the comons, whi-
che by his counsaill and other then
rulers as the same wente, susteyned
many greuous impositions & char-
ges. This fyre, rancoure, and enuye
by þ space of. xvii. or. xviii. monethes
smokyng and brennyng vnder co-
uers

The ffirste
maye þ went
by water to
Westminster
when he take
his othe þ mo-
rowe of Sym-
mond and Ju-
des daye.

uert by simulation, now at this day
bake out in greate and hote flames
of open warre and wath, in so much
that the duke of Poike being in the
Marches of Wales, called to hym
the erles of Warwyke and of Salis-
burie wth other many honorable
knyghtes and esquires, and gather-
ed a stronge hoste of people, & then
in the moneth of Aprill tooke hys
journey towarde London, the kyng
there then beinge wth a greate re-
pnewe of lordes. Wherof when the
quene and the lordes were aduertys-
sed, that the duke was comyng wth
so greate power, anone they caste in
theyr myndes that it was to none of
theyr profit. And for that, in all
possyble haste as they myghte, they
gathered by the autorite of the kyn-
ges commissions suche strengthe as
they coulde haue, and intended to
haue conueyed the kyng westward,
and not to haue encountred þe duke
of Poike. And for the execution of
this purpose, the kyng accompani-
ed wth hym the dukes of Somer-
set and of Buckyngham, the erles of
Stafforde and of Northumberland
wth the lord Cliforde, and other
many noble men of the realme, de-
parted vpon the .xx. daye of Maye
from Westmynster, and so helde his
journey towarde sapnte Albones.
Then the duke of Poike hauynge
knowlage of the kynges departyng
from London, costed the countrees,
and came vnto the ende of sapnt Al-
bones vpon the .xxiii. daye of Maye
foresayd, then beinge the thursdape
before Whytsondape. Where wthle
meanes of treaty and peace were co-
moned vpon that one partie, the erle
of Warwyke wth his Marche men
entred the towne vpon that other
ende, and foughe erytyme agayne the

kynges people, and so contynued the
fght a longe season. But in conclu-
sion the victorie fell to the duke of
Poike and hys partye, in so muche
that there was slayne the duke of
Somerset, the erle of Northumber-
lande, and the lord Cliforde, wth
many other honorable menne of
knightes & esquires, whose names
were tedious to wyte. After whiche
victorie thus obteyned by the duke,
he wth honoure and reuerence v-
pon the moine solowynge conueyed
the kyng agayne to London, and
there lodged hym in the byshoppe of
Londons palays. And soone there-
upon was called a parlamente and
holden at Westmynster, by autorite
wherof the duke of Poike was made
protectoure of Englande, the erle
of Salisbury chauncellour, and the
erle of Warwyke capytayne of Ca-
stles. And all suche personnes as be-
fore were in autorite and nere about
the kyng, were clerely amoued and
putte by, and the quene and hys coun-
saile that before dayes ruled, all vt-
terly sette aparte concernynge the
rule of the kyng and of the lande.
Whiche contynued for a whyle as
after shall appeare.

In this yere also as affirmeth
the frenche cronycle, this myserye
and unkyndenesse thus reygnyng
in Englande, the lord Talbot then
being in Normandy, and in defen-
dyng of the kynges Barylons was
besette wth Frenchemen at a place
named Castillon, and there strong-
ly assailed. Where after longe and
cruell fght, he wth hys sonne and
to the nymbre of fourty menne of
name and eyght hundred of other
Englyshe souldyours, were mysera-
bly slayne, and many mo taken pri-
soners.

The duke of
poike protectes
four of Eng-
lande.

The lord Tal-
bot slain.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. liii.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. li.

John Felde.

Stephan Foster.

Anno. xxxiii.

Wylliam Taylour.

The xxxiii.
year.A fraye in
saynte Martens
chyrche is graue

This xxxiii. yere of Henry the vi., certain euyl disposed persons beyng sentuarcy men within saynt Martens the graunde, issued out of the sayde place and frayed with some cytezens, and of them hurt and maymed, and that done reentred the seintuary. Wherewith the commons beyng amoued, with certayn rulers of the cytie entred the sayd sapntuary by force, and pulled out the occasioners of the sayde fraye, and comytted them to pryson. Of this matter by the deane of saynte Martens and suche as fauoured hym, was a

greuous complaynt made vnto the kyng and his counsaile, of the mayre and the cytezens. For discharge wherof the recorder of the cytie with certeyne aldermen to him assygned, wer sent vnto the kyng then lyeng at the castel of Egle in Herford shyre, wher after the mater duly debated before the kynges counsaill, they wer with letter of commendacion retourned vnto the mayre, wyllyng hym to kepe the sayd persons sauely tyll the kynges comynge to London, at whiche season he entred to haue the mater moze cleerly examyned.

Anno domini. M. cccc. li.

Anno domini. M. cccc. li.

Elder.

John Ponge.

Wylliam Harowe.

Anno. xxxiii.

Thomas Dulgraue.

The xxxiii.
year.A fraye in
Chepe.

At this yere and moneth of May, an Italyan seruaunte walked through Chepe with a dagger hangynge at his girdell. Wherof a mercers seruaunt the before tyme had ben in Italpe, & there challenged or punished for weryng of a like wepen, challenged the straunger and questioned hym howe he was so bold to beare such a warrelly wepyn, cōsiderynge he was a straunger and out of his natie cōstrey, & also knowynge the in his cōntrey no straunger shuld be suffered to beare any like wepyn. To whyche questyon suche answere was made by the Italyan, that the mercer toke his dagger fro hym, and brake it vpon his heade. The straunger thus beyng delte with compleyned hym vnto the mayre, the

whyche vpon the moztowe folowynge keppynge a courte at the Guildhall sent for the ponge man, and after his answere made vnto this complaynt, by agrement of a ful courte of aldermen, sent the sayde mercer vnto pryson. And after this court was synpished, for rumour that he harde of, to be amonge the seruauntes of the mercer, he with the two Merpyles tooke his waye homeward through chepe. But when he was nere vnto the ende of saynt lawre lane toward chepe, he was met with suche a multitude of mercers seruauntes and other, that he coude not passe for ought that he myghte do or speake, tyl he had constrainede the ponge man, that before was comytted by hym and his brethren to

to warde, and so was he forthwith deliuered. This thus doo, rumour sprang therof lyghtly aboute the towne, in so muche that emonge many citezens, it was construed that this was dooen by the assente of the mai- sters and householders of the merce- ry, to the entente to haue the straun- gers punished, for so muche as thei toke froime them greate liuyng by reason of their utteraunce of cloth of golde and sylkes to the estates and lordes of the realme. But howe so it was vnto menne of honestie, to vica- bodes & other that looked for pilfry & risslyng, it was a great occasion and spyng. And that appeared well, for the same afternone, sodenly was as- sembled a multytude of rascall and pooze people of the citee, whiche with out hede or gypde rane vnto certain Italpans places, and specially vnto the Florentynes, Lukellys, and Ve- nicians, and toke and spoyled what thei in their places might finde, and did greate hurte in soundy places, but mooste in foure houses standyng in Byrdstrete warde, whereof thre stode in saint Barthelomeys pari- she the litle, and one in saint Benet- his parische; and muche moze would haue dooen, had not been the speedy ayde of the maye and aldermenne and worshipfull commoners of the citee, whiche with all diligence respy- red them, and of them toke dyuers that robbed, and sent them to New- gate. And finally not with out shed- dyng of blode and maymyng of di- uers citezens, the rumour and peo- ple were appeased. When the young mane begynner of all this busynesse sawe this inconuenience ensue of his quantonnesse, were it by counsaill or otherwys sepyng the sequell of the mater, rode straight vnto Westmin-

ster, and there taried as a sanctuary manne, till all the mater were ended. It was not long after or the duke of Buckyngham with iustices and other noble menne, was sente downe from the kyng into the citee, and charged the maye by vertue of a commission that an enquiry shoulde bee made of this riot. And so by vertue of the said commission called an Oyer Determi- ner, a daye was kepte at Gylde hall vpon the daye of the moneth of , where the said daye satte for iud- ges the maye as the kyng his lieuten- ant, the duke of Buckyngham vpon the right hāde, the chief iustice vpon the lefte hāde, with many other menne of name whiche I passe ouer. Whyle the maiere and the said lordes were callyng of the panels of the en- queries at the Gyldehall, the other comoners of the citee not beyng con- tent with the order, many of them se- cretely armed them in their houses, and entended as the common fame after went to haue rung Bow bell, and so to haue reised and gathered the communalte of the citee, and by force to haue deliuered suche persones as befoze for the robbery were comitted to warde. But this mater was so dis- cretely handled, by the counsaill and labour of some discrete commoners, whiche appeased their neighbours in suche wyse, that all this fyre haste was quenched, and came to none ef- fecte, sauyng the word was brought vnto the duke of Buckyngham, that the communalte of the citee were in hernisse, and if he taried long there, he with the other lordes shoulde bee in greate leoparde. With whiche br- terwe tydynges he beyng fered, haste- ly toke leue of the maye, & so departed vnto his lodgyng, and so ceased the enquiry for the daye. Vpon the morow

for so muche as he maye had vnder-standynge of the secreete murmur, he commaunded the common counsaill with all wardeins of felishippes to a pere vpon the mo:ow at Supperhall. Wherby the recorder in he kyng his name, & the maye as his leutenaut was comaunded to euerych wardeins, that in that after none folowynge ether of theim should assēble his hole felishyp at their propre halles, & there to gyue euery citezen streyght com-mendement, that euery manne see & entende to see the kyng his peace in the citee. And if thei fynde any per-son he maketh any reasonynge, wher-by thei might conceiue or espye that he fauored any gatherynge of cōpaig-nies, or he deliuerie of suche persones as were in warde, that the said war-deins should with saye wordes ex-horte hym to the beeste, and with out sygne or toke therof shewynge, secre-tly to bypynge he name or names of hym or theim vnto the maye. By meane of whiche polycy and good order the

citizens were brought in suche a qui-etnes, that after that daye the foresaid enquerie was duely pursued, and.iii. persones for the said riot putte in ex-ecucio & hanged at tybourne. Wher-of two after some wyters were scint-warie menne of saint Martins, and he third was a shipmañe or botemañe

The quene with certeine lordes whiche fauoured hir partie, disday-ned soze the rule whiche the duke of Porke bare and other, and specially for he that the said duke bare he name of protectour, whiche argued that he kyng was insufficiēt to gouerne the realme, whiche as she thought was a greate dishonour to the kyng and to all he realme. Wherfoze she made suche meanes, and wanne by hir po-licy suche frendship of diuers of the lordes bothe spirituall and tēporall that she caused the duke of Porke to bee discharged of his protectourship & the erle of Salisbury of his chaun-cellozship whiche was cause of newe warre as after shall appere,

The duke
Porke be-
charged of
his protec-
tourship.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lvi.

Exocet

Thomas Canynge.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lvii.

John Stewarde.

Anno. rrrb.

Raufe Herney.

The. rrrb.
pere.

In this yere and begyn-nyng of the same, the quene suspectynge he citee of London, and demyd it to bee moze fauourable vnto he duke of Porke his partie then hirs, caused the kyng to remoue frome London vnto couentre, and there helde hym a longe season. In whiche tyme the duke of Porke was set for thither by pryuey seale, with also the erle of Salisburie and the erle of Warwyke, where by couyne of the quene thei were all thre in great daunger. How bee it by monishmente of their fren-

des thei escaped. And soone after the said duke or erle went into he Rothe & the erle of Warwyke with a good ly compaignie sayled vnto Calays. And shortly after were taken at E-rith within twelke myles of London foure wonderfull fyshis, wherof one was called Hoys Maryne, he secōde a sword fishe, and the other two were whales, whiche after some expo-sitours were pronostications of war and trouble to ensue soone after. In this yere also was a great fraye in he Rothe countree, betwene the lordes Egremonde and the soonnes of the erle

A fraye betw
Rothe.

erle of Salisbury, and diuers mēne
maimed & slain betwene theim. But
in the ende þe lord Egremonde was
taken, and howe it was by the doine
of þe kyng his counsaill or otherwise,
the said lord Egremonde was foun-
den in suche defaulte, that finally he
was condemned in greate summes
of mony to bee payed vnto the said
erle of Salisbury. For lacke of pay-
ment wherof, or of putting suertie for
the same, the said lord Egremonde
was committed to Newgate. Where
after he had continued a certeine of
tyme, he brake þe prison and escaped
wþ the other prisoners, to the great
charge of the sheriffes.

It was not long after that dissen-
cion and unkyndnesse fell betwene
the ponge duke of Somerset and sir
John Reull soonne vnto the erle of
Salisbury being then bothe lodged
within the citee. Wherof the mayre
being warned ordeined suche wat-
ches and prouisiōs, þe if thei had any
thyng spyed, he was able to haue
putte theim in warde till he had kno-
wen the kyng his further pleasure.
Wherof the frēdes of bothe parties
being ware, laboured suche meanes
that thei agreed theim for that tyme.

In this also as testifie þe Englishe
cronicle and also the frēche, a nauie
or flete of frenchemenne landyd at
Sandwyche, and spoyled and robbed
the towne, and exercised there great
crueltie. Of whiche flete was capi-
tain a frenche knight named after

the frenche boke by Gylliam de
Domiers. And this yere after the op-
inion of dyuers wyrters, beganne in
a citee of Ilmaigne named Ma-
goune, the sciēce of empynting of
bookes, whiche semme that tyme hath
had wonderfull encrease, as expery-
ence at this daye proueth. In this
yere also the prisoners of Newgate
by neglygence of their keepers brake
out of their wardes, and toke the le-
des of the towne, and it defended a
long whyle a gaine the sheriffes and
all their officers, in so muche that
thei were forced to call moze ayde of
the citezēs of the citee, by whose ayde
the lastly subdued theim, and putte
the said prisoners in moze streighter
keepyng. Cronica cronicarum saith
that about this tyme was suche an
erthquake in the prouince of Naples,
þe before therof there were perished
ouer forty thousand chyste soules.
Of the abovesaid spolyng of Sand-
wyche speaketh Polieronicon, and
saith that by Dyers de Bysse senes-
shall of Rozmady, with the capitaine
of Depe and many other capitaines
of fraunce, came with a greate and
stronge nauy into the Downes by
night, and vpon the morowe came
certaine of theim vnto Sandwyche
and there spoyled & robbed þe towne
and toke with theim greate prayes
and many ryche prisoners, wherby
or by whiche sayng apperethe some
diuersite betwene the Englishe wy-
rters and the frenche.

The sciēce
of empynting
first begone

An earth-
quake.

Sandwyche
spoyled.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lviij. Anno domini. M. CCCC. lviij.

Hether.

Wylliam Cowarde.

Godfrey Soleyn.

Anno. ccc. lvi.

Thomas Keyner.

The bishop
of Chichester
was abjured.



L At this yere and the.iii. daye of Decembre, Reynolde Deroke then being bishop of Chichester, at Lambith by the archbishop and by a Cot of diuins was abjured for an heretike and his bokes after burnt at Daules crosse, & hymself kepte in miewe euer while he lyued after. And soone after, for to appease this rancoure and malice betwene the quene and other lordes, a daye of metyng was appoynted by the kyng at London, whither the duke of Yorke with the other lordes were commaunded to come by a daye. In obeyng of whiche commaundement, the duke of Yorke came vnto London the twentieth & sixe daye of January, and was lodged at Baynardes castell. And before hym the fifteth daye of January came the erle of Salisbury to London, and was lodged at his place called the Erber. And soone after came vnto London the dukes of Somerset and of Exeter, & were lodged bothe without temple Barre. And in lykewyse the erle of Northumberlande, the lord Egremonde, & the younge lord Clifford came vnto the citee, and were lodged in the suburbs of the same. And the fourten daye of february came the erle of Warwyke frome Calais, with a great bande of menne all arased in rede iakettes with white ragged staves vpon thein, and was lodged at the gray freres. And lastly, that is to saye the seuentin daye of Marche, the kyng and the quene with a greate retinewe came vnto London, and were lodged in the bishop of London his palais. And ye shall vnderstande that in these foresaid lordes came greate compaignies of menne, in so muche that some had sixe hundred some foure hun-

dred & the lesse foure hundred. Wherfore the mayre, for so long as the kyng and the lordes laye thus in the citee, had dayly in harnesse foure thousand cetezens, & rode dayly about the citee and suburbs of the same to see the kyng his peace were kept. And nightly provided for two thousand menne in harnesse, to geue attendaunce vnto thre aldermeine, and thei to kepe the night watche till seven of the clocke vnto the morowe, till the daye watche were asssembled. By reason wherof good order & rule was kepte, & no mane so hardy ones to attempte the breaking of the kyng his peace. During this watche, a greate counsaill was holden by the kyng and his lordes.

By reason whereof, a dissimuled vnite & concord betwene thein was concluded. In token and for topr wherof, the kyng, the quene, & all the said lordes, vpon our Lady daye annunciation in lent at Daules wente solempnly in processio, and soone after euery lord departed where his pleasure was. And in the moneth of folowynge, was a greate fray in Fleetestrete, betwene the menne of courte and the inhabitauntes of the said strete, in whiche fraye a gentillmanne beinge the quenes attourney was slaine.

Upon the thursdage in witsonteweke, the duke of Somerset with Antony Ryuers & other foure, kepte iustices of peace before the quene within the towre of London, agayne the esquers of the quenes, and in like maner, at Gynewyche the sondaie folowynge. And vpon Trinite sondaie or the mondaie folowynge, certain shippes apperteynyng vnto the erle of Warwyke mette in a floote of Spaniardes, and after long & cruell fight, toke sixe of thein laden with iron & other marchaundise & drowned & chased to the nighbour

of

The senenth parte.

423.

of twenty and sixe, not without shed-
dyng of blod on bothe parties, for of
the Englishemenne were slaine an
hundred and many moo wounded
and soze hurte.

In this yere after some auctours
a marchaunte of Bystowe named
Sturmy, whiche with his shyppe
had trauald in diuers parties of Le
uaunt and other parties of the East,
for so muche as the same ranne bp
on hym that he had gotten grene pe-
per and other specis to haue sette
sowen in Englade as the same wete,
therfore the Januayes wayted hym
bpon the sea, and spoyled his shyppe
and other.

But this is full like to bee vntrew
of the Januayes shoulde spole hym
for any suche cause, for there is no
nacion in Englande that delyeth so
litle with spices. But were it for this
cause or other, trouth it is of by that

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lvi.

Draper

Kaufte

Josselyn.

Thomas Scotte.

Anno. xxxvii.

Richarde Redeham.



This yere aboute of feeste
of Candelmasse, the for-
said dissimulid loueday
hangynge by a small
chrede, betwene of quene
and the fornamed lordes, expressed
in the precedynge yere, the kyng and
many lordes the beynge at Westmin-
ster, a feyre happened to fall betwene
a seruaunt of the kynges and a ser-
uaunt of the erles of Warwyke, the
whiche hurte the kyng his seruaunt
and after escaped. Wherfore of kyng
his other meynfull seruauntes seynge
thei might not bee auaged bpon the
partie of thus had hurte thei selowe,
as of saide erle of Warwyke was co-
mynge frome the counsaill, and was
gopng toward his barge, of kyng his

nacion an offence was dooen, for the
whiche all the marchauntes Januay-
es in London were arrested and com-
mitted to the flete, till thei had foun-
den sufficient suertie to answer to of
premisses. And finally for of harnes
whiche their nacion had dooen to of
said Sturmy and to this realme,
fite thousande marke was sette to
their paine to paye. But howe it was
payed no mencion I fynde.

In this yere also was made an or-
dynaunce by auctorite of the kyng
and his counsaill, for the orderynge
of the seintwarpe menne within saint
Martyns the graunde. Wherof the
articles are at length sette out in the
boke of . R. within the chaumbre of
Gyulde hall in the leefe two hun-
dredth nienty and nien wherof the ex-
ecucion of obseruynge were necessary
to bee vled, but moze pite it is, fewe
pointes of it been exercised.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lix.

Josselyn.

seruauntes came vntwely bpo hym,
so rabbishely of the cookes with their
spittes and other officers with other
wepeins, came runnyng as madde
menne, entendynge to haue slaine hym
so that he escaped with great dainger
and toke his barge, and so in all hast
rowed to London, not without great
maymis and hurtis receiued by many
of his seruauntes. For this the olde
rancour and malice whiche neuer was
clerely cured, anon beganne to breke
oute, in so muche of the quenes coun-
saill would haue had of said erle ar-
rested and committed vnto of towre. Wher-
fore he shortly after departed toward
Warwyke, and by polley purchased
soone after a commission of the kyng
and so poded of sayled vnto Calays.

Then

Which increased this old malice more and more, in so much that where the queene and hir counsaill sawe that thei might not bee auenged vpon the erle, that so vnto Calais was departed, then thei maligned againe his father & erle of Salisbury, and imagined howe he might bee broughte out of life. And in pprocess of tyme after, as he was rydyng toward Salisbury, or after some frōme his lodgyng toward London, the lord Audley with a stronge compaignie was assigned to mete wth hym, & as prisoner to byng hym vnto Lōdo. Wherof the said erle beyng warned, gathered vnto hym the mo men, & keepng his iourney, mette wth the said lord Audley at a place called Bloze heth where bothe cōpaignies ranne together and had ther a strong bickeryng. Wherof in the ende the erle was victour, & slewe there the lord Audley & many of his retinew. At this skirmishe were the two sonnes of & said erle soze wounded, named sir Thomas and sir John, & whiche shortly after as thei were goyng homeward, were by some of the quenes party taken, & as prisoners sēte vnto Chester. Whē this was knowen vnto the duke of York and to the other lordes of his party, thei knewe and vnderstode & if thei puided not shortly for remedy for theim self, thei should all bee destroyed. And for & thei by one assente gathered to theim a strong hoste of men, as of Marchen men & other & in the moneth of Octobre, & which was in the begynnyng of the xxxviii. yere of the reigne of kyng Henry, and the later ende of this mayes yere, thei dyete theim toward the kyng, to the entent to remoue frō hym suche persones as thei thought were enemies vnto the common weale of Englande

But the queene and hir counsaill hearing of the entente and strengthe of these lordes, caused the kyng in hast to sende forth commissions to gather the people, so that in shortly while, the kyng was strongly accompaigned and so sped hym vpon his iourney toward the duke of York and his cōpaignie. Wherof hearing the said duke, the beyng with his people nere vnto the towne of Ludlowe, pight there a sure and stronge feilde, that none of his foes might vpon any parte entre. Wher he so liyng, came to hym frōme Calais & erle of Warwick with a strong bande of menne, emōg & whiche was Andreywe Trollop and many other of the beste souldiours of Calais. The duke thus keepng his feilde vpon that one party and the kyng with his people vpon that other vpon the night pcedyng the daye & bothe hostes should haue mette, the forenamed Andreywe Trollop with all the chief souldiours of Calais, secretly departed frōme that dukes hoste, & wente vnto & kynges where thei were sorowfully receiued. When this thyng to & duke and the other lordes was ascertained thei were therewith soze dismayed, & specially for the said lordes had to & said Andreywe shewed & whole of their ententes, whiche then thei knewe well shoulde bee clerely discovered vnto their enemies. Wherfore after counsaill for a remedy taken, thei concluded to flee, & to leue & feilde stadyng as thei had been preset and still abydyng. And so incontynently the said duke wth his two sonnes and a fewe other psones fled toward Wallis, & frō thes passed sauely into Irelande.

And & erles of Salisbury, of Marchen, and of Warwick, and other, wth a secrete compaignie also departed and

The story
of the duke
of York
to Ireland

The seventh parte.

and toke the way into Deuonshyre, where a Squyer named John Dynham (whiche after was a Lorde and hyghe treasourer of Englande, and so lastely in Henry the. vii. daies and xvi. yere of his reygne dyed) boughte a myddel for a. C. s. r. markes of a leuen scoze nobles, and in the same myddel the sayde lordes wente, and so sayled into Garmesey. And when they had a season there solourned and refreshed them selfe, they departed thens, as in the begynnynge of the nexte Mayes

420
pere shalbe clerely shewed. Upon the moxowe whenne all this couynthe was knowen to the kyng and the Lordes vpon his parte, there was sendynge and runnyng with all speede towarde euery cooste to take these lordes, but none myght be founde. And forthwith the kyng rode vnto Ludlowe, & dispoiled the towne and castel, and sent the duchesse of York with her chyldren vnto the duchesse of Buckyngham her syster, where she rested longe tyme after.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxx.

ffr Memonger.

Willyam Hulyn.

John Plummer.

John Stocker.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxx.

Anno. rrrbiii.



His pere is to meane vpon the fridday next ensu-
ing Alhalowen day, af-
ter the sayd erles of Sal-
isbury, of Marche & of
Warwike had as befor
is said refreshed them in the isle of Ger-
nesey, they vpon the fridday foresaid lan-
ded at Calais, and there were at a po-
sterne by they frendes ioyously recey-
ued. Then anon vpon this thele fore-
said lordes were proclatined rebellis
and traitours, & the yong duke of So-
merfet was made capitayn of Calais
wherfore in all hast he made puruey
aunce & sailed thither to take possessy-
on of the town. But he failed of his pur-
pose, for the foresaid erles there beig,
kepte so the towne, that there he myghte
haue no rule, notwithstanding that
he shewed the kynges letter patentys
with many other streyght commaun-
dementes of the kyng. For the which
cause the saide duke rode vnto Cuy-
nys, and there helde him for a season.
And anon as the saide duke was lan-
ded, some of the myddelmen, whiche had

broughte hym thither, for good wyll
that they owed vnto the earle of War-
wyke conuected they myddelmen streight
into Calys Hauen, and brought with
theym certayne persones named Ge-
uyn fenbyll, John felowe, Kayles,
and Durser, which were enemies vn-
to the sayde Earle of Warwyke, the
whiche were presented vnto the Lor-
des, and soone after within the sayde
towne of Calais they were beheaded.

This rumoure thus continuynge,
daylye came vnto these lordes greates
soure oute of Englande. And vpon
that other partte the Duke as befor
is sayd lyeng in the castell of Guines
gate vnto hym ayde and strengthe of
souldyours, and made oute and shyn-
nyshed with theym of Calais many
and sundry tymes. In whiche assau-
tes many men were slayne & hurte v-
pon bothe parttes, but mooste wekyd
the Dukes partte. For all be that the
lordes losse many men, yet they dayly
came so thynke to them out of dyuers
parttes of Englande, that they losse
was not espyed, so that they wantyd

Whym they
betwene the
Earles of
Salisbury,
of Marche,
and of War-
wyke of the
one partte ly-
eng in the
towne of Cal-
ais, and the
Duke of So-
merfet on the
other partte ly-
eng in the ca-
stell of Cuy-
nys.

Ann. i. 10

Shippes made
with the stu-
ple of Calays

Sandwyche
wonne the
kynges nauy
for the moste
and best part
taken and ca-
ried awaye.

no men, but money to mainteine thei-
dailly charge with. For remedy wher-
of they shifed wth the staple of Cal-
lays for. xviii. M. li. whiche summes
of money when they had receiued, the
sayd lordes of one assent made ouer þ
sozenamed mayster John Dynham
with a strong company, and sent him
vnto Sandwyche to wyne the kynges
nauye then there lyenge, and o-
ther thynges for theyr nedes necessa-
rye. The whiche spedde hym in suche
wyse, that he toke þ Lordes Ryuers in
hys bed, and wanne the towne, & toke
the lordes Scalps sonne vnto þ sayde
lordes Ryuers, with other riche pzaies
and after tooke of the kynges nauye
what shippes theym lyked, and after
retourned vnto Calays, not without
consent & agreement of many of þ ma-
ryners, which owid thei singular fa-
uours vnto the earle of Warwyke.
In this iourney was the sayde John
Dynham soze hurt, that he was may-
med vpon þ legge, and halted whyle
he lyued after. Then after this iour-
ney thus acheuid, the sayde lordes vi-
taylor and manned the sayd shippes,
and sent with them, as chefe capitain
the earle of Warwyke into Irelande
to speake with the duke of yorke, and
to haue his counsaile for maters con-
cernyng theyr charge, as ceentre into
this lande and other. Where when he
had happely spedde hys nedes, he re-
tourned towarde Calays, bringyng
with hym his mother the countesse of
Salisbury, and also kepte his course
tyll he came into the West countrey.
Where at that tyme was the duke of
Exeter as admyrall of the sea, wth a
competent noumber of shippes well
manned, in so much þ the earle of war-
wyke prouyded to haue geuen bat-
tyle vnto the sayde Duke, pf he had
made any countenaunce toward hym

But the duke hearde suche murmure
and spech among his owne company
whiche sounded vnto þ earle of War-
wykes fauoure, that he thoughte it
was moze vnto hys profyte to suffre
hym to passe then to fyght with hym.

But were it for this cause or for o-
ther which the comon fame runneth v-
pon which were long to wyte, certain
and truth it is þ the laide earle passed
withoute fyght, and came in saucte to
Calays. In this passe tyme a parlia-
ment or great councell was holden at
Couentre. By auctoritie wherof the
Duke of yorke and all the other soze-
sayde lordes wth manye other were
attaynted, and theyr landes & goodes
sealed to the kynges vlie. And for the
moze surer defence þ they shoulde not
est land in Kent, prouision was made
to defende the hauens and portes v-
pon the sees syde. And at Sandwyche
was ordeyned a newe strength with a
capitayn named syr Symond Mount-
forde. And ouer this prouision was
ordeyned, that no marchaunt passyng
into the costes of Flaunders, shoulde
passe or go by Calays, for feare that
any shoulde come to the ayde of þ sayd
lordes. But this prouision not with-
standyng, comforte to them was sent
dailly out of Englande.

Then these lordes hearpyng of all
thys prouision made vpon the seas
syde to withstand their landyng, sent
out a nother company vnto Sande-
wyche, the whiche there shipplyshed
with the laide syr Symonde Mount-
forde, and in the ende tooke hym and
brought hym to Ryse Banke, & there
smote of his hed. The soze sayde lordes
then consyderpyng the strengthe,
whiche they had with theim, and ma-
ny folde frendes & hartes, which they
had in sundry places of England, co-
descended for to saile into Englande,
and

The land
of the lordes
of Couentre.

Johnham
the.

Monte of
flanders ouer
the kynges
vlie.

The kynges
army by the
seas.

In the
agayn the
lee, and the
prayer of
of the
D. & at the
banke of
Calays.

The seventh parte.

422.

and so to bypunge about theyr entent & purpose. Whych was as the comon same went, to put a part from þe king all suche persones as were enemyes to the comon weale of the lande. And this to bypunge aboute, after they had set the towne of Calays in an order & sure keepng, they toke shippynge, & so sayled into Englande, & landed at Dover, and from thens held on their journey thozough Kente, so that they came to London the .ii. daye of July.

And after they had there rested theym and theyr people, they departed thens, and sped them towarde the king, which at the same time of theyr landyng was at Couentry, and there gathered hys people, & so came vnto Northampton where he pyghte his felde. Wherof þe sayde lordes beyng enfourmed, sped them thitherwarde, so that vpon the .ii. day of July, both hostes there mette and foughte a cruell batayle. But after a longe fyghte, the victorie fell vnto the earle of Salisbury and þe other lordes vpon his partye, & the kynges hoste was sparled and chased, & many of hys noble men slayne. Amonge the whiche was the duke of Buckyngham, the erle of Shrovisbury, þe vicount Beaumont the lord Egremonde, wth many other knyghtes and esquiers, and the kyng taken in the felde. After which victorie thus by these lordes opteyned, they in goodly haste after retourned vnto London, and brought wth them the kyng keepng his estate, & lodged hym in þe byshop of Londons palays. And after speede knowledge sente of all the pzemisses vnto þe duke of York pet beyng in Irelande, a parliament in the name of the king was then called & holden at Westmynster. During which parliament the duke of York came vnto Westmynster vpon

þe Friday befoze saynt Edwardes day of the .i. day of October, and lodged hym in the kinges palays. Wher of anone arose a noyse thozoughe the cytee, that kyng Henry shulde be deposed, and the duke of York shuld be kyng.

Vpon this parliament thus continuinge, the duke came one daye into the parlamente chaumber, & there boldely beinge the lordes present, set hym downe in the kinges seate, and so there sitting, made a ptefice & clame vnto the crowne, assermyng it to be his ryghtfull inherytaunce, and had there certayne holde wordes in iustifyinge of the same, wherewth all the lordes present were greatly dismayed for thys, greate and many opynions were moued among the lordes. How be it aswell dyuers of hys frendes as other, were of the mynd that he shuld not be admitted for kyng, durynge the lyfe of kyng Henry. For appeasyng wherof, many great counsayles were kepte aswell at the blacke feres as at Westmynster.

In all which tyme and season the Quene wth suche lordes as were of her assynpte, helde them in the north countrey, and assembled to them great strengthe in the kynges name, to the ende to subdue as she sayde the kynges rebelles and enemyes. Thus contynuyng thys unkyndenesse betwene the kyng and the Duke, all be it that at that season bothe the kyng and he were bothe lodged wthyn the palays of Westmynster, yet wolde he not for prayer nor yet for instance ones visyte the kyng, nor see hym, tyll that the counsell were concluded vpon some synall ende concernyng thys greate mater, the whiche dyd so contynue the full terme of this mayes yere.

The hostes of the duke of York.

Ann. ii. Anno

Et. mccc.
per.

John Lambard.

Howe it was
agreed that
prince Ed-
warde & sonne
of kynge Hen-
ry shulde be
set asyde, and
the duke of
pozke to inhe-
rite the crowne
and his he-
ires after him.

This yere whiche was in þe be-
gynnyng of the. xxxix. yere of
of kynge Henryes reygne, that is to
meane vpon the eyn of all sayntes
of the laste daye of October, it was co-
descended by the lordes spirytual and
tempozall, and by þe hole auctorite of
the sayde parlyament, þe kyng Henry
shulde continue & reigne as kyng du-
ryng his naturall lyfe, and after hys
deathe his sonne pryncce Edward to
be set a parte, & the duke of pozke and
his heyyes to be kinges, and inconty-
nently the Duke to be admytted as
protectour & regent of the lande. And
yf at any tyme after the kyng of hys
owne free wyll and mynde were dys-
posed to resigne and geue by the rule
of the lande, þe then he shulde resygne
vnto the duke yf he then lyued, and to
none other, & to hys heyyes after hys
daies, with many other maters & con-
uenciōs which were tedpous to wyte
All whiche conclusyōs, as then by
mannes wytte might be assured for þe
perfourmaunce of theym when tyme
requyred parfycht, the kyng wth
the duke and many other lordes then
there present, came þe nyght to Pan-
lis, and there hard euen song, & on the
morrow came thither agayn to masse,
where þe kyng yode in procession crow-
ned with great royaute, & so lay by in
the Bishoppes palays aseason after.

And vpon the laterdaye folowing
beyng the. ix. daye of Nouember, the
duke was proclammed thozoughe the
cytee heyye apparaunt to the crowne
of Englande, and all his progeny af-
ter hym. Then for as much as queene
Margaret accompanied with pryncce
Edward her sonne, þe dukes of So-

merfet & of Exceter, and dyuers other
lordes, helde her in the North as a-
boue is sayde, and wolde not come as
the kynges sendyng for, therfore it
was agreed by the lordes then at Lon-
don present, that the duke of pozke
shulde take with him the earle of Sal-
isbury wth a certayne people, to
fetyche in the sayde queene and lordes a
houesayde. The which duke and erle
departed from London with their peo-
ple vpon the seconde daye of Decem-
ber, and so sped them Northwarde.
Wherof the queene with her lordes be-
yng ware, and haupngs with theym
a greates strengthe of Northren men,
mette wth the Duke of pozke vpon
the. xxi. daye of December nere vnto a
towne in the north called Wakefeld
where betwene them was foughten a
sharpe fight. In the whiche the duke
of pozke was slayne wth hys sonns
called Earle of Rutlande, & þe Tho-
mas Neupill, sonne vnto the Earle of
Salisbury, wth many other, and
the earle of Salisbury was there ta-
ken on lyue with dyuerse other.

When the lordes vpon the Que-
nes partye had gotten thys victoie,
anone they byd sende theym prysoners
vnto Dountrepte, the whiche were
after there beheded, that is to meane
the earle of Salisbury, a man of Lo-
don named John Harowe, and an o-
ther capitayne named Hanson, whose
heddes were sente vnto pozke, & there
sette vpon the gates. And when the
queene had opteyned this victoie, she
with her retynne dyew toward Lon-
don, where at þe tyme during this trou-
blous sensō, great watches were kept
dayly and also nyghtely, and dyuerse
opinyōs.

The duke of
pozke proclay-
med heyye ap-
paraunt to þe
crowne of
Englande.

opinions were amonge the cytezens
for the maye and many of the chiefe
comoners helde vpon the quenes par
tye, but the comynalte was wth the
duke of Yorke and his assynpte.

When tidynges were brought vn
to the cyte of the coming of the quene
with so greute an hoste of Northerne
men, anone suche as were of the con
trary party broughte vp a nople tho
rough the cytee, & he brought those
Northernemen to the entente to ryle
and spoyle the cytee, where thorough
he was increased of enemyes. But
what so her entent was, he wth her
people helde on her way tyll he came
to saynt Albons.

In the whiche means tyme the
Earle of Warwyke, and the duke of
Northfolke, whiche by the Duke of
Yorke were assigned to geue atten
daunce vpon the kynge, by consente
of the kynge, gathered vnto them
strength of knyghtes, and mette with
the quenes host at saynt Albons fore
sayde, where betwene them a stronge
fgyht was foughte vpon Myoue tuis
daye in the mornyng. At the whiche
duke of Northfolke & the sayde earle
in the ende were chased, and king he
re taken este vpon the feld & brought
vnto the quene. And the same after
none after some wynters, he made his
sonne prince Edward knyght which
then was of the age of. viii. yeres, id
other to the number of. xxx. persones.

When quene Margaret was thus
commen agayne to her aboue, anone
he sente vnto the maye of London,
willing and commaundyng him in the
kinges name that he shulde in all spe
dy wyle sende to saynt Albons cer
tayne cartes with lentyu stiffe for the
vityplyng of her hoste. Whiche com
maundement the maye obeyed, and
wth greute diligence made prouy

syon for the sayde vityple, and sent it
in cartes towarde Crepylgate, for to
haue passed to the quene. Where whe
it was comyn, the commons many
there bepyng whiche had hearde other
tydynges of the earle of March as af
ter Malbe shewed, of one mynde with
stode the passage of the sayde cartes, &
sayde it was not behouefull to fede
theyr enemyes, whiche entended the
robbyng of the cytee. And not with
standyng that the Maye wth hys
brythzen exhorted the people in theyr
best maner, shewyng to them many
greute daungers whiche was lyke to
ensue to the cytee if the sayde vityple
wente not forth, yet myghte he not
tourtne them from theyr obdurate er
roure, but for a conclusion was sayne
to apoynte the recorder & with hym a
certayne of Aldermen to ryde vnto
kynge's counceyl vnto Barnet, and to
make requeste vnto them that North
eyren men myght be retourned home
for feare of robbyng of the cytee, and
ouer thys, other secrete frendes were
made vnto the Quenes grace, to be
good and gracypouse vnto the cytee.

Durynge whiche treaty, dyuers cyte
syns auoyded the cytee and lande.
Amonge the which Philip Malpas
whiche as befoze is shewed in the. xx.
and. viii. yere of thys kynge, was rob
bed of Jacke Cade, whiche Malpas
and other was met vpon the sea wth a
frenchman named Columpne, and of
him taken prisoner, & after payde. iiii.

sh. make for hys raunsome. Thus
passyng the tyme, the tiddynges which
befoze were secrete, nowe were blowe
abrode, and openly was tolde that the
erles of March & of Warwike, were
mette at Cottyswolde, and had gathe
red vnto the great strength of Mar
chemen, & were wel spedde vpon their
waye towarde London. for knowe

Ann. iii. lego

The obduracy
of the com
mons.

The myll
chaunce of
Philip Mal
pas.

lege wherof, the kyng and the queene with theyr hoste, wer returned Northward. But o; they departed from said Albion, there was beheded the lord Bonuple, and sy; Thomas Ceryll knight, whiche were taken in the foze named felde. Then the Duchesse of Poike bepng at London, hearing the losse of this felde, sent her two poynter sonnes, þis to meane George whiche after was duke of Clarence, and Rycharde that after was duke of Gloucester, into Utriche in Almayne, where they remayned a whyle.

Then the fozesayde earles of March and of Warwike sped them toward London, in such wyse that they came thpyther vpon the thursday in the first weke of lence. To whome resorted all the gentylmen for the moste parte of the south & east partie of England And in this whyle that they thus rested at London, a great councell was called of all lordes spirytual & temporal that then were there aboute.

By the whiche specially after many arguments made, for so much as king Henrye contratye hys honoure and promyse at the last parlyament made and assured, and also for that that he was reputed vnable and insuffyciente to rule the realme, was than by theyr assentes deposed and dyscharged of all kyngely honoure and regalltye. And incontynently by auctorite of the sayde councell and agreement of the commons there presente, Edward the eldeste sonne vnto the duke of Poike, then was there elected and then chosen for king of England After whiche eleccion and admissyon the sayde Earle of Marche geupnge laude and prayse vnto god, vpon the fourthe daye of Marche accompanied wth all the fozesayde Lordes and multitude of comons, was conueyed

vnto Westmynster, & there toke possession of the realme of Englande.

And wytyng in hys estate copall, in the greate halle of the same wth hys scepter in his hande, a questyon was asked of the people then presente, if they wolde admyt him for theyr king and soueraygne lord, the which with one voyce cryed, yee. And then after the accustomed vse to kynges to swer and after the othe taken, he went into the abbaye, where he was of þ abbos and munkes mette with procession, & conueyed to saynt Edwardes chynne, and there offered as kyng, and that done receyued homage & feaute of all suche Lordes as there then were presente. And vpon the moztowe folowynge, were proclamacions made in accustomed places of the cytee, in the name of Edward the. iiii. then kyng of Englande. Vpon whiche daye the kyng came vnto the palays at Paulys, and there dynd, and there rested hym a season, in makynge prouisioun to go Northwarde for to subdue hys enemyes. Then vpon the laterdaye folowynge bepng the

daye of Marche, the Earle of Warwike with a great puissance of people departed oute of London Northwarde And vpon wednesdaye folowynge the kynges footemen wente toward the same iourney.

And vpon frydaye then nexte folowynge, the kyng tooke his bynne through the cytee with a great bande of men, and so rode forth at Byshopsgate. In whiche selfe same daye, whiche was the. xii. daye of Marche, a Grocer of London named Walter Walker, for offence by hym doone agayne the kyng, was beheded in Smythfelde. But his wyfe, whiche after was married to John Rolande grocer & lastely alderman, had suche

A councell wherein was agreed that kyng Henry shulde be deposed.

Edward the eldest sonne of the duke of poike elected and made kyng of Englande.

friends aboute the kynge, that her
goodes were not forsped to þe kyn-
ges use. The kynge than so holdyng
hys iourney, met wþh hys enemyes
at a byllage. ix. myles on thys halfe
Poike called Towto o; Shyphorn,
and vpon Walme sondaye gaue vnto
themyr battayle. The whyche was so
cruell, that in the felde and chace wer
slayn vpon. xxx. M. men ouer the me
of name, of the which here after some
ensue. That is to saye the Earle of
Northumberlande, the earle of West
merlande, the lord Cliffoyd, the lord
Cyromunde, John ly; In-
drew Trollop, and other to the nōber
of a. xl. o; mo. And amonge other at þe
same felde was taken the erle of De-
uonshyre, and after the earle of Wyl-
shyre, whych sayde earle of Deuon-
shyre was sent vnto Poike, and ther
after beheaded. Henrye than whyche
latelpe was kynge, wþh the quene
and theyr sonne Edward, the duke
of Somerset, the lord Rose and other
beyng than at poike, herynge of the
ouerthrow of theyr people, and gret
losse of theyr men, in all hast fled to-
warde Scotlande. And vpon the mo-
rowe folowing, the kyng wþh much
of hys people entred into poike, and
there helde hys Easter tyme. And v-
pō Easter eue, tidinges wer brought
vnto London of the wyppynge of the
felde. Wherfore at Poules Cedeum
was songe wþh greate solempnytie
and so throughe the cytee in al parsh
churches. And thus thys goodly mā
kyng Henry lost all, whan he hadde
reyned full. xxx. viii. yeres. vi. mo-
nethes and odde dayes. And þe noble
and most bounteous pryncesse quene
Margarete of whom manye vntrew
surmyse was pynnyed and tolde,
was sayne to slye comfortlesse, and
lost all that she had in Englande for

eu. Whan that kyng Edward with
greate solempnytie hadde holden the
feast of Easter at poike, he than remo-
ued to Durham. And after hys busy-
nesse there synned, he retourned a-
gayne Southward, and left in those
partes the earle of Warwiche to se
the rule and gubdyng of that countrey

Than the kynge coasted and bys-
ted the countreyes Southwarde and
Eltward, that aboute the begynning
of the moneth of Junye he came vn-
to hys manoure of Shene now cal-
led Rychemount. In all which passe-
tyme purueuance was made for the
kynges coronacyon. In accomplis-
shynge wherof, the kynge vpon the
xxvii. daye of Junye beyng frydaye
departed frome the sayde manoure
and ro to the towre of London.
Vpon whome gaue attendaunce the
mayr and hys byethren all cladde in
scarlet, and to the number of. iiii. C.
commonours wel hoysed and cladde
all in grene. And vpon the moine be-
yng later daye, he made there. xxviii.
knyghtes of the Bath, and after that
four mo.

And the same after noone he was
wþh all honoure conueyed to West
mynstre, the sayde. xxxii. knyghtes ry-
dyng before hym in blewe gownes
and hodes vpon theyr shulders lyke
to prelates, wþh many other goodly
and honourable ceremonies, whych
wer long to reherse in due order. And
vpon the moine beyng sondaye and
saynt Peters day, he was with greate
trumphe of the archebischop of Can-
terburpe crowned and enoynted be-
fore the hygh altier of saynt Peters
churche of Westmynstre. And after
thys solempnytye of the crowning
of the kynge wþh also the supenous
and honourable fest holden in West
mynstre hall was synned, þe kynge
soone

The coronacyon of Edward the. iiii.

soone after created George hys bro-
ther duke of Clarence.

And in the moneth of Iulpe folow-
ynge at the standarde in Chepe, the
hande of a seruante of the kynges
called John Wauy was stryken of,
for that he had stryken a man wpyth
in the palays of Westmynstre.

France.

Francia.

Carolus. viii.

Charles. viii.



Crolus oꝝ Charles
the. viii. of that na-
me after the accōpt
of thys boke, oꝝ the
viii. after the french
hystoꝝpe, sonne of
Charles the. vii. oꝝ
vi. began his regne ouer the french
men in the moneth of October in the
yeare of oure loꝝde. M. iiii. hundred
and. xxi. and in the begynnynge of
Henry the vi. than kyng of Englaḁ
Of thys Charles sundꝝ wꝝtters li-
berly wꝝt, in so much as some assey-
me hym to be the naturall sonne of
Charles the. vii. some asserme him to
be the sonne of the duke of Oyleance
and boꝝne of the quene, and som ther
are that name him the sonne of Char-
les foꝝe named gotten in baste, vpon
hys moost bewteous paramoure na-
med Agnes, the whych as testyfyeth
Gagwinus, excelled al otherweine in
feture and bewty, and foꝝ the same to
be surnamed the fayre Agnes. Thys
in hys myddell age dyed, and was so
rych that her testament amounted to
xl. thousande scutes of golde, whych
in sterlyng mony amounteth to the
summe of .x. thousande pound. Cha-
to retorne to thys Charles, lykelye it
is that he was not hys naturall sonne of
the foꝝe named Charles, foꝝ so muche
as hys sayd father oꝝdayned and wil-

led the realme of Fraunce vnto Ma-
theryne hys daughter and wyfe vn-
to kyng Henry the. v. and agreed
wpyth the consente of the moꝝt parte
of the loꝝdes of hys realme both spy-
rytuall and tempoꝝall, that durynge
hys lyfe the sayde kyng Henry shuld
be regent of Fraunce, and after hys
death to be kyng of the sayd regyon
as moꝝt at length befoꝝe I haue shew-
ed vnto you in the. vii. pte of hys sayd
Henry the. v. But whether he be his
legytymat sonne oꝝ not, wherupon
I purpose no longer to stande, cruth
it is, that he was by his father admit-
ted and made dolfyn of Ayen, by re-
son wherof he was in great authori-
te, and wanne to him fauour of some
loꝝdes of Fraunce, whych the stronglye
mayntayned hys partie durynge the
lyfe of kyng Henry the. v. and after
all the season whyle the duke of Bed-
foꝝde occupied there as regente of hys
regyon, and was of some parties of
Fraunce reputed foꝝe kyng. Howbeit
he was neuer crowned, so longe as hys
duke of Bedfoꝝde lyued. Neuerthe-
lesse he by meane of polycy and his fre-
des so defended hym in selfe, that lytle
by the Englyshemen was wounde v-
pon hym, of suche landes as he by right
was in possessyon of. But polycy help
he defended them, and lytle and lytle
so pꝛeuayled agayne them, that in the
ende he all onelye wanne not to hym
the possessyon of hys pꝛouynce, whych
is named Fraunce, but also he wane
to hym in the ende the kyng of Eng-
landes old inheritaunce, that is foꝝe
mandye, wpyth all domynions to the
same appertaynyng.

The maner of winnyng of them
I wyl not in thys stoꝝp speake of, foꝝ
so muche, as in the foꝝmer peares of
kyng Henry the. vi. I haue ther ex-
pꝛessed the maner of some parte ther
of.

of. But that I shall speake of the my
Walbe of thynges done betwene him
and other pynces. And so; that I be
foze in the .viii. yere of Henty the
vi. promysed in the .vi. yere of thys
Charles to shewe vnto you somewhat
of the mayden o; pucell, whych the
Frenchmen named La pucel de dieu
and her for a messenger from God to
be sente reputed, I shall here folowe
the sayng of Gaiwyn, whych sayth
as foloweth. In the .vi. yere o; ther
aboute to recken frome the deathe of
thys Charles father, a wench o; may
den beyng byed in a strete o; wyllage
called in latyn Walli colo; & in thys
tyme beyng sponge to the age of .xx.
yeres o; there aboute, haung to fa
ther a pooze man named Iakes De
larch and her mother Iabel, she also
beyng the name of Iane o; Iohan
requyred by dyuers and sondre ty
mes an vnle of heys beyng perfect
of the fofsayde wyllage, that he wold
pysente her vnto the frenche kynge
for thynges concernynge greatelye
the weale of hym and of hys realme.
Whych she pfecte after manye
delates, for so much as in her wordes
he hadde lytle trust, yet at length her
sayde vnle beyng named Roberte
Baudryncourte, sent her wyth a con
ueniente compaigne vnto the kynge
wyth letters certyfynge hym of all
maner of thys mayde. Whereof the
sayde Charles beyng ascertayned,
thought he wold be some meane to
knowe the vertue of thys wench.
And so; he had perfecte experyence
before tymes this woman had neuer
sene hys person, he thoughte he wold
chaunge hys come and habyte, to see
whycher she by her vertue coulde
knowe hym frome other, and that do
ne, he standynge among other of his
familiers as one of them, she was cal

led into the chamber, and demaunded
yf euer before tyme she had sene the
kig. And after she had answered nay
she was bidden to clyppe out the king
whych there stode amonge that co
paigne.

The whych anon wythout dys
cussie hym lande and saluted as king
And albe it, that he refused her reue
rence, and sayde that she erred in her
choyse, yet she perseuered knelyng at
hys feete and sayde that by Goddes
purposice she was taughte that he
was her very soueraygne pynce and
none other. Wherefore the kynge and
all hys lordes had her in moze assy
surance, that by her the lande shold be
releuyd, whych at that daye was in
passynge myserye.

Then after dyuers questyons to
her made, what was the cause of her
commynge thither, she answered &
sayde that she was sente frome God,
to stablyshe the kynge in hys realme
and that by her she beyng leder and
captayne of hys people, by dyuine
grace onelye the kynge shulde shortly
subdue hys enemies. By reason of
whych wordes, the kynge wyth hys
lordes were some dele comforted.

Upon thys, armour and sworde
was soughte for this mayden, which
as sayth my sayde autoure, was so
den myraculoussye, whereof the pro
cesse to me apereth so darke and fan
tastycall, that therewith me lytt not to
blot my booke but suffer it to passe by
Then thys wench beyng puruey
ed of all thynges necessarye to the
warre, a compaigne of knyghtes and
souldyours to her by the kynge was
assigned. And so shewyng as a mā
and in mans habyte continued by
space of two yeres and moze, and did
many wonderfull feates, and gat fro
the Englyshe menne manye stronge
to wnes

townes & holdes. Wherefore, among the Frenchmen she was worshipped for an Angell or a messenger sente frome God, to releue theyr great myserye. And as assymeth the sayde authoure, she by her prouidence caused þe sayde Charles as king of Fraunce to be crowned at Raynes, in the year of oure lord. M. iiii. C. and. xxi.

Albeit, nother the French cronycle nor other, whyche I haue seene testifyeth that, but assymen that he was not crowned duringe the lyfe of the duke of Bedforde. But almyghthe God whych for a season suffereth suche sorcery and deuplysh wayes to prospere and reygne, to the correccion of synners, lastelye to shewe bys polye, and that good men shuld not fall into anye erroure, he sheweth the clearenesse of suche mysticall thynges, and so he dyd in this. For lastelye he by a knyght Burgonpon was taken, and after sent to Roan, and ther byent for her demerites, as in the. viii. yere of Henry the. vi. is moze at length shewed. Than the tyme forth passyng and contynuall warre betwene Englande and Fraunce contynuyng, amonge manye tribulacions by this Charles sustayned, one that was his owne sonne named Lewis, comforted and assysted by the dukes of Burbo and Alenson wyth other men of name, rebelled agaynst his father, and warred vpon hym, and by strengthe wanne frome hym certayne townes and strong holdes. For remedy wherof, the sayde Charles made warre vpon the foze named duke of Burbon and wasted wyth prynces and knyghtes the countreys of the sayde duke of Burbon. By meane wherof, after this vnsyndly warre had dured by the space of. vi. monethes or moze, a peace and vnpyte betwene the father and sonne

was treated, and by the meanes of the Earle of Ewe, a concoorde and vnpyte betwene them was synallye concluded, and he the sayde Lewis and all suche as wyth hym were retayned or allyed, were for this offence by the sayde Charles clerelye pardoned, one personne all onelye excepted named Jaket or Jakes, by whose treason the castell of Parente was lost and taken, for the whyche offence he was after dyaun, hanged, and also quartered.

Than in processe of tyme folowynge the Flemynge of Gaunte rebelled agayne the duke of erle named Philippe. The cause of whyche rebelly was, for þe aterid a greuous taks vpon salte, and put the people thereby to greuous charge. Whereupon dedelye warre betwene the duke and his subiectes arose, to þe destruction of muche people vpon both parties, wherof, the circumstaunce wer long to wyte. Howbeit, in the ende þe duke of erle by the ayde of the French king was victour, & held them of Gaunte so streight, that they were compelled by force to brye the peace wyth greete summes of monie, and to theyr other manyfolde damages.

About the. xxi. yere of this sayde Charles, came vnto hym from the. b. of Rome Archolus the. v. of þe name an ambassade, for to requyre ayde agayn the Turkes, for the defence of Constantin þe noble, whych the Turkes purposed shortly after to assaile. To which ambassade by þe sayde Charles it was answered, that to hym it was righte greuous to here of the intollerable persecucion, whych þe christen dayly sustayned of the Turkes. But he was of the English nation so beryed and warred, that he might not leue his land wythout an hed, to the comfozte

The ende of
Raynecell de bi
ou.

The comfozte
agaynst the fa-
ther.

comfote of other, & to lose hys owne
But to the entente that he for the ty-
mes myghte haue warred vpon the
sayd Turkes, he for that cause onely
had offered vnto the kynge of Eng-
lande manye reasonable offers. And
yf of the Englyshe partye anye lyke
offers myghte be to hym proffered, he
wolde gladiely them accepte, and tur-
ne hys speare incontynentlye agayne
the fornamed Turkes. And ouer þ
he wolde for the furtheraunce of the
mater, sende wth theym vnto the
kynge of England certayne ambassa-
dours, to see if that as yet any reaso-
nable peace myghte be betwene them
concluded. For accomplisshement
wherof, as testifyeth myne autoure
Sagwynus he sent the archebysshop
of Keynes wth other honozable per-
sons. The whych whan they to king
Henrye and his counsaill had shewed
theyr legacyon, it was to them shoy-
ly aunswered, that at such season as
the Englyshemen had wonne agayn
so muche land as the Frenchmen by
cawteyls had wonne from them, tha-
were it good time and season to treat
of accord, and not befoze. By reason
of whiche aunswere, the byshoppe of
Romes ambassad returned to Rome
wthout ayde or comfote. And thus
the French wyters lay euery charge
frome theyr pynter, and put it vnto o-
ther. But of this ambassade or aun-
swere, fynde I no memoire of any En-
glyshe wyters.

Aboute the xxxiii. yere of the reygne
of this Charles, Lewes his sonne be-
foze named beyng a man of greute
lybertye and largesse, thought his
father departed not wth hym of his
mouables and possessyons as he had
cause to do. For the whiche by com-
fote of yonge persones as he had a-
boute hym, he rebelled agayne the se-

conde tyme agayne hys sayde father
and by reason of this largesse and ly-
bertye, dyed vnto hym muche wa-
ton and wyld people, and wth theyr
assystence warred vpon hys fathers
frendes, and entended to depriue his
father of all gouernaunce of the re-
alme. Wherof herpyng hys father, in
all hast gathered to hi great strength
and sped hym towarde his sayd sone
But whan Lewys was warned of þ
compyng of hys father wth so great
an host, and consydred hys quacell
and weaknes, he wth a fewe persons
fled towarde Burgoyne. Wherof he
cynge the father sente in all hast peo-
ple to kepe þ passages, and dyd that
he myght to haue stopped him of his
waye. But that prouysyon notwyt-
standyng, the sayde Lewys escaped
and came sauely vnto the presence of
Whyllyp then duke of Burgoyne, the
whiche him receaued wth glad chere
and entreated hym accordyng to his
estate, and so kepte hym duryng his
fathers lyfe. Howebeit, he made for
hym greute sute and laboure, to wy-
n hym hys fathers grace. But all was
in vayne. For what by obstynacye of
the same that he wolde not submytte
him to his father, and come vnto his
presence whē he was sent for, and for
the great stomache of the father, that
he wolde not be condycioned wth of
the sone, this barpaunce contynued
betwene them as a boue is sayde the
terme of hys fathers lyfe. In whiche
passetyme this Charles concluded a
marriage betwene hys daughter cal-
led Magdaleyne, & Ladyssaus king
of Beme, Hungary, and of Molayne.
But whyle the byde wth great ap-
parayle and pompe, was conueyed
towarde her husbände to her mary-
ed, her sayde husbände was taken so
denly wth sykenes, and dyed wth

The death of
Charles viii

in. xliiii. houres after that he spylt co-
playned hym, whych was by force of
popson as mooste wyters agree. Of
whych tpynges when charles was
ascertayned, he therewith toke suche a
pensyffenes, that he dyed shortly af-
ter, whan he had ruled a parte of the
hole realme, to reken from the death
of hys father. xxxvi. yeres. Howbeit
of frenche wyters no certayne tyme
of his regne to him is assigned, for
so much as kyng Henry the. vi. long
after the death of hys father, was a-
lowed in Paris and manye other cy-
tees of fraunce for soueraygne and
kyng of that regyon. Thys Charles
beyng dead, lefte after hym two son-
nes, that is to saye Lewis that after
him was kyng, and a yonger named
Charles, wyth the fornamed daugh-
ter named Margaleyne, or after so-
me Margaret. And after wyth great
pompe hys corpes was conueyed un-
to saynte Denys, and there buried.

gorne: and hearpyng of the death of
hys father, wyth ayde of the forsayd
duke Phylippe Hottelpe entred the
realme of fraunce, and tooke vpon
hym the rule in euery good cytee and
towne as he passed as kyng of the
same, so for many lordes and hed offi-
cers dyete vnto hi. By meane where-
of he was stronge, and put such vnto
scplence, as after the wyll and purpo-
se of hys father wold haue preferred
hys yonger sonne named Charles.

Then thys Lewis by strength of
his frendes was shortly after at Pa-
ris crowned kyng of fraunce. Af-
ter whych solempnyte synned he re-
payred vnto Paris, and there by con-
sent of hys counsaile made a lawe, for
no man of what degre that he were,
shulde vse huntynge or hawekynge
wythoute specyall lycence, and specy-
ally for chaspyng or huntynge of wol-
ues, nor to kepe wyth hym any bound-
es or other instrumetes wherby the
game myghte be destroyed. And that
doone, Phylippe forsayde duke of
Burgoyne after counsaile to hym ge-
uen that he shuld forget and forgue
all dyspleasures to hym to fordone
by anye of his lordes, and them to ho-
noure and cheryshe, and specyallye
hys yonger brother Charles to noy-
se, and to departe with hym louyng-
ly of hys fathers possessions, tooke
leue of him and departed. After whose
departure, he contrary the sayde coun-
saile, refused the company of hys lord-
es and also the counsaile, and dyete
vnto hym as hys chiefe counsaillours
blyaines and men of lowe byrth. Of
whych, the. iiii. pryncyall were na-
med as foloweth, John de Lude,
John Balma, Oliuer Deupl, whom
for the odiousnesse of the name the
kyng caused it to be chaunged and
be named Daman, and the. iiii. was
named

Continuation
of Lewis

Fraunce.

Fraunce.

Lewis the. xi

Lewis the. xi.



Lewis the. xi. of
that name after
the accompte of
thys booke, and
after for french
accompte, where
of the cause is be-
fore shewed, come
to Charles, laste
dead, beganne hys domynion ouer for
realme of fraunce, in for moneth of Oc-
tober, in the yere of grace a M. cccc. a
lviij. the. xxxvi. yere of Henry the. vi.
than kyng of Englande. Thys of
Gawwinus is called the sturdy or fel-
Lewis. The whych at the tyme of his
fathers deith, being as aboue is sayd
vntreconsyled in the prouynce of Bur-

The seventh parte.

422

A battayll betwene the lordes of France and the kynge thereof.

named Stephen a brother of the kynge chaumbyre doze, the which he promoted to great honour and dignitees. Amonge whō Balua beyng a preast was by his meanes at length made a cardynall of Rome.

Thus he vsynge the counsaile of these persons, murmur and grudge began to sprynge betwene hym and his lordes, in so muche that first the duke of Bretainne began to estrange hym from the kynge, and refused to come vnto hys presence whē he was sent for. Wherof herynge the erle of Gloucestre with other, dreyue theim vnto the duke. To the whiche partie soone after, the kynges brother Charles, with also the duke of Burbon which had married the kynges sister, with many other noble men of the realme, resorted. When the kyng was ware that hys lordes conspyred agayne hym, fearng the rebellyon of hys comons sent in speedy maner vnto Paris the forenamed John Balua with other certeyne persones, to kepe that cytie in due obeyssaunce towarde hym, thynkyng that the other cyties and good towncs of his regyon, woulde take ensample therof, and demeanē them as that cytie dyd. After whose cominge, the rulers of Paris by the amonishment of the sayd John, ordeyned good and sure watche, and so by that meane kept the cytie in good order. And in the meane season, the kyng gathered to hym great folow of knyghtes and souldiours, the hys hoste was nombred at .xxx. thousand men. And in like wyse the other partie had assembled as many or mo. And notwithstanding the assidue labour and meanes made by the duke of Burgoyne, and Carlota wyfe to the duke of Burbon a sister to the kyng as is aboue sayd, to make an buyt

and peace betwene Letops and his lordes, yet finally the kyng and they met in plain battail at a place called Chartres, where betwene the was a longe and cruell battayl, to the losse of muche people on bothe parties. And albeith that the kyng in the begynnynge had the better of his enemyes, yet in the ende he was ouercomen, his mecheaced, and he forced to flye, and to take for his sauegarde a castel named Montclere. Fro the whiche he shortly departed, and yode to another castell called Corboyll, and from thens lastely vnto Paris, where he intended to haue gathered newe people, and to haue reuenged hym of his enemyes. But by the wyse and good exhortacion of the byshoppe of Paris, the kyng chaunged his purpose, and all was set in a quietnesse for that tyme. But howe or in what maner, or what the condicions of the accorde were, myne autoure dooeth not expresse. The whiche accorde thus concluded, the kyng contynued hys olde maners and delpyted hym moze to companye with simple and inreuerent persons to eate and drynke with them, to the ende that he myght talke of rybaudry and bayne and bityous fables, then to accompany hym with his lordes, where he myghte haue wonne hym muche honoure. Thys Letops also was of so dyuers and wanton condicions, that he wolde go moze lyke a yoman or a scruping man, than lyke a pryncce. The whiche was for no regardshyp nor sparing of good, for as before I haue shewed, and also after shall appere, he was a pryncce of moste lybertye, and therewith an oppressour of his subiectes.

Etwis thus passing his time was dyuen of necessitye for lacke of money to a prest
Doo of the

Another affe-
ble of the loy-
des again the
kyng.

of the citeysns of Barps. The which
after many excules by them layde to
put it by, and might not bee allowed,
they lastly denayed the kynges plea-
sure. Wherewithall he beyng gre-
uouly discōtented, remoued diuerse
fro their offices, & other which were
of the richest and best men of þe citie,
he soughte agayne theim surmised
causes, & without proups of iustyce,
put many of them to deth. For these
foresayde causes & many other whi-
che tedpouse were to expresse, the foze
sayde lordes agayne assembled their
people, entēdyng to subdue þe kyng,
and to sette his brother in his place,
or to cause hym otherwysse to rule þe
comon weale. And to strength the ba-
rons party, John sonne vnto þe duke
of Calabrye approached to them, with
a good bande of men. And to theim
came also the sonne of the duke of
Burgoyne named Charles. All whi-
che barons of one assente mette at a
towne called Stampes, where they
cōtynued they; cōsaille by the space
of. x. dayes, and after that cōsaille
spynished, tooke they; iournaye to-
warde Barps. In whiche passe tyme
a spye of the duke of Byrtayne, cal-
led Peter Gerold was taken in Ba-
rps, and drawen, hanged and quar-
tered, and dyuers men and women
þe were suspected to owe fauour vnto
the lordes, were sacked and caste in
to the water of Seyn. Then for to
strength and guyde the cytie of Ba-
rps, the kyng sent thither the erle of
Donopse, by whose proupsion all
warelye ordenaunce for to defende
they; enemyes was there prepared.
In the which tyme & season, þe lordes
in. iii. partes enbatayled, approached
the citie. Wherof the fyrst host ladde
Charles brother vnto the kyng, the
seconde the duke of Byrtayne, & the

thyrde Charles the sonne to the duke
of Burgoyne. Prouyded that Char-
les fyrste named ladde the myddle
ward. Whā þe sayd erle of Donopse
had well consydered the strengthe
of the lordes, he sente vnto theim a
messenger, sayng that in his mynde
he mariayled to see so greute a mul-
titude of people assembled agayne
the cytie and comon weale of þe land,
consydering that he was sette there
by the kyng as a medpatour and a
meane, rather to make peace then
warre, yf they were contented that
by hym any medpacyon myghte bee
laboured and had. But this came to
none effecte, so that small assautes &
skymysches ensued, to the lytell do-
mage of bothe partes. In whiche
passe tyme the kyng sente by secretes
meanes vnto the forenamed John
sonne vnto the duke of Calabrye, and
hym by many meanes instaunted, to
leue the company of the lordes. But
all his offers auayled tyght nought.
Then the foresayde lordes thus ly-
enge befoze the cytie of Barps, in
the playne where standeth the mona-
stery of saynt Antony, Charles bro-
ther to the kyng caused. iiii. letters
to be deuysed. Wherof one he sent to
the byshoppes and spyrutual menne
within the cytie, the secounde to the
consulles or hed men, the thyrde to þe
scolers of the vniuersytie, and þe. iiii.
vnto the comynalte. Of whiche let-
ters the entente ensueth, that he, nor
none of hys compagne was comen
thither as an enemye to the cytie, or
to make warre agayne it or the co-
mon weale of the land, but for the in-
crease and augmentacion therof, to
the vttermoste of their powers. After
recepte of whiche letters, and the ma-
ter in them conteyned well understā-
ded and debated, certeyne oratours
for

for the sayde.iiii. parties were assigned, as thre for the spiritual menne thre for the consuls, thre for the buryers & thre for the cominaltie, whose names I ouer passe. The whiche with the bishop of Darby were sente vnto the barons, & after longe communication with them had, returned to the cite wth suche report as foloweth.

First the lordes woulde that the inhabytauntes of the cite should consider the condicions of the kyng, the whiche perely oppresseth his subiectes with taskes and other greuous seruages. Secundarely howe he despyseth the noble blode of his realme, and dyaweth to hym bylaines and men of no reputation, by whose counsailes onely, al the comen weale of the lande is ruled and guyded. Thirdely howe he ruleth his subiectes by force and wyll, withoute mynistracion of iustyce, and hym self in all counsailes and parlyamentes is iudge in all causes, and calleth his selfe counsailes and parlyamentes, moze for his singular weale, then for the comon weale of his realme. Fourthely howe he enhaunseth menne of lowe byrth vnto greate honoures, and causeth noble men to be obedient vnto them, entendinge to byrge the same ignoble men, for to be equal with the princes of the lande. Fyftely howe the lawes be delayed and bolstered by suche as stande in his fauour, where through at thys daye lawe is wyll and wyll is lawe, and no man almoste in any suertie of lyfe or goodes, in so much that dayly many bene banished and put to death for vnlesfull causes, and also to any noble man at this daye no power or come of honour belongeth, so that to wolde beastes in the forrestes apperteyneth moze lyberte

and suertie, then the moze partie of the kynges subiectes. Sixtely the great taskes and summes of money which dayly be leuyed of the comons ben not spent in the kynges honourable nedes and for the comon weale of the realme, but are spente nyselfe & ryottously, and byrbed out of the kynges cofers. For whiche enoyntees & mysgouernaunce with many other, the saide lordes were thither comen in defensyble araye, for the sauegarde of theyr owne persons, as to the hed and pryncypall cite of the realme, for to haue ayde and counsaile to resourme the foresayd euyles, notwithstandinge any harme vnto the kynges personne, or yet to remoue hym from his regally or kyngly maieste, but to enduce, hym & aduertise hym to that, that shuld be his honour and the weale of his realme, and to lyue in welth & honour as his noble progenitours haue lyued before hym. For the whiche causes and considerations with many other whiche I passe ouer, the saide lordes as the kynges trewe subiectes and frendes vnto the comen weale of the lande and of that cite, desyre to entre, there to refreshe theim and theyr people, and to paye truly for al thyng that they shoulde take, & withoute doyng harme or vyolence to any persone. All whiche requestes and maters of the lordes shewed vnto the inhabytauntes of the cite, by fauoure of some frendes that they there had, it was with the moze partie well accepted, and thought conueniente that the sayde nobles shuld be receiued into the cite. Howbeit that after longe debatinge of this mater, by meane of the fornamed etle of Donoyse, a sparynge of thys recepte of the lordes shuld be, tyll they had forther know-

Do u li lage

lage of the kynges pleasure. Which proupylon the sayd erle fande, for so much as he was secretly warned of the kynges thither commynge. And vpon this agreement the cytie rested. For suertie whereof, suche as were within the cytie of the kynges seruantes and frendes, rode daylye & nightly about the cite with a strong company in harneys, to se the people kepte in due order. Then vpon the daye folowynge came vnto Darys a capitaine of þ kynges named Moutalbone, and wth hym a good bend of men, the whiche shewed vnto the citezys that the kyng was commynge out of Roymandye w a great hoste of

The lordes beyng warned, enbatayled them in the foze sayde playne of saynte Antopne, to shewe the strength of theyr host vn to the cytie, or suche as were therein as theyr enemyes. Where they so lyenge, certayne knyghtes of the kynges partie, byuerse & sondre tymes brake out by sodeyne resys, and sayd myshed wth the lordes people, to the lytell hurte of bothe partyes.

In the whiche passetyme kyng Lewys commynge out of Roymandye, was receaued into the cytie. Where after his commynge he put in executiō. v. persons, named John Woxtor, Eustace & Arnolde Woxtor, John Coart, and Fraunceys Halle. The which persones were accused to him to be chiefe occasyoners of the legaciō made vnto the lordes. Of which sayde. v. persones, thre, as John Coart, Fraunceys Halle, and Arnolde woxtor, were messengers assygned in the sayde legacion for the consuls of Darys, and the fozenamed Eustace woxtor, was one of the thre assygned for the clergy.

The kyng thus beyng in pos-

session of the cite, many and dyuers assautes and saymynges betwene his knyghtes and the Lordes were made, but no notary batayle, for the kyng was ferre weaker. And ouer that in this tyme & season, the sayde lordes gat vnto them sondre castels and stronge holdes. Then at length meanes of a peace was offered by þ kyng. For concludynge wherof, for the kyng was admytted the erle of Mans, with certayne other persons. And for the barons, was assygned John sonne vnto the duke of Calabre, Lewys erle of saynte Poule and other, the whiche assembled and comoned together by sondre tymes. & dayes. In whiche season came vnto the kyng a newe strength of soudyours out of Roymandye, the whiche the kyng appoynted to kepe the suburbes of saynte Marcel. This treaty thus hangynge without conclusiō or ende takynge, vpon the. xiii. daye of October in þ. vii. yere of þ regne of thys Lewys, was proclaymed throught the cytie and also the hoste a daye of lenger treuce, so that then the lordes wthdrew theim vnto theyr stronge holdes and castels, holdynge wth theim many soudyours whiche fell to robbynge and other vnlesfull actes, to the greate daunger and hurte of the lande. And at suche seasons as the arbitroures met to synpse this great mater, among other thynges offered by the kyng, he graunted to geue vnto his brother Charles for his porcion, all Champayne with the lordshyppe of Brie, & cyties of Melde, Monstruel and Melbune therof to be excepted. And vnto Charles sone of the duke of Burgoyne, he was contented to geue so muche money as he had spent in that iournaye. But all was refused.

sed. And synallye for obstinacie of both parties, the daye of expiation of the truce approached, without hope of accord or concludynge. Wherfoze prouision for warre was made upon both parties was deuyd. Then beganne grudge and murmur betwene the ci- tezens and the kynges souldyours where through many of the comons heartes turned to the lordes, so that for feare, the surer and stronger watch- es were kepte to the kynges great charge. Shorthe after, tydynges were brought vnto the kyng that the castell of Gylons was of the lordes besyged, and that also the prefect of the kynges paleys in Roan, was taken of the cytezens and holden in pryson. And the daye folowynge came another messenger, shewynge vnto the kyng that the duke of Burbone was by the posterne receyued into the castell of Roan, and was lykelye to haue shortlye the rule of the cytie which came to effecte in shorte whyle after. When the lordes had gotten the castell and citie of Roan, whiche is hed cytie of Normandy as Paris is hed of Fraunce. Then in maner of derpyson they sente vnto the kyng, sayng that nother with Champayn nor with Bry, his brother Charles wold be contented, but scantely with the hole duchy of Normandy. Then kyng Lewis consyderynge the great auantage, which the lordes had of hym, both by strengthe and fauoure of his comons whiche daylye drew vnto them by sondry companies, in auoydynge of more daunger, concluded a peace. For perfourmance wherof, he graunted vnto Charles his brother the hole duchy of Normandy, takynge to him in exchaunge the countie of Berry. And to Charles sonne to the duke of Burgoyne, Peron, Ropa, &

a cytie or towne called in latyne Mō- dideris, & therewith he ioyned Gwynarpe and the erledome of Boloyn, which lordshippes the sayd kyng Lewis had befoze tymes boughte of duke Philip his father. To John of Calabze he graunted all suche summes of money as he demaunded, to wage with souldyours to aide his father againe Ferdinaunde then kyng of Arago. And to John duke of Burbon, the which as befoze is sayd had maryed his syster, he graunted all such dowar as to hym was promysed at the tyme of maryage, & all such pension as he was wont yerely to take, of the graunte of Charles last kyng within the realme of Fraunce. To the duke of Bystayne was restoyred the erledome of Montferard, with great summes of money which the kyng had receayued of the said countie. And to the erle of Dainpmarpe was restoyred all suche landes as befoze by acte of parlyament were forsaynted to the kyng. To the erle of saint Poule was restoyred the offyce of the constablerie of Fraunce, & to other men of name other notable thynges which I passe ouer. All whiche grauntes firmlye and fastely assured, proclamacions were made of this peace thozoughe the realme of Fraunce. And after this peace was thus concluded, the kyng and his lordes mette, to whome he shewed greatesemblaunte of kyndnesse, and specyallye vnto his brother. Wherin appered greatesympulacion, as here after shal appere. For this Lewis was of suche con- dytion, that what he might not ouercome with strength, he wolde wyne with dyspynulacion and trecherie. After whiche peace thus concluded, and the lordes departed, the kyng fested the eulers and consuls of the

The peace be-
tweene the kyng
and his lordes

Doo iii citie

cytie of Barps, and gaue vnto them due thanks, for the greates trowth & fydeltie whiche they bare towarde hym during that troubelous season and graunted vnto them suche thyn ges, as then they would aske for the weale of that citie.

IT was not longe after, that dissymulacion fell betwene Charles duke of Normandy, and John foresayde sonne vnto the duke of Calabrye & the erle of Damp martyne. Wherof a parte of þ cause was, that the sayde Charles after theyr thynkynge, had not so bounteously rewarded them as they had deserued. Of whiche dyscorde kynge Letwys was fayne, and in spedy manner rode vnto a towne called Argentyne, and there with the sayde John then beyng duke of Calabrye, by reason of his fathers death, helde wyth hym longe and great counsayll, to þ entente to dispossesse his brother of the duchy of Normandy. By reason of whiche dyscorde betwene the sayd two dukes, kynge Letwys as ayder of the duke of Calabrye, made warre in the parties of Normandy, and in processe wanne therein dyuers castelles and other strong holdes, and compelled his brother to holde the citie of Roan for his refuge. Where he so beyng, the kynge wanne daylye vpon hym, in so muche that dyuers townes and stronge holdes submytted the to his grace. Wherof beyng the cytezens of Roan, made an ambassade vnto the kynge, for purchase of grace for their duke and for them selfe. The which when the duke vnderstode, ferynge lest his owne cytezens wolde betraye hym, fled thens and so poded to Humeswe, and from thens to Cadomp. In whiche passe-

time þ kynge was with due honoure receaued into þ citie of Roan, where he remoued many from their offices and of his seruantes or such as lyked hym put in theyr places, & much of the ordynance and of abpymentes of warre belongynge to þ towne he sent vnto Barps, and the prouost of Roan named Gaupne Manuell he put to deth, & after his body was cast into the rpuer, and his hed sette vpon a pole, & dyuers of the colege with the deane of þ same place were put vnto deth. And all whych tyrannye by the kynge executed, and the towne put in suertie by strengthe of souldyours, he after spedde hym vnto Dyleaunce, where (as sayth myne antour) he puruayed an honozable ambassade, and sent it vnto Edward the .iiii. then kynge of Englande.

In the .ix. yere of þ regyne of this Lewis was so greates a mortalyte of men in fraunce, that in Barps dyed that yere ouer .xl. M. people. And in this yere began a grudge to growe betwene this Lewis and Philyppe duke of Burgoyne. But it was kept unkyndely during þ lyfe of þ duke, which dyed shortly after. To whom succeeded Charles his sonne before named, which in processe of tyme married dame Margarete, syster vnto kynge Edward þ .iiii. as after shalbe shewed. It was not longe after that this Lewis assembled a great hoste of people to make warre vpon Charles duke of Burgoyne. Of whiche people he had comytted the rule and charge vnto John Balna, whiche at that daye was prestre and cardynall, and he as a tēporall capytayne, toke of them the musters & other orders. Wherat the tēporall lordes dysdaryng, the erle of Dampmartyne sayd in the names of the vnto the kynge.

Dolte

Moste redoubted soueraigne lord, it hath pleased your highnesse to committe vnto a spirituall manne the charge of your puissaunt hoste, and he not feryng god, hath taken vpon hym the cure and charge of theim, to the effusion of chrysten mennes blode. Wherfore it may like your moste noble grace, to sende me a tēporall māne to visite his dioces, and to take the charge of his flocke, whiche is as sityng for me, as that other dede is for hym. At this sayng the kyng had goud game, but for all that he did as to hym semed best. Of this warre betwene the kyng and duke Charlis of Burgoyne I entēde not to speake, for the matter of it is somdele long and tedious to wyte. But in this while ꝑ Lewis was occupied in this warre the Byrtōs with an exceedyng power assailed ꝑ parties of France hauyng charles brother vnto Lewis to their leder, whiche to the duke of Byrtain was fled for ayde and socoure. Wherof heyring kyng Lewis, al suche host of souldoyers as he had purposed other wayes, he then ladde againe his brother. In which hoste (as after meth myne auctour), wer an hūdrēth thousand men, ouer such as had ꝑ gūdyng of ꝑ ordēance. Whē Charlis was aduertised of the greates strength of his brother, by politike meanes he sought for a peace. And after many delatōy communycacions and other delatōy meanes brought bp on bothe parties, lastly the kyng sent vnto his brother John Balna cardinall with other, to shewe vnto hym his mynde and pleasure. Wherof whē Charlis was sufficiētly instructed, he gaue for an answer, that if a perfecte concorde shoulde bee established betwene his brother & hym, that it shoulde bee auctorysed by the

whole consente and counsaill of the barony of the realme. With whiche answer the kyng being contentid at Turon in ꝑ moneth of Aprill and tē pere of his reigne, assēbled a great counsaill of his lordes spirituall and tempozall, in the whiche the demaundes of the said Charlis and offers of the kyng were shewed. And after the said counsaill had at lēgth reasoned the said demaundes & offers, it was finally determined, that the duchy of Normandy was so approued vnto ꝑ kyng of France and to his heyrēs kynges, that in nowyse it might bee disseuered frome the crowne. But to the entent that a perfect vnite might bee had bytwene the kyng and his brother, the kyng shall bee instantiated to geue perely vnto his said brother in recompensment of the said duchy twelke thousand pounce of Turon money, with also a certaine of lande to hym to bee assygned with ꝑ name of a duke, and ouer that the kyng to bee instantiated to geue vnto hym during his naturall life, for suche porcion as he claimed to bee his righte within the realme fourty thousande pounde of annuell rent perely to hym to bee payed of the foresaid Turon money. To all whiche grauntes the kyng was agreed, and ouer that to pardon the duke of Byrtain all offences now newly dooen again his maiesty, and cōtrary the duke his faith ꝑ and allegaunce, and all suche lordshippes as the kyng had wonne in Byrtaine, to restore vnto the duke & his assyngnes. All the whiche offers might not satisfie the counsaill of ꝑ Charlis, but clerely was sette aparte and refused.

After the foresaid offers were by Charlis refused, the kyng in speddy wyse vpon the refusal

saill sent a strong hoste into Brittain vnder the guydyng of a knight called Arnolde. And in the meane season the kyng visyting the boundours of his realme, putte in execucion dyuerse persones, suche as were accused to afforde agayne hym. Passyng whiche season, were it for the greuous whiche the foresaid hoste wroughte within the countree of Brytaine, or for other skill, the foresaid Charles and the duke of Brittain made newe meanes for a peace vnto the kyng, and offered to bee contentid, with that thei might stāde in his fauoure and grace, with suche proffers as the cost saill of the realme was befoze tyme agreed & condescended vpon. Wherunto a sophisticall answer was made by the kyng, so that the said Charles at that tyme myght not bee ascertained of peace or of warre. Howe bee it in the yere folowyng by instaunte labour of the foze named John Balna cardynall, & kyng agreed to geue vnto his brother Charles the duchy of Guyā onely. Wherewith he helde hym contented, and so ceased of his warre in Normandy.

It was not long after that this said John Balna forgetyng the maruolde greate benefites shewed to hym by the kyng, conspyred agayne hym, and deuised certain letters, the whiche he sent vnto Charles duke of Burgoine. Wherin was cōteined that he shoulde beware and haue hym self in good gayte, for the vnite and peace whiche lately was stablished betwene the kyng and Charles his brother, was principally to dete and warre vpon hym, and to byng hym in subieccō. Wherfoze in auoydyng that daunger, he aduised hym in all possible haste to assemble his knyghtes, that he were not taken vnpre-

ueighed. The whiche letters wher it by reason of the better or otherwise came to the kyng his presence. After receit of whiche letters, and knowledge of the content of theim, anone the kyng caused & said John Balna to bee taken, and to bee caste in strōg pylone. And that dooen he rode vnto Thuron, whither to hym came his brother Charles, and to hym did homage, and sware vnto hym feauty for the duchy of Guyan. And for to knitte & duke of Brittain moze fastly to hym, he sent to hym a sceptre with a chaine of golde, & whiche the duke refused to take, wherewith Lewes was greuously discontented. The cause of whiche refusall was, for the said duke of Brytaine had lately befoze that allyed hym with Charles duke of Burgoine, and had receiued his liuerpe of golded flees. And some after, whiche was the leueth yere of this Lewes, Carlota his wife was lighted of a sone, & after named Charles by Charles his brother, whiche after his father was kyng of Fraunce. And shortly after by meanes of Charles duke of Guyan, and of the duke of Burbon & other, the duke of Brytaine was recoūded vnto the kyng his fauour. And in the twelue yere of & reigne of this Lewes, died by force of venim the aboue named Charles duke of Guyan. But by whose meanes myne auctour myndeth not.

Then continuynge the warre betwene this Lewes and this duke of Burgoine, a marchaunt at Guyan named Itery, whiche after the death of the said duke of Guyan was fled vnto the duke of Burgoine, and wth hym a season remained, shewed vnto him many tedious tales of & kyng. Wherfoze the duke apperceiuyng that he owed to the freche kyng no fauour

sauioure, exhorted hym to porsen the said kyng. And if he might byng to effect his purpose, he should therfore haue fiftie thousande flozines of gold. A flozine is in value of sterlyng money thye thyllinges. After whiche promise and assuraunce thus made by the duke, this Jtery to byng his euill purpose about, made his seruaunte named John de Boldy of counsaill, and promised to hym great thynges if he would take vpon hym that acte. And after graunt had of the said John the said Jtery provided the porsen, and deliuered it vnto his said seruaunt. The whiche incontynently sped hym vnto Ambasie, where the frenche kyng then laye, where this John de Boldy beyng of familer acquaintance with one named Dopyn, to the entent to byng his entent the better to effecte, after assuraunce of othe to hym made to kepe his counsaill, shewed vnto hym all his minde and promised hym twenty thousand flozynes if he would helpe to byng to conclusion his purpose. The whiche Dopyn made vnto hym assured promise, and said that to byng this mater aboute, it was very expedient to haue of counsaill the kyng his master cooke named Colynet, whome he knewe well to wyne, for the greates fauour that either of theim owed vnto other. And after communicacion had with the said Colynet, the said porsen to hym was deliuered. Where with the said Colynet and Dopyn his felowe went at couenient tyme after vnto the kyng, and shewed to hym the compasse of all the mater. Where after anone the said John de Boldy was taken, and confessed the cypum staunce of all the whole treason, for the whiche at Paris he was after drawen hanged, and quartered. Soone vnto

this, frederike the thyrde of the name then emperoure of Almaigne, sente vnto this Lewes, willing and requirynge hym that he would not endeavour hym to any peace or accord with the duke of Burgoyne. For he entended in suche wyse to ayde his partier, the he trusted in god to byng the said duke to his due and conuenient obedience and subiection. But the kyng regarded nothyng the emperours request, but concluded attewes with the duke for a yere folowynge, by auctoritee of a greates counsaill or parliamēt. At the whiche the duke of Alencon was iudged to lose his hed, and his hereditaumes to bee forfeited vnto the kyng.

Then it foloweth in the story, or this foresaid trewes betwene the kyng and Charles the duke were fully expyed, the said Charles made warre vpon the said Lewes, and procured kyng Edward of Englande, whose sister he had married, to make also warre vnto hym. For expedicio wherof, the said kyng Edward landed at Calais shortly after, with a competent number of souldiours, as after in the fourten yere of the reigne of the said Edward the fourth it shalbe to you more clerely shewed, in conclusio of a peace and other thynges. After whiche peace betwene the said twoo kynges agreed, a unite and accord was also stablished betwene this Lewes and the duke of Burgoyne for .xx. yeres.

About the seuentien yere of this Lewes, the steward of Normandy named Lewes Wysey, the whiche had married the niece of kyng Lewes, beyng warned of the wanton rule of his wife, and of his aduoutre by one named John Louit, vpon a daye to proue his said wife, went on huntynge, and at his retourne feined hym very feint for labour, and went to his bedde. And the

He anon demyng hir husbād to bee at his naturall rest, yode streight vn to the chaūber of the said John Louy. Wherof the husbād beyng warned, with his swerde in hande sped hym vnto the chaūber and after þe doze broken vp by violence, and syn dyng theim in bedde oꝝ other suspectiouse maner, wth his said swerde slewe firste the said John, and after notwithstanding hir miserable and lamentable cryng, and askyng forgyuenesse vpon hir knees, he also slewe hir, and after fledde till he had made his peace with the kyng.

Long it were and also tediousse to folowe myne auctour, in declaryng of euery particuler dede dooen by this Lewes. Wherfoze to shorte this stoꝝ, trouthe it is þe after this Lewes had by long tyme exercised hym in warres, he lastly fell in a greuous sykennesse. The whiche continued and so encreased vpoⁿ hym, that he knewe well he shoulde not lōg endure. Wherfoze he disposed there after, and caused many dedes of almesse to bee dōe foꝝ hym. Among the whiche within saint John his churche the Baptiste within Paris, he fōūded certein pꝛees to syng foꝝ hym in perpetuitee. Foꝝ sustentacion of whome, he gaue of yere ly rente a thousand pound of Paris money. And so languishyng by þe space thꝛee yeres moze befoze he dyed passed his tyme with great tribulaciō. In the whiche pastyme orators were sent frome þe Flemynghes foꝝ to conclude a mariage betwene Charles his eldest soonne, and Margarete then doughter of Maximilia soonne of Frederyke the emperoure, whiche Maximilia befoze those daies had maryed Mary the doughter of Charles duke of Burgoyne. After whiche concludiō ended & finished,

the kyng gaue vnto the said orators twety thousand scutes of golde, whiche amōnteth to fīue thousand pound sterlyng money. And ouer þe gaue to theim in plate purposely made, to þe value of fīue hundred pound sterlyng. And in þe twety & fīue yere of þe reigne of þe said Lewes, þe fozenamed Margarete a chyldre of tender age, wth great and sumptuousse pōpe was brought vnto Paris. And from thēs she was coueighed vnto Ambasie, & there in the monete of July, compeled by marriage vnto the fozenamed Charles soonne vnto the kyng. After whiche solempnite finished, the said Lewes selyng his likenesse moze & moze encreasynge, vpoⁿ a leasō called his said soonne Charles befoze hym, & exhorted hym in this wyse as after foloweth. My mozte dearest chyldre, I feele & knowe well þe I shall not tary long in this cōuntee, foꝝ I am moze nēer myne ende thē thou knowest. Foꝝ I am so continuall greued wth sykennesse that no medicine maye oꝝ can releue me. And thou art he þe must rule this lāde after me. Wherfoze to þe it is specially behouefull & necessary, to haue trewe seruantes. Among many that I haue proued in my dayes, twoo there been, þe whiche I specially comēde vnto the, þe is to meane Dyerer Dammā, & John Doyacos. Whose seruices I haue in suche wise bled, þe by their meanes & counsaill I thynke my life hath been lōg pꝛeserued. And therfoze specially these two kepe nere aboute the, nothyng minishyng to theim of their offices oꝝ possessions, þe I befoze tymes to theim haue giuen. And after these twoo, take to the foꝝ thy counsaillours, Euyot & Bochage, & foꝝ to guyde þe warres, Philip Desquier, the whiche in feactes of warre as I haue well proued, hath passyng experience

The weyde
of hys
twoe bryng
his cōuntee.

The seventh parte.

experience. And other whiche I haue
auanced to offices in this realme,
lette them so remaine. And the com-
mons of the lande, the whiche by oc-
casion of warres I haue greuously
taxed and greatly weked & empou-
erished, socour & sauour to thy power.
To þ Burgonions me thought ever
goud to shewe fauoure, or eles me
thought it should haue solided to my
dishonour. So I thynke it shalbee
goud that thou so dooe. After þ kyng
Lewes had thus exhorted & counsa-
led his soonne, he then retourned vn
to Thuron.

Where for the mitigacion of this
painfull likenesse, whiche of myne
auctour is called in latine *Morbus*
Elephantie, he commaunded to bee
brought before hym all the cunnynge
maisters of musike in his realme
that by þ melodypous sounde of their
instrumentes, he might bee eased of
peine. But whē he had assembled of
þ beste an hundred & twenty in noun-
ber, a fewe sheperdes pipes were to
hym more solace, then all the other of
any parte of them, þ whiche he helde
still in his courte, & comaunded that
euery day þ said sheperdes should
playe a certain distaunce frome the
place where he laye. And ouer this he
sent for all ankers & other religious
menne that were famed for holy and
perfecte menne, & for them ordeined
places within Turō, þ by the meane
of their prayers he might be released
of his cōtinuall paines. And to haue
lenger cōtinuance of life, myne auc-
tour saith that this Lewes had so
greate a desire to haue length of life,
for so muche as he knewe well that þ
realme of Fraunce should be in great
trouble & veraciō shortly after. But
notwithstandyng all these prouisiōs
and ordinaunces, in many mo whi-

che long were to lyste, finally this
Lewes dyed, when he had been kyng
of Fraunce by þ terme of twenty & sixe
yeres of ther ypo, & after was buried
in þ churche of our Lady of Raines,
where before tyme he prouided his
sepulture, & in tyme of his likenesse
laye in it a certain season, while þ cer-
tein opylons where ouer hym laid.

Anglia.

Edwarde the. iiii.

Englande.
Edwarde
the. iiii.



Edwarde the. iiii.
of that name, &
soonne of Ry-
charde duke of
York as before
is touched, bee-
gane his reigne
ouer the realme

of Englande þ fourth daye of Mar-
che in the ende of þ yere of grace, to
reken after the churche of Englande
a thousand four hundred sixty, and þ
second yere of Lewes the twelwe then
kyng of Fraunce. The whiche Ed-
warde after his possession takyng at
Westminster & gettyng of the feeelde
at Coutō by York, was crowned &
anoynted for kyng at Westminster
for said, þ thyrty & nien day of Juny
as before is shewed in the ende of the
laste yere of Henry þ sixte. After whi-
che solēpnite finished, þ kyng in Au-
guste after rode to Caūtorbury, and
frome thens he rode to Sandwich,
& frome thens a lōg by the seas syde
to Southamptō & so into the march
of Wallis, & retourned by Bristowe,
where he was with all honour recei-
ued, and after visited sundry parties
of his realme. In whiche season of
soone after, þ tyme of Rycharde Lee
maye of Londō expired, and Hughe
wyche mercer was admytted for the
yere folowynge.

Anno

The. lxxv.



This yere beyng the latter ende of the firste yere of Edward the. iiii. & the begynnynge of this maies yere, & is to save & .iiii. daye of September, a parliament was beegonne at Westminster. And vpon the morowe folowynge dyed John duke of Northfolke, the whiche had been a speciall ayder of the kyng. And vpon Alholowe daye before passed, the kyng created Rycharde his yonger brother duke of Gloucestre, the lord Bowchier erle of Essex, and & lord Fawcōbridge erle of Kent, and vpon the. xii. daye of February, was & erle of Orenforde, wth the lord Aubrey his elder soonne, sir Thomas Codrham William Tirell, & other, brought vnto & towne of London. And vpon the. xx. daye of & said moneth, & said lord Aubrey was drawe frome Westminster vnto the towne hille, & there beheded. And vpon &. xxiii. daye of & same moneth, sir Thomas Codrham, William Tirell, & John Wogomory, were also there beheded. And vpon the fry daye next ensuyng, o^r &. xxvi. daye of the said moneth, & erle of Orenforde was ladde frome Westminster vpon his feete to the said place of, and there also beheded. Whose corps was after borne vnto & scire Augustines, & there buried within & quier for & tyme. And in the later ende of & moneth of July, was the castell of Huncwyke peld vnto the lord Hapynge by appoyntemente.

When kyng Edward was thus

stablished in this realme, greates sute and labour was made to hym for the repaiment of the foresaid. xviii. M. li. to hym and other deliuered by & staplers, as before in the. xxxviii. yere of Hery the. vi. to you I haue before shewed. Wherof was laborer, were it by the agreement of the said staplers o^r otherwise, one named Rycharde Heyzon a marchant, of p^regnant wit & of goud maner & speche. To whom at length was answered by the kyng his counsaill, & the said. xviii. M. li. wth muche moze, & whiche was covertly kept frome & kyng his knowlege belonged of right vnto & erle of Willympe, whiche at the tyme of deliuey of the said goudes, was high tresorer of Englande, & after for treason by hym dooen again the kyng, the said erles landes & goudes were forfeited vnto the kyng. Wherfore the kyng reteined the said. xviii. M. li. as parcell of his forsaiture, & would reterne as his owne. Upon whiche answer, this Heyzon sayng that of the kyng he might haue no remedy, and for so muche as muche of the said goud belonged to his charge, he the resorted vnto the staplers for cont^raction of the said money. But howe it was that there he f^onde no comfort he finally sued the maye of the staple and his compaignie, and putte thein vnto great veraciō & trouble. And in the ende fande suche fauour in the court of Rome, that he denouced all the marchautes staplers accursed. Howe bee it & soone after thei purchased an absolucion. And he in conclusiō after long beyng in Westminster

The seventh parte.

myghter as a seyntuary man, wyth-
oute recouery of hys costes or dutye,

444.
dyed there, being greatly endetted vn-
to many persones.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxi.

Thomas Cooke.

Wylliam Hampton.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xliii.

Anno. ii.

Barth Jamps.



And thys yere in the be-
gynning of the moneth
of Nouember, Margarete late Quene of En-
glande dyd come out of

France into Scotland
and from thens into Englande, with
a strength of frenche men and Scot-
tes. Wherfoze the kyng spedde hym
into the North with a stronge hoste.
Wherof hearing the quene, brake her
arape and fledde, and toke a caruple,
and therein entended to haue sayled
into France. But suche tempest fell
vpon the sea, that she was constrey-
ned to take a fishers boote, & by meane
therof landed at Barwyke, and so
dreyue her vnto the Scottys. The kyng
And shortly after her landynge, ty-
dings came vnto her, that her sayde
carupill was drowned, wthin the which
she had greates treasoure and other
rycheffe.

And the same daie vpon. lxi. C. of
the French menne were dyscuen vpon
lande nere vnto Bambourth. Where
they for so muche as they myghte not
haue awaye theyr shippes, they syed
them, & after for their sauegard tooke
an plande wthin Northumberland.
Where they were assailed of one cal-
led Haners with other in his compa-
ny, and of them slayne and taken pry-

soners as many as there were. When
the kyng was ware of þ quenes thus
anoydinge, he entended to haue folo-
wed, & to haue made warre vpon the
Scottes. But he was then dyspyed w-
the sykkenesse of pocks, that he was
foryced to leaue that iourneys. In the
weke of Chyrtlemasse folowynge, the
Scottes with a strong power perced
the lande, entendynge to haue resco-
wed certayne castelles in the North.
But they retourned shortly without
harmedoynge.

And shortly after the duke of So-
merset and syr Rauffe Percy, submyt-
ted them to the kynges grace.

When the kyng was cured and
retourned southwarde, the Scottes
about the tyme of lent entred agayn
into Englande, and layde a spege vn-
to Bambourthe castell and wanne it.
Wherfoze the kyng in the moneth of
August folowynge, rode agayne north-
warde with his power, and ouer that
btyapled certayne shippes in the west
countree, and manned them, and sent
theym thither to make warre vpon þ
sea coaste.

And in þ ende of this mapyes yere,
the duke of Somerset heying þ kyng
Henry was commynge into the lande
with a newe strength, departed secre-
lye, and went agayne to hym.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxi.

Mathewe Philpp Goldesmyth.

Robert Basset.

Thomas Pulchampe.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxi.

Anno. iii.

Opp. 4. Ind.

Edwarde the .iiii.



And in thys moneth of Maye, whiche was in the begynnyng of the .iii. pte of kyng Edward, the lord John of Mountagu hauing then the rule in the North parties, beinge warned of the commynge of Henry late kyng wth a greate power out of Scotlande, assembled the Northmen menne, and mette with him aboute Ergh, and there schympled with the Scottes, and at length won the victorie of hys enemyes, and chased Henry so nere, that he was from hym certayne of hys folowers trapped with blew velvet, and his byrket garnysched wth two crownes of golde and set wth pearle and ryche ston.

Henry the .vi.
chased by the
lord John
Mountagu.

He also toke at the sayde journey the duke of Somerset, the lord Hungerford, and the lord Roos. Which sayde duke was shortly after put to death at the sayde towne of Ergh, & the other .ii. lordes were soone after beheaded at new castell. And other which were after that fight taken in a wood fast by, as Sir Philip Wentworth, Sir Edmonde Fitz knyghtes, Blakke Jakus John Byce, & Thomas Hunt, were also put to death at Ergh foresaid or Widdelsham after some wyters and Sir Thomas Husey knyght was beheaded at Poike. And in the moneth of July next folowynge, the sayde lord Mountagu with ayde of his brother earle of Warwyke, won by strengthe the foresaid castell of Wamburgh wherein as one of the sayde capitaynes was taken with other, Sir Rauffe Grape, whiche shortly after at Poike was drawen hanged & quartered.

In suche passe tyme in moste secret maner vpon the .xv. daye of Maye kyng Edward spoused Elizabeth

late beinge the wyfe of Sir John Gyap knyghte, whiche before tyme was slayne at Towton or Poike felde. Whiche spousages were solempnyzed erely in the mornynge at a towne named Grafton nere vnto Stonynge-stratford. At whiche marriage was no persones presente, but the spouse, the spouselesse, the duchesse of Bedford her mother the preste, two gentyl women, & a pong man to helpe the preste synge. After whiche spousages ended, he wente to bed, & so tarped there vpon .iii. or .iiii. houres, and after departed and rode agayne to Stonynge-stratford, & came in maner as though he had ben on huntynge, and there wente to bedde agayne. And within a daye or two after, he sente vnto Grafton vnto the Lord Ryuers, father vnto his wyfe, Newynge to him, that he wolde come and lodge wth hym a certayne season, where he was receyued wth all honoure, and so tarped there by the space of foure dayes. In whiche season she nyghtly to his bed was brought in so secreete maner that almoste none but her mother was of counsaile. And so this marriage was a season kepte secreete after, tyll nedely it muste be dyscouered and dysclosed, by meane of other whiche were offered vnto the kyng, as the queene of Scottes and other. What obliquy can after of thys marriage, howe the kyng was enchanted by the duchesse of Bedford, and howe after he wold haue refused her id many other thinges concernynge thys mater, I here passe it ouer.

And this pte was kyng Henry taken in a woode in the North countree, by one named Cantlowe, & was presented vnto the kyng, and after sente vnto the towne, where he remained longe after.

Inno

The seventh parte.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxxv.

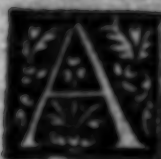
Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxxv. 446

John Tate.

Raiffe Josselene Dyaper.

Anno. lxxv.

John Stone.



At this yere was a newe
copie ordeyned by þe king
the whiche was named þe
Ropal, & was in value of
x. s. the halfe ropal. v. s. &
the fethering. ii. s. vi. d. And ouer þe
ordeined þe second copie of gold & na-
med it the angell, whiche was in va-
lue of. vi. s. viii. d. & the halfe angell,
iii. s. iii. d. He ordeyned also a newe
copie of grotes, halfe grotes, & pens
whiche were of lasse weyght then the
olde grote was by. viii. d. in an ounce
And then was syne golde auaunfed
from s. to. xis. an ounce, & other
baser golde after þe rate, And syluer
that befoze was at. viii. grotes & xii. d.

an ounce, was highted to. xl. d. an office
and. iii. s. ii. d.

And in this Mayes yere and be-
gynnyng of the. v. yere, that is to saye
the. xxvi. day of May that yere whyt-
sondaye, quene Elizabeth was crow-
ned at Westmynstre wth greate so-
lemnytie. At the which season at the
Towre, the nyghte befoze the corona-
cyon, amonge many knyghtes of the
bathe there made, was as of that co-
pange s^r Thomas Cooke, s^r Ma-
thewe Whyllyppe, s^r Raiffe Josse-
lyne, and s^r Henry Waup^r be-
pyng c^rezens of London
then, and there made
knyghtes.

Coronacyon
of quene Eliza-
beth.

C^rezens of
London made
knyghtes of þe
bathe.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxxv.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxxvi.

S^r Henry Waup^r.

Raiffe Wernep Mercer.

Anno. v.

Willpam Constantyne.



At this yere, that is to saye the
xi. day of þe moneth of februa-
ry, was Elizabeth p^rinces &
s^r childe of kyng Edward bozne at
westmynstre. Whose chystening was
done in the abbay wth most solemp-
nyte. And the more, because the kyng
was assured of hys phylpions that þe
quene was conceyued with a p^rince, &
specpally of one named mayster Do-
minph, by whose counceyl great prout
syon was ordeyned for chystening of
the saide p^rince. Wherfoze it was af-
ter tolde, þe this mayster Dominph to

thentent to haue great thanke and re-
ward of þe king, he stode in the. ii. cha-
ber where the Quene traunapled, þe
might be the first þe shuld byng ridin-
ges to the king of the birth of þe p^rince
And lastly when he hard þe childe cry,
he knocked or called secretly at þe cha-
ber doze, & strained what þe quene had.
To whom it was answered by one of
þe ladies, what so euer þe quenes grace
hath here within, suer it is þe a sole strā-
deth there wythout. And so confused
with this answer, he departed woud
seyng of the k^rynge for that tyme.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxxvi.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxxvii.

S^r John ponge Grocer.

John B^rowne.

Henry B^rowne.

John Stokton.

Anno. vi.

pp. ii. In

Ch. vi. yere.



At this yere and moneth of
fozenamed Henry Wyce
and for him was chosen
immediatly a herife for
this yere John Stokton. And in the
moneth of Juny folowynge, were cer-
taine actes and feates of warre done
in Smythfelde, betwene Sir Anthony
wydeulle called lord Scalys vpon
one partye, and the bastarde of Bur-
goyne chalengoure on that one par-
tye. Of which the lord Scalys wan
the honoure, for he sayd bastarde was
at the fyrste courtle rymynge, wyth a
sharpe speare ouerthrowen horse and
man. Whiche was by the rage of the
horse of the sayde bastarde, and not by
violence of the stroke of his enemye,
and by a pyke of iron standynge vpon
forepart of the ladel of the lord Scalys.
Wherwith the horse beinge blinde
of the bastarde was stryken into the
nosethyilles, and for payne thereof
mounted so hygh vpon the hynder
fete, that he fell backward. Vpon the
seconde day they met there agayne v-
pon fote, and faught with theyr axes

a fewe strokes. But when the kynge
sawe that the lord Scalys had auaun-
tage of the bastarde, as the poynte of
his axe in the bysoure of his enemies
helmet, and by force thereof was lyke-
ly to haue boyned hym ouer, the kynge
in haste, cried to suche as had the rule
of the felde, that they shoulde departe
them, and for more spede of the same,
caste downe a wardecor which he then
helde in his hande, and so were they de-
parted to the honour of he lord Scalys
for both dayes. Vpon the moztowe
folowynge and the other dayes, were cer-
taine actes of warre done betwene di-
uers gentylmen of this lande, and cer-
taine of the sayde bastardes seruants.
Of the whiche also the Englyshe
men wan the honoure. In this yere al-
so one named John Derby alderman
for so muche as he refused to carpe or
to pay for the carpage away of a dede
dogge lyenge at his doore, and for vn-
spytynge language whiche he gaue vnto
the maye, he was by a court of al-
dermen demed to a fyne of .l. ponde,
whiche he payde euery peny.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xlii. biii.

Humfrey Heylode.

Thomas Owlegraue.

Thomas Stalbroke.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xlii. biii.

Anno. biii.

Ch. vii. yere



Ad in this yere of the maye
re, and in the beginning of
the. viii. yere of this kynge
Edwarde, that is to meane
vpon Saturday next ensuyng the feast
of corpus christi, dame Margaret sp-
ister vnto the king, rode thorough Lo-
don towarde the seas syde to passe in-
to Flaundres, there to be maryed to
Charls duke of Burgoine before na-
med in the story of the. xi. Lewis king
of fraunce. After whose departure,
for Thomas Cook late maye, which

before was peched of treason by a ser-
uaunt of the lord Wenlockes called
Hawkins, and at the request of the sayd
lady Margaret vpon Isorette suffered
to go at large, then was arrested and sent
to the towre, and his goodes sealed by he
lord Wyuers then tresourer of En-
glande, and his wyfe putte out of his
house, and comytted to the charge of
the Wayer, in whose place she laye a
season after. And after the sayde sy-
Thomas had lyen a tyme in he towre,
he was brought vnto the Gynldhall,
vpon

and there arraigned of the sayde treason and quyt by sondrye enquestes, & after that committed vnto the countour in Wyndesore, and from thence to the kynges bench in Southwarke. where he laye within the sayde prison tyll his frendes dyd agree wyth hym John Brandon then keeper of the sayde prison, to take hym home to his place where to his greate charge he remained as prisoner long after. In which tyme and season he losse muche good for bothe his places in the countree & also in London were vnder the gubyrng of the sayd lordes Kynners seruantes, and of the seruantes of the John Fogge then vnderreisor, the which spoiled and destroyed muche thyng.

And ouer that muche of his is welles and plate with greate substance of the marchaundise, as clothe of syl-

kes and clothes of aras, weredyscouered by suche persones as he had be taken the sayde goodes to kepe, and came to the tresourers handes, whych to the sayde sir Thomas was a great enemye. And finally after many persecucyons and losses, was compelled as for a tyme sette vpon him for offence of mispryson, to paye, vnto the kyng viii. thousande pounde. And after he had thus agreed, & was at large for the kynges interest, he was thenne in newe trouble agayne the quene.

The whyche demaunded of hym as her tpyghte, for euery .xx. li. payde vnto the kyng by waie of tyme an. C. marke. For the whyche he had after longe sute and great charge, & in conclusion was fayne to agree, & to geue to her a great pleasure, besyde many good giftes he gaue to her counsell,

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxxiii.

Symonde Smyth.

William Taylour Socer.

William Harpot.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxx.

Anno. viii.



His yere also, and. xxi. day of November, a seruante of the dukes of Excester named Rycharde Wretts, after his iugement was drawen thro-

rough the cyter vnto the towe hyll, and there parted in two pelys, that is the hedde from the bodye. And vpon the daye folowynge, two persones beinge named the one Woyms, and that other Alford, were drawen westward to tyborne, and there when they shuld haue bene hanged, they chariotes were whimed and so persecuted.

And about this season or soone after, was the earle of Orenfoide, which before tyme was taken by a surmyse in ielousye of treason a wayted for and

after deliqueted. In the latter ende of this Mayes yere, and. ix. yere of the kyng, the marchauntes Easterlynges were condemned vnto the marchauntes auenturers Englyshe, after longe and sumptuous expences in the lawe & before the kynges counsell, in. xiii. M. v. C. and. xx. pounde. Wherof the paymente was kepte secrete from wyters.

In this yere the dyspynuled fauoure, whiche betwene the kyng and the earle of Warwike had syl contynued tyme the maryage of the quene, beganne to appere, in so muche that the Earle wythdrew hym from the kyng, and confedered vnto hym the duke of Clarence that before had married his daughter.

Opp. iii. Wher

Rebellion.

Wherupon the commons of the North beganne to rebell, and chafe theym a capytayne, whome they had named Robyn of Ryddysdale. The whiche dyd many feates, and lastely bare hym so wysely, that he & his company were pardoned of the kyng. In

the which rumour & stryng, the lord Rivers, and sir John his sonne, & before had married & old duchesse of Northfolke, lyenge at a place by Charynge Crosse called the Wyke, were taken by Lyncolneshire men & brought vnto Northampton, & there beheaded.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxx.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxx.

Rycharde Gardyne.

Rycharde Lee Gyocet.

Anno. lx.

Robert Doye.

The .lx. year.

T

his yere soone after Alhallowen tyme, proclamacions were made throughe the cite of London, that the kyng had pardoned the Northemen of their riot, & aswell for the death of the lord Rivers, as all displeasures by theym before that tyme done. And soone vpon this, a new stryng began in Lyncolneshire wherof the occasioner was the lord wellys, as the same then went. For whome the kyng sent by fatte meanes, promising him to go safe & come safe as it was sayde. But truth it is after his coming to the kyng had he before such promise or not, he was shortly after beheaded.

Then in february folowynge, by the mediation of lordes a treatye of vnyte and concord was laboured betwene the kyng and his brother and the earle of Warwyke. For whiche cause the saide earle came thence vnto London. And shortly after came the sayde Duke, as vpon Whysundaye folowynge. And vpon the tuesdaye folowynge, the kyng and the sayde Duke mette at Barnardes castle, where the duchesse of York theyr mother thence laye. In the whiche passe tyme, the Earle of Warwyke was retourned vnto Warwyke, and there gathered to hym suche strength

of menne as he myghte make, as it was reported.

And in Lyncolneshire, sir Robert wellys soone vnto the lord wellys before put to death, in this whyle had also assembled a great bende of men, and purposed to geue the kyng a felde. Of all whiche tydings whenn the kyng was ascertayned, he with his sayd brother the duke sped hym northwarde, and in that whyle sente to the sayd sir Robert wellys, willing him to send home his people, and come to hym, and he shoulde haue his grace. But that other answered that by lyke promise his father was dysceyued, and that shoulde be his example. But in conclusyon whenn the kyng with his power dyd come nere vnto hym he toke suche feare that he fledde, and soone after was taken, and with hym sir Thomas Wynmoke knyghte and other, the whiche were shortly after put to death.

In this season was the Duke of Clarence departed from the kyng, and was gone vnto the earle of Warwyke to take his parte. To whome the kyng in lykewyse sent, that they shoulde come to his presence without feare, where vnto they made a fained answer. And thence consyderynge theyr lacke of power agayne the kyng, departed.

Rebellion
in Lyncolnes-
hire.

departed and wente to the see syde, & so sayled into fraunce, and requyred the .x. Leuys, than kynge of that regyon, that he wolde ayde and assyste them to restore kynge Hentye to hys ryghtfull enherytaunce. Wherof the sayde Leuys beinge glad, graunted vnto them theyr requeste, and helde them there, whyle they wyth the cosyn sayle of queene Margarete prouided for theyr returne into Englande.

Whan the sayde lordes were thus departed the lande, the kynge commaunded them to be proclaimed as rebelles and traitours throughout hys realme. And in the Easter weeke folowynge, by Gessrey Gate and one named Claphan, whych intended at Southampton to haue taken Myppynge and to haue sayled to the sayd lordes, were there taken by the lordes Halwarde and sente vnto warde, the whiche sayde Claphan was beheaded soone after, and the sayde Gessrey Gate founde such frendeshyppe, that lastly he escaped & was deliuered, so that he wente after to sayntwarpe.

Than was the lord of S. Johns arrested. But at the instance of the archbishop of Canturbury, he wente a season at large vnder surety, and was finally commytted to the towre. In whiche passe tyme, the Earle of Wrenford gat ouer vnto the forsayd lordes. Thus enduringe this trouble, a flying was made in the North parties by the lord Jyt Hugh, wherfore the kynge spak hym thether ward. But so soone as the sayde lordes knew of the kynges commynge, anone he left his people and fledde into Scotlande. And the kynge whiche thane was commyn to porke, rested hym a season there and there aboute.

In the moneth of September and .x.

years of the kynge, the forsayd duke of Clarence accompanied wyth the Earles of Warwyke of Denbroke, and of Wrenford and manye other gentlemen, landed at Wermouth in Devonshyre, and theye made theye proclamacions in the name of kynge Hentye the .vi. and so dreyw farther into the lande. Wherof herynge the commons of that country & other, dreyw vnto them by greate companyes.

Than the Kentish men beganne to were wynde, and assembled them in great companyes, and so came vnto the out parties of the cyte of London, Radclyffe, saynt Katherynes, & other places, and robbed and spoiled the Flemynge and all the bere houses there as they came.

Than the forsayd lordes holdynge on theye tourneye, dreyw towarde the kynge beinge in the North as a bouers lated. Wherof he beyng warned, and hauynge wyth hym as than but small strengthe whereof some to hym were not very trusty, he wyth a secret company tooke the nexte waye towarde the washe in Lyncolneshyre and there passed ouer wyth greate daunger, not without losse of dyuers of his company, and so passed the countres into Flaunders, & styned not till he came to Charles hys brother than duke of Burgoyne, with whom he rested a season. Whan the queene whiche than was in the towre harde of the kynges anoydynge, anone she departed from thence and yode vnto Westminster, and ther regystred herselfe for a sayntwarpe woman, and in lykelihode had many of kynge Edwardes frendes.

And than about the begynnynge of October, by Gessrey Gate that tyme had holden the sayde sentwarpe and other wyth hym went vnto

Influencon in Kent.

The flyinge of Edwards the int. into Flaunders

Robertson in the North.

to the pylones aboute London, and al such as they hadde fauoure vnto, tooke them out and set them at lyberte. And than thypmen and other euell dyspylled persons as than dyete to the sayde Gessety Gate, robbed agayn the berehouses, and set some of theym in fyre, and after resoited vnto the gates of the cytee, and there wold haue entred by force. But the cithyngs wythstode them wyth such force, that they were compelled to depart thence.

Vpon the. xii. daye of October, the towre was geuen by by appoyntment and kynge Henry was taken frome the lodgyng where he befoze laye, & was than lodged in the kynges lodgyng wythin the sayd towre. In the whiche passetyme the duke and the foze sayde lordes dyete nere vnto the cytee.

And vpon saterdaye than next followinge, the sayde duke accompanied wyth the Eyles of Warwyke and of Shrowesburge and the lord Staley, roade vnto the towre, and there wyth all honoure and reuerence set out kynge Henry, and conueyed him to Bowles, and ther lodged hym in þe byshoppes palays, and so was than admytted taken for kynge throughe all the lande.

¶ Readoptio Henrici. bi



Henry the. vi. of that name befoze by Edward the. iiii. put downe, was agayn restoyed to þe crowne of England, the

daye of Octo

ber, in the yere of grace, a thousand

iiii. hundred. lxx. and the. x. yere of Edward the. iiii. and the. xii. yere of the twelfth Lewys than kynge of Fraunce.

In whose begynnyng of readoptyon, the Caste of Worcester whiche for his cruelties was called the bochper of Englande, was taken and put in sterghte pylson. And vpon the. xii. daye of October, was the sayde erle areygned at Westminster in þe white hall, and ther endited of treason, and vpon the monday folowynge adiudged that he shulde go from the same place vnto the towre hyll, and there to haue his heade smytten of.

But as he was commynge frome the sayde place of iudgemente towardes his execucion, the people preyed so inoportunatlye vpon hym for to see and beholde him, that the wythes wet sayn to retorne into the flete and there to bozowe garoll for hym for that nyghte.

And vpon the morowe after at after noone beyng Haryte Lukes daye and. xliii. daye of October, he was ledde to the towre hyll, where he tooke his deathe full pacientlye, whose corpe was after borne wyth the heade vnto the blacke freers, and there honourablye buried in a chapel standynge in the bodye of the church whiche he befoze time hadde founded.

And than was daylye a waytyng vpon the sea syde, for the landyng of quene Margarete and pryncce Edward her sonne, and also prouysyon made for the defence of landyng of kynge Edward and his compaignye.

Anno domini. MCCCC. lxx

John Crosby

John Stokton Mercer

John Warde

Anno domini. MCCCC. lxxi

Anno Henrici. vi. primo

Anno Edwardi. iiii. x



At this yere, which was in the ende of the .x. yere of kyng Edward, and begynnyng of the reuolucion of kyng Henry, that is to meane

the thirde daye of Nouember, quene Elizabeth beyng as befoze is sayde in Westmynstre sanctwar, was lighted of a fayre pryncesse. And wythin the sayde place the sayde chyld wythout pompe was after chrystened, whose godfathers were the abbot & prioure of the sayde place, & the lady Scrope godmother. And the .xxvii. day of the sayde moneth folowynge, beganne a parlyamente, and from thence pzooged to Daules, where it continued tyll Chyristmas. In the parlyamente sy Thomas Cooke befoze troubled as I haue shewed in the .vii. yere of kyng Edward, put in a byl into the common house, to be restozed of the lord Ryuers landes and other occasions of hys trouble, to the sum of .xxii. thousande marke. Of the whych he had good comfote to haue bene allowed of kyng Henry, yf he had pzoferred, and the rather, for that that he was of the common house, and there wyth a maner of greute boldnesse in speche and wel spoken, and synghuler ly mytted and well reasoned.

Then durynge thys parlyamente kyng Edward was pzoclammed by surpet of the crowne, and the duke of Glouceter hys yonger brother traytoure, and both attaynted by authoritye of the sayde parlyamente.

And vpon the .xxiii. daye of Februarye, came the duke of Exeter to London. And the .xxvii. daye of the sayde moneth, rode the earle of Warwyke throughe the cytee toward Douer for to haue receaued quene Mar

garete, but he was dysapoynted. For the wynde was to her so contrary, that she laye at the sea syde taryng for a conueniente wynde, frome Nouember tyll .x. pzi. And so the sayde erle after he had longe taryed for her at the sea syde, was fayne to return wythout speede of hys purpose.

Thus durynge thys queys season, the Maye fearynge the retourn of kyng Edward fayne hym speke, and so kept hys house a great season. All whych tyme sy Thomas Cooke which than was admytted to hys former roome, was set in hys place, and allowed for hys deputye, whiche turned after to hys great trouble and sorrowe.

Then synally in the begynnyng of the moneth of .x. pzi, kyng Edward landed in the North at a place called Raynspoyte wyth a smal company of Flemmynges and other, so that all hys companye exceded not the number of a thousande persones and so dzew hym towardes yorke, makinge hys proclamacions as he wet in the name of king Henry, and shewed to the people, that he came for none entente but onely to clayme hys inheritance, the dukedome of yorke, where the cyteyns helde hym out tyl they knewe hys entent. And whan he had shewed vnto theym as he befoze had done vnto other, and confyrmid it by an othe, he was there receaued & was refreshed for a certayne of tyme and so departed, and helde hys waye towardes London, and passed by fauour and fayre wordes the daunger of the Lord Marques Mountagu, whiche in that coastes laye than in a waye for hym purposelye to stoppe hys waye, and had people double of number than kyng Edward had of fyghtynge men. Whan kyng Edward

The retourn
landynge of
king Edward

ward

ward was thus passed the sayd Marquis, & sawe hys strength was greatly amended, & that also daily the people dyewe to hym, he than made proclamacions in hys owne name as kynge of Englande, and so helde on hys iourney tyll he came vnto London In whiche passetyme, that is to meane vpon Merethursdape, the archbishoppe of poike beyng than at London wth kynge Henry, to the entent to moue the peoples hertes to warde the kynge, rode about the towne wth hym, and shewed hym to the people, the whiche rather wthdyete mens hertes than otherwyle. And in this season also spake Thomas Cooke befoze named aduoyded the lande, intending to haue sayled into Fraunce But he was taken of a shipp of flanders, and hys sonne and heye wth hym, and so set there in prison many dayes, and lastlye was deliuered vnto kynge Edward.

Then vpon Merethursdape at after none, kynge Edward was receaued into the cite, and so roode to Poules, and there offered at a roode of the north doze, and that done rode incontynently into the bishoppes palaces, where he sawe kynge Henry almost alone. For all such lordes and other as in the moynynge were about hym, whan they harde of kynge Edwardes commynge, anone they fled and euery man was fayne and glad to saue they selfe. Then kynge Edward lodged hym, where kynge Henry laye, and put hym vnder safe keeping, and so rested hym there tyll Easter euen. Vpon the whiche euen, hearing of hys brothers commynge & the other lordes wth hym wth a stronge hoste vnto saynte Albones, sped thither warde, and laye by nyght at Barnet. In whiche season Duke

of Clarence contrarie hys othe and promise made vnto the French kynge refused the tye of kynge Henry, and sodaynelye wth strengthe that they had, rode straight vnto hys brother kynge Edward, wherwth the other lordes were somedeale abashed. The whiche northwardynge, the sayd lordes, by the speyall comforte and exhortacion of the Erie of Orenford as it was sayde, helde on theyr iourney towards Barnet, the sayd Earle of Orenford beinge in the vaward and so came to a plaine without Barnet, and there pyghte theyr felde.

Barnet feld

The vpon the moynye beinge Easter dape and the. xiiii. dape of Apryll beyng earelye both hostes met. Wher vpon that one partye were two kynges present, as Henry the. vi. which kynge Edward had brought thither wth hym, and kynge Edward the. iiii. And vpon that other partye was the duke of Exeter the Loyde Marquis Mountagu, and the two Carles of Warwyke and Orenford, wth manye other men of name.

There the sayde earle of Orenford and his company quyte them so manfully, that he bare ouer that parte of the felde, whiche he sette vpon, so shortly that tydynge came to London, that kynge Edward had losse the felde. And if hys men had kepte theyr ataye & not fallen to theyrselfe lykelye it hadde bene as it was after tolde, that the victorie had fallen to that party. But after long and cruel fyghte, to conclusyon kynge Edward obtayned the vpper hand, and slew of hys enemies the Marques Mountagu and the Earle of Warwyke his brother wth manye other. And vpon the kynges partye was slayne the Loyde Barnes. And of the commons vpon both parties were slayne vpon

pon. c. hundred and mo.

Of the mykes and other impedym-
mentes whiche fell vpon the lordes
part by reason of the incantacions
wrought by frere Bungey as þe same
then wente, me lyft not to wyte. But
truche it is, that after thys byctoype
thus wonne by kynge Edward, he
sente the dead corpes of the sayd Mar-
quis and erle of Warwyk vnto Dou-
les church, where they laye two day-
es after naked, in two cofyns that e-
uerie man myghte beholde and see
them. And the same after none came
kynge Edward agayne vnto Lon-
don, & offered at þe doore of the north
dooze at Doules, and after rode vnto
Westmynstre and there lodged hym
And soone after that the kynge was
thus passed throughe the cytee, was
kynge Henry broughte rydyinge in
a longe gowne of blewe velvet, and
so conueyed throughe Chert vnto
Westmynstre, and frome thence vn-
to the Towre where he remayned as
prysoner all hys lyues tyme after.

The repossession of Ed-
ward the. iii.



Edward the. iii. be-
foresaid began a-
gayne hys domy-
nion ouer the real-
me of Englande, þe
xiii. daie of Apryl
in the begynnyng
of the yere of oure lord. M. cccc. lxxi
& the. xii. yere of Lewys the french
kynge, and repossessed all thynges as
he befoze had done. And when þe sayd
two corpes had lien in Doules openly
from the sondaye vnto the tursdaye,
they were had from thence and buryed
wher the kynge wold assigne them
The kynge then beyng in autho-

ryty, made prouysyon for the defence
of the landyng of quene Margaret
& hys sonne, the whiche al thys whyle
laye at the sea syde carryng the wynd
and so lastly landed at , and
came wyth a strengthe of frenchmen
and other, as farre wthin the lande
as to a byllage in called Tewkes-
burge. Wher the kynge met with her
and her distressed, & chased her com-
pany & slewe many of theym. In the
whiche battaile she was taken, and
hys Edward her sonne, & so brought
vnto the kynge. But after the kynge
had questyoned wyth the sayd hys Ed-
ward, and he had answered vnto him
contrary hys pleasure, he than strake
him wyth hys gauntlet vpon þe face
After which stroke so by him receiued
he was by the kynges seruantes in
contynently slayne vpon the. iiii. day
of the moneth of Maye.

When kynge Edward had thus
subduyed his enemyes, anone he sent
quene Margaret vnto London, wher
she rested a season, and fynallye she
was sent home into her country. And
the goodes of hys Thomas Cooke
were agayne ceasyd, & hys wyfe put
forth, and commaunded to be kept at
the mayes. Vpon þe. xiii. day of May
folowynge, the bastarde of faucon-
byrdge, that vnto hym had gathered
a routouse and euell dysposed compa-
nye of mynemen and other, wyth also
the assystence of the commons bothe
of Essex and of Kente, came in greate
multytude vnto the cytee of London

And after that the sayde company
was denyed passage throughe the cyte
they set vpon dyuers parties thereof,
as Bishoppes gate, Algate, London
byrdge, and alonge the waters syde,
and shot gunnes and arrowes, and sy-
red the gates wyth cruell malyce, as
Bishoppes gate & Algate, & faughte
so

The takinge
of quene Mar-
garet and Ed-
ward her son

my the. vi.
mytted to
Cowe.

my the. vi.
mytted to
Cowe.

the .xii. yere.



Ad in this yere the erle of Orenfozde, whiche son & leason of Barnefelde had holden sapte Bigbilles mount, was by an appoyntment taken thence, and shortly after sente vnto the castell of Guynes. Where he remained prysoner vntill the laste yere

of Rycharde the thyrde, whiche was vpon twelue yeres. In all whiche season my Lady his wyfe myghte neuer be suffered for to come vnto hym, nor had any thyng to lye vpon, but as the people of theyre chartres wold egeue to her, or what she myghte gette with her nedle or other suche conning as she excused.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxxii.

John B. Jone.

William Hampton fyhemonger.

Thomas Bledlow.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxxiii.

Anno. xlii.

the .xlii. yere



At this yere vpon the fyrte dape of October, beganne a parliament at Westminster. By authoritie whereof an apde was graunted vnto the kynge, towarde the greate charge of his warres, the whiche was leuped of mennes landes, as well of Lozdes as of other.

Thys maye aboute all other, for.

rected soze bandes and strumpettes, and caused them to be ladde aboute the towne with rate hodes vpon their hodes dyuerse and many, and spared none for mede nor for fauoure & were by the lawe attaynted, notwithstanding that he might haue taken fourtye thousande of redy money vnto hym offered, for to haue spared one frome that iudgemente.

The punishment of Dawdes by wearing of rags hodes.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxxiii.

William Stocher.

John Tate Mercer.

Robert Blylodon.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxxiiii.

Anno. xlii.

the .xlii. yere



Ad in thys yere was the Duke of Exeter founden deade in the sea, betwene Dover and Calais, but howe he was drowned, the certayntee is not knowen.

In this mayes yere also was one William Oldhall condemned vnto a draper of London called Christofer Colpns. For the whiche condemnation he remained as prysoner in Ludgate. Where vpon a seasō as he wente at large with a keper, he brake frome hym, and so escaped, and after was taken and broughte agayne vnto the sayde prysone.

But that notwithstandinge the sayde Christofer sued the Sheryffes, and caused them to spende greate money in defending of his accyon, and synally were sapne by waie of compymple to geue vnto hym an hundred markes for his dyspente of. lxxx. li. and odde.

And in thys yere was one John Soos a toller dyente at & Towze hyl for herespe, the whiche befoze dyner was deliuered to Robert Blylodon one of the Sheryffes to putte in execution that same after noone. Wherefoze he like a charitable man had him home.

a toller.

home to his house, and there exhorted hym that he shulde die a chysten man and renge his false errours. But that othel after longe exhortacyon heard, requyred the Merysse that he myghte haue meate, for he sayde that he was soze hungered. Then the Merysse commaunded hym meate, wherof he toke

as he had apyled nothyng, and sayde vnto suche as vpo stande about hym I ate now a good and competent dinner, for I shall passe a lytle sharpe shouer of I gooe vnto souper. And when he had well dyned, he requyred that he myghte mostely be ledde vnto his execution.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxxiii.

Commende Shaa.

Robert D'rop Diaper.

Thomas Helle.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxxb.

Anno. xliii.

The. xliii. yere



En this yere the kyng entending to make a voyage ouer see into Fraunce called befoze him his lordes bothe spirytual and tempoꝝ all, to knowe their good myn- des, what of theȝ frez wylles they wolde ayde and departe with hym towarde the saide voyage. And after he had knowen theȝ good dysposicion to hym warde, he then sent for þe mayre of London and his byethren the aldermen, and theȝm seuerally examyned and exhorted to ayde and assyſte hym towarde the sayde iourney. Of which the mayre for his parte graunted. xxx. ponde, and of the aldermen some. xx. marke, & the lesse. x. ponde.

And that done he sente for all the trustye comoners within the sayde cytee, and them exhorted in lyke maner. Whyche for the moze partye graunted to hym the wages of halfe a man for a yere. The whiche amounted to iii. li. x. s. iiii. d. And after þe he rode aboute the moze parte of the lande, & vsed the people in suche fayze maner that he crysed thereby notable sumes of money. The whiche waye of the leuyng of this money was after named a beneuolence.

Then the kyng thus hauping this

greate substance of goodes, made putuepaunce for the sayde iourney.

And vpon the. iiii. day of July following, in the. xv. yere of his reygne, rode with a goodly company thorough the cytee towarde the sea syde, and so spedde hym vnto Calais, and frome thence into Fraunce. Wherof heryng Lewis the frenche kyng, assembled his people in greate number, and so spedde hym towarde the kyng. But when bothe hostes were mette, within shortly space, suche offers of a peace were profered by the frenche kyng, that synallye bothe pynces agreed vpon a peace to be had for the teame of bothe theȝ lyues, and a yere after, as some wyrters haue. For the perpetuall substance of whiche sayde peace, both pynces after met vpon the daye of the Decollacyon of sayncte John the baptyste, on the. xxix. daye of Auguste, at a place named in frenche, Wynyah, and the. iiii. daye of Nouember, as assymeth Sagwynus.

But that can not be so, for kyng Edward was receyued againe into London after his retourne out of Fraunce the. xxviii. daye of September.

At this place was a ryuer, vpon the which a byrge was made suche wise that bothe pynces thereon myghte mete

The. iiii. yere of Edward the. iiii. king of Fraunce.

A peace concluded between Edward the. iiii. king of England and Lewis the. x. king of France.

beneuolence

mete wyth suche compaigne as eyther
for theym had appoynted. There also
was ordeyned a place wiche a partici-
on betwene both prynces, that nother
of theym myght entre vnto other,
but made wyth a lowpe, that eyther
myghte so other and take eyther other
by the hande.

Where at the day lymyted, eyther
mette wyth other hostes standynge a
certayne distaunce frome the ryuer
syde in conueniente araye. Then the
sayde kynges there after salutacon
due made, eyther to other had longe
comunycacion. In conclusyon wher-
of, as sayth Bagwyn, a peace was co-
fyrmed betwene both realmes for. vii.
yeres. For the perfourmance wherof
as assieneth the sayde authoure, the
frenche kyng gaue vnto kyng Ed-
ward incoyntently. lxxv. M. crownes
of golde, and perely after durynge the
sayde. vii. yeres. l. M. crownes. And
so he receyued in hande accomptynge
euery crowne at. iiii. s. x. d. ii. and
perely after. x. M. li. whiche sayde. xv
M. pounde the sayde frenche kyng
boiowed of his cytezens of Paris.

After this treuce and peace thus
concluded betwene these two pryn-
ces, anon after they sonderynge, pro-
clamacions were made thereof tho-
roughly bothe hostes, and comaunde-
ment geuen to the capitaynes, that they
shuld prouide for they retorne home
warde. And soone vpon the frenche
kyng sente vnto the Dukes of Cla-

rence and of Gloucester with other lo-
des suche as were in kyng Edwardes
saouour, grace and costlyous gif-
tes. Of the nyse and wanton dysgled
apparell that kyng Lewis wore v-
pon hym at that tyme of his metynge
I myghte make a longe chertall.

But for it shoulde sounde moze to dis-
honoure of suche a noble man, that
was appareled moze liker a mynstrel
then a pryncce royall, therfore I passe
it ouer. For all be it that he was so
newefangyll in his clothyng, yet had
he many vertues. Wherof largesse
was one, as it appered by sondry gif-
tes, whiche he gaue vnto sondry stra-
gers, whiche in his Roye somdeale I
haue touched. And also his bountye
appered by a gyfte that he gaue vn-
to the lord Hastings then lord Ches-
terlayne, as. xxiij. dosen of bollys,
wherof halfe were gyll and halfe whete
whiche weped vpon. xviij. nobles eu-
ery cuppe of moze.

A gyfte of the
frenche kyng
geuen to the
lord Hastings.

Then to retourne vnto kyng Ed-
ward, truth it is that after the continua-
cion of the foresayde peace, kyng Ed-
ward returned to Calys and there ship-
ped, and so sped hym that vpon the. xxviii.
daye of September folowynge, he was
with great tryumphe receyued of the
maye and cytezens of London at Blak-
eth, and with all honoure by them con-
ueyed thorough the cytee vnto West-
mynster, the maye and aldermen be-
ynge cladde in scarlet, and the com-
oners to that number of. v. C. in murrey.

The retourn
of Edward
the. iiii. into
England, and
howe he was
receyued of
the cytezens of
London.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxxv.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxxvi.

Hugh Spce,
Robert Basset Salter,
Robert Colwiche.

Anno. xv.

This yere this maye did harp
correccon vpon bakens for
makynge of lyghte bynde, in so much

that he sette dyuerse vpon the pyllo-
ry. Amonge the whiche in the moneth
of John Mondue baker
Mqq. ii. was

was there punished. And in the month of one named William Hubbard was also there hanged for

like offence. And a woman named Agnes Depnt was also there punished for selling false mingred butter.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxxvi.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxxvii.

Richard Rawson.

Raiffe Johelene Daper.

Anno. xli.

William Hozne.

The xli. year



At this year the Maye hauing a greete mynde to haue the walles of the cytee repayed, by a consente of the bench, and of the comen councel, caused þe Hoze selde to be serched, and there prouided for byrche and lyme. As fyrst caused the earthe to be dygged and tempoied, and then sette menne on werke to moolde, and thenne sente into the Weste countree, and there purueyed wood for to byenne it. And that done sente into Kente, and there purueyed chalke, that mostely was broughte into the sayde Hoze selde. And right there in a kyll whiche he in that season had prouided, was byente & made lyme of a greete fortheraunce of that woike.

The maye then beyng purueyed of byrk and also of lyme, þe whiche

was byente wythin the sayde Hoze, caused by consente of a comen councyle to be graunted, that in euery parische churche euery Wendaye, euery parishon shulde paye towarde the charge. v. d. And for an ensample vnto other seylshippes, he caused his owne company to make as much of the walle as stretcheth frome the churche of Alhalowen withyn þe sayde walle vnto Bysshoppes gate.

Whiche ptesident caused other woishippfull seylshippes to make the other partye, as nowe appereth newe made, and the mozte part therof done in this yere by his procurynge and calling vpon of hym. Whiche was wonderfull that so muche shoulde be sped in one yere, consyderynge the purueysance of the stufte, whiche had bene sufficiente for some man to haue purueyed for in an hole yere.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxxviii.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxxviii.

Henry Colet.

Humfrey Heyfords Goldsmith.

Anno. xlii.

John Stocker.

The xlii. year

The Duke of Clarence and seconde brother vnto the kyngs drawned in þe towne.



At this yere þis to meane the. xlii. daie of February, the Duke of Clarence and seconde brother vnto the kyng thenne beyng prysoner in the Towre, was secretly putte vnto deathe, and drowned in a barell of malmesey wythin the sayde towre. And this Maye this yere pursued

also the reparacion of the wallys, but not so diligentely as bys ptesidentour dyd, wherfore it was not sped as it myghte haue bene. And also he was a lyke and seable man, and had not so sharpe and quicke mynde as that other had. And one other cause was whiche ensueth of a generalyte, that for the moze partye one Maye will

The seuenth parte.

461

will not synpse that thyng whiche
that other begynneth. For then they
thinke, be the dede neuer so good and
profytable, that the honoure thereof
shalbe ascribed to the begynner, and

not to the synpser. Whiche lacke of
charite & desire of vain glorie, causeth
many good actes and dedes to dye &
growe out of mynde, to the great de-
scape of the comon weale of þe cytee.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxxviii.

Robert Hardynge.

Rycharde Gardynere Mercer.

Robert Byfelde.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxxix.

Anno. xviii.



And in this yere also was
a grete mortalyte and
death in London and ma-
ny other parties of this
realme, the which dyd be-
gynne in the latter ende of Septem-
ber in the pcedynge yere, and con-
tynued in this yere vntyll the begyn-
nyng of November. In the whiche
passe tyme dyed innumerable people
in the sayde cytee, and manye places
elles where.

In this yere also the Maye be-
ynge at Paules knepyng in hys de-
uocyon at saynt Erkenwaldes Wyne

Robert Byfelde one of the Mayes
vnadvisedly kneled downe nyghe vn-
to the Maye. Wherof the Maye af-
ter reasoned with him, and layde it to
his charge. But that other bring som
deale rude for lacke of counyng an-
swered the Maye stubberly, and
wold not be acknowen of his offence.
Wherfore the Maye shewed his be-
hauoure both of woide and dede vn-
to the bench, by authoite wherof af-
ter the mater had ben there at lengthe
debated, the sayde Robert was fyned
at .l. ponde, to be payde towarde the
reparacyon of the conduytes.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxxx.

Thomas Ilam:

Barthelmewe Jamys Draper.

John Warde.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxxx.

Anno. xix.



And in this yere also one
called Robert Depnys, for
that that he presumed for
to mary an Wyphan wyth-
oute the lycence of the maye and al-
dermenne, was for that offence de-
med for to paye vnto the chaumber
as a fyne twentye ponde.

And in this yere and monethe of
were foure felowes
hanged at the Colye hylle, and in-
conyngently theyr bodies with þe gib-
bet byente vnto althes. Whiche exe-
cucyo was, for þe they robbed a church
and entreated the Sacramente of the
auter irreuerentlye.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxxx.

Wylliam Danyell.

John Bytton.

Wylliam Bacon.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxxx.

Anno. xx.

Anno. iii. This



Thus yere kinge Edwarde requyred greate summes of money vnto hym to be lende of þe cytyzens of London. To whome after dyuers assemblies, they graunted to lende vnto him fyue thousande marke. for the leuynge wherof, a man was cho-

sen of euery ward, that is to meane xx. bmen. The which. xx. persons assembled in the Gynlohalle, scyþd all the cytee ouer wth two persons of euery parþhe to them assygned, which sayde. b. thousande marke was repayed in the yere folowynge,

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxxi.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxxii.

Wylliam Hatpat Dyaper.

Robert Cate.

Wylliam wykynge.

Anno. xxi.

Rycharde Chawp.



Thus yere in the moneth of februarye oꝛ ende of Januarye, dyed Wylliam wykynge one of the Merittes, for whome was immediatly chosen Rycharde Chawp. And in the moneth of July nexte folowynge, the kyng rode on huntynge into the forest of Waltham, where he commaunded the Maye with a certayne of his byethzen to come, and for to geue attendaunce vpon hym wth certayne comeners of the cytee. Where when they were comen, the kyng caused the game to be broughte befoze theym, so that they sawe course after course, & many a dere bothe redde and falowe to be slayne befoze theym.

And after that goodlye dysporte was passed, the kyng commanded his offycers to brynge the Maye and his company vnto a pleasaunt lodge made all of grene bowes and garnished wth tables and other thynges necessarye, where they were sette at dyner, and serued wth manye deynye dysshes, and of dyuerse wynges good plente, as whyte, redde, and clarette, and caused them to be sette vnto dyner, oꝛ that he were serued of his owne, and ouer that caused the Loyde

chaumberlayne wth other lordes brynge to him assygned, for to chere the saide Maye and his companye sondry tymes whyle they were at dyner, and as they departed gave vnto them of benyson greate plente.

And in the moneth of Auguste folowynge, the kyng of his great bountee sente vnto the Maye and her sisters Alderwomennes wyues, two hartes and syxe buckes, wth a tonne of wyne to dynke with the sayde benyson. The whiche benyson and wyne was had vnto the Dyapers halle, vnto the whyche place at a daye assygned, the Maye despyed all the Alderwomenne and they wyues wth sondry comeners, and there þ benyson wth many other good dysshes were eaten and the sayde wyne merelye dyonken.

The cause of the whych bountee thus shewed by the kyng, was as mooste menne dyd take it, for that the Maye was a marchaunt of wonderouse aduentures into manye and sondry countreys. By the reason wherof, the kyng had yere of hym notable summes of money for his customes, besyde other pleasures that he had shewed vnto the kyng befoze tymes.

Anno

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxxiii

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxxiii

Wylliam Whyte,

Edmund Shaa Goldsmith

Anno. xlii

John Mathewe.

the death of

the death of



Thys peare, þ is to
meane of þ maye
and begynnyng
of the. xlii. yere
of the kyng, at
Westmynstre by
pon the. xi. daie of

April dyed þ noble pryncce Edward
the. iiii. late kyng of Englad. Whose
corps was after conueyed wth due
solempnyte vnto Wyndesore and there
honourably buried, wher he had reyg-
ned to rechen hys begynnyng out of
the land wth all other tyme ful. xlii.
yeres, and as much as from the. iiii.
daie of March vnto the. ix. daie of A-
prill, leuynge after hym. ii. sonnes, þ
is to meane pryncce Edward, hys el-
dest sonne, & Rycharde duke of York
& iii. daughters, as Elizabeth þ after
was quene, Cecile, & Katherine.

Edward the. v. 22

Edward the. v.



Edward the. v.
of that name &
sonne vnto Ed-
ward the. iiii. be-
gan hys reygne
ouer the realme
of England the
xi. daie of April

in the begynnyng of the peare of our
Lorde God, M. cccc. lxxiii. and the
xlii. peare of the. xi. Lewys thanne
kyng fraunce.

Anone as kyng Edward the. iiii.
was deade, grudge and vnkyndenes
began to take place betwene the kyn-
ges & the quenes allys. For the Lord
Marquys of Dorset brother vnto þ

quene & other of hys affinite, had the
the rule and keepinge of thys yonge
kyng, whiche at that tyme of his fa-
thers death was of þ age of a. xi. yere
or there aboute, and so beyng in his
gurdynge in the Marche of Wales
conueyed hym toward London, and
there to make prynces for hys co-
ronaciō and for other necessary thin-
ges for hys weale. But the duke of
Glouceter brother vnto Edward the
iiii. entendynge otherwys as after
shall apere, wth a competente nom-
ber of gentylme of the North al clad
in blacke, met wth the kyng at Wy-
ndesore, and there after dys-
sembled countenance made bytwe-
ne hym and the forsayde Marquys
dyscharged hym of the rule of þ kyng
and tooke vpon hym the rule, and so
from thence beyng accompanied by
the duke of Buckyngham, broughte
the kyng wth all honoure toward
London. Wherof beyng quene E-
lizabeth mother vnto the kyng, se-
tyng the sequele of thys busynesse,
went or toke sent waye wth in West-
mynstre wth her yonger sonne Ry-
chard the duke of York. And the kyng
drawyng nere vnto the cytee, vpon þ
iiii. daie of Maye, was of the maye
& his citeizins met at Harnesey parke
þ maye and his brethren beyng clo-
thed in scarlet, & the citeizins in byolet
to þ number of. v. C. hoyses, and thā
from thence conueyed vnto the cytee
the kyng beyng in blew velvet, and
al hys lordes & seruauntes in blacke
cloth, and so after conueyed vnto the
byshoppes palayes of London and
there lodged and shortly after þ sayd
duke

Howe þ duke
of Glouceter
toke vpon hym
the keepyng of
þ yong kyng
Edward the
v.

Charynge of
the quene into
Seyntmary.

The receyving
of the kyng by
the citeizins of
London

duke

duke of Gloucestre inuegiled so the archbishoppe of Caunterburie named Bouchper, that he wente wyth hym to þe quene Elizabeth, and there made such assured promyse to þe sayd quene, that she vpon the sayde archebishops promise deliuered vnto the her pongest sonne duke of yorke. And than the sayde duke caused the kyng to be remoued vnto þe towre, and hys brother wyth hym. But the quene for all sayde promyses to her made, kept her and her daughter wythin the forsayde sayntwarre, and the duke lodged hym selfe in Crosbies place in Wythoppes gate strete.

The kyng & hys pongest sonne were lodged in the towre.

The duke of Gloucestre admitted pryete cours.

Than prouysyon was made for þe kynges coronacyon. In whiche pascetyme, the duke being admitted for lord protector, caused syr Antony Wydeuple called lord Scalps and brother vnto the quene a vertuous knyght wyth the lord Rycharde the quenes sonne, syr Rycharde Hawte, & syr Thomas Wagban knyghtes, to be beheded at Domsfreit, more of will than of iustyce. Than the lord protector in furtherynge of hys purpose & euil intente, sente for the more partye of the nobles of the land, and behaued hym so couertlye in all hys matters, that few vnderstode his wicked purpose. And so daylye keepynge and holopnge the lordes in counsaill and felynge the pryete mysdes, sodaynly vpon the xiii. day of Junye being wythin the towre in the counsaill chamber wyth diuers lordes wyth hym, as the duke of Buckyngham, the Earle of Derby, the lord Hastings than lord Chamberlayne, wyth dyuers other, an oute crye by hys assent of treason was made in the vtter chamber. Where wyth the sayde lord protector beynge warned, roose vp and yode hym selfe to the chamber doore,

and there receaued in suche persons as he hadde before apoynted to execute hys malycious purpose. The whiche contynently set hande vpon þe fornamed lord Chamberlayne and other. In whiche sprynge the Earle of Derby was hurte in the face and kepte a while vnder the holde. Than by commaundement of the sayd lord protector, the sayde lord Chamberlayne, in all hast was ledde in the court of playne where the chapel of the towre standeth, and there wythout iudgemente of long tyme of confession or repentaunce, vpon the end of a longe and greute tymber logge whiche there lay wyth other for the repayynge of the sayde towre, caused hys hed to be smytten of, and all for he knew wel that he would not assent vnto hys wicked intente. Whose body wyth the hed was after caried vnto Wyndesore, and there buried by the tombe of kyng Edward.

Crantz.

After whiche cruelte thus doone he shortlye after set in sure keepynge suche persons as he suspected to be a gayne him. Whereof the bishops of yorke and of Elze were. as it is sayd. And þe erle of Derby for fere of hys sonne the lord Strange, lest he shuld haue altered Cheshyre & Lancasther agayne hi, was set at large.

Than began the longe court dissimulation, which of the lord protector had bene so craftely shadowed to byke out at large, in so much that vpon the sondaye folowinge at Doulles crosse, hym selfe wyth the duke of Buckyngham and other lordes bringe presente, by the mouth of doctour Rasse Shaa in the tyme of hys sermon, was there shewed openly that þe chyldren of kyng Edward the. iiii. were not lpygymate, nor tpyghtful enherytours of the crowne, wyth many

dyse

disclaunders words in the prefer-
rynge of the title of the sayd lord pro-
tectoure and in dysanullynge of the
other, to the greute abusyon of al the
audyence, excepte suche as favoured
the matter whych were fewe in num-
ber, of the trouth of playnes myghte
haue bene shewed.

Of the whych declaracyon as the
same wente after, the sayde doctoure
shaa take such repentance that he
lpyed in lytle prosperite after. And þe
more he was wooyed of, that he wold
take vpon hym such busynesse con-
sydering that he was so famous a ma-
bothe of hys learninge and also of na-
turall wytt. Than vpon the twise-
daye folowynge, an assemble of the co-
mons of the cyte was apoynted at þe
Gyldehall. Whete beyng present
the duke of Bukyngham wth other
lordes sente doowne frome the sayde
lord protectoure, and ther in the pre-
sence of the maye and comynalte, re-
hered the ryghte and title þe lord
protectour had to be preferred befoze
hys of hys brother kynge Ed-
ward, to the ryghte of the crowne of
Englande. The whych processe was
in so eloquent wyse shewed and bette-
red without any impedymment of spyt-
ting or other countenance, and that
of a longe whyle, with so sugred wo-
des of exhortacyon and accordeynge
sentence, that many a wyse man that
daye maruailed and commended hym
for the good orderyng of hys wordes
but not for the intente and purpose þe
whych thereupon ensued

Vpon the tyn daye than nexte ensu-
ynge beyng the .xx. daye of Juny, the
sayde protectoure takynge then vpon
hym as kynge and gouernour of the
realme, wente wth great pompe vnto
Westmynstre and there tooke pos-
selsyon of the same. Whete, he beyng

sette in the greute hall in the sea ro-
all, wth the duke of Norfolk befoze
called the lord Hawarde vpon the
ryghte hande, and the duke of Sou-
thfolke vpon the lefte hande, after the
rope oth there taken, called befoze
hym the iudges of the lawe, geuynge
vnto theym a longe exhortacyon and
strenght commauement, for the
ministryng of hys lawes, and to ex-
ecute iustyce, and that wythout delay
After whych processe takinge, and
other ceremonies there done, he was
conueyed vnto the kynges palayse
wthyn Westmynstre & there lodged

In whych passetyme, the prynces
of ryghte kynge Edward the .v.
wth hys brother the duke of York
were put vnder sure keepynge wth-
in the towre, in suche wyse that they
neuer came abrode after.

And thus ended the reygne of Ed-
ward the .v. when he had boyned the
name of a kynge by the space of two
monethes and a .xl. dayes. And vpon
the frydaye beyng the .xiii. daye of
Juny was the sayde lord protectour
proclaymed throughe the cyte byng
of England, by the name of Rycharde
the thyrde.

Then soone after for fere of the
quenes bloude and other whych he
had in telousye, he sent for a strength
of men out of the North. The whych
came shortly to London a lytle be-
foze hys coronacyon, and mustred in
the Hoze feeldes well vpon .iiii. M.
men in theyr best iaches and rusty sa-
lletes, wth a fewe in whyte harnesse
not burnyshe to the sale, and shortly
after hys coronacyon were countermau-
ded home wth suscepyent rewardes
for theyr traualle.

In whiche forsayde passetyme, þe
Marques of Dorset brother vnto the
quene Elizabeth that befoze was fled
escaped

The supple-
ment of Edward
the .v. and of þe
duke of York
hys brother

The lord pro-
tectoure prou-
claymed king

the pro-
tectoure to be
hym as
king.

escaped many wonderful dangers
bothe aboute London, Ely and other
places, whereof, to wyte the maner
and cȳcumstaunce wold aske a long
and greate leysoure.

20. 22. Rycharde the.iii. 20. 22.

Rycharde the
iii.



Rycharde the.iii.
of þe name, sonne
to Rycharde late
duke of yorke, &
yongest brother
unto Edward
the.iii. late king
beganne hys do-
minion ouer the

realme of Englande the.ii. daie of
Mydsomer moneth, in the yere of
oure Lorde God. M. cccc. lxxxiii. and
the. xxi. yere of the. xi. Leps than
kyng of frunce. Of whom tedious
it is to me to wyte the tragedious
hystory, except that I remember that
good it is to wyte and put in remem-
braunce the punishmentes of syn-
ners, to the ende that other maye ex-
chewe to fall into lyke daunger.

Then it foloweth, anone as thys
manne had taken vpon hym, he spyll

in greate hatred of the moze partye
of þe nobles of hys realme, in so much
that suche as befoze loued and pray-
sed hym, and woulde haue touchyd
lyfe and good wth hym if he hadde
remayned hyl as p̄tectoure, now
murmured and grudged agaynst
hym, in suche wyse that fewe or none
faoured hys partye, excepte it were
for drede or for greate gyftes that
they receaued of hym. By the meane
whereof he wanne dyuers to folowe
hys mynde, the whiche after dyscre-
ued hym.

And after hys coronacyon solemp-
nyzed, whych was holden at West-
minster the xij. daie of Julye, wher
also the same daie was crowned Ma-
rie Anne hys wyfe, he then in shorte
p̄cesse folowynge rode Northward
to pacyfy that countrey, and to re-
dresse certayne spottes ther lately
doone.

In the passetyme of the whiche
iourneys, he beyng at York created
hys legytimate sonne prync of
Wales, and ouer that made hys ba-
starde sonne capayne of Calapes,
whiche encreased moze grudge to him
warde as after shall apere.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxxxiii.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxxxiii.

Thomas Royle
William Wyllinson Habardasher
William Partyn

Anno. ii.

The. ii. yere



And in thys yere
the forsaide gruge
encreasynge, and
the moze for as
much as the com-
mon fame wente
that kyng Ry-
charde hadde wthyn the Towre put
vnto secreete death the two sonnes of
hys brother Edward the fourth.

for the whiche and other causes had
wthyn the breste of the Duke of
Buckyngham, the sayde duke in se-
crete maner conspyred agayne hym
and allyed hym wth dyuers gentel-
menne, to the ende to bynne hys pur-
pose aboute.

But howe it was hys entente
was espyed, and so wethered vnto the
kyng, and the kyng in all the haste
sente

sente for to take hym, he then beyng
smallly accompanied at his manour
of Bykenoke in the Parke of Wale
les. Wherof the sayde duke beyng
ware, in all the haste he fledde frome
hys sayde manour of Bykenoke
vnto the house of a seruante of hys
owne called Banaster, and that in so
secret maner, that fewe or none of his
household seruantes knewe where
he was become.

In the whiche passetyme, kynge
Rychard thynkynge that the duke
woulde haue assembled hys people,
and so to haue geuen to hym battay
le, gathered to hym greute strengthe
and after tooke hys iourneye West
warde, to haue mette with the sayde
duke. But whan the kynge was en
fourmed that he was fledde, a none
he made proclamacions, that who so
euer that myghte take the sayd duke
shulde haue for a rewarde a thousand
pounde of monye, and the value of
an hundred pounde in lande by pete
to hym and to hys heires for euer
more.

Wherof, hearynge the foresayd
Banaster, were it for meede of the say
ed rewarde, or for feare of losynge of
hys lyfe and goodes, dyscouered the
duke vnto the sheryffe of the shyre,
and caused hym to be taken, and so
broughte vnto Walsburpe, where
the kynge than laye.

And albet, that that the sayde
duke made inportunelabour to haue
come to the kynges ptesence, yet that

notwithstandynge he was beheaded
vpon the .viij. daye of the moneth of
wythout speche or syghte of the
kynge. Than all such gentelmen as
had apointed to mete with the sayd
duke, were so dysmayed, & they knewe
not what to do, but they that myghte
flee & land & some toke sanctuary pla
ces as they myghte wryme vnto them
But the kynge, to the end to let them
of theyr purpose, sente to the sea coa
stes and stopped theyr waye in that
he myght. And wth a certayn strength
rode vnto Grete, where aboute that
season was taken by Thomas We
lenger knyghte, and two gentylmen
that one beyng named Thomas Ra,
and that other

The whiche .iii.
persons were shortly after beheaded.
And soone after in Kent were taken
by George Browne knyghte, & Ro
berte Clusorde esquier and brought
vnto Newe of London. And vpon
the .viij. daye of October, the sayde
by George and Roberte were drawe
frome Westmynster vnto the towre
hyll & there beheaded. And the same
day wer .iiii. persons lately yomen of
the crowne with king Edward & .iiii.
drawen out of Southwarke throug
h & citee vnto tibourne, & there hanged
And whan the hig had sped hys iour
ney in & West countre, he hasted him
toward London. Wherof the mayr &
the citeyins hauing knowlege, made
prouysion to receaue him & vpo that
made purueyance for hoise with dy
olet clothyng and other necessaries

The duke of
Buckingham
beheaded

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxxviii

Thomas Hylle

Rychard Chester.

Thomas Wyltains

Raffe Altraye

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxxv

Anno. lxx.

In the begynnynge of thys map
res peate, and seconde yeare of

kynge Rychard, that is to meane v
pon the .xi. daye of the moneth of No
uember,

uember, the maye and hys byethen
bernge cladde in scarlet, and the cyte
yns to the number of. v. C. or mo in
ypolet, met the kyng beyond kynges-
ton in Southerye, and so broughte
hym throughe the cyte to the warde
tobe besyde the blacke fyers, where
for that tyme he was lodged. And in
short tyme after was sy Robert Clif
forde knyghte taken aboute South
ampton, and from thence sente vnto
the towne of London, and after rep-
ned and iudged at Westminster, and
fro thence vpon the. day of

drawen vnto the towne hyl. But whē
he came foze agayn saynt Martyns
le Gjaunte, by the helpe of a fyer
whyche was his confessor, and one
of theym that was nexte aboute hym
hys cojdes were so loused or cut, that
he put hym in deuour to haue entred
the sayntuarie. And yf helpe it hadde
ben that he shuld haue so doome, had
not bene the quick helpe and rescous
of the myppes and theyr offycers.

The whych constrayned hym to ly
downe vpon the hardyl, and netwpe
bande hym, and so haryed hym to the
sayd place of execucyō, where he was
deupded in two peces, and after hys
bodye wpyth the heade was conueyed
to the friers Augustynes, & there bu-
ryed befoze saynte Katheryns aulter.

And in the moneth of februarye so
lowyng, dyed Rycharde Chester one
of the myppes. For whom was imme-
dyately shofe Raffe Altrap, to conty-
nue for that yeare colowynge. Kyng
Rycharde than ledyng hys lyfe in
greate agony and doubte, trustyng
fewe of such as were about hym, spa-
red not to spende the greate treasour
whych befoze kyng Edward the. iii.
had gathered, in geyng of greate
and large gyften. By meane wherof,
he alonlye wasted not the great trea-

soure of hys sayde byother, but also
he was in suche daunger, that he bo-
rowed many notable summes of mo-
ny of the ryche men of this realme, &
specyally of the cyteyns of London
wherof the lest summe was. xi. pounde
for suretye wherof, he deliuered to
them good and suffyciente pledges.

In þ which passetyme many and
sondyre gentylmen and dyuers myp-
fes, departed ouer þ sea into Fraunce,
and there alped them wpyth that ver-
tuons pynce Hentye sonne vnto the
Carle of Rychemonde, dyscended ly-
nallye from Hentye the. iii. latelpe
kyng of this realme, and couenaun-
ted wpyth hym, that yf he wolde marry
Elyzabeth the eldest daughter of Ed-
ward the. iii. they wolde wpyth gods
helpe strength hym to be kyng of En-
lande and apde hym in suche maner,
that he and also she were or myghte
be possesed of theyr ryghtfull inhe-
rytaunce. Amonge the whych gentil-
men, sy James Blounte than keper
of the Castell of Gynnes was one,
whyche wpyth him conueyed the carle
of Drenfozde, that longe tyme had
bene pypsoner within the sayde castel.

Vpon whych a grement thus con-
cluded, prouysion by them and theyr
frendes was made, to sayle into En-
glande. And after all thynges prepa-
red, the sayde pynce wpyth a small
compane of Englyshe, French, and
Wytons, tooke wyppynge in Fraun-
ce of Wytrapne, and so lastely landed
in the port of Wylboutne in the mo-
neth of Auguste. For whose defence
of landyng kyng Rycharde for so
muche as he feared hym lytle, made
but small prouysion.

Whyle these forsayde gentylmen
of dyuers coastes of Englande esca-
ped as aboute is sayde ouer the sea, of
that assynge was one named wypply
an

The last
of Henry
the. iii.
of Wyton
was by
the. iii.

am Colingbourne take. And after he had ben holden a season in pyson, he with an other gentelman named Turbyple were brought into Seydehalle, and there accpned. But Turbyple was repyed to pyson, and that other was calde for sondye treasons, and for a tyme, whiche was layde vnto hys charge that he shulde make in detilpon of the kyng and his counceill as foloweth.

20 The catte, the ratte, and louel our dogge.

Ruleth all englande vnder a hogge.



He whiche was mente that Catfpy, Ratclpfe and the loyde Louell, ruled the lande vnder the kyng whiche bare the whyte boze for his conysaunce. For the whiche and other vpon the daye of he was putte to the moste cruell deathe at the towre hpyll, where for hym were made a newe payer of galowes, vpon the whiche after he had hangd a wyte season, he was cutte downe beyng a lyue, and his bowells rpyed oute of his belly & caste into the fyre there by hym, and lyued tyl the boucher putte his hande into the bulke of his bodye in so muche that he sayde in the same instant O lord Iesu yet moze trouble and so dyed to the greate compassyon of muche people.

Then to retourne vnto the noble Prynce and his company, whenne he was comyn vnto the land, he inconyently knelled downe vpon the earth and with meke countenaunce & pure deuocyon began this psalme, *Lauda me deus, & discerne causam meam, &c.* The whiche when he had synphed to the ende, and kysed the grounde mekely, and reuerently made the sygne of the

Crosse vpon hym, he commaunded suche as were aboute hym, boldely in the name of god and saint George to set forwarde.

When the landyng of this prynce was blowen aboute the lande, many was the man that dyed vnto hym, aswell suche as were in sondye synnaries as other that were abyode, so that his strength encreased wytly. Then the kyng gathered his power in all haste, and spedde hym in suche wyse, that vpon the .xxii. daye of August and begynnyng of the thyrde yere of his regne, he mette with the saide prynce nere vnto a byllage in Lynceter wyche named Bosworth, nere vnto Lynceter. Where betwene them was foughten a warpe batayle, & warper shulde haue bene, yf the kynges partie had ben fast to hym. But many toward the seide refused hym, and yode vnto the other partye. And some stode houting a farre of, tyl they sawe to the whiche partie the victory fyl.

In conclusyon kyng Rycharde was slayne, and vpon hys partye the duke of Noythfolke befoze tyme named loyde Hawarde, wyth Brakynghury Lyeutenaunte of the towre, and many other. And amonge other was there taken on lyue the earle of Surrey sonne vnto the forsayde duke of Noythfolke, & sente vnto the towre of London, where he remayned as prysoner longe tyme after.

Then was the corpe of Rycharde late kyng spoled, & naked as he was boyme caste beynde a man, and so carryed vntreuerently ouerthrowe the hoise backe vnto the styers at Lynceter. Where after a season that he had lyen that all men myght beholde him he was there with lyuell reuerence buryed. And thus wyth myserye ended this prynce, whiche ruled moste what

Rex. i. by

Bosworth
filds.

Ryng Ry-
charde slayne

The ende of
Rycharde the
thyrde.

by tygoure and tyrannye, when he in greate trouble & agony had reigned viij. vsurped by the space of .ii. yeres. ii. monethes and .ii. dayes.

And thenne was the noble pynce Henty admitted for kynge, and so proclaimed kynge by the name of Henry the. viij. The whiche sped him shortly to London, so that vpon the xxviii. daye of the sayde moneth of Auguste, he was by the maye and the cytezens met in good arraye, as the maye and aldermen in scarlet, and the cytezens in byolet, at harnesey parke, & frome thence conueyed thorough the cytee vnto the bishop of Londons palays, and there for that tyme lodged.

And vpon the. xi. daye of October nexte folowynge, then beyng the sweetyng spekenesse of newe begon, dyed the sayd Thomas Hylle then of London maye. And for hym was chosen as Maye, for Wyllyam Stokker knyght and Chapen, whiche dyed also of the sayde spekenesse shortly after. And then John Warde Grocer was chosen Maye, whiche so continued tyll the feast of Sunonde and Jude folowynge.

France.

France.

Charles the. ix.

Charles the. ix.



Carolus or Charles the ninth or eighth of that name, sonne vnto the eleuenth Lewis, began his reygne ouer the realme of Fraunce the fourth daye of September, in the yere of oure Lorde god a thousande, foure hundredeth. lxxiiiij. and the seconde yere of Rycharde the thyrde at that tyme kynge of Englande.

This Charles was noble of wytte and meke of condycion, & whiche his

father wolde not set to learning of letters in his yowthe, lest that by suche studie he shoulde at his lawfull age haue thereby the more refrayned hym from knyghtly and martiall actes. But when he came to mannes estate, he then was righte soye, and wolde saye full often vnto his familyers, & pynce is greatlye blemysht, when he lacketh conynge of lecture. He was also in his yowthe so weak & impotent, & he lacked naturall strength as was accordyng vnto his age, in so muche that he myghte not gooe. And when he shoulde ryde, he had alway on eyther syde of the horse. ii. men to stay hym, and to geue on hym lyke attendance. Then after solempnytye of his coronacyon ended at the cytee of Raynes, whiche there was solempnised with great pompe vpon the sonday nexte ensuyng the feast of saynt Denys, commissyons were sent out into all coostes of his domynion, for to enquire of all superfluous gyftes geuen before tyme by his father, the whiche shortly after were resumed into the kynges handes. And in that season, Olyuer Dammam whome Lewis had in maner greates comys and offyces sette, and by his dayes hadde hym in synghuler loue and fauoure, in so muche as before I haue shewed in the ende of the storye of the sayde Lewis, he made a speciall request vnto this Charles his sonne that he shuld specially cherysh the sayde Dammam, now he was apperched of treason wyth one Dampell a Fleming. The whiche after inquisycion of theyn made, bothe after the lawe of that land were iudged vnto deathe, and so put in execucion of hangynge. Whose deathe of the nobles and estates of the realme was lptell rypd, consyderyng the come that he bare by kynge Lewis.

The seventh parte.

lows dayes, and the ignobyltye of his
byth, as an hande crafty man a bar-
boure. After whose death a mettryan
compyled these verses folowynge.

Sua tua criminibus videlicet tempora tota
Carrere, qui subito prouida parca ues
Hoc poterat olim lōge premoscere damna, (1 at
Vi saltem horrores tollere cede pios,
Te natura humilem cum mater Flandra tulisset
Arre una notas talere cesariem,
Hanc talem et seruum te sepe Lutetia uidit,
Tutus ab hac poterat ducere sorte dies,
Raptus ad excessum, Lodouici principis aulam
Mox heretibus furias, moribus ante uenis,
Et caput huic tendens, dū susera lingere ficos,
Pre ducibus regi, regibus alter eras.
Quid tibi non licuit, soboles tam dira Neronis,
Nemo non iuxit, ne referente reus,
Nemo dei sacra censuram, nemo gerebat,

455
Gaudia, qui renuit premere dona tibi,
Protenas exilium, uel mors, uel multa negantē
Pressa, eras iudex licitor et exicium.
Regnasti, satis est, surgant noua federa mundo,
Turbi celestium, territa luce fugit,
Agnosce o tonsor, quo te scelus extulit atrox,
Et te precipitem depulit in laqueos.
Te daniel, se dira cohors, te meminiis odit,
Et scelerum auctorem, damnat et insequitur.
Nescio quid de te superi uel fata deponunt,
Sed licitore cades, seu cruce liber eas.
Una tamen aulgi constans sententia, furcas
Expedi, ut faciet, te periuue odium
Interea uinctus, culpas absterge gemendo,
Peccasti, morte est nunc redimenda salus.

20 The which metry or verses to the
that haue none vnderstandyng in
latyne maye be expounded
in maner as foloweth.

The laughynge tymes with theyr crymes spent,
Thou barboure are connt, the whiche by sodayne fate,
Are nowe fozboden. Wherof the clere entente,
Thou myght haue knowen Damma tyght well the state,
When thou by meanes whiche were inoodyuate,
Dutte vnto deathe many an innocent man,
By cruell malpce, and well remembred than.

That of lowe byth Flaudyes thy mother the fedde,
And taughte the a crafte, the hente well to make,
Lutetia that cpte where thou thy lyfe ledde,
Wopenesseth the a seruaunt therein thy lpyng to craue,
And for the dayes an honest lyfe to haue,
But when thou were in Lewys court by broughte,
Then had thou no mynde that thou were come of nought.

But lyke the helle hounde thou waxed full surpous,
Exprellynge thy malpce when thou to honoure sped,
Thynkynge for so muche as that prynce bounteous,
His hedde and bearde to the he noughte denyed,
And with all woildy pleasure he also the allped,
The besoye his pynces makynge his gouernoure,
Thy selfe thou blyndest, with woildy vayne honoure.

Whiche made the so proude, thou sonne of harde Acton,
That none myghte lye that thou accused of cryme,

Act. ii. As

Charles the. ix.

No man was cursed nor none had punishment,
 That wolde thy hande with golde of gyftes lyme,
 And who that not his gyfte offered in tyme,
 Other deathe or exyle vnto hym was soone applied,
 For as iudge and hangman thou all thyng extorped.

Thou reigned longe ynough, but nowe art spounge new
 Sterrys to the woilde, and fledde is nowe clerely,
 The skeletal flocke. Wherfoze thou barbour yettewe,
 Thyne odious actes which haue the todaynly,
 Caste downe from welch in shates bytterly,
 For also Dampell thy mooste odiousse feare,
 Dampneth the of crime whyche wyth the dyeth here.

I knowe not what of the the upper bodyes aboute,
 Haue despynd, whether by sworde or by gybet,
 Thou shulde ende thy lyfe. But one thyng I approue,
 The sentence booly of the people is sette,
 That on a galowe thou shulde paye death his dette,
 Inwardly therfoze bewaple so thyne offence,
 That by this death, to god thou mayste make recompence.

THus execution of this man
 a hys felowe ended &
 synned, to the lytell com-
 passyon of þ people, with-
 in fewe dayes after and
 ther of the affectyonat seruauntes of
 kyng Lewys named John Doyacon
 for trespasse and hated by hys occa-
 syon and deserte vnto the comon peo-
 ple, was with all shame brought to þ
 market place of Parys, and there be-
 raft of both his eares. After which by
 lony to hym done, he was there ryght
 banyshe the courte for ever.

And thus two of the mooste special
 and dearest beloued seruauntes & coun-
 sailours of kyng Lewys, were shortly
 after his deathe brought vnto con-
 fusyon. By reason wherof as affor-
 meth myne auctour Sagwyne, arose
 a prouerbe amonge the frenche men,
 sayenge. *Principibus obsequi hereditarium
 non esse.* The whyche is to meane, the
 scrupce of pynnes is nocheredynable

This tyme thus passed with many o-
 ther maters, whiche I ouer passe, the
 season approached that variaunce and
 enuy began to moue among some no-
 bles of þ land, in so muche þ the duke
 of Oyleaunce bysdayned, that Anne
 syster to the kyng wyth suche as she
 wolde call to counsaile, had all þ rule
 about the kyng. Wherfoze he enten-
 dyng to haue the sayde rule, for so
 muche as he had maryed that other
 daughter of Lewys, gathered vnto
 him strength of knyghtes, purposely
 to remoue from the kyng suche as he
 lyked, & to sette aboute him suche per-
 sones as he thought conuenient.

But howe it was for lacke of wise
 orderynge of hys people, or other ne-
 gligence, at a place called saynte Al-
 bones he was taken of hys aduersa-
 ryes, and so by the kyng commaunded
 to pylson to the castell of Bptuence,
 where he remayned longe time after.
 It was not longe after, that Parti-
 milan

The seventh parte.

472

milspan the whiche had maryed duke Charles doughter of Burgoyne, gathered his souldiours to haue releued the forsayde duke of Oylence out of prysone, but he pseyuayled not. Duringe whiche warre, Fraunceys duke of Bityayne died, whose doughter named Anne & inherytour of that duchye. Margymilspan hadde befoze trouthe pleyed for hys lawfull wyfe, wherfoze he hearing of the death of the sayde Fraunceys, shortly entred the terrytoyre of Bityayne, and seased it for his. But Charles with his french men wythstode hym, by suche force he was constrained to aske helpe of our soueraigne lord king Henry the vii. The whiche in moste bounteous maner ayded and assayed hym bothe wyth men and money, to the kynges exceedynge greate charge and coste. Howebeit in the ende the french kyng had his entent, & then maryed the sayde Anne duchesse of Bityayne, and refused Margaret the doughter of Margymilspan, whiche he befoze had maryed at Ambassy, as befoze I haue shewed to you in the ende of the storye of his father Lewis. After whiche victorye thus opteyned by this Charles in Bityayne, he made claime and pretence vnto the lande of Sicilia, or Sicilie. And by the exhortacion and stirring of the bishop of Rome Alexander the. vi. he with a stronge hoste entered the same bothe by lande & by water. To whome was a great aide the duke of Applayne, by whose meanes he shortly wan a stronge cite or towne named Capanta & dyuers other townes and in pcesse Naples the chrefcytee that belonged vnto the kyng of Naples. In so much that he constrained Alphonse that then was kyng of Naples and of Sicyle to forsake that countree, and so had the dominion

of the moze parte of bothe the sayde countrees. The whiche when he had set in suche order as he thought convenient, he toke his iourney homeward into Fraunce thowgh Italye. In which passage this Charles was beset of the Venetians & other Italyans, the whiche intended to haue stopped his way, and meeting with hym at a place called in latine Fornoutences gaue vnto hym batayle. Wherof as sayth myne authour he wan the victorye to his great honour, considering his few souldiours agayne their multitude and strength.

But to this sayeng repugne the Italians dwelling in London, & say that if the sayde Charles had not spredde hym fastely into Fraunce, he had not comen there that yere. But howe so it was, he retourned home in sauette. And soone after Alexander bishop of Rome toke suche displeasure agayne the sayde Charles, that he spyped almost all christen princes of the world agayne hym, he had suche hatred to the greate honours of the frenche kyng as sayth myne authour Sagwine, the whiche in all his workes extollethe the deeds of frenchmen further then may be verified in much of his wrytynge.

The charter of the bishop of Rome.

And thus the sayde Sagwine endeth the storye of the sayde Charlys, in the yere of our Lord god. M. liii. C. xlv. and the. xi. yere of the reigne of the same Charles then presently reygning and guiding the realme of Fraunce, which was the. i. yere of our most redoubted prince kyng Henry the. vii. Henry the seventh.



Enty the. vii. of that name Henry the. vii. sonne vnto the Earle of Rychemounte, beganne hys dominyon ouer the realme of Englande, the xxi. daye of Auguste, in the yere of Rrr.iii. our

of oure Lorde God. M. lxxx. C. lxxv,
and the seconde yere of the. vii. Char-
les thei kynge of Fraunce. And the
xxx. daye of October folowynge wth
greate solempnytee the sayde Henry
was crowned at Westmynster.

And here accoꝝdyng to my fyrste
sapenge, in the begynnynge of thys
rude worke, I make an ende of the se-
uenth parte & hole worke, the. vii. day
of Nouember, in the yere of our lord
Jesu chrystes incarnacyon. M. v. C.
and. iiii. and the. xx. yere of our moſte
chryſten and dread ſoueraygne Lord
kyng Henry after the conqueſte of
name the. vii. for whiche expedyon
and good exployt that I haue had in
the accompliſhynge of thys worke,
wherin is concluded to reken from
landynge of Brut in this yſle of Alb-
yon, vnto the fyrſte yere or begynnynge
of the raygne of our moſt dread ſaide
ſoueraygn lord. ii. M. vi. c. lxx. yeres
I geue thankes vnto almighty god.

An ende of this boke, or of thys rude worke.
Here is nowe ſpned, wherof the ſence precedyth,
Thou that ſhalt it reade, be thou laze or clerke,
Be not enuyouſe, conſyder howe it leadeſh,
The reygne of prynces. And where as mendment nedeth,
If thou experte be, the ſawtes thereof amende,
And hym aſcribē no ſclaunder, that dyd but well entende.

Conſyder euery ſcyence, in parte that it is ſuche,
To rude or to curyous, to byſe, or to longe,
Some blamyn Liutus, for that he wrote ſo muche,
Some other Hyggle, and Cypero amonge,
For he was to ſcarſe. Waluſt that dytyes longe,
So excellently, yet is he not vnblamed,
So that to all men nothyng is duelpē framed.

Then ſyn the olde wyrters whiche were ſo excellent,
Myghte not all men pleaſe with theyr ſamouſe wyrtynge,
No maruayle thoughe I whiche neuer cunnynge hente,
Myghte order this mater to euery mannes lpyngē,
And ſpecially vnto ſuche as haue theyr deſyghyngē,
Euer with dyſclaunder moſte wyrters to lacke,
And backe whyle they maye to ſette good wyrters a backe.

And thus then endeth the. vii. part
the which from the firſt yere of Will-
am Conquerour to the laſt yere of Ry-
chard the. iii. includeth. iiii. C. yeres.

Lenuop.

*Limas adest, preceſſit opus, ne liuidus aſſis.
Lector habent mendas, denia prela ſuas,
Quoduis ingenium, quadam uel parte redundat,
Vel rude, uel manū eſt, uel graue, uel fluidum,
Concio crebra tibi, culpatur ſurta Maronis,
Eſt Cicero elumbis, pes tibi naſo celer.*

*Non ſatis hiſtorie, Crispi preſatio quadrat.
Nil adeo cultum, liuor iniquus habet,
Non minus hoc poterit tantillum capere morſor
Leſerit illuſtres cum ſera lingua uiros,
Sed quid agas reſidem, traxabit inertia mutam,
Scriptorem riſor, extenuabit inners,
Audendum tamen eſt, ſpernendi mille latratus,
Occidet a buſſo mutum et inuidia.*

The whiche verſes to them that bene
vlettered may be englyſhed in ma-
ner and ſourine folowynge.

The seventh part

494

But though that ignorance and deyspon bey met,
And rejoyne the maker in all that they can,
Why shulde any good worke for they malice be let
For though they grudge and scoone, yet every good manne
Wyll take the entente and prayse the maker than,
And hym allowe for hys labours dede,
And requyre of God that he maye haue hys mede

Anno domini. MCCCC.lxxv

Anno domini. MCCCC.lxxvi

John Tate

Hughe Wyce Goldesmyth

Anno primo

John Swan.

The first year

Thys yere a prest was made
to the kyng of .ii. thousande
pound, of the whych the mercers, gro-
cers, and drapers lente. ix. hundred
xxvii. pounce and. vi. shyllinges

The coronacion was holde at West-
minster the .xxx. day of October. And
thys yere wheate was at. iii. shyllin-
ges the bushell, and bage salte at the
same pryce.

Anno domini. MCCCC.lxxvi.

Anno domini. MCCCC.lxxvii.

Syr Henry Colet

John Percuall

Anno. ii

Hughe Clopton

The. ii. years.

Ad in thys yere the kyng ma-
ryed kynge Edwardes eldest
doughter named Elizabeth. Thys

yere was slayne at Stokfeld the erle
of Lincolne. And in y moneth of Sep-
tember was bozne prynce Arthur

Anno domini. MCCCC.lxxviii.

Anno domini. MCCCC.lxxviii.

John Fenkyl

Wylliam Hone.

Anno. iiii.

Wylliam Kempington

The. iii. years

In this yere was y queene crow-
ned at Westminster upon S.
Katherynes dape. And thys yere was
a prest of. iii. thousand pound, wher
of mercers, grocers, and drapers lent

xvi. hundred, and .xvi. pounce. And
thys yere was another prest of two
thousand. And thys yere John Wy-
ley wyth other two were put in ex- cu-
pon at the towre hyl.

Anno domini. MCCCC.lxxviii.

Anno domini. MCCCC.lxxx.

Wylliam Isaak.

Robert Tate Mercer.

Anno. iiii.

Rafe Cynley

The. iiii. years

Ad in thys yere the comons
of the Northselew the earle
of Northumberlande, and Chamber-
layne they captayne wyth dyuers o-
gher were after at porke hanged

Thys yere was the taske of the tenth
peny of mennes landes and goodes.
Thys yere was the felde of Dyphs
me in flaunders foughten by the
loyde Dawbeney.

Anno

Anno domini. M. CCCC. lxxxix

Wylliam Capel

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xc

Wylliam Whyte.

John Bzoke

Anno. v.

The. v. years



In this yere one named Roger Shaulocke newe hym selfe. for whole goodes was

disposid betwene the kynges amner, and the Wyppse. But the amner op- tapned.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xc

Henry Coot.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. cxi

Thomas Hylle

Robert Keuel

Anno. vi.

Hughe Demberton

The. vi. years



In this yere dyed Robert Keuell Wyppse, and in his steade was chose Hughberton. And in Marche by Robert Chamberlayn knyght was beheaded. And this yere was a great beneuolence graunted vnto the kyng for his tourneye into Fraunce, wherunto the selfe Wypp of the Dyapers graunted moze

than anye other selfhypp of the cytee, and euery alderman of Lond on that tyme beyng, payed Volente & nolente, two hundred pounde. Quert whiche summe the comoners some extended to. ix. thousande. vi. hundred. lxxii. pounde. xvi. Wyppnges & iiii. pence. And this yere was a bushel of wheat at. xxi. pence

Anno domini. M. CCCC. cxii

Thomas Woode

Anno domini. M. CCCC. cxiii

Hugh Clopton Mercer

Anno. vii.

Wylliam Bzohne

The. vii. years



In this yere a poman of the crowne named was put to death at Tybourne for treason.

And in this yere was the cytee of Carnad gotten by the kyng of Spayne. And in this yere

was by James Parker knyght slayne in iustynge at Rychemonte, with a gentylman named Hughe Wagha Also in the moneth of September the kyng tooke his byage toward Fraunce.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. cxiii

Wylliam Purchase.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. cxiiii

Wylliam Martyn Skynner.

Anno. viii.

Wylliam Welbek

The. viii. years



In this yere vpon the. xi. daye of Nouember, was sent a letter in the Gylde hal, that shewed of peace concluded betwene the kynges of England and of Fraunce

And the. xvi. daye of December followinge, the kyng landed at Dover. And the saterdaye before Chyftmas he came to Westmynster. vpon the. xvi. daye of Maye were. iiii. men put to death at Tybourne for treason And

The seventh parte.

476

And thys yere in the moneth of Dec-
tober and ende of thys mayes yere
was the fraye made vpon the Citer-

lynges by the commons of the cytee,
and specially Peters seruantes.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xciii

Robert Fabyan

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xciii

Rafe Astrye fychmonger

John Wyngar

Anno. ix.

ix. years.

Ad in thys yere in the begin-
nyng, an enquiry was made
for the spot fornamed, for the which
manye ponge men were punished by
longe imprisonmente. Also vpon the
xxii. daye of februarye, wer repned
at the guyd hall. iiii. persons named
Thomas Bagnal, John Scot, Jho
Heth, and John Kenyngton, whiche
were taken oute of saynte Martrys
chapell, whereof. iiii. were put to
death at Tyburne, & Thomas Bag-
nall was had vnto the towre of Lon-
don. And the. xxvi. daye of the sayde
moneth, with the forsayde. iiii. per-
sons was put in execution William
Bulkeley a yoman of the kinges cha-
ber, and a duchman.

Thys yere wheate was at. vi. pence
a bushell, and baye salte at. iiii. pence
halfe peny. And thys yere doctoure
Hylle byshoppe of London pursued
greuousslye Peter than ppyoure of
Chyrlers church in London.

Wheat at. vi.
pence a bushell
and baye salte
at. iiii. d. ob.

And in thys yere was the royall fest
kepte in Westmynster hal by king
Thys yere in the ende of Apryl was
byent in Smythfeld an olde woman
for heryse, whiche was called mo-
ther to the ladye pongue. And thys
yere the. xv. daye of August were rep-
ned at the guyd hall one named Jho
Rozfolke, and another named John
wohyte, and conuicted for baudy and
set vpon the pyllory

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xciii.

Nicholas Alwyn

Anno domini. M. CCCC. xciv.

Richarde Chalmyr Salter

John Warner.

Anno. x.

x. years

Thys yere, the daye that the
maye toke hys charge, in the
afternone came through the citee He-
ry duke of yorke a chyld aboute. iiii.
yeres of age towards Westmynster
rydyng vpon a courser, with many
goodly gentylmen to conuey hym.
And vpon the. ix. daye of Nouember
folowynge, was holden a goodly tu-
rnes within the palaces of Westmin-
ster. Whereof wer the chalengeours
by William de la Pool then duke
of Suffolke, the Earle of Essex, by
Roberte Curson, and John Pethy

esquyre. Also thys yere about Chyrl-
mas, by Robert Clifford whych be-
fore was fled the lande, came agayne
and speched by William Stanley
than chamberlayne to the kynge of
treason. Whiche by William byd
the. xv. daye of februarye folowynge
for the sayde treason was beheaded at
the towre bylle. And the same season
was adjudged to death at the Guyd
hal the bene of Poules a famous doc-
toure and preacher, the pryncypall
of the blacke scypers, and the ppyoure
of Langel, the person of saynt Ste-
phens

St. William
Stanley

phyns in Walbyoke named doctour
Sutton, Syr Thomas Chawpys
knyghte, Robert Ratcliffe, Wyllyam
Dawbeny, Willia Cressener esquire
wyth Syr Symond Ponfords knyght
and mo other, wherof, the moze parte
was pardoned. And thys yeare was
whpte herynge at. xl. d. a barell. And
thys yeare began the fyrst trouble of
Wylliam Capell alderman. And in
Iulye Perhyn wyth hys rebelles ary
ued in Kent whych named hym selfe

Whpte heryng
at. xl. d. a barell.

Anno domini. M.CCCC.ccx.

Thomas Kenepworth.

Syr Henry Collet Mercer.

Henry Somer.

The. xi. years.

In thys yeare, in the. xvi. day
of November, was holden þ
sergeauntes fest wythin the
byhope of Elyes place. Thys yeare
was the body of Richard Hakendies
wyse taken vp in saynte Wasse hyl
church whole, þ had lien in the ground

Anno domini. M.CCCC.ccxvi.

John Tate Mercer

John Shaa

Richard Haddon

Anno domini. M.CCCC.ccxvii.

Anno. xii.

The. xii. years.

In the latter ende of Oc
tober, by great counsell
holden at Westmynster
was graunted to þ king
for the defence of þ Scot
tes, an hundred & xx. thousand pou
The. xxviii. daye of November was
Doules church suspended by a scape
of two yongue men. And in the same
moneth was graunted to the kyng
a prest of the cytee of. lxxx. thousande
pounde. And the same moneth at Ca
lays was beheded the lord Fitzwa
ter. The. xvi. daye of January, a par
lyament beganne, wherby was grai
ted two dynes and an halfe, two ap

des and two fyftenes, to leue the for
sayde hundred, and twenty thousand
pounde. And in the moneth of Juny
and. xvii. daye were the Cornishme
dyscomfyted at Blackheath. And þ
pon the. xxviii. daye of Junye, the
Smyth and a gentylmanne named
Flamoke two captaynes of the sayd
rebelles, were putte in execucion at
Cibourne. And shortly after the lord
Budeley, whych was hedde captay
ne of the sayde rebelles, was putte to
death at the towre hyl. And thys year
was concluded a maryage betwene
my lord pynce & the kynges daugh
ter of Spayne. Thys yeare also the
byngs

Blackheath

The seventh part

kyng sent into Scotland an army
vnder þe guydyng of the erle of Sur-
rey and the lord Auncle, the whiche
made sharpe warre vpon þe Scottes
And in the moneth of October þe

king landed in Cornwalle, and assa-
iled the towne of Exeter and other
townes. But finally he toke the Scots
warre of Beaulieu, and after was
pardoned of his lyfe.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xcvi.

Bartholomewe Rede:

William Purchase Mercer

Thomas Wyndesight

Anno domini. M. CCC. xcvi.

Anno. xlii

The. xlii. year.

In this year vpon the. xlii. day
of November, the said Per-
kin was brought throughe the cytee
vnto the towne, and ther left as pry-
soner. And with hym a tall poman so-
me sergent ferroure to the kyng
whiche ferroure & one named Edward
were shortly after put to death at ty-
burne. Upon saynte Nicholas daye
was a proclamacyon made throughe
the cytee, of peace betwene the real-
mes of Englande and Scotland for
terme of both kynges lyues. And in
Decembre a carpenter called Godfrey

tooke downe the wethercocke of Pau-
les steeple and set it by agayne. And
this year in Chyristmas weke was a
parte of the kynges palaces of Rich-
munde burnt. And this year vpon þe
ix. daye of Junye, the fornamed Per-
kin beinge at large in the kynges
courte, wente secretly away, and last-
ly wente the father of Wyndesight. And af-
ter the seconde pardon to hym by the
kyng graunted, he was shewed at
Westmynstre and in Chepes side, w-
much wonderment, and finally he
had to the towne and there kepte.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xcvi.

Thomas Wyndesight

Sy: John Percival

Anno domini. M. CCC. xcvi.

Anno. xliii

Stephan Jenyns

The. xliii. year.

In this year, vpon the. xlii. day
of October, came my lord pryce
throughe the cytee with an honoura-
ble compaigne towarde Westmynstre
And vpon thys tuesdaye was put
in executyon at saynte Thomas of
waterpyng, a strepyng of. ii. peres
of age, whiche had aduanced hym
himsel to be the sonne of þe erle

of Warwykes landes, and was the
sonne of a Cordyner of London. And
this year master John Tate a lder-
man beganne the newe edyfyinge of
saynte Anthonys church. And this
year vpon the. xvi. daye of July be-
ing sondaie, and vpon the sondaie
folowynge, Robt. iii. herithes ardon
les crosse shyned with sagottes.

The edyfying
of saynte An-
thonys church

Anno domini. M. CCC. xcvi.

James Wyllford

Archolas Wyll

Anno domini. M. CCC. xcvi.

Anno. xlv

Richard Wynde

The. xlv. year.

In this year, the. xvi. day of No-
uember was arreigned in whyte
hall at Westmynstre the fornamed

Perkin, & iii. other. The whiche Per-
kin and one John Waty were put
shortly after to executyon at tyburne
And

And sone after was the cite of War-
wyk put to deth at the towre hyl, and
one Blewet & Astwob at tiburne. And
this yere in May þe kyng & the quene
sayled to Calais. And thys yere was
Babā in Northfolk byt. And in Ju

ly was an old heretike byt in Smith
felde. And in this yere was a great
berth in Londō, wherof died ouer. xxv. A great death
in London.
of al ages. Thys yere dyed doctoure
Wozto cardynal & chaunceler of En
gland in the moneth of October.

Anno domini. M. CCCC.

John Hawys

Anno domini. M. CCCC. i

Wylliam Kempington

Wylliam Stede

Anno. xbi

The. xvi. yere.

In this yere the. xxi. day of De-
cember, in the nighte was an hy-
dious thūder. This yere was the na-
me of þe kyngs palays of Whene chaū-
ged, and called after that day Wyche
moūt. And this yere in August depar

ted secretly out of this lāde, the duke
of Suffolke. And the. iiii. day of Oc-
tober landed at Wilmowth Katherine
daughter of þe kyng of Spayne. And
thys yere was synned by mayster
Cate the church of saynte Anthony.

The depar-
ture of the Duke
of Suffolke from
England

Anno domini. M. CCCC. i.

Sy: Laurence Bylemer.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. ii

Sy: John Shas

Henry Hede

Anno. xbi.

The. xvi. yere

The beginning
of the mayes
rydyng about
the cytye.

In this yere began the maye
a hys brethren to ryde to the
barge & other places. Upon s. Erken
waldes day, was my lord prince ma-
ryed to the king of Spaynes daugh-
ter. And thys season the duke of Buc-
kyngham wyth other was these cha-
lenged out, at a ropall fustes & turnpe
holdē in the palais of Westmynster.
And thys yere came a great ambal-
sade out of Scotland, by reson whet
of conclusion of marriage was made
between the kyng of Scottes & dame
Margarete eldeste daughter to oure
souerayne lord. Also thys yere was
an exceeding great fyre taken nere
vnto Wynbouregh. And in Marche
sy: Willia of Deuinshepe, sy: James
Cryel, & his eldest sonne, and one na-
med Welborne, were arrested for trea-
son. And in Apryl folowing dyed the
noble pryncce Arthur in the towne of
Ludlow. And vpon the last day of A-
pryl were set vpon þe pyllopp. ii. pong

men. for defamynge of the kynges cou-
cel, & their eres cut of Also about this
time the gray friers were compelled
to take their olde habit russet, as the
Wyse doth by it. In þe. vi. day of may
James Cryell & sy: John Windha
knight were beheaded at the towre hyl
And a Whymman for the same treason
was the same day drawen to tiburne
& ther hanged & quartered. And sone
after a pursuuant named Curson, & a
poman called Mathew Jonyes, were
put in executyon at Guinis, & al was
for apdynge of sy: Edmōd dela Pool.
Also this yere about mydsomer was
taken a felow whych had renued ma-
ny of Robyn hodes pagentes, whych
named hym selfe Gyenelef. And this
yere began þe newe werke of þe houses
of offyce whin the guildhal of Londō
And in the ende of October, was pro-
claymed a peace betwene the kyng &
the archeduke of Burgoyne. And the
sonday before s. Symond and Jude
was

The death of
pryncce Arthur

The leuened parte.

480.

was shewed a bul, by vertue wherof were denounced at Poules crosse as accursed, by Edmonde de la poole late duke of Suffolke by Roberte

Anno domini. M. cccc. ii.

Curson knyght, and foure other persones. And all suche as ayded any of them agayn the kyng.

Anno domini. M. cccc. iii.

Henry Keybell.

Bartholmeu Rede. Goldsmith.

Anno. xlii.

Nicholas Armys.

In this yere began a new werke of the kynges chapell at West mynster. And vpon the. xi. daye of February, died quene Elizabeth within a towre lyeng in childbed. And vpon the fyrst sonday of lēt, was solemply accursed at Poules crosse with bel & candel, by Edmond de la poole, by Robert Curson & other, & al that ayded agayn the kyng. And in thede of the moneth of marche, was a priour of a charterhous at Whene synfully murdered with another munke of the same house, by synyster meanes of a mūke of the same place named Goodwyne

Anno domini. M. cccc. iii.

and other mischuiuous persons. And this yere the felishyp of tayllours of Londō purchased a graūt of a kyng to be called marchant tayllours. And the. viii. daye of August was a kyng of Scottes maryed vnto the eldest daughter of the kyng. Also in July were arepned at the Guildhall Dyuer sainte John, Robert Simpson, Wellisborn befoze named, Pool bayly of Choroke, &. iiii. other al beynge cast for treason, wherof the sayd Dyuer & Pool with two shypmen were putte in execution at Tyborne, and the other were pardoned.

Anno domini. M. cccc. iiii.

Dyaper.

Christoffer Hawys.

Byr; wylliam Capell.

Robert wattes

Anno. xix.

Thomas Granger.

In this yere the. xlii. day of November, in the palays of a arche byshop of Caüterbury at Lambeth was holdē the sergeantes feest. And the. xxi. day of Nouēbre in the begynnyng of a night, was a dyedeful fyre vpon the north ende of Londō bridge. And vpon the. vii. daye of January were certayne houses consumed with fyre again saint Botulphis church in Champs strete. Vpon a. xxi. day of January, began a parliamēt at west-

Anno domini. M. cccc. iiii.

mynster. And a. xxi. day of March, was an house bryt again saint Martyns le graūt. And the same day was hurte done with fyre in the parlyshe of saint Peters the poze. And in the forenamed parliamēt was ordeyned a new coyne of siluer, as grotes, half grotes & shyllinges with half faces. And in the foresayd parliamēt was graunted to the kyng an ayde of xxxvi. thousand. li. And a correccion was deuysed for clipped grotes.

Anno domini. M. cccc. v.

Roger Achylley.

John wynger. Grocer.

Anno. xx.

Wylliam Browne.

In this yere the cyteyns of London graunted to the kyng v. M. marke for confirma-

macion of theyr libertyes. Whereof a. M. marke was payde in hāde, and iiii. thousande marke in. iiii. yeres.

¶ Nexte

Marchant
tailours.

Handwritten notes and signatures.

Handwritten note: "A graūt made by the cyteyns for the confir- macion of the libertes."

48.
nexte ensurunge. Upō saynt Georges
Daye the kyng went in procession in
Doules church, where was shewed
a legge of saynt George closed in syl-
uer, whiche was newly sente to the
kyng. And vpon the .xxv. day of A-
Anno domini. M. cccc. v.

Henry the vii.

pyll, was a money maker one of the
corners of the towre drawen to ty-
boyne, and there hanged. And in the
later ende of this yere, came þe thyrde
cappe of mayntenaunce from the bi-
shoppe of Roome.

Anno domini. M. cccc. vi.

Richard Shoj.

Thomas Knepsworth. f. Hemonger.

Anno .xii.

Roger Gjoue.

The .xii. yere

This yere vpon .xii. euen, the
kynges chaumber at Ryche-
mount was bzēt. And vpon
the euen of saynt Maury began an
hydyous wynd, which endured vpo-
n .x. dayes folowynge moze oꝝ lasse, in
contynual blowynge, by meane wher
of the wedercocke of Dowles was
blowen downe, & much other harme
done. And by force of thys tempeste
the archduke of Burgoyne was dy-
uen to lande in the Weste countre.

And vpon the second sonday of lent
stood at Doules crosse the pyour of
saynt Oves and .v. other heretykes.
And in the ende of þe moneth of march
by Edmōd de la pool was conueyed
throughe the cite vnto the towre, and
there left as pylsoner. And in Maye
moneth was the lord of Burgeueny
comytted to the towre, for a certayn
displeasure which concerned no trea-
son. This yere a new bulded galery
fyll in the night at Richemount.

Edmōd de la pool sent to
the towre as
pylsoner.

A great wynd

Anno domini. M. cccc. vi.

Anno domini. M. cccc. vii.

Wylliam Coppinger.

Sir Richard Haddon.

Thomas Johnson.

Anno .xiii.

Wylliam f. t. wylliam.

The .xiii. yere

In this yere about Christmas
was the bakers house in war-
wyke lane bzēt. And this yere was a
wonderfull easie & softe wynter, with
out stormes oꝝ frostes. And this yere
the kyng of his goodnesse deliuered
out of al pylsons in Londō, as many

pylsoners as laye for .xl. s. & vnder.
And this yere was Thomas Knep-
sworth late maye & hys .ii. wyffes
condēpned to the kyng in great som-
mes of money, ouer paynfyl pylson-
ment by theyn in the marshalle su-
steyned.

Anno domini. M. cccc. vii.

Anno domini. M. cccc. viii.

Wylliam Butler.

Wylliam Browne mercer.

Anno .xiiii.

John Kykby.

The .xiiii.
yere.

This yere in the ende of Apryl
dyed þe sayd Wylliam Browne
and for hym was immediatly chose

by Laurence Iplemer, for the rest
due of that yere.

Anno supradicto.

Draper.

Wylliam Butler.

Anno supradicto.

Sir Laurence Iplemer.

Anno predicto.

John Kykby.

In

In this yere upon the last daye of Junye, was an house in Southwarke nere vnto the byrdege consumed with fyre. And thys yere

was by Wyllyam Capel agayne put in veracion, by sute of the kynge, for thynges done by hym in the tyme of his mayraite.

Anno domini. M. v. C. viii.

Capllour.

Stephyn Jernys.

Thomas Crenw.

Anno domini. M. v. C. ix.

Anno. xliii.

Rycharde Smyth.

In the begynnyng of the mayres tyme, by Wyllyam Capell, after his psonment in the countour and mynestres house, was by the kynges counsayll commaunded to the towre where he remayned tyl he kyng dyed, and shortly after was deliuered to many other. And in likewise was by Laurence Iplemer delt with, and comytted to the warde of house of Rycharde Smyth myste, and there remayned as psoner by the space a boue sayd. This yere vpon the saterdaye next before saynt Georges day in the night, whiche saterdaye was the. xxi. daye of Apryll, dyed the kyng our soueraygne lord at hys manoure of Rychemounte, vpon whose soule and all Christen, Iesu haue mercy. Amen.

And so this foresayd noble prince reygned. xlii. yeres and. viii. monethes, and one daye therof lackynge.

This magnificente and excellent prince Henry the. vii. thus payed to deth his dette of nature as befoze is sayde. Of whome suffyciente laude & prayse can not be put in wytyng, consydering the continuall peace and tranquyltye which he kept this his lande and comons in, with all the subduyng of his outward enemyes, of the realmes of Fraunce & Scotlande by his greates polycie & wysedome, moze then by the

dyng of christe blode or cruell warres And ever ruled so myghty his subiectes & ministered to them suche iustyce, & not alonely they loued and dread hym, but all Christen princes herpyng of his glorious fame, wer desyrous to haue with hym ampte and allyaunce. And for that he in al temporal polycies and prouisions exceeded all princes by his tyme reygnyng, byuers bishoppes of Rome, as Alexander the fyrte, Pius the. iii. and Julius the. ii. by their tynes eyther of them sonderly with autozitie and consente of theyr spirituall and deupne counsayll, elected and chose this excellent prince, and admytted hym for chiefe defensour of Christes church, befoze all other Christen princes. And for a conforacion of thesame, sente vnto thys inuincible prince by. iii. sondye famous ambassades, thye swearbes with. iii. cappes of mayntenaunce. What myght I wyte of the stedfaste continence, great iustyce, and mercyfull dealyng of thys prince. What myghte I repute of his excellent wysedome and moste sugred eloquence, or of his inuouable patience & wonderfull discrecion. Or what shuld I tell of his moste beautifull buldynge, or exceeding charges of manifest reperacions & ouer all this of his exceeding treasure and ryches innumerable. But as who wolde sape to consyder in order all his notable actes, which

So it wolde

the. xliii.

The death of
King Henry
the. vii.

woulde aske a longe tracte of tyme
with also the lyberall and sumptu-
ous endowment of the monasterie
of Westmynster and other, to wylte,
might cōclude that his actes passed
all the noble actes of his noble pro-
genytours syne the conquest, & may
moſte cōgruely about al erthly pry-
nces, be lykened vnto Salomō kyng
of the Israelites, and be called the
seconde Salomon, for his greate sa-
pience & actes by hym don his lyues
tyme executed. All whiche pzemys-
s tenderly considered, euerye naturall
Englyshman nowe lyuynge, hath
cause and ought deuoutlye to praye
for the soule of this moſte excellent

prynce Henry the. viii. that he maye
atteyne that celestyal mansion, whi-
che he and all trewe chryſten soules
are enheritours vnto, the which god
hym graunte. Amen.

And the rather because of the ex-
cellent vertuous byynge and le-
uynge vnto vs by goddes ayde and
prouision, of oure moſte gracious
and mooste dread ſouerayne lord
Henry the. viii. of that name as
rightfull enherytoure vnto the two
crownes of England and of Fraunce
The whiche beganne his moſte gra-
cious reygne the. xxi. daye of Apryl,
in the yere of oure Loyde God. M.
b. C. and. ix.

Henry the. viii.



Ouſte moſte gracious ſoue-
rayne lord kyng Henry
the. viii. beganne his re-
ygne the. xxi. daye of Apryl
in the yere of oure Loyde. M. cccc. ix.

Anno domini. M. cccc. ix.

and was crowned at Westmynster,
in the feaste of the Natyuite of saynt
John Baptist, in the Mayes tyme
after named.

Anno domini. M. cccc. x.

George Honor.

Thomas Bradbury mercer.

Anno. i.

John Doker.

In this yere in Auguste was
beheaded Empson and Dudley
and in the seconde yere of the kyng,
Anno domini. M. cccc. x.

but in Maye mayes tyme. Sir Wyl-
liam Fitzwilliam disfraunchyd, be-
cause he wolde not be Mpyete.

Anno domini. M. cccc. xi.

John Wylborne.

Henry Keybell.

Anno. ii.

John Rest.

Since Henry borne at Riche-
monde on newyeres day, and
lustes kept at Westmynster. And on
Anno domini. M. cccc. xi.

saynte Mathewes daye the prynce
died in the thyrde yere of the kyng
and in the tyme Keybell.

Anno domini. M. cccc. xii.

Nicholas Shelton.

Roger Achpley Draper.

Anno. iii.

Thomas Wynt.



His yere was the lord Dar-
cy sent into Spaine, to aide
the kyng of Spayne, aga-

ynst the Moyses, but peace was made
before his arpyunge and so retur-
ned.

The

The seventh parte.

This same yeare was Sir Edward
Downpynge sent into Gelderlande
to ayde & dynt of Castell. The same

Anno domini. M. cccc. xlii.

tyne lord Edward toke Andrew
Borton and an hundred Scottes &
twoo sayre shippes.

Anno domini. M. cccc. xlii.

Robert Holbornes.

Willm Copinger Richard Heddon kn. Anno. xlii.

Robert Fentother.

This yere was Edmonde de la
Boole beheaded & the lord Har
quis Dorset was sente into Spain
with .x. thousand menne & did muche
hurt in Gupan & returned in winter
by reason of the flur, & on. S. Laurens
daye p. b. yere p. Regent & the Carick
were dyet which were. ii. great shipis.

Sir Edward Harward, lord adm
mirall of Englande, was slaine on
saint Marke his daye in Bytaine
by to muche hardines. The same

Anno domini. M. cccc. xlii.

yere in June, the kyng besieged Tur
win & discomfited p. power of France
at Boome, & toke the citie of Tur
win, and Turney, and returned with
out any more battail offered. Du
ring whiche tyne, the kyng of Sco
ttes enoyed Englande, with an. C. M.
menne, and was slain hym self, & .x.
erles, by the erle of Surrey, & kyng
his leutetenant wherfore p. kyng cre
ated him afterwarde, duke of North
folke, & his soonne erle of Surrey.

Anno domini. M. cccc. xlii.

John Dawes.

Wylliam Byborne mercer.

Anno b.

John Byge.

The said Dawes died whi p. yere &

Anno domini. M. cccc. xlii.

this place was chose Roger bassard.

Anno domini. M. cccc. xlii.

James Parfode.

George Honor draper.

Anno. vi.

John Hundre.

This yere was a peace conclu
ded betwene Englande and
fraunce. On saint Denys
daye, in the moneth of June the .vii.
yere of the kyng, the frenche kyng
maried the lady Mary, the kyng his

Anno domini. M. cccc. xlii.

sister, and he dyed on newyeres daye
after, and therefore the kyng sent for
hir againe by the duke of Suffolke,
and other. This yere also was Ry
charde Hunne, hanged in Lowlars
towre.

Anno domini. M. cccc. xlii.

Henry Woxley.

Sir Wylliam Butler grocer.

Anno. vii.

Rycharde Gey.

The said Gey dyed within p.
yere and for hym was chose
Wylliam Bailp. In febr
ary was borne at Grentwiche p. lady
Mary, the kyng his daughter. In
Aprill the frenche quene came into
Englande, and was maried to lord
Charles duke of Suffolke. This

yere Margarete quene of Scottes
wyll to the kyng, fled into Englade
and laye at Harbottell, and she was
deliuered of a daughter called Mar
grete. And came vnto London in
Maye in eyght yere of the kyng and
taryed there a whole yere before she
returned.

Ill. iii. Anno

Anno domini. M. cccc. xli.

Anno domini. M. cccc. xli.

Thomas Seymer.

John Kelle grocer.

Anno. xlii.

Richard Churston.

This yere was suche a frost that all menne with Cartes might passe bytwene Westminster & Lambeth. One maye euen this maye his yere, the begynnyng of the. x. yere of h kyng was an insurrection of yong persones against all

Anno domini. M. cccc. xlii.

Anno domini. M. cccc. xlii.

Thomas Balde.

Sir Thomas Crenne goldsmith.

Richard Symond.

In this yere the treme aduoutned to Drenforde and again to London. In October in h

Anno domini. M. cccc. xlii.

Anno domini. M. cccc. xlii.

John Heyne.

Thomas Wythyn spinner.

James Spencer.

In this yere at frakford Charles the fifth was elected Empe

Anno domini. M. cccc. xlii.

Anno domini. M. cccc. xlii.

John Wylkynson.

Sir James Parforde mercer.

Anno. xli.

Anno. xli.

Anno. xli.

Anno. xli.

Anno. xli.

Anno. xli.

Anno. xli.

Anno. xli.

Anno. xli.

Anno. xli.

Anno. xli.

Anno. xli.

Anno. xli.

Anno. xli.

Anno. xli.

Anno. xli.

Anno. xli.

Anno. xli.

Anno. xli.

Anno. xli.

Anno. xli.

Anno. xli.

Anno. xli.

Anno. xli.

Anno. xli.

Anno. xli.

Anno. xli.

Anno. xli.

Anno. xli.

The tenth parte.

rably received into the citee of Lods
of the Maye, Aldermenne, & commu-
naltie, our soueraigne lorde accom-
paigning hym. And fro Londs he
wrote to Wyndesore, & sat in the Hall of the
Carter, & from thence wote to Hamp-
ton, & sailed ouer the sea into Spaine.
During which tyme the citee of Bur-
cey lorde admiral bent shippes in
Anno domini. M. cccc. xlii.

John Rudstone.

Sir John Mundy goldsmith.

John Champneis.

Edward the kyng of Denmar-
ke came into Englande in
June. In the .xv. of the kyng
Charles of Burcey bent Iedworth
Anno domini. M. cccc. xlii.

Highell Englishhe.

Sir Thomas Baloy mercer.

Anno .xlii.

Nicolas Jenins.

Ad this yere, the duke of Bur-
tolke went into France with
the .x. M. menne, and passed the
water of Douer about battaill and
toke and destroyed many towne &
Anno domini. M. cccc. xlii.

Raufe Dodmer.

Sir Wyllyam Baylay draper.

Wyllyam Roche.

Ad in this yere came frome
the emperoure the Lorde of
Campher and other lordes.
Also out of Scotlande came the bis-
hop of Dunell & other as Ambassa-
dours. On saint Mathias day was
the frenche kyng taken by the empe-
Anno domini. M. cccc. xlii.

four. & mutynge in Norfolke & Sur-
folke for payment of money. A peace
concluded betwene Englande and
France. The frenche kyng deliue-
red in Marche. This mayes yere
the .xlii. of the kyng in Septembere
was the coyne enhaunced.

Anno domini. M. cccc. xlii.

John Cauton.

Sir John Aleyn mercer.

Anno. xlii.

Ropher Ricue.

Anno domini. M. cccc. xlii.

Anno domini. M. cccc. xlii.

Stephan Pecoke.

Sir Thomas Seymet mercer.

Anno. xlii.

Nicolas Lambart.

In this yere the citee of Rome, by the viceroie of Naples & the duke
of

of Burbone. & same duke being first
aine, was taken & almost destroyed
and Clement the. vii. then bishop of
Rome, and diuers of the cardinales
there faide were taken and brought
into captiuitie, and vnder the rule of
Charles the emperoure. This yere
corme beganne to faile. The cardinal
went into Fraunce with greate pope
Anno domini. M. cccc. xxvii.

where he concluded a leage betwene
the kyng and the frenche kyng, whi
che both defyed the emperoure, and
sent an army into Italy, and in Sep
tembre in the nientene of the kyng he
retourned. In October the nientene
the greate maister of Fraunce came
vnto Londo with greate triumphe,
for conclusion of the same leage.
Anno domini. M. cccc. xxviii.

John Hardye.

Sir James Spencer vintener.

Anno. xix.

Wylliam Holleys.

This yere corn was verie dere
& had be dearer if marchantes
of p. syltarde had not been, &
dutch ships restrained & an absti
naice of warre betwene Englade &
Anno domini. M. cccc. xxviii.

flanders. This mayes yere & .xx. of
p kyng was p sweatpnyng likenes, for
p whiche cause there was no watche
at midsummer. On. S. Denis daye in
p. .xx. of p kyng a legate came fro Rome,
Anno domini. M. cccc. xix.

Raufe Warren.

Sir John Rudstone dyaper.

Anno. xx.

John Long.

In June in the. xxi. yere of p
kyng the legates satte at the
blacke steres for p kyng his
marriage. And in October the cardi
Anno domini. M. cccc. xxix.

nall was deposed of the chauncellery
ship. This twenty and one yere was
a peace concluded betwene the empe
roure and the kyng.
Anno domini. M. cccc. xxx.

Wighell Dozmer.

Sir Rauf Dozmer mercer.

Anno. xxi.

Water Champion.

Parliament for ennoymities
of the cleargye. The empe
Anno domini. M. cccc. xxx.

roure was crowned at Bonony this
yere in februarye.
Anno domini. M. cccc. xxxi.

Wylliam Dauncy.

Sir Thomas Dargetour salter.

Anno. xxxi.

John Cloppynge.

This yere was p fitch kiges
childre deliuered. One boyled
Anno domini. M. cccc. xxxi.

in smithfeld for porsionpnyng. The cas
dynall died on saint Andjwes euen.
Anno domini. M. cccc. xxxii.

Rychard Gresham.

Sir Rycholas Lambard grocer.

Anno. xxxii.

Edwarde Alcam.

Ad in this yere the kyng be
ganne to bulde his palace at
Westminster. Syneth Rife
Anno domini. M. cccc. xxxiii.

beheded for treasb. In October and
the. xxxiii. yere, the kyng went ouer p
sea and mette with p frenche kyng.
Anno domini. M. cccc. xxxiiii.

Rychard

The seventh parte.

Richard Raynolde.

Sir Steven Pecoke haberdasher. Anno. xxiii.

Richard Dunchon. John Dertine.

AD in this yere þe kyng was
by due p[ro]cess of the lawe di-
uorced frome lady Katherine
his brothers wife, & then he maryed
lady The Bolleyn, whiche was crow-
ned quene on wysondaye. In þe .xxv.
yere of þe kyng in this maiestis tyme.

Anno domini. M. cccc. xxiii.

Wylliam Forman

Sir Epophet Alcue dyaper.

Thomas Kiffon.

AD in this yere one Wolfe
and his wife were hanged for
killing of two marchautes
straungers on the Champs. Also in
April was a sunne called the holy
mappe of kente, two monkes, and

Anno domini. M. cccc. xxiiii.

Arcolas Leueso.

Sir John Chaneves skinner.

Wylliam Denham.

AD in this yere the erle of
Aldare dyed in þe towre and
his soonne rebelled and slew
the bishop of Dureleng, wherfore þe
kyng sent sir Wylliam Skeuinton
thither. This yere was graunted to
the kyng þe first statutes, & the tenthes

Anno domini. M. cccc. xxv.

Humphrey Donmoth.

Sir John Aleine mercer.

John Cotes.

AD in January dyed lady
Katherine princes dowager,
& is buried at Peterborough.
This mayes yere and the .xxvi. of
the kyng was quene Anne, the lord
Notcheforde, Rois, Weston, Brec-
ton, and Warkes attainted of treaso-
r and beheaded, & the kyng married lady

Anno domini. M. cccc. xxvi.

Richard Daget.

Sir Hauke Warren mercer.

On midsummer daye solowng dyed
þe fliche quene, wife unto þe duke of
Bouffolke. And on þe euen of þe Statu-
tie of our lady solowng was borne þe
lady Elizabeth at Grenwiche. This
said .xxv. yere was it enacted that no
ma should sue any appeale to Rome.

Anno domini. M. cccc. xxviii.

Anno. xxv.

twoo sceres hanged and beheaded for
treason, blasphemie, and hypocresie.
Peace concluded with Scotlande.
This yere was the bishop of Rome
with all his false vsurped power, ab-
holished quit out of this realme.

Anno domini. M. cccc. xxv.

Anno. xxvi.

of all spirituall possessions. In June
in þe .xxvii. yere þe bishop of Rochester,
and sir Thomas Woorre beheaded for
denying þe kyng to bee supreme hede
of þe churche of Englande. And this
said yere were .iii. monkes of þe char-
ter hous executed for þe same offence.

Anno domini. M. cccc. xxvii.

Anno. xxviii.

Jane Seymer. And in October so-
lowng begane a folishe comotiõ in
Lincolnshire and an other in Yorke-
shire by þe meanes of þe lord Darcy,
þe lord Husei, sir Robert constable, &
Robert Ashe, whiche only by þe kyng
his wisdõ & his prudenet counsaill were
appenced without bloodshedding.

Anno domini. M. cccc. xxviii.

Anno. xxix.

Wylliam

Wylliam Bowyer.

AD in Decēber þe Champs was ouer frosen, wherfore þe kyng & þe quene rode thowow Lodon w a goudly compaignie. In february was Thomas fith Saret & .v. of his vncles hanged, drowen & quartred. The lord Darcy, sir fransces Bygot sir Robert Constable and Anno domini. M. cccc. xxxviii.

other begynne a newe conspiracy, in the .xxix. yere, whiche were attainted and putte to death in June. And on saint Edwardes his eyn solowynge was Prince Edwardes boyn at Hapton court. The twenty and thre daye of October solowynge dyed quene Jane, and is buried at Wyndsoze; Anno domini. M. cccc. xxxviii.

John Gresham.

Sir Rycharde Gresham.

Anno. xxx.

Thomas Letwen.

AD in this yere beganne þe colleccion for the pooze, and a great nobye cured of many greuous disceases, throughe the charite therof. In Maye in þe .xxx. yere of the kyng was scere Forrest hanged & byent in Smithfelde for treason and herpse with the Image of Daruell Sathern in Wallis. This yere all Anno domini. M. cccc. xxxviii.

Idolatri was forbydde & diuers Images þe had ingynnes to make their ries open & shut, and other limis to stirre, & many other false ingynnes were espied out & destroyed. Al sceres monkes chanons & nons chaunged their newfounde garmentes, forloke their cloisters, & so came home again to their mother church this .xxx. yere Anno domini. M. cccc. xxxix.

Wylliam Wylkynson.

Sir Wylliam Forman.

Anno. xxx.

Apcolas Gydson.

AD in this yere in Decēbre was þe marques of Exeter, þe lord Housacute, and sir Edward Neuell, beheaded for high treason duly proued. And in Maye in þe Anno domini. M. cccc. xxxix.

.xxx. yere of þe kyng þe citizes of Lodon mustered all in byght harnes & cotes of white silke, with white clothe, and chaynes of golde, in .iii. great battalies, to þe great wonder of strangers. Anno domini. M. cccc. xl.

John Fayre.

Sir Wylliam Holets.

Anno. xxxi.

Thomas Huntlow.

AD in Nouembre were the abbottes of Redyng, Glasnebury, and Colchestre attainted of high treasoun, and like traitours putte to death. The .xxviii. daye of July solowynge Thomas Crōwell, late erle of Essex, and Water lord Hungerford, were beheaded at the Towre hill, for treason. And the .xxx. daye solowynge were Barnes, Saret and Hierom byet, Thell Dowell and

fetherstone were drowen hanged & quartred in Smithfelde. In this somer was a great heate, and drought, so that in many places the people woulde haue giue one bushel, for the grindyng of an other. This said .xxx. and two yere dyuers and many honeste persones died of þe hote agues, and of a greate lache, throught the realme. This .xxxii. yere was the bishoppe of Chechester, and Doctour Wyllson

The seventh parte

Willson, deliuered out of the Towre

Anno domini. M. cccc. xli.

upon the kyng his pardon.

Anno domini. M. cccc. xli.

Wylliam Laxton.

Sir Wylliam Roche.

Anno. xxii.

Sir Martin Bowes.



And in this yere þe collectiō
for the poore people ceased.

In Decembꝛe were Egertō
and Hartman putte to execuciō for
counterfaytynge the kyng his greates
Seale. This winter was bety colde
muche froste, and snowe, & a great
many of bestes dyed therof. This
yere the kynges grace begāne great
buildynges at Calais, and Guyne.

In Aprill. An. M. D. xli. in þe. xxii.
yere of þe kyng, certain pꝛiestes and
laie menne, begāne a newe comociō
in Poyke shire, whiche were shortly ta
ken, & putte to execuciō in diuers pla
ces, of whiche Leigh & ii. other were
putte to death, at London the. xxviii.
daye of Maye in þe. xxiii. yere of the
kyng. And for þe office, was sir John
Acuell knight, drawen hanged and
quartered, at Poyke, on Corpus Chꝛi
sti euen folowynge, & .xxx. hanged for
robbery. This. xxiii. yere þe. vi. daye of
Maye, there was a proclamaciō, whi
che now is a lawe, þe Bible should
bee had in euery parische church in
this realme, redy for all sortes of peo
ple, to rede, & here god his wourde, at
conuenient tymes. In the. xxiii. yere
of the. xxvii. daye of Maye þe countes
of Salisbury beheaded. The. ix. daye
of June folowynge were two pomen
of þe kyng his garde, hāged at Gꝛen
wiche for robbery, in example of all o
ther. And the. x. daye of þe same June
was sir Comonde kniuet, knight, ar
rained in the kyng his hall there, for
giuyng a blow within the kyng his
house, & should haue lost his hande, if
þe kyng his maiesty had not extendid

his mercy towarde hym. The. xxii.
daye of July folowynge there was a
nother proclamaciō whiche is a lawe
likewise, þe no holy daye shalbee kept
except our ladyes dayes, the apostle
Euāgelistes, S. George & S. mary
Magdalin, & that. S. Marke shall
not bee taken ne kepte as a fastynge
daye, nor. S. Laurens euen. Neither
þe childꝛen should bee decked, ne goo
about vpon, S. Arcolas, S. Kather
in, S. Clement, the holy Innocens
and suche like dayes. Also þe. xxviii.
daye of the same July was the lord
Leonard Grey beheaded at towre hill
for diuers treasons dooen in Ireclād
while he was the kyng his depute
ther. The same daye were. iii. gentil
menne called Mantell, Kopydon, and
Crowdes, hanged at saint Thomas
Waterynges for comittynge a shame
full murdꝛe, & makynge an vnlawful
assēble, cōfirmed by a sedicious othe
in Sussex, in Maye laste, in the com
paignie of the lord Dacres of the
South, whiche lord Dacres was on
S. Peter his daye folowynge ladde
frome the towre through London by
the sheriffes on fote to Tyborne and
there hāged. The kyng his progres
to Poyke with prouision for the recei
uyng of þe Scottishe kyng. And the
firste daye of Iulye was a Welthe
manne drawen, hanged, & quarterid,
for prophesying of the kyng his ma
iesties death, whose highnes Iesu
long preserue with his noble ympe
rince Edward, and his noble coun
saill, in honoꝛ, welth and prosperitee
long to endure.

THE

The ende of Cronicle.